

PR
2351
T63
1869

CORNELL
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY



GIFT OF

Mrs. J. C. Bradley

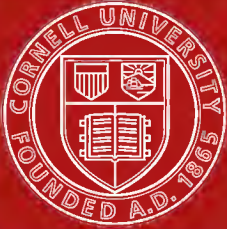
Cornell University Library
PR 2351.T63 1869

The works of Edmund Spenser. With a selec



3 1924 013 124 692

oim



Cornell University
Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

<http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924013124692>

THE WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER.



EDMUND SPENSER.

THE
WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER.



LONDON
GEORGE ROUTLEDGE AND SONS,
BROADWAY, 41, 43, & 45.

THE WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER,

WITH
A SELECTION OF NOTES FROM VARIOUS COMMENTATORS;
And a Glossarial Index:

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,
SOME ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE OF SPENSER,
BY THE REV. HENRY JOHN TODD, M.A.
ARCHDEACON OF CLEVELAND.

NEW EDITION.

LONDON :
GEORGE ROUTLEDGE AND SONS,
THE BROADWAY, LUDGATE.
NEW YORK : 416, BROOME STREET.

1869.



A779257

LONDON :

BRADBURY, EVANS, AND CO., PRINTERS WHITEFRIARS.

TO

ALFRED TENNYSON, ESQ.

THIS EDITION OF

THE WORKS OF SPENSER,

IS INSCRIBED

BY

THE PUBLISHER.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
SOME ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE OF SPENSER	lx
THE FAERIE QUEENE—BOOK I	8
BOOK II.	65
BOOK III.	128
BOOK IV.	191
BOOK V.	244
BOOK VI.	297
THE SHEPHERDS CALENDER	360
JANUARIE	364
FEBRUARIE	365
MARCH	369
APRIL	371
MAY	374
IUNE	378
IULY	380
AUGUST	383
SEPTEMBER	385
OCTOBER	388
NOVEMBER	391
DECEMBER	394
MUIOPOTMOS	397
THE RUINES OF TIME	401
THE TEARES OF THE MUSES	408
VIRGILS GNAT	414
PROSOPOPOIA; OR MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE	420

	PAGE
THE RUINES OF ROME	431
VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE	436
VISIONS OF BELLAY, 1569	437
THE VISIONS OF BELLAY, 1591	439
THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH	441
DAPHNAÏDA	442
COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAÏNE	447
ASTROPHEL	455
THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA	457
THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS	458
A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE.	461
AN ELEGIE	462
AN EPITAPH	464
ANOTHER OF THE SAME	465
PROTHALAMION	466
AMORETTI, OR SONNETS	468
SONNETS.	480
POEMS	481
EPITHALAMION	482
FOWRE HYMNES	485
AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE	486
AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE	489
AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE	491
AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE	494
BRITTAÏN'S IDA	497
A VIEW OF THE STATE OF IRELAND	508
GLOSSARIAL INDEX	557

SOME ACCOUNT
OF THE
LIFE OF SPENSER.

EDMUND SPENSER, descended from the ancient and honourable family of Spencer, was born in London in ^b East Smithfield by the Tower, probably about the year 1553. In what school he received the first part of his education, it has not been recorded. But we find that he was admitted, as a sizer, of Pembroke-Hall in Cambridge, on May 20, 1569; that he proceeded to the degree of Bachelor of Arts, Jan. 16. 1572-3; and to that of Master of Arts, June 26. 1576^c.

That Spenser cultivated, with successful attention, what is useful as well as elegant in academical learning; is evident by the abundance of classical allusions in his works, and by the accustomed moral of his song. At Cambridge he formed an ^d intimacy with Gabriel Harvey, first of Christ's College, afterwards of Trinity Hall; who became Doctor of Laws in 1585, and survived his friend more than thirty years. The correspondence between Spenser and Harvey will present to the reader several interesting particulars respecting both. That Spenser was an unsuccessful candidate for a fellowship in Pembroke-Hall, in competition with Andrews, afterwards the well-known prelate; the best-informed biographers of the poet have long since ^e disproved. The rival of Andrews was Thomas Dove, afterwards Bishop of Peterborough. That some disappointment, however, had occurred, in regard to Spenser's academical views; and that some disagreement had taken place between him and the master or tutor of the society; is rendered highly probable by the following passage in Harvey's Letter to him, at the close of his *short but sharpe and learned iudgement of Earthquakes*, dated April 7. 1580, and printed in the same year, p. 29. "And wil you needes have my testimoniall of *youre old Controllers* new behaviour? A busy and dizey heade; a brazen forehead; a ledden braine; a wooden

^a See his *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 538; his Dedication of *Maiopolmos* to lady Carew; and the circumstance more fully noticed in the remarks, offered in this account of Spenser's Life, on that Dedication.

^b Oldys's manuscript additions to Winstanley's Lives of the most famous English poets, copied by Isaac Reed Esqr.

^c Prefixed by Dr. Farner, in his own hand-writing, to the first volume of Hughes's second edition of Spenser, in the possession of Isaac Reed Esqr. See also Chalmers's *Suppl. Apology* &c. p. 23.

^d See a long account of Harvey in Wood's *Athenæ Oxon.* Vol. 1. Fasti, col. 128. And a list of his writings in Tanner's *Bibliotheca Brit-Hib.* p. 362. See also the remark of E. K. the commentator on the *Shepherd's Calender*, in the ninth Eclogue, p. 388.—Webbe, in his *Discourse of English Poetrie*, 1596, asserts that Harvey was the "most special friende" of Spenser. Nash, however, the avowed enemy of Harvey, repeatedly ridicules Harvey's boast of his friendship with Spenser; and, notwithstanding his animadversions on Harvey's railing, rails with equal if not greater flippancy and petulance himself. He may ridicule Harvey's hexameters, as much as he pleases; of which kind of verses in English, Harvey indeed pomposly announces himself as the inventor. But he cannot detract from the general merit of Harvey both as a poet and a scholar. His beautiful poem, prefixed to the *Faerie Queene*, and signed *Hobbinol*, bespeaks an elegant and well-turned mind. Among his works are several productions of great ingenuity and profound research.

^e See the Life of Spenser prefixed to the edition of the *Faerie Queene*, in 1751; the *Biographia Britannica*, vol. 6. Art Spenser, &c.

wit ; a copper face ; † a stony breast ; a factious and elvish hearte ; a founder of novelties ; a confounder of his owne and his friends good gifts ; a morning bookeworm ; an afternoone maltworm ; a right juggler, as ful of his sleights, wyles, fetches, casts of Legerdomaine, toys to mocke apes withall, odde shiftes, and knavish practizes, as his skin can holde :” Ho then proceeds to reprobate the circumstance of “ many *pupils*, jackenates and hayle-fellowes-wel-met with their *tutors* ; and, by your leave, some too, because forsooth they be gentlemen or great neires or a litle neater and gayer than their fellowes, (shall I say it for shame ? beleeve me, tis too true,) *their very own tutors !*” To the notice of this abnse in academical instruction he submits a copious list of Latin reflections, full of indignation at its existence ; one of which seems to point at the disagreement already mentioned : “ *Cætera ferè, UT OLIM : Bellum inter capita et membra continuatum.*” After having taken his last degree in Arts, therefore, we must suppose Spenser to have retired immediately from Cambridge ; having no fortune to support an independent residence there, and apparently no prospect of furtherance in the society to which he belonged. It is remarkable, however, that he makes no mention of Pembroke-Hall either in his Letters or his poetry. The University he has repeatedly celebrated with filial regard.

It is said that he now went to reside with some relations in the North of England ; not perhaps, as is vaguely asserted by most of his biographers, as a mere pensioner on their bounty, but perhaps as a tutor to some young friend. However, he now employed his poetical abilities, no doubt, on various occasions. I conceive it to be very probable that, long before this time, he had given proof of his attachment to the Muses, while at the same time he concealed his name, in several poems which are to be found in the *Theatre for Worldlings* ; a work published in the year, in which he had become a member of the University. The similarity, almost minutely exact, of these poems to Spenser’s *Visions* ; to his *Visions of Petrarch* in particular, FORMERLY TRANSLATED, as the title tells us ; is otherwise not easily to be explained. Spenser needed not to borrow such petty aids to fame. But my supposition, I think, is strengthened by the following observation, made by Harvey to Spenser in a second letter, edit. 1580. p. 41. “ I like your *Dreames* passingly well ; and the rather, because they savour of that singular extraordinarie veine and invention, whiche I ever fancied moste, and in a manner admired onely in Lucian, Petrarche, Aretine, Pasquill, and all the most delicate and fine-conceited Grecians and Italians ; (for the Romanes to speake of, are but verye ciphars in this kinde ;) whose chieftest endeavour and drifte was, to have nothing vulgare ; but in some respecte or other, and especially in *lively hyperbolically amplifications*, rare, quaint, and odde in every pointe, and, as a man would saye, a degree or two at the leaste above the reache and compasse of a common schollers capacitie. In which respect notwithstanding, as well for the singularitie of the manner as the divinitie of the matter, I hearde once a Divine preferre *Saint Johns Revelation* before al the veriest *Metaphysical Visions*, and iollyest conceived *Dreames* or *Estasies*, that ever were devised by one or other, how admirable or superexcellent soever they seemed otherwise to the worlde. And truly I am so confirmed in this opinion, that, when I betlinke me of the verie notablest and moste wonderful propheticall or poetical Vision that ever I read or hearde, me seemeth the proportion is so unequal, that there hardly appeareth any semblance of comparison ; no more in a manner (specially for poets) than doth betweene the incomprehensible Wisedome of God, and the sensible wit of man. But what needeth this digression betweene you and me ? I dare saye you wyll hold your selfe reasonably wel satisfied, if youre *Dreames* be but as well esteemed of in Englande as *Petrarches Visions* he in Italy : which, I assure you, is the very worst I wish you.” The author of the Life of Spenser, prefixed to Mr. Church’s edition of the *Færic Queene*, makes this observation on Spenser’s *Visions* ; that they are little things, done probably when Spenser was *young*, according to the taste of the times for *Emblems*. The *Theatre for Worldlings*, I must

† This quotation certainly exhibits a choice example of Harvey’s talent in the language of abuse ; and Nash fails not to remind him of his “ singular liberalitie and bountie in bestowing this *beautiful encomium* upon Doctour Perne,” in his *Four Letters confuted*, 1592. Sign. E. 2.—The author of the Life of Spenser, in the *Biographia Britannica*, has suffered a singular error of the press, in this passage of Harvey’s Letter, to pass unnoticed ; by which, however, I grant, the severity of Harvey is somewhat *softened* ; viz, “ a copper face ; a *satin* breast, &c.” The same ludicrous mistake occurs in the Life of Spenser, which is given in the *Supplement to the Universal Magazine*, vol. xlix. p. 33, &c.

add, evidently presents a series of *Emblems*. It may be therefore not unreasonably supposed that the *Visions* in that book; the *Dreams* commended by Harvey; and the *Visions* published by the bookseller while Spenser was in Ireland, which now regularly form a part of his Works; are originally the same composition, since altered and improved.

E. K. the commentator on the *Shepherds Calender*, first published in 1579, informs us, that beside the *Dreams*, the *Legends* and *Court of Cupid* were then finished by Spenser, as well as his *Translation of Moschus's Idyllion of wandering Loeë*. He also relates that Spenser had written a Discourse under the title of the *English Poet*; and that he purposed to present it to the publick: but he fulfilled not his intention. Spenser, in his Letter to Gabriel Harvey, dated October 16. 1579, speaks of "*His Slomber, and other pamphlets*" intended to be dedicated to Sir Philip Sidney, and in his Letter dated April 10. 1580, mentions also that his "*Dreames and Dying Pellicane* were then fully finished;" and that he designed soon "to sette forthe a hooke, entitled *Epithalamion Thamesis*." In the same Letter he also speaks of his *Stemmata Dudleiana*. These *Legends, Court of Cupid, and Epithalamion*, appear to be closely connected with circumstances since admitted into the *Faerie Queene*¹.

Sufficient has been said to prove the industry of Spenser, after his retirement from the banks of Cam. But the praise due to his diligence and genius must be highly augmented, when we add his *Shepherds Calender* to the list of his labours already mentioned; which was published in 1579. Of this elegant Poem much is devoted to complaints, such as tender and unsuccessful lovers breathe; and a considerable part to observations that bespeak a pensive and a feeling mind. While resident in the North, he had fallen in love with a mistress, of no ordinary accomplishments, whom he has recorded under the name of *Rosalind*; who, after trifling with his honourable affection, preferred his rival. To subjects of this kind the pipe of pastoral poetry is often tuned; and thus Spenser soothed his unfortunate passion; while, in these plaintive strains, he has also interwoven several circumstances relating to his own history and to that of contemporary persons.

Before the publication of the *Shepherds Calender*, he had been induced, by the advice of his friend Harvey, to quit his obscure abode in the country, and to remove to London. This removal is dated by Mr. Ball, in his *Life of Spenser* prefixed to his edition of the *Calender*, in 1578. By Harvey, it is generally allowed, he was introduced to the accomplished Philip Sidney; who, justly appreciating the talents of Spenser, recommended him to his uncle the Earl of Leicester. The poet was also invited to the family-seat of Sidney at Penshurst in Kent, where he was probably employed in some literary service, and at least assisted, we may suppose, the Platonick and chivalrous studies of the gallant and learned youth who had thus kindly noticed him. We may thus understand the passage, as well the old commentators remark, in the fourth Eclogue, ver. 21.

Colin thou kenst, the southerne shepherds boye :
Him Love hath wounded &c.

"Seemeth hereby," says E. K., "that Colin *pertaineth* to some Southern nobleman, and perhaps in Surrey, or Kent the rather, because he so often nameth the *Kentish* downes, and before *As lithe as lasse of Kent*." In the sixth Eclogue also, where Hobbinal advises Colin to forsake the soil that had bewitched him, and to repair to vales more fruitful, the commentator informs us that this is no poetical fiction, but a true description of the advice to which the poet had wisely listened. In the tenth Eclogue, Spenser celebrates the Earl of Leicester as "the Worthy whom

^g See the Epistle prefixed to the *Shepherds Calender*, and the notes on the third Eclogue, p. 379.

^h See the Argument to the tenth Eclogue.

ⁱ See the *Faer. Qu.* Book iii. C. xii. st. 5, 6, &c. Book iv. Canto ii. st. 10, 11, &c.

^k See what E. K. relates of this hard-hearted fair, in his notes on the first Eclogue, p. 365. The author of the *Life of Spenser*, prefixed to Church's edition of the *Faerie Queene*, observes, in consequence of E. K.'s information, that the name being well ordered will betray the VERY NAME of Spenser's Love and Mistress, "that as *Rose* is a common Christian name, so in *Kent* among the Gentry under Henry VI. in Fuller's *Worthies*, we find in *Canterbury* the name of *John Lynde*."—If *Rose Lynde* be the person designed, she has the honour also to have her poetical name adopted by Dr. Lodge, a contemporary poet with Spenser, who wrote a collection of Sonnets entitled *Rosalind*; and by Shakspeare, who has presented us with a very engaging *Rosalind*, in *As you like it*.

the Queen loves best;" according to E. K.'s illustration. The eleventh is conjectured to have been written at Penshurst. Nor was the poet unnoticed, in regard to his advancement in the world, by this nobleman; as we shall presently see.

The Dedication, therefore, of the *Shepherds Calender* to "Maister Philip Sidney" is a proof of gratitude as well as of judgement; to which the poet, "not obvious, not obtrusive," modestly subscribes himself *Inmerito*; by which appellation also Harvey afterwards addresses him in his Letters. The commentator on the Calender has prefixed to the Poem a Letter to Harvey, which displays with remarkable acuteness the design of the Pastoral; in which Spenser is styled the *unknown* and *new* poet, but who, "as soon as he shall be known, shall be beloved of all, embraced of the most, and wondered at of the best." Congenial as we may suppose the studies of Sidney and Spenser to have been, Sidney has not however given unqualified praise to the Calender. "The *Shepherds Kalender*," he says, in his *Defence of Poësie*, "hath much *poëtrie* in his Eclogues, indeede worthie the reading if I be not deceived. That same framing of his stile to an old rusticke language, I dare not allow; since neither Theocritus in Greeke, Virgil in Latin, nor Sannazarius in Italian, did affect it." Yet Webbe, in his *Discourse of English Poetry*, can find no blemish existing in it; and Francis Meres, in his *Wit's Treasury*, says, "As Theocritus is famed for his Idyllia in Greek, and Virgil for his Eclogs in Latin; so Spenser, their imitator in his *Shepherds Calendar*, is renowned for the like argument, and honoured for fine poetical invention and most exquisite wit." The Poem indeed gained so many admirers as to pass through five editions while Spenser lived. Yet the name of Spenser, as the author, appears for some time to have been not generally known. For to a manuscript translation of the poem into Latin verse by John Dove, preserved in the Library of Caius College Cambridge, a Dedication to the Dean and Subdean of Christ Church Oxford is prefixed, which shews that the translator had never heard of *Spenser*, and had never seen the first edition of what he had translated. The Dean and Subdean, to whom this translation is addressed, are Dr. James and Dr. Heton, of whom the former held the Deanery from 1584 to 1596. It is remarkable that the translator speaks of this *unowned* poem (to adopt the translator's own allusion (as almost buried in oblivion: "Prodiit (ornatissimi viri) anno salutis 1581 libellus quidam ἀδέσποτος ritlmo Anglicano elegantèr compositus, qui vulgari nomine et titulo Calendarium Pastorum inscribatur, insignissimo D. P. Sidneio dedicatus, cui tum noviter divulgato docti vehementer applausurunt. Quia illustrissimus eques suo patrocinio non indignum judicavit, eundem etiam latinitate donatum in vestri nominis dignitate apparere volui, vestrum nomen conjunctim affari, vos patronos asciscere, partim ut aliquam observantiæ meæ significationem vobis darem quibus me plurimum debere agnosco, partim ut hoc opusculum jam penè deletum et quasi sepultum de novo vestræ lectioni secundò commendarem; vel, si non integrum, saltem Æglogas 7, 9, etc. quibus sensus inest longè divinissimus. Spero vobis non ingratum fore hoc meum studium, quum non sitis Morrelli, non Davides, non Palinodi, et pseudapostoli; sed Algrindi, sed Pierci, et Thomalini, orthodoxi pastores, &c.") The poetical translation is by no means indifferent; and there is subjoined to it an Elegy, in very respectable Latin hexameters, on the death of *Algrind*, that is, Archbishop *Grindal*, whom Spenser designs, in his fifth Eclogue, under that anagrammatick name; as in the seventh he also designs Bishop Elmer or Aylmer, under that of *Morrell*.

¹ Sir Philip, however, in his *Defence of Poësie*, evidently alludes, with particular commendation, in the following passage, to the satirical turn of the *Shepherds Calender*: "Is it then the *Pastorall Poeme* which is misliked? (For per chance where the hedge is lowest they will soonest leap over.) Is the poor pipe disdained, which sometimes, out of what blessednesse is derived to them that lye lowest, from the goodness of them that sit highest? Sometimes, under the *prettie tales of wolves and sheepe*, can include the whole considerations of wrong doing and patience; sometimes shew

^m Viz. in 1579, 1581, 1586, 1591, 1597.

ⁿ Archbishop Grindal appears, by these commendations of Spenser and Dove, to have been greatly respected on account of the mildness of his disposition. The puritans claimed him, unjustly, as their own. Dr. Drant, another which he named, by way of eminence, *Præsul*. The memory of Grindal indeed will continue to be the theme of gratitude, while Queen's College Oxford, and Pembroke Hall Cambridge, shall exist. See *Strype's Life of this prelate*.

^p Dr. Elmer or Aylmer, Bishop of London, excited the displeasure of Spenser perhaps, in consequence of his ceasing to

If Mr. Dove's translation has represented the fame of the Shepherds Calender as sleeping, let us oppose to his evidence the acknowledged utility of the poem, within the period in which he deplores its *supposed burial*, as subservient not only to the solacing the troubled spirit, but to the illustration of perhaps the most abstruse subject within the circle of English Literature, *The Logick of the Law!* Abraham Fraunce, (a poet as well as a barrister, and the friend of Sir Philip Sidney,) who tells us that "seaven yeares were almost overgone him since he began to be a medler with Logickall meditations," published in 1583 "The Lawiers Logike;" and in his Preface he says he had read his meditations six times over within the seven years, "thrise at S. Johns colledge in Cambridge, thrise at Grays Inne in London. After application of Logike to Lawe," he continues, "and examination, of Lawe by Logike, I made playne the precepts of the one by the practise of the other, and called my booke, The Lawyers Logike; not as though Logike were tyed only unto Law, but for that our Law is most fit to expresse the præcepts of Logike. Yet, because many love Logike that never learne Lawe, I have reteyned those ould examples of the new Shepherds Kalender, which I first gathered; and thereunto added these also out of our Law bookes, which I lately collected."—I select a pithy illustration from the tenth chapter of the first book: "Of Opposites. Opposites are eyther Disparates or contraries. Disparates are sundry opposites wherof one is equally and in like manner opposed unto many. Hobbinoll in Aprill in his song of Elisa:

Bring here the pincke, and purple cullambine,
with gelliflowres:
Bring corouations, and sops in wine, &c. &c.

All which herbes bee equally differing one from another, and are therefore Disparates. M. Plowden, Fol. 170. a. b. Mes vn grosse nosme poyet conteigner diuers choses corporall, come Manor, Monastery, Rectory, Castell, Honor, et tiels semblables. Car eux sont choses compound, et poyent conteyner tout ensemble messuages, terres, prees, bois, et tiels semblables." I will add another instance, which may perhaps entitle me to the thanks of the next editor of Plowden, as it exhibits a *correction* of that great lawyer! "Of Contraries. Repugnant arguments bee such contraries, whereof one is so opposite to one, or at the most to two, as that there can never any agreement bee found betwene them. So warre is onely opposite to peace: but covetousness to liberality and prodigalitie, yet more to prodigality. Perigot in August:

Ah Willy, when the hart is ill assayde,
How can bagpipe or foynts be well apayde?

Maister Plowden, Fol. 467. a. Et issint il apiert *diversitie*, (hee should have sayde rather *Repugnancy*;) enter les deux equities; car l'un abridge, l'auter enlarge; l'un dymnuisha, l'auter amplifie; l'un tolla de le letter, l'auter ad al ceo."

These remarkable circumstances relating to the first publication, by which Spenser became distinguished, being noticed; it is now necessary to turn to his correspondence with Harvey. And the following Letter will at once inform us of his situation, his employment of time, and his expectations.

"To the Worshipfull his very singular good friend, Maister G. H. Fellow of Trinitie Hall in Cambridge.

"GOOD Maister G.—I perceive by your most curteous and frendly letters your good will to be no lesse in deed, than I alwayes esteemed. In recompence wherof, think I beseech you, that I wil spare neither speech nor wryting, nor aught else, whensoever and wheresoever occasion

inveigh against the superior clergy; for "when he first became a preacher," says Sir John Harrington, "he followed the popular phrase and fashion of the younger divines of those tymes, which was to *inveigh against the superfluities of the churchmen*—of which not long after, by reading and conference, he was thoroughly cured.—Certain it is, no bishop was more persecuted and taunted by the puritans of all sorts then he was, by lybells, by scoffs, by open railing, and privy backbiting." *Briefe View of the State of the Ch. of Eng.* 12mo. 1653, p. 18. See also a slander upon this bishop refuted in Fulke's *Retentive to stay good Christians in true Faith*, 12mo. Lond. 1580, p. 59.

1 "The Lawiers Logike, exemplifying the præcepts of Logike by the practise of the common Lawe, by Abraham Fraunce, Lond. 1588." 4to. A poetical Dedication to Henry Earle of Pembroke is prefixed. Fraunce is a writer of verses, and shines particularly as an English *hexametrist*. His *Countesse of Pembrokes Yrychurche*, and his translation of part of Heliodorus, are written in melodious dactyls and spondee, to the no small admiration of Sidney, Harvey, &c. Sidney adopted, in his *Arcadia*, almost every kind of Latin verse for his English songs. Fraunce appears to have been intimate with Spenser, and to have seen the *Fierie Queene* long before it was published.

shall be offred me : yea, I will not stay till it be offred, but will seeke it in al that possibly I may. And that you may perceive how much your counsel in al things prevaileth with me, and how altogether I am ruled and over-ruled thereby ; I am now determined to alter mine owne former purpose, and to subscribe to your advizement : being notwithstanding resolved stil to abide your farther resolution. My principal doubts are these. First, I was minded for a while to have intermitted the uttering of my writings, leaste, by over-much cloying their noble eares, I should gather a contempt of myself, or else seeme rather for gaine and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetnesse that I have already tasted. Then also me seemeth the work too base for his excellent ' lordship, being made in honour of a private personage unknowne, which of some yllwillers might be upbraided, not to be so worthie, as you knowe she is ; or the matter not so weightie, that it should be offred to so weightie a personage, or the like. The selfe former title still liketh me well ynough, and your fine addition no lesse. If these, and the like doubtles, may be of importaunce in your seeming, to frustrate any parte of your advice, I beseeche you, without the leaste selfe love of your own purpose, councill me for the beste : and the rather doe it faithfullye, and carefully, for that, in all things, I attribute so muche to your iudgement, that I am evermore content to adnihilate mine owne determinations, in respecte thereof. And indeede for your selfe, to, it sitteth with you now, to call your wits and senses together (which are alwaies at call) when occasion is so fairely offered of estimation and preferment. For whiles the yron is hote, it is good striking, and minds of nobles varie as their estates. *Verum ne quid durius.*

I pray you bethinke you well bereof, good Maister G. and forthwith write me those two or three special points and caveats for the nonce ; *De quibus in superioribus illis mellitissimis longissimis litteris tuis.* Your desire to heare of my late becing with hir Maiestie, must dye in it selfe. As for the twoo worthy gentlemen, * Master Sidney, and Master Dyer, they have me, I thanke them, in some use of familiarity : of whom, and to whome, what speache passeth for youre credite and estimation, I leave your selfe to conceive, having alwayes so well conceived of my unfained affection, and zeale towards you. And nowe they have proclaimed in their ἀπειρωπαγή a general surceasing and silence of balde rymers, and also of the verie beste to : in steade whereof, they have, by authoritie of their whole senate, prescribed certaine lawes and rules of quantities of English sillables, for English verse : having had thereof already great practise, and drawn mee to their faction. Newe booke I heare of none, but only of ' one, that writing a certaine booke, called *The Schoole of Abuse*, and dedicating it to Maister Sidney, was for hys labor scorned ; if at leaste it be in the goodnesse of that nature to scorne. Such follie is it, not to regarde aforehande the inclination and qualitie of him, to whome wee dedicate oure booke. Suche mighte I happily incurre, entituling *Myⁿ Slomber*, and the other pamphlets, unto his honor. I meant them rather to Maister Dyer. But I am, of late, more in love wyth my Englishe ' versifying, than with ryming : whyche I should have done long since, if I would then have followed your councill. *Sed te solum iam tum suspicabar cum Aschano sapere ; nunc Aulam video egregios alere Poëtas Anglicos.*

Maister * E. K. hartly desireth to be commended unto your Worshippe, of whom, what

† The Earl of Leicester, I suppose.

* Sidney and Dyer appear to have been particular friends. Harvey calls them "the Castor and Pollux of poetry." In Davison's *Poetical Rapsodie*, edit. 1602, two pastoral Odes are to be found, made "by Sir P. Sidney upon his meeting with his two worthy friends, and fellow-poets, Sir Edward Dier and M. Fulke Grevill."

† Stephen Gosson ; whose book was first published in 1579. He was a preacher, and a writer of verses ; noted, according to Antony Wood, for his admirable penning of pastorals ; yet very severe "against Poets, Pipers, Players, and their Excusers," as he is pleased thus to class them, in his *Schoole of Abuse* and in his *Apologie* (published in the same year) for the said didaectick work !

‡ *A Sennights Slumber*, as it is entitled in the bookseller's address to the reader, prefixed to the *Complaints*.

§ We lament the perverted taste of Spenser in this respect. But he afterwards paid little or no attention to this *versifying*. He means, by *versifying*, the unnatural adaptation of English verse to Latin prosody ; of which further notice is presently taken.

¶ The commentator on the *Shepherds Calender*, whose labours were joined to the poem on its first appearance. By the mention of *Mystresse Kerkes*, in the next paragraph, some have been led to assign the name of *Edward Kerke* to the old schoolast. Some also have not failed to suppose that *King* might be the name ; and, that the force of guessing might no further go, to imagine even the poet and the commentator the same person !

accompte he maketh, your selfe shall hereafter perceive, by hys paynefull and dutifull verses of your selfe.

Thus much was written at Westminster yesternight; but comming this morning, beeyng the sixteenth of October [1579] to Mystresse Kerkes, to have it delivered to the carrier, I receyved youre letter, sente me the laste weeke; whereby I perceive you other whiles continue your old exercise of versifying in English; which glorie I had now thought shoulde have bene onely ours heere at London, and the Court.

Truste me, your verses I like passingly well, and envye your hidden paines in this kinde, or rather maligne and grudge at your selfe, that woulde not once imparte so muche to me. But, once or twice, you make a breache in Maister ^a Drant's rules: *quod tamen condonabimus tanto Poëtae, tuæq; ipsius maximæ in his rebus auctoritati.* You shall see, when we meete in London, (whiche, when it shall be, certifie us) howe fast I have followed after you in that course: beware, leaste in time I overtake you. *Veruntamen te solùm sequar, (ut sæpenuerò sum professus), nunquam sanè assequar, dum vivam.* And nowe requite I you with the like, not with the verye beste, but with the verye shortest, namely, with a fewe Iambickes. I dare warrant, they be precisely perfect, for the feete, (as you can easily iudge) and varie not one inch from the rule I will imparte yours to Maister Sidney, and Maister Dyer, at my nexte going to the courte. I praye you, keepe mine close to your selfe, or your verie entire friendes, Maister ^y Preston, Maister ^z Still, and the reste.

Iambicum Trimeterum.

^a Unhappie Verse! the witness of my unhappie state,
Make thy selfe fluttring wings of thy fast flying
Thought, and fly forth unto my Love whersoever she be:

Whether lying reastlesse in heavy hedde, or else
Sitting so cheerelesse at the cheerfull boorde, or else
Playing alone carclesse on hir heavenlie virginals.

If in bed; tell hir, that my eyes can take no reste:
It at boorde; tell hir, that my mouth can eate no meate:
If at hir virginals; tel hir, I can heare no mirth.

Asked why? say, Walking love suffereth no sleepe:
Say, that raging love dothe appall the weake stomacke:
Say, that lamenting love marreth the musicall.

Tell hir, that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me asleepe:
Tell hir, that hir beautie was wonte to feede mine eyes:
Tell hir, that hir sweete tongue was wonte to make me mirth.

Now doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindely reste:
Now doe I dayly starve, wanting my lively foode:
Now doe I alwayes dye, wanting thy timely mirth.

And if I waste, who will bewaile my heavy chauce?
And if I starve, who will record my cursed end?
And if I dye, who will saye, *This us immerito?*

I thought once agayne here to have made an ende, with a heartie *Vale*, of the best fashion:

^x Among the many publications by Drant, I have not discovered *these Rules*; which may be a subject of deep lamentation to English hexametrist, and pentametrist, atque id genus omne, unless they have been more fortunate in their search! Tanner's list of his publications is copious. Drant was of St. John's College, Cambridge, afterwards prebendary of Chichester and archdeacon of Lewes. See his character in Warton's *Hist. of Eng. Poetry*, vol. iii. p. 429.

^y Preston, first of King's College, Cambridge, afterwards Master of Trinity Hall, was the author of "A Lamentable Tragedy mixed full of pleasant mirth, conteyning the life of Cambyses king of Persia, &c." which is said to have rendered the author an object of ridicule. He wrote also "A geliflower or swete marygolde, wherein the frutes of terrany you may beholde." See the *Biographia Dramatica*, Art. Preston, (Thomas) and Cambyyses. See also *Bibliograph. Poetica*.

^z Still, who was afterwards bishop of Bath and Wells, is believed to be the author of *Gammer Gurtons Needle*, the earliest exhibition of what "looks like a regular comedy" in our language. See *Biograph. Dram. Art. Still*, (John) and Malone's *Hist. Acc. of the Eng. Stage*. "His breeding," says Sir John Harington, "was from his childhood in good literature, and partly in musick, which was counted in those days a preparative to divinitie.—To conclude of this bishop, without flatterie, I hold him a rare man for preaching, for arguing, for learning, for living." *Briefve View of the State of the Church of England in Q. Eliz. time*, &c. edit. 1653. 12mo. p. 119.

^a Admitted into Davison's *Poetical Rapsodie*, edit. 1611. And since reprinted in Warton's *Observations on the Faerie Queene*, in Waldron's *Literary Museum*, and in Neve's *Cursory Remarks on the English Poets*.

but loe ! an ylfavoured mischaunce. My last farewell, whereof I made great accompt, and much marvelled you shoulde make no mention thereof, I am nowe tolde, (in the Divels name) was thorough one man's negligence quite forgotten, but shoulde nowe undoubtedly have bene sent, whether I hadde come, or no. Seing it can now be no otherwise, I pray you take all together, wyth all their faultes : and nowe I hope you will vouchsafe mee an answer of the largest size, or else I tell you true, you shall bee verye deepe in my debte ; not wythstandyng thys other sweete, hut shorte letter, and fine, but fewe verses. But I woulde rather I might yet see youre owne good selfe, and receive a reciprocally farewell from your owne sweete mouth.

Ad Ornatissimum virum, multis jam diu nominibus Clarissimum, G. H., Immerito sui, mox in

Gallias Navigaturi, Ἐντυχέων.

Sic malus egregium, sic non inimicus amicum,
 Sicq; novus veterem jubet ipse Poeta Poetam
 Salvare ; ac caelo, post saecula multa, secundo
 Jam reducem, caelo magè quam nunc ipse, secundo
 Ut iter ; Ecce deus (modo sit deus ille, renixum
 Qui vocet in scelus, & juratos perdat amores.)
 Ecce deus mihi clara dedit modo signa marinus,
 Et sua veligero lenis parat aequora ligno :
 Mox sulcando suas etiam pater Æolus iras
 Ponit, & ingentes animos Aquilonis——
 Cuncta vijs sic apta meis ; ego solus ineptus.
 Nam mihi nescio quo mens saucia vulnere, dudum
 Fluctuat ancipiti pelago, dum navita proram
 Invalidam validus rapit, huc Amor & rapit illuc ;
 Consilij Ratio melioribus usa, decusq;
 Immortale levi diffusa Cupidinis arcu,
 Angimur hoc dubio, & portu vexamur in ipso.
 Magne pharetrati nunc tu contemptor Amoris
 (Id tibi dij nomen precor haud impune remittant)
 Hos nodos exsolve, & eris mihi magnus Apollo :
 Spiritus ad summos, scio, te generosus honores
 Existimulat, majusq; docet spirare Poëtam.
 Quàm levis est Amor, & tamen haud levis est amor omni :
 Ergo nihil laudi reputas aequale perenni,
 Præq; sacro sanctâ splendoris imagine, tanti
 Cætera quæ vecors uti numina vulgus adorat ;
 Prædia, Amicitias, Urbana peculia, Nummos,
 Quæq; placent oculis, Formas, Spectacula, Amores,
 Conculcare soles ut humum, & ludibria sensûs ;
 Digna meo certe Harveio, sententia digna
 Oratore Amplo, & generoso pectore, quam non
 Stoïca formidet veterum sapientia, vinculis
 Sancire æternis ; sapor haud tamen omnibus idem.
 Dicitur effati proles facunda Laërtæ,
 Quamlibet ignoti jaetata per aequora cæli,
 Inq; procelloso longum exsul gurgite, ponto
 Præ tamen amplexu lachrymosæ conjugis, ortus
 Cælestes, divûmq; thoros sprevisse beatos :
 Tantùm Amor, & Mulier, vel amor potentior, illum ;
 Tu tamen illudis (tua Magnificèntia tanta est,
 Præq; subumbratâ splendoris imagine, tanti
 Præq; illo, meritis famosis, nomine parto ;
 Cætera quæ vecors uti numina vulgus adorat,
 Prædia, Amicitias, Armenta, Peculia, Nummos,
 Quæq; placent oculis, Formas, Spectacula, Amores,
 Quæq; placent ori, quæq; auribus, omnia temnis ;
 Næ tu grande sapis ! (sapor at sapientia non est.)
 Omnis & in parvis bene qui scit desipuisse,
 Sæpe supercilijs palmam sapientibus aufert ;
 Ludit Aristippum modo tetrica turba sophorûmq;
 Mitia purpureo moderantem verba tyranno,
 Ludit Aristippus dictamina vana sophorum,
 Quos levis æmensi male torquet culicis umbra.
 Et quisquis placuisse studeat heroibus actis,
 Desipuisse studet ; sic gratia crescit ineptis.
 Deniq; laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vittis
 Insignire volet, populôq; placere faventi,
 Desipere insanus dicit, turpemq; pudendæ
 Stultitiæ laudem quærit. Pater Ennius unus
 Dictus, innumeris sapiens ; laudatur at ipse
 Carmina vesano fudisse loquentia vino :

Nec tu, (pace tuâ,) nostri Cato maxime sêcli,
 Nomen honorati sacrum mereare Poëta,
 Quantumvis illustre canas, & nobile carmen,
 Nî stultire velis; sic *stultorum omnia plena!*
 Tuta sed in medio superest via gurgite; nam qui
 Nec reliquis nimium vult desipuisse videri,
 Nec sapuisse nimis, sapientem dixeris; unum
 Hinc te merserit nuda, illinc combusserit ignis;
 Nec tu delicias nimis aspernare fluentes,
 Nec serò Dominam venientem in vota, nec aurum,
 Si sapis, oblatum: Curijs ea Fabricijsq;
 Linque, viris miseris miseranda sophismata, quondam
 Grande sui deus ij, nostri sed deceus ævi;
 Nec sectare nimis; res utraq; crimine plena.
 Hoc bene qui callet (si quis tamen hoc bene callet)
 Scribe vel invito sapientem hunc Socrate solum.
 Vis facit una pios; justos facit altera, & alt'ra
 Egregie cordata, ac fortia pectora; verum
Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci.
 Dij mihi dulce diu dederant, verum utile nunquam;
 Utile nunc etiam, ô utinam quoq; dulce dedissent!
 Dij mihi, quippe dijs æqualia maxima parvis,
 Nî nimis invident mortalibus esse beatis,
 Dulce simul tribuisse queant, simul utile; tanta
 Sed Fortuna tua est, pariter quæq; utile quæq;
 Dulce dat ad placitum: save nos sydere nati
 Quæsitus imus eam per inhospita Cauæasa longè,
 Perq; Pyrenæos montes, Babylonâq; turpem;
 Quod si quæsitus nec ibi invenerimus, ingens
 Æquor inexhaustis permensi erroribus ultra
 Fluctibus in medijs socij quæremus Ulyssis:
 Passibus inde deam fessis comitabimur ægram,
 Nobile cui furtum quaerenti defuit orbis:
 Namq; sinu pudet in patrio, tenebrisq; pudendis,
 Non nimis ingenio Juvenem infelice virentes
 Officijs frustra deperdere vilibus annos;
 Frugibus & vacuis speratis cernere spicas.
 Ibimus ergò statim; (quis eunti fausta preetur?)
 Et pede clivosas fesso calcabimus Alpes.
 Quis dabit interea conditas rore Britanno,
 Quis tibi Litteras, quis carmen amore petuleum!
 Musa sub Oebalij desneta cacum ne montis,
 Flebit inexhausto tam longa silentia planctu,
 Lugebitq; sacrum laerymis Helicona tacentem;
 Harveiusq; bonus (clarus licet omnibus idem)
 Idq; suo merito prope suavior omnibus, unus
 Angelus & Gabriel, quamvis comitatus amicis
 Innumeris, Geniûmq; chore stipatus amæno,
Immerito tamen unum absentem sæpè requireret;
 Optabitq; *Utinam meus his EDMUNDUS adesset,*
Qui nova scripsisset, nec amores conticuisset
Ipsæ suos; & sæpe animo verbisq; benignis
 Fausta precaretur, *Deus illum aliquando reducat!* &c.

Plura vellem per Charites, sed non licet per Musas. Vale, Vale plurimum, Mi amabilissime Harveye, meo cordi, meorum omnium longè charissime.

I was minded also to have sent you some English verses, or rymes, for a farewell; but, by my troth, I have no spare time in the world, to thinke on such toyces, that you knowe will demaund a freer head than mine is presently. I beseeche you by all your curtesies and graces, let me be answered, ere I goe: which will be, (I hope, I feare, I thinke) the next weeke, if I can be^b dispatched of my Lorde. I goe thither, as sent by him, and maintained most-what of him: and there am to employ my time, my body, my minde, to his honours service. Thus, with many superhartie commendations and recommendations to your selfe, and all my friendes with you, I ende my last farewell, not thinking any more to write to you before I goe: and with all committing to your faithfull credence the eternall memorie of our everlasting friendship; the inviolable memorie of our unspotted friendship; the sacred memorie of our vowed friendship; which I beseech you continue with usuall writings, as you may; and of all things let me heare some newes from you. As gentle M. Sidney, I thanke his good worship, hath required of me, and so promised to doe againe. *Qui monet, ut facias, quod jam facis;* you knowe the rest

^b See the quotation, however, presently cited from Harvey's answer to this Letter.

You may always send them most safely to me by Mistresse Kerke, and by none other. So once againe, and yet once more, farewell most hartily, mine owne good Master H. and love me, as I love you, and thinke upon poore *Immerito*, as he thinketh uppon you.

Leycester House, this 16 of October, 1579 .

Per mare, per terras,

Vivus mortuusq;

Tuus IMMERITO."

In Harvey's answer to this Letter, dated "Trinitie Hall, 23. Octob. 1579," he desires Spenser to give him "leave to playe the counsaylour a while;" and he conjures him, "by the contents of the Verses and Rymes enclosed," (viz. *Certaine Latin Verses, of the frailtie and mutabilitie of all things, saving onely vertue*; written by M. Doctor Norton, paraphrastically varied by M. Doctor Gouldingham, translated by o'de Maister Wythepol, and paraphrastically varied in English by Harvey himself;) "and by al the good and bad Spirites that attende upon the Authours themselves, immediately upon the contemplation thereof, to abandon all other fooleries, and honour Vertue, the onely immortall and surviving Accident amongst so manye mortall and ever-perishing Substances." After this judicious advice, he presently notices the English poem which Spenser had sent him: "Your Englishe *Trimetra* I lyke better than perhaps you will easily believe; and am to requite them wyth better or worse, at more convenient leysure. Marry, you must pardon me, I finde not your warrant so sufficiently good and substantiall in lawe, that it can persuade me they are all so precisely for the feete, as your selfe over-partially weene and over-confidently avouche;" and he accordingly specifies some errors committed by Spenser in this example of English verse composed according to Latin rules; an attempt, which, however once the favourite employment of our poets in the age of Elizabeth, will be always too repulsive to gain many admirers or imitators; requiring, as it generally requires, a pronunciation most dismal, most unmusical, or most ridiculous; an attempt indeed, which has not escaped the lash of a just and indignant satire. From the unprofitable criticism of Harvey I therefore turn to a more important remark in his Letter, in which he appears to have been justified: "As for your *speedy and hasty travell*, methinks I dare stil wager al the books and writings in my study, which you know^e I esteeme of greater value than al the golde and silver in my purse or chest, that you wil not, that you shall not, I saye, bee gone oever sea, for al your saying, neither the next nor the nexte weeke." And indeed it may justly be doubted whether Spenser was ever employed on this intended com-

^e He says in a former part of this letter that it was the *sixteenth* day of month. See p. xv. The date 5 at this conclusion, in the original publication, is therefore a mistake.

^d See bishop Hall's *Satires*, B. i. Sat. iv. where he rightly calls effusions of this kind, "*rhythmless numbers*;" and adds,

"Unbid *iambics* flow from careless head!"

And in *Sat. vi* having ridiculed those who scorn "the homespun thread of rhymes," he proceeds:

"Whoever saw a colt, wanton and wild,
"Yok'd with a slow-foot ox on fallow field,
"Can right areed how handsomely besets
"Dull *spondees* with the English *dactyls*!
"If Jove speak English in a thundring cloud,
"Thwick thwack, and ruff ruff, roars he out aloud!
"Fie on the forged mint that did create
"New coin of words never articulate."

See also a judicious observation of Nash, in his *Foure Letters confuted*, 1592. Sign. G. 3. "The hexameter verse I graunt to be a gentleman of an ancient house, (so is many an english beggar, yet this clyme of ours hee cannot thrive in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in; hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running vpon quagmiers vp the hill in one syllable, and down the dale in another; retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins."

^e Dr. Percy, the present bishop of Dromore, possesses, as I have been informed by Mr. Cooper Walker, some books which belonged to Harvey; in which are manuscript notes by this friend of Spenser. I have seen the following pieces, which were also part of Harvey's library, and are now (bound in one volume) in the possession of James Bindley, Esq., in which are several observations written likewise by Harvey, applicable to the subjects of the several pieces; incidentally commending Gascoigne, bishop Watson, Cheke, and Ascham; and shewing a great attachment to Italian literature, the taste indeed of that period.

1. *Medea*, Tragedia di M. Lodovico Dolce, Venet. 1566.

2. *Thieste*, Tragedia di M. L. Dolce, Venet. 1566.

3. *Hecuba*, et *Iphigenia in Aulide*, Erasmo Roterodamo interprete, &c. 1507.

4. An Italian Grammar, written in Latin by Scipio Lentulo a Neapolitan and turned into English by H. G. 1575.

mission ; which, some of his biographers have asserted, constituted him Agent for the Earl of Leicester in France and other foreign countries. For, by the date of Spenser's next Letter to Harvey, we find him still in London ; and an interval of less than six months onely had elapsed, since his mention of an appointment ; a period hardly sufficient to have allowed him the exercise of *such an appointment*, even in a small degree ; in regard to which we have also no further memorial.

Before I present the reader with Spenser's next Letter to Harvey, it is necessary to observe that his first Letter, already given, affects the credibility of his^f pretended introduction to Philip Sidney, on account of his presentation to him of the ninth Canto of the first Book of the *Faerie Queene* ; for it shews that he was known to Sidney previously to the publication of the *Shepheards Calender* in 1579. This incontrovertible fact refutes the opinion also of a very elegant writer, and of others less known to fame^g that "*the Dedication of the Shepheards Calender seems to have procured Spenser his first introduction to Sir Philip Sidney.*"

In Spenser's second Letter to Harvey, some interesting remarks concerning his works occur. "*To my long approved and singular good frende, Master G. H. Good Master H. I doubt not but you have some great important matter in hande, which al this while restraineth youre penne, and wonted readinesse in provoking me unto that, wherein your selfe now faulte. If there bee any such thing in hatching, I pray you hartily, lette us knowe, before al the worlde see it. But if happily you dwell altogether in Justinians courte, and give your selfe to be devoured of secreate studies, as of likelyhood you doe : yet at least imparte some your olde, or newe, Latine, or Englishe, eloquent and gallant poesies to us, from whose eyes, you saye, you keepe in a manner nothing hidden.*"

"Little newes is here stirred ; but that olde grea'e matter still depending. His^h Honoure never better. I thinke the Earthquake was also there wyth you, (which I would gladly learne,) as it was here with us ; overthrowing divers old buildings, and peeces of churches. Sure very straunge to be hearde of in these countries, and yet I heare some saye, (I know not howe truely) that they have knowne the like before in their dayes. *Sed quid vobis videtur magnis Philosophis ?*"

"I like your late Englishe Hexameters so exceedingly well, that I also enure my penne sometime in that kinde : whyche I fynd indeede, as I have heard you often defende in worde, neither so harde nor so harshe, that it will easily and fairely yeelde it selfe to oure moother tongue. For the onely, or chiefest hardnesse, whyche seemeth, is in the accente ; whyche sometime gapeth, and as it were yawneith ilfavouredly ; comming shorte of that it should, and sometime exceeding the measure of the number, as in *Carpenter*, the middle sillable being used shorte in speache, when it shall be read long in verse, seemeth like a lame gosling, that draweth one legge after hir : and *Heaven*, beeing used shorte as one sillable when it is in verse, stretched out with a diastole, is like a lame dogge that holdes up one legge. But it is to be wonne with custome, and rough words must be subdwd with use. For, why a God's name may not we, as 'else the Greekes, have the kingdome of our owne language, and measure our accenttes by the sounde, reserving the quantitie to the verse ?—Loe here I let you see my olde use of toying in rymes, turned into your artificial straightnesse of verse by this *Tetrasticon*. I beseech you tell me your fancie, without parcialitie.

See yee the blindefoulded pretie god, that feathered archer,
Of lovers miseries which maketh his bloodie game ?
Wote ye why, his moother with a veale bath covered his face ?
Truste me, least he my Looove happily chance to beholde"—

I should have omitted the preceding paragraph, for the same reason as I have omitted Harvey's criticism, if I had thought it justifiable to withhold from the reader any *poetical* fragment of Spenser ; for to the name of *poetry* these English hexameters and pentameters, by

^f Life of Spenser, prefixed to the folio edition of his Works in 1679 ; and Hughes's Life of Spenser, prefixed to both his editions of the Works.

^g Ellis's *Specimens of the early English Poets*, Art. Spenser.

^h The Earl of Leicester.

ⁱ *Else* is perhaps a misprint for *als* or *also*.

the expression of the author, evidently pretend; as does the wretched couplet immediately following:

“That which I eate, did I joy, and that which I greedily gorged;
“As for those many goodly matters leaft I for others.”

Spenser afterwards requests Harvey to send him the Rules and Precepts of Art which he observes in quantities; or else to follow those which Drant had devised, Sidney improved, and himself augmented; lest their discrepancy in this *important* point should destroy each other's system! Spenser proceeds:

“Truste me, you will hardly beleewe what greate good liking and estimation Maister Dyer had of youre¹ *satyricall verses*, and I, since the viewe thereof, having before of my selfe had speciall liking of *Englishe versifying*, am even nowe aboute to give you some token what, and howe well therein, I am able to doe: for, to tell you trueth, I mynde shortly, at convenient leysure, to sette forthe a booke in this kinde, whyche I entitle, *Epithalamion Thamesis*; whyche booke I dare undertake wil be very profitable for the knowledge, and rare for the invention, and manner of handling. For, in setting forth the marriage of the Thames, I shewe his first beginning and offspring, and all the countrey that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this wedding, and their righte names, and right passage, &c. a worke, beleewe me, of much labour, wherein, notwithstanding, Master Holinshed hath mucche furthered and advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their course, til they fall into the sea.

*O Tite, siquid, ego,
Ecquid erit pretii?*

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my *Dreames*, and *Dying Pellicane*, being fully finished, (as I partely signified in my laste letters) and presentlye to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my ^k *Faerie Queene*, whyche I praye you hartily send me with al expedition; and your friendly letters, and long expected judgement withal, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes such as you ordinarily use, and I extraordinarily desire. *Multum vale*. Westminster. *Quarto non. Aprilis* [Apr. 10.] 1580. *Sed, amato te, Meum Corculum tibi se ex animo commendat plurimum: jamdiu mirata, te nihil ad literas suas responsi dedisse. Vide quæso, ne id tibi Capitale sit: mihi certè quidem erit, neque tibi hercle impune, ut opinor. Iterum vale, et quàm voles sæpè.*

Yours alwayes to commaunde,

IMMERITO.

Postscripte.

I take best my *Dreames* shoulde come forth alone, being grown by means of the Glosse, (running continually in manner of a paraphrase,) full as great as my *Calendar*. Therin be some things excellently, and many things wittily, discoursed of E. K., and the pictures so singularly set forth and purtrayed, as, if Michael Angelo were there, he could (I tlink) nor amende the best, nor reprehend the worst. I know you would lyke them passing wel. Of my ^l *Stemmata Dudleiana*, and especially of the sundry apostrophes therein, addressed you knowe to whom, muste more advisement be had, than so lightly to sende them abroad: howbeit, trust me (though I doe never very well) yet, in my owne fancie, I never dyd better: *Veruntamen te sequor solùm; nunquam verò assequar.*²

While this Letter was on its way to Harvey, Harvey had dispatched a long epistle to Spenser, dated the 7th of April, the day after the earthquake had happened; to which event

¹ Spenser, it seems, had prefixed to these satyricall verses a Sonnet. See Harvey's *Four Letters, and certaine Sonnets*, 1592. Sign F. 3. b. where Harvey, having given a dozen of his own hexameters, adds: “the verse is not unknown; and runneth in one of those *unsatyricall Satyres*, which M. Spenser long since embraced with an overlooving Sonnet: a token of his affection, not a testimony of hys judgement.” The Sonnet is lost; as is another poem also, of which E. K. has given us a line in his notes on the sixth Eclogue of the *Shepheards Calendar*.

^k This is a direct proof that Spenser had begun his great poem; he desires the opinion of his friend upon it; which, as we shall presently see, was not calculated to encourage the ardour of the poet.

^l This work appears, by a subsequent extract from Harvey's Letter to Spenser, to have been written in Latin. It was, no doubt, a curious and valuable description of the Earl of Leicester's genealogy: and “the sundry apostrophes therein” we may reasonably suppose to have been addressed to Sir Philip Sidney

Spenser has adverted. The fluency of Harvey's abuse respecting the state of learning and discipline at that time in the University, exclusive of his "short but sharpe and learned judgement of Earthquakes", forms the greater part of this epistle; from which I have already extracted what relates to Spenser's apparent disappointment at Cambridge; and of which species of illiberal remark no other specimen, I conceive, is necessary. What he says of Spenser's finished and intended poetry, is too important to be omitted: "Commeude mee to thine owne good selfe, and tell thy *Dying Pellicane*, and thy *Dreames*, from me, I wil now leave dreaming any longer of them, til with these eyes I see them forth indeede: And then againe, I imagine your *Magnificenza* wil holde us in suspense as long for your *nine English Comedies*, and your Latine *Stemmata Dudleiana*; whiche two shal go for my mony, when all is done; especiallye if you would but bestow one sevensights polishing and trimming upon eyther: Whiche, I pray thee, doe for my pleasure, if not for their sake, nor thine owne profite." There is also an allusion in it (worthy of quotation) to the *puritanical* controversies which had existed at Cambridge; in regard to one of which Spenser had already expressed a strong opinion: "No more adoe about *cappes and surplesses*: Maister *Cartwright* nighe forgotten: The man you wot of, conformable, with his square cappe on his rounde heade, and non resident at pleasure, &c."

After the Letter, from which the preceding extracts have been made, there follows, in the same publication, another without date, entitled "A gallant familiar Letter, containing an answer to that of M. Immerite, with sundry proper examples, and some precepts, of our Englishe reformed Versifying." Of examples which supply occasion principally for animadversion, and of precepts which administer no service to English literature, extensive notice, as I have before hinted, is hardly requisite. Prefixed, however, to the author's *Encomium Lauri*, (one of his *examples*), is a curious remark addressed to Spenser: "Thinke upon Petrarches

Arbor vittoriosa, triumfale,
Onor d' imperadori e di poete :

and perhappes it will advance the wynges of your Imagination a degree higher; at the least if any thing can be added to the loftinesse of his conceits, whom *gentle Mistress Rosalinde* once reported to have all the *Intelligences* at commaundement, and an other time christened him *Signior Pegaso*." This alludes to the pleasant days of love that were gone and past. And it is rather strange that Harvey should introduce a subject, of which the remembrance could not be very pleasing to a deserted lover. The *Encomium Lauri* thus commences; which I cite, in order to introduce Nash's happy burlesque of it :

"What might I call this Tree? A Laurell? O bonny Laurell:
"Needs to thy bowes will I bow this knee, and vayne my bonetto."

And accordingly Nash, in the *Foure Letters confuted*, describes Harvey walking under the "ewe-tree at Trinity Hall," and addressing it in the very same terms; and as making "verses

^m See p. xix. The date is ascertained by a copy of verses on the event in Yates's "Castell of courtesie, whereunto is adioyned the bolde of bn militie, &c." 4to. 1532. Nash is equally severe in regard to Harvey's judgement, and to his brother Richard Harvey's *Astrological discourse*: he calls Gabriel "a rognish commenter upon earthquakes," and Richard's discourse "a lewd piece of propheticie—John Doleta's propbesie of flying dragons, commets, earthquakes, and inundations; of which every miller made a comment, and not an oyster-wife but mockt it." See the *Foure Letters confuted*, 1592; and *Have with you to Saffron-Walden*, 1596.

ⁿ See p. ix., &c.

^o An allusion to the *Faerie Queene*. See Spenser's Letter to Sir Walter Raleigh; "In the person of Prince Arthure I sette forth *Magnificence* in particular, &c."

^p See further remarks on the *nine Comedies* in a subsequent page.

^q The opposition to the "*apparell and garments*" prescribed by the Church of England, had indeed risen to such a height, as to occasion "A Declaration in the name and defence of certaine Ministers in London, refusing to wear the apparell prescribed by the lawes and orders of the realme:" which gave rise to "A briefe examination of the same, in which the judgements of Peter Martyr and Bucer, on the point, are introduced, 4to. bl. l. Impr. by R. Jugg. Spenser's affection to the non-conformists in this circumstance, is visible in the seventh Eclogue of his *Shepheards Calender*."

^r Cartwright was a noted non-conformist as well as a scholar, and is said to have been encouraged by the Earl of Leicester (Spenser's friend) in the well-known opposition to Whitgift. See Isaac Walton's *Life of Hooker*. Cartwright had been fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge; and was Lady Margaret's Professor of Divinity, in the year when Spenser became a member of the University.

of weathercocks on the top of steeples, as he did once of the weathercocke of Allhallows in Cambridge :

" O thou weathercocke, that stands on the top of Allhallows,
" Come thy waies down, if thou dar'st for thy crowne, and take the wall on us !"

Harvey's *Encomium Lauri* is followed by what he calls *Speculum Tuscanismi*, in other words, a representation of the Earl of Oxford, as Nash assures us, and as it was believed by others; although Harvey protests, on finding that "a company of speciall good fellowes would needes forsooth very courtly persuade the Earle that the *Mirror of Tuscanismo* was palpably intended against him," he never meant to dishonour that nobleman with the least prejudicial word of his tongue or pen; and acknowledges his obligations to him while at Christ's College. The *Mirror*, to whomsoever the application belongs, presents a curious description of a person whom (to adopt the phrase of Shakspeare) we must suppose "the glass of fashion," in those days, according to the Italian style; "a nobleman," says Nash, adopting the phrases of Harvey, distinguished by "new-fashioned apparell and Tuscanish gestures, *cringing side neeke, eyes glauncing, fisionic smirking;*" and again, speaking of these Letters to Spenser, he names the Earl of Oxford expressly: Harvey "came verie short but yet sharpe upon my *Lord of Oxford*, in a rattling bundle of English hexameters!" Of which here follows a specimen, as it respects the *new-fashioned apparell*:

" For life *Magnificoes*, not a becke but glorions in shew.—
" Straite to the dock, like a shirte; and close to the britch, like a diving:—
" A little apish hatte, cowed fast to the pate, like an oyster:
" French camarick ruffles, deepe with a witsnesse, starched to the purpose.
" Delicate in speach, queynte in araye, conceited in all poyntes;
" In courtly guyles, a passing singular odde man;
" For Gallantes a brave Myrroure, &c."

In the next observable part of Harvey's Letter, is a metamorphosis of Spenser's Emblems to his third Eclogue into the new-fangled hexameters; an insult to simplicity, not indeed directly offered by Harvey himself; as it is the production, it seems, of his pupil in *this art of versifying*; which, however, he transcribes with apparent ecstasy, and complacently adds, in respect to the barbarous transformation, and to other specimens of his disciple's rapid progress, "not passing a worde or two corrected by mee!"

After jesting with Spenser on the probability of his "living by *Dying Pellicanes*, and purchasing great landes and lordshippes with the money which his *Calendar* and *Dreames* have [afforded] and will affourde him;" he proceeds with the criticism on the *Dreams* already cited; and he adds this cold and tasteless remark upon the *Faerie Queene*: "In good faith I had once againe nigh forgotten your *Faerie Queene*: howbeit, by good channce I have nowe sent hir home at the laste, neither in better nor worse case than I founde hir. And must you, of necessitie, have my judgement of hir in deede? To be plaine; I am voyde of al judgement, if your *nine Comedies*, whereunto, in imitation of Herodotus, you give the names of the Nine Muses, (and in one mans fansie not unworthily,) come not neerer Ariostoes *Comedies*, eyther for the finnesse of plausible elocution, or the rarenesse of poetical invention, than that *Elvish Queene* doth to his *Orlando Furioso*; which, notwithstanding, you wil needes seeme to emulate, and hope to overgo, as you flatly professed yourself in one of your last Letters. Besides that, you know it hath bene the usual practise of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all nations, and specially in *Italie*,

♠ Four Letters, &c. 1592.

† Four Letters confuted, &c. 1592.

⊞ Have with you to Saffron-Walden, 1596. The same fact is repeated in this publication, and in the Four Letters confuted.

∨ See p. x., &c.

∞ "It is to be lamented," says Mr. Cooper Walker in a letter to me, "that Spenser's *nine Comedies*, so much extolled by Harvey, are lost. It is supposed they were not dramatick poems, but a series of lines in nine divisions like the *Tears of the Muses*, and that to each division was given the denomination of *Comedy*; the author using that term in the wide sense in which it was employed by Dante, Boecacio, and other early Italian writers. But I think the words of Harvey are decisive in regard to the form of these pieces. For the *Comedies* of Ariosto, to which he compares the *Comedies* of Spenser, and to which he thinks they come so near, are regular dramas; as are the *Comedies* of Bibbena, Machiavelli, and Aretino, with which he classes them."

rather to shewe and advance themselves that way than any other; as namely, those three dyscoursing heads, Bibiena, Machiavel, and Arctine, did, (to let Bembo and Ariosto passe,) with the great admiration and wonderment of the whole country; being indeede reputed matchable in all points, both for conceyt of witte and eloquent decyphering of matters, either with Aristophanes and Menander in Greek, or with Plautus and Terence in Latin, or with any other in any other tong. But I wil not stand greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be the *Faery Queene* be fairer in your eie than the Nine Muses, and Hobgoblin runne away with the garland from Apollo; marke what I saye; and yet I will not say that [which] I thought; but there an end for this once, and fare you well till God, or some good Aungell, putte you in a better mind."

To this injudicious opinion of the Faerie Queene, are subjoined some amatory couplets, written by Harvey at the request of "an honest country gentleman" his friend, (as he relates,) who desired to present his mistress with a rhyming token of his affection. They are addressed "To my good Mistresse Anne, the very lyfe of my lyfe, &c." and begin;

"Gentle Mistresse Anne, I am plaine by nature;
"I was never so farre in love with any creature, &c."

and I have mentioned them only to rescue Spenser from the charge of having composed them; for Mr. Chalmers has^a said, that Shakspeare doubtless saw *these verses of Spenser*; which he contends are the precedent for Shakspeare's epistle, and the archetype of his verses, to Anna Hathererwaye. To the poetical offences of Spenser, however, these rhymes are clearly not to be added.—

To return to Spenser's employments: If, as^b it has been supposed, his journey to the continent did not take place; he did not, however, remain long a stranger to the business of active life. In July 1580, ^c Arthur, Lord Grey of Wilton, departed from England as Lord Lieutenant for Ireland; ^d to whom Spenser was appointed Secretary. In the Sidney Papers, published by Collins, there is an excellent ^e Letter of Sir Henry Sidney to this nobleman, on account of his promotion, and with a view to assist his administration; Sir Henry having acted in that kingdom, as Lord Justice or Lord Deputy, about eleven years. To Sir Henry Sidney also Lord Grey was allied; and Sir Henry had married the Earl of Leicester's sister. Spenser, therefore, we may reasonably suppose, was particularly indebted, on this occasion, to the recommendation of Lord Leicester. Lord Grey was recalled in 1582. And with him Spenser probably returned to England.

Of this nobleman Spenser has made frequent mention in his View of the State of Ireland; defending his reputation against hasty censures; asserting, with affectionate zeal, his glory; and expressing, with amiable gratitude, his obligations to him; on which point he dwells more particularly in the Sonnet sent to his Lordship with the first edition of the *Faerie Queene*. To the interest of Lord Grey, joined to that of Lord Leicester and Sir Philip Sidney, Spenser probably owed the grant ^f from Queen Elizabeth of 3028 acres in the county of Cork, out of

^x Apology for the Believers of the Shakspeare MSS. p. 176.

^y See the Life of Spenser, prefixed to Church's edition of the *Faer. Qu.* and the *Biograph. Brit.*

^z The very important Instructions to this Nobleman, on his appointment to the vice-royalty, are in the manuscript Library at Lambeth Palace; and numbered 600. p. 236. Dr. Wilkins, formerly Librarian at Lambeth, has confounded this nobleman with Lord Leonard Gray.

^a Phillips, the nephew of Milton, in his *Theatrum Poetarum Anglicanorum*, published in 1675, relates that Sir Philip Sidney procured Spenser the appointment of Secretary to Sir Henry Sidney; and that, upon Sir Henry's return to England, Spenser's employment also ceased. This account is evidently erroneous. It is worthy of remark, however, that a *Mr. Spenser* was employed in a confidential capacity, under the Irish administration soon after Sir Henry's time. But this person was an aged man. See an account of the important employments on which he was deputed to England in the MSS. No. 597. pp. 360, 361, 362, 366, &c. Sir William Pelham, Lord Justice of Ireland, speaks of this *Mr. Spenser* with great respect, styling him "his brother Spenser, as now growing into yeares, and having many waies deserved some consideration from her Maiestie." This letter is dated July 14, 1580.

^b Vol. i. p. 279, &c.

^c It has been lately mentioned by an elegant critick, speaking of the poet's situation under Lord Grey in 1580. that "he wrote a *Discourse on the State of Ireland*, containing many judicious observations on the schemes of policy proper for that country. His services to the crown were rewarded with a grant of 3028 acres in the county of Cork, &c." Dr. Aikin's account of Spenser's Life, &c. prefixed to the edition of the poems in 1802. This seems to imply that Spenser's

the forfeited lands of the Earl of Desmond. The grant is said to be dated ^d June 27. 1586. In the October following he lost his friend and patron, Sir Philip Sidney; whose death he has tenderly lamented in the pastoral Elegy, entitled *Astrophel*; and whom he has taken many opportunities of introducing into his poetry as a model of virtue and honour and learning, as well as the theme of his own affection. Sidney indeed was universally ^eadmired and beloved. After this melancholy event, he repaired again to Ireland, being indeed obliged, by the royal patent, to ^fcultivate the land assigned to him.

The residence of Spenser was at Kilcolman in the County of Cork. It is thus described by an able topographer. ^g "Two miles Northwest of Doneraile is Kilcolman, a ruined castle of the Earls of Desmond; but more celebrated for being the residence of the immortal Spenser, where he composed his divine poem *The Faerie Queene*. The castle is now almost level with the ground. It was situated on the North side of a fine lake, in the midst of a vast plain, terminated to the East by the county of Waterford mountains; Bally-howra hills to the North, or, as Spenser terms them, the mountains of Mole; Nagle mountains to the South; and the mountains of Kerry to the West. It commanded a view of above half of the breadth of Ireland; and must have been, when the adjacent uplands were wooded, a most pleasant and romantick situation; ^h from whence, no doubt, Spenser drew several parts of the scenery of his poem. The river Mulla, which he more than once has introduced in his poems, ran through his grounds." Here indeed the poet has described himself, as ⁱkeeping his flock under the foot of the mountain Mole, amongst the cool shades of green alders by the shore of Mulla; and charming his oaten pipe (as his custom was) to his fellow shepherd-swains.

In this delightful retreat he was visited by Sir Walter Raleigh, with whom he had formed an ^jintimacy on his first arrival in Ireland; Raleigh being at that time a captain in the Queen's army. As Raleigh had greatly contributed, by his ^kactivity, to suppress the rebellion of Desmond; a considerable portion of that nobleman's forfeited property had been ^lgranted

View of the State of Ireland had occasioned the royal bounty. But that is a mistake. The *View of the State of Ireland* was not written before 1596, as I shall presently shew in my remarks on this eminent proof of Spenser's political abilities.

^d Dr. Birch's *Life of Spenser*, prefixed to the edition of the *Faerie Queene* in 1751; and the *Biograph. Brit.*

^e Oldys, in his manuscript additions to Winstanley's *Lives of the English Poets*, says "that he could muster up two hundred authors who had spoken in praise of Sir Philip Sidney."

^f The persons, to whom the forfeited lands were granted, were accordingly named *Undertakers*. See Dr. Birch's *Life* ut suprà. and the *Biogr. Brit.* It appears that the annual rent of Spenser's 3028 acres was valued at £ 17. 7s. 6d.

^g Smith's *Nat. & Civ. Hist. of the County and City of Cork*, vol. i. p. 333. edit. Dublin, 1774.

^h See the *Sonnets to the Earl of Ormond and Lord Grey*; *Colin Clouts come home again*; and the *Faer. Qu.* iv. xi. 41, vii. vi. 36, &c.

ⁱ *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 57, &c. Mr. Thomas Warton has, with much elegance, represented him forming the following poetical wish in regard to this pleasant spot. The lines have not appeared in the late edition of Mr. Warton's *Poems*. They have been communicated to me by his nephew, the Rev. John Warton.

VOTUM SPENSERI.

Hoc cecinit facili Spenserus arundine carmen,
 Quà virides saltus lucida Mulla rigat:
 Dii facite, inter oves interque armenta canendo
 Deficiam, et sylvis me premat atra dies;
 Ut mihi muscoso fiat de cespite bustum,
 Quà recubat prono quercus opaca jugo:
 Quin ipso tumuli de vertice pululet ultrò
 Laurus, et injussæ prosiliant hederæ:
 Spissaque pascentes venerentur clausa capellæ,
 Et propter cineres plurima halet ovis.
 Exultent alii prædixite marmore manes,
 Quà reges, validi quà jacuere duces:
 Ingentis quà latè operosa per atria templi
 Funerum ingeminant organa ritè melos;
 Quà sub formicibus sublimibus, ordine crebro,
 Suspensum aureolis fulget aplustre notis:
 Mi sat erit, veteres Rosalinda agnoscat amores,
 Conserat et vernas ante sepulchra rosas.

^j Dr. Birch's *Life of Spenser* prefixed to the edit. of the *Faer. Qu.* 1751, and *Biograph. Brit.*

^k *Hollinshed's Chron.* fol. 1586. *Ireland*, pp. 169, 170, 171.

^l Twelve thousand acres in the counties of Waterford and Cork. See Cox's, and from him Leland's, *Hist. of Ireland*. The *Biographia Britannica* asserts, on no authority however, that Raleigh's division was no less than thirty thousand acres. The forfeited property of Desmond is said to have consisted of near five hundred and eighty thousand acres.

to him. Whether Raleigh came voluntarily to take a view of his late-acquired seignory; or whether he retired from the Court of England in consequence of a disagreement with the Earl of Essex, which some writers believe; it appears, that his visit to Kilcolman occasioned an event of high importance in the history of literature; the determination of Spenser to prepare his first three Books of the *Faerie Queene* for immediate publication.

In a Letter, dated ^m August 17. 1589, from Captain Francis Allen to Antony Bacon, Esqr it is related that "My Lord of Essex hath chased Mr. Raleigh from the Court, and confined him into Ireland." Perhaps then Raleigh did not directly touch upon the Irish coast, in his return from the Portugal expedition, as ⁿ some assert; but probably left England in the summer of 1589. A poet himself, and the author of a poem^o in praise of the Queen, he could not but listen with delight to the design which Spenser had formed. Spenser tells us that Raleigh, sitting beside him under the shady alders on the banks of Mulla, often "provoked him to play some pleasant fit;

"And, when he heard the musicke which I made,
 "He found himselfe full greatly pleas'd at it;
 "Yet, æmuling my pipe, he tooke in hand
 "My pipe, before that æmuled of many,
 "And plaid thereon; (for well that skill he had;
 "Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any."

Encouraged by the judgement of this accomplished person, as he had probably long before been by that of Sidney, Spenser soon afterwards committed his *Faerie Queene* to the press; for at the end of the third Book, which was the conclusion of the first edition, he explains the general nature of his poem in a Letter to Sir Walter, dated Jan. 23. 1589-90. Before the reader, who is unacquainted with Spenser's allegorical manner, shall peruse the poem; it is adviseable for him to attend to this explanatory epistle. Both the title-page of the Work, and this Letter to Raleigh, inform us that the *Faerie Queene* was to have been "disposed into *twelve Books, fashioning XII Morall Vertues.*" But this intention was not accomplished; of which circumstance I shall presently take further notice. I know not whether Spenser might be influenced, in his division of the Moral Vertues, by a work which specifies *the twelve virtues* becoming a man of rank and courage; for I have not been able to procure a sight of this rare and curious publication. But I think it right to mention the existence of such a book; and I cite ^r De Bure as my authority: "Le Livre de droit d'Armes, &c. Paris, Verard, 1488. in fol. Cette édition est assez recherchée à cause de son antiquité, qui la rend recommandable. Il se trouve à la fin des exemplaires une petite pièce qui contient en abrégé *les XII Vertus que doit avoir un homme pour être Noble, & de noble courage.* Cette dernière petite Pièce est en Rithme Françoisë."

To the end of the third Book were annexed, beside the Letter to Raleigh, the poetical commendations of friends to whose opinion the Poem had been submitted; as of Raleigh himself, in two copies of verses subscribed W. R.; of Gabriel Harvey, under the name (by which he is repeatedly distinguished in Spenser's works) of Hobynoll; and of others, whose names it is now impossible to unravel with certainty by the help only of initial letters. These are followed by Spenser's Sonnets to various persons of distinction; the number of which is augmented in the next edition. It appears to have been the custom of the time for an author to present, with a copy of his publication, ^s poetical addresses of this kind to his superiors.

^m Dr. Birch's Memoirs of Q. Eliz. Vol. i. p. 55. But see Raleigh's own Letter, dated in 1589, presently cited.

ⁿ The writers in the Biograph. Brit.

^o Entitled *Cynthia*. See Spenser's *Sonnet* to Raleigh, sent with the first three Books of the *Faerie Queene*; his *Letter* to him explaining the design of the Poem; *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 166; and the *Introduction* to the third Book of the *F. Q.* This poem, which Spenser has highly commended, was never published.

^p *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 69, &c.

^q See also Warton's preliminary Essay on Spenser's allegorical character.

^r Bibliograph. Instructive, Sciences et Arts, No. 2130.—Spenser's design probably suggested a hint to the author of the following work: "Vertue Triumphant, or a lively description of the *Four Vertues Cardinall*, dedicated to the Kings Majesty, 4to. Lond. 1603." The dedication is signed, William Leighton.

^s The reader, who is conversant with ancient English poetry, must often have observed the numerous Sonnets prefixed.

That Spenser then *completed* the first three Books of his *Faerie Queene* in Ireland, is not only præsumable from the visit of Raleigh, and from the Sonnets to the Earl of Ormond and the Lord Grey; but is further illustrated in his friend Lodowick Bryskett's *Discourse of Civill Life; containing the Ethike part of Morall Philosophie*; a book published in 1606, but written, as Mr. Malone ingeniously conjectures, between 1584 and 1589. The Discourse is "written to the right honorable Arthur late Lord Grey of Wilton." The introduction describes a party assembled at the author's cottage near Dublin; consisting of "Dr. Long, Primate of Ardmagh; Sir Robert Dillon, Knight; M. Dormer, the Queenes Sollicitor; Capt. Christopher Carleil; Capt. Thomas Norreis; Capt. Warham St. Leger; Capt. Nicholas Dawtrey; and *M. Edmond Spenser, late your Lordships Secretary*; and Th. Smith, apothecary." Of this remarkable and valuable publication, in which Spenser describes, or is made to describe, the moral intention of his Poem, little notice has hitherto been taken. Some extracts from it, I am persuaded, will be highly acceptable to the reader. They bear eminent testimony to the amiable temper, as well as to the extensive learning, of Spenser.

The conversation having been directed to the writings of the ancient philosophers, Bryskett makes this remark. "Herein do I greatly envie the happinesse of the Italians, who have in their mother-tongue late writers that have, with a singular easie method, taught all that which Plato or Aristotle have confusedly or obscurely left written. Of which, some I have begun to reade with no small delight; as Alexander Piccolomini, Gio. Baptista Giraldi, and Guazzo; all three having written upon the Ethick part of Morall Philosophie both exactly and perspicuously. And would God that some of our countrimen would shew themselves so wel affected to the good of their countrie, (whereof one principall and most important part consisteth in the instructing of men to vertue,) as to set downe in English the precepts of those parts of Morall Philosophy, whereby our youth might, without spending of so much time as the learning of those other languages require, speedily enter into the right course of vertuous life. In the meane while I must struggle with those bookes which I understand, and content myselfe to plod upon them, in hope that God (who knoweth the sincerenesse of my desire) will be pleased to open my understanding so as I may reape that profit of my reading, which I travell for. Yet is there a gentleman in this company, whom I have had often a purpose to intreate, that, as his leisure might serve him, he would vouchsafe to spend some time with me to instruct me in some hard points which I cannot of myselfe understand; knowing him to be not only perfect in the Greeke tongue, but also very well read in Philosophie both morall and naturall. Nevertheless, such is my bashfulness as I never yet durst open my mouth to disclose this my desire unto him, though I have not wanted some hartuing thereunto from himselfe. For, of his love and kindnes to me, he encouraged me long sithens to follow the reading of the Greeke tongue, and offered me his helpe to make me understand it. But now that so good an opportunitie is offered unto me to satisfis in some sort my desire, I thinke I should commit a great fault, not to myselfe alone, but to all this company, if I should not enter my request thus farre as to move him to spend this time, which we have now destined to familiar discourse and conversation, in declaring unto us the great benefites which men obtaine by the knowledge of Morall Philosophie, and in making us to know what the same is, what be the parts thereof, whereby vertues are distinguished from vices.—Therefore, said I, turning myselfe to *M. Spenser*, It is you, sir, to whom it pertaineth to shew yourselfe courteous now unto us all, and to make us all beholding unto you for the pleasure and profit which we shall gather from your speeches, if you shall vouchsafe to open unto us the goodly cabinet, in which this excellent treasure of vertues lieth locked up from the vulgar sort. And thereof in the behalfe of all, as for myselfe, I do most earnestly intreate

or subjoined, to works published in the age of Elizabeth. It was the age of adulation. I have had occasion to notice, in the instance of Henry Lok's *Ecclesiastes paraphrased*, which was published in 1597, the circumstance of the Sonnet to each particular person being also detached from the rest, and transferred accordingly to the first leaf of the Copy of the work presented by the author.

^a Lond. Printed for Ed. Blount, 1606. 4to. The book is not often to be met with.

^c Dr. Birch mentions the book, at the end of his Life of Spenser, prefixed to the edition of the *Faerie Queene* in 1751; but his account of it is very brief and unsatisfactory.

you not to say us nay. Unto which words of mine every man applauding, most with like words of request, and the rest with gesture and countenances expressing as much, *M. Spenser* answered in this manner.

“ Though it may seeme hard for me to refuse the request made by you all, whom, every one alone, I should for many respects be willing to gratifie ; yet, as the case standeth, I doubt not but, with the consent of the most part of you, I shall be excused at this time of this taske which would be laid upon me. For sure I am that it is not unknowne unto you, that I have already undertaken a WORK TENDING TO THE SAME EFFECT, which is in *heroical verse*, under the title of a *Faerie Queene*, TO REPRESENT ALL THE MORAL VERTUES ; assigning to every *Virtue a Knight*, to be the patron and defender of the same ; in whose actions and feates of armes and chivalry, the operations of that vertue, whereof he is the protector, are to be expressed ; and the rices and unruly appetites, that oppose themselves against the same, to be beaten downe and overcome. Which work, as I have already well entered into, if God shall please to spare me life that I may finish it according to my mind ; your wish, *M. Bryskett*, will be in some sort accomplished, though perhaps not so effectually as you could desire. And the same may very well serve for my excuse, if at this time I crave to be forborne in this your request ; since any discourse, that I might make thus on the sudden in such a subiect, would be but simple and little to your satisfactions. For it would require good advisement and premeditation for any man to undertake the declaration of these points that you have proposed, containing in effect the Ethicke part of Morall Philosophie. Whereof since I have taken in hand to discourse at large in my poeme before spoken, I hope the expectation of that work may serve to free me at this time from speaking in that matter, notwithstanding your motion and all your intreaties. But I will tell you how I thinke by himselfe he may very well excuse my speech, and yet satisfie all you in this matter. I have scene, as he knoweth, a translation made by himselfe out of the Italian tongue, of a dialogue comprehending all the Ethick part of Moral Philosophy, written by one of those three he formerly mentioned ; and that is by *Giraldi*, under the title of a dialogue of civil life. If it please him to bring us forth that translation to be here read among us ; or otherwise to deliver to us, as his memory may serve him, the contents of the same ; he shal, I warrant you, satisfie you all at the ful ; and himselfe will have no cause but to thinke the time well spent in reviewing his labors, especially in the company of so many of his friends, who may thereby reape much profit ; and the translation happily fare the better by some mending it may receive in the perusing, as all writings else may do, by the often examination of the same. Neither let it trouble him, that I so turne over to him againe the taske he would have put me to : for it falleth out fit for him to verifie the principall part of all this apologie, even now made for himselfe ; because thereby it will appeare that he hath not withdrawne himself from service of the State to live idle, or wholly private to himselfe, but hath spent some time in doing that which may greatly benefit others ; and hath served not a little to the bettering of his owne

¶ See his Letter to *Harvey*, already cited, dated April 10, 1580.

¶ The commencement of this Discourse explains the allusion of *Spenser*, “ When it pleased you, my good Lord,” says *Bryskett* to *Lord Grey*, “ upon the decease of Maister *Iohn Chaloner*, her Maesties Secretarie of this State, which you then governed as Lord Deputie of this Realme, to make choice of me to supply that place, and to recommend me by your honorable letters to that effect, I received a very sufficient testimonie of your good opinion and favourable inclination towards me. And albeit your intention and desire in that behalfe tooke not effect, whether through my unworthinesse, or by the labour and practise of others ; yet because your testimonie was to me *instar miltorum Iudicium*, and because that repulse served you as an occasion to do me after a greater favor, I have evermore sithens caried a continual desire to shew myselfe thankfull to your Lordship. For when, at my humble sute, you vouchsafed to graunt me libertie without offence to resign the office which I had then held seven yeares, as *Clerke of this Council*, and to withdraw myselfe from that thanklesse toyle to the quietnes of my intermitted studies, I must needs confesse, I held myselfe more bound unto you therefore then for all other the benefits which you had bestowed upon me, and all the declarations of honorable affection, whereof you had given me many testimonies before.” *Bryskett*, in his address “ to the gentle and discret reader,” relates that “ the work had long layne by him.” Among the *Carew* manuscripts in the Library at *Lambeth* palace, there is a Letter from Secretary *Cecil* to *Sir George Carew*, dated Nov. 19. 1600. (No. 604, p. 59,) wherein *Cecil* expresses “ the regard he has of *Mr. Bryskett* as an ancient servitor in Ireland and well deserving ;” and recommends his cause, respecting an interest which the Queen had granted him in the *Albhey of Bridgetown*, very strongly to *Sir George* ; *Bryskett* being absent, and “ now imployed by her Ma^y into the partes beyond the seas for her service.” It appears to have held the office also of Clerk to the Council of *Munster*, after *Spenser* ; of which circumstance I shall have occasion to take further notice.

mind, and increasing of his knowledge; though he for modesty pretend much ignorance, and pleade want in wealth; much like some rich beggars, who either of custom or for covetousnes, go to begge of others those things whereof they have no want at home.

“With this answer of *M. Spensers*, it seemed that all the company were wel satisfied: for after some few speeches, whereby they had shewed an extreme longing after his worke of the *Faerie Queene*, whereof some parcels had bin by some of them seene, they all began to presse me to produce my translation mentioned by *M. Spenser*, that it might be perused among them; or else that I should, as neare as I could, deliver unto them the contents of the same, supposing that my memory would not much faile me in a thing so studied, and advisedly set downe in writing, as a translation must be.”

With this request Bryskett at length complied; and he accordingly proceeds to deliver his translation of Giraldi; premising that “he must now presuppose that they, whom he esteems to be as those gentlemen introduced [in the dialogue] by this author, have likewise moved the same question which they did; to wit, What maner of life a gentleman is to undertake and propose to himselfe, to attaine to that end in this world which among wisemen hath bene, and is, accounted the best; beginning from the day of his birth, and so guiding him therein untill he be meet to purchase the same end: And likewise, where any occasion of doubt or question for the better understanding may happen in the Discourse, that some one of them, desiring to be resolved therein wil demaund such questions as shal be needfull.” A few questions are accordingly proposed by *Spenser, arising principally from the discussion of the doctrines of Plato and Aristotle.

The first edition of the *Faerie Queene* being at length prepared for the press, it is probable that Spenser accepted the proposal of Raleigh to accompany him to England. The Dedication of *Colin Clouts come home again* represents that poem as “agreeing with the truth in circumstance and matter;” and the patronage of Raleigh is thus related in the Pastoral:

“When thus our pipes we both had wearied well,
 “(Quoth he,) and each an end of singing made,
 “He gan to cast great lyking to my lore,
 “And great dislyking to my lucklesse lot,
 “That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore,
 “Into that waste, where I was quite forgot.
 “The which to leave, thenceforth he counseld mee,
 “Unneet for man, in whom was ought regardfull,
 “And wend with him, his Cynthia to see;
 “Whose grace was great, and bounty most rewardfull—
 “So what with hope of good, and hate of ill,
 “He me perswaded forth with him to fare.—
 “So to the sea we came, &c.”

Raleigh afterwards introduced him to the Queen; and the Queen inclined her ear, with satisfaction, to his † “simple song,” as Spenser modestly denominates his poetry.

It has been long a received opinion, that he was nominated Poet Laureate. His cotemporaries certainly considered him worthy of the title; and frequently speak of him in terms appropriate to that distinction. Thus Webbe, in his *Discourse of English Poetrie*, published in 1586, contends that Spenser “may well wear the *garlande*, and step before the best of all English poets.” And, what is very remarkable, in the third edition of the *Shepheards Calender*, which was also published in 1586, the elder reading of the following verse in the twelfth Eelogue, “The *rurall* song of carefull Colinet,” (where Colinet means Spenser), is changed into “The *laurell* song &c.” The writer of the Sonnet addressed to Florio in his *Second Frutes*, published in 1592, seems to point at *Spenser* by a similar expression:

“So when that all our English witts lay dead,
 “Except the *Laurell* that is ever greene,
 “Thou with thy Frutes our barrennes o’re-spread, &c.”

And Nash, in his *Supplication of Pierce Pennilesse*, published in the same year, declares that he

* Pages 163, 271, &c. to the end of the book.

† *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 178.

‡ *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 192, &c.

had intended to "decypher the^a excesse of gluttonie at large, but that a *new Laureat* sav'd him the labor." But the fact is, as Mr. Malone has accurately stated it :^b "Undoubtedly Elizabeth had no Poet Laureate, till in February 1590-1 she conferred on Spenser a pension of fifty pounds a year, the grant of which was discovered some years ago in the Chapel of the Rolls; from which time to his death in 1598-9, he may properly be considered as filling this office, though, like most of his predecessors, and his two immediate successors, he is not expressly styled *Laureate* in his Patent."

The discovery of this Patent by Mr. Malone, refutes the calumny which^c several biographers of Spenser have thrown upon the character of Lord Burleigh, in their relation of the following pretended circumstances : That Burleigh told the Queen the pension was beyond example too great to be given to a *ballad-maker* : That the payment of the pension was intercepted by Burleigh : That when the Queen, upon Spenser's presenting some poems to her, ordered him the gratuity of an hundred pounds, his Lordship asked, with some contempt of the poet, *What ! all this for a Song?* and that the Queen replied, *Then give him what is reason* : That Spenser, having long waited in vain for the fulfilment of the royal order, presented to her this ridiculous memorial ;

" I was promis'd on a time
" To have reason for my rhyme ;
" From that time unto this season
" I receiv'd nor rhyme nor reason :"

That these magical numbers produced the desired effect, in the immediate direction of payment to the insulted poet, as well as in the reproof of the adverse Lord Treasurer ! Such is the substance of this marvellous opposition to the privilege conferred on Spenser by Elizabeth, varied and improved by the biographers ; of which opposition the account originates, it seems, in the facetious^d Dr. Fuller's *Worthies of England*, (a work published at the distance of more than seventy years afterwards,) unsupported by requisite authority.

The generosity of Elizabeth would, doubtless, have been the theme of Puttenham's admiration, if it had been shewn a little sooner ; for, in his *Art of English Poesie*, published in 1589, he has written^e a chapter, evidently with a view to excite her Majesty's attention to the neglected bards of that period, entitled "In what reputation Poesie and Poets were in old time with Princes, and otherwise generally ; and how they be now become contemptible, and for what causes ?" The object of the author, I say, is apparent by his enumeration of the bounty of preceding English monarchs to the poets : "In later times, how much were Iehan de Mehune and Guillaume de Loris made of by the French kinges ; and Geoffrey Chancer, father of our English poets, by Richard the second, who, as it was supposed, gave him the maner of new Holme in Oxfordshire.—And king Henry the 8. her Maiesties father, for a few Psalmes of David turned into English meetre by Sternhold, made him groome of his privy chamber, and gave him many other good gifts. And one Gray, what good estimation did he grow unto with the same king Henry, and afterward with the Duke of Sommerset, Protectour, for making certaine merry Ballades, whereof one chiefly was, *The hunte is vp, the hunte is vp*. And Queene Mary, his daughter, for one Epithalamie or nuptiall Song made by Vargas, a Spanish Poet, at her marriage with king Phillip in Winchester, gave him during his life two hundred crownes pension."

After the publication of the *Faerie Queene* in 1590, Spenser returned to Ireland. And such was now the fame of his poetical character, that the bookseller, for whom that work had been printed, eagerly collected together and published, in the succeeding year, "COMPLAINTS, containing sundrie small Poemes of the Worlds Vanitie, viz. 1. The Ruines of Time. 2. The Teares of the Muses. 3. Virgils Gnat. 4. Prosopopoeia, or Mother Hubberds Tale. 5. The Ruines of

^a An apparent allusion to *Faer. Qu.* ii. xii. 3, where the poet describes the *Gulfe of Greednesse*.

^b Life of Dryden, p. 84.

^c Life of Spenser prefixed to the folio edition of his Works in 1679; Winstanley's *Lives of the English Poets*; Hughes's *Life of Spenser*; Dr. Birch's *Life of Spenser*; *Life of Spenser* in the *Universal Magazine*, vol. xlix. &c.

^d Dr. Birch's *Life of Spenser*, p. xlii. But indeed the biographer seems not to rely implicitly on Fuller's testimony.

^e Chap. viii. p. 12.

Rome, by Bellay. 6. *Mniopotmos*, or the Tale of the Butterflie. 7. *Visions of the Worlds Vanitie*. 8. *Bellayes Visions*. 9. *Petrarches Visions*:" to which is prefixed the following address of "The Printer to the Gentle Reader. Since my late setting forth of the *Faerie Queene*, finding that it hath found a favourable passage amongst you; I have sithence endeavoured, by all good meanes, (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your delights,) to get into my handes such smale Poemes of the same Authors as I heard were disperst abroad in sundrie hands; and not easie to bee come by, by himselve; some of them having bene diverslie imbeziled, and purloyned from him, *since his departure over sea*. Of the which I have, by good meanes, gathered together these fewe parcels present, which I have caused to bee imprinted altogether, for that they all seeme to containe like matter of argument in them; being all complaints and meditations of the worlds vanitie, verie grave and profitable. To which effect I understand that he besides wrote sundrie others, namelie, *Ecclesiastes*, and *Canticum Canticorum*, translated; ^h *A Senights Slumber*; ⁱ *The Hell of Lovers*; *his Purgatorie*; being all dedicated to Ladies; so as it may seeme he meant them all to one volume: besides some other Pamphlets looselic scattered abroad; as ^j *The Dying Pellican*; *The Hovers of the Lord*; *The Sacrifice of a Sinner*; ^k *The Seven Psalmes*, &c. which when I can, either by himselve or otherwise, attaine to, I meane likewise, for your favour sake, to set forth; in the meane time praying you gentlie to accept of these, and graciouslie to entertaine the ^l *new Poet*.

Of the pieces contained in the *Complaints*, the *Mniopotmos* alone is said to be a re-publication. Dr. Birch, and the author of the *Life of Spenser* prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the *Faerie Queene*, assert that it had been published in 1590; and indeed it differs from the rest in bearing on the title the date of that year. For this reason I have given it the precedency, in this edition of Spenser's smaller poems; at the same time not denying that the date may be an error of the press; inasmuch as in the *Visions of the Worlds Vanitie*, and in the *Visions of Petrarch*, there is an address apparently intended to the Lady to whom the *Mniopotmos* is dedi-

^f The spirit of versifying the Psalms, and other parts of the Bible, at the beginning of the Reformation, was, says Mr. Warton, almost as epidemick as psalm-singing. *Hist. of Eng. Poet.* vol. iii. p. 180.

^g Of *Ecclesiastes* I find Dr. Drant to have been a translator into Latin verse. See Tanner's *Bib. Brit.* p. 233. And I have seen a laboured poetical paraphrase of this Book in English, by Henry L k, published in 1597.

^h In the age of Elizabeth, numerous were the poetical versions of the *Canticles*. See Warton's *Hist. of Eng. Poet.* vol. iii. p. 37. &c.

ⁱ Tasso appears to have employed his pen in a very poetical manner in a Canzone, taken, in some degree, from the *Song of Songs*. See this beautiful Canzone, first printed from a manuscript in the Barberini Library at Rome, (N^o 3009.) in Maty's Review, May 1796. Art. iv.

^j See before, p. xiv.

^k See his *Hymne in honour of Love*, ver. 265, where he describes the circumstances that "make a lovers life a wretches hell;" and where he adds, in his address to Love, ver. 278.

"So thou thy folke, through paines of *Purgatorie*,
"Dost heare unto thy blisse and heavens glorie."

^l See before, p. xx.

^m William Hunnis, a gentleman of the Chapel Royal under Edward the sixth, and afterwards Master of the Chapel under Elizabeth, might suggest to Spenser this employment of his time; for he wrote and published "Seven sobes of a sorrowfull soule for sinne, comprehending those seven *Psalmes* of the princelie prophet David commonlie called Penitentiall; framed into a forme of familiar prayers, and reduced into meeter, &c." It appears that Camoens, the unfortunate bard of Portugal, had undertaken also a translation of these seven *Psalmes*. The account is related in a manner so interesting by Lord Strangford, the elegant translator of part of Camoens's poetry, as to require no apology for its introduction here: "A cavalier named Ruy de Camera, having called upon our author [Camoens] to finish a poetical version of the seven penitential *Psalmes*; raising his head from his miserable pallet, and pointing to his faithful slave, he exclaimed, 'Alas! when I was a poet, I was young, and happy, and blest with the love of ladies; but now I am a forlorn deserted wretch. See! there stands my poor Antonio, vainly supplicating four-pence to purchase a little coals: I have them not to give him!' The cavalier, as Sousa quaintly relates, closed his heart and his purse, and quitted the room. Such were the grandees of Portugal!" *Poems* &c. from the Portuguese of Luis de Camoens, &c. 12mo 1803, p. 24.

With respect to the translation of several select *Psalmes* into English verse, I think it not foreign to the subject of this note, and I conceive it due to the history of our Poetry, to mention that, among the numerous invaluable manuscripts which belonged to the late Duke of Bridgewater, and now belong to the Marquis of Stafford, there is a volume entitled, "The Soules Banquet, made up of divers divine Rarities;" in which are "Divers selected *Psalmes* of David, in verse, of a different composition from those used in the Church, by Fra: Davison esq. deceased, and other Gent." Of these translations, some are remarkably beautiful. The *Poetical Rapsodie* of Davison, already mentioned, (p. xv.) was published in 1602 and in 1611.

ⁿ Pomsonby, the bookseller, has adopted the name which is applied to Spenser on the publication of the *Shepherds Calender*: See the title to the Epistle of E. K. to Master Gabriel Harvey; to whom E. K. commends "the pstrouae of the new Poet."

cated; no separate title being affixed to the collection of *Visions* which immediately follow the *Muiopotmos*; of which circumstance the biographers have taken no notice.

The *Muiopotmos* is dedicated to Lady Carey; and is worthy of particular attention, on account of Spenser's elegant compliment to the Lady, connected with the avowal of his own honourable descent. "The faithfull minde and humble zeale, which I bear unto your Ladyship, may perhaps be more of price, as may please you to account and use the poor service thereof; which taketh glory to advance your excellent partes and noble vertues, and to spend it selfe in honouring you; not so much for your great bounty to myself, which yet may not be un-minded; nor ^m FOR NAME OR KINDREDS SAKE BY YOU VOUCHSAFED *being also regardable*; as for that honorable name which yee have by your brave deserts purchast to your selfe, and spread in the mouths of all men." Lady Carey is also the poet's *Phyllis* in *Colin Clouts come home again*; to whom he ⁿ repeats the declaration of his alliance. This Lady was Elizabeth, one of the six daughters of Sir John Spenser or ^o Spencer of Althorpe in Northamptonshire; and was married to Sir George Carey, who became Lord Hunsdon on the death of his father in 1596. She was the second daughter. Her issue was an only daughter. Whether Lady Elizabeth Carew, to whom one of the dedicatory Sonnets accompanying the first edition of the *Faerie Queene* is inscribed, be the same person, has been a ^p matter of doubt. Yet Nash's Dedication of his *Christs Tears oer Jerusalem* "to the most honored and vertuous the Lady Elizabeth Carey," seems to over-rule the doubt. "Divers wel-deserving poets have consecrated their endeavours to your praise. *Fames eldest favourite, MAISTER SPENCER, in all his writings hie prizeth you.*" This Lady, as it appears in the Dedication of another curious and very scarce ^q publication by Nash to her daughter, was also a poetess of Spenser's School. The testimony to the merits of a mother and a daughter peculiarly accomplished, is too interesting to be omitted. "To the new kindled cleare Lampe of Virginitie, and the excellent adored high Wonder of sharpe Wit and sweete Beautie, Mistres Elizabeth Carey, sole Daughter and Heire to the thrise noble and renowned Sir George Carey, Knight Marshall, &c.—Against your perfections no tung can except. Miraculous is your wit; and so is acknowledged by the wittiest poets of our age, who have vowed to enshrine you as their second Delia. Temperance her selfe hath not temperater behaviour than you; religious Pietie hath no humble hand-maide that she more delights in. A *worthie Daughter* are you of *so worthie a Mother*; borrowing, as another Phœbe, from her bright sunne-like resplendaunce, the orient beames of your radiaunce. *Into the Muses societie her selfe she hath lately adopted, and purchast divine Petrarch another monument in England.*"

The *Ruines of Time*, which follow the *Muiopotmos*, Spenser dedicates to the Countess of Pembroke, the amiable and learned sister of Sir Philip Sidney. In this poem he deeply laments the loss of his early friend, Sir Philip; while he embalms, in a very interesting as well as grateful manner, the memory "of ^r his stocke and famous familie." The poem is remarkable also for the judicious and honourable commendation which it gives of Camden.

The next poem is the *Tears of the Muses*, which Spenser inscribes to Lady Strange, who is Alice, the sixth daughter of Sir John Spenser; distinguished likewise in *Colin Clouts come home again* by the pastoral name of *Amarillis*. And it is observable that, in this Dedication also, the

ⁿ The nobility of the *Spencers* has been illustrated and enriched by the trophies of Marlborough; but I exhort them to consider the *Fairy Queen* as the most precious jewel of their coronet. Gibbon's *Memoirs of his own Life and writings*.

^m *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 539.

^o The name is spelt both ways, as well in the various publications of the poet which appeared while he lived, as in ancient deeds relating to the honourable family from which he is descended. I have followed that orthography, to which we have been accustomed in respect to the poet's name, and which is copied from both his own editions of the *Faerie Queene*. Sir John Spenser died in 1580, and left five sons as well as six daughters. The family was soon after ennobled. At the present period, the family of *Spencer* is also rendered more particularly interesting in the literary history of this country, by the noble possessor of Althorpe's well-known and judicious accumulation of rare and valuable books, and by the tenderness of the old poet again awakened in the strains of a learned nephew of the Duke of Marlborough.

^p See Brydges's edition of Phillips's *Theatrum Poetarum Anglicanorum*, 8vo. 1800, p. 154.

^q Entitled "The Terrors of the Night, or, A Discourse of Apparitions. Pest tenebras dies. Tho. Nashe. London, printed by Iohn Danter for William Iones, &c. 1594." 4to. Of this work no other copy at present is known to exist, except that which belonged to the late Duke of Bridgewater, and now belongs to the Marquis of Stafford.

^r *Ruines of Time*, ver. 276.

poet introduces his connection with the family. "The causes, for which ye have thus deserved of me to be honoured, (if honour it be at all,) are, both your particular bounties, and also *some private bands of affinitie which it hath pleased your Ladship to acknowledge.*" This Lady married Ferdinando, Lord Strange, who, by his father's death, became Earl of Derby in 1592. He died of poison April 16. 1594. He is lamented under the name of *Amyntas* in *Colin Clouts come home again*; in the subsequent account of which poem I shall notice his accomplishments and his misfortune. He left by this Lady three daughters his coheirs. Spenser, speaking of her widowhood, represents her as

"freed from Cupids yoke by fate;
"Since which she doth new bands adventure dread:"

She conquered these poetical fears, however; and became in 1600 the third wife to Sir Thomas Egerton, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, afterwards Baron of Ellesmere, and Viscount Brackley; by whom she had no issue. John, the only surviving son of the Lord Keeper by his first wife, married the Lady Frances, the second daughter of the Lady then his step-mother; and, almost immediately after the death of his father, was advanced to the Earldom of Bridgewater; an honour, which at the distance of about a century was elevated in his descendants to a Dukedom; but, in consequence of the late Duke dying unmarried, has returned to its original rank in the person of the Right Hon. John William Egerton, the present Earl; the amiableness of whose disposition, and the moral influence of whose publick and private character, will still further endear to society the honourable names of those who are thus connected with the history of Spenser, and whose family also has been celebrated by the muse of Milton. The mask or poem written by Milton, entitled *Arcades*, further illustrates the account of the Lady, to whose patronage Spenser acknowledges his obligations. The Lord Keeper and the Lady jointly purchased the seat, called Harefield place, in Middlesex. Here, in the autumn of 1602, they were honoured with a visit by the Queen; who was received with all the accustomed pageantry of elder days; and, on her departure, was addressed with a *farewell speech*, and with the present of an *anchor jewell*, by "the place of Harville personified, attired in black." And here the *Arcades* was performed, long after the death of her husband, by persons of her own family, the children (it is conjectured) of the Earl of Bridgewater; on whose account the inimitable mask of *Comus* also was composed, and by some of them represented.

Before I pass to the consideration of *Virgils Gnat*, which follows the *Tears of the Muses*; it is necessary to observe that these *tears* or declamations, however elegant, present a melancholy picture of fancied or real discouragements to learning as then existing; which circumstance I shall further notice in the account of *Mother Hubberds Tale*.

To the *Tears of the Muses* succeeds the translation of *Virgils Gnat*, LONG SINCE dedicated, as Spenser tells us, to the Earl of Leicester. The Dedication mentions an enigmatical wrong, which Spenser pretends to have received; and of which I do not consider myself the Oedipus, whom the poet challenges, to unfold the meaning. Mr. Upton conjectures this wrong, resulting from the Earl of Leicester's displeasure, to have been "owing to some kind of officious sedulity in Spenser, who much desired to see his patron married to the queen of England. The historians are full of the Queen's particular attachments to the Earl. She expressed, says Camden, such an inclination towards him, that some have imputed her regard to the influence of the stars. Melvil says, in his Memoirs, that queen Elizabeth freely declared that, had she ever designed to have married, her inclinations would have led her to make choice of him for a husband.

• Collins's Peerage, Art. Earls of Derby, vol. 2. p. 470. edit. 1768.

• Ibid.

• *Colin Clouts come home again*. ver. 566.

• Collins, ut sup. p. 471. And MS. Pedigree of the Egerton family in the possession of the present Earl of Bridgewater.

• Ibid.

• Lysons's Middlesex, p. 108, &c.

• Lodge's Illustr. of Brit. Hist. vol. 3 p. 132. Talbot Papers, vol. 4. p. 43.

• See the edition of Milton published in 1801, vol. 5. p. 146, &c.

• Ibid. p. 194—204.

• See the Dedication to the Poem.

• Preface to his edition of the *Faerie Queene*, pp. xvi. xvii.

For onely worthy you, through prowess prife,
(Yf living man mote worthis be,) to be her life.—*Faer. Qu. i. ix. 17.*

And, according to my plan, with respect to the historical allusions in the *Faerie Queene*, Prince Arthur means the Earl of Leicester.”—Possibly the Earl’s displeasure might have been excited, in consequence of Spenser’s pleading in behalf of archbishop Grindal, who is believed to have incurred the Earl’s enmity on account of his determination to prosecute an Italian physician, whom Leicester wished to protect, as a bigamist.

The next composition, in the *Complaints*, is *Mother Hubbard’s Tale*; which is dedicated to the Lady Compton and Mountegle. This Lady was Anne, the fifth daughter of Sir John Spenser, distinguished also, in the Pastoral of *Colin Clouts come home again*, by the name of *Charillis*. She was married first to Sir William Stanley, Lord Mountegle; next to Henry Compton, Lord Compton; and lastly to Robert Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, afterwards Earl of Dorset; whom the author of the Life of Spenser, prefixed to Mr. Church’s edition of the *Faerie Queene*, has confounded with his father, Thomas Lord Buckhurst. I cannot agree with Mr. Malone,^f that this Lady was the widow of Lord Compton at the time of Spenser’s inscribing this Poem to her; because Spenser tells us, in the Dedication, that “he had long silhens composed this Poem in the raw concept of his youth;” and Lord Compton died in 1589. But in the Poem there is an allusion to Sir Philip Sidney, under the description of *the brave Courtier*, as then living; and he died in 1586. There seems also an allusion in it, by the expressions applied to the coxcomical Ape at Court, to the same person whom Harvey represents, in his answer to Spenser’s Letter of April 7, 1580, as the mirrour of Tuscanism, as a *Magnifico*, &c. The Lady therefore was now the wife of Lord Compton. But, in *Colin Clouts come home again*, she is the wife of Sackville. To this Lady, as to her Sisters, the Poem is inscribed, with “the humble affection and faithful duetie, which,” the poet urges, “I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare to THAT HOUSE from whence yee spring.”

In this^h satirical Poem, reflections on the general instability of Court-favour have often been cited as a proof of Lord Burleigh’s opposition to Spenser:

“Most miserable man, whom wicked fate
Hath brought to Court, to sue for *had-yvist*,
That few have found, and manie one hath mist!
Full little knowest thou, that bast not tride,
What hell it is, in suing long to hide;
To lose good dayes, that might be better spent;
To wast long nights in pensive discontent;
To speed to-day, to be put back to-morrow;
To feed on hope, to pine with feare and sorrow;
To have thy Princes grace, yet want her Peeres;
To have thy asking, yet waite manie yeeres;
To fret thy soule with crosses and with cares;
To eate thy heart through comfortlesse dispaire;
To fawne, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to ronne,
To spend, to give, to want, to be undonne.
Unhappie wight, borne to desastrous end,
That doth his life in so long tendance spend!”

This passage isⁱ supposed to have been represented to Lord Burleigh as a censure upon him. But, at the close of the sixth Book of his *Faerie Queene*, Spenser denies that it was his intention, in any of his writings, to reflect on this “mighty peer.” And, alluding to the monster Detraction who even “spares not the gentle Poet’s rime,” he proceeds;

^d See Strype’s *Life of Archbishop Grindal*, p. 224. And more particularly Harington’s *Briefe View of the State of the Church*, &c. 1653. p. 5.

^e Dr. Birch’s *Life of Spenser*, Upton’s Pref. ut supr. Biograph. Brit. &c.

^f Inquiry into the authenticity of the pretended Shakspeare papers, &c. p. 63.

^g See ver. 665. The precise expression also of Harvey, *Three Letters*, &c. 1580. p. 36. “For life *Magnificos*, &c.” already cited in p. xxii.

^h Harvey appears not to have approved of this poetical satire. For he writes; “I must needs say, *Mother Hubbard* in heat of choler, forgetting the pure sanguine of her sweete Faery Queene, wilfully overshott her malecontented selfe: as elsewhere I have specified at large, with the good leave of unspotted friendshipp.”

ⁱ See Dr. Birch’s *Life of Spenser*.

“ Ne may this homely Verse, of many meanest,
 “ Hope to escape his venomous despite,
 “ More than my FORMER WRITS, all were they cleanest
 “ From blamefull blot, and free from all that wite
 “ With which some wicked tongues did it backebite,
 “ And bring into a mighty Per's displeasure,
 “ That never sa deserved to endite.”

These “former Writs” are conjectured by Mr. Upton, to be the *Pastorals*; in which the poet's commendations of archbishop Grindal, and his reflections on bishop Aylmer, are the topicks that were offensive to Burleigh. Grindal, whom Spenser revered, had certainly experienced some opposition from Burleigh, long before the publication of the *Pastorals*. In a very spirited letter to that nobleman, dated ^k June 26. 1574, the prelate vindicates the attack made upon his character, to which Burleigh, it seems, had given credit; and demands, in consequence of his good name being thus unjustly blotted, and his office slandered, an immediate trial. Three years afterwards, being then archbishop of Canterbury, he was ^l confined to his house and sequestered. And to this disgrace, after describing the merits of Grindal, Spenser alludes in the seventh Eclogue of the *Shepherds Calender*:

Mor. But say mee, what is Algrind, hee
 That is so oft hynempt?
 Tho. Hee is a shepheard great in gree,
 But hath bene long ypent, &c.”

The interference of the poet we must therefore suppose displeasing to the policy of the statesman.

But what can we say of the lines in the *Ruines of Time*, which evidently point at Burleigh?

^m “ For he, that now welts all things at his will,
 “ Scorns th' one and th' other in his deeper skill.
 “ O grieve of griefes! O gall of all good heartes!
 “ To see that vertue should despised bee
 “ Of him, that first was raise'd for vertuous parts,
 “ And now, broad spreading like an aged tree,
 “ Lets none shoot up that nigh him planted bee:
 “ O let the man, of whom the Muse is scorned,
 “ Nor alive nor dead be of the Muse adorned!”

I consider the *Ruines of Time* to have been written almost immediately after the publication of the first edition of the *Faerie Queene*; for it could not have been written till “after the death of Sir Francis Walsingham, who died in April 1590; and Spenser's Letter to Sir Walter Raleigh, at the end of this edition, is dated in January 1589-90. With the *Faerie Queene* a Sonnet had been transmitted to Burleigh, in which Spenser endeavours to sooth the lord treasurer to an acceptance of his “idle rimes.” But in vain. The Introduction to the fourth Book of the *Faerie Queene*, the continuation of the former edition, published in 1596, bears testimony to the coldness of Burleigh:

“ The rugged forehead, that with grave foresight
 “ Weldes kingdomes causes and affaires of state,
 “ My looser rimes, I wote, doth sharply wite
 “ For praising love, &c.”

Burleigh's disapprobation was probably shewn at the first appearance of the *Faerie Queene*; and, to this disdain of his labours, I ascribe the honest indignation of the poet in the *Ruines of*

^k State-Papers, by Murdin, p. 275.

^l Strype's Life of Grindal, p. 231.

^m These lines are inaccurately printed in many editions. But the first, and most flagrant, departure from the original is in the folio of 1611. In consequence of the alteration, the reader would look in vain for this allusion to a particular person; for the application is rendered general:

“ For such as now have most the world at will,
 “ Scorn th' one and th' other &c.”

And, in the remainder of the allusion, the singular number is discarded for the plural; which Hughes and others follow. The editor of the first folio thought the passage perhaps, thus generalised, a *happy touch at the times*; or was anxious, by the removal of particulars, to appease the shade of Burleigh!

ⁿ See the note on the *Ruines of Time*, ver. 436.

Time. In the *Tears of the Muses*, (which I believe to be a much earlier composition of Spenser,) the following lines, often cited as a corollary to the proof of the poet having offended the lord treasurer, are certainly too general to offend a particular person. The lord treasurer might, with equal propriety, have been offended at the title of the chapter in Puttenham's *Arte of English Poesie*, already cited.

" Their great revenues all in sumptuous pride
 " They spend, that nought to learning they may spare ;
 " And the rich fee, which Poets wont divide,
 " Now Parasites and Sycophants do share."

Mr. Warton is of opinion " that Burleigh was a Puritan ; and that the Puritans, who were numerous in the time of Elizabeth, were peculiarly characterised for their hatred of poetry, however instructive. Yet the Earl of Leicester, I must observe, was the friend of Spenser and of the Puritans. And it has been justly observed by Dr. Birch, " that Burleigh's neglect of Spenser is not to be attributed so much to any personal prejudice against him or contempt of poetry, as to the poet's early attachment to the Earl of Leicester, and afterwards to the Earl of Essex ; who were both successively heads of a party opposite to the lord treasurer. Hence perhaps the expression of Spenser also in *Mother Hubberds Tale* :

" Of men of armes he had but small regard,
 " But kept them lowe, and streigned verie hard.
 " For men of learning little he esteemed, &c."

Mother Hubberds Tale must not be dismissed, without remarking the political knowledge which Spenser displays in it. Let the reader attentively peruse the poem from ver. 1119. to ver. 1224, and he will probably not deny the discernment of the poet, even if he applies his positions to the history of modern Europe. This Poem, I must add, was re-published in 1784, with a Dedication, highly satirical, to the Hon. Charles James Fox, by " George Dempster, Esq. M.P.

The subsequent Poems in the *Complaints* have been already noticed.

By the date of the dedication of *Daphnaida*, (the next publication,) we find Spenser in London on the first of January, 1591-2. This beautiful Elegy was written upon the death of Douglas Howard, daughter and heir of Henry Lord Howard, Viscount Byndon ; and wife of Arthur Gorge or Gorges Esquire, afterwards knighted. It is dedicated to her " aunt, the Ladie Helena, Marchioness of Northampton. The afflicted husband is introduced into the Poem, under the name of *Alcyon*, as bewailing the death of a *White Lioness* which he had been so happy as to find, and had tenderly nursed. The *White Lion* being one of the Duke of Norfolk's supporters to his armorial bearings, " the " riddle of the loved Lionesse," as the poet calls it, is easily explained. In the Dedication Spenser avows the " goodwill which he bears unto Master Arthur Gorges, a lover of learning and vertue ;" and again he notices him, with peculiar elegance, in *Colin Clouts come home again*, not only as inconsolable for the loss of his beloved Daphne, but as " known to the Muses and his comrades by notes of higher mood. Sir Arthur Gorges, however, has hitherto been recorded as a man of genius, without a proof of the assertion. I am happy to add his name to the list of English poets ; and the reader will be pleased with the following specimen of his talents and his modesty. It is the Sonnet, addressed to the reader of " The Olympian Catastrophe, dedicated to the worthy memory of the most heroical Lord Henry, late illustrious Prince of Wales, &c. By S^r Arthur Gorges, Knight, 1612 ;" a poem in manuscript of considerable length, together with some Sonnets ; preserved amongst numerous treasures of a similar nature, which belonged to the late Duke of Bridgewater, and now belong to the Marquis of Stafford.

" No praise of Poesie do I affect,
 " Nor flatteries hoped meed doth me excite ;

° See p. xxix.

¶ Manuscript remarks on the *Sonnets* prefixed to the *Faerie Queene*.

¶ See the note on Cartwright, p. xxi.

† Life of Spenser.

‡ From the information of Charles Dilly, Esq. by whom the work was published.

§ See the Dedication.

¶ See ver. 177.

¶ See ver. 390, 391.

"Such base-born thoughts as servile I rect; ;
 "Sorrow doth dictate what my Zeale doth write :
 "Sorrow for that rich treasure we have lost,
 "Zeale to the memory of what wee had ;
 "And that is all they can, that can say most ;
 "So sings my Muse in zeale and sorrow clad ;
 "So sung Achilles to his silver harpe,
 "When fowle affront had left his faire delight ;
 "So sings sweet Philomell against the sharpe ;
 "So sings the Swann, when life is taking fight :
 "So sings my Zeale the noats that Sorrow weepes ;
 "Which Anthem sung, my Muse for ever sleepes."

I come now to the consideration of the Pastoral, entitled *Colin Clouts come home again* ; the Dedication of which to Sir Walter Raleigh is dated December 27. 1591. But that date must be an error of the press. The Poem exhibits internal evidence of having been written at a subsequent period. In the first place, there is a lamentation in it on the death of Ferdinando, Earl of Derby, who is styled *Amyntas* ; an appellation by which Nash also appears to have distinguished him. This nobleman, as I have already stated, died in April 1594. He is described by Spenser as

" ———— " the noblest swaine,
 "That ever piped on an oaten quill :
 "Both did he other which could pipe, maintaine,
 "And eke could pipe himselfe with passing skill."

Of his poetical abilities a specimen is preserved, in the ^x Antiquarian Repertory, from a manuscript that belonged to Sir John Hawkins. Spenser incurred the gentle reproof of Nash, in consequence of his neglecting to salute this patron of learning in the same manner, as he had saluted other "English heroes," at the end of the *Faerie Queene*. Spenser perhaps felt the reproof ; and resolved, in this Poem, to make some atonement for his neglect. The estimation in which this nobleman was held, is described in very lively terms by Nash ; and is worthy of citation as well on the account of the party commended as of the party blamed. "From generall fame," says Nash, "let me digress to my private experience ; and, with a tongue unworthy to name a name of such worthines, affectionatly emblason, to the eyes that wonder, the matchlesse image of honor and magnificent rewarder of vertue, Ioves eagle-borne Ganimed, thrice noble *Amyntas*.—None but Desert should sit in Fames grace ; none but Hector be remembered in the chronicles of Prowesse ; none but thou, most courteous *Amyntas*, be the second mysticall argument of the Knight of the Redcrosse.—And heere, heavenlie *Spencer*, I am most highlie to accuse thee of forgetfulness, that, in that honourable catalogue of our English Heroes which insueth the conclusion of thy famous *Faerie Queene*, thou wouldst let so speciall a pillar of Nobilitie passe unsaluted. The verie thought of his far derived descent, and extraordinarie parts wherewith he astonieth the world, and drawes all harts to his love, would have inspired thy forewaried Muse with new furie to proceede to the next triumphs of thy statelie Goddesses !—But, as I in favor of so rare a scholler suppose, with this counsell he refrained his mention in the first part, that he might with full saile proceed to his due commendations in the second. Of this occasion long since I happened to frame a Sonnet, which being wholely intended to the reverence of this renowned Lord, to whom I owe all the utmost powers of my love and dutie, I meant heere for variety of stile to insert.

Perusing yesternight, with idle eyes,
 The *Fairy Singers* stately-tuned verse ;
 And viewing, after chapmens wonted guise,
 What strange contents the title did rehearse ;
 I straight leapt over to the latter end,
 Where, like the quaint comedians of our time,
 That when their Play is doone do fall to ryme,
 I found short lines to sundry Nobles pend,
 Whom he, as speciall mirrours, singled fourth
 To be the Patrons of his Poetry :

^v *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 440.

^x Lord Orford's *Royal and Noble Authors* ;
^v *Supplication of Pierce Pennilesse*, &c. 4to. 1592, at the conclusion.

I read them all, and reverenc't their worth ;
 Yet wondred he left out thy memory.
 But therefore, guest I, he suppress thy name,
 Because few words might not comprise thy fame !

Beare with me, *gentle Poet*, though I conceive not aright of thy purpose, or be too inquisitive into the intent of thy oblivion ; for however my conjecture may misse the cushion, yet shal my speech savour of friendship, though it be not alied to iudgement." In Lodge's *z Illustrations of British History*, there is preserved a Letter of this nobleman to the Earl of Essex, dated Decemb. 19. 1593 ; which, the learned editor observes, "abounds with good sense, high spirit, and sweetnes of temper. An untimely death undoubtedly defrauded him of a conspicuous situation in the history of his country." Indeed his accomplishments, as well as his unnatural end occasioned by the resentment of the Jesuits, have been recorded in many publications.

But, besides the date of this nobleman's death, there is another convincing proof that this Pastoral was written long after 1591 in the praise assigned to Daniel for his "*passionate mischance*," which means his *a Complaint of Rosamond* published with his Sonnets in 1592 ; and for his "*tragick plaints*," which point out his first dramattick publication, the tragedy of *b Cleopatra* in 1594.

The author of the Life of Spenser, prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the Faerie Queene, considers the circumstance of Sir Walter Raleigh's disgrace at Court, in consequence of his criminal amour with the daughter of Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, as likewise refuting the date of 1591 in the Dedication of the Pastoral. And he is right in his conjecture, I think ; but not exact in his statement. The disagreement between Raleigh and Lord Essex, although it occasioned Raleigh's departure from Court, could not, I conceive, be the subject of the

—— " Lamentable lay
 " Of great unkindnesse, and of usage hard,
 " Of Cynthia the Ladie of the Sea ;"

which Spenser tells us was the *c* song of his friend. A private *d* Letter (as it is entitled) from Raleigh to Sir George Carew, dated Decemb. 27. 1589, of which our historians have taken no notice, seems to shew, that, however jealous Essex might be of him, he was still in favour with the Queen : " Cousen George. For my *retrait from the Court*, it was upon good cause, to take order for my prize. If in Irlande they thincke that I am not worth the respectinge, they shall much deceve themselves. I am in place to be beleved, not inferior to any man to plesure or displesure the greatest ; and my oppinion is so receved and beleved as *I can anger the best of them* ; and therefore if the *e* Deputy be not as reddey to steed me as I have bynn to defend hym, be as it may, when S^r William fitz Williams shalbe in England, I take mysealfe farr his hettres by the honorable offices I hold, as also by that *niceness to her Maiestye w^{ch} still I inioy, and never more*. I am willinge to continew towards hym all friendly offices, and I doubt not of the like from hym as well towards mee as my frinds, &c." The displeasure of the Queen, then, is to be attributed to the culpability of Raleigh in regard to the lady whom I have mentioned ; who also became an object of the royal anger, and was with Raleigh *f* committed to the Tower in July 1592. She was one of her Majesty's Maids of Honour. They were released from this confinement in the *g* September following ; and Raleigh, though perhaps not formally admitted to the presence of the Queen, was soon afterwards able to prove the restoration of her favour to

z Vol. 3. p. 31.

a See Ritson's Bibliograph. Poetica. Art. *Daniel*.

b See Baker's Biograph. Dramatica, Art. *Daniel*.

c *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 164.

d Crew MSS. in the Library at Lambeth Palace, N^o. 605. p. 140, erroneously entered p. 146 in Dr. Wilkins's Catalogue. On the top of this original Letter is written, " A privat Letter from S^r Walter Raleghe to S^r G. C. 27. Decemb. 1589."

e Namely, Sir William Fitzwilliams, presently mentioned ; who had before been Lord Justice, and Lord Deputy, of Ireland ; and who was again appointed Lord Deputy in 1588. He was succeeded by Sir William Russell, in 1594."

f See a letter from Sir Edward Stafford to Antony Bacon Esqr. dated July 30. 1592, in Birch's *Memoirs of Queen Eliz.* vol. 1. p. 79. " If you have any thing to do with Sir Walter Ralegh, or have any love to make to Mrs. Throckmorton ; at the Tower to-morrow you may speak with them, if the countermand come not to-night ; as some think will not be, and particularly he that hath charge to send them thither."

g See Collins's Sidney-Papers, &c. vol. 2. pp. 54, 55, where Raleigh appears, by a letter dated June 2. 1597, fully reinstated in the Queen's favour, and graciously readmitted to her presence.

him by obtaining, from her, the manor of Sherborne in Dorsetshire, which Dr. Coldwell, on his promotion to the bishoprick of Salisbury, had consented to alienate to the Crown; from which prelate, however, there is a Letter, in the ^b Burleigh State-Papers published by Murdin, addressed to Mr. Henry Brooke, and dated April 10. 1594, in which the conduct of Raleigh on this occasion appears to have been rapacious. But to prove further the influence of Raleigh, and that *right well he had complained,*

“ That could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure breake,
“ And move to take him to her grace againe;”

I cite the contemporary authority of Sir John Harington: “ⁱ And to speak first of the Knight who carried the *spolia opima* of this bishoprick; having gotten Sherborne castle, park, and parsonage; he was in those dayes in so great favour with the Queen, as I may boldly say, that with lesse suit then he was faine to make to her ere he could perfect this his purchase, and with lesse money then he bestowed since in Sherborne in building and buying out leases and in drawing the river through rocks into his garden, he might have very justly, and without offence of the Church or State, have compassed a much better purchase.” It may be proper to add, that Sir Walter had made the only reparation in his power to the degraded character, and injured innocence, of the lady, by marrying her. Spenser has alluded to this intrigue, and its consequences, in the conclusion of the seventh canto of the *fourth* Book of the *Faerie Queene*, which was first published in 1596. The situation of Raleigh, before he “is restored to former grace againe” in the subsequent canto, is described in Spenser’s happiest manner. It is an interesting lamentation over a distressed and disgraced friend. It is the effusion of the Muse “in her sweetest saddest plight.”

In consequence, then, of the facts which I have brought together, I am led to believe that Decemb. 27. 1594 or 1595 should be the date to the Dedication of *Colin Clouts come home again*. And, having attended to this point, I will now notice some of the contemporary characters which are introduced, under fictitious or real names, in this agreeable poem.

The Shepherd of the Ocean is Sir Walter Raleigh, who had introduced Spenser to the Queen.—Under the name of *Astrophel*, his other friend and patron, Sir Philip Sidney, “now dead and gone,” is deplored; as under the same title he is the subject of Spenser’s Elegy on his death.—*Amyntas*, as I have before observed, denotes the deceased Earl of Derby.—Under the appellation of *Alcyon*, as in the Elegy entitled *Daphnaida*, the accomplished and afflicted Sir Arthur Gorges is designed.—*Harpalus*, “now woxen aged” in the service of the Queen, is probably Barnaby Googe, who was first a retainer to Cecil, and afterwards in 1563 a gentleman-pensioner to the Queen; in which year he published his “Eglogs, Epitaphs, and Sonnets.”—By *Corydon*, who is described as “meanly waged, yet ablest wit of most” whom Spenser knew, perhaps Abraham Fraunce is intended; who was the friend of Sidney, and the writer of several poems in English hexameters, as *The Lamentations of Amintas*, &c. *The Countesse of Pembrokes Ivychurch*, &c. *The Lamentations of Corydon*, &c. He was called to the Bar of the Court of the Marches of Wales; and, in 1590, was recommended by Henry Earl of Pembroke as a man in every respect qualified to be the Queen’s Solicitor in that Court. ^k But what became of him afterwards does not appear.—*Palin*, whom Spenser pronounces

———“ worthy of great praise
“ Albe he envie at my *rustick* quill;”

may mean Thomas Chaloner; a poet, whom Puttenham, in his *Arte of English Poesie*, ranks with Spenser; selecting, as patterns “for *aglogue and pastorall poesie*, Sir Philip Sidney and Maister Challenger, and that other gentleman who wrote the late *Shepherdes Calender*.” And

^b Page 575.

ⁱ *Briefe View of the State of the Church of England*, &c. edit. 1653. p. 89.—In short, Raleigh seems to have illustrated the truth of what Spenser so much condemns in *Mother Hubberds Tale*, ver. 519, 520.

^j See Brydges’s edition of Phillips’s *Theatrum Poetarum Anglicanorum*, p. 126.

^k *Ibid.* p. 108. And *Biograph. Dram. Art. Fraunce*.

Meres, in his *Wits Treasury*, ranks Chalonier "amongst the best for pastoral." Thus commended, he might be led to "envie at the rustick quill" of a poet, whom he perhaps considered a rival in this species of fame.—*Alcon*, I am induced to think, is intended for Thomas Watson; a writer of numerous sonnets and madrigals, and ^l commended as the English Petrarch. He is also numbered among the principal writers of pastoral poetry; and is classed ^m with Harvey, Leland, Newton, and others of his countrymen, for having attained good report, and honourable advancement, as a Latin poet. Spenser apparently wished him to "raise his tunes from lays," from songs and sonnets, to loftier themes. He has bestowed on Spenser a very neat ⁿ encomium, which I have given in the note below.—*Old Palemon* seems to point at Thomas Churchyard, who wrote a prodigious number of poetical pieces; of which the bare ^o list is sufficient to justify the humorous remark of Spenser, after he has observed that the melancholy pipe of this aged bard may make the hearer rew:

"Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right,
"That sung so long untill quite hoarse he grew!"

Having been a most laborious writer for half a century, he is ^p said to have died, poor, in 1601.

To these fictitious appellations succeed the real names of *Alabaster* and *Daniel*; of whom the former is ^r represented by Antony Wood as "the rarest poet and Grecian that any one age or nation produced." He was educated in Trinity College, Cambridge. Of this distinguished person I will relate some circumstances, which were not known to Wood. Of his poem in manuscript, the *Eliseis*, which Spenser highly celebrates, I have given an account in the ^r note on its introduction into this Pastoral. He appears to have received an offer of the rectory of Brettenham in Suffolk from the Lord Keeper Egerton, which he declined, as being not agreeable to his expectation, in a ^s Letter accompanied with a copy of elegant Latin hexameters to his Lordship. He relinquished, as Wood relates, the Church of England for that of Rome; but afterwards returned to his deserted mother, and obtained considerable ecclesiastical preferments. He died in 1640. His conversion to Popery had probably taken place about 1598, in which year he published his motives for his conduct. In 1604 he was engaged in a controversy, on account of his new profession of faith, with an antagonist of the highest reputation as a scholar and Protestant Divine, Dr. Will. ^t Bedell, afterwards Bishop of Kilmore; an admirer and imitator also of Spenser. Alabaster was undoubtedly a man of great learning. In his *Roxana*, however, which Dr. Johnson has greatly extolled, there is certainly much false taste, as Mr. Warton ^u long since observed. Herrick, in his *Hesperides*, has addressed a poem to him on the subject of his great attainments and various labours.

Of *Daniel*, who is well known to the lovers of our elder poetry, and valued for his judicious reflections as well as the sweetness of his language, an extensive account is unnecessary. By Spenser's distinguishing him as "a new shepheard late up sprung," he alludes to his first pub-

^r By Meres, in his *Wits Treasury*, 1598. See also Brydges, ut supr. p. 213.

^m Ibid.

ⁿ "Sed quid *EAM* [the Queen] refero, quæ, nostro carmine maior,
"Est cantanda tuo, dulcis SPENSERÆ, cothurno,
"Cuius inest numeris Hiberniæ copia mellis.
"Tu quoq; nobiscum (quoniam tu noster Apollo)
"Lugentem solare DEAM, quoties Melibœi
"Tristia lacrymulis preciosis funera deflet.
"Dic illi (tu namque potes fœlice camœnæ!
"Arcadas innumeros, quanquam Melibœus obuiat,
"Præstantes superesse viros, similes Melibœi.
"Dametam memora, quo non præclarior alter, &c."

Melibœus Thomæ Watsoni, sive Ecloga in Obitum Honoratissimi Viri, Domini Francisci, Walsinghami, Equitis Aurati, &c. 4to. Lond. 1590. Sign. D.

^o See the Bibliographia Poetica, Art. Churchyard.

^p Ibid.

^q Athen. Ox. Fasti, vol. 1. col. 144.

^r See *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 403.

^s Among the Bridgewater manuscripts.

^t Among the Lambeth manuscripts (No. 772.) there is a valuable and curious work, entitled "A Defence of the Answer to Mr. Alabaster's Four Demands against a Treatise intituled The Catholicks Reply upon Bedell's Answer to Mr. Alabaster's four Demands." The Letter at the beginning is addressed "to the Worshipfull and my loving friend Mr. Ambrose Jermyn;" and is dated, "Bury, this 25th February, 1604, yor. Worships in Christ Jesus, William Bedell.

^u Milton's Smaller Poems, 2d ed. p. 430.

lication, entitled "Delia, contayning certayne sonnets, with^v the complaint of Rosamond," in 1592.

The "last, though not least," in Spenser's enumeration of English poets, is *Acton*; under which name I believe Michael Drayton is designed. Spenser's praise of him as "a gentle shepheard," applies to his "Shepheards Garland, fashioned in nine Eglogs, &c." published in 1593. And the subsequent commendation;

"Whose Muse, full of high thoughts invention,
Doth like himselfe heroically sound;"

seems to point at his "*Matilda, the faire and chaste daughter of the Lord Robert Fitzwater, &c.*" published in 1594; in the preface to which, Drayton informs "the true favorers of Poesie," that their "kind and favourable acceptance of his late discourse of the life and death of *Piers Garreston*, emboldened him to publish this tragical historie of his *Matilda*." He pays the following compliment to Spenser, at the exordium of his *Matilda*, in an address to the Queen:

"And thou, O Beta, soveraigne of his thought;
"Englands Diana, let him thinke on thee!
"By thy perfections let his Muse be taught;
"And in his breast so deepe imprinted be,
"That he may write of sacred Chastitie;
"Though not like *Collin in thy Britomart*,
"Yet loves asmuch, although he wants *his arte*."

Of the Ladies celebrated in *Colin Clouts come home again*, *Cynthia*, the queen, is the most conspicuous object, on account of the praise applied as well to her general conduct as to her particular skill in "poetical composition."—"Urania, sister unto Astrofell," is Mary, Countess of Pembroke.—The "not less praiseworthy" *Theana* is Anne, the third wife of the Earl of Warwick who died in Feb. 1589-90; whose widow she remained till death. Spenser notices her exemplary widowhood in the *Ruines of Time*, as well as in this Pastoral. Nor has he omitted to mention her authority at Court; of which the reader may see several instances in the Sidney State-Papers, especially in the year 1595.—Her sister *Marian* is Margaret, Countess of Cumberland. To these Ladies Spenser dedicates his *Four Hymns*; which circumstance is further noticed in its place.—*Mansilia* is the Marchioness of Northampton, to whom *Daphnida* is inscribed.—*Galathea* and *Noëra* appear to be Irish beauties, whose names I am not able to unravel.—To these succeeds the beautiful Lady Rich, under the poetical name of *Stella*, which was given her by Sir Philip Sidney; who, for^r her sake, wrote the poem entitled *Astrophel and Stella*, which was first published in 1591, and to which Spenser alludes:

"Ne lesse praisworthie *Stella* do I read,
"Though nought my praises of her needed arre,
"Whom verse of noblest shepheard lately dead
"Hath prais'd and rais'd above each other starre."

The early love of Sir Philip to this Lady is converted into a beautiful fiction, as we shall presently see, in Spenser's elegy on Sir Philip's death.—After the commendation of *Stella*, the three daughters of Sir John Spenser, of whom an account has been already given, are introduced to the reader's admiration. And the list of beauties concludes with the undiscovered names of *Flavia* and *Candida*.

The pastoral Elegy of *Astrophel*, devoted entirely to the memory of Sir Philip Sidney, and written perhaps on the immediate occasion in 1586, was, with *Colin Clouts come home again*, first published also in 1595. It is "dedicated to the most beautifull and vertuous Ladie, the Countess of Essex." This Lady had been the wife of Sidney, and was now married to the

^v See also what has been already stated in regard to Spenser's commendation of Daniel, p. xxxvii.

^w See references to the poetical compositions of queen Elizabeth, in the note on *Colin Clouts come home again*, ver. 188

^r See the Biograph. Brit. Art. *Sydney*, (Philip,) and Brydges's edit. of Phillips's *Theatrum Poetarum Anglicanorum*, p. 138.

Earl of Essex. She was the daughter of the memorable Sir Francis Walsingham. Sir Philip left by her an only daughter. His affectionate attention to this Lady and to her family, is abundantly shewn in his Will, preserved by Collins in his *Memoirs of the Lives and Actions of the Sidney's*. It had been first proposed for Sir Philip to marry a daughter of Secretary Cecil, on the recommendation of his uncle, the Earl of Leicester; and his own choice, in earlier days, is said to have been unsuccessfully fixed on Lady Rich. Of this latter circumstance Spenser makes an elegant use. It is necessary first to refute an error of a ludicrous kind, which the author of the *Life of Spenser* prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the *Faerie Queene* has committed, in saying that "the grief of *Stella*, the Countess of Warwick *his aunt*, for her *Astrophel*, (names which Sir Philip himself had rendered immortal,) makes a large part of this tender poem." *Stella* is Sir Philip's first love. And Spenser could not have been a stranger to this honourable attachment. Surely the poet would never have thus described the interview between a *nephew* and an *aunt*!

"They stopt his wound, (too late to stop it was!)
 "And in their armes then softly did him reare:
 "Then, as he will'd, unto his loved lass,
 "His dearest love, him dolefully did beere."

No. The poet, with inimitable pathos, thus relates a feigned event,

"To prove that death their hearts cannot divide,
 "Which living were in love so firmly tide:"

He relates, that *Stella*, after many fruitless offices of tenderest love, barely witnessed the last pains of the wounded *Astrophel*, and followed him "like turtle chaste;" and then he most poetically adds:

"The Gods, which all things see, this same beheld;
 "And, pitying *this paire of lovers true*,
 "Transformed them there lying on the field
 "Into one flowre that is both red and blew:
 "It first growes red, and then to hlew doth fade,
 "Like *Astrophel*, which thereinto was made.
 "And in the midst thereof a star appears,
 "As fairly form'd as any star in skyes;
 "Resembling *Stella* in her freshest yeares,
 "Forth darting beames of beantie from her eyes:
 "And all the day it standeth full of dew,
 "Which is the teares that from her eyes did flow."

To this Elegy by Spenser are added the lamentations of Sir Philip's sister, the Countess of Pembroke, under the name of *Clarinda*; and also a collection of "flowers, that decked the herse" of Sidney, by Lodowick Bryskett and others.

Adhering to the chronological order in which Spenser's poems were published, I am now to mention the *Amoretti* or *Sonnets*. These are dated by Mr. Ball in 1592, who also represents the poet as married in 1593. But he is mistaken, I think, in both respects. The *Sonnets* were certainly not published before the year 1595, but were written most probably in the years 1592 and 1593; and appear to have been sent from Ireland, for publication, to Ponsoby his former bookseller. The dedication of them "to the right worshipfull Robart Needham, Knight, ascertains this point.

"Sir,—To gratulate your safe return from Ireland, I had nothing so ready, nor thought any thing so meet, as these sweete-conceited Sonnets, the deede of that wel deserving gentleman, maister Edmonde Spenser; whose name sufficiently warranting the worthinesse of the work, I do more confidently presume to publish in his absence.—This gentle Muse for her former perfection long wished for in Englande, now at the length crossing the seas in your happy

† Collins's Mem. of the Lives and Actions of the Sidney's, p. 113.

‡ Church's Spenser, vol. i. p. xxx.

* See Chalmers's *Supplemental Apology for the Believers in the Shakespeare-Papers*, p. 28. "On the 19th of November 1594, was entered for William Ponsobyne in the Stationers' Registers, a poem, entitled *Amoretti and Epithalamion*, written not long since by Edmond Spenser."

companye, (tho' to yourself unknowne,) seemeth to make choise of you &c. Yours in all dutiful affection. "W. P."

In these *Sonnets* the poet gives us the history of his courtship, not of a second *Rosalind*, but of a mistress eventually less obdurate though not less beautiful; whom, I conclude, he afterwards married. The *Sonnets* indeed often breathe the *conceited* as well as the delicate complaints of Petrarch. Still, however, they are verses addressed to the object of an honourable passion; verses dictated by the hopes of a wooer, who, testifying the most unbounded regard for his mistress, is anxious to obtain her approval of his own axiom,

"Sweet is the love that comes with willingness."

In the sixtieth Sonnet he informs us that he had then attained his fortieth year, and that one year had elapsed since the commencement of his love, which, referring to the date of his birth, was therefore in 1592. The sixty-second Sonnet presents us with an allusion to the year that was gone, and with the poet's expectation of smiling days in regard to the progress of his love. That expectation reaches almost to reality in the next Sonnet; and, in the sixty-fourth expands itself into rapture, in enumerating the various charms of the lady, with whom "he had found such grace" as to be indulged with "a kiss." The sixty-fifth Sonnet is an elegant specimen of amatory persuasion; an invitation to wedlock, in over-ruling the scruples of the lady who "fondly fears to lose her liberty." From this Sonnet to the eighty-third, the affection of the lady seems no longer doubtful, and the poet is eloquent in gratitude. The eighty-third Sonnet implies the delicacy of his sentiments in respect to some writing, or expression, with which the lady might have been offended; a composition, as Mr. Walker has observed, in the very spirit of Petrarch. In the eighty-fourth Sonnet, the praises of the lady are resumed. In the eighty-fifth, the indignation of the poet appears to be roused at the "forged lies," with which some officious babbler "had stirred up coals of ire in his true Love." With the three subsequent Sonnets the collection closes; and these three uniformly deplore the absence of the poet from his mistress.

The *Epithalamion*, published together with the *Sonnets*, bespeaks the happy termination of this courtship. It was written, Spenser says, "his owne Love's prayes to resonnd." He was married, as I suppose, in 1594; and though, at the close of *Colin Clouts come home again*, he calls on the shepherds to consider him *then* as the dying victim of *Rosalind's* tyranny; I consider it only as a poetical fiction, adapted to the subject of the colloquy. His strains, no doubt, were melancholy even in Ireland, till he met with the fair^b Elizabeth, the principal subject of his *Sonnets* and of his *Epithalamion*. That the marriage took place in Ireland, is evident by the address to the nymphs of *Mulla* in the *Epithalamion*; that it was celebrated at *Cork*, near which his castle of *Kilcolman* was situated, may be gathered by his appeal, in the same poem, to the "merchants daughters of the town" in behalf of his spouse's beauty; and that the mistress and the bride are one and the same person, may be asserted on the comparison, almost identical, of personal accomplishments in the sixty-fourth *Sonnet* and in the 171st and following verses in the *Epithalamion*.

To those, who would deny that the *Sonnets* of Spenser are not addressed to the object of his love, I can only recommend the separation of the *Epithalamion* from the *Sonnets*; requesting, however, at the same time a satisfactory answer, why the poet should have thus transmitted them to posterity, united.

The marriage is described to have taken place on St. Barnabas's day; which I suppose to be that of 1594. Of the estimation in which Spenser held the charms of his beautiful Elizabeth,

^b That the name of his mistress was *Elizabeth* is evident by the discrimination which he makes, in his seventy-fourth Sonnet, between his *love*, his *mother*, and his *queen*; all bearing that "happy name:"

"The which three times thrise happy hath me made
 "With gifts of hody, fortune, and of mind.—
 "Ye three *Elizabeths* for ever live,
 "That three such graces did unto me give "

an eminent proof, besides those apparent in the Sonnets, occurs in the second part of the *Faerie Queene*, which was published in 1596, but had been written before the eightieth Sonnet was composed. He ranks her with the three Graces; at the same time not concealing the lowliness of her origin :

“ Such were those goddesses which ye did see :
 “ But that *fourth Mayd*, which there amidst them traced,
 “ Who can aread what creature mete she bee,
 “ Whether a creature, or a goddess graced
 “ With heavenly gifts from heven first enraced !
 “ But whatso sure she was, she worthy was
 “ To be the Fourth with these Three ether placed :
 “ Yet was she certes but a cuntrye lasse ;
 “ Yet she all other cuntrye lasses far did passe.”—*Faer. Qu. vi. x. 25.*

These lines had been written during the period of courtship ; for, in his eightieth Sonnet, he alleges that, tired with his long race through Faery land which his *six books* compile, he wishes to refresh himself ; and, in his retirement, to divert his muse with the subject of his own Love's praise, adapted to strains of suitable humility :

“ But let her prayes yet he low and meane,
 “ Fit for the handmayd of the Faery Queene.”

That Spenser was a batchelor, before he was married to this person, I am persuaded by the circumstance of no love-verses having been addressed by him, in the interval between the faithlessness of Rosalind and his introduction to Elizabeth, to any other lady. Some^c biographers, it seems, have asserted, without authority, that, having lost his first wife, the courtship of a second gave rise to the *Amoretti*.

The absence, which the three concluding Sonnets mention, is believed by the author of the *Life* prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the *Faerie Queene* to allude to Spenser's visit to England, in July or August 1596, soon after his marriage, which he dates in that year ; in order to print the second part of his *Faerie Queene*, and the other Poems which remain to be noticed. But to this supposition I cannot accede. Spenser must have been married at least as soon as at the period I have mentioned ; as the account of children which he left, and the interference of the Privy Council in behalf of them and of their mother, presently cited, will justify me in believing.

The *Four Hymns on Love and Beauty*, which prove the author's zealous attachment to the Platonick school, are dated at Greenwich, Sep. 1. 1596, and are dedicated to the Countesses of Cumberland and Warwick ; the name of the latter, however, being mistaken by the printer or the poet ; as the Countess of Warwick was certainly^d Anne, the daughter of Francis Earl of Bedford. These sisters were also addressed by Henry Constable in a^e Sonnet, descriptive of their uncommon accomplishments. The *Hymns*, as the poet informs us, “ were written in the greener times of his youth ;” and are intended as a warning to thoughtless lovers, in the repeated reference which he makes in them to his own distress and disappointment in respect to *Rosalind*.

In the same year his *Prothalamion* was printed ; a poem, or spousal verse, in honour of the double marriage of the Ladies Elizabeth and Catherine Somerset to H. Gilford and W. Peter, Esquires. And here he again notices, with commendable pride, his honourable descent :

^c See Chalmers's *Supplemental Apology*, p. 30.

^d See the note on the *Ruines of Time*, ver. 244. And Collins's *Mem. of the Lives and Actions of the Sidneys*, p. 40.

^e I cite the close of this Sonnet, from a manuscript of Constable's poetry in my possession : It is the third of seven Sonnets written “ to celebrate the memory of peticular ladies whom the auther most honoureth.”

“ To the Countesses of Cumberland and Warwick, sisters ;

“ Sisters of spotlesse fame ! of whom alone
 “ Malitious tongues take pleasure to speake well ;
 “ How should I you commend, when eyther one
 “ All things in heaven and earth so far excell
 “ The highest praise that I can give is this,
 “ That one of you liko to the other is.”

“ At length they all to mery London came,
 “ To mery London, my most kyndly nurse,
 “ That to me gave this lifes first native sourse,
 “ Though from another place I take my name,
 “ An house of auncient fame.”

The exertions of the Earl of Essex in the expedition to Cadiz, are also ingeniously introduced into this elegant little Poem.

In the same year likewise, the second part of the *Faerie Queene* appeared ; which had been entered for the same bookseller in the Stationers' Registers' on the 20th January, 1595-6. And a new edition of the former part accompanied it. Of the remaining six books, which would have completed Spenser's original design, two imperfect Cantos *Of Mutabilitie* are the only parts with which the publick has been gratified ; and which were first inserted in the folio edition of the *Faerie Queene* in 1609, as a part of the lost Book, entitled *The Legend of Constancy*. Sir James Ware informs us, in his Preface to Spenser's *View of the State of Ireland*, which he printed at Dublin in 1633, that the poet finished THE LATTER PART of the *Faerie Queene* in Ireland ; “ which was soone after unfortunately lost by the disorder and abuse of his servant, whom he had sent before him into England ;” being then *à rebellibus*, as Camden's words are, *è laribus ejectus et bonis spoliatus*. Fenton, in his notes on Waller's poems, considers the assertion of Sir James Ware as entitled to no credit. “ Instead of deploring,” he says, “ the fate of those six books which are supposed to be lost, I am entirely of opinion with Mr. Dryden, that, upon Sir Philip Sidney's death, Spenser was deprived both of means and spirit to accomplish his design. The story of their being lost in his voyage from Ireland, seems to be a fiction borrowed from the fate of Terence's Comedies, which itself has the air of a fiction, or at best is but a hearsay that passed upon the biographers without due examination.” Dr. Birch contends, “ that this ingenious poet and commentator will scarce convince his readers, that the death of Sir Philip Sidney was an event sufficient to prevent Spenser from finishing his Poem, when it is evident that he gave the world, after the loss of his patron, six books of it ; at the same time promising the rest, of which we actually have remaining two Cantos upon *Mutability*, equal, if not superiour, to any of the rest ; and two stanzas of another Canto. And the authority of so considerable a writer as Sir James Ware, who lived near the time and was in a situation of informing himself about the fact, cannot justly be rejected as a mere unsupported hearsay, propagated without due examination. It is true in the 33d Sonnet of his *Amoretti*, written about the year 1592, [and addressed to his friend Lodowick Bryskett,] he speaks of the finishing of his *Faerie Queene* as prevented by the cruelty of his mistress ; and in the 80th he desires a little refreshment after so long a task, as that of compiling the first six books of that Poem, and leisure to sing his ‘love's sweet praise ;’ the contemplation of whose beauty would ‘raise his spirit,’ and enable him to undertake his *second Work*

‘With strong endeavour and attention dew.’

But these Sonnets, allowing the subjects of them to have been real facts and not poetical fiction, were composed at least five or six years before the last six books of the *Faerie Queene* are supposed to have been lost ; an interval long enough for so ready and inexhaustible a genius as our author's to complete them, whose years bore no proportion to the number and perfection of his works. For the loss of those books could not have happened till after 1596, because he mentions, in the title-page of the edition of that year, that the Poem would contain *Twelve Books*. But they must have perished, as Sir James Ware intimates, when he sent his servant to England in 1598, before his own last journey thither from Ireland, upon the plundering of his estate by the rebels there.”

To these observations the author of the Life of Spenser in the Biographia Britannica makes the following reply. “ I believe the reader is beforehand with me in his censure of Dr. Birch's reasoning, which is so notoriously inconsistent with the fact. The *Faerie Queene* was “ begun in 1579 at latest ; the first three books were finished in 1590 ; and the next three in 1596. This

† Chalmers's *Supplemental Apology*, &c. ut supr.

¶ See before, p. xx.

last, not to insist on the whole space, is an interval of six years, which is above twice the length of Spenser's life after 1596. Thus the doctor's argument, we see, instead of strengthening the testimony of Sir James Ware, serves rather to weaken it, and at the same time confirms the opinion of Mr. Fenton, that they were never finished; which therefore we have embraced."

Of a similar opinion was the late Dr. Farmer. "It is a ^hquestion of long standing," says that learned critick, "whether a part of the *Faerie Queene* hath been *lost*, or whether the work was left *unfinished*: which may effectually be answered by a single quotation. William Browne published some poems in fol. 1616, under the name of *Britannia's Pastorals*;—in one of which (B. ii. Song i.) he thus speaks of Spenser :

" He sung th' heroicke knights of faery land
 " In lines so elegant, of such command,
 " Tbat had the Thracian plaid but halfe so well
 " He had not left Eurydice in hell.
 " But, e're he ended his melodious song,
 " An host of angels flew the clouds among,
 " And rapt this swan from his attentive mates,
 " To make him one of their associates
 " In heaven's fair quire; where now he sings the praise
 " Of Him that is the first and last of daies."

I may add, to this testimony cited by Dr. Farmer, the same remark made by Sir Aston Cokain, in his *Poems*, published in 1658, p. 8.

" If honour'd Colin, thou hadst liv'd so long
 " As to have finished thy Faery Song,
 " Not onely mine but all tongues would confess,
 " Thou hadst exceeded old Mæonides."

But, however these extracts may seem to affect the authority of Sir James Ware, I shall produce the evidence of a writer, antior to Browne and Cokain, in support of the narration that some of Spenser's papers were destroyed in the rebellion of 1598; among which we may suppose certain parts of the remaining six books of the *Faerie Queene* to have existed. We find that many detached parts of the first three books of the Poem had beenⁱ seen by several friends of Spenser, long before the publication of them in 1590. The same circumstance might have happened in regard to the concluding books; although I do not mean to contend that they were *finished*, or, to use the expression of Spenser to his friend Bryskett in regard to the first six books, that they were *compiled*, that is, collected into order for publication. The evidence which I offer, has escaped the notice of all who have written on this interesting subject. It is the evidence of a writer contemporary with Spenser; of a writer highly^k respected as a scholar and a gentleman, John (afterward Sir John) Stradling; the friend of Camden and Sir John Harington. He appears as an author in 1597. In 1607 he published *Epigrammatum Libri quatuor*; of which epigrams many were evidently written before that year. He thrice addresses Spenser in this collection; and, in the following lines, clearly, however quaintly, bears testimony to a loss which must ever be deplored.

" Ad *Edm. Spencer* eximium poetam, DE EXEMPLARIBUS SUIS QUIBUSDAM MANUSCRIPTIS, ab *Hibernicis ealegibus igne crematis, in Hibernica defectione.*

" Ingenij tantum noram tibi flumen, vt ipsum
 " Absumi flammis non sotsuisse putem.
 " Flumen at ingenij partim tibi sorbuit ignis:
 " Qualis, qui flumen devoret, ignis erat?
 " Sylvestris populus sylvestres inijcit ignes:
 " Talibus obsistunt flumina nulla pyris."

Epigr. Lib. iii. p. 100.

Two years after the publication of these Epigrams, the only manuscripts of Spenser which had escaped the fury of rebels were given to the publick, as I have already stated, under the title of *part of the Legend of Constancy*.

While Spenser was in England in 1596, he, without doubt, presented his political treatise,

^h Essay on the Learning of Shakspeare.

ⁱ See before, p. xxviii.

^k Wood's *Athen. Ox.* vol. i. col. 504.

The View of the State of Ireland, to the queen, the great officers of state, and others. I thus account for the manuscript copy of the treatise in the Lambeth library; and for that which was found among the Lord Keeper Egerton's papers, and now belongs to the Marquis of Stafford; and for that also which exists in the Publick Library at¹ Cambridge. That this treatise was finished in 1596, is proved by the date which Sir James Ware has prefixed to it in the first edition of it in 1633, published at Dublin from a manuscript in Archbishop Usher's library; and by the concurrent dates of^m four manuscripts, which I have inspected. In one of these manuscripts, aⁿ note is inserted in an old and probably coeval hand-writing, which relates, that Spenser at that time held the following office in Ireland. "This booke was written by Edward [Edmund] Spenser, Clarke of the Counsell of the Province of Mounster in Irland in año 1596." To this office Mr. Boyle has been believed to be the immediate successor of the poet. But I find that Lodowick Bryskett, the friend of Spenser, was possessed of this situation after him. For it is affirmed, in Lodge's *Peerage of Ireland*, that^o Bryskett surrendered the office of Clerk to the Council of Munster on March 31. 1600, in order that the queen might give it to Mr. Boyle, together with the custody of the Signet of the Province.

The View of the State of Ireland exhibits Spenser as a most interesting writer in prose, as well as a politician of very extensive knowledge, and an antiquary of various and profound erudition. It was probably composed at the command of the queen; several representations of the disorders in Ireland, and several plans of reformation, written perhaps not without prejudice, and, I may add, (considering the behaviour of Desmond, Tyrone, and their adherents,) not without hypocrisy,^p having been presented to the English government. Sir James Ware dedicated his publication of this treatise to Lord Wentworth, then Lord Deputy of Ireland; to whom he relates, that "the former turbulent and tempestuous times, with the miseries of several kindes incident unto them, are fully set out, and to the life, by Mr. Spenser, with a discovery of their causes and remedies, being for the most part excellent grounds of reformation. And so much may be justly expected from him in regard of his long abode, and experience of this kingdom." In the Preface Sir James further observes, that Spenser's "proofes, although most of them conjecturall, concerning the original of the language, customes of the nation, and the first peopling of the severall parts of the Iland, are full of good reading, and doe shew a sound judgement. They may be further confirmed by comparing them with Richard Creagh's Booke *De linguâ Hibernicâ*, which is yet extant in the original manuscript, and although mixed with matter of story leaning too much to some fabulous traditions, yet in other respects worthy of light. Touching the generall scope intended by the author for the reformation of abuses and ill customes, this we may say; that although very many have taken paines in the same subject, during the raigne of Queene Elizabeth, and some before, as the author of the book intitled *Salus Populi*, and after him Patrick Finglas, chiefe baron of the Exchequer here and afterwards chiefe Iustice of the Common Pleas, yet none came so neere to the best grounds for reformation, a few passages excepted, as Spenser hath done in this."

From this favourable opinion the editor of Sir James Ware's^q works in English dissents. He allows that there are some things in it very well written, particularly in regard to the political design of reducing Ireland to the due obedience of the English Crown; yet that, in this

¹ Numb. Dd. 10. 60.

^m 1 The Lambeth MS. 2. The Marquis of Stafford's MS. 3. The Pub. Lib. Cambridge MS. 4. Gonville and Caius Col. MS.—The manuscript in the Library of Trin. Coll. Dublin, I am informed, bears the same date.—Bishop Nicholson, in his *Irish Historical Library*, has made a great mistake in relating that Spenser's treatise extends the account of Ireland "to the year 1600," and that it is "dedicated to King James the first." *Dubl. edit. 8vo. 1724. p. 4.*

ⁿ In the Library of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge; now numbered, 188.

^o Vol. i. p. 81. edit. 1754.

^p Among the Lord Chancellor Egerton's manuscripts, which now belong to the Marquis of Stafford, there is a curious treatise of this kind, at the end of which is a petition by the author in favour of the Earl of Tyrone. It is dated in 1594, and the authors name is Tho. Lee. It is entitled "A Briefe Declaration of the Government of Ireland, opening many Corruptions in ye same; discouraging ye discontentments of the Irishry, and the causes moving these expected troubles: And shewing meanes how to establish quietnes in that kingdom honorably, to your Ma^{ties} profit without any increase of charge."

^q Vol. iii. p. 327. Keating, Walsh, and O'Flaherty, object principally to the mistakes of Spenser in regard to his deducing the original of several absolutely Irish families from England and Wales. See Walsh's Preface to his *Prospect of the State of Ireland*, 1682. And O'Flaherty's *Ogggia*, &c. 1685. P. iii. c. 77.

history and antiquities of the country, he is often miserably mistaken, and seems to have indulged rather the fancy and licence of a poet than the judgement and fidelity requisite for an historian; besides his want of moderation. If this character, Dr. Birch observes, be a true one, we have the less reason to regret that Spenser did not finish another treatise, which he promised at the conclusion of his *View*, expressly upon the antiquities of Ireland. At the distance of more than half a century, he, who subscribes not to the preceding remark, will find many supporters of his dissent. "Civilization," says a modern writer, (who with great learning and success has discussed the *Antiquities of Ireland*;) "having almost obliterated every vestige of our ancient manners, the remembrance of them is only to be found in Spenser; so that he may be considered, at this day, as an Irish antiquary." I join sincerely in the wish of Sir James Ware, that this treatise had, in some passages, been tempered with more moderation; but, as Sir James remarks, "the troubles and miseries of the time when he wrote it, doe partly excuse him." In some manuscripts of the Treatise which I have seen, the severity indeed of Spenser as well in respect to certain families, as to the nation in general, is considerably amplified. But I have not thought it necessary to specify every particular of dormant, and perhaps not justifiable, harshness. It is evident that Sir James Ware also had seen more than one manuscript of the treatise; as he selects a various reading from *the best*. And, in the library of Trinity College at Dublin, there is a manuscript of it, which, in the construction of some of the sentences, and in other instances, differs, as I have been informed, from the printed copy; and abounds with corrections and interlineations.

This treatise, the result of nice observation and minute inquiry, wears the appearance of having been composed in England in 1596. For it opens with Eudoxus's address to Irenæus, under the latter of which names Spenser intends himself, in the following manner: "But if that countrey of Ireland, *whence you lately came*, be of so goodly and commodious a soyl as you report, I wonder that no course is taken for the turning thereof to good purposes, and reducing that nation to better government and civility." And it is probable that Spenser expected considerable promotion, in consequence of the zeal and ability which he had thus displayed as a politician; for he tells us, in his *Prothalamion*, published in 1596, of his "sullen care

"Through discontent of his *long fruitlesse stay*
 "In *Princes Court*, and expectation vain
 "Of idle hopes, &c."

He had arrived in England, we may suppose, at the beginning of the year; for the entry of the second edition of the *Faerie Queene* in the Stationers' Registers will countenance this opinion; and the *Prothalamion*, as is evident at the commencement of it, was written in the summer of that year.

In 1597 he is said to have returned to Ireland. And he returned, probably, with the expectation of passing his days in comfort with his family at Kilcolman. In the following year he was destined to an honourable situation. For Mr. Malone has discovered a Letter from queen Elizabeth to the Irish government, dated the last day of September 1598, recommending Spenser to be Sheriff of Cork. But, in the next month, the rebellion of the treacherous Tyrone burst forth with irresistible fury; and occasioned the immediate flight of Spenser and his family from Kilcolman. In the confusion attending this calamity, one of his children appears to have been left behind. The rebels, after having carried off the goods, burnt the house, and this infant in it. Spenser arrived in England with a heart broken in consequence of these misfortunes, and died in the January following 7.

^r The observation of the Rev. Edward Ledwich to Joseph Cooper Walker, Esq; communicated to me by the latter.

^s By Mr. Cooper Walker; who also transmitted to me a considerable specimen of this manuscript, which was obligingly transcribed by Dr. Barrett, the learned librarian of the College.

^t Viz. on the 20. Jan. 1595-6.

^u Biograph. Brit.

^x See the conversation between Ben Jonson and Drummond of Hawthornden, presently cited.

^y "In opposition to the monumental inscription in Westminster Abbey," says Mr. Chalmers, "I concur with Sir James Ware, and Mr. Malone, in saying, that Spenser died in 1599, though towards the end rather than the beginning of that year: For the preface of *Belvidere, or, Garden of the Muses*, which was printed in 1600, speaks of Spenser as an *extant poet*." Suppl. Apolog. p. 34, 35. But this is not correct. The dato of 1598 on the monument is right. And

The date of Spenser's death, together with some circumstances attending it, has often been mis-stated. The precise day of his death is now asserted, for the first time, on the following authority communicated by the learned and reverend John Brand, Secretary of the Society of Antiquaries; which exists in the title-page of the second edition of the *Faerie Queene*, now in his possession, and which appears to have belonged originally to Henry Capell; after whose autograph, the date of 1598 is added. After the name of *Ed. Spenser* in the title-page, the following invaluable anecdote is preserved: "Qui obiit apud diversorium in platea Regia, apud Westmonasterium iuxta London, 16^o. die Januarij 1598^o. Juxtaq; Geffereum Chaucer, in eadem Ecclesia supradict. (Honoratissimi Comitis Essexiæ impensis) sepelit[ur.]" Henry Capell has added *apud diversorium* in the paler ink with which his own name is written. It appears then that the testimony of Camden, in regard to the place of Spenser's death, is correct; which was in *King-street, Westminster*, as he relates; and not, as ² others in opposition to his authority have reported, in *King-street, Dublin*. It appears also that he died *at an inn or lodging-house*, "*apud diversorium*," in which he and his family had probably been fixed from the time of their arrival in England. It is remarkable that Mr. Capell should have omitted to notice a single circumstance of the extreme poverty in which Spenser is said to have died, if the bitterest circumstances of that kind had really attended his death. The burial having been ordered at the charge of the Earl of Essex, may surely be considered as a mark of that nobleman's respect for the poet, without proving that the poet was starved. Of the man who had thus perished a *remarkable funeral* ³ might seem almost mockery; and yet the pall was held up by some of the poets of the time.

But Camden has said, that Spenser returned to England, *poor*; "*in Angliam inops reversus*." Deprived, by a general calamity, of his property in the province of Munster; he was, if we contrast his situation with better days, undoubtedly poor. Yet was he not without the certainty of at least a decent subsistence; and, I am persuaded, was not without friends. His annual pension of fifty pounds, granted him by the queen, was beyond the reach of the barbarous kerns of Munster; a sum by no means inconsiderable in those days. And we may at least believe, that a plundered servant of the Crown would not pass unnoticed by the government, either in regard to a permanent compensation, or to immediate relief if requisite. But the numerous narrators of Spenser's death, both "in prose and rhyme," have determined to give an unbounded meaning to Camden's *inops*; and have accordingly represented the poet as dying in extreme indigence and want of bread. Nor are the melancholy accounts of these narrators unattended with a prefatory remark on his life, which confutes itself. Camden says generally that, by a fate *peculiar to poets*, Spenser was always poor. But he notices no other situation that Spenser held than the secretaryship under Lord Grey. Thus the author of his *Life* in the *Biographia Britannica* says, "that this admirable poet and worthy gentleman had struggled with poverty all his life-time." And thus, in the notes to that life, are cited the pretended corroborations of the fact, which Dr. Birch and the author of the *Life* prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the *Faerie Queene* have triumphantly produced from an old play, entitled *The Return from Parnassus*, &c. acted at St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1606; and from Fletcher's *Purple Island*, a poem printed in 1633: in the former of which, the "*soile*," that is, England, is described as

"Denying maintenance for his deare relief,"

and as

"Scarce deigning to shut up his dying eye:"

And in the latter, he is exhibited to the pity of the reader, as one, whom though all the Graces and Muses nurst and all the great and learned admired,

Mr. Malone has since admitted that Spenser died *in London, between the 1st of January and the 25th of March, 1599*. See his edit. of Dryden's *Prose-Works*, vol. 3. p. 93.

² Cibber's *Life* of the Poets. Warton's *Observ.* on Spenser, vol. ii. p. 251. Brydges's edition of Phillips's *Theatrum Poet.* Anglic. p. 136, &c.

³ "*Poetis funus ducentibus*," as Camden relates. See also the translation of his *Hist. of Q. Eliz.* p. 365. "*His hears [was] attended by poets, and mournfull elegies and poems with the pens that wrote them thrown into his tomb.*"

" Yet all his hopes were crost, all suits denied ;
 " Discourag'd, scorn'd, his writings vilified ;
 " Poorly (poore man) he liv'd ; poorly (poore man) he died."

To these may be added the lamentation of Jos. Hall, another poet, in his address to Dr. Will. Bedell on his pastoral "in Spenser's style," entitled "A Protestant Memorial, &c." first published in 1713.

" Thine be his [*Spenser's*] Verse ; not his Reward be thine !
 " Ah ! me, that, after unbeseeing care
 " And secret want which bred his last misfare,
 " His relics dear obscurely tomb'd lie
 " Under unwritten stones, that who goes by
 " Cannot once read, *Lo ! here doth Collin lie !*"

But all these remarks are far exceeded by Mr. Pennant, who has conjectured, that what had been published in 1590 might have been composed in consequence of his distresses at a subsequent period ! Speaking of the portrait of Spenser at Dupplin Castle, he calls the poet "the sweet, the melancholy, romantick bard of a romantick queen ; the moral, romantick elient of the moral, romantick patron, Sir Philip Sidney ; fated to pass his days in dependence, or in struggling against adverse fortune, in a country insensible to his merit ; either at Court 'to lose good days, &c.' or in Ireland to be tantalized with the appearance of good fortune ; to be seated amidst scenery indulgent to his fanciful muse ; yet, at length, to be expelled by the barbarous Tyrone ; to have his house burnt, and his innocent infant perish in the flames ; to return home ; to die in deep poverty ; lamenting

——— ' that gentler wits should breed
 ' Where thick-skin chuffes laugh at a scholler's need.'

May it not be imagined, *that, in the anguish of his soul, he composed his Cave of Despair, as fine a descriptive poem as any in our language, F. Q. i. ix. 33, &c.*"

The authority of Mr. Warton has also countenanced the belief of Spenser's dying in abject poverty. But from his statement I am compelled, in more than the present instance, to dissent. "Spenser himself," says Mr. Warton, "died in Ireland, in the most wretched condition, amid the desolations of the rebellion in Munster ; as appears from the following curious anecdote in Drummond, who has left us the heads of a conversation between himself and Ben Jonson. "B. Jonson told me that Spenser's goods were robbed by the Irish in Desmond's rebellion ; his house, and a little child of his burnt, and he and his wife nearly escaped ; that he afterwards died in King-street, [*Dublin*], by absolute want of bread ; and that he refused twenty pieces sent him by the Earl of Essex, and gave this answer to the person who brought them, That he was sure he had no time to spend them.' Camden informs us, that Spenser was in Ireland when the rebellion broke out under Tyrone in 1583 ; but that, being plundered of his fortune, he was obliged to return to England, where he died in the same or the next year. Camden adds, that he was buried in the abbey of Westminster, with due solemnities, at the expence of the Earl of Essex. If Drummond's account be true, it is most probable, that the Earl, whose benefaction came too late to be of any use, ordered his body to be conveyed into England, where it was interred as Camden relates. It must be owned that Jonson's account, in Drummond, is very circumstantial ; and that it is probable, Jonson was curious enough to collect authentic information on so interesting a subject. At least his profession and connections better qualified him to come at the truth. Perhaps he was one of the poets who held up Spenser's pall."

The preceding account, given by Drummond, requires further examination. In the first place, Mr. Warton's insertion of *Dublin* into the narrative is unjustifiable ; and erroneously leads the reader to bestow a greater weight on mere conversation, than on historical testimony. I cannot but question also the authority of Jonson, in regard to the pretended answer of Spenser to the messenger who brought him money from Lord Essex ; *that he was sure he had no time to spend it.* Jonson relates, that the poet and *his wife* escaped the violence of the rebels ; although he notices

^b Pennant's Tour in Scotland, Part 2d. p. 81.

^c Observations on the Faerie Queene, vol. 2. p. 251.

^d Works, fol. p. 224. "Heads of a conversation between the famous poet Ben Jonson, and William Drummond of Hawthornden, January, 1619." We should read *Tyrone's* instead of *Desmond's* rebellion.

no other child than that which was burnt. But two children, at least, were preserved; for a wife and *children*, as we shall presently discover, survived the poet. What then! would this tender-minded Spenser, with a wife and children "participating his temporary distress, think *only of himself* on the melancholy occasion, and decline the offer of assistance so seasonable at least to *them*? I must require the corroboration of such a fact from the mouth of more witnesses than that of Jonson; especially when I consider what Drummond has recorded of his friend Ben, that he was guilty of "interpreting the best sayings, and deeds, often to the worst." If the Earl of Essex sent Spenser a donation, which is very probable, I am persuaded that it was not declined with the ungrateful and unnatural answer alleged by Jonson. To fugitives from their own abode, not possessed of an immediate supply for their wants, and resident at an *inn*, the generosity of Essex was well-timed; and it corresponds with the friendship which he had always shewn to Spenser. It would be an aid till the accustomed time of the payment of the royal pension to Spenser, and till his case had undergone an inquiry necessary to entitle him to publick remuneration.

But, leaving for a moment the particular point of Essex's generosity, may we not suppose that the poet experienced, in his present accidental want, the kindness "of the ancient house" of Spenser? In his earlier days he had been often obliged by persons of that noble family; and he appears not, by any subsequent circumstance, to have forfeited their notice. It is an extraordinary assertion of a late biographer of Spenser, where, speaking of the Spencers of Althorp, he says, "It does not appear that the poet ever claimed kindred with that house, or was acknowledged by it." The claim of kindred with that house, as we have seen, was the ^h favourite theme of Spenser; and the admission of that claim was also 'repeatedly avowed by him. In his utmost need, then, can we believe him to have been so deserted as to ^k want a morsel of bread? Was his poverty, the effect of national misfortune, a crime? Would none of those, who had ^l "acknowledged the private bands of his affinity and honoured him with particular bounties," listen to the representation of the misery, in which a kinsman of whom they could not be ashamed, (a man of exemplary taste and learning and a man of blameless character,) was now involved?—When to this expectation of alleviated calamity we add the means of Spenser ^m already mentioned, and the probability of Essex's generosity being not slighted; common sense and humanity seem to revolt at the supposition of Spenser's dying in want of bread.

Of Essex's friendly interference Mr. Warton has continued a mis-statement, in his ⁿ History of English Poetry; subjoined to a very elegant discrimination between the accomplishments and the errors of that nobleman. "A few of his Sonnets are in the Ashmolean Museum, which have no marks of poetick genius. He is a vigorous and elegant writer of prose. But if Essex was no poet, few noblemen of his age were more courted by poets. From Spenser to the lowest rhymers, he was the subject of numerous sonnets or popular ballads. I will not except Sidney. I could produce evidence to prove, that he scarce ever went out of England, or even left London, on the most frivolous enterprise, without a pastoral in his praise, or a panegyrick in metre, which were sold and sung in the streets. Having interested himself in the fashionable poetry of the times, he was placed high in the ideal Arcadia now just established; and, among other instances which might be brought, on his return from Portugal in 1589 he was complimented with a poem, called, 'An Eglage gratulatorie entituled to the right honorable and renowned shepherd of Albions Arcadie, Robert earl of Essex; and for his returne lately into

^a Mr. Chalmers is entirely of this opinion. "The Irish of Munster, rising universally in October 1598, laid waste the country and expelled the English. Neither Kilcolman nor Spenser were spared. He was thus constrained to return with his wife, and family, to England; but in ruined circumstances." *Supplemental Apolog.* p. 34.

^f See Drummond's character of Jonson in Brydges's edition of Phillip's *Theatrum Poetarum Anglicanorum*, p. 248, which, however disadvantageously, is not, in the opinion of the learned editor, very unjustly drawn.

^g Dr. Aikin, in his Life of Spenser, prefixed to the edition of Spenser's Poetical Works in 1802.

^h See before, pages xxxi, xxxii, xxxiii, &c.

ⁱ See the same pages.

^k See before, p. xlviii, xlix. The reader might be also led into this belief of Spenser's being starved by Oldham's Satire against Poetry; by Granger's Biographical History; by Dunster's edition of Phillips's Cider, p. 88, &c. &c.

^l See the Dedications to *Muipopotmos*, and the *Tears of the Muses*.

^m See before, p. xlviii.

ⁿ Vol. 3. pp. 421, 422.

England.' This is a light in which Lord Essex is seldom viewed. I know not if the queen's fatal partiality, or his own inherent attractions, his love of literature, his heroism, integrity, and generosity, qualities which abundantly overbalance his presumption, his vanity, and impetuosity, had the greater share in dictating these praises. If adulation were any where justifiable, it must be when paid to the man who *endeavoured to save Spenser from starving in the streets of Dublin*, and who buried him in Westminster abbey with becoming solemnity." By the death of the poet I can conceive Lord Essex to have been much affected. From his ingenuous and liberal mind the praises of such a man as Spenser would not easily be effaced. He was now on the eve of his departure to Ireland in the character of Lord Lieutenant; the appointment of which exalted station Spenser is believed to have recommended, in his *View of the State of Ireland*, to be bestowed on him, as "upon whom the eye of all England is fixed, and our last hopes now rest." Essex therefore was deprived of Spenser's political assistance; a circumstance (as I conceive) of great disappointment, if not of distress, to a vice-roy nominated at a period so critical. Nor can I read the following Letter, which Essex had occasion to write in the Autumn after his arrival in Ireland, without thinking that, in the general allusion to the dearest friends whom he has outlived, Spenser also is intended. It is an original Letter to the Lord Keeper Egerton, on the loss of his eldest son Sir Thomas Egerton, who had accompanied Essex into Ireland, and who died there on the 23d of August, 1599, at the age of 25.

"Whatt can you receive from a cursed country butt vnfortunate newes? whatt can be my stile (whom heaven and earth are agreed to make a martyr) butt a stile of mourning? nott for myself thatt I smart, for I wold I had in my hart the sorow of all my frends, but I mourne thatt *my destiny is to overlive my deerest frendes*. Of y^r. losse yt is neither good for me to write nor you to reade. But I protest I felt myself sensibly dismembred when I lost my frend. Shew y^r. strength in lyfe. Lett me, yf yt be Gods will, shew yt in taking leave of the world and hasting after my frends. Butt I will live and dy

More y^r. lps then any
mans living,

ESSEX.

"Arbrackan this last of August," [1599.]

Little did the generous but unfortunate Essex then imagine, that the learned statesman, to whom this letter of condolence was addressed, would be directed very soon afterwards to issue an order for his execution. The original ^p warrant, to which the name of Elizabeth is prefixed, is now in the possession of the Marquis of Stafford; and the queen has written her name, not with that firmness observable in numerous documents existing in the same and other collections, but with apparent tremor and hesitation. Perhaps no apology will be expected for the long digression I have made on the history of Spenser's friend, and indeed the general friend of literature.

What became of the wife and children of Spenser immediately after his death, does not appear. The following original Letter proves, what I have asserted throughout this account of the Life of the poet, that he had ^q children besides the infant which is said to have perished in the flames; which has induced me to fix the date of his marriage earlier than in 1596. The ^rLetter is from the Lords of the Privy Council in England to Sir George Carew, Lord President of Munster, "in the behalf of Mrs. Spenser."

^e In the collection of the Marquis of Stafford.

^p This Warrant is in the most perfect preservation. It is one of the numerous important documents, subservient to the history of this country, which were carefully preserved by Lord Chancellor Egerton, and were bequeathed by the late Duke of Bridgewater to the present Marquis of Stafford.

^q "We think," says the author of the Life of Spenser prefixed to Mr. Church's edition of the Faerie Queene, "that Spenser could hardly leave *more than one son*; considering that, as before stated, one child was burnt." But this opinion is not correct.

^r In the Carew manuscripts at Lambeth Library, the original of this Letter and the copy exist. It is worthy of observation, that Sir George Carew, while he was Lord President of Munster, preserved the originals, and directed copies to be made of all the letters sent to him "from the lordes of her Ma^{ties}. moste Honorable Pryvie Council." See Memorand. in MS. No. 620.

"After o^r. Right hartie Comendacons to y^r lordship. By the inclosed Petition it may appeare vnto you the humble sute that is made vnto vs in the behalf of the wyff and children of Edmond Spenser late Clerke of the Councell of that Provynce: In regard he was a Servitor of that Realme, we have ben moved to recomend the consideraçon of the Sute made vnto vs, vnto y^r lordship and withall to praye you, that you will vpon due informaçon of the state of the Cause, and the wronges pretended to be done in preiudice of the wyff and children of Spenser, afforde them that favour and assistance w^{ch} the iustice and equitie of the Cause shall deserve for recovery and holdinge those thinges w^{ch} by right ought to appteine to them. And so we byd you right hartely fare well: ffrom the Court at Whytehall, the xxixth of March 1601.

["Receved in July 1601."]

"Yo^r lordship's very loving frendes

"Jo Cant.

Tho. Egerton, C.S.

"T. Buckhurst.

Notingham.

"W. Knollys.

Ro. Cecyll.

"I. Fortescue.

I. Herbert."

To this Letter the *inclosed Petition* is unfortunately not an accompaniment. It was probably deposited among the Munster records by the Lord President. I am inclined to think that the Petition was presented before the widow and children departed from England.

In regard, however, to the family, I am enabled to state that two sons certainly survived the poet; *Silvanus* and *Peregrine*; of whom the former was probably a native of the *woody* Kilcolman; and the latter perhaps was born in England soon after the arrival of Spenser and his wife from Ireland, or might be a posthumous child, and received his name from the *strange* and unexpected place of his birth. In two manuscripts preserved in the library of Trinity College at Dublin, it appears that Silvanus, the son of Edmund Spenser, married Ellen Nangle, eldest daughter of David Nangle of Moneanymy in the county of Cork and of Ellen Roche who was daughter to William Roche of Ballyhowly in the county of Cork; and by that marriage he had two sons, Edmund and William Spenser. It further appears in Smith's History of the County and City of Cork, as the learned librarian Dr. Barrett remarks, that this family, called in the manuscripts Nangle of Moneanymy, is otherwise called Nangle; and the historian mentions "Ballygriffin, a pretty seat of Mr. David Nangle, below which is the ruined church of Monanymy, with a large chancel, and in it is a modern tomb of the Nagles." And Monanymy appears, in Smith's map of the county, a little way to the south of Kilcolman, the residence of Spenser. From the 'manuscript depositions relative to the rebellion of 1641, still remaining in the library just mentioned, persons of the name of Nangle of Monanymy, and also of the name of Roche, (the families to which Spenser's son was by marriage connected,) appear to have taken a part in those disturbances; and probably might, some of them at least, have forfeited their property. The biographers of Spenser have informed us that his "grandson Hugolin Spenser, was, after the restoration of King Charles the second, restored by the Court of Claims to so much of the lands as could be found to have been his ancestor's. This circumstance seems to prove that the estate had again been seized by rebels, as it had been in the time of the poet; for Peregrine Spenser, the father of Hugolin, is described, in the last-mentioned manuscript, by an attestation dated May 4. 1642, as "a Protestant, resident about the barony of Fermoy, and so impoverished by the troubles as to be unable to pay his debts;" and a part of the estate had been assigned to him by his elder brother Silvanus, as the Case of William Spenser, his nephew, will presently demonstrate. It no where appears that Silvanus, notwithstanding his connection with the popish families of Roche and Nangle, was involved in the rebellion of 1641. Hugolin, however, followed the example of Sir Richard Nangle, the

* MS. F. 4. 18. Page 118. Entitled, *Irish Pedigrees*. MS. F. 3. 27. Page 42.

† MS. F. 2. 15. Pages 1511, 1563, 1573, 1667.

‡ The biographers call him, inaccurately, the great-grandson of Spenser. See Birch, Church's edit. *Faer. Qu.* Biograph. Brit. &c.

* Namely, MS. F. 2. 15 page 1667. And for all these notices in the Dublin manuscripts I am highly obliged, through the kind application of Joseph Cooper Walker, Esq., to the Rev. Dr. Barrett.

attorney-general of James the second and the great persecutor of the Irish Protestants, in resisting the designs of the Prince of Orange; and was accordingly, after the revolution, outlawed for treason and rebellion. On this event his cousin William Spenser, the son of Silvanus, became a suitor for the forfeited property. The affair brought him to England; and his name is said to have procured him a favourable reception. By the poet Congreve he was introduced to Mr. Montague, afterwards Earl of Halifax, then at the head of the Treasury, through whose interest he obtained his suit. Dr. Birch has described him as a man somewhat advanced in years, and as unable to give any account of the works of his ancestor which are wanting. The *Case of William Spenser*, printed on a single sheet, and since deposited by the republisher of it in the British Museum, has been accepted by the publick as a proof of that active perseverance, and liberal curiosity, by which Mr. George Chalmers is animated; and is too interesting to be omitted here.

“The Case of William Spenser, of Kilcolman, in the county of Cork, in the kingdom of Ireland, Esq. grandson and heir to Edmond Spenser the poet:—

“THAT Sylvanus Spencer, Esq. father of William, in his life-time, in order to prefer his second brother Peregrine in marriage, did give and assign to him part of his estate in the said county of Cork.

“Peregrine dies, and that part of the estate that was settled on him by Silvanus, descended and came to Hugoline, son of the said Peregrine.

“Hugoline, being seized and possessed of the said estate, was outlawed for treason and rebellion after the late revolution.

“William Spenser finding Hugoline’s estate vested in the king, and being the next protestant heir, as also heir at law to him, that part of the estate being formerly vested in Sylvanus, (to whom William was eldest son and heir) did apply himself to his Majesty for a grant thereof, and by his petition did set forth his claim to the said estate, and also his services, sufferings, and losses, in the late rebellion in Ireland, in behalf of the government, which are very well known.

“Upon which petition his Majesty was graciously pleased to refer the same to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury in England, and they were pleased to refer it further to the Earls of Monrath, Drogheda, and Galloway, then Lords Justices of Ireland, to examine the matter, and make their report.

“The Lords Justices reported it back to the Lords of the Treasury of England: wherein they recommend the said William to his Majesty for his great services, sufferings, and losses, in the late troubles, and that he was next protestant heir to Hugoline, and to deserve his Majesty’s grace and favour.

“His Majesty was thereupon graciously pleased to grant the said Hugoline’s estate to the said William, by his letters patent bearing date at Dublin the fourteenth day of June, in the ninth year of his reign.

“That the said estate was then of the yearly value of sixty-seven pounds, seventeen shillings and six-pence.

“That there is a mortgage upon the said estate for five hundred pounds, which is yet unpaid.

“That it cost the said William above six hundred pounds, the best part of his fortune, in improving the said estate, and procuring the said grant, and hath received little or no profit thereof.

“For by a late act of parliament, all grants were made void in Ireland, and the forfeited estates were vested in trustees, to be sold for the use of the public; and whilst that act was in agitation, the said William was so disabled by sickness, that he could not apply himself to this honourable House for a saving clause, whereby the trustees have dispossessed the said William of the said estate, without any manner of consideration for his improvements and other charges about the same, to his utter ruin and impoverishment.

† Dr. Birch, Church’s edit. Faer. Q., and Biograph. Brit.

‡ See the Supplemental Apology for the Believers in the Shakspeare-Papers, &c. 1799, pp. 35, 36, &c.

"That this is conceived to be the only case of this nature in the whole kingdom of Ireland, he being the next protestant heir, and whose grandfather, Edmond Spenser, by his book, entitled, A View of Ireland, modled the settlement of that kingdom, and these lands were given him by Queen Elizabeth, of blessed memory, for his services to the crown.

"That your petitioner having applied himself to this honourable House last sessions of parliament for relief herein :

"The petitioner was referred to the trustees then in England, who reported the same to this honourable House ; and, upon further consideration of that report, the same was refer'd to the trustees in Ireland, who now have made their report to this effect :—

"That the petitioner was very serviceable to the publick, by being a guide to his Majesty's General the Earl of Athlone, during the late wars in that kingdom.

"That he had 300 head of black cattle, and 1500 sheep taken from him, and had several houses burnt : That his family was stript, his house plundered, and his only son had above twenty wounds given him by the Irish army.

"That in consideration of his said services and sufferings, and of his being next protestant heir to Hugoline Spenser attainted, his Majesty was pleased to grant the forfeited estate of the said Hugoline to the petitioner in 1697, now set at sixty pounds per ann.

"That there is a claim heard and allowed as an incunbrance of 300l. absolute, on the said estate, and 200 l. more in case Hugoline, who is very old and unmarried, dies without issue male.

"That the petitioner has expended near the sum mentioned in his petition, in making journeys into England to procure his grant, in passing his patent in Ireland, and in building a house and planting an orchard on the premises, so that his grant has hitherto been a charge to him, and not an advantage ; all which they submit to this honourable House.

"And the petitioner humbly hopes this honourable House will be pleased to take his case into consideration, and re-establish him in his said estate, or otherwise relieve him as to your great wisdom shall seem meet."

Dr. Birch informs the reader in 1751, that some ^a of the descendants of Spenser were then remaining in the county of Cork. An Edmund Spenser of Mallow is ^b yet remembered in Dublin ; and the daughter of this gentleman, the last lineal descendant of the poet, is now married, as I am ^c informed, to Mr. Burne, who fills, or lately filled, some office in the English-Custom-house ; in whose possession an original picture of Spenser ^d has been said to exist ; but an inquiry after it has not been attended with success. Whether it may be confounded with the painting, reported to ^e be at Castle-Saffron in the neighbourhood of Kilcolman, the seat of John Love, Esq., I am unable to say.

To the memory of Spenser a handsome monument, with an inscription, was erected in Westminster Abbey by Anne, Countess of Dorset. This mark of respect had been usually ascribed to the Earl of Essex, till ^f Fenton, in his notes on Waller, related the discovery which he had made in the manuscript diary of Stone, master-mason to King Charles the first ; that the monument was set up above thirty years after the poet's death, and that the Countess of Dorset paid forty pounds for it. In the inscription, however, the dates both of his birth and his death, owing to the blunder of the carver or the writer of the brief memorial, were false. For he was stated to have been born in 1510, and to have died in 1596. This interval presents a lengthened span, of which little more than half was allotted to Spenser. "Obiit *immatura morte*," says Camden in his ^g little treatise describing the monuments of Westminster in 1600, "anno salutis 1598 ;" which expression, *his dying an untimely death*, is used not without propriety

^a Life of Spenser, prefixed to the edition of the Faerie Queene in 1751.

^b From the information of Joseph Cooper Walker, Esq.

^c By the gentleman mentioned in the preceding note.

^d Smith's Hist. of Cork, and Dr. Birch's Life of Spenser.

^e As Mr. Walker had been informed.

^f See the Life of Spenser prefixed to Church's edition of the Faerie Queene, and the Biographia Britannica.

^g Viz. "Reges, Reginae, Nobiles, et alii in Eccl. Coll. B. Petri Westmon. sepulti. &c." 4to. Impr. E. Bollifant, 1600.

when we consider that Spenser died at the age of forty-five. The inscription as it now stands on the monument in the Abbey, is as follows.

HEARE LYES (EXPECTING THE SECOND COMMINGE OF OVR SAVIOVR CHRIST IESVS) THE BODY OF EDMOND SPENSER THE PRINCE OF POETS IN HIS TYME WHOSE DIVINE SPIRIT NEEDS NOE OTHIR WITNESSE THEN THE WORKS WHICH HE LEFT BEHINDE HIM HE WAS BORNE IN LONDON IN THE YEARE 1553 AND DIED IN THE YEARE 1598.

It should be observed that Camden's treatise just mentioned, does not pretend to give the monumental inscription of the poet; but introduces a suitable eulogium on a man so celebrated, in order to guide the curious, as it has been ingeniously^b conjectured, to that part of the Abbey in which his remains were deposited; for at that time no monument was erected to him. The whole eulogium in prose is this. "Edmundus Spenser Londinensis, Anglicorum Poetarum nostri seculi facilè princeps, quod eius poemata fauentibus Musis & victuro genio conscripta comprobant. Obiit immatura morte anno salutis 1598, & prope Galfredum Chaucerum conditur; qui fœlicissimè poesin Anglicis literis primus illustravit." Then follow two copies of verses, which I shall have occasion presently to cite.

The death of Spenser appears to have been deeply lamented¹ by poets who lived near the time, and probably were acquainted with him; by none, with greater tenderness, than William Browne, the most accomplished disciple in the school of Spenser. Describing him snatched from his admiring audience, in the midst of his sweetest minstrelsy, by the hand of death, he adds:

"A dampe of wonder and amazement strooke
 "Thetis' attendants; many a heavy looke
 "Follow'd sweet Spenser, till the thickning ayre
 "Sight's further passage stopp'd. A passionate teare
 "Fell from each Nymph; no Shepheard's cheek was dry;
 "A doleful Dirge, and mournfull Elegie,
 "Flew to the shore."—— *Britannia's Pastorals*, edit. 1616. B. ii. p. 27.

And in another part of the same work, alluding to the pastoral strains of Spenser, he has thus recorded his affection:

"Had Colin Clout yet liv'd, (but he is gone!)
 "The best on earth could tune a lovers mone;
 "Whose sadder tones infore'd the rocks to weepe,
 "And laid the greatest griefes in quiet sleepe:
 "Who, when he sung (as I would do to mine)
 "His truest loves to his fair Rosaline,
 "Entic'd each shepherds eare to heare him play, &c.
 "Heaven rest thy soule! if so a swaive may pray:
 "And, as thy workes live here, live there for aye!"

The circumstance of his being buried near the grave of Chaucer, which is said to have been observed at his^k own desire, gave rise also to several encomiastick epitaphs; the first of which, some writers have been hastily led to consider as^l the poet's monumental inscription.

"Hic prope Chaucerum, Spensere poeta, poetam
 "Conderis, et versu quàm tumulo propior.
 "Anglica, te vivo, vixit plausitque Poësis;
 "Nunc moritura timet, te moriente, mori."

Again:

"Hic prope Chaucerum situs est Spenserius, illi
 "Proximus ingenio, proximus ut tumulo."

^b In the note (T.) on Spenser's Life in the Biographia Britannica.

¹ See Weever's *Mirror of Martyrs*, published in 1601. See also a beautiful poem, re-printed in Ellis's *Specimens of the early English poets*, vol. 2d. p. 255, 1st. edit. See likewise P. Fletcher's *Purple Island*, published in 1633, B. i. st. 19, 20, 21.

^k See the Lives of Spenser prefixed to the folio edition of his Works in 1679, and to Church's edition of the Faer. Qu. in 1758.

^l Winstanley, in his *Lives of the English Poets*; and Sir T. Pope Blount, in his *Remarks on Poetry*, &c.—This and the two following epitaphs were probably among the verses, which were thrown into the poet's grave.—The two last lines of this epitaph are, as Fenton has remarked, a servile imitation of Cardinal Bembo's epitaph on Sannazarius, and the immortal painter of Urbino.—In the *Biographia Britannica*, the two epitaphs from Camden's book are printed together as one, without distinction.

^m This and the preceding epitaph are given by Camden in his "Reges, Reginae, Nobiles, et alii in Eccl. Coll. B. Petri Westmon. sepulti, &c."

Again :

“*Spenserius enbat hic, Chaucero etate priori
“Inferior, tunulo proximus, arte prior.”*”

Nor was the character of Spenser treated without particular respect, while he lived. He was seldom mentioned without the epithet of “great” or “learned.” And indeed what poet of that period could pretend to his learning? In the list of all our most eminent poets indeed, an admirable critick has assigned, in respect to their erudition, the first place to Milton, the second to Spenser. And therefore considering the exquisite taste, as well as the extensive learning of Spenser, the loss of his critical discourse entitled *The English Poet*, is, as the same author has remarked, much to be regretted. Perhaps he would have there illustrated, by examples drawn from the writings of his countrymen who were distinguished in either school, the manner both of the Provençal and Italian poetry. But if his art of criticism has been lost, his own example as a poet has contributed to the production, in succeeding times, of the sublimest as well as the sweetest strains to which the lyre of English poesy has been tuned. To Dryden Milton acknowledged that Spenser was his original. In Cowley, in Dryden, in the facetious Butler, in Prior, in Pope, in Thomson, in Shenstone, in Gray, and in Akenside obligations of importance to the “oaten reed” and the “trumpet stern” of Spenser may without difficulty be traced. It is indeed a just observation, that “more poets have sprung from Spenser than all our other English writers.

^u This occurs in the Book of *Cenotaphia*, subjoined to Fitzgeffray's *Affianæ, sive Epiorannota*, published in 1601.

^v See the Shepherds Content at the end of the *Affectionate Shepherd*, &c. 1594. 4to. Speaking of love :

‘By thee great Collin lost his libertie ;
‘By thee sweet Astrophel forwent his loy.’

See also Drayton's *Shepherds Garland*, 1593.

“For learned Collin laies his pipes to gage,
“And is to fayrie gone a pilgrimage.”

And in the *Lamentation of Troy* &c. 1594, he is invoked as “the only Homer living,” and intreated to write the story “with his fame-quickning quill.” And Sir John Davies in his *Orchestra*, 1596, exclaims ;

“O that I could old Gefferies Muse awake,
“Or borrow Collins fayre heroike stile,
“Or smooth my rimes with Delias servaunts file.”

In Camden's Remains published by Philipot, we are likewise presented with the following proof of the high estimation, in which he was held while living.

“Upon Master Edmund Spenser the famous Poet.
“At Delphos shrine one did a doubt propound,
“Which by the Oracle must be released ;
“Whether of Poets were the best renown'd,
“Those that survive, or those that he deceased.
“The god made answer by divine suggestion,
“While Spenser is alive, it is no question.”

William Smith has dedicated his *Chloris, or, The Complaint of the passionate despised Shepheard*, in 1596, to Spenser, under the title of “the most excellent and learned Shepheard. Collin Cloute ;” and, in a concluding Sonnet, considers his friendly patronage as a shield against “raging Euvie.” Let me not omit the spirited address of bishop Hall, in his first Book of Satires, published in 1597.

“But let no rebel satyr dare traduce
“Th' eternal legends of thy faerie muse,
“Renowned Spenseer ! whom no earthly wight
“Dares once to emulate, much less despight.”

^p Dr. Joseph Warton, *Life of Pope*, p. xxiv.

^q Dr. Joseph Warton's edit. of Pope, vol. i. p. 175.

^r See before, p. xi.—“What authority Mr. Wood has for Io : Puttenham's being the author of the Art of English Poesy, I do not know. Mr. Wanley, in his Catalogue of the Harley Library, says he had been told, that Edm: Spenser was the author of that book, which came out anonymous. But Sir John Harrington, in his preface to Orlando Furioso P. 2. gives so hard a censure of that book, that Spenser could not possibly be the author.” Letter from Tho. Baker to the Hon James West, printed in the Europ. Magazine, April, 1788.

^s Cowley tells us, he was made a poet by the delight he took in the Faerie Queene. “Essay xi. Of myself.”

^t Bishop Hurd has in his Library, at Hartlebury, a copy of the folio edition of the Faerie Queene, which had been Dryden's and Pope's but there is not a note by either. Manuscript note by Dr. Farmer, prefixed to the sixth vol. of *Hughes's Spenser now in the possession of Isaac Reed, Esqr.*

^u See Dr. Sowell's remark cited by Mr. Chalmers, *Suppl. Apolog.* p. 38. I might add the zealous testimony also of several poetical writers in regard to the fame of Spenser. See Henry More's Preface to his Philosophical Poems. See also his *Antiquate* &c. at the end of his *Dissertation on the Seven Churches*, in the preface to which Sign O. 3. there is much allusion to Spenser. See likewise the Preface to Dr. Woodford's *Paraphrase on the Canticles* &c. in the preface to which the highest commendations are bestowed on Spenser, and much sorrow expressed that his version of the Canticles is lost.—Some imagine that Bunyan, in his *Pilgrim's Progress*, has been indebted

Mr. Warton has remarked that, after the *Faerie Queene*, allegory began to decline; and, I may add, that romantick expeditions and adventures found no second Spenser to celebrate them. I am much mistaken, if the prevailing taste for enchantments and "hard assays" did not give rise to a publication, soon after the appearance of the second edition of Spenser's great Poem, intended to ridicule the tales of giants, magicians, and dragons; and to expose also the affected language with which our old romances abound. We therefore precede Cervantes in the rough treatment of knight-errantry, if my conjecture be right: for the *Knight of the Sea*, the publication which I mean, was printed in 1600; and the first edition of Don Quixote was not printed before 1605. In vain, however, shall we look into this English performance for any sparks of the wit and imagination which distinguish the inimitable Spanish burlesque. That the reader may judge of the tendency of this *Knight of the Sea*, I will select a few passages; as, a description of the sun rising, p. 31. "On the next morrow, so soone as the fyre-breathing palfreys of Apollo, with their horned hooves, had stricken the *Hunts up*, &c." Again, of an English female warrior, p. 152. "So valourously did the worthy English damozell distribute her iron almes among the thickest of that rabble multitude, as in a moment shee brought more then nineteene of them with crased crownes to their *Beso las tierras!*" Again, of a lady complaining in prison, p. 44.

"Hope, therefore, oh ye heavenly Governours,
 "And from the vertice of Olympus hye,
 "Yielding regard vnto my plaintfull cry,
 "Powre downe your mercies most incessantly;
 "Least, wanting the *adjuvant* heavenly,
 "And sacred *auxill* of celestiall powers,
 "Like Biblis, I be turned into showers,
 "Through the *effluction* of my watery eyes;
 "Which, hauing powred forth continually
 "Whole *riverets* of teares, *denotifies*
 "Dire death shall o'er my soule soon tyrannize!"

It has been asserted by *criticks of great discernment, that Spenser's *Faerie Queene* will not

to Spenser. See Boswell's *Life of Johnson*, vol. 2. p. 237. 3d. edit. And *The Looker-on*, vol. i. p. 304. But Bunyan, I think, may be traced to another source.—The following curious extract, describing Elysium in an uproar may serve to shew the opinion, which was entertained of those who belonged to the school of Spenser, in the middle of the seventeenth century. "The fire of emulation burnt fiercely in every angle of this paradise: The British Bards (forsooth) were also engaged in quarrel for superiority; and who, think you, threw the apple of discord amongst them, but Ben Johnson, who had openly vaunted himself the first and best of English Poets: this Brave was resented by all with the highest indignation; for Chawcer (by most there) was esteemed the Father of English Poesie, whose onely unhappines it was, that he was made for the time he lived in, but the time not for him: Chapman was wondrously exasperated at Ben's boldness, and scarce refrained to tell (his own *Tate of a Tub*) that his *Isabel and Morlimer* was now completed by a knighted poet, whose soul remained in flesh; hereupon Spenser (who was very busie in finishing his *Faerie Queen*) thrust himself amid the throng, and was received with a shout by Chapman, Harrington, Owen, (Constable, Daniel, and Drayton, so that some thought the matter already decided; but behold Shakespear and Fletcher bringing with them a strong party) appeared, as if they meant to water their bayes with blood, rather then part with their proper right, which indeed Apollo and the Muses had (with much justice) conferred upon them, so that now there is like to be a trouble in Triplex; Skelton, Gower, and the Monk of Bury, were at daggers-drawing for Chawcer; Spenser waited upon by a numerous troop of the best bookmen in the world; Shakespear and Fletcher surrounded with their Life Guard, viz. Goffe, Massinger, Decker, Webster, Sucklin, Cartwright, Carew, &c. O ye Pernassides! what a curse have ye cast upon your Helliconian water-hailliffs! that those, whose names (both Sir and Christian) are filed on Fame's trumpet, and whom Envy cannot wound, shall now perish by intestine discord and homebred dissention!" Don Zara del Fogo, or, Wit and Fancy in a Maze, &c. A Mock Romance, 12mo. Lond. 1656, pp. 101, 102.

* The affected language, in the time of Elizabeth, is treated with much humour, and at considerable length, in a very curious and scarce pamphlet (in Sion Coll. Lib. Z. 6. 32.) entitled "Questions of profitable and pleasant concerns, talked of by two olde Seniors, the one an ancient retired Gentleman, the other a midling or new upstart Frankeling, under an oake in Kenelworth Parke, where they were met by an accident to defend the partching heate of a boate day, in grasse or buck-hunting time, called by the reporter *The Display of vaine life*; together with a panacea or suppling plaister to cure, if it were possible, the principall diseases wherewith this present time is especially vexed. Lond. 1594." &c. It is dedicated to Spenser's friend, Robert Earl of Essex.

† The reader may see, by the following extract from "A Letter, wherein part of the entertainment vnto the Queens Majesty at Killingworth Castl, &c. in 1575 is signified," 12mo. bl. 1, what were the romances then read, or at least held in estimation. The writer is speaking of Captain Cox, p. 34. "Great oversight hath he in matters of storie: For as for king Arthurs book, *Huð of Burdeaux*, *The four Sons of Aymon*, *Beuys of Hampton*, *The squyre of to degree*, *The knight of courtesy*, and *The Lady Faguell*, *Frederick of Gene*, *Syr Eglamour*, *Syr Tryamour*, *Syr Lamwell*, *Syr Isembras*, *Syr Gawyn*, *Olyuer of the Castl*, *Lucres and Eurialus*, *Virgils Life*, *The Castl of Ladies*, *The wido Edyth*, *The King and the Tanner*, *Frier Rous*, *Howetglas*, *Gargantua*, &c."

‡ The title of this mock-romance, (for such I consider it,) is extremely verbose; and not worth the repetition here. Dr. Farmer had a copy of it, which in his Catalogue was said to be *unique*; and which I believe was purchased for the King, or the late Duke of Roxburgh. The Marquis of Stafford, however, has another copy.

§ See Hume's Hist. of England, Dr. Drake's Literary Hours, and Dr. Aikin's Life of Spenser. The French criticke

often be read through; that to many readers it will prove not unfrequently very tedious; but that detached parts, after repeated perusals, will continue to give pleasure. To such assertions let me be permitted to subjoin the dissentient opinion of Pope, who, without any repulsive remarks on the want of unity and compression, and on the infelicity of ancient diction, thus acknowledges how much Spenser was his favourite from his early to his later years: "b There is something in Spenser that pleases one as strongly in one's old age as it did in one's youth. I read the *Faerie Queene* when I was about twelve with a vast deal of delight; and I think it gave me as much, when I read it over a year or two ago." Nor may I omit a few more remarks in regard to the language of the *Faerie Queene*, which is c asserted to be cast in a mould more antique than that in which the writer lived. This is but a repetition of Dryden's hasty censure; which is to be attributed to Jonson's condemnation of Spenser's obsolete language, directed, as Mr. Malone remarks, merely against the *Pastorals*; but since indiscriminately brought against all his works. "d The language of the *Faerie Queene*," as Mr. Malone judiciously adds, "was the language of the age in which Spenser lived; and, however obsolete it might appear to Dryden, was, I conceive, perfectly intelligible to every reader of poetry in the time of Queen Elizabeth, though the *Shepherds Calender* was not even then understood without a commentary."

But it is also asserted, that "e Spenser did not possess that rare elevation of genius, which places a man above the level of his age." In this remark, however, the support of Dryden is wanting; for Dryden says expressly of Spenser; "no man was ever born with a greater genius, or had more knowledge to support it." And it has been well observed by a very judicious critick, that "f where the works of Spenser are original, they shew that he possessed energy, copiousness, and sublimity sufficient, if he had taken no model to follow, that would rank him with Homer and Tasso and Milton; for his greatest excellence is in those images which are the immediate foundation of the sublime: Fear, confusion, and astonishment, are delineated by him with a most masterly pen." To these marks of elevated powers I may add the attractive minuteness of Spenser's descriptions, which rarely terminate in the object described, but give an agreeable activity to the mind in tracing the resemblance between this type and anti-type. This, as the learned h translator of Dante has observed to me, is an excellence possessed by Spenser in an eminent degree; and hence may be deduced the superiority of his descriptions over those of Thomson, Akenside, and almost all other modern poets.

If our conceptions of Spenser's mind may be taken from his poetry, I shall not hesitate to pronounce him entitled to our warmest admiration and regard for his gentle disposition, for his friendly and grateful conduct, for his humility, for his exquisite tenderness, and above all for his piety and morality. To these amiable points a fastidious reader may, perhaps, object some petty inadvertencies; yet can he never be so ungrateful as to deny the efficacy, which Spenser's general character gives to his writings; as to deny that Truth and Virtue are graceful and attractive, when the road to them is pointed out by such a guide. Let it always be remembered that this excellent poet inculcates those impressive¹ lessons, by attending to which the gay and the thoughtless may be timely induced to treat with scorn, and indignation, the allurements of intemperance and illicit pleasure. Subservient as the poetry of Spenser is to the interests of private life, let it be cited also as the vehicle of sound publick spirit:

— "Deare Country! O how dearely deare
" Ought thy remembrance and perpetual hand
" Be to thy foster childe, that from thy hand
" Did comman breath and nouriture receive!

appear to have followed the severe and unjust opinion of Hume in regard to Spenser. See *Nouv. Dict. Hist. Caen.* art. Spenser.

b Dr. Warton's edition of Pope's Works, vol. 6. p. 59.

d Dryden's *Prose-Works*, vol. 3. p. 94.

f Discourse on *Epick Poetry*, *Prose-Works*, edit. Malone, vol. 3. p. 525.

g Neve's *Corsory Remarks* on the ancient English Poets.

¹ It is worthy of remark, that John Wesley, in the plan which he offers to those Methodists who design to go through a course of *academical learning*, recommends, (together with the *Historical Books* of the Hebrew Bible, the *Greek Testament*, *Homer's Odyssey*, *Vell. Paterculus*, *Euclid's Elements*, &c. &c.) to students of the second year, Spenser's *Faerie Queene*. See the second volume of *Whitehead's Life* of the Rev. John Wesley, &c. 1796.

* Dr. Aikin's *Life* of Spenser.

e Dr. Aikin's *Life* of Spenser.

h The Rev. Henry Boyd.

"How brutish is it not to understand
 "How much to her we owe, that all us gave;
 "That gave unto us all whatever good we have!"

Faer. Qu. li. x. 69.

To the friends of Spenser, already mentioned in this account of his Life, we must add the name of John Chalkhill, Esq. the author of "Thealma and Clearchus, a Pastoral History, in smooth and easy verse," published long after his death by Isaac Walton, who calls him "an acquiantant and friend of Edmund Spenser." In this poem, says Walton, the reader will find many hopes and fears finely painted and feelingly expressed. It is an unfinished work; but, in what is presented to us, the attention of Mr. Chalkhill to the qualifications of his friend is obvious in many passages of a most attractive description, as well in regard to language as to taste. Of this author Walton gives a very engaging character; ^kthat he was well known in his time, and well beloved; for he was humble and obliging in his behaviour, a gentleman, a scholar, very innocent and prudent; and whose whole life indeed was useful, quiet, and virtuous. The friends of Spenser, omitting the Earl of Leicester, appear indeed to have been all men of unequivocal merit. And the reader is better pleased, when he considers ^lSir Philip Sidney as the Prince Arthur of the *Faerie Queene*, than when he is led to subscribe to the probable arguments of Mr. Upton that, under that character, Leicester is intended. "The great figure," he says, "which Leicester made in the Low Countries, added to his being a favourite of Elizabeth, made persons call him *Arthur of Britain*; and this I learn from Holinshed, where he is giving an account of the various shews and entertainments with which they received this magnificent peer: 'Over the entrance of the court-gate was placed aloft upon a scaffold, as if it had been in a cloud or skie, *Arthur of Britaine*, whom they compared to the Earl.' This passage is highly in point for my conjecture in making Prince Arthur often covertly to allude to the Earl of Leicester, and apparently so when he is brought in to assist Belgè and restore her to her right." But Mr. Upton has not denied the culpability of Leicester's character. The Christian Knight, he observes, ^mgives Prince Arthur the New Testament; a present, of which Leicester undoubtedly stood in need. Not such was Sidney; whose valour and "generosity were equalled by his piety. And, while protected by such a patron, Spenser, I am persuaded, enjoyed his happiest days. But when he was gone, the remembrance of such a loss, and the ⁿcoldness of Burleigh, gave rise to these querulous tones which sometimes deprive the poet's harp of half its sweetness.

^k See Zouch's Life of Isaac Walton, prefixed to his edition of Walton's Lives, 1796, p. xxviii.

As Dryden and others have considered him,

^m See *Faer. Qu. li. ix. 19.*

ⁿ The generosity of Sir Philip Sidney towards Spenser in particular, has not escaped exaggeration. In the Life of Spenser prefixed to the folio edition of his Works in 1679, in Hughes's Life of Spenser, and in the Life of Sidney given in the *Biographia Britannica*, it is asserted that Spenser's description of the Cave of Despair introduced him to Sir Philip; that the reading a few stanzas occasioned Sir Philip to order him a payment of fifty pounds; and that a continuation of the reading extended Sir Philip's bounty to two hundred pounds, which, however, he directed his steward to pay the poet *immediately*, lest he should bestow the whole of his estate on the writer of such verses. "To shame this *idle tale*," says the writer of the Life of Spenser in the *Biographia Britannica*, "we need only observe that the *Faerie Queene* may be said even to owe its birth to Sir Philip Sidney, who, quickly after his acquaintance with Spenser, discovered his genius to be formed for higher subjects than those lesser pieces which he had then written; and persuaded him *for trumpet sterne to change his oaten reedes*."—I admit that the *Faerie Queene* owed its progress to the judicious encouragement of Sidney. But, although the *pecuniary* incident wears undoubtedly the appearance of an *idle tale*, I do not see why the description of the *Cave of Despair* might not have been one of the earliest poetical pieces which he had submitted to Sir Philip's inspection, as he had certainly begun the poem in 1579, and had received Harvey's opinion of it in 1580; and this passage is also in the first book; and thus, the very description, which is considered in an unequalled manner as an *idle tale*, might perhaps be one of those specimens of his genius by which Sir Philip was forcibly struck, and was induced to recommend him to sing no more his rural ditties, but to "build the *loftiest rhyme*." And Spenser it seems, was "by Sidney's speeches won."

^o It seems unnecessary to remark, as Mr. Chalmers has acutely observed, that, if the Lord treasurer Burleigh had *set himself against Spenser*, he never would have obtained either his pension or his land. *Suppl. Apolog.* p. 369. But Burleigh would not *countenance* the poet; and the reason has been assigned. See p. xxxv. Let us look back to the situations which Spenser held, and then we may judge whether his complaints if they were complaints respecting himself, were not rather highly coloured.

At the age of 26 he was admitted into the household of Leicester, and was patronised by that nobleman as well as Sidney.

At the age of 27 he was secretary to the lord lieutenant of Ireland.

At the age of 33 a grant of land was issued to him by the Crown.

At the age of 37 a pension of fifty pounds per annum was settled upon him by the royal bounty for life.

It remains to observe, that Spenser is the author of four Sonnets, which are admitted into this edition of his Works; of which three are prefixed to separate publications, and the fourth occurs in Letters by his friend Harvey. He is conjectured to be the author also of a Sonnet, signed E. S., addressed to Master Henry Peacham, and entitled "A Vision upon his Minerva." Fame has also assigned to him a string of miserable couplets on Phillis, in a miserable publication called "Chorus Poetarum, &c. 1684." The verses on Queen Elizabeth's picture, in the gallery of royal personages at Kensington, have been likewise given to Spenser; but, with greater propriety, are ascribed by Lord Orford to the queen herself. *Britain's Ida* has usually been printed with the Works of Spenser, but it is agreed by the critics that the poem was not composed by him. I should have added, to the present collection, the translation of *Axiochus* attributed to him, if my endeavours to obtain it had been attended with success. In respect to this Socratick dialogue, as Mr. Upton calls it, it may be proper to offer a few words. In Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, it is called "Plato's Axiochus; on the shortness and uncertainty of Life:" printed in Scotland in 1592. In Dr. Johnson's *Harleian Catalogue*, it is entitled "Dialogue concerning the shortness and uncertainty of this Life, by Plato, translated by Edw. Spenser." In Mr. Stevens's account of *Ancient Translations of the classick writers*, it is alleged to be "Axiochus, a Dialogue attributed to Plato, by Edm. Spenser." Some readers will wonder when it is asserted that Plato wrote no Dialogue of this name. The *Axiochus* is the composition of Æscbines Socraticus, and is one of the three Dialogues which have come down to us from that author. And if Edmund Spenser, the poet, be really the English translator, we cannot but be surprised that a scholar so accomplished should be misled in regard to the author of the original.

At the age of 43 or sooner he was Clerk of the Council of Munster, an office then reputed to be worth twenty pounds per annum.

"Slander therefore," as Mr. Chalmers judiciously remarks, "ought no longer to cast her obloquy on Elizabeth and Burleigh but on the Irish rebellion." *Suppl. Apolog.* ut supr.

† See p. 480. The last of these Sonnets was prefixed to a work, which did not appear till the year after his death.

‡ By Mr. Waldron, in his *Literary Museum*, p. 9.

§ Mr. Waldron grounds his opinion partly on this title, that the verses are Spenser's; as the poet has written *Visions of the Worlds Vanity*, &c. To these might be added, as of a kindred nature, his *Dreams*. It may not be improper to recapitulate the lost pieces of Spenser.

1. His translation of Ecclesiastes.
2. His translation of Canticum Canticorum.
3. The Dying Pelican.
4. The Hours of our Lord.
5. The Sacrifice of a Sinner.
6. The Seven Psalms.
7. Dreams.
8. The English Poet.
9. Legends.

10. The Court of Cupid.
11. The Hell of Lovers.
12. His Purgatory.
13. A Sennights Slumber.
14. Pageants.
15. Nine Comedies.
16. Stemmata Dudleiana.
17. Epithalamion Thamecis.

* Anecdotes of Painting in England, vol. i. p. 151, &c. 2d. edit. 4to. 1765.

† Preface to his edition of the Faerie Queene, p. ix.

‡ Vol. 3d. p. 1512.

§ No. 6218. Vol. 3. p. 365.

¶ Prefixed to the Plays of Shakspeare, in the editions of 1793, and 1803.

THE
FAERIE QUEENE.

DISPOSED INTO TWELVE BOOKES, FASHIONING XII. MORALL VERTUES.

Dedication.

TO THE MOST HIGH MIGHTIE AND MAGNIFICENT EMPRESSE RENOWNED FOR PIETIE VERTVE AND ALL GRATIOVS
GOVERNMENT

ELIZABETH

BY THE GRACE OF OOD QVEENE OF ENGLAND FRAVNCE AND IRELAND AND OF VIRGINIA DEFENDOVV OF THE FAITH ETC.
HER MOST HUMBLE SERVAUNT EDMVND SPENSER DOTH IN ALL HUMBLITIE DEDICATE PRESENT AND CONSECRATE
THESE HIS LABOVRS TO LIVE WITH THE ETERNITIE OF HER FAME.

A LETTER OF THE AUTHOR'S,

EXPVNDING HIS WHOLE INTENTION IN THE COURSE OF THIS WORKE ; WHICH, FOR THAT IT GLIETH
GREAT LIGHT TO THE READER, FOR THE BETTER UNDERSTANDING IS HEREUNTO ANNEXED.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND VALOROUS

SIR WALTER RALEIGH, KNIGHT ;

LO. WARDEIN OF THE STANNERYES AND HER MALESTIES LIEFTSNAUNT OF THE COUNTY OF CORNEWAYLL.

SIR,

Knowing how doubtfully all Allegories may be construed, and this Booke of mine, which I haue entituled *the Faery Queene*, being a continued Allegory, or darke Conceit, I haue thought good as well for auoyding of gealous opinions and misconstructions, as also for your better light in reading thereof, (being so by you commanded,) to discouer unto you the general intention and meaning, which in the whole course thereof I haue fashioned, without expressing of any particular purposes, or by-accidents, therein occasioned. The general end therefore of all the Booke is to fashion a gentleman or noble person in vertuous and gentle discipline : which for that I conceined shoulde be most plausible and pleasing, being coloured with an historical fiction, the which the most part of men delight to read, rather for variety of matter then for profite of the ensample, I chose the Historye of King Arthure, as most fitte for the excellency of his person, being made famous by many mens former workes, and also furthest from the daunger of enuy, and suspection of present time. In which I haue followed all the antique poets historical ; first Homere, who in the persons of Agamemnon and Ulysses hath ensampled a good gouernour and a vertuous man, the one in his Ilias, the other in his Odysseis ; then Virgil, whose like intention was to doe in the person of Æneas ; after him Ariosto comprised them both in his Orlando ; and

ately Tasso disseuered them again, and formed both parts in two persons, namely that part which they in philosophy call *Ethice*, or vertues of a private man, colour'd in his Rinaldo; the other named *Politice* in his Godfredo. By ensample of which excellent poets, I labour to pourtraict in Arthure, before he was king, the image of a brane Knight, perfected in the twelue private Morall Vertues, as Aristotle hath deuised; and which is the purpose of these first twelue bookes: which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encouraged to frame the other part of Politicke Vertues in his person, after that hee came to be king. To some I know this methode will seem displeasann't, which had rather haue good discipline delinered plainly in way of precepts, or sermoned at large, as they use, then thus cloudily enwrapped in allegorical denises. But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the use of these days, seeing all things accounted by their shoves, and nothing esteemed of, that is not delightfull and pleasing to commone sence. For this cause is Xenophon preferred before Plato, for that the one, in the exquisite depth of his iudgement, formed a commoneweth, such as it should be; but the other in the person of Cyrus, and the Persians, fashioned a government, such as might best be; so much more profitable and gracious is doctrine by ensample, then by rule. So hane I laboured to do in the person of Arthure: whom I conceine, after his long education by Timon, to whom he was by Merlin delinered to be brought up, so soone as he was borne of the Lady Igrayne, to haue seene in a dream or vision the Faery Queene, with whose excellent beauty rauished, he awaking resolved to seeke her out; and so being by Merlin armed, and by Timon throughly instructed, he went to seeke her forth in Faerye land. In that Faery Queene I meane *Glory* in my generall intention, but in my particular I conceine the most excellent and glorions person of our soneraine the *Queene*, and her kingdom in *Faery Land*. And yet, in some places els, I do otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royal Queene or Emperesse, the other of a most vertuous and beautifull Lady, this latter part in some places I doe express in Belpheobe, fashioning her name according to your owne excellent conceipt of Cynthia: Phoebe and Cynthia being both names of Diana. So in the person of Prince Arthure I sette forth *Magnificence* in particular; which Vertue, for that (according to Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest, and containeth in it them all, therefore in the whole course I mention the deeds of Arthure applyable to that Vertue, which I write of in that Booke. But of the xii. other Vertues, I make xii. other Knights the patrones, for the more variety of the history: Of which these three Bookes contayn three.

The first of the Knight of the Redcrosse, in whom I expresse *Holynes*: The seconde of Sir Guyon, in whome I sette forth *Temperance*: The third of Britomartis a Lady Knight, in whome I picture *Chastity*. But, because the beginning of the whole Worke seemeth abrupte and as depending upon other antecedents, it needs that ye know the occasion of these three Knights generall Adventures. For the methode of a poet historical is not such, as of an historiographer. For an historiographer discourseth of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions; but a poet thrusteth into the middest, euen where it most concerneth him, and there recouring to the things forepaste, and diuining of things to come, maketh a pleasing analysis of all.

The beginning therefore of my History, if it were to be told by an historiographer should be the twelfth Booke, which is the last; where I deuise that the Faery Queene kept her annual feaste xii. days; upon which xii. severall dayes, the occasions of the xii. generall Adventures hapned, which, being undertaken by xii. generall Knights, are in these xii. Books senerally handled and discoursed. The first was this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented himselfe a tall clownishe younge man, who falling before the Queene of Faries desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse; which was that hee might hane the atchiment of any Adventure, which during that feaste should happen. That being grannted, he rested him on the floore, unfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Soone after entred a faire Ladye in mourning weedes, riding on a white asse, with a Dwarfie behind her leading a warlike steed, that bore the arms of a Knight, and his speare in the Dwarfes hand. Shee, falling before the Queene of Faeries, complained that her father and mother, an ancient King and Queene, had bene by a huge Dragon many years shut up in a brasen Castle, who thence suffred them not to yssew: and therefore besonght the Faerie Queene to assygne her some one of her Knights to take on him that exploit. Presently that clownish person, upstarting, desired that Adventure: whereat the Queene much wondering, and the Lady much gainesaying, yet he earnestly importuned his desire. In the end the Lady told him, that unlesse that armour which she brought, would serue him (that is, the armour of a Christian man specified by St. Paul, v. Ephes.) that he could not succeed in that enterprize: which being forthwith put upon him with dew furnitures thereunto, he seemed the goodliest man in al that company, and was well liked of the Lady. And

afteesoones taking on him knighthood, and mounting on that strange courser, he went forth with her of that Adventure : where beginneth the first Booke, viz.

A gentle Knight was pricking on the playne, &c.

The second day there came in a Palmer bearing an Infant with bloody hands, whose parents he complained to have bene slain by an Eucharntresse called Acrasia : and therefore craved of the Faery Queene, to appoint him some Knight to performe that Adventure ; which heing assigned to Sir Guyon, he presently went forth with that same Palmer : which is the beginning of the second Booke, and the whole subiect thereof. The third day there came in a Groome, who complained before the Faery Queene, that a vile Enchaunter, called Busirane, had in hand a most faire Lady, called Amoretta, whom he kept in most grievous torment, because she would not yield him the pleasure of her body. Whereupon Sir Scudamour, the lover of that Lady, presently tooke on him that Adventure. But being unable to performe it by reason of the hard enchauntments, after long sorrow, in the end met with Britomartis, who succoured him, and reskewed his Love.

But, by occasion hereof, many other Adventures are intermedled ; but rather as accidents then intendments : as the Love of Britomart, the Overthrow of Marinell, the Misery of Florimell, the Vertuousnes of Belphebe, the Lasciviousnes of Hellenora ; and many the like.

Thus much, Sir, I have briefly overronne to direct your understanding to the wel-head of the History , that, from thence gathering the whole intention of the conceit, ye may as in a handfull gripe al the discourse, which otherwise may happily seem tedious and confused. So, humbly craving the continuance of your honourable favour towards me, and th' eternall establishment of your happines, I humbly take leave.

Yours most humbly affectionate,

ED. SPENSER.

23. January 1589.

VERSES ADDRESSED TO THE AUTHOR.

A VISION UPON THIS CONCEIT OF THE FAERY QUEENE.

ME thought I saw the grave where Laura lay,
 Within that Temple where the vestall flame
 Was wont to burne ; and passing by that way
 To see that buried dust of living fame,
 Whose tomb faire Love, and fairer Vertue kept ;
 All suddenly I saw the *Faery Queene* :
 At whose approach the soule of Petrarke wept,
 And from thenceforth those Graces were not seene ;
 (For they this *Queene* attended ;) in whose steed
 Oblivion laid him down on Lanras herse :
 Hereat the hardest stones were seene to bleed,
 And grones of buried ghostes the heavens did perse :
 Where Homers spright did tremble all for griefe,
 And curst th' access of that celestiall Theife.
 W. R.

ANOTHER OF THE SAME.

THE prayse of meaner wits this Worke like profit
 brings,
 As doth the Cuckoes song delight when Philumena
 sings.
 If thou hast formed right true Vertues face herein,
 Vertue herselfe can best discern to whom they
 written bin.
 If thou hast Beauty prayd, let Her sole looks
 divine
 Judge if ought therein be amis, and mend it by
 Her eine.
 If Chastitie want ought, or Temperance her dew,
 Behold Her Princely mind upright, and write thy
Queene anew.

Meane while She shall perceive, how far Her ver-
 tues sore
 Above the reach of all that live, or such as wrote
 of yore :
 And thereby will excuse and favour thy good will ;
 Whose vertue can not be exprest but by an Angels
 quill.
 Of me no lines are lov'd, nor letters are of price,
 (Of all which speak our English tongue,) but those
 of thy device.

TO THE LEARNED SHEPHEARD.

COLLYN, I see, by thy new taken taske,
 Some sacred fury hath enricht thy braynes,
 That leades thy Muse in haughty verse to maske
 And loath the layes that longs to lowly swaynes
 That liftes thy notes from Shepherdes unto Kings
 So like the lively Larke that mounting sings.

Thy lovely Rosalinde seemes now forlorne ;
 And all thy gentle flockes forgotten quight :
 Thy chaunged hart now holdes thy pypes in scorne,
 Those pretty pypes that did thy mates delight ;
 Those trusty mates, that loved thee so well ;
 Whom thou gav'st mirth, as they gave thee the bell.

Yet, as thou earst with thy sweete roundelays
 Didst stirre to glee our laddes in homely bowers ;
 So moughtst thou now in these refined layes
 Delight the daintie eares of higher powers.
 And so mought they, in their deepe skanning skill,
 Alow and grace our Collyns flowing quill.

And faire befall that *Faery Queene* of thine !
In whose faire eyes Love luckt with Vertue
sittes ;

Enfusing, by those bewties fyers divine,
Such high conceites into thy humble wittes,
As raised hath poore Pastors oaten reedes
From rousticke tunes, to chaunt heroique deedes.

So mought thy *Redcrosse Knight* with happy hand
Victorious be in that fair Ilands right,
(Which thou dost vayne in type of *Faery land*),
Elizas blessed field, that Albion hight :
That shieldes her friends, and warres her mightie
foes,
Yet still with people, peace and plentie, flows.

But, lolly shepheard, though with pleasing stile
Thou feast the humour of the courtly trayne ;
Let not conceipt thy settled sence beguile,
Ne daunted be through envy or disdaine.
Subject thy doome to Her empyring spright,
From whence thy Muse, and all the world, takes
light. HOBYNOLL.

FAYRE *Thamis* streame, that from *Ludds* stately
towne

Runst paying tribute to the ocean seas,
Let all thy Nymphes and Syrens of renowne
Be silent, while this *Bryttane Orpheus* plays .
Nere thy sweet banks there lives that sacred
Crowne,

Whose hand strowes palme and never-dying bayes.
Let all at once, with thy soft murmuring sowne,
Present her with this worthy Poets prayes :
For he hath taught hie drifts in *Shepherdes weedes*,
And deepe conceites now sings in *Faeries* deedes.
R. S.

GRAVE *Muses*, march in triumph and with prayes ;
Our Goddess here hath given you leave to land ;
And biddes this rare dispenser of your graces
Bow downe his brow unto her sacred hand.
Deserte findes dew in that most princely doome,
In whose sweete brest are all the *Muses* bredde :
So did that great *Augustus* erst in Roome
With leaves of fame adorne his Poets hedde.
Faire be the guerdon of your *Faery Queene*,
Even of the fairest that the world hath scene !
H. B.

WHEN stout *Achilles* heard of *Helens* rape,
And what revenge the States of Greece devis'd ;
Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape,
In womans weedes himselfe he then disguis'd :

But this devise *Ulysses* soone did spy,
And brought him forth, the chaunce of warre to try.

When *Spenser* saw the fame was spredd so large,
Through *Faery land*, of their renowned *Queene* ;
Loth that his Muse should take so great a charge,
As in such haughty matter to be scene ;
To seeme a Shepheard, then he made his choice ;
But *Sidney* heard him sig, and knew his voice.

And as *Ulysses* brought faire *Thetis* sonne
From his retyred life to menage armes :
So *Spenser* was, by *Sidney's* speeches, wonne
To blaze Her fame, not fearing future harmes :
For well he knew, his Muse would soone be tyred
In her high praise, that all the world admired.

Yet as *Achilles*, in those warlike frayes,
Did win the palme from all the *Grecian Peeres* :
So *Spenser* now, to his immortal prayse,
Hath wonne the laurell quite from all his feeres.
What though his taske exceed a humane witt ;
He is excus'd, sith *Sidney* thought it fitt.

W. L.

To looke upon a worke of rare devise
The which a workman setteth out to view,
And not to yield it the deserved prise
That unto such a workmanship is dew,
Doth either prove the iudgement to be naught,
Or els doth shew a mind with envy fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke,
Which no man goes about to discommend,
Would raise a jealous doubt, that there did lurke
Some secret doubt whereto the prayse did tend :
For when men know the goodnes of the wyne,
'Tis needless for the Hoast to have a sygne.

Thus then, to shew my iudgement to be such
As can discern of colours blacke and white,
As alls to free my minde from envies tuch,
That never gives to any man his right ;
I here pronounce this workmanship is such
As that no pen can set it forth too much.

And thus I hang a garland at the dore ;
(Not for to shew the goodness of the ware ;
But such hath bene the custome heretofore,
And customes very hardly broken are ;)
And when your tast shall tell you this is trew,
Then looke you give your Hoast his utmost dew.
IGNO.

VERSES

ADDRESSED, BY THE AUTHOR OF THE FAERIE QUEENE, TO SEVERAL NORLEMEN, &c.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR CHRISTOPHER HATTON,
LORD HIGH CHAUNCELOER OF ENGLAND ETC.

THOSE prudent heads, that with their counsels wise
Whylom the pillours of th' earth did sustaine,
And taught ambitious Rome to tyrannise
And in the neck of all the world to rayne ;
Oft from those grave affaires were wont abstaine,
With the sweet Lady Muses for to play :
So Ennius the elder Africane ;
So Maro oft did Cæsars cares allay.
So you, great Lord, that with your counsell sway
The burdein of this kingdom mightily,
With like delights sometimes may eke delay *
The rugged brow of carefull Policy ;
And to these ydle rymes lend litle space,
Which for their titles sake † may find more grace.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD BURLEIGH, LORD
HIGH TREASURER OF ENGLAND.

To you, Right Noble Lord, whose careful brest
To menage of most grave affaires is bent ;
And on whose mightie shoulders most doth rest
The burdein of this kingdome's government,
(As the wide compasse of the firmament
On Atlas mightie shoulders is upstayd,)
Unfitly I these ydle rimes present,
The labor of lost time, and wit unstayd :
Yet if their deeper sence be inly wayd,
And the dim vele, with which from commune vew
Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd,
Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to You.
Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receive,
And wipe their faults out of your censure grave.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF OXFORD,
LORD HIGH CHAMBERLAYNE OF ENGLAND ETC.

RECEIVE, most Noble Lord, in gentle gree, ‡
The unripe fruit of an unready wit ;
Which, by thy countenance, doth crave to bee
Defended from foule Ennies poisonous bit.
Which so to doe may thee right well befitt,
Sith th' antique glory of thine auncestry
Under a shady vele is therein writ,
And eke thine owne long living memory,
Succeeding them in true Nobility :
And also for the love which thou doest beare
To th' Heliconian ymps, and they to thee ;
They unto thee, and thou to them, most deare :

* ——— may eke delay] May smooth or soften. TODD.

† ——— for their titles sake] Their title being the
Faerie Queene, who represented Queene Elizabeth.

T. WARTON.

‡ ——— gree.] Favour. TODD.

Deare as thou art unto thyselfe, so love
That loves § and honours thee ; as doth behove.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF NORTHUM-
BERLAND.

THE sacred Muses have made alwaies clame
To be the Nourses of Nobility,
And Registres of everlasting fame,
To all that armes professe and chevalry.
Then, by like right, the noble Progeny,
Which them succeed in fame and worth, are tyde
T' embrace the service of sweet Poetry,
By whose endevours they are glorifide ;
And eke from all, of whom it is envide,
To patronize the authour of their praise, [dide,
Which gives them life, that els would soone have
And crownes their ashes with immortal baies.
To thee therefore, Right Noble Lord, I send
This present of my paines, it to defend.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF CUMBERLAND.

REDoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind
The flowre of chevalry, now blooming faire,
Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kind
Which of their praises have left you the haire ;
To you this humble present I prepare,
For love of vertue and of martial praise ;
To which though nobly ye inclined are,
(As goodlie well ye shew'd in late assaies,)
Yet brave ensample of long passed daies,
In which tiew honor ye may fashiond see,
To like desire of honor may ye raise,
And fill your mind with magnanimitee.
Receive it, Lord, therefore as it was ment,
For honor of your name and high descent.
E. S.

TO THE MOST HONOURABLE AND EXCELLENT LORD THE EARLE
OF ESSEX, GREAT MAISTER OF THE HORSE TO HER
HIGHNESSE, AND KNIGHT OF THE NOBLE ORDER OF
THE GARTER, &c.

MAGNIFICKE Lord, whose vertues excellent
Doe merit a most famous Poets wit
To be thy living praises instrument ;
Yet doe not seidge to let thy name be writt
In this base Poeme, for thee far unfit :
Nought is thy worth disparaged thereby.
But when my Muse, whose fethers, nothing fitt, ||
Doe yet but flagg and lowly learne to fly,

§ That loves, &c.] Here is an ellipsis of him before
that. T. WARTON.

|| ——— fitt.] Flitt is the adjective fleet, thus written
for the sake of the rhyme ; as the verb fleet, in other
places. T. WARTON.

With bolder wing shall dare alofte to sty
 To the last praises* of this Faery Queene ;
 Then shall it make most famous memory
 Of thine heroicke parts, such as they beene :
 Till then, vouchsafe thy noble countenance
 To their first labours needed furtheraunce.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF ORMOND AND
 OSSORY.

RECEIVE, most Noble Lord, a simple taste
 Of the wilde fruit which salvage soyl hath bred ;
 Which, being through long wars left almost
 waste,
 With brutish barbarisme is overspredd :
 And, in so faire a land as may be redd,
 Not one Parnassus, nor one Helicone,
 Left for sweete Muses to be harboured,
 But where thyselfe hast thy brave mansion :
 There indeede dwel faire Graces many one,
 And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned wits ;
 And in thy person, without paragone,
 All goodly bountie and true honour sits.
 Such therefore, as that wasted soyl doth yield,
 Receive, dear Lord, in worth, the fruit of barren
 field.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD CHARLES HOWARD,
 LORD HIGH ADMIRAL OF ENGLAND, KNIGHT OF THE
 NOBLE ORDER OF THE GARTER, AND ONE OF HER
 MAJESTIE'S PRIVIE COUNSEL, &c.

AND ye, brave Lord, whose goodly personage
 And noble deeds, each other garnishing,
 Make you ensample, to the present age,
 Of th' old heroës, whose famous offspring
 The antique Poets wont so much to sing ;
 In this same Pageaunt have a worthy place,
 Sith those huge castles of Castilian King,
 That vainly threatned kingdomes to displace,
 Like flying doves ye did before you chase ; †
 And that proud people, woxen insolent
 Through many victories, didst first deface :
 Thy praises everlasting monument
 Is in this verse engraven semblably,
 That it may live to all posterity.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD OF HUNSDON, HIGH
 CHAMBERLAINE TO HER MAJESTY.

RENEWMED Lord, that, for your worthinesse
 And noble deeds, have your deserved place
 High in the favour of that Emperesse,
 The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace ;
 Here eke of right have you a worthy place,
 Both for your nearnes to that Faerie Queene,
 And for your owne high merit in like case :
 Of which, apparaunt prooffe was to be seene,
 When that tumultuous rage and fearfull deene ‡

* — the last praises] The last praises of the Faerie
 Queene, signify nine more Books which Spenser had
 proposed to complete, according to his original plan. These
 sonnets, it must be remembered, were sent with the three
 first Books, which in the last line of this Sonnet the poet
 styles " these first labours." T. WARTON.

† Like flying doves ye did before, you chase.] The
 defeat of the Spanish Armada is here hinted at. T. WARTON.

‡ — deene] Din, noise. T. WARTON.

Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify, §
 And their disloiall powre defaced clene,
 The record of enduring memory.
 Live, Lord, for ever in this lasting verse,
 That all posteritie thy honor may reherse.

E. S.

TO THE MOST RENOWMED AND VALIANT LORD, THE LORD
 GREY OF WILTON, KNIGHT OF THE NOBLE ORDER OF
 THE GARTER, &c.

Most Noble Lord, the pillar of my life,
 And Patrone of my Muses pupillage ;
 Through whose large bountie, poured on me rife,
 In the first season of my feeble age,
 I now doe live bound yours by vassalage ;
 (Sith nothing ever may redeeme, nor leave
 Out of your endlesse debt, so sure a gage ;)
 Vouchsafe, in worth, this small guilt to receive,
 Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave
 Of all the rest that I am tyde t' account :
 Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did
 weave
 In savage soyle, far from Parnasso Mount,
 And roughly wrought in an unlearned loome :
 The which vouchsafe, dear Lord, your favourable
 doome.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD OF BUCKHURST, ONE
 OF HER MAJESTIE'S PRIVIE COUNSELL.

IN vain I thinke, Right Honourable Lord,
 By this rude rime to memorize thy Name,
 Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne record
 In golden verse, worthy immortal fame :
 Thou much more fit (were leasure to the same)
 Thy gracious Sovereains praises to compile,
 And her imperiall Majestie to frame
 In lefte numbers and heroicke stile.
 But, sith thou maist not so, give leave a while
 To baser wit his power therein to spend,
 Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may file,
 And unadvised oversights amend.
 But evermore vouchsafe, it to maintaine
 Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR FRANCIS WALSHINGHAM,
 KNIGHT, PRINCIPALL SECRETARY TO HER MAJESTY
 AND ONE OF HER HONOURABLE PRIVY COUNSELL.

THAT Mantuane Poets incompar'd|| spirit,
 Whose girland now is set in highest place,
 Had not Mecenas, for his worthy merit,
 It first advaunst to great Augustus grace,
 Might long perhaps have lien in silence bace,
 Ne bene so much admir'd of later age.
 This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to trace,
 Flies for like aide unto your patronage, ¶
 (That are the great Mecenas of this age,
 As well to all that civil artes professe,
 As those that are inspir'd with martial rage,)
 And craves protection of her feeblenesse :

§ — ye did pacify, &c.] Namely, the rebellion raised
 in 1569.—Toco.

|| — incompar'd] Incomparable. So unvalued is
 invaluable. Todd.

¶ — unto your patronage, &c.) See the Ruine
 of Time, ver. 436, where Sir Francis is intended under
 the name of Melibe. Todd

Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse
In bigger tunes to sound your living prayse.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE LORD AND MOST VALIAUNT CAPTAINE,
SIR JOHN NORRIS, KNIGHT, LORD PRESIDENT OF
MOUNSTER.

Who ever gave more honourable prize
To the sweet Muse then did the Martiall crew,
That their brave deeds she might immortalize
In her shrill tromp, and sound their praises dew ?
Who then ought more to faviour her then you,
Most Noble Lord, the honor of this age,
And Precedent of all that armes ensue ?
Whose warlike prowesse and manly couraige,
Temperd with reason and advizement sage,
Hath filld sad Belgicke with victorious spoile ;
In Fraunce and Ireland left a famous gage ;
And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile.
Sith then each where thou hast dispredd thy fame,
Love him that hath eternized your Name.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND VALOROUS KNIGHT, SIR WALTER
RALEIGH, LORD WARDEIN OF THE STANNERVES, AND
LIEFTENAUNT OF CORNEWAILE.

To thee, that art the Sommers Nightingale,
Thy sovaine Goddesses most deare delight,
Why doe I send this rusticke Madrigale,
That may thy tunefull care unseason quite ?
Thon onely fit this Argument to write,
In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath built her
bowre,
And dainty Love learnd sweetly to endite.
My rimes I know unsavory and sowre,
To tast the streames that, like a golden showre,
Flow from thy fruitfull head of thy Love's praise ;
Fitter perhaps to thonder martiall stowre,
Whenso thee list thy lofty Muse to raise :
Yet, till that Thon thy Poeme wilt make knowne,
Let thy faire Cinthias praises* be thus rudely
showne.
E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE AND MOST VERTUOUS LADY,
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE.

REMEMBRAUNCE of that most heroicke Spirit,
The heavens pride, the glory of our daies, [merit
Which now triumpheth (through immortal

* *Let thy faire Cinthias praises, &c.*] An allusion
to the poem written by Sir Walter, entitled *Cynthia*.
TODD.

Of his brave vertues) crown'd with lasting baies
Of hevenlie blis and everlasting praises ;
Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore,
To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies ;
Bids me, most Noble Lady, to adore
His goodly image living evermore
In the divine resemblance of your face ;
Which with your vertues ye embellish more,
And native beauty deck with heavenly grace :
For His, and for your owne especial sake,
Vouchsafe from him† this token in good worth to
take.
E. S.

TO THE MOST VERTUOUS AND BEAUTIFULL LADY, THE
LADY CREW.

NE may I, without blot of endlesse blame,
You, fairest Lady, leave out of this place ;
But, with remembrance of your gracious Name,
(Wherewith that courtly garland most ye grace
And deck the world,) adorne these verses base :
Not that these few lines can in them comprise
Those glorious ornaments of hevenly grace,
Wherewith ye triumph over feeble eyes
And in subdn'd harts do tyrannise ;
(For thereunto doth need a golden quill
And silver leaves, them rightly to devise ;)
But to make humble present of good will :
Which, whenas timely meanes it purchase may,
In ampler wise itselfe will forth display.
E. S.

TO ALL THE GRATIOUS AND BEAUTIFULL LADIES IN THE
COURT.

THE Chian Peincter, when he was requir'd
To pourtraict Venus in her perfect hew ;
To make his worke more absolute, desir'd
Of all the fairest Maides to have the vew.
Much more me needs, (to draw the semblant trew
Of Beauties Queene, the worlds sole wonder-
ment,)
To sharpe my sence with sundry Beauties vew,
And steale from each some part of ornament.
If all the world to seeke I overwent,
A fairer crew yet no where could I see
Then that brave Court doth to mine eie present ;
That the world's pride seemes gathered there to
Of each a part I stole by cunning theft : [bce.
Forgive it me, faire Dames, sith lesse ye have not
left.
E. S.

† *Vouchsafe from him*] It should be *me*. CHURCH.

THE FIRST BOOK OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAINING

THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE, OR OF HOLINESSE.

I.
 Lo ! I, the man whose Muse whylome did maske,
 As time her taught, in lowly shepherds weeds,
 Am now enforst, a faire unfitter taske,
 For trumpets sterne to change mine oaten reeds,
 And sing of Knights and Ladies gentle deeds ;
 Whose praises having slept in silence long,
 Me, all too meane, the sacred Muse areeds
 To blazon broade amongst her learned throng :
 Fierce warres and faithful loves shall moralize my
 song.

II.
 Help then, O holy virgin, chiefe of nyne,
 Thy weaker novice to perform thy will ;
 Lay forth out of thine everlasting seryne
 The antique rolles, which there lye hidden still,
 Of Faerie Knights, and fayrest Tanaquill
 Whom that most noble Briton Prince so long
 Sought through the world, and suffered so much
 That I must rue his undeserved wrong : [ill,
 O, helpe thou my weake wit, and sharpen my dull
 tong !

III.
 And thou, most dreaded impe of highest Love,
 Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell dart
 At that good Knight so cunningly didst rove,
 That glorious fire it kindled in his hart ;
 Lay now thy deadly heben bowe apart,
 And, with thy mother mylde, come to mine ayde ;
 Come, both ; and with you bring triumphant
 Mart,
 In loves and gentle iollities arraid,
 After his murders spoyles and bloudie rage allayd.

IV.
 And with them eke, O Goddess heavenly bright,
 Mirrour of grace and majestic divine,
 Great ladie of the greatest isle, whose light
 Like Phoebus lampe throughout the world doth
 shine,
 Shed thy faire beames into my fecble eyne,
 And raise my thoughtes, too humble and too vile,

I. 2. — in *lowly shepherds weeds,*] Spenser, about the age of 26, published his *Shepherds Calender* in 4to. 1579; eleven years before the first publication of the *Faerie Queene*. CHURCH.

II. 3. — *thine everlasting seryne*] An *escritoire*, desk, from the Latin *scrinium*. UPON.

II. 7. — *triumphant Mart,*] *Mart*, the God of War. UPON.

To thinke of that true glorious type of thine,
 The Argument of mine afflicted stile :
 The which to heare vouchsafe, O dearest Dread, a
 while.

CANTO I.

The Patron of true Holnesse
 Foule Error doth defeate;
 Hypocrisie, him to entrappe,
 Doth to his home entreate.

I.
 A GENTLE Knight was pricking on the plaine,
 Ycladd in mightie armes and silver shielde,
 Wherein old dints of deepe woundes did remaine
 The cruel markes of many' a bloody field ;
 Yet armes till that time did he never wield :
 His angry steede did chide his foming bitt,
 As much disdainyng to the curbe to yield :
 Full iolly knight he seemd, and faire did sitt,
 As one for knightly giusts and fierce encounters fit.

II.
 And on his brest a bloodie crosse he bore,
 The deare remembrance of his dying Lord,
 For whose sweete sake that glorious badge he wore,
 And dead, as living ever, him ador'd :
 Upon his shield the like was also scor'd,
 For soveraine hope, which in his helpe he had.
 Right, faithfull, true he was in deede and word ;
 But of his cheere did seeme too solemne sad ;
 Yet nothing did he dread, but ever was ydrad.

III.
 Upon a great adventure he was bond,
 That greatest Gloriana to him gave,
 (That greatest glorions queene of Faery lond,)
 To winne him worshippe, and her grace to have,
 Which of all earthly thinges he most did crave :
 And ever, as he rode, his hart did earne

IV. 7. — *that true glorious type of thine,*] Una, or Truith. CHURCH.

IV. 8. — *mine afflicted stile :*] *Afflicted stile* means low and sejune. Ital. *Stilo afflitto*. UPON.

IV. 9. — *O dearest Dread,*] The same expression we meet with below; i. vi. 2. "*Una his dear Dread,*" i. e. oe whom he revered. UPON.

I. 8. *Full iolly knight*] Handsome. Fr. *Joli*. TODD.

II. 8. — *of his cheere*] *Countenance*. TODD.

Ibid. — *solemne sad*] *Sad*, as Mr. Warton has observed, did not always imply sorrow, but gravity of countenance and deportment. TODD.

To prove his puissance in battell brave
Upon his foe, and his new force to learne ;
Upon his foe, a Dragon horrible and stearne.

iv.

A lovely Ladie rode him faire beside,
Upon a lowly asse more white then snow ;
Yet she much whiter ; but the same did hide
Under a vele, that wimpled was full low ;
And over all a blacke stole shee did throw :
As one that inly mourn'd, so was she sad,
And heavie sate upon her palfrey slow ;
Secmed in heart some hidden care she had ;
And by her in a line a milke-white lambe she lad.

v.

So pure and innocent, as that same lambe,
She was in life and every vertuous lore ;
And by descent from royall lynage came
Of ancient kinges and queenes, that had of yore
Their scepters stretcht from east to western
shore,
And all the world in their subjection held ;
Till that infernal Feend with foule uprove
Forwasted all their land, and them expeld ;
Whom to avenge, she had this Knight from far
compeld.

vi.

Behind her faire away a Dwarfe did lag,
That lasie seemd, in being ever last,
Or wearied with bearing of her bag
Of needments at his backe. Thus as they past,
The day with cloudes was suddene overcast,
And angry Love an hideous storme of raine
Did poure into his lemans lap so fast,
That everie wight to shrowd it did constrain ;
And this faire couple eke to shroud themselves were
fain.

vii.

Enferst to seeke some covert nigh at hand,
A shadie grove not farr away they spide,
That promist ayde the tempest to withstand ;
Whose loftie trees, yelad with sommers pride,
Did spred so broad, that heavens light did hide,
Not perceable with power of any starr :
And all within were pathes and alleies wide,
With footing worne, and leading inward farr :
Faire harbour that them seems ; so in they en-
tered ar.

viii.

And fourth they passe, with pleasure forward led,
Toying to heare the birdes sweete harmony,
Which, the rein shrouded from the tempest dred,
Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky.
Much can they praise the trees so straight and hy,
The sayling pine ; the cedar proud and tall ;
The vine-propp elme ; the poplar never dry ;
The builder oake, sole king of forrests all ;
The aspine good for staves ; the cypresse funerall ;

ix.

The laurell, meed of mightie conquerours
And poets sage ; the firre that weepeth still ;

iv. 4. *Under a vele, that wimpled was full low ;*] A veil plaited. But the veil and the wimple were two different articles in the dress of a nun. UPRON.

vi. 9. — were fain.] Glad. CHURCH.

viii. 5. *Much can they praise* —] The reader will find this expression very often, *Much can they praise*— i. e. *Much they praise*. UPRON.

viii. 7. *The vine-propp elme ;*] i. e. the elm that props up and supports the vine. UPRON.

The willow, worne of forlorne paramours ;
The eugh, obedient to the benders will ;
The birch for shaftes ; the sallow for the mill ;
The mirrhe sweete-bleeding in the bitter wound ;
The warlike beech ; the ash for nothing ill ;
The fruitfull olive ; and the platane round ;
The carver holme ; the maple seeldom inward
sound.

x.

Led with delight, they thus beguile the way,
Untill the blustering storme is overblowne ;
When, weening to returne whence they did stray,
They cannot finde that path, which first was
showne,

But wander too and fro in waies unknowne,
Furthest from end then, when they nearest
weene,

That makes them doubt their wits be not their
So many pathes, so many turnings seene, [owne :
That, which of them to take, in diverse doubt they
been.

xi.

At last resolving forward still to fare,
Till that some end they finde, or in or out,
That path they take, that beaten seemd most
And like to lead the labyrinth about ; [bare,
Which when by tract they hunted had through-
out,

At length it brought them to a hollow cave,
Amid the thickest woods. The Champion stout
Eftsoones dismounted from his courser brave,
And to the Dwarfe a while his needlesse spere he
gave.

xii.

“ Be well aware,” quoth then that Ladie mild,
“ Least suddaine mischiefe ye too rash provoke :
“ The danger hid, the place unknowne and wilde,
Breedes dreadful doubts : oft fire is without
smoke,
And perill without show : therefore your stroke,
Sir Knight, with-hold, till further tryall made.”
“ Ah Ladie,” sayd he, “ shame were to revoke
The forward footing for an hidden shade :
Vertue gives her selfe light through darknesse farr
to wade.”

xiii.

“ Yea but,” quoth she, “ the perill of this place
I better wot then you : Though nowe too late
To wish you backe returne with foule disgrace,
Yet wisdome warnes, whilst foot is in the gate,
To stay the steppe, ere forced to retrace.
This is the wandring wood, this *Errours den*,
A monster vile, whom God and man does hate :
Therefore I read beware.” “ Fly, fly,” quoth
then
The fearefull Dwarfe ; “ this is no place for living
men.”

xiv.

But, full of fire and greedy hardiment,
The youthfull Knight could not for ought be
staide ;

But forth unto the darksome hole he went,
And looked in : his glistring armor made
A litle glooming light, much like a shade ;
By which he saw the ugly monster plaine,
Halfe like a serpent horribly displaide,
But th’ other halfe did womans shape retaine,
Most lothsome, filthie, foule, and full of vile disdain

xv.

And, as she lay upon the durty ground,
Her huge long taile her den all overspred,
Yet was in knots and many bouhtes upwound,
Pointed with mortall stung: Of her there bred
A thousand yong ones, which she dayly fed,
Sucking upon her poisonous duges; each one
Of sundrie shapes, yet all ill-favored:
Soone as that fyncouth light upon them shone,
Into her mouth they crept, and suddain all were gone.

xvi.

Their dam upstart out of her den effraide,
And rushed forth, hurling her hideous taile
About her cursed head; whose folds displaid
Were stretcht now forth at length without entraile.

She lookt about, and seeing one in mayle,
Armed to point, sought backe to turne againe;
For light she hated as the deadly bale,
Ay went in desert darknes to remaine,
Where plain none might her see, nor she see any
plaine.

xvii.

Which when the valiant Elfe perceiv'd, he leapt
As lyon fierce upon the flying pray,
And with his trenchand blade her boldly kept
From turning backe, and forced her to stay:
Therewith enrag'd she loudly gau to bray,
And turning fierce her speckled taile advaunst,
Threatning her angrie sting, him to dismay,
Who, nought aghast, his mightie haud enhaunst;
The stroke down from her head unto her shoulder
glaunst.

xviii.

Much daunted with that dint her sence was dazd;
Yet kindling rage her selfe she gathered round,
And all attonce her beastly bodie raizd
With doubled forces high above the ground:
Tho, wrapping up her wretched sterne arownd,
Lept fierce upon his shield, and her huge traine
All suddenly about his body wound,
That hand or foot to stirr he strove in vaine.
God helpe the man so wrapt in Errorrs endlesse
traine!

xix.

His Lady, sad to see his sore constraint,
Cride out, "Now, now, Sir Knight, shew what
ye bee;
Add faith unto your force, and be not faint;
Strangle her, els she sure will strangle thee."
That when he heard, in great perplexitie,
His gall did grate for grieffe and high disdainie;
And, knitting all his force, got one hand free,

xv. 3. *Yet was in knots and many bouhtes upwound,* Many *bouhts*, i. e. many circular folds. UPTON.

xvi. 4. ——— *without entraile.*] That is, *untwisted*. CHURCH.

xvi. 7. ——— *the deadly bale.*] *Bale* is here used literally for *poison*, its genuine signification. T. WARTON.

xvii. 3. ——— *his trenchand blade*] Fr. *Trancher*, *cutting*. CHURCH.

xviii 5. *Tho, wrapping up her wretched sterne arownd,*] i. e. Then wrapping all around her wreathed tail. UPTON.

xviii. 6. ——— *and her huge traine*
All suddenly about his body wound,
That hand or foot to stirr he strove in vaine.

God helpe the man so wrapt in Errorrs endlesse traine!] *Traine* in the former verse signifieth tail; in the latter, deceit. UPTON.

Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great
paine,
That soone to loose her wicked bands did her
constraine.

xx.

Therewith she spewd out of her filthie maw
A floud of poyson horrible and blacke,
Full of great lumps of flesh, and gobbets raw,
Which stunk so vildly, that it forst him slacke
His grasping hold, and from her turne him backe:
Her vomit full of bookes and papers was,
With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes did
lacke,

And creeping sought way in the weedy gras:
Her filthie parbreake all the place defiled has.

xxi.

As when old father Nilus gins to swell
With timely pride above the Aegyptian vale,
His fattie waves doe fertile slime outwell,
And overflow each plaine and lowly dale:
But, when his later spring gins to avale, [breed
Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherin there
Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly male
And partly femall, of his fruitfull seed;
Such ugly monstrous shapes elsewhere may no man
reed.

xxii.

The same so sore annoyed has the Knight,
That, wel-nigh choked with the deadly stinke,
His forces faile, ne can no lenger fight.
Whose corage when the Feend perceivd to shrinke,
She poured forth out of her hellish sinke
Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents small,
(Deformed monsters, fowle, and blacke as inke),
Which swarming all about his legs did crall,
And him encombred sore, but could not hurt at all.

xxiii.

As gentle shepheard in sweete eventide,
When ruddy Phebus gins to welke in west,
High on an hill, his flocke to wevnen wide,
Markes which doe byte their hairy supper best;
A cloud of cumbrous gnattes doe him molest,
All striving to infixe their feeble stinges,
That from their noyance he no where can rest;
But with his clownish hands their tender wings
He brusseth oft, and oft doth mar their murmur-
ings.

xxiv.

Thus ill bestedd, and fearefull more of shame
Then of the certeine perill he stood in,
Halfe furious unto his foe he came,
Resolved in minde all suddenly to win,
Or soone to lose, before he once would lin;
And stroke at her with more then manly force,
That from her body, full of filthie sin,
He raft her hatefull heade without remorse:
A streame of cole-black blood forth gushed from
her corse.

xxv.

Her scattred brood, soone as their parent deare
They saw so rudely falling to the ground,
Groning full deadly all with troublous feare

xx. 9. *Her filthie parbreake*] *Parbreake* is vomit. TOND.
xxi. 5. *But, when his later spring gins to avale,*] *To avale* is to abate, to sink down, Ital. *avallare*. UPTON.

Gathred themselves about her body round,
Weening their wonted entrance to have found
At her wide mouth; but, being there withstood,
They flocked all about her bleeding wound,
And sucked up their dying mothers blond;
Making her death their life, and eke her hurt their
good.

xxxvi.

That detestable sight him much amaze,
To see th' unkindly impes, of heaven accurst,
Devoure their dam; on whom while so he gazd,
Having all satisfide their bloody thirst,
Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse burst,
And bowels gushing forth: Well worthy end
Of such, as drunke her life, the which them nurst!
Now needeth him no lenger labour spend,
His foes have slaine themselves, with whom he should
contend.

xxxvii.

His Lady seeing all, that chaunst, from farre,
Approcht in hast to greet his victorie;
And saide, "Faire Knight, borne under happie
starre,
Who see your vanquist foes before you lye;
Well worthie be you of that armory,
Wherein ye have great glory wonne this day,
And proov'd your strength on a strong eniue;
Your first adventure: Many such I pray,
And henceforth ever wish that like succeed it may!"

xxxviii.

Then mounted he upon his steede againe,
And with the Lady backward sought to wend:
That path he kept, which beaten was most plaine,
Ne ever would to any by-way bend;
But still did follow one unto the end,
The which at last out of the wood them brought.
So forward on his way (with God to frend)
He passed forth, and new adventure sought:
Long way he traveled, before he heard of onght.

xxxix.

At length they chaunst to meet upon the way
An aged Sire, in long blacke weedes yclad,
His fete all bare, his beard all hoarie gray,
And by his belt his booke he hanging had;
Sober he seemde, and very sagely sad;
And to the ground his eyes were lowly bent,
Simple in shew, and voide of malice bad;
And all the way he prayed, as he went,
And often knockt his brest, as one that did repent.

xxx.

He faire the Knight saluted, louting low,
Who faire him quited, as that courteous was;
And after asked him, if he did know
Of strange adventures, which abroad did pas.
"Ah! my dear sonne," quoth he, "how should,
Silly old man, that lives in hidden cell, [alas!

xxxviii. 7. — with God to frend] *To befriend him.*
TONN.

xxx. 1. — louting low,] This seems to have been
a proverbial expression. "They were very low in their
loutings;" Ray. The word is used in the sense of *ser-
vilely bowing* often in Spenser, and in Chaucer and Skelton.
TODD.

xxx. 2. *Who faire him quited,*] *Required,* payed him
back his salutations again. UPRON.

Bidding his beades all day for his trespas,
Tydings of warre and worldly trouble tell?
With holy father sits not with such things to mell

xxxxi.

"But if of daunger, which hereby doth dwell,
And homebredd evil ye desire to heare,
Of a strange man I can you tidings tell,
That wasteth all this countrie farre and neare."
"Of such," saide he, "I chiefly doe inquere;
And shall thee well rewarde to shew the place,
In which that wicked wight his dayes doth weare:
For to all knighthood it is foule disgrace,
That such a cursed creature lives so long a space."

xxxii.

"Far hence," quoth he, "in wastfull wilderness
His dwelling is, by which no living wight
May ever passe, but thorough great distresse."
"Now," saide the Ladie, "draweth toward night;
And well I wote, that of your later fight
Ye all forwearded be; for what so strong,
But, wanting rest, will also want of might?
The sunne, that measures heaven all day long,
At night doth baite his steedes the ocean wavcs
among.

xxxiii.

"Then with the sunne take, Sir, your timely rest,
And with new day new worke at once begin:
Untroubled night, they say, gives counsell best."
"Right well, Sir Knight, ye have advised bin,"
Quoth then that aged man; "the way to win
Is wisely to advise: now day is spent;
Therefore with me ye may take up your In
For this same night." The Knight was well
content:
So with that godly Father to his home they went.

xxxiv.

A litle lowly hermitage it was,
Downe in a dale, hard by a forests side,
Far from resort of people, that did pas
In travaill to and froe: a litle wyde
There was an holy chappell edifyde,
Wherein the Hermite dewly went to say
His holy things each morne and eventyde:
Thereby a christall streame did gently play,
Which from a sacred fountaine welled forth alway.

xxxv.

Arrived there, the litle house they fill,
Ne looke for entertainment, where none was;
Rest is their feast, and all things at their will:
The noblest mind the best contentment has.
With faire discourse the evening so they pas;
For that olde man of pleasing wordes had store,
And well could file his tongue, as smooth as glas:
He told of saintes and popes, and evermore
He strowd an *Ave-Mary* after and before.

xxx. 9. *With holy father sits not*] *It sits not,* 'tis not
becoming. *It sits,* it sits well, 'tis becoming. So we say,
it sits well on a person. UPRON.

xxxiv. 5. — an holy chappell edifyde,] *Built*
TONN.

xxxv. 7. *And well could file his tongue,*] This expres-
sion we often find both in our poet, and in those old poets
whom he imitated. 'Tis a Gallicism: "*Avoir la langue bier*
affilee." UPRON.

xxxvi.

The drouping night thus creepeth on them fast ;
And the sad humor loading their eye-liddes,
As messenger of Morpheus, on them cast
Sweet slombing deaw, the which to sleep them
biddes.

Unto their lodgings then his gwestes he riddes :
Where when all drown'd in deadly sleepe he findes,
He to his studie goes ; and there amiddes
His magick bookes, and artes of sundrie kindes,
He seeks out mighty charmes to trouble sleepey
minds.

xxxvii.

Then choosing out few words most horrible,
(Let none then read !) thereof did verses frame ;
With which, and other spelles like terrible,
He bad awake blacke Plutoes griesly dame ;
And curs'd heven ; and spake reprochful shame
Of highest God, the Lord of life and light.
A bold bad man ! that dar'd to call by name
Great Gorgon, prince of darknes and dead night ;
At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put to flight.

xxxviii.

And forth he cald out of deepe darknes dredd
Legions of sprights, the which, like litle flies,
Fluttring about his ever-damned hedd,
Awaite whereto their service he applies,
To aide his friendes, or fray his enemies :
Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo,
And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes ;
The one of them he gave a message too,
The other by himselfe staide other worke to doo.

xxxix.

He, making speedy way through spersed ayre,
And through the world of waters wide and deepe,
To Morpheus house doth hastily reparaie.
Amid the bowels of the earth full steepe,
And low, where dawning day doth never peepe,
His dwelling is ; there Tethys his wet bed
Doth ever wash, and Cynthia still doth steepe
In silver deaw his ever-drooping hed,
Whiles sad Night over him her mantle black doth
spred.

xl.

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast ;
The one faire fram'd of burnisht yvory,
The other all with silver overcast ;
And wakeful dogges before them farre doe lye,
Watching to banish Care their enemy,
Who oft is wont to trouble gentle Sleepe.
By them the Sprite doth passe in quiedly,
And unto Morpheus comes, whom drowned
deepe
In drowsie fit he findes ; of nothing he takes keepe.

xli.

And, more to lulle him in his slumber soft,
A trickling streame from high rock tumbling
And ever-drizzling raine upon the loft, [downe,
Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like the
sowne
Of swarming bees, did cast him in a sowne.
No other noyse, nor peoples troublous cryes,
As still are wont t'annoy the walled towne,

xxxix. 1. — *through spersed ayre,*] The word *spersed*, or *sparsed*, for *dispersed*, *scattered*, often occurs in our old writers. TODD.

Might there be heard : but carelesse Quiet lyes,
Wrapt in eternal silence farre from enmyes.

xlii.

The messenger approaching to him spake ;
But his waste wordes retourn'd to him in vaine :
So sound he slept, that nought mought him
awake.

Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with paine,
Whereat he gau to stretch : but he againe
Shooke him so hard, that forced him to speake.
As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine
Is tost with troubled sights and fancies weake,
He mumbled soft, but would not all his silence
breake.

xliii.

The Sprite then gan more boldly him to wake,
And threatned unto him the dreaded name
Of Heceaté : whereat he gan to quake,
And, lifting up his lompish head, with blame
Halfe angrie asked him, for what he came.
"Hether," quoth he, "me Archimago sent,
He that the stubborne sprites can wisely tame,
He bids thee to him send for his intent
A fit false Dreame, that can delude the sleepers
sent."

xliv.

The God obayde ; and, calling forth straight way
A diverse Dreame out of his prison darke,
Delivered it to him, and downe did lay
His heavie head, devoide of careful carke ;
Whose sences all were straight benumb'd
And He, backe returning by the yvorie dore, [starke.
Remounted up as light as chearefull larke ;
And on his litle wings the Dreame he bore
In hast unto his lord, where he him left afore.

xlv.

Who all this while, with charmes and hidden artes,
Had made a Lady of that other Spright,
And fram'd of liquid ayre her tender partes,
So lively, and so like in all mens sight,
That weaker sence it could have ravisht quight :
The Maker selfe, for all his wondrous witt,
Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight.
Her all in white he clad, and over it
Cast a black stole, most like to seeme for Una fit.

xlvi.

Now when that ydle Dreame was to him brought,
Unto that Elfin Knight he bad him fly,
Where he slept soundly void of evil thought,
And with false shewes abuse his fantasy ;
In sort as he him schooled privily.
And that new creature, borne without her dew,
Full of the Makers guyle, with usage sly
He taught to imitate that Lady trew, [hew.
Whose semblance she did carrie under feigned

xli. 8. — *carelesse Quiet*] *Quiet* is here a person. "*Secura quies*" is Virgil's epithet, as Mr. Upton has observed. TODD.

xliii. 9. — *That can delude the sleepers sent.*] *Sent*, sensation, perception, as Mr. Church and Mr. Warton both explain ; the original spelling being *sent*. TODD.

xliv. 2. *A diverse Dreame*] A dream that would occasion diversity and distraction. UPTON.

xliv. 4. — *careful carke*] *Thought* or *care*. TODD.

xlvi. 6. — *borne without her dew.*] That is, produced, but not according to the course of nature. GUYCER

XLVII.

Thus, well instructed, to their worke they haste ;
 And, comming where the Knight in slomber lay,
 The one upon his hardie head him plaste,
 And made him dreame of loves and lustfull
 play ;
 That night his manly hart did melt away,
 Bathed in wanton blis and wicked ioy.
 Then seemed him his Lady by him lay,
 And to him playnd, how that false winged boy
 Her chaste hart had subdewd to learne dame
 Pleasures toy,

XLVIII.

And she her selfe, of beantie soveraigne queene,
 Fayre Venus, seemde unto his bed to bring
 Her, whom he, waking, evermore did weene
 To see the chastest floure that eye did spring
 On earthly branch, the daughter of a king,
 Now a loose leman to vile service bound :
 And eke the Graces seemed all to sing,
Hymen Iñ Hymen, damcing all around ;
 Whilst freshest Flora her with yvie girlond crown'd.

XLIX.

In this great passion of unwonted lust,
 Or wonted feare of doing ought amis,
 He starteth up, as seeming to mistrust
 Some secret ill, or hidden foe of his :
 Lo, there before his face his Ladie is,
 Under blacke stole hyding her bayted hooke ;
 And as halfe blushing offred him to kis,
 With gentle blandishment and lovely looke,
 Most like that Virgin true, which for her Knight
 him took.

L.

All cleane dismayd to see so uncouth sight,
 And halfe enraged at her shamelesse guise,
 He thought have slaine her in his fierce despight ;
 But, hastie heat tempring with sufferance wise,
 He stayde his hand ; and gan himselfe advise
 To prove his sense, and tempt her faigned truth.
 Wringing her hands, in womens pitteous wise,
 Tho can she weepe, to stirre up gentle ruth
 Both for her noble blood, and for her tender
 youth.

LI.

And sayd, " Ah Sir, my liege lord, and my love,
 Shall I accuse the hidden cruell fate,
 And mightie causes wrought in heaven above,
 Or the blind god, that doth me thus amate,
 For hoped love to winne me certaine hate ?
 Yet thus perforce he bids me do, or die.
 Die is my dew ; yet rew my wretched state,
 You, whom my hard avenging destinie
 Hath made iudge of my life or death indifferently :

LII.

" Your owne deare sake forst me at first to leave
 My fathers kingdom"—There she stopt with
 teares ;
 Her swollen hart her speech seemd to bereave ;
 And then againe begun ; " My weaker yeares,
 Captiv'd to fortune and frayle worldly feares,
 Fly to your fayth for succour and sure ayde :
 Let me not die in languor and long teares."
 " Why, dame," quoth he, " what hath ye thus
 dismayd ? [affrayd ?"
 What frayes ye, that were wont to comfort me

LIII.

" Love of yourselfe," she saide, " and deare con-
 straint,
 Lets me not sleepe, but waste the wearie night
 In secret anguish and unpittied plaint,
 Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned
 quight."
 Her doubtfull words made that redoubted Knight
 Suspect her truth ; yet since no' untruth he knew
 Her fawning love with foule disdainefull spight
 He would not shend ; but said, " Deare daue,
 I rew,
 That for my sake unknowne such griefe unto you
 grew :

LIV.

" Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground ;
 For all so deare, as life is to my hart,
 I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound :
 Ne let vaine fears procure your needlesse smart,
 Where cause is none ; but to your rest depart."
 Not all content, yet seemd she to appease
 Her mournfull plaintes, beguiled of her art,
 And fed with words, that could not chose but
 please :
 So, slyding softly forth, she turnd as to her ease.

LV.

Long after lay he musing at her mood,
 Much griev'd to thinke that gentle Dame so light,
 For whose defence he was to shed his blood.
 At last dull wearines of former fight
 Having yrockt asleepe his irkesome spright,
 That troublous Dreame gan freshly tosse his
 braine
 With howres, and beds, and ladies deare delight :
 But, when he saw his labour all was vaine,
 With that misformed Spright he backe returnd
 againe.

CANTO II.

The guilefull great Enchaunter parts
 The Redcrosse Knight from Truth ;
 Into whose stead faire Falshood steps,
 And workes him woefull ruth.

I

By this the northerne wagoner had set
 His sevenfold teme behind the stedfast starre
 That was in ocean waves yet never wet,
 But firme is fixt, and sendeth light from farre
 To all that in the wide deepe wandring arre ;
 And chearefull chaunticlere with his note shrill
 Had warn'd once, that Phoebus fiery carre
 In hast was climbing up the easterne hill,
 Full envious that night so long his roome did fill :

II.

When those accursed messengers of hell,
 That feigning Dreame, and that faire-forged
 Spright,
 Came to their wicked Maister, and gan tell
 Their bootelesse paines, and ill-succeeding night :

I. I. — [the northerne wagoner &c.] The northerne
 wagoner is *Böbles*, one of the constellations; his sevenfold
 teme are the seven stars in the tail and hinder part of the
 Greater Bear, and vulgarly called *Charles's Wain*; and the
 stedfast starre is the *Pole-star*. *CHARC.H.*

Who, all in rage to see his skillfull might
Deluded so, gan threaten hellish paine
And sad Prosérpines wrath, them to affright.
But, when he saw his threatening was but vaine,
He cast about, and searcht his baleful bokes againe.

III.

Etsoones he tooke that miscereated Faire,
And that false other Spright, on whom he spred
A seeming body of the subtle aire,
Like a young Squire, in loves and lustyhed
His wanton daies that ever loosely led,
Without regard of armes and dreaded fight ;
Those two he tooke, and in a secrete bed,
Covered with darkenes and misdeeming night,
Them both together laid, to ioy in vaine delight.

IV.

Forthwith he runnes with feigned-faithfull hast
Unto his guest, who, after troublous sights
And dreames, gan now to take more sound repast ;
Whom suddenly he wakes with fearful frights,
As one aghast with feends or damned sprights,
And to him calls ; " Rise, rise, unhappy swaine,
That here wex old in sleepe, whiles wicked wights
Have knit themselves in Venus shameful chaine :
Come, see where your false Lady doth her honor
staine."

V.

All in a maze he suddenly up start
With sword in hand, and with the old man went ;
Who soone him brought into a secret part,
Where that false couple were full closely ment
In wanton lust and leud embracèment :
Which when he saw, he burnt with gealous fire ;
The eie of reason was with rage yblent ;
And would have slaine them in his furious ire,
But hardly was restrained of that aged sire.

VI.

Retourning to his bed in torment great,
And bitter anguish of his guilty sight,
He could not rest ; but did his stont heart eat,
And wast his inward gall with deepe despight,
Yrkesome of life, and too long lingring night.
At last faire Hesperus in highest skie
Had spent his lampe, and brought forth dawning
Then up he rose, and clad him hastily ; [light ;
The Dwarfè him brought his steed : so both away
do fly.

VII.

Now when the rosy-fingred Mornung faire,
Weary of aged Tithones saffron bed,
Had spread her purple robe through dewy aire ;
And the high hills Titan discovered ;
The royall Virgin shooke off drousyhed :
And, rising forth out of her baser bowre,
Lookt for her Knight, who far away was fled,
And for her Dwarfè, that went to waite each
howe :—
Then gan she wail and weepe to see that woeful
stowre.

VIII.

And after him she rode with so much speede,
As her slowe beast could make ; but all in vaine :
For him so far had borne his light-foot steede,
Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce disdaine,

v. 4. — full closely ment] *Mingled.* Mr. Tyrwhitt says the word is derived from *menge*, Sax. *TODD.*

That him to follow was but fruitlesse paine ;
Yet she her weary limbes would never rest ;
But every hill and dale, each wood and plaine,
Did search, sore grieved in her gentle brest,
He so ungently left her, whome she loved best.

IX.

But subtil Archimago, when his guests
He saw divided into double parts,
And Una wandring in woods and forrests,
(Th' end of his drift,) he praised his divelish arts,
That had such might over true-meaning harts :
Yet rests not so, but other meanes doth make ;
How he may worke unto her further smarts :
For her he hated as the hissing snake,
And in her many troubles did most pleasure take.

X.

He then devise himselfe how to disguise ;
For by his mighty science he could take
As many formes and shapes in seeming wise,
As ever Proteus to himselfe could make :
Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in lake,
New like a foxe, now like a dragon felt ;
That of himselfe he ofte for feare would quake,
And oft would flie away. O who can tell
The hidden powre of herbes, and might of magic
spell !

XI.

But now seemde best the person to put on
Of that good Knight, his late beguiled guest :—
In mighty armes he was yclad anon,
And silver shield ; upon his coward brest
A bloody crosse, and on his craven crest
A bouch of heares discoloured diversly.
Full iolly knight he seemde, and wel address ;
And, when he sate upon his courser free,
Saint George himselfe ye would have deemed him
to be.

XII.

But he, the Knight, whose semblaunt he did beare,
The true Saint George, was wandred far away,
Still flying from his thoughts and gealous feare :
Will was his guide, and griefe led him astray.
At last him chaunst to meete upon the way
A faithlesse Sarazin, all armde to point,
In whose great shield was writ with letters gay
Sans foy ; full large of limbe and every joint
He was, and cared not for God or man a point.

XIII.

Hee had a faire companion of his way,
A goodly Lady clad in searlot red,
Purified with gold and pearle of rich assay ;
And like a Persian mitre on her head
Shee wore, with crowns and owches garnished,
The which her lavish lovers to her gave :
Her wanton palfrey all was overspred
With tinsell trappings, woven like a wave,
Whose bridle rung with golden bells and bosses brave.

XIV.

With faire disport, and courting dalliaunce,
She intertaine her lover all the way :
But, when she saw the Knight his speare advance,

ix. 6. — doth make,] *Devise.* Make, Lat. *nachinari*, to devise. JUN. CHURCH.

xi. 1. — the person to put on] This is a Latinism : *Personam induere.* UPRON.

Shee soone left off her mirth and wanton play,
And bad her Knight addressse him to the fray;
His foe was nigh at hand. He, prickte with
pride,

And hope to winne his Ladies hearte that day,
Forth spurred fast; adowne his coursers side
The red blood trickling stained the way, as he did
ride.

xv.

The Knight of the Redcrosse, when him be spide
Spurring so hate with rage dispiteous,
Gan fairely couch his speare, and towards ride:
Soone meete they both, both fell and furious,
That, daunted with their forces hideous,
Their steeds doe stagger, and amazed stand;
And eke themselves, too rudely rigorous,
Astonied with the stroke of their owne hand,
Doe backe rebutte, and each to other yealdeth land.

xvi.

As when two rams, stird with ambitious pride,
Fight for the rule of the rich-fleeced flocke,
Their horned fronts so fierce on either side
Doe meete, that, with the terror of the shocke
Astonied, both stand senselesse as a blocke,
Forgetfull of the hanging victory:
So stood these twaine, unmoved as a rocke,
Both staring fierce, and holding idely
The broken reliques of their former cruelty.

xvii.

The Sarazin, sore daunted with the buffe,
Snatcheth his sword, and fiercely to him flies;
Who well it wards, and quyteth cuff with cuff:
Each others equall puissance envies,
And through their iron sides with cruell spies
Does seeke to peere; repining courage yields
No foote to foe: the flashing fier flies,
As from a forge, out of their burning shields;
And streams of purple blood new dic the verdant
fields.

xviii.

"Curse on that Crosse," quoth then the Sarazin,
"That keeps thy body from the bitter fitt;
Dead long ygoe, I wote, thou haddest bin,
Had not that charme from thee forwarned itt:
But yet I warne thee now assured sitt,
And hide thy head." Therewith upon his crest
With rigor so outrageous he smitt,
That a large share it lewd out of the rest,
And glauncing downe his shield from blame him
fairly blest.

xix.

Who, thereat wondrous wroth, the sleeping spark
Of native vertue gan eftsoones revive;
And, at his haughty helmet making mark,
So hugely stroke, that it the steele did rive,
And cleft his head: He, tumbling downe alive,

xvii. 5. *And through their iron sides with cruell spies
Does seeke to peere;*] The meaning is, each
envies the other's equal valour, and each does seek with
cruell eyes, (*sortitus fortunam oculis*), to pierce through
the other's sides, which are armed with iron. Upton.

xviii. 8. — *a large share it lewd*] The substantive
share is here used in the sense of the Saxon verb *share*, to
cut or divide. Todd.

xviii. 9. — *from blame him fairly blest.*] That is,
acquitted him of having given but an indifferent blow.

CHURCH.

With bloody mouth his mother earth did kis,
Greeting his grave: his grudging ghost did strive
With the fraile flesh; at last it flitted is,
Whether the soules doe fly of men, that live amis.

xx.

The Lady, when she saw her champion fall,
Like the old ruines of a broken towre,
Staid not to wale his woefull funeral;]
But from him fled away with all her powre:
Who after her as hastily gan scowre,
Bidding the Dwarf with him to bring away
The Sarazins shield, signe of the conquerour:
Her soone he overtooke, and bad to stay;
For present cause was none of dread her to dismay

xxi.

Shee turning backe, with ruefull countenance,
Cride, "Mercy, mercy, Sir, vouchsafe to show
On silly Dame, subiect to hard mischaunce,
And to your mighty will." Her humblesse low
In so rich weedes, and seeming glorious show,
Did much emmove his stout heroicke heart;
And said, "Deare dame, your suddain overthrow
Much rueth me; but now put feare apart,
And tel, both who ye be, and who that tooke your
part."

xxii.

Melting in teares, then gan shee thus lament;
"The wretched woman, whorn unhappy howre
Hath now made thrall to your commandement,
Before that angry heavens lift to lowre,
And fortune false betraide me to your powre,
Was, (O what now availeth that I was!)
Borne the sole daughter of an emperour;
He that the wide west under his rule has,
And high hath set his throne where Tiberis dod
pas.

xxiii.

"He, in the first flowre of my freshest age,
Betrothed me unto the onely haire
Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage;
Was never prince so faithfull and so faire,
Was never priuce so meeke and debonaire!
But, ere my hoped day of spousall shone,
My dearest lord fell from high honors staire
Into the hands of hys accursed fone,
And cruelly was slaine; that shall I ever mone!

xxiv.

"His blessed body, spoild of lively breath,
Was afterward, I know not how, convaid,
And fro me hid; of whose most innocent death
When tidings came to mee unhappy maid,
O, how great sorrow my sad soule assaid!
Then forth I went his woefull corse to find,
And many yeares throughout the world I straid.
A virgin widow; whose deepe-wounded mind
With love long time did languish, as the striker
hind.

xxv.

"At last it chanced this proud Sarazin
To meete me wandring; who perforce me led
With him away; but yet could never win

xxii. 2. — *whom unhappy howre*] *Misfortune.* Fr.
malheur. Church.

xxiii. 5. — *so meeke and debonaire!*] *Gracious,*
kind. Fr. The accustomed epithet of gallant knights.
Todd.

The fort, that ladies hold in soveraign dread.
There lies he now with foule dishonor dead,
Who, whiles he livde, was called proud Sansfoy,
The eldest of three brethren ; all three bred
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sansioy ;
And twixt them both was born the bloody bold
Sansloy.

xxvi.

"In this sad plight, friendlesse, unfortunate,
Now miserable I Fidessa dwell,
Craving of you, in pittie of my state,
To doe none ill, if please ye not doe well."
He in great passion all this while did dwell,
More busying his quicke eies, her face to view,
Then his dull eares, to heare what shee did tell ;
And said, "Faire lady, hart of flint would rew
The undeserved woes and sorrowes, which ye shew.

xxvii.

"Henceforth in safe assurance may ye rest,
Having both found a new friend you to aid,
And lost an old foe that did you molest :
Better new friend then an old foe is said."
With change of chear the seeming-simple maid
Let fal her eien, as shamefast, to the earth,
And yeelding soft, in that she nought gainsaid.
So forth they rode, he feining seemly merrth,
And shee coy lookes : so dainty, they say, maketh
derth.

xxviii.

Long time they thus together traveled ;
Till, weary of their way, they came at last
Where grew two goodly trees, that faire did
sپرد
Their armes abroad, with gray mosse overcast ;
And their greene leaves, trembling with every
blast,
Made a calme shadowe far in compasse round :
The fearefull shepheard, often there aghast,
Under them never sat, ne wout there sound
His mery oaten pipe ; but shund th' unlucky ground.

xxix.

But this good Knight, soone as he them can spie,
For the coole shade him thither hastily got :
For golden Phoebus, now ymounted hie,
From fiery wheelles of his faire chariot
Hurled his beame so scorching cruell hot,
That living creature mote it not abide ;
And his new Lady it endured not.
There they alight, in hope themselves to hide
From the fierce heat, and rest their weary limbs
a tide.

xxx.

Faire-seemly pleasaunce each to other makes,
With goodly purposes, there as they sit ;
And in his falsed fancy he her takes
To be the fairest wight, that lived yit ;
Which to expresse, he bends his gentle wit ;

xxvi. 5. *He in great passion*] *Passion* is frequently used by Spenser for any commotion of the mind. Here it signifies not the *irascible*, but the softer passion of *pity*.
CHURCH.

xxvii. 9. ——— *so dainty, they say, maketh derth.*] Proverb : "Quæ rara, chara." UPRON.

xxx. 2. *With goodly purposes.*] *Discourses*. Fr. *propos*. Spenser frequently uses *purpose* for *conversation*.
CHURCH.

xxx. 3. *And in his falsed fancy he her takes*] "Nella fantasia falsata." UPRON.

And, thinking of those braches greene to
A girlond for her dainty forehead fit, [frame
He pluckt a bough ; out of whose rifte there
came
Smal drops of gory bloud, that trickled down the
same.

xxxii.

Therewith a piteous yelling voice was heard,
Crying, "O spare with guilty hands to teare
My tender sides in this rough rynd embard ;
But fly, ah ! fly far hence away, for feare
Least to you hap, that happened to me heare,
And to this wretched Lady, my deare love ;
O too deare love, love bought with death too
deare !"

Astond he stood, and up his heare did hove ;
And with that suddain horror could no member
move.

xxxiii.

At last whenas the dreadfull passion
Was overpast, and manhood well awake ;
Yet musing at the strange occasion,
And doubting much his sence, he thus bespake :
"What voice of damned ghost from Limbo lake,
Or guilefull spright wandring in empty aire,
(Both which fraile men doe oftentimes mistake),
Sends to my doubtful eares these speaches rare,
And ruefull plaints, me bidding guiltlesse blood to
spare ?"

xxxiiii.

Then, groning deep ; "Nor damned ghost," quoth
he,

"Nor guilefull sprite, to thee these words doth
But once a man Fradubio, now a tree ; [speake ;
Wretched man, wretched tree ! whose nature
weake

A cruell Witch, her cursed will to wreake,
Hath thus transformd, and plast in open plaines,
Where Boreas doth blow full bitter bleake,
And scorching sunne does dry my secret vaines ;
For though a tree I seeme, yet cold and heat me
paines."

xxxiv.

"Say on, Fradubio, then, or man or tree,"
Quoth then the Knight ; "by whose mischievous
Art thou mishaped thus, as now I see ? [aris
He oft finds med'cine who his grieft imparts ;
But double griefs afflict concealing harts ;
As raging flames who striveth to suppress."
"The author then," said he, "of all my smarts,
Is one Duessa, a false sorceresse,
That many errant Knights hath broght to wretched-
nesse.

xxxv.

"In prime of youthly yeares, when corage hott
The fire of love and ioy of chevalree
First kindled in my brest, it was my lott
To love this gentle Lady, whome ye see
Now not a Lady, but a seeming tree ;
With whome as once I rode accompanye,
Me chaunced of a Knight encountred bee,
That had a like faire Lady by his syde ;
Lyke a faire Lady, but did fowle Duessa hyde ;

xxxvi.

"Whose forged beauty he did take in hand
All other Dames to have exceeded farre ;
I in defence of mine did likewise stand,
Mine, that did then shine as the morning starre.
So both to batteill fierce arraigned arre ;

In which his harder fortune was to fall
Under my speare ; such is the dye of warre.
His Lady, left as a prise martiall,
Did yield her comely person to be at my call.

xxxvii.

“So doubly lov’d of Ladies unlike faire,
Th’ one seeming such, the other such indeede,
One day in doubt I cast for to compare
Whether in beauties glorie did exceede ;
A rosy girlond was the victors meede.
Both seemde to win, and both seemde won to
So hard the discord was to be agreede. [bee ;
Frelissa was as faire, as faire mote bee,
And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as shee.

xxxviii.

“The wicked Witch, now seeing all this while
The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway,
What not by right, she cast to win by guile ;
And, by her hellish science, raisd straight way
A foggy mist that overcast the day,
And a dull blast that breathing on her face
Dimmed her former beauties shining ray,
And with foule ugly forme did her disgrace :
Then was she fayre alone, when none was faire in
place.

xxxix.

“Then eride she out, ‘Fye, fye, deformed wight,
‘Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth plaine
‘To have before bewitched all mens sight :
‘O leave her soone, or let her soone be slaine !’
Her loathly visage viewing with disdaine,
Eftsoones I thought her such as she me told,
And would have kild her ; but with fained paine
The false Witch did my wrathfull hand withhold :
So left her, where she now is turnd to treën mould.

xl.

“Thensforth I tooke Duessa for my Dame,
And in the Witch unweeting ioyd long time ;
Ne ever wist, but that she was the same :
Till on a day (that day is everie Prime,
When witches wont do penance for their crime,)
I chaunst to see her in her proper hew,
Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme :
A filthy foule old woman I did vew,
That ever to have toucht her I did deadly rew.

xli.

“Her neather partes misshapen, monstrous,
Were hidd in water, that I could not see ;
But they did seeme more foule and hideous,
Then womans shape man would believe to bee.
Thensforth from her most beastly companie
I gan refraine, in minde to slipp away,
Soone as appeared safe opportunitie :
For danger great, if not assurd decay,
I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne to stray.

xlii.

“The divelish hag, by chaunages of my cheare,
Perceivd my thought ; and, drownid in sleepe
night,

xl. 4. ——— that day is everie Prime,] *Morning* : constantly so used by Spenser. The sense here is, “Till one morning, &c.” CHURCH.

xl. 7. *Bathing herselfe in origane and thyme* :] “Organie healeth scabs, itchings, and scurruinesse, being used in bathes.” Gerarde’s *Herball*. Thyme is deemed of similar virtue with organie, in Langham’s *Garden of Health*. TODD.

With wicked herbes and oymntments did besmeare
My body, all through charmes and magicke might,
That all my senses were bereaved quight :
Then brought she me into this desert waste,
And by my wretched lovers side me pight ;
Where now enclosed in wooden wals full faste,
Banisht from living wights, our wearie daies we
waste.”

xlili.

“But how long time,” said then the Elfin Knight,
“Are you in this misformed hous to dwell ?”
“Are you not chaunge,” quoth he, “this evill
plight,
Till we be bathed in a living Well :
That is the terme prescribed by the spell.”
“O how,” said he, “mote I that Well out find,
That may restore you to your wonted well ?”
“Time and suffised fates to former kynd
Shall us restore ; none else from hence may us
unbynd.”

xliv.

The false Duessa, now Fidessa hight,
Heard how in vaine Fradubio did lament,
And knew well all was true. But the good
Knight,
Full of sad feare and ghastly dreriment,
When all this speech the living tree had spent,
The bleeding bough did thrust into the ground,
That from the blood he might be innocent,
And with fresh clay did close the wooden wound :
Then turning to his Lady, dead with feare her
fownd.

xlv.

Her seeming dead he fownd with feigned feare,
As all unweeting of that well she knew ;
And paynd himselfe with busie care to reare
Her out of carelesse swowne. Her eyelids blew,
And dimmed sight with pale and deadly hew,
At last she up gan lift ; with trembling cheare
Her up he tooke, (too simple and too trew.)
And oft her kist. At length, all passed feare,
He set her on her steede, and forward forth did
beare.

CANTO III.

Forsaken Truth long seekes her Love,
And makes the Lyon mylde ;
Marres blind Devotions mart, and fals
Is hand of leachour vyld.

NOUGHT is there under heav’ns wide hollownesse,
That moves more deare compassion of mind,
Then beautie brought t’ unworthie wretchednesse
Through envies snares, or fortunes freakes
unkind.

I, whether lately through her brightnes blynd,
Or through alleagance, and fast fealty,
Which I do owe unto all womankynd,
Feele my hart perst with so great agony,
When such I see, that all for pittie I could dy.

xlili. 7. ——— to your wonted well ?] To your former well being, that is, to your human shape. CHURCH.

xlili. 8. ——— to former kynd] Our former human nature. Spenser perpetually uses kind for nature, and kindly for natural ; as also unkindly for unnatural. CHURCH.

ii.
And now it is empassiond so deepe,
For fairest Unaes sake, of whom I sing,
That my frayle eies these lines with teares do
steepe,
To thinke how she through gayleful handeling,
Though true as touch, though daughter of a king,
Though faire as ever living wight was fayre,
Though nor in word nor deede ill meriting,
Is from her Knight divorced in despayre,
And her dew loves deryv'd to that vile Witches
shayre.

iii.
Yet she, most faithfull Ladie, all this while
Forsaken, wofull, solitarie mayd,
Far from all peoples peace, as in exile,
In wilderness and wasfull deserts strayd,
To seeke her Knight; who, subtilly betrayd
Though that late vision which th' Enchaunter
wrought,
Had her abandond : She, of nought affrayd,
Through woods and wastnes wide him daily
sought ;
Yet wished tydings none of him unto her brought.

iv.
One day, nigh wearie of the yrkesome way,
From her unhastie beast she did alight ;
And on the grasse her dainty limbs did lay
In secrete shadow, far from all mens sight ;
From her fayre head her fillet she undight,
And layd her stole aside : Her angels face,
As the great eye of heaven, shyned bright,
And made a sunshine in the shady place ;
Did never mortall eye behold such heavenly grace.

v.
It fortun'd, out of the thickest wood
A ramping lyon rushed suddainly,
Hunting full greedy after salveage blood :
Soone as the royall Virgin he did spy,
With gaping mouth at her ran greedily,
To have attonce devourd her tender corse :
But to the pray when as he drew more ny,
His bloody rage aswaged with remorse,
And, with the sight amazd, forgat his furions forse.

vi.
Instead thereof he kist her wearie feet,
And lickt her lilly hands with fawning tong ;
As he her wronged innocence did weet.
O how can beautie maister the most strong,
And simple truth subdue avenging wrong !
Whose yielded pryde and proud submission,
Still dreading death, when she had marked long,
Her hart gan melt in great compassion ;
And drizling teares did shed for pure affection.

vii.
"The lyon, lord of everie beast in field,"
Quoth she, "his princely puissance doth abate,
And mightie proud to humble weake does yield,
Forgetfull of the hungry rage, which late
Him prickt, in pittie of my sad estate :—
But he, my lyon, and my noble lord,
How does he find in cruell hart to hate
Her, that him lov'd, and ever most adord
As the god of my life ? why hath he me abhord ?"

iii. 3. *Far from all peoples peace.*] *Press or crowd.*
T.C.D.D.

viii.
Redounding teares did choke th' end of her plaint,
Which softly ecchoed from the neighbour wood ;
And, sad to see her sorrowfull constraint,
The kingly beest upon her gazing stood ;
With pittie calmd, downe fell his angry mood.
At last, in close hart shutting up her payne,
Arose the Virgin borne of heavenly brood,
And to her snowy palfrey got agayne,
To seeke her strayed Champion if she might attayne.

ix.
The lyon would not leave her desolate,
But with her went along, as a strong gard
Of her chad person, and a faythfull mate
Of her sad troubles and misfortunes hard :
Still, when she slept, he kept both watch and
ward ;
And, when she wakt, he wayted diligent,
With humble service to her will prepar'd :
From her fayre eyes he took commandēne
And ever by her lookes conceived her intent.

x.
Long she thus traveled through deserts wyde,
By which she thought her wandring Knigh
shold pas,
Yet never shew of living wight espyde ;
Till that at length she found the troude gras,
In which the tract of peoples footing was,
Under the steepe foot of a mountaine hore :
The same she followes, till at last she has
A damzel spyde slow-footing her before,
That on her shoulders sad a pot of water bore.

xi.
To whom approching she to her gan call,
To weet, if dwelling place were nigh at hand :
But the rude wench her answerd nought at all ;
She could not heare, nor speake, nor understand :
Till, seeing by her side the lyon stand,
With suddain feare her pitcher downe she threw,
And fled away : for never in that land
Face of fayre lady she before did vew,
And that dredd lyons looke her cast in deadly hew.

xii.
Full fast she fled, ne ever lookt behynd,
As if her life upon the wager lay ;
And home she came, whereas her mother blynd
Sate in eternall night ; nought could she say ;
But, suddaine catching hold, did her dismay
With quaking hands, and other signes of feare :
Who, full of ghastly fright and cold affray,
Gan shut the dore. By this arrived there
Dame Una, weary Dame, and entrance did require :

xiii.
Which when none yielded, her unruly page
With his rude claws the wicket open rent,
And let her in ; where, of his cruell rage
Nigh dead with feare, and faint astonishment,
Shee found them both in darksome corner pent :
Where that old woman day and night did pray
Upon her beads, devoutly penitent :
Nine hundred *Pater noster*s every day,
And thrise nine hundred *Aves* she was wont to say.

xiv.
And, to augment her painefull penance more,
Thrise every weeke in ashes shee did sitt,

And next her wrinkled skin rough sackcloth
wore,
And thrise-three times did fast from any bitt :
But now for feare her beads she did forgett.
Whose needlesse dread for to remove away,
Faire Una framed werds and count'naunce fitt :
Which hardly doen, at length she gan them
pray,
That in their cotage small that night she rest her
may.

xv.

The day is spent ; and commeth drowsie night,
When every creature shrowded is in sleepe :
Sad Una downe her laies in weary plight,
And at her feete the lyon watch doth keepe :
In stead of rest, she does lament, and weepe,
For the late lesse of her deare-loved Knight,
And sighes, and grones, and evermore does
steepe
Her tender brest in bitter teares all night ;
All night she thinks too long, and often looks for
light.

xvi.

Now when Aldeboran was mounted hye
Above the shinie Cassiopeias chaire,
And all in deadly sleepe did drowned lye,
One knocked at the dore, and in would fare ;
He knocked fast, and often curst, and sware,
That ready entraunce was not at his call ;
For on his backe a heavy load he bare
Of nightly stelhth, and pillage severall,
Which he had got abroad by purchas criminal.

xvii.

He was, to weete, a stout and sturdy thiefe,
Wont to robbe churches of their ornaments,
And poore mens boxes of their due reliefe,
Which given was to them for good intents :
The holy saints of their rich vestiments
He did disrobe, when all men carelesse slept ;
And spoild the priests of their habiliments ;
Whiles none the holy things in safety kept,
Then he by conning sleights in at the window
crept.

xviii.

And all, that he by right or wrong could find,
Unto this house he brought, and did bestow
Upon the daughter of this woman blind,
Abessa, daughter of Corceca slow,
With whom he wheredome usd that few did
know,
And fed her fatt with feast of offerings,
And plenty, which in all the land did grow ;
Ne spared he to give her gold and rings :
And now he to her brought part of his stolen things.

xix.

Thus, long the dore with rage and threats he bett ;
Yet of those fearfull women none durst rize,
(The lyon frayed them,) him in to lett ;
He would no lenger stay him to advize,
But open breakes the dore in furious wize,
And entring is ; when that disdainfull b'ast,
Encountring fierce, him suddein doth surprize ;
And, seizing cruell claws on trembling brest,
Under his lordly foot him proudly hath supprest.

xvi. 9. —by purchas criminal.] Robberies. UPTON.

xix. R. And, seizing] Fixing. CHURCH.

xx.

Him booteth not resist, nor succour call,
His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand ;
Who streight him rent in thousand peeces small,
And quite dismembred hath: the thirsty land
Dronke up his life ; kis corse left on the strand.
His fearefull freends weare out the wofull night,
Ne dare to weepe, nor seeme to understand
The heavie hap, which en them is alight ;
Affraid, least to themselves the like mishappen
might.

xxi.

Now when broad day the world discovered has,
Up Una rose, up rose the lyon eke ;
And on their former journey forward pas,
In waies unknowne, her wandring Knight to
seeke,
With paines far passing that long-wandring
That for his love refused deite : [Greeke,
Such were the labours of this Lady meeke,
Still seeking him, that from her still did flye ;
Then furthest from her hope, when most she
weened nye.

xxii.

Soone as she parted thence, the fearfull wayne,
That blind old woman, and her daughter dear,
Came forth ; and, finding Kir'krapine there slayne,
For anguish great they gan to rend their heare,
And beat their brests, and naked flesh to teare :
And when they both had wept and wayld their fill,
Then forth they ran, like two amazed deare,
Halfe mad through malice and revenging will,
To follow her, that was the canser of their ill :

xxiii.

Whome overtaking, they gan loudly bray,
With hollow houting, and lamenting cry ;
Shamefully at her rayling all the way,
And her accusing of dishonesty,
That was the flowre of faith and chastity :
And still, amidst her rayling, she did pray
That plagues, and mischiefes, and long misery,
Might fall on her, and follow all the way ;
And that in endlesse error she might ever stray.

xxiv.

But, when she saw her prayers nought prevaile,
Shee backe retourned with some labour lost ;
And in the way, as shee did weepe and waile,
A Knight her mett in mighty armes embost,
Yet Knight was not for all his bragging bost ;
But subtile Archimag, that Una sought
By traynes into new troubles to have toste :
Of that old woman tidings he besought,
If that of such a Lady shee could tellen ought.

xxv.

Therewith she gan her passion to renew,
And cry, and curse, and raile, and rend her heare,
Saying, that harlott she too lately knew,
That causd her shed so many a bitter teare ;
And so forth told the story of her feare.
Much seemed he to mone her haplesse chauce,
And after fer that Lady did inquere ;

xx. 2. His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand ;] i. e.
His bleeding hart is in the pawes of the lion, which
revenged her cause. UPTON.

xxi. 5. —that long-wandring Greeke,] Ulysses. UPTON.

Which being taught, he forward gan advaunce
His fair enchanted steed, and eke his charmed
launce.

xxvi.

Ere long he came where Una traveld slow,
And that wilde champion wayting her besyde;
Whome seeing such, for dread hee durst not show
Him selfe too nigh at hand, but turned wyde
Unto an hil; from whence when she him spyde,
By his like-seeming shield her Knight by name
Shee weend it was, and towards him gan ride:
Approaching nigh she wist it was the same;
And with faire fearefull humblesse towards him
shee came:

xxvii.

And weeping said, " Ah my long-lacked lord,
Where have ye bene thus long out of my sight?
Much feared I to have bene quite abhord,
Or ought have done, that ye displeasen might;
That should as death unto my deare heart light:
For since mine eie your ioyous sight did mis,
My chearefull day is turnd to chearelesse night,
And eke my night of death the shadow is:
But welcome now, my light, and shining lampe of
blis!"

xxviii.

He thereto meeting said, " My dearest dame,
Far be it from your thought, and fro my wil,
To thinke that knighthood I so much should
As you to leave that have me loved stil, [shame,
And chose in Faery court, of meere goodwil,
Where noblest Knights were to be found on earth.
The earth shall sooner leave her kindly ski.
To bring forth fruit, and make eternal derth,
Then I leave you, my life, yborne of heavenly berth.

xxix.

" And sooth to say, why I lefte you so long,
Was for to seeke adventure in straunge place;
Where, Archimago said, a felon strong
To many Knights did daily worke disgrace;
But Knight he now shall never more deface:
Good cause of mine excuse that mote ye please
Well to accept, and evermore embrace
My faithfull service, that by land and seas
Have vowd you to defend: now then your plaint
appease."

xxx.

His lovely words her seemd due recompence
Of all her passed paines: one loving howre
For many yeares of sorrow can dispence;
A dram of sweete is worth a pound of sowre.
Shee has forgott how many a woeful stowre
For him she late endurd; she speakes no more
Of past: true is, that true love hath no powre
To looken backe; his eies be fixt before.
Before her stands her Knight, for whom she toyld
so sore.

xxxi.

Much like, as when the beaten marinere,
That long hath wandred in the ocean wide,
Ofte soust in swelling Tethys saltish teare;

xxvi. 9. — humblesse] *Humilty*. *Humblesse*, Fr. Spenser also thus uses *nimblesse* for *nimbleness*. Todd.

xxx. 5. — a woeful stowre] *Danger*, or *misfortune*. The word is often used by our poet and others for *fight* or *battle*. Todd.

And long time having tand his tawney hide [hide,
With blustering breath of heaven, that none can
And scorching flames of fierce Orions hound;
Soone as the port from far he has espide,
His chearfull whistle merily doth sound,
And Nereus crownes with cups; his mates him
pledged around.

xxxii.

Such ioy made Una, when her Knight she found;
And eke th' Enchaunter ioyous seemde no lesse
Then the glad marchant, that does vew from
ground
His ship far come from watrie wilderness;
He hurles out vowes, and Neptune oft doth blessa.
So forth they past; and all the way they spent
Disconrsing of her dreadful late distresse,
In which he askt her, what the lyon ment;
Who told, her all that fell in iourney, as she went.

xxxiii.

They had not ridden far, when they might see
One pricking towards them with hastie heat,
Full strongly armd, and on a courser free
That through his fiersnesse fomed all with sweat,
And the sharpe yron did for anger eat,
When his hot ryder spurd his chauffed side;
His looke was sterne, and seemed still to threat
Cruell revenge, which he in hart did hyde:
And on his shield *Sans loy* in bloody lines was
dyde.

xxxiv.

When nigh he drew unto this gentle payre, [beare,
And saw the red crosse, which the Knight did
He burnt in fire; and gan eftsouones prepare
Himselfe to batteill with his couched speare.
Loth was that other, and did faint through feare,
To taste th' untryed dint of deadly steele:
But yet his Lady did so well him cheare,
That hope of new good hap he gan to feele;
So bent his speare, and spurd his horse with yron
heele.

xxxv.

But that proud Paynim forward came so ferce
And full of wrath, that, with his sharp-head
speare, [perce;
Through vainly crossed shield he quite d'd
And, had his staggering steed not shronke for
feare, [beare:
Through shield and body eke he should him
Yet, so great was the puissance of his push,
That from his saddle quite he did him beare:
He tumbling rudely downe to ground did rush,
And from his gored wound a well of bloud did gush.

xxxvi.

Dismounting lightly from his loftie steed,
He to him leapt, in minde to reave his life,
And proudly said; " Lo, there the worthie meed
Of him, that slew Sansfoy with bloody knife:
Henceforth his ghost, freed from repining strife,
In peace may passen over Lethe lake;
When mourning altars, purgd from enimies life,
The black infernall Furies doen aslake:
Life from Sansfoy thou tookst, Sansloy shall from
thee take."

xxxii. 6. — Orion's hound;] *Sirius*, or the *Dog-star*: so called by Homer. Jortin.

xxxiv. 9. So bent his speare,] *Levelled*, or, in the language of chivalry, *couched his spear*. Todd.

xxxvii.

Therewith in haste his helmet gan unlace,
Till Una cride, "O hold that heaue hand,
Dear Sir, what euer that thou be in place:
Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquisht stand
Now at thy mercy; mercy not withstand;
For he is one the truest Knight alive,
Though conquered now he lye on lowly land;
And, whilst him fortune fauour'd, fayre did
thrive
In bloody field; therefore of life him not deprive."

xxxviii.

Her piteous wordes might not abate his rage;
But, rudely rending up his helmet, would
Have slayne him streight: but when he sees his
And hoarie head of Archimago old, [age,
His hasty hand he doth amased hold,
And, halfe ashamed, wondred at the sight:
For that old man well knew he, though untold,
In charmes and magick to have wondrous
might;
Ne euer wont in field, ne in round lists, to fight:

xxxix.

And said, "Why Archimago, lucklesse syre,
What doe I see? what hard mishap is this,
That hath thee hether brought to taste mine yre?
Or thine the fault, or mine the error is,
Instead of foe to wound my friend amis?"
He answered nought, but in a traunce still lay,
And on those guilefull dazed eyes of his
The cloude of death did sit; which doen away,
He left him lying so, ne would no lenger stay:

xl.

But to the Virgin comes; who all this while
Amased stands, herselfe so mockt to see
By him, who has the guerdon of his gyle,
For so misfeigning her true Knight to bee:
Yet is she now in more perplexitie,
Left in the hand of that same Paynim hold,
From whom her booteth not at all to flie:
Who, by her cleanly garment catching hold,
Her from her palfrey pluckt, her visage to behold.

xli.

But her fiers servant, full of kingly aw
And high disdain, whenas his souveraine Dame
So rudely handled by her foe he saw,
With gaping iawes full greedy at him came,
And, ramping on his shield, did weene the same
Have reft away with his sharp rending clawes:
But he was stout, and lust did now inflame
His corage more, that from his griping pawes
He hath his shield redeemd; and forth his swerd
he drawes.

xlii.

O then, too weake and feeble was the forse
Of salvage beast, his puissance to withstand!
For he was strong, and of so mightie corse,
As euer wielded speare in warlike hand;
And feates of armes did wisely understand.

xxxvii. 4. *Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquisht stand*] To stand (as *στυναι* and *stare*) signifies to continue, to remain, to be, &c. without any reference to the posture. UPRON.

xxxviii. 9. *Ne euer wont in field, ne in round lists, to fight*:] In field, in open battle: in round lists, in lists encompassed all around, Gall. *champ clos*. UPRON.

Eftsoones he perced through his chaufed chest
With thrilling point of deadly yron brand,
And launcht his lordly hart: with death opprest
He rord aloud, whilst life forsooke his stubborne
brest.

xlvi.

Who now is left to keepe the forlorne Maid
From raging spoile of lawlesse victors will?
Her faithfull gard remov'd; her hope dismaid;
Her selfe a yielded pray to save or spill!
He now, lord of the field, his pride to fill,
With foule reproches and disdaineft spight
Her vildly entertaines; and, will or nil,
Bears her ar way upon his courser light:
Her prayers nought prevaile; his rage is more of
might.

xlv.

And all the way, with great lamenting paine,
And piteous plaintes, she filleth his dull eares,
That stony hart could riven have in twaine;
And all the way she wetis with flowing teares;
But he, enrag'd with rancor, nothing heares.
Her servile beast yet would not leave her so,
But follows her far off, ne ought he feares
To be partaker of her wandring woe.
More mild in beastly kind, than that her beastly foe.

CANTO IV.

To sinfull Hous of Pryde Duessa—
a guydes the faithfull Knight;
Where, brotthers death to wreak, Sansloy
Doth chaleng him to fight.

I.

YOUNG Knight whatever, that dost armes professe,
And through long labours hunttest after fame,
Beware of fraud, beware of ficklenesse,
In choice, and change, of thy deare-loved dame;
Least thou of her believe too lightly blame,
And rash misweening doe thy hart remove:
For unto Knight there is no greater shame,
Then lightnesse and inconstancie in love:
That doth this Rederosse Knights ensample plainly
prove.

ii.

Who, after that he had faire Una lorne,
Through light misdeeming of her loialtie;
And false Duessa in her sted had borne,
Call'd Fidess, and so supposd to be;
Long with her travaill; till at last they see
A goodly building, bravely garnished;
The house of mightie prince it seemd to be;
And towards it a broad high way that led,
All bare through peoples feet, which thether
traveiled.

iii.

Great troupes of people travailld thetherward
Both day and night, of each degree and place;
But few returned, having scaped hard,
With balefull beggery, or foule disgrace;
Which ever after in most wretched case,
Like loathsome lazars, by the hedges lay.
Thether Duessa badd him bend his pace;
For she is wearie of the toilsom way;
And also nigh consumed is the lingring day.

xlii. 7. — yron brand,] *Sword*. TOOD.
xliii. 7. — will or nil,] *Nolens volens*. *Nil*, will
not; contracted from *ne will*. UPRON.

iv.

A stately pallace built of squared bricke,
Which cunningly was without mortar laid,
Whose wals were high, but nothing strong nor
thick,
And golden foile all over them displaid,
That purest skye with brightnesse they dismayd :
High lifted up were many loftie towres,
And goodly galleries far over laid,
Full of faire windowes and delightful bowres ;
And on the top a diall told the timely howres.

v.

It was a goodly heape for to behould,
And spake the praises of the workmans witt :
But full great pittie, that so faire a mould
Did on so weake foundation ever sitt :
For on a sandie hill, that still did flitt
And fall away, it mounted was full hie :
That every breath of heaven shaken itt :
And all the hinder partes, that few could spie,
Were ruinous and old, but painted cunningly.

vi.

Arrived there, they passed in forth right ;
For still to all the gates stood open wide :
Yet charge of them was to a porter hight,
Cald Malvenú, who entrance none denide :
Thence to the hall, which was on every side
With rich array and costly arras dight :
Infinite sortes of people did abide
There waiting long, to win the wished sight
Of her, that was the Lady of that pallace bright

vii.

By them they passe, all gazing on them round,
And to the Presence mount ; whose glorious
vew
Their frayle amazed senses did confound.
In living princes court none ever knew
Such endless riches, and so sumpteous shew ;
Ne Persia selfe, the nonrse of pompons pride,
Like ever saw : And there a noble crew
Of Lords and Ladies stood on every side,
Which, with their presence fayre, the place much
beautifide.

viii.

High above all a cloth of state was spred,
And a rich throne, as bright as sunny day ;
On which there sate, most brave embellished
With royall robes and gorgeous array,
A mayden Queene that shone, as Titans ray,
In glistring gold and perelesse pretious stone ;
Yet her bright blazing beantie did assay
To dim the brightnesse of her glorious throne,
As envying her selfe, that too exceeding shone :

ix.

Exceeding shone, like Phœbus fayrest childe,
That did presume his fathers fyrie wayne,
And flaming mouthes of steedes unwonted wilde,
Through highest heaven with weaker hand to
rayne ;
Proud of such glory and advancement vayne,
While flashing beames do daze his feeble eyen,

vr. 3. ——— hight] *Hight* and *behight* may be found in Chaucer as signifying to *promise*. Possibly from this usage of the word, Spenser, with a little latitude, here applied the sense of *entrusted* to it. *Tonn.*

He leaves the welkin way most beaten playne,
And, rapt with whirling wheelles, inflames the
skyen
With fire not made to burne, hut fayrely for to
shyne.

x.

So proud she shyned in her princely state,
Looking to heaven ; for earth she did disdainye :
And sitting high ; for lowly she did hate :
Lo, underneath her scornfull feete was layne
A dreadfull Dragon with an hideous trayne ;
And in her hand she held a mirrhour bright,
Wherein her face she often vewed fayne,
And in her selfe-lov'd semblance took delight ;
For she was wondrous faire, as any living wight.

xi.

Of griesly Pluto she the daughter was,
And sad Proserpina, the queene of hell ;
Yet did she thinke her pearlesse worth to pas
That parentage, with pride so did she swell ;
And thundring Iove, that high in heaven doth
dwell
And wield the world, she claymed for her syre ;
Or if that any else did love excell ;
For to the highest she did still aspyre ;
Or, if ought higher were then that, did it desyre.

xii.

And proud Lucifera men did her call,
That made her selfe a Queene, and crownd to
be ;
Yet rightfull kingdome she had none at all,
Ne heritage of native soveraintie ;
But did usurpe with wrong and tyrannie
Upon the scepter, which she now did hold :
Ne ruld her realme with lawes, but pollicie,
And strong advizement of six Wisards old,
That with their counsels bad her kingdome did up-
hold.

xiii.

Soone as the Elfin Knight in presence came,
And false Dnessa, seeming Lady fayre,
A gentle husher, Vanitie by name,
Made rowme, and passage for them did pre-
paire :
So goodly brought them to the lowest stayre
Of her high throne ; where they, on humble
knee
Making obeysaunce, did the cause declare,
Why they were come, her roiall state to see,
To prove the wide report of her great maiestee.

xiv.

With loftie eyes, halfe loth to looke so lowe,
She thaneked them in her disdainfull wise ;
Ne other grace vouchsafed them to shewe
Of princess worthy ; scarce them bad arise.
Her Lordes and Ladies all this white devise
Themselves to setten forth to straungers sight :
Some frounce their curled heare in courtly guise ;
Some pranke their ruffes ; and others trimly
dight
Their gay attyre : each others greater pride does
spight.

xv.

Goodly they all that Knight doe entertayne,
Right glad with him to have increast their crew ;
But to Dness' each one himselfe did payne
All kindnesse and fair courtesie to shew ;

For in that court whylome her well they knew:
Yet the stout Faery mongst the middist crowd
Thought all their glorie vaine in knightly vew,
And that great Princesse too exceeding proud,
That to strange Knight no better countenance
allowd.

xvi.

Suddein upriseth from her stately place
The roiall Dame, and for her coche doth call:
All hurten forth; and she, with princely pace,
As faire Aurora, in her purple pall,
Out of the east the dawning day doth call, [blaze.
So forth she comes; her brightnes brode doth
The heapes of people, thronging in the hall,
Doe ride each other, upon her to gaze:
Her glorious glitter and light doth all mens eies
amaze.

xvii.

So forth she comes, and to her coche does clyme,
Adorned all with gold and girlonds gay,
That seemd as fresh as Flora in her prime;
And strove to match, in roiall rich array,
Great Iunoes golden chayre; the which, they say,
The gods stand gazing on, when she does ride
To Loves high hous through heavens bras-paved
way,

Drawne of fayre pecocks, that excell in pride,
And full of Argus eyes their tayles dispredden wide.

xviii.

But this was drawne of six unequal beasts,
On which her six sage counsellours did ryde,
Taught to obey their bestiall behests,
With like conditions to their kindes applyde:
Of which the first, that all the rest did guyde,
Was sluggish Idlenesse, the nourse of sin;
Upon a sleuthful asse he chose to ryde,
Arayd in habit blacke, and amis thin;
Like to an holy monck, the service to begin.

xix.

And in his hand his portesse still he bare,
That much was worne, but thereiñ little redd;
For of devotion he had little care,
Still drown'd in sleepe, and mest of his daies dedd:
Scarse could he once uphold his heavie hedd,
To looken whether it were night or day.
May seeme the wayne was very evil ledd,
When such an one had guiding of the way,
That knew not, whether right he went or else astray.

xx.

From worldly cares himselfe he did esloyne,
And greatly shunned manly exercise;
From everie worke he chalenged essayne,
For contemplation sake: yet otherwise
His life he led in lawlesse riotise;

xvi. 3. *All hurten forth;*] *All rush forth, push forward.*
TODD.

xviii. 2. *On which her six sage counsellours did ryde,*] The moral allegory hints at the Seven deadly Sins, as they are called. The chief of all is Pride. She with her six sage counsellours make up the number. UPTON.

xix. 1. — his portesse] *Breviary or prayer-book;* so named from *porter* and *hose*, because carried about with them in their pockets or *hose*. UPTON.

xx. 1. — did esloyne,] *Withdraw.* A Gallicism. TODD.

xx. 3. — he chalenged essayne,] *Excuse.* This is a law phrase. TODD.

By which he grew to grievous malady:
For in his lustlesse limbs, through evil guise,
A shaking fever raignd continually:
Such one was Idlenesse, first of this company.

xxi.

And by his side rode loathsome Gluttony,
Deformed creature, on a filthie swyne;
His belly was upblowne with luxury,
And eke with fatnesse swollen were his eyne;
And like a crane his necke was long and fyne,
With which he swallowed up excessive feast,
For want whereof poore people oft did pyne:
And all the way, most like a brutish beast,
He spued up his gorge, that all did him deteast.

xxii.

In greene vine leaves he was right fitly clad;
For other clothes he could not wear for heate:
And on his head an yvie girdland had,
From under which fast trickled downe the sweat
Still as he rode, he somewhat still did eat,
And in his hand did beare a bouzing can,
Of which he supt so oft, that on his seat
His dronken corse he scarce upholden can:
In shape and life more like a monster then a man

xxiii.

Unfit he was for any worldly thing,
And eke unhable once to stirre or go;
Not meet to be of counsell to a king,
Whose mind in meat and drinke was drowned so,
That from his frend he seeldome knew his fo:
Full of diseases was his carcas blew,
And a dry dropsie through his flesh did flow,
Which by misdiet daily greater grew:
Such one was Gluttony, the second of that crew.

xxiv.

And next to him rode lustfull Lechery
Upon a bearded gote, whose rugged heare,
And whally eies, (the signe of gelyosy)
Was like the person selfe, whom he did beare:
Who rough, and blacke, and filthy, did appeare;
Unseemely man to please faire Ladies eye:
Yet he of Ladies oft was loved deare,
When fairer faces were bid standen by:
O who does know the bent of womens fantasy!

xxv.

In a greene gowne he clothed was full faire,
Which underneath did hide his filthinesse;
And in his hand a burning hart he bare,
Full of vaine follies and new-fanglenesse;
Fer he was false, and fraught with ficklenesse;
And learned had to love with secret lookes;
And well could daunce; and sing with rueful-
nesse:
And fortunes tell; and read in loving bookes:
And thousand other waies, to bait his fleshy hookes.

xxvi.

Inconstant man, that loved all he saw,
And lusted after all, that he did love;

xx. 7. — his lustlesse limbs,] *His languid limbs.*
TODD.

xxi. 5. — long and fyne,] *Thin, taper.* Fr. *fin*.
CHURCH.

xxi. 9. — his gorge,] *Gorge*, Fr. the throat. Here it means that which was swallowed. TODD.

xxii. 6. — a bouzing can,] *A drinking can.* TODD.

Ne would his looser life be tide to law,
But ioyed weake wemens hearts to tempt, and
 prove,
If from their loyall loves he might them move :
Which lewdnes fild him with reproachfull pain
Of that foule evill, which all men reprove,
That rotts the marrow, and consumes the braine :
Such one was Lechery, the third of all this traine.

xxvii.

And greedy Avarice by him did ride,
Upon a camell loaden all with gold :
Two iron coffers hong on either side,
With precious metall full as they might hold ;
And in his lap an heap of coine he told :
For of his wicked self his god he made,
And unto hell him selfe for money sold :
Accursed usury was all his trade ;
And right and wrong ylike in equal ballaunce
 waide.

xxviii.

His life was nigh unto deaths dore yplaste ;
And thred-bare cote, and cobled shoes, hee ware :
Ne scarce good morsell all his life did taste ;
But both from backe and belly still did spare,
To fill his bags, and richesse to compare :
Yet childe ne kinsman living had he none
To leave them to ; but thorough daily care
To get, and nightly feare to lose his owne,
He led a wretched life, unto himselfe unknowne.

xxix.

Most wretched wight, whom nothing might suffice ;
Whose greedy lust did lacke in greatest store ;
Whose need had end, but no end covetise ;
Whose welth was want ; whose plenty made him
 pore ;
Who had enough, yett wished ever more ;
A vile disease : and eke in foote and hand
A grievous gout tormented him full sore ;
That well he could not touch, nor goe, nor stand :
Such one was Avarice, the fourth of this faire
 band !

xxx.

And next to him malicious Envy rode
Upon a ravenous wolfe, and still did chaw
Between his cankred teeth a venomous tode,
That all the poison ran about his claw ;
But inwardly he chawed his owne maw
At neighbors welth, that made him ever sad ;
For death it was, when any good he saw ;
And wept, that cause of weeping none he had ;
But, when he heard of harme, he wexed wondrous
 glad.

xxxi.

All in a kirtle of discoloured say
He clothed was, ypainted full of eies ;
And in his bosome secretly there lay
An hatefull snake, the which his taile nptyes
In many folds, and mortal sting implies :
Still as he rode, he gnasht his teeth to see
Those heapes of gold with griple Covetyse ;
And grudged at the great felicitie
Of proud Lucifera, and his owne companee.

xxviii. 5. ———richesse to compare :] *Procure*. Lat.
Comparare divitias. JORTIN.

xxxi. 7. ———griple Covetyse ;] i. e. *tenacious* : it comes
from *gripan*, to *gripe*. URTON.

xxxii.

He hated all good workes and vertuous deeds,
And him no lesse, that any like did use ;
And, who with gratiuous bread the hungry feeds,
His almes for want of faith he doth accuse ;
So every good to bad he doth abuse ;
And eke the verse of famous poets witt
He does backebite, and spightfull poison spones
From leprous mouth on all that ever writ :
Such one vile Envy was, that fift in row did sitt.

xxxiii.

And him beside rides fierce revenging Wrath,
Upon a lion, loth for to be led ;
And in his hand a burning brond he hath,
The which he brandisheth about his hed :
His eies did hurle forth sparcles fiery red,
And stared sterne on all that him beheld ;
As ashes pale of hew, and seeming ded ;
And on his dagger still his hand he held,
Trembling through hasty rage, when choler in him
 sweld.

xxxiv.

His ruffin raiment all was staid with blood
Which he had spilt, and all to rags yrent ;
Through unadvised rashnes woxen wood ;
For of his hands he had no government,
Ne car'd for blood in his avengement :
But, when the furious fit was overpast,
His cruel facts he often would repent ;
Yet, wilfull man, he never would forecast,
How many mischieves should ensue his heedlesse
 hast.

xxxv.

Full many mischieves follow cruell Wrath ;
Abhorred Bloodshed, and tumultuous Strife,
Unmaunly Murder, and unthrifty Scath,
Bitter Despight with Rancours rusty knife ;
And fretting Griefe, the enemy of life :
All these, and many evils moe haunt Ire,
The swelling Splene, and Frenzy raging rife,
The shaking Palsey, and Saint Francaes fire :
Such one was Wrath, the last of this ungodly tire.

xxxvi.

And, after all, upon the wagon beame
Rode Sathan with a smarting whip in hand,
With which he forward lasht the laesy teme,
So oft as Slowth still in the mire did stand.
Huge routs of people did about them band,
Showing for joy ; and still before their way
A foggy mist had covered all the land ;
And, underneath their feet, all scattered lay
Dead skulls and bones of men, whose life had gone
 astray.

xxxvii.

So furth they marchen in this goodly sort,
To take the solace of the open aire,

xxxiv. 1. *His ruffin raiment*] Mr. Church here observes,
that *ruffin* is *reddish*, from the Lat. *rufus*. I suspect,
however, that the poet did not intend to specify the *colour*
of the dress, but rather to give a very characteristic
expression even to the raiment of Wrath. *Ruffin*, so spellt,
denotet a *swashbuckler*, or, as we should now say, a
bully. TODD.

xxxiv. 3. ——— *woxen wood* ;] *Mad*. Anglo-Sax. *wood*.
TODD.

xxxv. 3. ——— *unthrifty Scath*,] Indiscreet mischief,
says Mr. Church. TODD.

And in fresh flowring fields themselves to sport :
 Amongst the rest rode that false Lady faive,
 The foul Duessa, next unto the chaire
 Of proud Lucifer, as one of the traine :
 But that good Knight would not so nigh repaire,
 Him selfe estraunging from their ioyance vaine,
 Whose fellowship seemd far unfit for warlike
 swaine.

xxxviii.

So, having solaced themselves a space
 With pleasance of the breathing fields yfed,
 They backe returned to the princely place ;
 Whereas an errant Knight in armes yeled,
 And heathnish shield, wherein with letters red
 Was writt *Sans ioy*, they new arrived find :
 Enflam'd with fury and fiers hardyhed,
 He seemd in hart to harbour thoughts unkind,
 And nourish bloody vengeance in his bitter mind.

xxxix.

Who, when the shamed shield of slaine Sansfoy
 He spide with that same Fary champions page,
 Bewraying him that did of late destroy
 His eldest brother ; burning all with rage,
 He to him lept, and that same envious gage
 Of victors glory from him snatcht away :
 But th' Elfin Knight, which ought that warlike
 wage,
 Disdaind to loose the meed he wonne in fray ;
 And, him rencountring fierce, reskewd the noble
 pray.

xl.

Therewith they gan to hurtlen greedily,
 Redoubted battaile ready to darrayne,
 And clash their shields, and shake their swards
 on hy ; [traine :
 That with their sturre they troubled all the
 Till that great Queene, upon eternal paine
 Of high displeasure that ensewen might,
 Commaunded them their fury to refraine ;
 And, if that either to that shield had right,
 In equal lists they should the morrow next it
 fight.

xli.

" Ah dearest Dame," quoth then the Paynim bold,
 " Pardon the error of enraged wight, [hold
 Whome great griefe made forgett the raines to
 Of reasons rule, to see this recreant Knight,
 (No Knight, but treachour full of false despight
 And shameful treason,) who through guile hath
 slayn
 The prouest Knight, that ever field did fight,
 Even stont Sansfoy, (O who can then refrayn ?)
 Whose shield he beares renverst, the more to heap
 disdayn.

xxxix. 7. — which ought that warlike wage,] That is, which owed; which was the proper owner, or possessor of. UPTON.

xl. 2. Redoubted battaile ready to darrayne,] This word seems to be derived from the French *arranger*; so that, to darrayne battaile, is to set the battle in array. T. WARTON.

xli. 4. — recreant Knight,] This ignominious phrase often occurs in romance. It not only means one who yields himself to his enemy in single combat, but a coward and a traitor. TODD.

xli. 7. The prouest Knight,] The most valiant Knight. TODD.

xli. 9. Whose shield he beares renverst,] Reversed. UPTON.

xliv.

" And, to augment the glorie of his guile,
 His dearest love, the faire Fidessa, loe
 Is there possessed of the traytour vile ;
 Who reapes the harvest sowed by his foe,
 Sown in bloodie field, and bought with woe :
 That—brothers hand shall dearly well requight,
 So be, O Queene, you equall favour shoue."
 Him litle answerd th' angry Elfin Knight ;
 He never meant with words, but swards, to plead
 his right :

xlv.

But threw his gauntlet, as a sacred pledg,
 His cause in combat the next day to ry :
 So been they parted both, with harts on edge
 To be aveng'd each on his enemy.
 That night they pas in ioy and lollity,
 Feasting and courting both in bowre and hall ;
 For steward was excessive Gluttony,
 That of his plenty poured forth to all :
 Which doen, the chamberlain Slowth did to rest
 them call.

xlvi.

Now whenas darksome Night had all displayd
 Her coleblacke curtein over brightest skye ;
 The warlike youthes, on dayntie couches layd,
 Did chace away sweet sleepe from sluggish eye,
 To muse on meanes of hoped victory.
 But whenas Morpheus had with leaden mace
 Arrested all that courtly company,
 Uprose Duessa from her resting place,
 And to the Paynims lodging comes with silent
 pace :

xlvii.

Whom broad awake she findes, in troublous fitt,
 Fore-casting, how his foe he might annoy ;
 And him amoves with speeches seeming fitt,
 " Ah deare Sansfoy, next dearest to Sansfoy,
 Cause of my new griefe, cause of my new ioy ;
 Ioyous, to see his ymage in mine eye,
 And greedy, to thinke how foe did him destroy
 That was the flowre of grace and chevalrye ;
 Lo, his Fidessa, to thy secret faith I flye."

xlviii.

With gentle wordes he can her fayrely greet,
 And bad say on the secrete of her hart :
 Then, sighing soft ; " I learne that litle sweet
 Oft tempred is," quoth she, " with muchell
 smart :
 For, since my brest was launcht with lovely dart
 Of deare Sansfoy, I never ioyed howre,
 But in eternal woes my weaker hart
 Have wasted, loving him with all my powre,
 And for his sake have felt full many an heavy
 stovre.

xlviii.

" At last, when perils all I weened past,
 And hop'd to reape the crop of all my care,
 Into new woes unweeting I was cast
 By this false faytor, who unworthie ware
 His worthie shield, whom he with guilefull snare
 Entrapp'd slew, and brought to shameful
 grave :

xlv. 1. — he can] *Began*. TODD.

xlv. 4. muchell smart:] The adjective *mochel*, from the Sax. *mochel*, *moche*, that is, *much*, is often used by Gower and Chaucer. TODD.

Unweeting of the perillous wandring wayes,
Doth meeete a cruell craftie crocodile,
Which, in false grieffe hyding his harmefull guile,
Doth weepe full sore, and sheddeth tender tears;
The foolish man, that pities all this while
His mournfull plight, is swallowed up unwares;
Forgetfull of his owne, that mindes an others cares.

xix.

So wept Dnessa untill eventyde, [light :
That shyning lampes in Loves high house were
Then forth she rose, ne lenger would abide ;
But comes unto the place, where th' Hethen
Knight,
In slombring swownd nigh voyd of vitall sprignt,
Lay cover'd with enchanted cloud all day :
Whom when she found, as she him left in plight,
To wayle his wofull case she would not stay,
But to the easterne coast of heaven makes speedy
way :

xx.

Where griesly Night, with visage deadly sad,
That Phœbus chearefull face durst never vew,
And in a fonle blacke pitchy mantle clad, [mew ;
She findes forth comming from her darksome
Where she all day did hide her hated hew.
Before the dore her yron claret stood,
Already harnesssed for journey new,
And cole-blacke steedes yborne of hellish brood,
That on their rusty bits did champ, as they were
wood.

xxi.

Who when she saw Dnessa, sunny bright,
Adorn with gold and jewels shining cleare,
She greatly grew amazed at the sight,
And th' unacquainted light began to feare ;
(For never did such brightnes there appeare ;)
And would have backe retyred to her cave,
Untill the Witches speach she gan to heare,
Saying ; " Yet, O thou dreaded Dame, I crave
Abye, till I have told the message which I have."

xxii.

She staid ; and fourth Dnessa gan proceede
" O Thon, most auncient grandmother of all,
More old than Iove, whom thou at first didst
Or that great house of gods cœlestiall ; [breede,
Which wast begot in Dæmogorgons hall,
And sawst the secrets of the world nmade ;
Why suffredst thou thy Nephewes deare to fall
With Elfin sword, most shamefully betrade ?
Lo, where the stont Sansioy doth sleepe in deadly
shade !

xxiii.

' And, him before, I saw with bitter eyes
The bold Sansioy shrinck underneath his speare ;
And now the pray of fowles in field he lyes,
Nor wayld of friends, nor layd on groning beare,
That whylome was to me too dearely deare.
O ! what of gods then boots it to be borne,
If old Aveugles sonnes so evill heare ?

xx. 4. — her darksome mew ;] *Place of confinement.*
TODD.

xxi. 4. — th' unacquainted light] *The unusual light.*
TODD.

xxii. 7. — thy Nephewes deare] *i. e.* Thy grandchild-
ren : as *nepotes* is used in the Latin language. UPRON.

xxiii. 6. *If old Aveugles sonnes so evill heare ?*] That is,
have so bad a name and character : are so ill spoken of.
UPRON.

Or who shall not great Night's children scorne,
When two of three her Nephews are so fowle for-
lorne !

xxiv.

" Up, then ; up, dreary Dame, of darknes Queene ;
Go, gather up the reliques of thy race ;
Or else goe, them avenge ; and let be seene
That dreaded Night in brightest day hath place,
And can the children of fayre Light deface."
Her feeling speaches some compassion mov'd
In hart, and change in that great mothers face :
Yet pity in her hart was never prov'd
Till then ; for evermore she hated, never lov'd :

xxv.

And said, " Deare daughter, rightly may I rew
The fall of famous children borne of mee,
And good successes, which their foes ensow :
But who can turne the streame of destinee,
Or breake the chayne of strong necessitee,
Which fast is tyde to Loves eternall seat ?
The sonnes of Day he favoureth, I see,
And by my ruines thinkes to make them great :
To make one great by others losse is bad excheat.

xxvi.

" Yet shall they not escape so freely all ;
For some shall pay the price of others guilt :
And he, the man that made Sansioy to fall,
Shall with his owne blood price that he hath spilt
But what art thou, that telst of Nephews kilt ?"
" I, that do seeme not I, Dnessa ame."
Quoth she, " how ever now, in garments gilt
And gorgeous gold arrayd, I to thee came ;
Dnessa I, the daughter of Decept and Shame."

xxvii.

Then, bowing downe her aged backe, she kist
The wicked Witch, saying ; " In that fayre face
The false resemblance of Decept, I wist,
Did closely lurke ; yet so true-seeming grace
It carried, that I scarce in darksome place
Could it discerne ; though I the mother bee
Of Falshood, and roote of Dnessaes race.
O welcome, child, whom I have longd to see,
And now have seene unwares ! Lo, now I go with
thee."

xxviii.

Then to her yron wagon she betakes,
And with her beares the fowle welfavourd Witch :
Through mirkesome aire her ready way she
makes.
Her twyfold teme (of which two blacke as pitch,
And two were browne, yet each to each unlich),
Did softly swim away, ne ever stamp
Unlesse she chaunst their stubborne mouths to
twitche ;
Then, foming tarre, their bridles they would
champ,
And trampling the fine element would fiercely ramp.

xv. 9. — *is bad excheat.*] *Excheat* or *esc' eat* (Fr.
escheute or *eschoëtte*) is a law term, and signifies any lands
or profits that fall to a lord within his manor by forfeiture,
&c. CHURCH.

xxvi. 4. *Shall with his owne blood price*] *Price* is here
used as a verb, *to pay the price of.* CHURCH.

xxviii. 3. *Through mirkesome aire*] *Mirkness* is dark-
ness, and *mirk* is dark. TODD.

xxviii. 8. *Then, foming tarre,*] *Then foming* what
resembld tarre—Then as it were foming forth tarre.
UPRON.

xxix.
So well they sped, that they be come at length
Unto the place, whereas the Paynim lay
Devoid of outward sence and native strength,
Coverd with charmed cloud from vew of day
And sight of men, since his late luckelesse fray.
His cruell wounds with cruddy bloud congeald
They binden up so wisely as they may,
And handle softly, till they can be heald:
So lay him in her charett, close in night conceald.

xxx.
And, all the while she stood upon the ground,
The wakeful dogs did never cease to bay;
As giving warning of th' unwented sound,
With which her yron wheelcs did them affray,
And her darke griesly looke them much dismay.
The messenger of death, the ghastly owle,
With drery shriekes did also her bewray;
And hungry wolves continually did howle
At her abhorred face, so filthy and so fowle.

xxxii.
Thence turning backe in silence softc they stole,
And brought the heavy corse with easy pace
To yawning gulfe of deepe Avernus hole:
By that same hole an entraince, darke and bace,
With smoake and sulphur hiding all the place,
Descends to hell: there creature never past,
That backe retourned without heavenly grace;
But dreadfull Furies, which their chaines have
brast,
And damned Sprights sent forth to make ill men
aghast.

xxxiii.
By that same way the direfull Dames doe drive
Their mournfull charett, fild with rusty blood,
And downe to Plutoes house are come bilive:
Which passing through, on every side them stoed
The trembling ghosts with sad amazed mood,
Chattering their iron teeth, and staring wide
With stonie eyes; and all the hellish brood
Of feends infernall flockt on every side,
To gaze on earthly wight, that with the Night durst
ride.

xxxiiii.
They pas the bitter waves of Acheron,
Where many soules sit wailing woefully;
And come to fiery flood of Phlegeton,
Whereas the damned ghosts in torment fry,
And with sharp shrilling shriekes doe bootlesse
cry,
Cursing high Iove, the which them thither sent.
The House of endlesse Paine is built thereby,
In which ten thousand sorts of punishment
The cursed creatures dee eternally torment.

xxxv.
Before the threshold dreadfull Cerberus
His three deformed heads did lay along,
Curled with thousand adders venomous;
And lilled ferth his bloody flaming tong:
At them he gan to reare his bristles strong,
And felly gnarre, untill Dayes enemy

xxxii. 4. — darke and bace.] Low. Todd.
xxxiv. 4. And lilled.] Lotted. Upton.
xxxiv. 6. And felly gnarre.] Chaucer uses gnarring,
in a general sense, for snarling, quarrelling. Todd.

Did him appease; then downe his taile he hong,
And sufferd them to passen quietly:
For she in hell and heaven had power equally.

xxxvi.
There was Ixion turned on a wheele,
For daring tempt the queene of heaven to sin;
And Sisyphus an huge round stone did reele
Against an hill, ne might from labour lin;
There thristy Tantalus hong by the chin;
And Tityus fed a vultur on his maw;
Typhous ioynets were stretched on a gin;
Theseus condemnd to endlesse slouth by law;
And fifty sisters water in leke vessels draw.

xxxvii.
They, all beholding worldly wights in place,
Leave off their worke, unminndfull of their smart,
To gaze on them; who forth by them doe pace,
Till they be come unto the furthest part;
Where was a cave ywrought by wondrous art,
Deepe, darke, uneasy, dolefull, comforgesse,
In which sad Aesculapius far apart
Emprisond was in chaines remedlesse;
For that Hippolytus rent eorse he did redresse.

xxxviii.
Hippolytus a iolly huntsman was,
That went in charett chase the foming bore:
He all his peeres in beauty did surpas;
But ladies love, as losse of time, forbore:
His wanton stepdame loved him the more;
But, when she saw her offred sweets refusd,
Her love she turnd to hate, and him before
His father fierce of treason false accusd,
And with her gealous termes his open eares abusd:

xxxix.
Who, all in rage, his sea-god syre besought
Some cursed vengeance on his sonne to cast:
From surging gulf two monsters streight were
brought;
With dread whereof his chasing steedes aghast
Both charett swifte and huntsman overcast.
His goodly corps, on ragged cliffs yrent,
Was quite dismembred, and his members ecast
Scattered on every mountaine as he went,
That of Hippolytus was lefte no monument.

xl.
His cruell step-dame, seeing what was denne,
Her wicked daies with wretched knife did end,
In death avowing th' innocence of her sonne.
Which hearing, his rash syre began to rend
His heare, and hasty tong that did offend:
Tho, gathering up the reliques of his smart,
By Dianes meanes who was Hippolyts friend,
Them brought to Aesculape, that by his art
Did heale them all againe, and ioyned every part.

xli.
Such wondrous science in mans witt to rain
When Iove avizd, that could the dead revive,

xxxv. 9. — [leke] That is, leaky. Church.
xxxvi. 1. — in place.] Generally used for there.
but, in F. Q. vi. i. 28, I think it is used for here. Church.
xxxvi. 9. — he did redresse.] Put together again.
Fr. redresser. Church.
xxxix. 2. Her wicked daies with wretched knife did end.]
As knife is derived from *ξίφος* and used by our old poets in
that sense, it means, dagger or poniard. Upton.

And fates expired could renew again,
Of endlesse life he might him not deprive ;
But unto hell did thrust him downe alive,
With flashing thunderbolt ywounded sore :
Where, long remaining, he did alwaies strive
Himselfe with salves to health for to restore,
And slake the heavenly fire that raged evermore.

xli.

There auncient Night arriving, did alight
From her nigh-weary wayne, and in her armes,
To Aescnapius brought the wounded Knight :
Whom having softly disaraid of armes,
Tho gan to him discover all his harmes,
Beseeching him with prayer, and with praise,
If either salves, or oyles, or herbes, or charmes,
A fordonne wight from dore of death mote raise,
He would at her request prolong her Nephews
daies.

xlii.

"Al! Dame," quoth he, "thou temptest me in vaine
To dare the thing, which daily yet I rew ;
And the old cause of my continued paine
With like attempt to like end to renew.
Is not enough, that, thrust from heaven dew,
Here endlesse penance for one fault I pay ;
But that redoubled crime with vengeance new
Thou biddest me to ecke ? can Night defray
The wrath of thundering Love, that rules both Night
and Day ?"

xliii.

"Not so," quoth she ; "but, sith that heavens King
From hope of heaven hath thee excluded quight,
Why fearest thou, that canst not hope for thing ;
And fearest not that more thee hurten might,
Now in the powre of everlasting Night ?
Goe to then, O thou far renowned sonne
Of great Apollo, shew thy famous sight
In medicine, that els hath to thee wonne
Great pains, and greater praise, both never to be
donne."

xliv.

Her words prevaild : And then the learned leach
His cunning hand gan to his wounds to lay,
And all things els, the which his art did teach :
Which having seene, from thence arose away
The Mother of dredd darknesse, and let stay
Aveugles sonne there in the leaches cure ;
And, backe retourning, took her wonted way
To ronne her timely race, whilst Phoebus pure
In westerne waves his weary wagon did recure.

xlv.

The faine Dnessa, leaving noyous Night,
Returnd to stately pallace of Dame Pryde :
Where when she came, she found the Faery
Knight
Departed thence ; albee (his woundes wyde
Not thoroughly heald) unready were to ryde.
Good cause he had to hasten thence away ;
For on a day his wary Dwarfie had spyde
Where, in a dungeon deepe, huge numbers lay
Of caytive wretched thralls, that wayled night and
day ;

xlii. 8. *Thou biddest me to ecke?*] *Encrease.* To add
nto. TODD.

xliv. 9. ——— *did recure.*] *Recover from their fatigue.*
n general, simply, *recovered.* UPTON.

xlv. 9. *Of caytive wretched thralls,*] *Caytive, base.*
CHURCH.

xlii.

(A ruefull sight as could be seene with cie ;)
Of whom he learned had in secret wise
The hidden cause of their captivtie ;
How mortgaging their lives to Covetise,
Through wastfull pride and wanton riotise,
They were by law of that proud tyrannesse,
Provokt with Wrath and Envyes false surmise,
Condemned to that dungeon mercilesse,
Where they should live in wo, and dye in wretched-
nesse.

xlviii.

There was that great proud king of Babylon,
That would compell all nations to adore
And him, as onely God, to call upon ;
Till, through celestiall doome thrown out of dore,
Into an oxe he was transformd of yore.
There also was king Croesus, that enhaunst
His hart too high through his great riches store ;
And proud Antiochus, the which advaunst
His cursed hand gainst God, and on his altares
daunst.

xlviii.

And, them long time before, great Nimrod was,
That first the world with sword and fire war-
And after him old Ninus far did pas [rayd ;
In princely pomp, of all the world obayd.
There also was that mightie monarch layd
Low under all, yet above all in pride,
That name of native syre did fowle upbrayd,
And would as Ammons sonne be magnifide ;
Till, scorn of God and man, a shameful death he
dide.

xlix.

All these together in one heape were throwne,
Like carcases of beastes in butchers stall.
And, in another corner, wide were strowne
The antique ruins of the Romanes fall ;
Great Romulus, the grandsyre of them all ;
Proud Tarquin ; and too lordly Lentulus ;
Stout Scipio ; and stubborn Hanniball ;
Ambitious Sylla ; and sterne Marius ;
High Caesar ; great Pompey ; and fiers Antonius.

L.

Amongst these mightie men were women mixt,
Proud wemen, vaine, forgetfull of their yoke ;
The bold Semiramis, whose sides transfixt
With sonnes own blade her fowle reproches
spoke :
Fayre Sthenobœa, that her selfe did choke
With wilfull chord, for wanting of her will ;
High-minded Cleopatra, that with stroke
Of aspès sting her selfe did stoutly kill :
And thousands moe the like, that did that dungeon
fill.

li.

Besides the endlesse routes of wretched thralles,
Which thether were assembled, day by day,
From all the world, after their wofull falles
Through wicked pride and wasted welthes decay.
But most, of all which in that dungeon lay,
Fell from high princes courtes, or ladies bowres ;
Where they in ydle pomp, or wanton play,
Consumed had their goods and thriflesse
howres, [stowres,
And lastly thrown themselves into these heavy

xlviii. 2. ——— *with sword and fire warrayd ;*] *Made*
war upon. UPTON.

LII.

Whose case whenas the careful Dwarfe had tould,
And made ensample of their mournfull sight
Unto his Maister; he no lenger would
There dwell in perill of like painefull plight,
But earely rose; and, ere that dawning light
Discovered had the world to heaven wyde,
He by a privy posterne tooke his flight,
That of no envious eyes he mote be spyde:
For, doubtlesse, death ensewd if any him descryde.

LIII.

Scarse could he footing find in that fowle way,
For many corses, like a great lay-stall,
Of murthered men, which therein strowed lay
Without remorse or decent funeral; which,
Which, al through that great Princesse Pride,
did fall,
And came to shamefull end: And them besyde,
Forth ryding underneath the castell wall,
A donghill of dead carcasses he spyde;
The dreadfull spectacle of that sad House of
Pryde.

CANTO VI.

From lawlesse lust by wondrous grace
Fayre Una is releas'd;
Whom salvage nation does adore,
And learns her wise behest.

I.

As when a ship, that flies fayre under sayie,
An hidden rocke escaped hath unwares,
That lay in waite her wrack for to bewaile;
The mariner yet halfe amazed stares
At perill past, and yet in doubt ne dares
To ioy at his foolhappie oversight:
So doubly is distrest twixt ioy and cares
The dreadlesse corage of this Elfin Knight,
Having escapt so sad ensamples in his sight.

II.

Yet sad he was, that his too hastie speed
The fayre Duess' had forst him leave behind;
And yet more sad, that Una, his deare Dreed,
Her truth had staynd with treason so unkind;
Yet eryme in her could never creature find:
But for his love, and for her own selfe sake,
She wandred had from one to other Ynd,
Him for to seeke, ne ever would forsake;
Till her unwares the fiers Sanaloy did overtake:

III.

Who, after Arehimagoes fowle defeat,
Led her away into a forest wilde;
And, turning wrathfull fyre to lustfull heat,
With beastly sin thought her to have defilde,
And made the vassall of his pleasures vilde.
Yet first he cast by treatie, and by traynes,

LII. 1. — the careful Dwarfe] The sorrowful Dwarf. CRURCH.

LIII. 2. — a great lay-stall.] A place to lay dung or rubbish in. TODD.

I. 3. That lay in waite her wrack for to bewaile:] To bewaile, means not to lament her wrack; but, in old English, to waite or to bewail, means to make choice of, to select. UPRON.

III. 6. Yet first he cast] Contrived. Repeatedly used in this sense by Spenser. TOON.

Her to persuade that stubborne fort to yilde:
For greater conquest of hard love he gaynes,
That workes it to his will, then he that it con-
straines.

IV.

With fawning wordes he courted her a while;
And, looking lovely and oft sighing sore,
Her constant hart did tempt with diverse guile:
But wordes, and lookes, and sighes she did
abhore;
As rock of diamond stedfast evermore.
Yet, for to feed his fyrie lustfull eye,
He snatcht the vele that hong her face before:
Then gan her beautie shyne as brightest skye,
And burnt his beastly hart t'enforce her chastitye.

V.

So when he saw his flatt'ring artes to fayle,
And subtle engines bett from batteree;
With greedy force he gan the fort assayle,
Whereof he weend possessed soone to bee,
And win rich spoile of ransackt chastitee.
Ah heavens! that doe this hideous act behold,
And heavenly Virgin thus outraged see,
How can ye vengeance iust so long withhold,
And hurle not flashing flames upon that Paynim
bold!

VI.

The pitteous Mayden, carefull, comfортlesse,
Does throw out thrilling shriekes, and shrieking
eyes;
(The last vaine helpe of wemens greate distresse,)
And with loud plaintes impörtuneth the skyes;
That molten starres doe drop like weeping eyes;
And Phœbus, flying so most shameful sight,
His blushing face in foggy cloud implyes,
And hydes for shame. What witt of mortall
wight

Can now devise to quitt a thrall from such a plight?

VII.

Eternall Providence, exceeding thought,
Where none appears can make her selfe a way!
A wondrous way it for this Lady wrought,
From Lyons claws to pluck the gryped pray.
Her shrill outeryes and shrieks so loud did bray,
That all the woodes and forestes did resound:
A troupe of Faunes and Satyres far away
Within the wood were dauncing in a rownd,
Whiles old Sylvanus slept in shady arber sownd:

VIII.

Who, when they heard that pitteous strained voice,
In haste forsooke their rural meriment,
And ran towards the far rebownded noyce,
To weet what wight so loudly did lament.
Unto the place they come incontinent;
Whom when the raging Sarazin espyde,
A rude, mishapen, monstrous rablement,

VI. 7. — implyes,] *Invelopes*, hides. CHURCH.

VII. 1. *Eternall Providence*, exceeding thought,
Where none appears can make her selfe a way!] *Exceeding thought*, i. e. which passeth all understanding.

Can make—i. e. knows how to make herself a way. UPRON.

VII. 8. — dauncing in a rownd,] *The name of a dance*. TODD.

VIII. 5. — they come incontinent:] *Instantly*. Used as an adverb for *incontinently*. CHURCH.

VIII. 7. — monstrous rablement,] *Rablement*, a crowd, was commonly used in a contemptuous manner. TOON.

Whose like he never saw, he durst not byde ;
But got his ready steed, and fast away gan ryde .

ix.

The wyld woodgods, arrived in the place,
There find the Virgin, doofull, desolate,
With ruffled rayments, and fayre blubbred face,
As her outrageous foe had left her late ;
And trembling yet through feare of former hate :
All stand amazed at so uncouth sight,
And gin to pittie her unhappie state ;
All stand astonied at her beautie bright,
In their rude eyes unworthy of so wofull plight .

x.

She, more amazd, in double dread doth dwell ;
And every tender part for feare does shake .
As when a greedy wolfe, through hunger fell,
A seely lamb far from the flock does take,
Of whom he meanes his bloody feast to make,
A lyon spyes fast running towards him,
The innocent pray in hast he does forsake ;
Which, quitt from death, yet quakes in every
lim
With change of feare, to see the lyon looke so
grim .

xi.

Such fearefull fitt assaid her trembling hart ;
Ne word to speake, ne ioynt to move, she had :
The salvage nation feele her secret smart,
And read her sorrow in her count'nance sad ;
Their frowning forheads, with rough hornes yelad
And rustick horror, all asyde doe lay ;
And, gently grenning, shew a semblance glad
To comfort her ; and, feare to put away,
Their backward-beut knees teach her humbly to
obay .

xii.

The doubtfull Damzell dare not yet committ
Her single person to their barbarous truth ;
But still twixt feare and hope amazd does sitt,
Late learn'd what harme to hasty trust ensu'th :
They, in compassion of her tender youth
And wonder of her beautie soverayne,
Are wonne with pity and unwonted ruth ;
And, all prostrate upon the lowly playne,
Doc kisse her feete, and fawne on her with count'-
nance fayne .

xiii.

Their harts she ghesseth by their humble guise,
And yields her to extremitie of time :
So from the ground she fearelesse doth arise,
And walketh forth without suspect of crime :
They, all as glad as birdes of ioyous pryme,
Theuce lead her forth, about her dauncing round,
Shouting, and singing all a shepherds ryme ;
And, with greene branches strowing all the
ground,
Do worship her as queene with olive girlond cround .

xiv.

And all the way their merry pipes they sound,
That all the woods with doubled eccbo ring ;

xii. 1. *The doubtfull]* *Fearful.* CHURCH.

xii. 2. — *their barbarous truth ;]* *Their uncivilized*
sincerity. CHURCH.

xiii. 4. — *without suspect of crime ;]* That is, hav-
ing no apprehensions of being reproached, if she should
be seen in such company. CHURCH.

And with their horned feet doe weare the ground,
Leaping like wanton kids in pleasant Spring.
So towards old Sylvanus they her bring ;
Who, with the noyse awaked, commeth out
To weet the cause, his weake steps governing
And aged limbs on cypresse stadle stout ;
And with an yvie twyne his waste is girt about .

xv.

Far off he wonders what them makes so glad,
Or Bacchus merry fruit they did invent,
Or Cybeles franticke rites have made them mad
They, drawing nigh, unto their god present
That floure of fayth and beautie excellent :
The god himselfe, vewing that mirrhour rare,
Stood long amazd, and burnt in his intent :
His own fayre Dryope now he thinkes not faire,
And Pholoë fowle, when her to this he doth com-
paire .

xvi.

The wood-borne people fall before her flat,
And worship her as goddesse of the wood ;
And old Sylvanus selfe bethinkes not, what
To thinke of wight so fayre ; but gazing stood
In doubt to deeme her borne of earthly brood :
Sometimes dame Venus selfe he seemes to see ;
But Venus never had so sober mood :
Sometimes Diana he her takes to be ;
But misseth bow and shaftes, and huskins to her
knee .

xvii.

By vew of her he ginneeth to revive
His ancient love, and dearest Cyparisse ;
And calles to mind his pourtraiture alive,
How fayre he was, and yet not fayre to this ;
And how he slew with glauncing dart amisse
A gentle hynd, the which the lovely hoy
Did love as life, above all worldly blisse :
For grieve whereof the lad n'ould after ioy ;
But pynd away in anguish and selfewild annoy .

xviii.

The woody nymphes, faire Hamadryades,
Her to behold do thether runne apace ;
And all the troupe of light-foot Naiades
Floeke all about to see her lovely face :
But, when they vewed have her heavenly grace,
They envy her in their malicious mind,
And fly away for feare of fowle disgrace :
But all the Satyres scorne their woody kind .
And henceforth nothing faire, but her, on earth
they find .

xix.

Glad of such lucke, the luckelesse lucky Mayd
Did her content to please their feeble eyes ;
And long time with that salvage people stayd,
To gather breath in many miseryes .
During which time her gentle wit she pyles,
To teach them truth, which worship her in
And made her th' Image of Idolatryes : [vaine,
But, when their bootlesse zeale she did re-
strayne
From her own worship, they her asse would wor-
ship fayne .

xiv. 3. — *on cypresse stadle stout ;]* *Stadle,* ac-
cording to Dr. Johnson, is a Saxon word, denoting a
foundation. TOWN.

xvii. 9. — *annoy.]* *Noynance,* hurt. CHURCH.

xx.
It fortun'd, a noble warlike Knight
By iust occasion to that forrest came
To seeke his kindred, and the lignage right,
From whence he tooke his wel-deserved name :
He had in armes abroad wonne muchell faue,
And fild far landes with glorie of his might ;
Plaine, faithfull, true, and enemy of shame,
And ever lov'd to fight for Ladies right :
But in vaine glorious frayes he litle did delight.

xxi.
A Satyres sonne yborne in forrest wyld,
By straunge adventure as it did betyde,
And there begotten of a Lady myld,
Fayre Thyamis the daughter of Labryde ;
That was in sacred bandes of wedlocke tyde
To Therion, a loose unruly swayne,
Who had more ioy to raunge the forrest wyde,
And chase the salvage beast with busie payne,
Then serve his Ladies love, and waste in pleasures
vayne.

xxii.
The forlorne mayd did with loves longing burne,
And could not lacke her lovers company ;
But to the wood she goes, to serve her turne,
And seeke her spouse, that from her still does fly
And follows other game and venery :
A Satyre chaunst her wandring for to finde ;
And, kindling coles of lust in brutish eye,
The loyall linkes of wedlocke did unbinde,
And made her person thrall unto his beastly kind.

xxiii.
So long in secret cabin there he held
Her captive to his sensuall desyre ;
Till that with timely fruit her belly sweld,
And bore a boy unto that salvage syre :
Then home he suffred her for to retyre ;
For ransome leaving him the late-borne childe :
Whom, till to ryper years he gan aspyre,
He noursled up in life and maners wilde,
Emongst wild beastes and woods, from lawes of
men exilde.

xxiv.
For all he taught the tender ymp, was but
To banish cowardize and bastard feare :
His trembling hand he would him force to put
Upon the lyon and the rugged beare ;
And from the she-beares teats her whelps to teare ;
And eke wyld roring buls he would him make
To tame, and ryde their backs not made to
And the robneces in flight to overtake : [beare ;
That everie beast for feare of him did fly and quake.

xxv.
Thereby so fearelesse and so fell he grew,
That his owne syre and maister of his guise

xxi. 8. *And chase the salvage beast with busie payne,*] That is, *diligently* ; with diligent labour. URTON.

xxii. 5. ——— *other game and venery* :] *Venery* is *hunting*, from the French *venerie*, a word often used in romance. TODD.

xxiii. 8. *He noursled*] That is, *nursed up*. TODD.

xxiv. 2. ——— *and bastard feare* :] That is, *mean or contemptible*. TODD.

xxv. 2. ——— *maister of his guise*] That is, who formed him to such manners. CHURCH.

Did often tremble at his horrid vew ;
And oft, for dread of hurt, would him advise
The angry beastes not rashly to despise,
Nor too much to provoke ; for he would learne
The lyon stoup to him in lowly wise,
(A lesson hard,) and make the libbard sterne
Leave roaring, when in rage he for revenge did
earne.

xxvi.
And, for to make his powre approved more,
Wyld beastes in yron yokes he would compell ;
The spotted panther, and the tusked bore,
The pardale swift, and the tigré cruell,
The antelope and wolfe, both fiers and fell ;
And them constraine in equall teme to draw.
Such ioy he had their stubborne harts to quell,
And sturdie courage tame with dreadfull aw ;
That his beheast they feared, as a tyrans law.

xxvii.
His loving mother came upon a day
Unto the woodes, to see her litle sonne ;
And chaunst unwares to meet him in the way,
After his sportes and cruell pastime donne ;
When after him a lyonesse did runne,
That roaring all with rage did lowd requere
Her children deare, whom he away had wonne :
The lyon whelpes she saw how he did beare,
And lull in rugged armes withouten childish feare.

xxviii.
The fearefull dame all quaked at the sight,
And turning backe gan fast to fly away ;
Untill, with love revokt from vaine affright,
She hardly yet perswaded was to stay,
And then to him these womanish words gan say ;
" Ah Satyrane, my dearling and my ioy,
For love of me leave off this dreadful play ;
To dally thus with death is no fit toy :
Go, find some other play-fellows, mine own sweet
boy."

xxix.
In these and like delightes of bloody game
He trayned was, till ryper years he raught ;
And there abode, whylster any beast of name
Walkt in that forrest, whom he had not taught
To feare his force : and then his courage haught
Desyrd of forreine foemen to be knowne,
And far abroad for straunge adventures sought ;
In which his might was never overthrowne ;
But through al Faery lond his famous worth was
blown.

xxx.
Yet evermore it was his maner faire,
After long labours and adventures spent,
Unto those native woods for to repaire,
To see his syre and ofspring auncient.
And now he thether came for like intent ;
Where he unwares the fairest Una found,
Straunge Lady, in so straunge habillment,

xxv. 8. ——— *the libbard*] *Leopard*. CHURCH.

xxvi. 4. *The pardale, &c.*] The panther and pardale are generally thought to be the same : but Xenophon (no bad authority) distinguishes them. URTON.

xxix. 5. ——— *his courage haught*] *High*. Fr. *haut*. TODD.

xxx. 4. *To see his syre and ofspring auncient.*] The construction is, To see his *ancient* sire and his sire's offspring. URTON.

Teaching the Satyres, which her sat around,
Trew sacred lore, which from her sweet lips did
redound.

xxxI.

He wondred at her wisdomed heavenly rare,
Whose like in womens witt he never knew ;
And, when her curteous deeds he did compare,
Gan her admire, and her sad sorrowes rew,
Blaming of Fortune, which such troubles throw,
And ioyd to make prooffe of her crueltie
On gentle Dame, so hurtlesse and so trew :
Theneeforth he kept her goodly company,
And learned her discipline of faith and verity.

xxxII.

But she, all vowd unto the Rederosse Knight,
His wandring perill closely did lament,
Ne in this new acquaintaunce could delight ;
But her deare heart with anguish did torment,
And all her witt in secret counsels spent,
How to escape. At last in privy wise
To Satyrane she shewed her intent ;
Who, glad to gain such favour, gan devise,
How with that pensive Maid he best might thence
arise.

xxxIII.

So on a day, when Satyres all were gone
To do their service to Sylvanus old,
The gentle Virgin, left behinde alone,
He led away with corage stout and bold.
Too late it was to Satyres to be told,
Or ever hope recover her againe :
In vaine he seeks that, having, cannot hold.
So fast he carried her with carefull paine,
That they the woods are past, and come now to the
plaine.

xxxIV.

The better part now of the lingring day
They traveld had, whenas they far espide
A weary wight forwandring by the way ;
And towards him they gan in hast to ride,
To weete of newes that did abroad betyde,
Or tidings of her Knight of the Rederosse ;
But he, them spying, gan to turne aside
For feare, as seemd, or for some feigned losse :
More greedy they of newes fast towards him do
crosse.

xxxv.

A silly man, in simple weeds forworne,
And soild with dust of the long dried way ;
His sandales were with toilsome travell torne,
And face all tand with seorching sunny ray,
As he had traveld many a sommers day
Through boyling sands of Arabie and Ynde ;
And in his hand a Jacobs staffe, to stay
His weary limbs upon ; and eke behind
His serip did hang, in which his needments he did
bind.

xxxvi.

The Knight, approaching nigh, of him inquerd
Tidings of warre, and of adventures new ;
But warres, nor new adventures, none he herd.
Then Una gan to aske, if ought he knew
Or heard abroad of that her Champion trew,
That in his armour bare a croslet red. [rew
"Ay me ! deare Dame," quoth he, "well may I
To tell the sad sight which mine eies have red ;
These eies did see that Knight both living and eke
ded."]

xxxvii.

That cruell word her tender hart so thrid,
That suddain cold did ronne through every
And stony horroure all her senses fild [vaine,
With dying fit, that downe she fell for paine.
The Knight her lightly reared up againe,
And comforted with curteous kind reliefe :
Then, wonne from death, she had him tellen plaine
The further processe of her hidden grieve :
The lesser panges can beare, who hath endur'd the
chief.

xxxviii.

Then gan the Pilgrim thus ; "I chaunst this day,
This fatall day, that shall I ever rew,
To see two Knights, in travell on my way,
(A sory sight,) arraung'd in batteill new,
Both breathing vengeaunce, both of wrathfull hew:
My fearful flesh did tremble at their strife,
To see their blades so greedily imbrew,
That, dronke with blood, yet thirsted after life :
What more ? the Rederosse Knight was slain with
Paynim knife."

xxxix.

"Ah ! dearest Lord," quoth she, "how might that
bee,
And he the stoutest Knight, that ever wonne ?"
"Ah ! dearest Dame," quoth he, "how might I
see [donne ?]
The thing, that might not be, and yet was
"Where is," said Satyrane, "that Paynims
sonne,
That him of life, and us of ioy, hath reffe ?"
"Not far away," quoth he, "he hence doth wonne,
Foreby a fountaine, where I late him left
Washing his bloody wounds, that through the steele
were cleft."

xli.

Therewith the Knight then marched forth in hast,
Whiles Una, with huge heaviness opprest,
Could not for sorrow follow him so fast ;
And soone he came, as he the place had ghest,
Whereas that Pagan proud himselfe did rest
In secret shadow by a fountaine side ;
Even he it was, that earst would have suppress
Faire Una ; whom when Satyrane espide,
With foule reprochfull words he boldly him defide

xlii.

And said ; "Arise, thou cursed miscreaunt,
That hast with knightlesse guile, and trecherous
train, [vaunt
Faire knighthood fowly shamed, and doest
That good Knight of the Rederosse to have slain :
Arise, and with like treason now maintain
Thy guilty wrong, or els thee guilty yield."
The Sarazin, this hearing, rose again,
And, catching up in hast his three-square shield
And shining helmet, soone him buckled to the
field ;

xlii.

And, drawing nigh him, said ; "Ah ! misborn Elfe,
In evill houre thy foes thee hither sent
Anothers wrongs to wreak upon thy selfe :

xxxix. 2. — *that ever wonne?* Here *wonne* means
that ever conquered in battle. The word, rhyming to it,
means *doth dwell*. UPTON.

xxxix. 8. Foreby] In the sense of *by*, signifying *near*
to *To do*

Yet ill thou blamest me, for having blent
My name with guile and traiterous intent :
That Rederosse Knight, perdie, I never slew ;
But had he beene, where earst his armes were
lent, [rew :
Th' Enchaunter vaine his errour should not
But thou his errour shalt, I hope, now proven
trew."

XLIII.

Therewith they gan, both furious and fell,
To thunder blowes, and fierly to assaile
Each other, bent his enemy to quell ;
That with their force they perst both plate and
malle,
And made wide furrowes in their fleshes fraile,
That it would pittie any living eie :
Large floods of blood adowne their sides did raile ;
But floods of blood could not them satisfie :
Both hongred after death ; both chose to win, or
die.

XLIV.

So long they fight, and full revenge pursue,
That, fainting, each themselves to breathe lett ;
And, ofte refreshed, battell oft renue.
As when two bores, with ranciling malice mett,
Their gory sides fresh bleeding fiercely frett ;
Til breathlesse both themselves aside retire,
Where, foming wrath, their cruell tuskes tū zy
whett, [respire ;
And trample th' earth, the whiles they may
Then backe to fight againe, new breathed and
entire.

XLV.

So fierly, when these Knights had breathed once,
They gan to fight retourne ; increasing more
Their puissant force, and cruell rage attouce,
With heaped strokes more hugely then before ;
That with their dreary wounds, and bloody gore,
They both deformed, scarsely could be known.
By this, sad Una fraught with anguish sore,
Led with their noise which through the aire was
thrown,
Arriv'd, wher they in erth their fruitles blood had
sowd.

XLVI.

Whom all so soone as that prond Sarazin
Espide, he gan revive the memory
Of his leud lusts, and late attempted sin ;
And lefte the doubtfull battel hastily,
To catch her, newly offred to his eie :
But Satyrane, with strokes him turning, staid,
And sternely bad him other business plie
Then hunt the steps of pure unspotted Maid :
Wherewith he al enrag'd these bitter speaches
said ;

XLVII.

"O foolish Faeries sonne, what fury mad
Hath thee incenst to hast thy dolefull fate ?
Were it not better I that Lady had
Then that thou hadst repented it too late ?
Most sencelesse man he, that himselfe doth hate
To love another : Lo then, for thine ayd,
Here take thy lovers token on thy pate."
So they to fight ; the whiles the royall Mayd
Fledd farre away, of that proud Paynim sore
afraid.

XLIII. 7. — did raile ;] Flow. UPRON.

XLVIII.

But that false Pilgrim, which that leasing told,
Being in deed old Archimage, did stay
In secret shadow all this to behold ;
And much rejoiced in their bloody fray :
But, when he saw the Damsell passe away,
He left his stond, and her pursewd apace,
In hope to bring her to her last decay.
But for to tell her lamentable cace,
And eke this battels end, will need another place

CANTO VII.

The Rederosse Knight is captive made,
By Gyaunt prond opprest ;
Prince Arthure meets with Una great-
ly with those newes distrest.

I.

WHAT man so wise, what earthly witt so ware,
As to discry the crafty cunning traine,
By which Deceipt doth maske in visour faire,
And cast her colouris died deepe in graine,
To seeme like Truth, whose shape she well car.
And fitting gestures to her purpose frame, [faine,
The guiltlesse man with guile to entertaine ?
Great maistresse of her art was that false
Dame,
The false Duessa, cloked with Fidessaes name.

II.

Who when, returning from the dreary Night,
She found not in that perilous Hous of Pryde,
Where she had left, the noble Rederosse Knight,
Her hoped pray ; she would no lenger hyde,
But forth she went to seeke him far and wide.
Ere long she fownd, whereas he wearie sate
To rest him selfe, fore by a fountaine syde,
Disarmed all of yron-coted plate ;
And by his side his steed the grassy forage ate.

III.

Hee feedes upon the cooling shade, and bayes
His sweatic forehead in the breathing wynd,
Which through the trembling leaves full gently
playes,
Wherein the chearefull birds of sundry kynd
Doe chaunt sweet mnsick, to delight his mynd :
The Witch approaching gan him fayrely greet,
And with reproch of carelesnes unkynd
Upbrayd, for leaving her in place unmeet,
With fowle words temping faire, soure gall with
hony sweet.

IV.

Unkindnesse past, they gan of solace treat,
And bathe in pleasaunce of the ioyous shade,
Which shielded them against the boyling heat,
And, with greene boughes decking a gloomy
glade,
About the fountaine like a girlond made ;
Whose bubbling wave did ever freshly well,
Ne ever would through fervent sommer fade :
The sacred nymph, which therein wont to dwell,
Was out of Dianas favor, as it then befell.

XLVIII. 1. — that leasing] Lying. TODD.

I. 1. — so ware,] Cautious. TODD.

III. 1. Hee feedes upon the cooling shade,] That is, enjoys
UPRON.

v.
The cause was this : One day, when Phoebe fayre
With all her band was following the chace,
This nymph, quite tyr'd with heat of scorching
ayre,
Satt downe to rest in midst of the race :
The goddesse wroth gan fowly her disgrace,
And badd the waters, which from her did flow,
Be such as she her selfe was then in place.
Thenceforth her waters waxed dull and slow ;
And all, that drinke thereof, do faint and feeble
grow.

vi.
Hereof this gentle Knight unweeting was ;
And, lying downe upon the sandie graile, [gras :
Dronke of the streame, as cleare as cristall
Eftsoones his manly forces gan to fayle,
And mightie strong was turnd to feeble frayle.
His chaunged powres at first themselves not
Till cruddled cold his corage gan assaile, [felt ;
And cheareful blood in fayntnes chill did melt,
Which, like a fever fit, through all his bodie
swelt.

vii.
Yet goodly court he made still to his Dame,
Poured out in loosnesse on the grassy grownd,
Both carelesse of his health, and of his fame :
Till at the last he heard a dreadfull sownd,
Which through the wood loud bellowing did
rebownd,
That all the earth for terror seemd to shake,
And trees did tremble. Th' Elfe, therewith
astownd,
Upstartd lightly from his looser Make,
And his nready weapons gan in hand to take.

viii.
But ere he could his armour on him dight,
Or gett his shield, his monstrous enemy
With sturdie steps came stalking in his sight,
And hideous Geaunt, horrible and hie,
That with his tallnesse seemd to threat the skye ;
The ground eke groned under him for dreed :
His living like saw never living eye,
He durst behold ; his stature did exceed
The height of three the tallest sonnes of mortal
seed.

ix.
The greatest Earth his uncouth mother was,
And blustering Æolus his boasted syre ;
Who with his breath, which through the world
doth pas,
Her hollow womb did secretly inspyre,
And fild her hidden caves with stormie yre,
That she conceiv'd ; and trebling the dew time,
In which the wombes of women do expyre,
Brought forth this monstrous masse of earthy
slyme,
Puft up with emptie wynd, and fild with sinful
cryme.

x.
So grown great, through arrogant delight
Of th' high descent wherof he was yborne,

vi. 2. ——— the sandie graile,] Some particles, or gravel.
Grete from gracilis. UPRON.

vii. 8. ——— his looser Make,] *Make* here signifies com-
panion. CHURCH.

ix. 7. ——— do expyre.] That is, *send forth*, or *bring
forth.* Lat. *expiro.* CHURCH.

And through presumption of his matchlesse
might,
All other powres and knighthood he did scorne
Such now he marcheth to this man forlorne,
And left to losse ; his stalking steps are stayde
Upon a snaggy oke, which he had torne
Out of his mothers bowelles, and it made
His mortall mace, wherewith his foemen he dis-
mayde.

xi.
That, when the Knight he spyde, he gan advance
With huge force and insupportable mayne,
And towards him with dreadfull fury prounce ;
Who haplesse, and eke hopelesse, all in vaine
Did to him pace sad battaile to darrayne,
Disarmd, disgraste, and inwardly dismayde ;
And eke so faint in every ioynt and vayne,
Through that fraile fountaine, which him feeble
made, [blade.
That scarcely could he weeld his bootlesse single

xii.
The Geaunt strooke so maynly mercilesse,
That could have overthrowne a stony towre ;
And, were not heavenly grace that did him blesse,
He had bene pouldred all, as thin as flowre :
But he was wary of that deadly stowre,
And lightly lept from underneath the blow :
Yet so exceeding was the villeins powre,
That with the winde it did him overthrow,
And all his sences stood, that still he lay full low.

xiii.
As when that divelish yron engin, wrought
In deepest hell, and framd by Furies skill,
With windy nitre and quick sulphur fraught,
And ramd with bollet rownd, ordaind to kill,
Conceiveth fyre ; the heavens it doth fill
With thundring noyse, and all the ayre doth choke,
That none can breath, nor see, nor heare at will,
Through smouldry cloud of duskish stincking
smoke ;
That th' only breath him daunts, who hath escapt
the stroke.

xiv.
So daunted when the Geaunt saw the Knight,
His heavie hand he heaved up on hie,
And him to dust thought to have hattred quight,
Untill Duessa loud to him gan crye ;
“ O great Orgoglio, greatest under skye,
O ! hold thy mortall hand for Ladies sake ;
Hold for my sake, and doe him not to dye,
But vanquishd thine eternal bondslave make,
And me, thy worthy meed, unto thy leman take.”

xv.
He hearkned, and did stay from further harmes,
To gayne so goodly guerdon as she spake :
So willingly she came into his armes,
Who her as willingly to grace did take,

xi. 6. ——— disgraste,] That is, *dissolute*, debauched.
CHURCH.

xii. 4. ——— pouldred] *Beaten to dust.* Fr. *pouldrer.*
TODD.

xiii. 9. *That th' only breath]* Only signifies alone.
CHURCH.

xiv. 7. ——— doe him not to dye,] The instances of this
expression are innumerable, both in Chaucer, and in our
author. This is, *Je lui ferai mourir*, Fr. *Farollo morire*
Ital. T. WARTON.

And was possessed of his newfound Make.
Then up he tooke the slombred sencelesse corse ;
And, ere he could out of his swowne awake,
Him to his castle brought with hastie forse,
And in a dongeon deepe him threw without re-
morse.

xvi.

From that day forth Duessa was his deare,
And highly honourd in his haughtie eye ;
He gave her gold and purple pall to weare,
And triple crowne set on her head full hie,
And her endowd with royall maicesty :
Then, for to make her dreaded more of men,
And peoples hartes with awfull terror tie,
A moustrous Beast ybredd in filthy fen
He chose, which he had kept long time in darksom
den.

xvii.

Such one it was, as that renowned snake
Which great Alcides in Stremona slew,
Long fostred in the filth of Lerna lake :
Whose many heades out-budding ever new
Did breed him endlesse labor to subdew.
But this same Monster much more ugly was ;
For seven great heads out of his body grew,
An yron brest, and back of scaly bras,
And all embrewd in blood his eyes did shine as
glas.

xviii.

His tayle was stretched out in wondrous length,
That to the hous of heavenly gods it raught ;
And with extorted powre, and borrow'd strength,
The everburning lamps from thence it braught,
And proudly threw to ground, as things of
naught ;
And underneath his filthy feet did tread
The sacred thinges, and holy heastes foretaught.
Upon this dreadfull Beast with sevenfold head
He sett the false Duessa, for more aw and dread.

xix.

The wofull Dwarfe, which saw his Maisters fall,
(Whiles he had keeping of his grasing steed,)
And valiant Knight become a caytive thrall ;
When all was past, tooke up his fórlorne weed ;
His mightie armour, missing most at need ;
His silver shield, now idle, maisterlesse ;
His poynant speare, that many dead to bleed ;
The rueful monuments of heavinesse ;
And with them all departes, to tell his great dis-
tresse.

xx.

He had not travaill long, when on the way
He wofull Lady, wofull Una, met
Fast flying from that Paynim greedy pray,
Whilset Satyrane him from pursuit did let :
Who when her eyes she on the Dwarf had set,
And saw the signes that deadly tydinges spake,
She fell to ground for sorrowfull regret,
And lively breath her sad brest did forsake ;
Yet might her pitteous hart be seen to pant and
quake.

xxi.

The messenger of so unhappie newes [within ;
Would faine have dyde ; dead was his hart

xviii. 7. — *holy heastes foretaught.*] i. e. the divine
precepts before taught. 1000.

Yet outwardly some little comfort shewes :
At last, recovering hart, he does begin
To rub her temples, and to chaufe her chin,
And everie tender part does tosse and turne :
So hardly he the flitted life does win
Unto her native prison to retourne.
Then gins hor grieved ghost thus to lament and
mourne :

xxii.

"Ye dreary instruments of dolefull sight,
That doe this deadly spectacle behold,
Why doe ye lenger feed on loathed light,
Or liking find to gaze on earthly mould,
Sith cruell fates the carefull threds unfould,
'The which my life and love together tyde ?
Now let the stony dart of sencelesse Cold
Perce to my hart, and pas through everie side :
And let eternall night so sad sight fro me hyde.

xxiii.

"O lightsome Day, the lampe of highest Iove,
First made by him mens wandring wayes to gyde.
When Darknesse he in deepest dongeon drove :
Henceforth thy hated face for ever hyde,
And shut up heavens windowes shyning wyde :
For earthly sight can nought but sorrow breed,
And late repentance, which shall long abyde.
Mine eyes no more on vanitie shall feed,
But, seeled up with death, shall have their deadly
meed."

xxiv.

Then downe againe she fell unto the ground ;
But he her quickly reared up againe :
Thrise did she sinke adowne in deadly swound,
And thrise he her reviv'd with busie paine.
At last when Life recover'd had the raine,
And over-wrested his strong Enimy,
With foltring tong, and trembling everie vaine,
"Tell on," quoth she, "the wofull tragedy,
The which these reliques sad present unto mine
eye :

xxv.

"Tempestuous Fortune hath spent all her spight,
And thrilling Sorrow throwne his utmost dart :
Thy sad tong cannot tell more heavy plight
Then that I feele, and harbour in mine hart :
Who hath endur'd the whole, can beare ech part.
If death it be ; it is not the first wound, [smart.
That launched hath my brest with bleeding
Begin, and end the bitter balefull stound ;
If lesse then that I feare, more favour I have
found."

xxvi.

Then gan the Dwarfe the whole discourse declare ;
The subtle traines of Archimago old ;
The wanton loves of false Fidessa fayre,
Bought with the blood of vanquisht Paynim
hold ;
The wretched Payre transformd to treñ mould ;
The House of Pryde, and perilles round about ;
The combat, which he with Sansioy did hould ;
The lucklesse conflict with the Gyaunt stout,
Wherein captiv'd, of life or death he stood in
doubt.

xxi. 5. — *to chaufe her chin.*] *Her face.* UPON.
xxiv. 6. — *Enimy,*] *Death.* Life and Death are
here represented as persons ; so are Sorrow and Fortune
in the next stanza. CHURCH.

xxvii.

She heard with patience all unto the end ;
 And strove to maister sorrowfull assay,
 Which greater grew, the more she did contend,
 And almost rent her tender hart in tway ;
 And love fresh coles unto her fire did lay :
 For greater love, the greater is the losse.
 Was never Lady loved dearer day
 Then she did love the Knight of the Redcrosse ;
 For whose deare sake so many troubles her did
 tosse.

xxviii.

At last when fervent sorrow slaked was,
 She up arose, resolving him to find
 Alive or dead ; and forward forth doth pas,
 All as the Dwarfie the way to her assynd :
 And evermore, in constant careful mind,
 She fodd her wound with fre-h renewed bale :
 Long tost with stormes, and bet with bitter wind,
 High over hills, and lowe adowne the dale,
 She wandred many a wood, and measurd many a
 vale.

xxix.

At last she chaunced by good hap to meet
 A goodly Knight, faire marching by the way,
 Together with his Squire, arayed meet :
 His glitterand armour shined far away,
 Like glauncing light of Phoebus brightest ray ;
 From top to toe no place appeared bare,
 That deadly dint of steele endanger may :
 Athwart his brest a baudrick brave he ware,
 That shind, like twinkling stars, with stones most
 pretious rare :

xxx.

And, in the midst thereof, one pretious stone
 Of wondrous worth, and eke of wondrous mights,
 Shapt like a Ladies head, exceeding shone,
 Like Hesperus amongst the lesser lights,
 And strove for to amaze the weaker sights :
 Thereby his mortall blade full comely hong
 In yvory sheath, yearv'd with curious slights,
 Whose hilts were burnisht gold ; and handle strong
 Of mother perle ; and buckled with a golden tong.

xxxI.

His haughtie helmet, horrid all with gold,
 Both glorious brightnesse and great terrour
 For all the crest a dragon did enfold [bredd :
 With greedie pawes, and over all did spredd
 His golden winges ; his dreadfull hideous hedd,
 Close couched on the bever, seemd to throw
 From flaming mouth bright sparkles fiery redd,
 That suddaine horroure to faint hartes did show ;
 And scaly tayle was stretcht adowne his back full
 low.

xxxii.

Upon the top of all his loftie crest,
 A bouch of heares discolour'd diversly,
 With sprinckled pearle and gold full richly drest,
 Did shake, and seemd to daunce for iollity ;
 Like to an almond tree ymouned hie
 On top of greene Selinus all alone,
 With blossoms brave bedecked daintily ;
 Whose tender locks do tremble every one
 At everie little breath, that under heaven is blowne.

xxxii. 4. *His glitterand armour*]. Spenser thus affect-
 edly spells the participle *glittering*, in imitation of Chaucer.
 T. WARTON.

xxxiii.

His warlike shield all closely cover'd was,
 Ne might of mortall eye be ever seene ;
 Not made of steele, nor of enduring bras,
 (Such earthly mettals soon consumed beene,)
 But all of diamond perfect pure and cleene
 It framed was, oné massy éntire mould,
 Hew'n out of adamant rocke with engines keene,
 That point of speare it never percen could,
 Ne dint of direfull sword divide the substance
 would.

xxxiv.

The same to wight he never wont disclose,
 But whenas monsters huge he would dismay,
 Or daunt unequal armies of his foes,
 Or when the flying heavens he would affray :
 For so exceeding shone his glistring ray,
 That Phoebus golden face it did attaint,
 As when a cloud his beames doth over-lay ;
 And silver Cynthia waxed pale and faynt,
 As when her face is staynd with magicke arts con-
 straint.

xxxv.

No magicke arts hereof had any might,
 Nor bloody wordes of bold Enchanters call ;
 But all that was not such as seemd in sight
 Before that shield did fade, and suddaine fall :
 And, when him list the raskall routes appall,
 Men into stones therewith he could transmew,
 And stones to dust, and dust to nought at all ;
 And, when him list the pronder looks subdew,
 He would them gazing blind, or turne to other hew.

xxxvi.

Ne let it seeme that credence this exceeds ; [we
 For he, that made the same, was knowne right
 To have done much more admirable deedes :
 It Merlin was, which whylome did excell
 All living wightes in might of magicke spell :
 Both shield, and sword, and armour all he
 wrought [fell ;
 For this young Prince, when first to armes he
 But, when he dyde, the Faery Queene it brought
 To Faerie lond ; where yet it may be seene, if
 sought.

xxxvii.

A gentle youth, his dearely loved Squire,
 His speare of heben wood behind him bare,
 Whose harmful head, thrise heated in the fire,
 Had riven many a brest with pikehead square ;
 A goodly person ; and could menage faire
 His stubborne steed with curbed canon bitt,
 Who under him did trample as the aire,
 And chaufft, that any on his backe should sitt ;
 The yron rowels into frothy fome he hitt.

xxxviii.

Whenas this Knight nigh to the Lady drew,
 With lovely court he gan her entertaine ;
 But, when he heard her aunswers loth, he knew
 Some secret sorrow did her heart distraine :
 Which to allay, and calme her storming paine,
 Faire feeling words he wisely gan display,
 And, for her humor fitting purpose faire,
 To tempt the cause it selfe for to bewray ;
 Wherewith enmovd, these bleeding words she gan
 to say ;

xxxviii. 6. — with curbed canon] The canon is that
 part of a horse-bitt which is let into the mouth. CHURCH

xxxix.

"What worlds delight, or ioy of living speach,
Can hart, so plungd in sea of sorrowes deep,
And heaped with so huge misfortunes, reach
The careful Cold beginneth for to creep,
And in my heart his yron arrow steep,
Soone as I thinke upon my bitter bale.
Such hellesse harmes yts better hidden keep,
Then rip up grieffe, where it may not availle;
My last left comfort is my woes to weepe and
waile."

xl.

"Ah Lady deare," quoth then the gentle Knight,
"Well may I ween your grieffe is wondrous
great; [spright,
For wondrous great grieffe groneth in my
Whiles thus I heare you of your sorrowes treat.
But, woefull Lady, let me yon intrete
For to unfold the anguish of your hart:
Mishaps are maistred by advice discrete,
And counsell mitigates the greatest smart;
Found never help, who never would his hurts
impart."

xli.

"O! but," quoth she, "great grieffe will not be
tould,
And can more easily he thought then said."
"Right so," quoth he; "but he, that never would,
Could never: will to might gives greatest aid."
"But grieffe," quoth she, "does greater grow
displaid,
If then it find not helpe, and breeds despaire."
"Despaire breeds not," quoth he, "where faith
is staid." [paire."
"No faith so fast," quoth she, "but flesh does
"Flesh may empaire," quoth he, "but reason can
repaire."

xlii.

His goodly reason, and well-guided speach,
So deepe did settle in her gracious thought,
That her perswaded to disclose the breach
Which love and fortune in her heart had
wrought; [brought
And said; "Faire sir, I hope good hap hath
You to inquere the secrets of my grieffe;
Or that your wisdom will direct my thought;
Or that your prowess can me yield reliefe;
Then heare the story sad, which I shall tell you
briefe.

xliii.

"The forlorne Maiden, whom your cies have seene
The langhing stocke of Fortunes mockeries,
Am th' only daughter of a king and queene,
Whose parents deare (whiles equal destinies
Did ronne about, and their felicities
The favourable heavens did not envy,)
Did spred their rule through all the territorics,
Which Phison and Euphrates floweth by,
And Gehons golden waves doe wash continually:

xliv.

"Till that their cruell cursed enemy,
An huge great Dragon, horrible in sight,
Bred in the loathly lakes of Tartary,

xliv. 3. *Bred in the loathly lakes of Tartary.*] The
poet should not have used *Tartary* here for *Tartarus*, as
it might be so easily mistaken for the country of that name.
T. WARTON.

With murderous ravine, and devouring might,
Their kingdome spoild, and countrey wasted
quight:
Themselves, for feare into his iawes to fall,
He first to castle strong to take their flight;
Where, fast embard in mighty brasen wall,
He has them now fowr years besiegd to make them
thrall.

xlvi.

"Full many Knights, adventurous and stout,
Have enterpriz'd that Monster to subdew:
From every coast, that heaven walks about,
Have thither come the noble martial crew,
That famous harde atchievements still pursue;
Yet never any could that girlound win,
But all still shrouke; and still he greater grew:
All they for want of faith, or guilt of sin,
The pitteous pray of his fiers cruelty have bin.

xlvii.

"At last, yled with far reported praise,
Which flying fame throughout the world had
spred,
Of doughty Knights, whom Fary land did raise,
That noble order hight of Maidenhead,
Forthwith to court of Gloriane I sped,
Of Gloriane, great queene of glory bright,
Whose kingdomes seat Cleopolis is red;
There to obtaine some such redoubted Knight,
That parents deare from tyrants powre deliver
might.

xlviii.

"Yt was my chance (my chance was faire and
good)
There for to find a fresh unproved Knight;
Whose manly hands imbrewd in guilty blood
Had never beene, ne ever by his might
Had throwne to ground the unregard right:
Yet of his prowess prooffe he since hath made
(I wites am) in many a cruell fight;
The groning ghosts of many one dismaide
Have felt the bitter dint of his avenging blade.

xlviii.

"And ye, the forlorne reliques of his powre,
His biting sword, and his devouring speare,
Which have endured many a dreadful stowre,
Can speake his prowess, that did earst you
beare, [heare
And well could rule; now he hath left you
To be the record of his ruefull losse,
And of my dolefull disadventurous deare:
O heavie record of the good Redcrosse,
Where have yee left your lord, that cou'd so well
you tosse?

xlix.

"Well hoped I, and faire beginnings had,
That he my captive languor should redeeme:
Till all unweeting an Enchaunter bad
His sence abusd, and made him to misdeeme
My loyalty, not such as it did seeme,

xlvi. 4. *That noble order hight of Maidenhead,*] Named
Knights of the Garter: This he does not say directly; but
the noble order of Maidenhead; complimenting the Fairy
Queen or Q. Eliz. beth. URRON.

xlvii. 2. — a fresh unproved Knight;] As yet
untried in battle. TODD.

xlvii. 9. — the bitter dint] Stroke. TODD.

xlviii. 7. *And of my dolefull disadventurous deare;*] *Deare*
is apparently used for *hurt*, *trouble*, or *misfortune*. TODD.

That rather death desire then such despight.
 Be iudge, ye heavens, that all things right
 esteerne,
 How I him lov'd, and love with all my might !
 So thought Ieke of him, and think I thought
 aright.

L.

“ Thenceforth me desolate he quite forsooke,
 To wander, where wilde Fortune would me lead,
 And other bywaies he himselfe betooke,
 Where never foete of living wight did tread,
 That brought not backe the balefull body dead ;
 In which him chanced false Duessa meete,
 Mine onely foe, mine onely deadly dread ;
 Who with her witchcraft, and misseeming sweete,
 Inveigled him to follow her desires unmeete.

LI.

“ At last, by subtle sleights she him betraid
 Unto his foe, a Gyaunt huge and tall ;
 Who him disarmed, dissolute, dismaid,
 Unwares surprised, and with mighty mall
 The mouster mercilesse him made to fall,
 Whose fall did never foe before behold :
 And now in darkesome dungeon, wretched thrall,
 Remédiesse, for aie he doth him hold :
 This is my cause of grieffe, more great then may be
 told.”

LII.

Ere she had ended all, she gan to faint :
 But he her comforted, and faire bespake ;
 “ Certes, Madáme, ye have great cause of plaint,
 That stoutest heart, I weene, could cause to
 quake.
 But be of cheare, and comfort to you take ;
 For, till I have acquit your captive Knight,
 Assure your selfe, I will you not forsake.”
 His chearefull words reviv'd her chearelesse
 spright :
 So forth they went, the Dwarfes them guiding ever
 right.

CANTO VIII.

For Virgin, to redeeme her deare,
 Brings Arthur to the fight:
 Who slayes the Gyaunt, wounds the Beast,
 &c. — strips Duessa ouight.

I.

As me, how many perils doe enfold
 The righteous man, to make him daily fall,
 Were not that heavenly grace doth him uphold,
 And stedfast Truth acquite him out of all !
 Her love is firme, her care continuall,
 So oft as he, through his own foolish pride
 Or weaknes, is to sinfull bands made thrall :
 Els should this Redcrosse Knight in bands have
 dyde,
 For whose deliverance she this Prince doth thether
 guyd.

II.

They sadly traveild thus, untill they came
 Nigh to a castle builded strong and hye :

l. 7. *Mine onely foe.*] That is, my greatest foe. CHURCH.
 LI. 4. ——— with mighty mall] That is, blow. TODD.
 LI. 6. *For, till I have acquit]* Released. FR. acquitter.
 CHURCH.

Then cryde the Dwarfes, “ Lo ! yonder is the
 same,
 In which my Lord, my Liege, doth lucklesse ly
 Thrall to that Gyaunts hateful tyranny :
 Therefore, deare sir, your mightie powres assay.”
 The noble Knight alighted by and by
 From loftie steed, and badd the Ladies stay,
 To see what end of fight should him befall that day.

III.

So with his Squire, th' admirer of his might,
 He marched feth towards that castle wall ;
 Whose gates he fownd fast shutt, no living wight
 To warde the same, nor answer commers call.
 Then tooke that Squire an horne of bugle small,
 Which hong adowne his side in twisted gold
 And tasselles gay ; wyde wonders over all
 Of that same hornes great vertues weren told,
 Which had approved bene in uses manifold.

IV.

Was never wight that heard that shrilling sounde,
 But trembling feare did feel in every vaine :
 Three miles it might be easy heard arownd,
 And echoes three answer'd it selfe againe :
 No faulse enchantment, nor deceitfull traine,
 Might once abide the terror of that blast,
 But presently was void and wholly vaine :
 No gate so strong, no locke so firme and fast,
 But with that percing noise flew open quite, or
 brast.

V.

The same before the Geaunts gate he blew,
 That all the castle quaked from the grownd,
 And every dore of free-will open flew.
 The Gyaunt selfe dismayed with that sounde,
 Where he with his Duessa dalliaunce fownd,
 In hast came rushing forth from inner bowre,
 With staring countenance sterne, as one astownd,
 And staggering steps, to weet what suddein
 stowre
 Had wrought that horror strange, and dar'd his
 dreaded powre.

VI.

And after him the proud Duessa came,
 High mounted on her many-headed Beast ;
 And every head with fyrie tongue did flame,
 And every head was crowned on his creast,
 And bloody mouthed with late cruell feast.
 That when the Knight beheld, his mightie shield
 Upon his manly arme he soone addressd,
 And at him fierly flew, with corage fild,
 And eger greedinesse through every member
 thrild.

VII.

Therewith the Gyaunt luckled him to fight,
 Inflamd with scornfull wrath and high disdaine,
 And lifting up his dreadfull club on hight,
 All armd with ragged snubbes and knottie
 graine,
 Him thought at first encounter to have slaine.
 But wise and wary was that noble Pere ;
 And, lightly leaping from so monstrous maine,
 Did fayre avoide the violence him nere ;
 It booted nought to thinke such thunderbolts to
 beare ;

II. 7. ——— by and by] Presently. Constantly so used
 by Spenser. CHURCH

VII.

Ne shame he thought to shonne so hideous might :
 The ydle stroke, enforcing furious way,
 Missing the marke of his misaymed sight,
 Did fall to ground, and with his heavy sway
 So deeply dinted in the driven clay,
 That three yardes deepe a furrow up did throw :
 The sad earth, wounded with so sore assay,
 Did grone full grievous underneath the blow ;
 And, trembling with strange feare, did like an earth-
 quake show.

IX.

As when almightie Iove, in wrathfull mood,
 To wreake the guilt of mortall sins is bent,
 Hurles forth his thundring dart with deadly food,
 Enroll in flames, and smouldring dreriment,
 Through riven cloudes and molten firmament ;
 The fiers threeforked engin, making way,
 Both loftie towres and highest trees hath rent,
 And all that might his angry passage stay ;
 And, shooting in the earth, castes up a mount of clay.

X.

His boystrous club, so buried in the ground,
 He could not rearen up againe so light,
 But that the Knight him at advantage fownd ;
 And, whiles he strove his cumbered clubbe to quight
 Out of the earth, with blade all burning bright
 He smott off his left arme, which like a block
 Did fall to ground, depriv'd of native might ;
 Large streames of blood out of the trunked stock
 Forth gushed, like fresh-water streame from riven
 rocke.

XI.

Dismayed with so desperate deadly wound,
 And eke impatient of unwonted payne,
 He lowdly brayd with beastly yelling sound,
 That all the fieldes rebellowd againe :
 As great a noyse, as when in Cymbrian plaine
 An heard of bulles, whom kindly rage doth sting,
 Doe for the milky mothers want complaine,
 And fill the fieldes with troublous bellowing :
 The neighbor woods arownd with hollow murmur
 ring.

XII.

That when his deare Duessa heard, and saw
 The evil stownd that dangerd her estate,
 Unto his aide she hastily did draw [late,
 Her dreadfull Beast ; who, swolne with blood of
 Came ramping forth with proud presumptuous
 gate, [brandes.
 And threatned all his heades like flaming
 But him the Squire made quickly to retrate,
 Encountering fiers with single sword in hand ;
 And twixt him and his Lord did like a bulwarke
 stand.

XIII.

The proud Duessa, full of wrathfull spight
 And fiers disdain, to be affronted so,

IX. 3. — with deadly food.] Food is Spenser's way of spelling *feed*, which signifies an irreconcilable hatred. CHURCH.

IX. 4. — smouldring dreriment ;] Darkness. CHURCH.

X. 4. — to quight] Release, or disengage. TODD.

XI. 6. An heard of bulles.] Bulls for calves, is a catachresis, as the rhetoricians call it. Kindly rage is, according to nature : Spenser often uses the word so. JORTIN.

XIII. 2. — to be affronted so.] To be so encountered, or opposed. Ital *affrontare*. TODD.

Enforst her purple Beast with all her might,
 That stop out of the way to overthro,
 Scorning the let of so unequal foe :
 But nathemore would that eourageous Swayne
 To her yeeld passage, gainst his Lord to goe ;
 But with outrageous strokes did him restraine,
 And with his body hard the way atwixt them
 twaine.

XIV.

Then tooke the angrie Witch her golden cup,
 Which still she bore, replete with magick artes ;
 Death and despayre did many thereof sup,
 And secret poysen through their inner partes ;
 Th' eternall bale of heave wounded harts :
 Which, after charmes and some enchauntments
 said,
 She lightly sprinkled on his weaker partes :
 Therewith his sturdie corage soon was quayed,
 And all his senses were with suddain dread dis-
 mayd.

XV.

So downe he fell before the cruell Beast,
 Who on his neck his bloody clawes did seize,
 That life nigh crusht out of his panting brest :
 No powre he had to stirre, nor will to rize,
 That when the carefull Knight can well advise,
 He lightly left the foe with whom he fought,
 And to the Beast gan turne his enterprise ;
 For wondrous anguish in his hart it wrought,
 To see his loved Squyre into such thraldom
 brought :

XVI.

And, high advauncing his blood-thirstie blade,
 Stroke one of those deformed heades so sore,
 That of his puissaunce proud ensamble made ;
 His monstrous scalpe down to his teeth it tore,
 And that misformed shape misshaped more :
 A sea of blood gusht from the gaping wovnd,
 That her gay garments staynd with filthy gore,
 And overflowd all the field arownd ;
 That over shoes in blood he waded on the grownd.

XVII.

Thereat he rored for exceeding paine,
 That, to have heard, great horror would have bred ;
 And scourging th' emptie ayre with his long
 trayne,
 Through great impatience of his grieved hed,
 His gorgeous ryder from her loftie sted
 Would have cast downe, and trodd in durty myre,
 Had not the Gyaunt soone her succoured ;
 Who, all enrag'd with smart and frantick yre,
 Came hurtling in full fiers, and forst the Knight
 retyre.

XVIII.

The force, which wont in two to be disperst,
 In one alone left hand he now unites,
 Which is through rage more strong than both
 were erst ;
 With which his hideous club aloft he dites,
 And at his foe with furious rigor smites,
 That strongest oake might seeme to overthrow :

XIII. 5. — the let] The hindrance. CHURCH.

XIII. 6 — Swayne] Swain is here used for youth, in which sense it is employed by our old English writers, as well as in the sense of a servant engaged in country affairs. TODD.

XIV. 8. — was quayed.] Quailed, i. e. subdued. TODD.

The stroke upon his shield so heaue lites,
That to the ground it doubleth him full low :—
What mortall wight could ever beare so monstrous
blow ?

XIX.

And in his fall his shield, that covered was,
Did loose his vele by chance, and open flew ;
The light whereof, that heuens light did pas,
Such blazing brightness through the ayër threw,
That eye mote not the same endure to veu.
Which when the Gyaunt spyde with staring eye,
He downe let fall his arme, and soft withdrew
His weapon huge, that heaved was on hye
For to have slain the Man, that on the ground did
lye.

XX.

And eke the fruitfull-headed Beast, amazd
At flashing beames of that sunshiny shield,
Became stark blind, and all his senses dazd,
That downe he tumbled on the durtie field,
And seemd himselfe as conquered to yield.
Whom when his Maistresse proud perceiv'd to
fall,
Whiles yet his feeble feet for faintnes reeld,
Unto the Gyaunt lowly she gan call ;
“ O ! helpe, Orgoglio ; helpe, or els we perish all.”

XXI.

At her so pitteous cry was much amoov'd
Her champion stout ; and, for to ayde his friend,
Againe his wonted angry weapon proov'd,
But all in vaine ; for he has redd his end
In that bright sh'eld, and all their forces spend
Themselves in vaine : for, since that glauncing
He hath no powre to hurt, nor to defend. [sight,
As where th' Almightyes lightninge brond does
light,
It dimmes the dazed eyen, and daunts the senses
quight.

XXII.

Whom when the Prince, to batteill new addressd
And threatning high his dreadfull stroke, did see,
His sparkling blade about his head he blest,
And smote off quite his left leg by the knee,
That downe he tumbled ; as an aged tree,
High growing on the top of rocky clift, [be,
Whose hart-strings with keene steele nigh hewen
The mightie trunk halfe rent with ragged rift
Doth roll adowne the rocks, and fall with fearefull
drift.

XXIII.

Or as a castle, reared high and round,
By subtle engins and malicious slight
Is undermined from the lowest ground,
And her foundation forst, and feebled quight,
At last downe falls ; and with her heaped height
Her hastie ruine does more heaue make,
And yields it selfe unto the victours might :
Such was this Gyaunts fall, that seemd to shake
The stedfast globe of earth, as it for feare did quake

XXIV.

The Knight then, lightly leaping to the pray,
With mortall steele him smot againe so sore,
That headlesse his unweldy bodie lay,
All wallowd in his owne fowle bloody gore,
Which flowd from his wounds in woudrous store.
But, soone as breath out of his brest did pas,

That huge great body, which the Gyaunt bore,
Was vanisht quite ; and of that monstrous mas
Was nothing left, but like an emptie blader was.

XXV.

Whose grievous fall when false Duessa spyde,
Her golden cup she cast unto the ground,
And crowned mitre rudely threw asyde :
Such percing griefe her stubborne hart did wound,
That she could not endure that dolefull stound ;
But, leaving all behind her, fled away :
The light-foot Squyre her quickly turnd around,
And, by hard meanes enforcing her to stay,
So brought unto his Lord, as his deserved pray.

XXVI.

The roiall Virgin which beheld from farre,
In pensive plight and sad perplexitie,
The whole atchievement of this doubtfull warre,
Came running fast to greet his victorie,
With sober gladnesse and myld modestie ;
And, with sweet ioyous cheare, him thus bespake ;
“ Fayre branch of noblesse, flowre of chevalrie,
That with your worth the world amazed make,
How shall I quite the paynes, ye suffer for my sake ?

XXVII.

“ And you, fresh budd of vertue springing fast,
Whom these sad eyes saw nigh unto deathes dore,
What hath poore Virgin for such perill past
Wherewith you to reward ? Accept therefore
My simple selfe, and service evermore.
And He that high does sit, and all things see
With equal eye, their merites to restore,
Behold what ye this day have done for mee ;
And, what I cannot quite, requite with usuree !

XXVIII.

“ But sith the heavens, and your faire handelling,
Have made you master of the field this day ;
Your fortune maister eke all with governing,
And, well begonne, end also so well, I pray !
Ne let that wicked Woman scape away ;
For she it is, that did my Lord bethrall,
My dearest Lord, and deepe in dongeon lay ;
Where he his better dayes hath wasted all :
O heare, how pitcous he to you for ayd does call !”

XXIX.

Forthwith he gave in charge unto his Squyre,
That scarlot Whore to keeopen carfully ;
Whyles he himselfe with greedie great desyre
Into the castle entred forcibly,
Where living creature none he did espye :
Then gan he lowdly through the house to call ;
But no man car'd to answer to his crye :
There raignd a solemne silence over all ;
Nor voice was heard, nor wight was scene in bowre
or hall !

XXX.

At last, with creeping crooked pace forth came
An old old man, with beard as white as snow ;
That on a staffe his feeble steps did frame,
And gudyde his wearie gate both too and fro ;
For his eye sight him fayled long ygo :
And on his arme a bounch of keyes he bore,
The which unused rust did overgrow :
Those were the keyes of every inner dore ;
But he could not them use, but kept them still in
store.

xxxI.

But very ūncouth sight was to behold,
How he did fashion his untoward pace ;
For as he forward moov'd his footing old,
So backward still was turnd his wrincled face :
Unlike to men, who ever, as they trace,
Both feet and face one way are wont to lead.
This was the auncient Keeper of that place,
And foster father of the Gyaunt dead ;
His name Ignaro did his nature right aread.

xxxII.

His reverend heares and holy gravitee
The Knight much honor'd, as besemmed well ;
And gently askt, where all the people bee,
Which in that stately building wont to dwell :
Who answerd him full soft, *He could not tell.*
Again he askt, where that same Knight was layd,
Whom great Orgoglio with his puissance fell
Had made his caytive thrall : Againe he sayde,
He could not tell ; ne ever other answer made.

xxxIII.

Then asked he, which way he in might pas :
He could not tell, againe he answered.
Thereat the courteous Knight displeas'd was,
And said ; " Old syre, it seemes thou hast not rod
How ill it sits with that same silver hed,
In vaine to mocke, or mockt in vaine to bee :
But if thou be, as thou art pourtrahed
With Natures pen, in ages grave degree,
Aread in graver wise what I demaund of thee."

xxxIV.

His answer likewise was, *He could not tell.*
Whose sencelese speach, and doted ignorance,
Whemas the noble Prince had marked well,
He ghest his nature by his countenance ;
And caln'd his wrath with goodly temperance.
Then, to him stepping, from his arme did reache
Those keyes, and made himselfe free entrance.
Each dore he opened without any breach :
There was no barre to stop, nor foe him to empeach.

xxxV.

There all within full rich arayd he found,
With royall arras, and resplendent gold,
And did with store of every thing abound,
That greatest princes presence might behold.
But all the floore (too filthy to be told)
With blood of guiltlesse babes, and innocens trow,
Which there were slaine, as sheepe out of the fold,
Defiled was ; that dreadful was to vew ;
And sacred ashes over it was strowed new.

xxxVI.

And there heside of marble stone was built
An altare, carv'd with cunning ymagery ;
On which trow Christians blood was often spilt,
And holy martyres often doen to dye,
With cruell malice and strong tyranny :
Whose blessed sprites, from underneath the stone,
To God for vengeance cryde continually ;

xxxIII. 8. — in ages grave degree,] Spenser, as the old English poets do, uses *age*, or *eid*, for *age* in general ; not simply for *old age*, as the Glossaries of Urry, Hughes, and the edition of Spenser in 1751, explain *eid*. C. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.
xxxIV. 9. — him to empeach.] *Hinder*. Fr. *empêcher*. TODD.

And with great griefe were often heard to grone
That hardest heart would bleede to hear their piteous
mone.

xxxVII.

Through every rowme he sought, and everie bow ;
But no where could he find that wofull Thrall.
At last he came unto an yron doore,
That fast was loekt ; but key found not at all
Emongst that bounch to open it withall ;
But in the same a little grate was pight,
Through which he sent his voyce, and lowd did call
With all his powre, to weet if living wight
Were housed therewithin, whom he enlargen might.

xxxVIII.

Therewith an hollow, dreary, murmuring voyce
These piteous plaintes and dolours did resound ;
" O ! who is that, which bringes me happy choyce
Of death, that here lye dying every stound,
Yet live perforce in balefull darknesse bound ?
For now three moones have changed thrice their
hew,
And have been thrice hid underneath the ground,
Since I the heavens chearefull face did vew :
O welcome, thou, that doest of death bring tydings
trew !"

xxxIX.

Which when that Champion heard, with percing
Of pity deare his heart was thrilled sore ; [point
And trembling horrour ran through every ioynt,
For ruth of gentle Knight so fowle forelore ;
Which shaking off, he rent that yron dore
With furious force and indignation fell ;
Where entred in, his foot could find no flore,
But all a deepe descent, as dark as hell,
That breathed ever forth a filthie banefull smell.

XL.

But neither darkenesse fowle, nor filthy bands,
Nor noyous smell, his purpose could withhold,
(Entire affection hateth nicer hands,) —
But that with constant zeal and corage bold,
After long paines and labors manifold,
He found the meanes that Frisoner up to reare ;
Whose feeble thighes, unable to uphold
His pined corse, him scarce to light could beare ;
A ruefull spectacle of death and ghastly dreere.

XLI.

His sad dull eies, deepe sunck in hollow pits,
Could not endure th' unwonted sunne to vew ;
His bare thin cheekes for want of better bits,
And empty sides deceived of their dew,
Could make a stony hart his hap to rew ;
His rawbone armes, whose mighty brained bowts
Were wont to rive steele plates, and helmets hew,
Were clene consum'd ; and all his vitall powres
Decayd ; and all his flesh shronk up like withered
flowres.

xxxVII. 2. — that wofull Thrall.] The Redcrosse Knight. CHURCH.

XL. 9. — ghastly dreere.] *Sorrow, sadness.* URRON.
XLI. 2. — th' unwonted sunne] The light that he had long been disus'd to. CHURCH.

XLI. 6. — whose mighty brained bowts.] *The bowers* are what anatomists call, *musculi flexores* ; so named because easily bowed. The Danes use *bou* for the shoulder. URR. N.

XLII.

Whome when his Lady saw, to him she ran
With hasty ioy : to see him made her glad,
And sad to view his visage pale and wan ;
Who earst in flowres of freshest youth was clad.
Tho, when her well of teares she wasted had,
She said ; " Ah dearest Lord ! what evil starre
On you hath frownd, and pourd his influence bad,
That of your selfe ye thus berobbed arre,
And this misseeming hew your manly looks doth
marre ?

XLIII.

" But welcome now, my Lord in wele or woe ;
Whose presence I have lackt too long a day :
And fye on Fortune mine avowed foe, [alay ;
Whose wrathful wreakes themselves doe now
And for these wronges shall treble penance pay
Of treble good : Good growes of evils priefe."
The chearlesse Man, whom sorrow did dismay,
Had no delight to treaten of his grieffe ;
His long endured famine needed more reliefe.

XLIV.

" Faire Lady," then said that victorious Knight,
" The things, that grievous were to doe, or beare,
Them to renew, I wote, breeds no delight ;
Best musicke breeds delight in loathing care :
But th' only good, that growes of passed feare,
Is to be wise, and ware of like agein.
This daies ensample hath this lesson deare
Deepe written in my heart with yron pen,
That blisse may not abide in state of mortall men.

XLV.

" Henceforth, Sir Knight, take to you wanted
strength,
And maister these mishaps with patient might :
Loe, where your foe lies stretcht in monstrous
length ;
And loe, that wicked Woman in your sight,
The roote of all your care and wretched plight,
Now in your powre, to let her live, or die."
" To doe her die," quoth Una, " were despight,
And shame t'avenge so weake an enemy ;
But spoile her of her scarlot robe, and let her fly."

XLVI.

So, as she bad, that Witch they disaraid,
And robd of roiall robes, and purple pall,
And ornaments that richly were displaid ;
Ne spared they to strip her naked all.
Then, when they had despoyl'd her tirc and call,
Such, as she was, their eies might her behold,
That her misshaped parts did them appall ;
A loathly, wrinkled hag, ill favoured, old,
Whose secret filth good manners biddeth not be
told.

XLVII.

Her crafty head was altogether bald,
And, as in hate of honorable eld,
Was overgrowne with scurfe and filthy scald,
Her teeth out of her rotten gummies were feld,
And her sowre breath abhominably smeld ;
Her dried duges, lyke bladders lacking wind,
Hong downe, and filthy matter from them weld ;

XLVI. 4. *Ne spared they to strip her naked all.* All, i. e. entirely. altogether. UPRON.

XLVI. 5. — her tirc and call.] That is, her attire and caul. CHURCH.

Her wrizled skin, as rough as maple rind,
So scabby was, that would have loathd all woman-
kind.

XLVIII.

Her neather parts, the shame of all her kind,
My chaster Muse for shame doth blush to write :
But at her rompe she growing had behind
A foxes taile, with dong all fowly dight ;
And eke her feete most monstrous were in sight ;
For one of them was like an eagles claw,
With griping talaunts armd to greedy fight ;
The other like a beares uneven paw :
More ugly shape yet never living creature saw.

XLIX.

Which when the Knights beheld, amazd they were,
And wondred at so fowle deformed wight.
" Such then," said Una, " as she seemeth here,
Such is the face of Falshood ; such the sight
Of fowle Duessa, when her borrowed light
Is laid away, and counterfessance knowne."
Thus when they had the Witch dsrobed quight,
And all her filthy feature open showne,
They let her goe at will, and wander waies un-
knowne.

Shee, flying fast from heavens hated face,
And from the world that her discovered wide,
Fled to the wastfull wildernesses apace,
From living eies her open shame to hide ;
And lurkt in rocks and caves, long unespide.
But that faire crew of Knights, and Una faire,
Did in that castle afterwards abide,
To rest themselves, and weary powres repaire :
Where store they fownd of al, that dainty was and
rare.

CANTO IX.

His loves and lignage Arthure tells;
The Knights knit friendly bands;
Sir Trevisan dies from Despayre,
Whom Rederos Knight withstands.

O ! GOONLY golden chayne, wherewith yfere
The vertues linked are in lovely wize ;
And noble mindes of yore allyed were,
In brave poursuit of chealrous emprise,
That none did others safety despize,
Nor aid envy to him, in need that stands ;
But friendly each did others praise devize,
How to advance with favourable hands,
As this good Prince redeemd the Rederosse Knight
from bands.

II.

Who when their powres, empayrd through labor
With dew repast they had recured well, [long ;
And that weake captive wight now waxed strong ;
Them list no lenger there at leasure dwell,
But forward fare, as their adventures fell :
But, ere they parted, Una faire besought
That stranger Knight his name and nation tell ;
Least so great good, as he for her had wrought,
Should die unknown, and buried be in thankles
thought.

XLIX. 6. — counterfessance] Counterfeiting, dissimulation. CHURCH.

: 1. — yfere] In company, together. UPRON.

III.

"Faïre Virgin," said the Prince, "yee me require
A thing without the compas of my witt :
For both the lignage, and the certein sire,
From which I sprong, from mee are hidden yitt.
For all so soone as life did me admitt
Into this world, and shewed hevens light,
From mother's pap I taken was unfit,
And streight deliver'd to a Faïry Knight,
To be upbrought in gentle thewes and martiall might.

IV.

"Unto old Timon he me brought bylive ;
Old Timon, who in youthly yeares hath benee
In warlike feates th' expertest man alive,
And is the wisest now on earth I weene :
His dwelling is, low in a valley greene,
Under the foot of Rauran mossy hore,
From whence the river Dee, as silver cleene,
His tombling billowes rolls with gentle rore ;
There all my daies he traïnd me up in vertuous lore.

V.

"Thether the great magicien Merlin came,
As was his use, oftentimes to visit mee ;
For he had charge my discipline to frame,
And tutors nouriture to oversee.
Him oft and oft I askt in privy,
Of what loines and what lignage I did spring.
Whose answers bad me still assured be,
That I was sonne and heire unto a king, [bring.]
As time in her iust term the truth to light should

VI.

"Well worthy impe," said then the Lady gent,
"And pupil fitt for such a tutors hand !
But what adventure, or what high intent,
Hath brought you hether into Faïry land,
Aread, Prince Arthure, crowne of martiall band ?"
"Full hard it is," quoth he, "to read aright
The course of heavenly cause, or understand
The secret meaning of th' Eternall Might,
That rules mens waies, and rules the thoughts of
living wight.

VII.

"For whether He, through fatal deepe foresight,
Me hither sent, for cause to me unghest ;
Or that fresh bleeding wound, which day and night
Whilome doth rancle in my riven brest,
With forced fury following his behest,
Me hether brought by wayes yet never found ;
You to have helpt I hold myself yet blest."
"Ah ! courteous Knight," quoth she, "what
secret wound [ground ?]"
Could ever find to grieve the gentlest hart on

VIII.

"Dear Dame," quoth he, "you sleeping sparkes
awake,
Which, troubled once, into huge flames will grow ;
Ne ever will their fervent fury slake,
Till living moysture into smoke do flow,
And wasted life doe lye in ashes low.
Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire,

III. 9. — in gentle thewes] In genteel accomplishments. CHURCH.

vr. 1. Well worthy impe] Impe is child, derived perhaps from the Welch *imp*, a shoot or sucker. TADO.

But, told, it flames ; and, hidden, it does glow ;
I will revele what ye so much desire :
Ah ! Love, lay down thy bow, the whiles I may
respyre.

IX.

"It was in freshest flowre of youthly yeares,
When corage first does creepe in manly chest ;
Then first that cole of kindly heat appears
To kindle love in every living brest :
But me had warn'd old Timons wise behest,
Those creeping flames by reason to subdew,
Before their rage grew to so great unrest,
As miserable lovers use to rew, [new
Which still wex old in woe, whiles woe stil wexeth

X.

"That ydle name of love, and lovers life,
As losse of time, and vertues enemy,
I ever scorn'd, and loyd to stirre up strife,
In midst of their mournfull tragedy ;
Ay wont to laugh, when them I heard to cry,
And blow the fire, which them to ashes Brent :
Their god himselfe, griev'd at my libertie,
Shott many a dart at me with fiers intent ;
But I them warded all with wary government.

XI.

"But all in vaine ; no fort can be so strong,
Ne fleshly brest can armed be so sownd,
But will at last be wonne with battrie long,
Or unawares at disadvantage fownd :
Nothing is sure that growes on earthly grownd.
And who most trustes in arme of fleshly might,
And boastes in beauties chaine not to be bownd,
Doth soonest fall in disaventrous fight,
And yeldes his caytive neck to victours most
despight.

XII.

"Ensamble make of him your haplesse ioy
And of my selfe now mated, as ye see ;
Whose prouder vaunt that proud avenging boy
Did scone pluck downe, and curb'd my libertee.
For on a day, prickt forth with iollitee
Of looser life and heat of hardiment,
Rauing the forest wide on courser free, [sent
The fields, the floods, the heavens, with one con-
did seeme to laugh on me, and favour mine intent

XIII.

"Forwearied with my sportes, I did alight
From loffie steed, and downe to sleepe me layd
The verdant gras my couch did goodly dight,
And pillow was my helmet fayre displayd :
Whiles every sence the humour sweet embayd,
And slombring soft my hart did steale away,
Me seemed, by my side a rofall Mayd
Her daintie limbes full sofly down did lay :
So fayre a creature yet saw never sunny day.

XIV.

"Most goodly glee and lovely blandishment
She to me made, and badd me love her deare ;
For dearely sure her love was to me bent,
As, when iust time expired, should appear.
But, whether dreames delude, or true it were,
Was never hart so ravisht with delight,
Ne living man like wordes did ever heare,

XIII. 1. Forwearied] Over fatigued. CHURCH.

As she to me delivered all that night ;
And at her parting said, She Queene of Faries
hight.

xv.

"When I awoke, and found her place voyd,
And nought but pressed gras where she had lyen,
I sorrowed all so much as earst I ioyd,
And washed all her place with watry eyen.
From that day forth I lov'd that face divyne ;
From that day forth I cast in carefull mynde,
To seek her out with labor and long tyne,
And never vould to rest till her I fynd :
Nyne monethes I seek in vain, yet nill that vow
unbynd."

xvi.

Thus as he spake, his visage waxed pale,
And chaunge of hew great passion did bewray ;
Yett still he strove to eke his inward bale,
And hide the smoke that did his fire display ;
Till gentle Una thus to him gan say ;
"O happy Queene of Faries, that hast fownd,
Mongst many, one that with his promessee may
Defend thine honour, and thy foes confownd !
True loves are often sown, but seldom grow on
ground."

xvii.

"Thine, O ! then," said the gentle Redcrosse
Knight,
"Next to that Ladies love, shal be the place,
O fayrest Virgin, full of heavenly light,
Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly race,
Was firmest fixt in myne extremest case.
And you, my Lord, the patron of my life,
Of that great Queene may well gaine worthie
grace ;
For onely worthie you through prowes priefe,
Yf living man mote worthie be, to be her liefe."

xviii.

So diversly discoursing of their loves,
The golden sunne his glistring head gan shew,
And sad remembrance now the Prince amoves
With fresh desire his voyage to pursue :
Als Una earnd her travaill to renew.
Then those two Knights, fast frendship for to bynd,
And love establish each to other trew,
Gave goodly gifts, the signes of gratefull mynd,
And eke, as pledges firme, right hands together
ioynd.

xix.

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of diamond sure
Embowed with gold and gorgeous ornament,
Wherein were closd few drops of liquor pure,
Of wondrous worth, and verine excellent,
That any wound could heale incontinent.
Which to requite, the Redcrosse Knight him gave
A Booke, wherein his Saviours Testament
Was writt with golden letters rich and brave ;
A worke of wondrous grace, and hable soules to
save.

xv. 9. — *She Queene of Faries hight*] *Was called.* TODD.

xv. 8. *And never vould to rest*] That is, as Mr. Church interprets, "And wou'd never to rest." TODD.

xvi. 2. — *passion*] *Commotion, disorder.* CHURCH.

xviii. 3. — *amoves*] *Moves.* URTON.

xviii. 5. *Als*] *Also.* TODD.

xix. 2. *Embowed*] *Arched, arcuatus, bent like a bow :*
"A box having a vaulted cover of gold." T. WARTON.

xx.

Thus beene they parted ; Arthur on his way
To seeke his love, and th' other for to fight
With Unaes foe, that all her realme did pray.
But she, now weighing the decayed plight
And shrunken synewes of her chosen Knight,
Would not a while her forward course pursue,
Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull fight,
Till he recovered had his former vie :
For him to be yet weake and wearie well she
knew.

xxi.

So as they travelld, lo ! they gan espy
An armed Knight towards them gallop fast,
That seemed from some feared foe to fly,
Or other griesly thing, that him aghast.
Still, as he fledd, his eye was backward cast,
As if his feare still followed him behynd :
Als flew his steed, as he his bandes had brast,
And with his winged heeles did tread the wynd,
As he had been a foie of Pegasus his kynd.

xxii.

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his head
To be unarmed, and curld uncombed heares
Upstaring stiffe, dismayd with uneouth dread :
Nor drop of blood in all his face appears,
Nor life in limbe ; and, to increase his feares,
In fowle reproch of knighthoodes fayre degree,
About his neck an hempen rope he weares,
That with his glistring armes does ill agree :
But he of rope, or armes, has now no memoree.

xxiii.

The Redcrosse Knight toward him crossed fast,
To weet what mister wight was so dismayd :
There him he findes all sencelesse and aghast,
That of himselfe he seemd to be afrawd ;
Whom hardly he from flying forward stayd,
Till he these wordes to him deliver might ;
"Sir Knight, aread who hath ye thus arayd,
And eke from whom make ye this hasty fight !
For never Knight I saw in such misseeming
plight."

xxiv.

He answerd nought at all ; but adding new
Feare to his first amazment, staring wyde
With stony eyes and hartlesse hollow hew,
Astonisht stood, as one that had aspyde
Infernall Furies with their chaines untide.
Him yett againe, and yett againe, bespake
The gentle Knight ; who nought to him replyde :
But, trembling every ioynt, did inly quake,
And foltring tongue at last these wordes seemd forth,
to shake ;

xxv.

"For Gods deare love, Sir Knight, doe me not
stay ;
For loe ! he comes, he comes fast after mee !"
Eft looking back would faine have runne away ;

xxi. 4. — *that him aghast.*] *That terrified him.* *Aghast* is here used as a verb ; frequently he uses it as a participle. CHURCH.

xxi. 6. *As if his feare*] *The thing which he feared.* TODD.

xxiii. 2. *To weet what mister wight*] *To learn what manner of person, &c.* CHURCH.

xxv. 3. *Eft looking back*] *Eft, afterwards, moreover, again.* CHURCH.

But he him forst to stay, and tellen free
The secrete cause of his perplexitie :
Yet nath'more by his bold hartie speach
Could his blood-frosen hart emboldned bee,
But through his boldnes rather feare did reach ;
Yett, forst, at last he made through silence suddain
breach :

xxvi.

"And am I now in safetie sure," quoth he,
"From him, that would have forced me to dye ?
And is the point of death now turnd fro mee,
That I may tell this haplesse history ?" [nye."
"Fear nought," quoth he, "no daunger now is
"Then shall I you recount a ruefull case,"
Said he, "the which with this unlucky eye
I late beheld ; and, had not greater grace
Me reft from it, had bene partaker of the place.

xxvii.

"I lately chaunst (would I had never chaunst !)
With a fayre Knight to keeopen companee,
Sir Terwin hight, that well himselfe advaunst
In all affayres, and was both bold and free ;
But not so happy as mote happy bee :
He lov'd, as was his lot, a Lady gent,
That him againe lov'd in the least degree ;
For she was proud, and of too high intent,
And ioyd to see her lover languish and lament :

xxviii.

"From whom retourning sad and comfortlesse,
As on the way together we did fare,
We met that Villen, (God from him me blesse !)
That cursed wight, from whom I scapt whyleare,
A man of hell, that calls himselfe *Despayre* :
Who first us greets, and after fayre areedes
Of tydings straunge, and of adventures rare :
So creeping close, as snake in hidden weedes,
Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly decedes.

xxix.

"Which when he knew, and felt our feeble harts
Embost with bale, and bitter byting grieffe,
Which love had launched with his deadly darts ;
With wounding words, and termes of foule re-
prieffe,
He pluckt from us all hope of dew relieffe,
That earst us held in love of lingring life :
Then hopelesse, hartlesse, gan the cunning thiefe
Perswade us dye, to stint all further strife ;
To me he lent thisrope, to him a rusty knife :

xxx.

"With which sad instrument of hasty death,
That wofull lover, loathing lenger light,
A wyde way made to let forth living breath.
But I, more fearfull or more lucky wight,
Dismayd with that deformed dismall sight,
Fledd fast away, halfe dead with dying feare ;
Ne yet assur'd of life by you, Sir Knight,
Whose like infirmity like chauce may beare :
But God you never let his charmed speaches
heare !"

xxxi.

"How may a man," said he, "with idle speach
Be wonne to spoyle the castle of his health ?"

xxv. 6. *Yc nath'more]* *Not the more.* TODD.xxvii. 6. — a Lady gent.] *Gent is accomplished, hand-
some.* TODD.xxix. 2. *Embost, &c.] Overwhelmed with sorrow.* CHURCH.

"I wote," quoth he, "whom tryall late did teach,
That like would not for all this world's wealth,
His subtile tong, like dropping honny, mealt'h
Into the heart, and searcheth every vaine ;
That, ere one be aware, by secret stealth
His powre is reft, and weaknes doth remaine.
O never, Sir, desire to try his guilefull traine !"

xxxii.

"Certes," said he, "hence shall I never rest,
Till I that Treachours art have heard and tryde :
And you, Sir Knight, whose name mote I request,
Of grace do me unto his cabin guyde."
"I, that hight Trevisan," quoth he, "will ryde,
Against my liking, backe to doe you grace :
But not for gold nor glee will I abyde
By you, when ye arrive in that same place ;
For lever had I die then see his deadly face."

xxxiii.

Ere long they come, where that same wicked wight
His dwelling has, low in an hollow cave,
Far underneath a craggy cliff ypyght,
Darke, dolefull, dreary, like a greedy grave,
That still for carrion carcases doth crave :
On top whereof ay dwelt the ghastly owle,
Shrieking his balefull note, which ever drave
Far from that haunt all other chearefull fowle ;
And all about it wandring ghostes did wayle and
howle :

xxxiv.

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees,
Whereon nor fruit nor leafe was ever seen,
Did hang upon the ragged rocky knees ;
On which had many wretches hanged bene,
Whose carcases were scattred on the greene,
And throwne about the cliffs. Arrived there,
That bare-head Knight, for dread and dolefull
teene, [neare ;
Would faine have fled, ne durst approchen
But th' other forst him staye, and comforted in
feare.

xxxv.

That darkesome cave they enter, where they find
That cursed man, low sitting on the ground,
Musing full sadly in his sullen mind :
His griesie lockes, long growen and unbound,
Disordred hong about his shoulders round,
And hid his face ; through which his hollow eyne
Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound ;
His raw-bone cheekes, through penurie and pine,
Were shronke into his iawes, as he did never dine.

xxxvi.

His garment, nought but many ragged clouts,
With thornes together pind and patched was,
The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts :
And him beside there lay upon the gras
A dreary corse, whose life away did pas,
All wallowd in his own yet luke-warme blood,
That from his wound yet welled fresh, alas !
In which a rusty knife fast fixed stood,
And made an open passage for the gushing flood.

xxxii. 2. — that Treachours] *Treachour, treachetour,*
traitor. Gall. *tricheur.* UPTON.xxxiii. 9. *For lever had I die &c.] I had rather die than*
&c. CHURCH.xxxiii. 3. — ypyght.] *Pight is frequent in Spenser for*
plac'd, fix'd. TODD.

xxxvii.

Which piteous spectacle, approving trew
The wofull tale that Trevisan had told,
Whenas the gentle Redcrosse Knight did vew ;
With fire zeale he burnt in courage bold
Him to avenge, before his blood were cold ;
And to the Villein sayd ; "Thou damned wight,
The authour of this fact we here behold,
What justice can but iudge against thee right,
With thine owne blood to price his blood, here shed
in sight ?"

xxxviii.

"What franticke fit," quoth he, "hath thus dis-
traught
Thee, foolish man, so rash a doome to give ?
That justice ever other iudgement taught,
But he should dye, who merites not to live ?
None els to death this man despayring drive
But his owne guiltie mind, deserving death.
Is then uniuist to each his dew to give ?
Or let him dye that loatheth living breath ?
Or let him die at ease, that liveth here un-
neath ?"

xxxix.

"Who travailes by the wearie wandring way,
To come unto his wished home in haste,
And meetes a flood, that doth his passage stay ;
Is not great grace to helpe him over past,
Or free his feet that in the myre sticke fast ?
Most envious man, that grieves at neighbours
good ;
And fond, that ioyest in the woe thou hast ;
Why wilt not let him passe, that long hath stood
Upon the bancke, yet wilt thy selfe not pas the
flood ?"

xli.

"He there does now enjoy eternal rest [crave,
And happy ease, which thou doest want and
And further from it daily wanderest :
What if some little payne the passage have,
That makes frayle flesh to feare the bitter ware ;
Is not short payne well borne, that brings long
ease,
And layes the soule to sleepe in quiet grave ?
Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie seas,
Ease after warre, death after life, does greatly
please."

xlii.

The Knight much wondred at his suddaine wit,
And sayd ; "The terme of life is limited,
Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten, it :
The souldier may not move from watchfull sted,
Nor leave his stand untill his captaine bed."
"Who life did limit by Almighty doome,"
Quoth he, "knowes best the termes established ;
And he, that points the centonell his roome.
Doth license him depart at sound of morning
drome."

xxxvii. 9. *With thine owne blood to price his blood, &c.]*
That is, to pay the price of his blood with thine. Ital.
prezzare. UPRON.

xxxviii. 9. ——— un-
neath?] *Scarcely.* TODD.

xxxix. 4. ——— to helpe him over past,] That is, to
help him pass over ; past for pass, because of the rhyme.
CHURCH.

xxxix. 7. *And fond,] Foolish* UPRON.

xli. 1. ——— his suddaine wit,] His ready wit. CHURCH.

xli. 4. ——— from watchfull sted,] Place or station ; a
word of frequent occurrence in Spenser. TODD.

xliii.

"Is not His deed, what ever thing is donne
In heaven and earth ? Did not He all create
To die againe ? All forth, that was begonne :
Their times in His eternall booke of fate
Are written sure, and have their certain date.
Who then can strive with strong necessitie,
That holds the world in his still chaunging state,
Or shunne the death ordaynd by destinie ?
When hour of death is come, let none aske whence,
nor why."

xliv.

"The lenger life, I wote the greater sin ;
The greater sin, the greater punishment :
All those great battels, which thou boasts to win
Through strife, and blood-shed, and avengement,
Now praysd, hereafter deare thou shalt repent :
For life must life, and blood must blood, repay.
Is not enough thy evill life forespent ?
For he that once hath missed the right way,
The further he doth goe, the further he doth stray."

xlv.

"Then doe no further goe, no further stray ;
But here ly downe, and to thy rest betake,
Th' ill to prevent, that life enseven may.
For what hath life, that may it loved make,
And gives not rather cause it to forsake ?
Feare, sicknesse, age, losse, labour, sorrow, strife,
Payne, hunger, cold that makes the heart to
And ever fickle fortune rageth rife ; [quake ;
All which, and thousands mo, do make a loathsome
life."

xlvi.

"Thou, wretched man, of death hast greatest need,
If in true ballaunce thou wilt weigh thy state ;
For never Knight, that dared warlike deed,
More luckless dissaventures did amate :
Witnes the dunceon deepe, wherein of late
Thy life shutt up for death so oft did call ;
And though good lucke prolonged hath thy date,
Yet death then would the like mishaps forestall,
Into the which hereafter thou maist happen fall."

xlvii.

"Why then doest thou, O man of sin, desire
To draw thy dayes forth to their last degree ?
Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire
High heaped up with huge iniquitee,
Against the day of wrath, to burden thee ?
Is not enough, that to this Lady mild
Thou falsed hast thy faith with periuree,
And sold thy selfe to serve Duessa vild,
With whom in all abuse thou hast thy selfe defild ?"

xlviii.

"Is not He iust, that all this doth behold
From highest heven, and beares an equal eie ?
Shall He thy sins up in His knowledge fold,
And guilty be of thine impietie ?
Is not His law, Let every sinner die,
Die shall all flesh ? What then must needs be
Is it not better to doe willinglie, [donne,

xlv. 4. *More luckless dissaventures did amate ;] Dis-
sa-ventures, misfortunes.* Span. *Desventura.* Ital. *Disav-
ventura.* Amate is here used by Spenser in the sense of
subdue or *daunt.* TODD.

xlvii. 7. *Thou falsed hast ;] Hast broke, made false.* UPRON.

Then linger till the glas be all out ronne ?
Death is the end of woes : Die soone, O Faries
sonne."

XLVIII.

The Knight was much enmoued with his speach,
That as a sword's poynt through his hart did perse,
And in his conscience made a secrete breach,
Well knowing trew all that he did reherse,
And to his fresh remembraunce did reverse
The ngly vew of his deformed crimes ;
That all his manly powres it did disperse,
As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes ;
That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted oftentimes.

XLIX.

In which amazement when the Miscraunt
Perceiued him to waver weake and fraile,
Whiles trembling horror did his conscience daunt,
And hellish anguish did his soule assaile ;
To drive him to despair, and quite to quaille,
Hee shewd him painted in a table plaine
The damned ghosts, that doe in torments waile,
And thousand feends, that doe them endlesse
paine
With fire and brimstone, which for ever shall
remaine.

L.

The sight whereof so throughly him dismayd,
That nought but death before his eies he saw,
And ever burning wrath before him laid,
By righteous sentence of th' Almighties law.
Then gan the Villein him to overcraw,
And brought unto him swords, ropes, poison, fire,
And all that might him to perdition draw ;
And bad him choose, what death he would desire :
For death was dew to him, that had provokt Gods
ire.

LI.

But, whenas none of them he saw him take,
He to him rought a dagger sharpe and keene,
And gave it him in hand : his hand did quake
And tremble like a leafe of aspin greene,
And troubled blood through his pale face was seene
To come and goe, with tidings from the heart,
As it a ronning messenger had bene.
At last, resolv'd to work his finall smart,
He lifted up his hand, that backe againe did start.

LII.

Which whenas Una saw, through every vaine
The cruded cold ran to her well of life,
As in a sowne : but, soone reliv'd againe,
Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed knife,
And threw it to the ground, enraged rife,
And to him said ; " Fie, fie, faint hearted Knight,
What meanest thou by this reprochfull strife ?

XLVIII. 5. ——— *did reverse*] In Hughes's imperfect Glossary to Spenser, we find *reverse* (Lat. *revertere*) to *return*. But here *reverse* signifies, not to return, but to *cause to return*. JORTIN.

XLIX. 5. ——— *to quaille,*] *Subdue*, altered from *quell*, as *quayd* also appears to be, F. Q. i. viii. 14. Belg. *quellen*, *subigere*. *Quell* is likewise used for *to destroy or kill*. TODD.

XLIX. 6. ——— *in a table*] A *picture*. Lat. *Tabula*. CHURCH.

L. 5. ——— *to overcraw,*] *Crow over*, or *insult*. Spelt *overcraue* for the sake of the rhyme. TODD.

LI. 3. ——— *but, soone reliv'd*] *Brought to life againe*.

Is this the battaile, which thou vamtst to fight
With that fire-mouthed Dragon, horrible and
bright ?

LIII.

"Come ; come away, fraile, feeble, fleshly wight,
Ne let vaine words bewitch thy manly hart,
Ne delivish thoughts dismay thy constant spright :
In heavenly mercies hast thou not a part ?
Why shouldst thou then despice, that chosen art ?
Where iustice growes, there grows eke greater
grace,
The which doth quench the brond of hellish
And that accurst hand-writing doth deface :
Arise, sir Knight ; arise, and leave this cursed
place."

LIV.

So up he rose, and thence amounted streight.
Which when the Carle beheld, and saw his guest
Would safe depart, for all his subtile sleight ;
He chose an halter from among the rest,
And with it hong himselfe, unbid, unblest.
But death he could not worke himselfe thereby ;
For thousand times he so himselfe had drest,
Yet nathelless it could not doe him die,
Till he should die his last, that is, eternally.

CANTO X.

Her faithfull Knight faire Una brings
To House of Holinesse ;
Where he is taught repentance, and
The way to heavenly blesse.

I.

WHAT man is he, that boasts of fleshly might
And vaine assurance of mortality,
Which, all so soone as it doth come to fight
Against spirituall foes, yields by and by,
Or from the field most cowardly doth fly !
Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill,
That thorough grace hath gained victory :
If any strength we have, it is to ill ;
But all the good is Gods, both power and eke will.

II.

By that which lately haped, Una saw
That this her Knight was feeble, and too faint ;
And all his sinewes woxen weake and raw,
Through long emprisonment, and hard constraint,
Which he endured in his late restraint,
That yet he was unfit for bloody fight.
Therefore to cherish him with diets daint,
She cast to bring him, where he chearen might,
Till he recovered had his late decayed plight.

III.

There was an anncient House not far away,
Renowd throughout the world for sacred lore
And pure unspotted life : so well, they say,
It governd was, and guided evermore,
Through wisdom of a Matrone grave and hore ;
Whose onely ioy was to relieve the needs

LIV. 2. ——— the Carle] The *Churl*. A word often used by Spenser. TODD.

LIV. 5. ——— *unbid,*] *Without saying his prayers*. Chaucer uses *bede*, to pray. Thus *Beats-men* are *prayer-men*. Anglo-Sax. *Biddan*, *orare*. UPRON.

II. 8. ——— *where he chearen might,*] "Where he chearen might," i. e. where he might be cheared. UPRON.

Of wretched soules, and helpe the helpelesse pore ;
All night she spent in bidding of her bedes,
And all the day in doing good and godly deedes.

iv.

Dame Cælia men did her call, as thought
From heaven to come, or thether to arise ;
The mother of three Daughters, well brought
In goodly thewes, and godly exercise :
The eldest two, most sober, chaste, and wise,
Fidelia and Speranza, Virgins were ;
Though sponed, yet wanting wedlocks solemnize ;
But faire Charissa to a lovely fere
Was lincked, and by him had many pledges dere.

v.

Arrived there, the dore they find fast lockt ;
For it was warely watcht night and day,
For feare of many foes ; but, when they knoekt,
The porter opened unto them streight way.
He was an aged syre, all hory gray,
With lookes full lowly cast, and gate full slow,
Wont on a staffe his feeble steps to stay,
Hight Humiltā. They passe in, stouping low ;
For streight and narrow was the way which he did
show.

vi.

Each goodly thing is hardest to begin ;
But, entred in, a spacious court they see,
Both plaine and pleasaunt to be walkt in ;
Where them does meete a francklin faire and free,
And entertaines with comely courteous glee ;
His name was Zele, that him right well became :
For in his speeches and behavoure hee
Did labour lively to expresse the same,
And gladly did them guide, till to the hall they
came.

vii.

There fayrely them receives a gentle squire,
Of myld demeanure and rare courtesee,
Right cleanly clad in comely sad attyre ;
In word and deede that shewd great modestee,
And knew his good to all of each degree ;
Hight Reverence : He them with speeches meet
Does faire entreat ; no courting nicetee,
But simple, trew, and eke unfained sweet,
As might become a squire so great persons to greet.

viii.

And afterwarde them to his Dame he leades,
That aged Dame, the Lady of the place,
Who all this while was busy at her beades ;
Which doen, she up arose with seemely grace,
And toward them full matronely did pace.
Where, when that fairest Una she beheld,
Whom well she knew to spring from heavenly
Her heart with ioy unwonted inly sweld, [race,
As feeling wondrous comfort in her weaker eld :

iv. 8. — to a lovely fere.] *Fere* is here employed for husband, as in Chaucer it is used for wife. Todd.

vi. 4. — a francklin faire and free.] A francklin is a person of some distinction in our ancient history. He makes a conspicuous figure in Chaucer; and his manners bespeak his wealth. Todd.

vii. 3. — in comely sad attyre.] In grave, decent, attyre. Todd.

viii. 5. And knew his good &c.] That is, he knew how to behave himself, or could behave himself suitably, &c. Church.

ix.

And, her embracing, said ; “O happy earth,
Whereon thy innocent feet doe ever tread !
Most vertuous Virgin, borne of heavenly hert,
That, to redeeme thy woefull Parents head
From tyrans rage and ever-dying dread,
Hast wandred through the world now long a day,
Yett ceassest not thy weary soles to lead ; [way !
What grace hath thee now hether brought this
Or doen thy feeble feet unweeting hether stray ?

x.

“Straunge thing it is an errant Knight to see
Here in this place ; or any other wight,
That hether turnes his steps : So few there bee,
That chose the narrow path, or seeke the right !
All keepe the broad high way, and take delight
With many rather for to goe astray,
And he partakers of their evill plight,
Then with a few to walke the rightest way :
O ! foolish men, why hast ye to your own decay !”

xi.

“Thy selfe to see, and tyred limbes to rest,
O Matrone sage,” quoth she, “I hether came ;
And this good Knight his way with me adrest,
Ledd with thy prayes, and broad-blazed fame,
That up to heven is blowne.” The auncient Dame
Him goodly greeted in her modest guise,
And enterteynd them both, as best became,
With all the court’sies that she could devyse,
Ne wanted ought to shew her bounteous or wise.

xii.

Thus as they gan of sondrie things devise,
Loe ! two most goodly Virgins came in place,
Ylinkt arme in arme, in lovely wise ;
With countenance demure, and modest grace,
They numbred even steps and equal pace :
Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight,
Like sunny beames threw from her christall face
That could have dazd the rash beholders sight,
And round about her head did shine like heavens
light.

xiii.

She was araied all in lilly white,
And in her right hand bore a cup of gold,
With wine and water filld up to the light,
In which a serpent did himselfe enfold,
That horrour made to all that did behold ;
But she no whitt did change her constant mood :
And in her other hand she fast did hold [blood ;
A Booke, that was both signd and seald with
Wherein darke things were writt, hard to be
understood.

xiv.

Her younger sister, that Speranza hight,
Was clad in blew, that her beseeemd well ;
Not all so chearefull seemed she of sight,
As was her sister ; whether dread did dwell
Or anguish in her hart, is hard to tell :
Upon her arme a silver anchor lay,
Whereon she leane ever, as befell ;
And ever up to heven, as she did pray,
Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarved other way

xv.

They, seeing Una, towards her gan wend,
Who them encounters with like courtesee ;
Many kind speeches they betwene them spend

And greatly ioy each other for to see :
Then to the Knight with shamefast modestie
They turne themselves, at Unnes meeke request,
And him salute with well beseeming glee ;
Who faire them quites, as him beseemed best,
And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.

xvi.

Then Una thus ; " But she, your sister deare,
The deare Charissa, where is she become ?
Or wants she health, or busie is elsewhere ?"
" Ah ! no," said they, " but forth she may not
come ;

For she of late is lightned of her wombe, [more,
And hath encreast the world with one sonne
That her to see should be but troublesome."

" Indeed," quoth she, " that should her trouble
sore ;
But thank be God, and her encrease so ever-
more !"

xvii.

Then said the aged Cælia ; " Deare dame,
And you, good Sir, I wote that of youre toyle
And labors long, through which ye hether came,
Ye both forwearied be : therefore a while
I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle."
Then called she a grooms, that forth him led
Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile
Of puissant armes, and laid in easie bedd :
His name was meeke Obedience rightfully aredd.

xviii.

Now when their wearie limbes with kindly rest,
And bodie's were refresh't with dew repast,
Fayre Una gan Fidelia fayre request,
To have her Knight into her Schoolehouse plaste,
That of her heavenly learning he might taste,
And heare the wisdom of her wordes divine.
She granted ; and that Knight so much agraste,
That she him taught celestiaall discipline,
And opened his dull eyes, that light mote in them
shine.

xix.

And that her sacred Booke, with blood ywritt,
That none could reade except she did them
She unto him disclosed every whitt ; [teach,
And heavenly documents thereont did preach,
That weaker witt of man could never reach ;
Of God ; of Grace ; of Iustice ; of Free-will ;
That wonder was to heare her goodly speech :
For she was habile with her wordes to kill,
And rayse againe to life the hart that she did thrill.

xx.

And, when she list poure out her larger spright,
She would commaund the hasty sunne to stay,
Or backward turne his course from hev'n's hight :
Sometimes great hostes of men she could dismay ;
Dry-shod to passe she parts the fouds in tway ;
And eke huge mountaines from their native seat

xv. 9. — many a noble gest] *Action, or Adventure.* TODD.

xvi. 2. *The deare Charissa*, where is she become ? The expression, *Where is she become ?* means, where is she, and what is become of her ? UPRON.

xvii. 5. *I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle.* I advise you to repose yourselves, and retire to your chambers. *Recoyle*, Fr. reculer, retire. CHURCH.

xviii. 7. — so much agraste.] *She wote him so much grace and favour.* Ital. *aggratiare*. UPRON.

She would commaund themselves to heare away,
And throw in raging sea with roaring threat ;
Almightie God her gave such powre and p'issannce
great.

xxi.

The faithfull Knight now grew in little space,
By hearing her, and by her sisters lore,
To such perfection of all heavenly grace,
That wretched world he gan for to abhorre,
And mortall life gan loath as thing forelore,
Greev'd with remembrance of his wicked wayes,
And prick't with anguish of his sinnes so sore,
That he desire to end his wretched dayes :
So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soule
dismayes !

xxii.

But wise Speranza gave him comfort sweet,
And taught him how to take assured hold
Upon her silver anchor, as was meet ;
Eis has his sinnes so great and manifold
Made him forget all that Fidelia told.
In this distressed doubtfull agony,
When him his dearest Una did behold
Disdeining life, desiring leave to dye,
She found her selfe assay'd with great perplexity ;

xxiii.

And came to Cælia to declare her smart ;
Who well acquainted with that commune plight,
Which sinfull horror workes in wounded hart,
Her wisely comforted all that she might,
With goodly counsell and advicement right ;
And straightway sent with careful diligence,
To fetch a leach, the which had great insight
In that disease of griev'd conscience,
And well could cure the same ; his name was Pa-
tience.

xxiv.

Who, coming to that sowl-diseas'd Knight,
Could hardly him intreat to tell his grief :
Which knowne, and all, that noyd his heavie
spright,
Well searcht, eftsouones he gan apply relief
Of salves and med'cines, which had passing prief ;
And thereto added wordes of wondrous might :
By which to ease he him-recured brief,
And much aswag'd the passion of his plight,
That he his paine endur'd, as seeming now more
light.

xxv.

But yet the cause and root of all his ill,
Inward corruption and infected sin,
Not purg'd nor heald, behind remained still,
And festring sore did rancle yett within,
Close creeping twixt the marow and the skin :
Which to extirpe, he laid him privily
Downe in a darksome lowly place far in,
Whereas he meant his e'rosives to apply,
And with streight diet tame his stubborne malady.

xxvi.

In ashes and sackcloth he did array
His daintie corse, proud humors to abate ;
And dieted with fasting every day,
The swelling of his woundes to mitigate ;

xxiv. 5. — passing prief ;] So, in St. 31, " *passing price*," — *surpassing, extraordinary*. CHURCH.

xxv. 6. *Which to extirpe.* Extirpate, Lat. *extirpare* He spells it near the French idiom, *extirper*. UPRON.

And made him pray both earely and eke late :
 And ever, as superfluous flesh did rott.
 Amendment readie still at hand did want,
 To pluck it out with pincers fyrie whout,
 That soone in him was lefte no one corrupted iott.

xxvii.

And bitter Penance, with an yron whip,
 Was wont him once to disple every day :
 And sharp Remorse his hart did prick and nip,
 That drops of blood thence like a well did play :
 And sad Repentance used to embay
 His body in salt water smarting sore,
 The filthy blottes of sin to wash away.
 So in short space they did to health restore
 The Man that would not live, but erst lay at deatheaes
 dore.

xxviii.

In which his torment often was so great,
 That, like a lyon, he would cry and rore ;
 And rend his flesh ; and his own synewes eat.
 His owne deare Una, hearing evermore
 His ruefull shriekes and gronings, often tore
 Her guiltlesse garments and her golden heare,
 For pity of his payne and anguish sore :
 Yet all with patience wisely she did beare ;
 For well she wist his cryme could els be never
 cleare.

xxix.

Whom, thus recover'd by wise Patience
 And trew Repentance, they to Una brought ;
 Who, ioyous of his cured conscience,
 Him dearely kist, and fayrely eke besought
 Himselfe to chearish, and consuming thought
 To put away out of his carefull brest.
 By this Charissa, late in child-bed brought,
 Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest :
 To her fayre Una brought this unacquainted guest.

xxx.

She was a woman in her freshest age,
 Of wondrous beauty, and of bounty rare,
 With goodly grace and comely personage,
 That was on earth not easie to compare ;
 Full of great love ; but Cupids wanton snare
 As hell she hated ; chaste in worke and will ;
 Her necke and brests were ever open bare,
 That aye thereof her babes might sucke their fill ;
 The rest was all in yellow robes arayed still.

xxxi.

A multitude of babes about her hong,
 Playing their sportes, that ioyd her to behold ;
 Whom still she fed, whiles they were weake and
 young,
 But thrust them forth still as they wexed old :
 And on her head she wore a tyre of gold,
 Adorn'd with gemmes and owches wondrous fayre,
 Whose passing price uneach was to be told :
 And by her syde there sate a gentle payre
 Of turtle doves, she sitting in an yvory chayre.

xxxii.

The Knight and Una entring fayre her greet,
 And bid her ioy of that her happy brood ;

xxvii. 2. — to disple every day:] By to disple, that is, to discipline or discipline, were formerly signified the penitentiary whippings, practised among the monks; so that it is here applied with the greatest propriety. T. WARTON.

xxxi. 6. Adorn'd with gemmes and owches] Owches here seem intended for jewels. TODD.

Who them requites with court'sies seeming meet,
 And entertaynes with friendly chearefull mood.
 Then Una her besought, to be so good
 As in her vertuous rules to schoole her Knight,
 Now after all his torment well withstood
 In that sad House of Penance, where his spright
 Had past the paines of hell and long-enduring night.

xxxiii.

She was right ioyous of her iust request ;
 And, taking by the hand that Faeries sonne,
 Gan him instruct in everie good behest,
 Of Love ; and Righteousnes ; and Well to donne ;
 And Wrath and Hatred warily to shonne,
 That drew on men Gods hatred and his wrath,
 And many soules in dolours had fordonne :
 In which when him she well instructed hath,
 From thence to heaven she teacheth him the ready
 path.

xxxiv.

Wherein his weaker wandring steps to guye,
 An ancient Matrone she to her does call,
 Whose sober lookes her wisdomed well descryde ;
 Her name was Mercy ; well knowne over all
 To be both grations and eke liberal :
 To whom the carefull charge of him she gave,
 To leade aright, that he should never fall
 In all his waies through this wide world's wave ;
 That Mercy in the end his righteous soule might save.

xxxv.

The godly Matrone by the hand him beares
 Forth from her presence, by a narrow way,
 Scattered with bushy thornes and ragged brcares,
 Which still before him she remov'd away,
 That nothing might his ready passage stay :
 And ever when his feet encombrd were,
 Or gan to shrinke, or from the right to stray,
 She held him fast, and firmly did appeare ;
 As carefull nurse her child from falling oft does
 reare.

xxxvi.

Eftsoones unto an holy Hospitall,
 That was foreby the way, she did him bring ;
 In which Seven Bead-men, that had vowed all
 Their life to service of high heavens King,
 Did spend their daies in doing godly thing :
 Their gates to all were open evermore,
 That by the wearie way were travelling ;
 And one sate wayting ever them before,
 To call in commers-by, that needy were and pore

xxxvii.

The First of them, that eldest was and best,
 Of all the house had charge and government,
 As guardian and steward of the rest :
 His office was to give entertainment
 And lodging unto all that came and went ;
 Not unto such as could him feast againe,
 And double quite for that he on them spent ;
 But such, as want of harbour did constraine :
 Those for Gods sake his dewty was to enttaine.

xxxviii.

The Second was as almer of the place :
 His office was the hungry for to feed,

xxxix. 9. Had past] I should suppose past is here used for suffered. Lat. passus. CHURCH.

xxxii. 4. — And Well to donne:] That is, and of Well doing. UPRON.

xxxvii. 1. — best,] First in precedence CHURCH.

And thirsty give to drinke ; a worke of grace :
 He feard not once himselfe to be in need,
 Ne car'd to hoord for those whom he did breede :
 The grace of God he layd up still in store,
 Which as a stocke he left unto his seede :
 He had enough ; what need him care for more ?
 And had he lesse, yet some he would give to the
 pore.

xxxix.

The Third had of their wardrobe custody,
 In which were not rich tyres, nor garments gay,
 The plumes of pride, and winges of vanity,
 But cloth's meet to keep keene cold away,
 And naked nature seemely to aray ;
 With which bare wretched wights he dayly clad,
 The images of God in earthly clay ;
 And, if that no spare clothes to give he had,
 His owne cote he would cut, and it distribute glad.

xl.

The Fourth appointed by his office was
 Poore prisoners to relieve with gracious ayd,
 And captives to redeeme with price of bras
 From Turkes and Sarazins, which them had
 stayd :
 And though they faulty were, yet well he wayd,
 That God to us forgiveth every howre [layd ;
 Much more then that why they in bands were
 And He, that barrowd hell with heavie stowre,
 The faulty soules from thence brought to his
 heavenly bowre.

xli.

The Fift had charge sick persons to attend,
 And comfort those in point of death which lay ;
 For them most needeth comfort in the end,
 When Sin, and Hell, and Death, doe most dismay
 The feeble soule departing hence away.
 All is but lost, that living we bestow,
 If not well ended at our dying day.
 O man ! have mind of that last bitter throw ;
 For as the tree does fall, so lyes it ever low.

xlii.

The Sixt had charge of them now being dead,
 In seemely sort their corses to engrave,
 And deck with dainty flowres their bryddall bed,
 That to their heavenly Spouse both sweet and
 brave [save.
 They might appeare, when He their soules shall
 The wondrous workmanship of Gods owne mould,
 Whose face He made all beastes to feare, and gave
 All in his hand, even dead we honour should.
 Ah, dearest God, me graunt, I dead be not defould !

xliii.

The Seventh, now after death and buriall done,
 Had charge the tender orphans of the dead
 And wydowes ayd, least they should be undone :
 In face of iudgement he their right would plead,
 Ne ought the powre of mighty men did dread

xl. 8. — that harrowd hell] *Subdued hell.* TODD.

xlii. 2. — to engrave,] *To put into the grave, to bury.*
 CHURCH.

xlii. 7. *Whose face he made all beastes to feare, and gave
 All in his hand,] That is, into whose hand he
 ave all.* T. WARTON.

xliii. 2. — the tender orphans of the dead
*And wydowes ayd,] To aid the tender orphands and
 widows of the dead.* CHURCH.

In their defence ; nor would for gold or fea
 Be wonne their rightfull causes downe to tread :
 And, when they stood in most necessitee,
 He did supply their want, and gave them ever
 free.

xliv.

There when the Elfin Knight arrived was,
 The first and chiefest of the Seven, whose care
 Was guests to welcome, towards him did pas ;
 Where seeing Mercie, that his steps upbare
 And alwaies led, to her with reverence rare
 He humbly louted in meeke lowlinesse,
 And seemely welcome for her did prepare :
 For of their Order she was Patronesse,
 Albe Charissa were their chiefest Foundersse.

xlv.

There she awhile him staves, himselfe to rest,
 That to the rest more hable he might bee :
 During which time, in every good behest,
 And godly worke of Ahnes and Charitee,
 Shee him instructed with great industrie.
 Shortly therein so perfect he became,
 That, from the first unto the last degree,
 His mortall life he learned had to frame
 In holy righteousnesse, without rebuke or blame.

xlvi.

Thence forward by that painfull way they pas
 Forth to an Hill, that was both steepe and hy ;
 On top whereof a sacred Chappell was,
 And eke a litle Hermitage thereby,
 Wherein an aged holy man did lie,
 That day and night said his devotion,
 Ne other worldly busines did apply :
 His name was Heavenly Contemplation ;
 Of God and goodnes was his meditation.

xlvii.

Great grace that old man to him given had ;
 For God he often saw from heavens light :
 All were his earthly eien both blunt and bad,
 And through great age had lost their kindly
 sight, [spright,
 Yet wondrous quick and persauant was his
 As eagles eie, that can behold the sunne.
 That Hill they scale with all their powre and
 might,
 That his fraile thighes, nigh weary and fordonne,
 Gan faile ; but, by her helpe, the top at last he
 wonne.

xlviii.

There they doe finde that godly aged Sire,
 With snowy lockes adowne his shoulders shed ;
 As hoary frost with spangles doth attire
 The mossy branches of an oke halfe ded.
 Each bone might through his body well be red,
 And every sinew seene, through his long fast :
 For nought he car'd his carcas long unfed ;
 His mind was full of spiritual repast,
 And pyn'd his flesh to keep his body low and
 chast.

xlix.

Who, when these two approaching he aspide,
 At their first presence grew agrieved sore,

xlvi. 7. — did apply :] *Mind.* CHURCH.

xlvii. 9. — by her helpe,] *That is, through mercy.*
 CHURCH.

That first him lay his hevenly thoughts aside ;
 And had he not that Dame respected more,
 Whom highly he did reverence and adore,
 He would not once have moved for the Knight.
 They him saluted, standing far afore ;
 Who, well them greeting, humbly did requight,
 And asked, to what end they clomb that tedious
 hight ?

L.

“ What end,” quoth she, “ should cause us take such
 paine,
 But that same end, which every living wight
 Should make his marke, high heaven to attaine ?
 Is not from hence the way, that leadeth right
 To that most glorious House, that glistreth bright
 With burning starres and everliving fire,
 Whereof the keies are to thy hand behight
 By wise Fidelia ? She doth thee require,
 To shew it to this Knight, according his desire.”

Ll.

“ Thrise happy man,” said then the Father grave,
 “ Whose staggering steps thy steady hand doth
 lead,
 And shewes the way his sinfull soule to save |
 Who better can the way to heaven aread
 Then thou thyselfe, that was both borne and bred
 In hevenly throne, where thousand angels shine ?
 Thou doest the prayers of the righteous sead
 Present before the Maiesty Divine,
 And His avenging wrath to elemency incline.

Lli.

“ Yet, since thou bidst, thy pleasure shal be denne.
 Then come, Thou man of earth, and see the way,
 That never yet was scene of Faries sonne ;
 That never leads the traveller astray,
 But, after labors long and sad delay,
 Brings them to ioyous rest and endlesse blis.
 But first thou must a season fast and pray,
 Till from her bands the spright assoiled is,
 And have her strength recur'd from fraile infirm-
 itis.”

Liii.

That done, he leads him to the highest Mount ;
 Such one, as that same mighty Man of God,
 That blood-red billowes like a walled front
 On either side disparted with his rod,
 Till that his army dry-foot through them yod,
 Dwelt forty daies upon ; where, writt in stone
 With bloody letters by the hand of God,
 The bitter doome of death and balefull mone
 He did receive, whiles flashing fire about him
 shone :

Liv.

Or like that sacred Hill, whose head full hic,
 Adorn'd with fruitfull olives all around,
 Is, as it were for endlesse memory
 Of that deare Lord who oft thereon was fownd,
 For ever with a flowring girlond crown'd :

xliv. 4. — more.] *Greatly*. CHURCH.
 l. 7. — behight] *Committed or entrusted*. TODD.
 l. 9. — according] *Granting*. Fr. *accord*. CHURCH.
 li. 3. *And shewes the way.*] He should have said, “ And
 to which it shewes the way.” T. WARTON.
 lii. 8. — *the spright assoiled is.*] *Is absolv'd*. Fr.
absolv'd. Often thus used by our old poets. TODD.
 liii. 3. — *blood-red billowes*] So he calls the waves of
 the Red Sea. JORTIN.

Or like that pleasaunt Mount, that is for ay
 Through famous poets verse each where renown'd,
 On which the thrise three learned Ladies play
 Their hevenly notes, and make full many a lovely
 lay.

Lv.

From thence, far off he unto him did shew
 A litle path, that was both steepe and long,
 Which to a goodly City led his vew ; [strong
 Whose wals and towres were builded high and
 Of perle and precious stone, that earthly tang
 Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell ;
 Too high a ditty for my simple song !
 The City of the Greate King hight it well,
 Wherein eternal peace and happinesse doth dwell

Lvi.

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see
 The blessed Angels to and fro descead
 From highest heven in gladsome companee,
 And with great ioy into that City wend,
 As commonly as frend does with his frend.
 Whereat he wondred much, and gan enquire,
 What stately building durst so high extend
 Her lofty towres unto the starry sphere,
 And what unknowen nation there empepled were.

Lvii.

“ Faire Knight,” quoth he, “ Hierusalem that is,
 The New Hierusalem, that God has built
 For those to dwell in, that are chosen his,
 His chosen people purg'd from sinful guilt
 With pretious blood, which cruelly was spilt
 On cursed tree, of that unspotted Lam,
 That for the sinnes of al the world was kilt ;
 Now are they Saints all in that City sam,
 More dear unto their God then younglings to their
 dam.”

Lviii.

“ Till now,” said then the Knight, “ I weened well,
 That great Cleopolis where I have bene,
 In which that fairest Fary Queene doth dwell,
 The fairest city was that might be seene ;
 And that bright towre, all built of christall elene,
 Panthea, seemd the brightest thing that was :
 But now by proefe all otherwise I weene ;
 For this great City that does far surpas,
 And this bright Angels towre quite dims that towre
 of glas.”

Lix.

“ Most trew,” then said the holy aged man ;
 “ Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame,
 The fairest peece that eie beholden can ;
 And well bebecemes all Knights of noble name,
 That covett in th' immortall boeke of fame
 To be eternized, that same to haunt,
 And doen their service to that soveraigne Dame,
 That glory does to them for guerdon graunt :
 For she is hevenly borne, and heaven may justly
 vaunt.

Lx.

“ And thou, faire ymp, sprong out from English
 How ever now accompted Elfins sonne, [race,

lvi. 5. — *As commonly*] That is, in as loving and
 sociable a manner. *Commonly* has here the same sense as
 the Latin word *communiter*, that is, together, *jointly*
 CHURCH.

lix. 3. *The fairest peece*] *Castle, building*. CHURCH.

Well worthy doest thy service for her grace,
To aide a Virgin desolate fordonne.
But when thou famous victory hast wonne,
And high amongst all Knights hast hong thy
shield,
Thenceforth the suitt of earthly conquest shonne,
And wash thy hands from guilt of bloody field :
For blood can nought but sin, and wars but sorrows,
yield.

LXI.

"Then seek this path that I to thee presage,
Which after all to heaven shall thee send ;
Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage
To yonder same Hierusalem doe bend,
Where is for thee ordaind a blessed end : [see,
For thou amongst those Saints, whom thou doest
Shall be a Saint, and thine owne Nations Friend
And Patrone : Thou *Saint George* shalt called bee,
Saint George of mery *England*, the signe of victoree."

LXII.

"Unworthy wretch," quoth he, "of so great grace,
How dare I thinke such glory to attaine !"
"These, that have it attaynd, were in like cace,"
Quoth he, "as wretched, and liv'd in like paine."
"But deeds of armes must I at last be faine
And Ladies love to leave, so dearly bought ?"
"What need of armes, where peace doth ay re-
maine,"
Said he, "and battailes none are to be fought ?
As for loose loves, they're vaine, and vanish into
nought."

LXIII.

"O let me not," quoth he, "then turne againe
Backe to the world, whose ioyes so fruitlesse are ;
But let me here for aie in peace remaine,
Or streightway on that last long voiage fare,
That nothing may my present hope empare."
"That may not be," said he, "ne maist thou yitt
Forgoe that royall Maides bequeathed care,
Who did her cause into thy hand commit,
Till from her cursed foe thou have her freely quitt."

LXIV.

"Then shall I soone," quoth he, "so God me grace,
Abett that Virgins cause disconsolate,
And shortly backe returne unto this place,
To walke this way in Pilgrims poore estate.
But now aread, old Father, why of late
Didst thou behight me borne of English blood,
Whom all a Faeries sonne doen nominate ?"
"That word shall I," said he, "avouchen good,
Sith to thee is unknowne the cradle of thy brood."

LXV.

"For well I wote thou springst from ancient race
Of Saxon kinges, that have with mightie hand,
And many bloody battailes fought in place,
High reard their royall throne in Britane land,
And vanquisht them, unable to withstand :
From thence a Faery thee unweeting reft,
There as thou slepst in tender swadling band,
And her base Elfin brood there for thee left :
Such, men do chaungelings call, so chaung'd by
Faeries theft.

LXI. 1. — that I to thee presage,] *Point out with my hand.* The French so use *presager*. CHURCH.

LXI. 9. — the signe of victoree.] *The word.* So, in military language, the counter-sign forms a part of the watch-word appointed for the day. TODD.

LXVI.

"Thence she thee brought into this Faery lond,
And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde ;
Where thee a ploughman all unweeting fond,
As he his toylesome teme that way did guye,
And brought thee up in ploughmans state to hyde,
Whereof Gēorgos he thee gave to name ;
Till prickt with courage, and thy forces pryde,
To Faery court thou cam'st to seek for fame,
And prove thy puissant armes, as seemes the best
became."

LXVII.

"O holy Sire," quoth he, "how shall I quight
The many favours I with thee have fownd,
That hast my Name and Nation redd aright,
And taught the way that does to heaven bownd !"
This saide, adowne he looked to the ground
To have returnd, but dazed were his eyne
Through passing brightnes, which did quite
confound
His feeble sence, and too exceeding shyne.
So darke are earthly thinges compar'd to things
divine !

LXVIII.

At last, whenas himselfe he gan to fynd,
To Una backe he cast him to retyre ;
Who him awaited still with pensive mynd.
Great thanks, and goodly meed, to that good
Syre
He thens departing gave for his paynes hyre.
So came to Una, who him ioyd to see ;
And, after litle rest, gan him desyre
Of her Adventure myndfull for to bee.
So leave they take of Cælia and her Daughters
three.

CANTO XI.

The Knight with that old Dragon fights
Two dayes incessantly :
The third, him overthrowes ; and gayns
Most glorious victory.

I.

HIGH time now gan it wex for Una fayre
To thinke of those her captive Parents deare,
And their forwasted kingdom to repayre :
Whereto whenas they now approached neare,
With hartie wordes her Knight she gan to cheare,
And in her modest manner thus bespake ; [deare,
"Deare Knight, as deare as ever Knight was
'That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake,
High Heaven behold the tedious toyle, ye for me
take !

II.

"Now are we come unto my native soyle,
And to the place where all our perilles dwell ;
Here hauntes that Feend, and does his daily
spoyle ;
Therefore henceforth bee at your keeping well,
And ever ready for your foeman fell :
The strike of noble courage now awake,
And strive your excellent selfe to excell :

LXVI. 6. *Whercof Gēorgos he thee gave to name ;*] *Georgo-*
in the Greek language signifying a husbandman. UIRON.
LXVII. 8. — and too exceeding shyne.] The con-
struction is, "Through passing brightnes, and too exceed-
ing shyne, which did quite confound his feeble sence.
Shyne is used as a substantive for *light*. CHURCH.

That shall ye evermore renowned make
Above all Knights on earth, that battaill undertake."

III.

And pointing forth, "Lo ! yonder is," said she,
"The brasen towre, in which my Parents deare
For dread of that huge Feend emprisoned be ;
Whom I from far see on the walles appeare,
Whose sight my feeble soule doth greatly cheare :
And on the top of all I do espye
The watchman wayting tydings glad to heare ;
That, O my parents, might I happily
Unto you bring, to ease you of your misery !"

IV.

With that they heard a roaring hideous sound,
That all the ayre with terror filled wyde,
And seemd uncaith to shake the stedfast ground.
Eftsoones that dreadful Dragon they espyde,
Where stretcht he lay upon the sunny side
Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill :
But, all so soone as he from far descriyde [fill,
Those glistring armes that heven with light did
He rousd himselfe full blyth, and hastned them
untill.

V.

Then badd the Knight his Lady yede aloof,
And to an hill herselfe withdraw asyde ; [proof,
From whence she might behold that battaill
And eke be safe from daunger far descriyde :
She him obeyd, and turnd a little wyde.—
New, O thou sacred Muse, most learned dame,
Fayre ympe of Phœbus and his aged bryde,
The nourse of time and everlasting fame,
That warlike handes ennobleth with immortall
name ;

VI.

O, gently come into my feeble brest,
Come gently ; but not with that mightie rage,
Wherewith the martiall troupes thou doest infest,
And hartes of great heroës doest enrage,
That nought their kindled corage may aswage :
Soone as thy dreadful trompe begins to sound,
The god of warre with his fiers equipage
Thou doest awake, sleepe never he so sound ;
And scared nations doest with horror sterne
astownd.

VII.

Fayre goddesse, lay that furious fitt asyde,
Till I of warres and bloody Mars doe sing,
And Bryton fieldes with Sarazin blood bedyde,
Twixt that great Faery Queene and Paynim King,
That with their horror heven and earth did ring ;
A worke of labour long, and endless prayse :
But now a while lett downe that haughtie string,

III. 8. That, *O my Parents, might I &c.*] That is, the which tydings. UPRON.

IV. 3. ——— uncaith] So all the editions. I suppose it means *beneath*, and is a contraction for *underneath*. CHURCH.

IV. 9. ——— untill.] *Unto*. CHURCH.

V. 1. ——— *his Lady yede aloof,*] *To yede* is to go. TODD.

V. 9. *That warlike handes*] *Handes* for *persons*. CHURCH.

VII. 1. ——— *that furious fitt*] *Fitt*, from what follows in the seventh line of this stanza, seems to be used in the sense of a *musical strain*. TODD.

VII. 7. ——— *that haughtie string,*] That *high-tuned* string. So, in French, *Haut-contre* is, in musick, the *Counter-tenor*. The Italians use *Alto* in the same sense. TODD.

And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse,
That I this Man of God his godly armes may
blaze.

VIII.

By this, the dreadful Beast drew nigh to naci,
Halfe flying and halfe footing in his haste,
That with his largeness measured much land,
And made wide shadow under his huge waste ;
As mountaine doth the valley overcaste.
Approching nigh, he reared high afere
His body monstrous, horrible, and vaste ;
Which, to increase his wondrous greatnes more,
Was swoln with wiath and poyson, and with
bloody gore ;

IX.

And over all with brasen scales was armd,
Like plated cote of steele, so couched neare
That nought mote perce ; ne might his corse be
harnd
With dint of sword, nor push of pointed speare :
Which, as an eagle, seeing pray appeare,
His aery plumes doth rouze full rudely dight ;
So shaked he, that horror was to heare :
For, as the clashing of an armor bright,
Such noyse his rouzed scales did send unto the
Knight.

X.

His flaggy winges, when forth he did display,
Were like two sayles, in which the hollow wynd
Is gathered full, and worketh speedy way :
And eke the pennes, that did his pineons bynd,
Were like mayne-yarves with flying canvas lynd ;
With which whenas him list the ayre to beat,
And there by force unwented passage fynd,
The cloudes before him fedd for terror great,
And all the heavens stood still amazed with his
threat.

XI.

His hnge long tayle, wound up in hundred foldes,
Dees overspred his long bras-scaly back,
Whose wreathed boughtes when ever he unfolds,
And thicke-entangled knots adown does slack,
Bespotted as with shieldes of red and blacke,
It sweepeth all the laud behind him farre,
And of three furlongs does but litle lacke ;
And at the point two stinges infixed arre,
Both deadly sharp, that sharpest steele exceeden
farre.

XII.

But stinges and sharpest steele did far exceed
The sharpnesse of his cruel reuding clawes :
Dead was it sure, as sure as death indeed,
What ever thing does touch his ravenous paves,
Or what within his reach he ever drawes.
But his most hideous head my tongue to tell
Does tremble ; for his deepe devouring iawes
Wyde gaped, like the griesly mouth of hell,
Through which into his darke abysses all ravin
fell.

IX. 1. *And over all &c.*] That is, *And* was armd all over &c. CHURCH.

IX. 5. *Which,*] *Which scales*. CHURCH.

X. 2. *Were like two sayles*] *Sails* are often used by our author for *wings*. T. WARTON.

XI. 3. *Whose wreathed boughtes*] *Twists* or *folde*. TODD.

XII. 1. *But &c.*] The construction is, *But the sharpnesse of his cruell reuding clawes did far exceed stinges and sharpest steele*. CHURCH.

xiii.

And, that more wondrous was, in either iaw
 Three rankes of yron teeth enraunged were,
 In which yett trickling blood, and gobbets raw,
 Of late deuoured bodies did appeare ;
 That sight thereof bredd cold congealed feare :
 Which to increase, and all at once to kill,
 A cloud of smothering smoke, and sulphure seare,
 Out of his stinking gorge forth steemed still,
 That all the ayre about with smoke and stench did
 fill.

xiv.

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining shieldes,
 Did burne w th wrath, and sparkled liuing fyre :
 As two broad beacons, sett in open fieldes,
 Send forth their flames far off to every shyre,
 And warning giue, that enemies conspyre
 With fire and sword the region to invade ;
 So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous yre :
 But far within, as in a hollow glade,
 Those glaring lampes were sett, that made a
 dreadful shade.

xv.

So dreadfully he towards him did pas,
 Forehifting up aloft his speckled brest,
 And often bounding on the brused gras,
 As for great ioyance of his new come guest.
 Eftsoones he gan advance his haughty crest ;
 As chauffed bore his bristles doth upreare ;
 And shoke his scales to battaile ready drest,
 (That made the Redecrosse Knight nigh quake
 for feare,)
 As bidding bold defyaunce to his foeman neare.

xvi.

The Knight gan fayrely couch his steady speare,
 And fierseely ran at him with rigorus might :
 The pointed steele, arriving rudely theare,
 His harder hyde would nether perce nor bight,
 But, glauncing by, fourth passed forward right :
 Yet, sore amoued with so puissaunt push,
 The wrathfull Beast about him turned light,
 And him so rudely, passing by, did brush
 With his long tayle, that horse and man to ground
 did rush.

xvii.

Both horse and man up lightly rose againe,
 And fresh encounter towards him addrest :
 But th' ydle stroke yet backe recoyld in vaine,
 And found no place his deadly point to rest.
 Exceeding rage enflam'd the furious Beast,
 To be auenged of so great despight ;
 For never felt his imperceable brest
 So wondrous force from hand of liuing wight ;
 Yet had he prov'd the powre of many a puissant
 Knight.

xviii.

Then, with his waving wings displayed wyde,
 Himselfe up high he lifted from the ground,
 And with strong flight did forcibly diuylde
 The yielding ayre, which nigh too feeble found
 Her flitting parts, and element unsound,
 To beare so great a weight : He, cutting way
 With his broad sayles, about him soared round ;
 At last, low stouping with unweldy sway,
 Snatcht up both horse and man, to beare them
 quite away.

xviii. 8. ——— *stouping*] A term in falconry, when a

xix.

Long he them bore above the subject plaine,
 So far as ewghen bow a shaft may send ;
 Till struggling strong did him at last constraine
 To let them downe before his fight's end :
 As hagar hauke, presuming to contend
 With hardy fowle above his hable might,
 His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend
 To trusse the pray too heavy for his flight ;
 Which, conning down to ground, does free itselfe
 by flight.

xx.

He so disseized of his gryping grosse,
 The Knight his thrillant speare again assayd
 In his bras-plated body to embosse, [layd ;
 And three mens strength unto the stroake he
 Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked, as affrayd,
 And glauncing from his sealy necke did glyde
 Close under his left wing, then broad displayd :
 The percing steele there wrought a wound full
 wyde,
 That with the uncouth smart the Monster lowdly
 cryde.

xxi.

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore,
 When wintry storme his wrathful wreck does
 threat ;
 The rolling billowes beate the ragged shore,
 As they the earth would shoulder from her seat ;
 And greedy gulfe does gape, as he would eat
 His neighbour element in his revenge :
 Then gin the blustering brethren boldly threat
 To move the world from off his stedfast henge,
 And boystrous battaile make, each other to avenge.

xxii.

The steely head stuck fast still in his flesh,
 Till with his cruell claws he snatcht the wood,
 And quite asunder broke : Forth flowed fresh
 A gushing river of blacke gory blood,
 That drowned all the land, whereon he stood ;
 The streamie thereof would drive a water-mill :
 Trebly augmented was his furious mood
 With bitter sence of his deepe rooted ill,
 That flames of fire he threw forth from his large
 nosethrill.

xxiii.

His hideous tayle then hurled he about,
 And therewith all enwrapt the nimble thyes
 Of his froth-fomy steed, whose courage stout
 Striving to loose the knott that fast lum tyes,

hawk, being upon her wings, bends down violently to strike the fowl. CHURCH.

xix. 1. ——— *the subject plain,*] The *plain* beneath them. TODD.

xix. 5. ——— *hagar hauke,*] A wild bawk. CHURCH.

xix. 6. ——— *hable might,*] His *proper* strength. So the Latin word *habilis* signifies. CHURCH.

xx. 1. *He so disseized*] *Dispossessed*. A law term. TODD.

xx. 3. ——— *to embosse,*] *Enclose*. This word appears to have been formerly the same as *embox*, to *shut* or *close up* as in a *box*. The sense, therefore, is, The Knight endeavoured to *sheath*, or *lodge*, his spear in the Dragon's body. TODD.

xx. 9. *That with the uncouth smart*] The *unusual* smart, *hitherto unknown* to him. TODD.

xxii. 8. ——— *deepe rooted ill,*] That is, the spear-head which still remained in his body. CHURCH.

Himselfe in streighter bandes too rash implyes,
That to the ground he is perforce constraynd
To throw his ryder ; who can quickly ryse
From off the earth, with durty blood distaynd ;
For that reproachfull fall right fowly he disdaynd ;

xxiv.

And fiercely tooke his trenchand blade in hand,
With which he stroke so furious and so fell,
That nothing seemd the puissaunce could with-
Upon his crest the hardned yron fell ; [stand :
But his more hardned crest was armd so well,
That deeper dint therein it would not make ;
Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell,
That from thenceforth he shund the like to take,
But, when he saw them come, he did them still
forsake.

xxv.

The Knight was wroth to see his stroke begnyld,
And smot againe with more outrageous might ;
But backe againe the spardling steele recoyld,
And left not any marke where it did light,
As if in adamant rocke it had bene pight.
The Beast, impatient of his smarting wound
And of so fierce and forcible despyght,
Thought with his winges to stye above the ground ;
But his late wounded wing unserviceable found.

xxvi.

Then, full of grief and anguish vehement,
He lowly brayd, that like was never heard ;
And from his wide devouring oven sent
A flake of fire, that, flashing in his beard,
Him all amazd, and almost made afeard :
The scorching flame sore swinged all his face,
And through his armour all his body seard,
That he could not endure all so cruell cace,
But thought his armes to leave, and helmet to
unlace.

xxvii.

Not that great champion of the antique world,
Whom famous poetes verse so much doth vaunt,
And hath for twelve huge labours high extold,
So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt,
When him the poisoned garment did enchaunt,
With Centaures blood and bloody verses charmd ;
As did this Knight twelve thousand dolours daunt,
Whom fyrie steele now burnt, that erst him armd ;
That erst him goodly armd, now most of all him
harmd.

xxviii.

Faynt, wearie, sore, emboyled, grieved, brent,
With heat, toyle, wounds, armes, smart, and
inward fire,
That never man such mischiefes did torment ;
Death better were ; death did he oft desire ;
But death will never come, when needes require.
Whom so dismaynd when that his foe beheld,
He cast to suffer him no more respire,
But gan his sturdy sterne about to weld,
And him so strongly stroke, that to the ground
him feld.

xxiii. 5. — [implyes,] *Entangles*. Ital. *implicare*, to
entangle. UPTON.

xxiii. 7. — [who can quickly ryse] That is, presently
arise. Can for *gan*, or *began*. CHURCH.

xxv. 8. — [to stye] To *soar*, to *ascend*. T. WARTON

xxvi. 6. — [swinged] For *singed*, or *sindged*. CHURCH.

xxviii. 8. — [his sturdy sterne] *Tail*. TORO.

xxix.

It fortun'd, (as fayre it then befell,)
Behynd his backe, unweeting where he stood,
Of auncient time there was a springing Well,
From which fast trickled forth a silver flood,
Full of great vertues, and for med'cine good :
Whylome, before that cursed Dragon got
That happy land, and all with innocent blood
Defyld those sacred waves, it rightly hot
The Well of Life ; ne yet his vertues had forgot :

xxx.

For unto life the dead it could restore,
And guilt of sinfull crimes cleane wash away ;
Those, that with sickness were infected sore,
It could recure ; and aged long decay
Renew, as one were borne that very day.
Both Silo this, and Jordan, did excell,
And th' English Bath, and eke the German Spau ;
Ne can Cephise, nor Hebrus, match this Well :
Into the same the Knight back overthrowen fell.

xxxii.

Now gan the golden Phœbus for to steepe
His fierie face in billowes of the west,
And his faint steedes watred in ocean deepe,
Whiles from their iournall labours they did rest ;
When that infermall Monster, having kept
His wearie Foe into that living Well,
Can high advance his broad discoloured brest
Above his wonted pitch, with countenance feil,
And clapt his yron wings, as victor he did dwell.

xxxiii.

Which when his pensive Lady saw from farre,
Great woe and sorrow did her soule assay,
As weening that the sad end of the warre ;
And gan to Highest God entirely pray
That feared chance from her to turne away :
With folded hands, and knees full lowly bent,
All night she watcht ; ne once adowne would lay
Her dainty limbs in her sad dremiment,
But praying still did wake, and waking did lament.

xxxiiii.

The morrow next gan earely to appeare,
That Titan rose to runne his daily race ;
But earely, ere the morrow next gan reare
Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face,
Up rose the gentle Virgin from her place,
And looked all about, if she might spy
Her loved Knight to move his manly pace :
For she had great doubt of his safety,
Since late she saw him fall before his enemy.

xxxv.

At last she saw, where he upstarted brave
Out of the Well wherein he drenched lay :
As eagle, fresh out of the ocean wave,
Where he hath lefte his plumes all hory gay,
And deekt himselfe with fethers youthly gray,
Like eyas hauke up mounts unto the skies,

xxix. 8. — [it rightly hot] Was named, called
UPTON.

xxx. 4. — [their iournall labours] Their daily
labours. Fr. *journal*. The Italians use the adverb *giornal-
mente* for *daily*. TODD.

xxxii. 9. — [as victor he did dwell.] As if he re-
mained victor. TODD.

xxxiv. 6. Like *cyns hauke*] *Unfledged*, from the old
English word *cy*, an *egg*. CHURCH.

His newly-budded pineons to assay,
And marvelles at himselfe, stil as he flies :
So new this new-borne Knight to battell new did
rise.

xxxv

Whom when the damned Feend so fresh did spy,
No wonder if he wondrous at the sight,
And doubted whether his late enemy
It were, or other new supplied Knight.
He now, to prove his late-renewed might,
High brandishing his bright deaw-burning blade,
Upon his crested scalp so sore did smite,
That to the scull a yawning wound it made :
The deadly dint his dulled senses all dismayd.

xxxvi.

I wote not, whether the revenging steele
Were hardned with that holy water dew
Wherein he fell ; or sharper edge did feele ;
Or his baptizd hands now greater grew ;
Or other secret vertue did ensew ;
Els never could the force of fleshly arme,
Ne molten mettall, in his blood embrew :
For, till that stownd, could never wight him
harme

By subtilty, nor slight, nor might, nor mighty
charme.

xxxvii.

The cruell wound enraged him so sore,
That loud he yelled for exceeding paine ;
As hundred ramping lions seemd to rore,
Whom ravenous hunger did thereto constraene.
Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine,
And therewith scourge the buxome aire so sore,
That with his force to yelden it was faine ;
Ne ought his sturdy strokes might stand afore,
That high trees overthrew, and rocks in peeces
tore :

xxxviii.

The same advauncing high above his head,
With sharpe intended sting so rude him smott,
That to the earth him drove, as stricken dead ;
Ne living wight would have him life behott :
The mortall sting his angry needle shott
Quite through his shield, and in his shoulder seasd,
Where fast it stucke, ne would therout be gott :
The griefe thereof him wondrous sore diseasd,
Ne might his raneling paine with patience be appeasd.

xxxix.

But yet, more mindfull of his honour deare
Then of the grievous smart which him did wring,
From loathed soile he can him lightly reare,
And strove to loose the far infixted sting :
Which when in vaine he tryde with struggeling,
Inflam'd with wrath, his ragiug blade he hefte,
And strooke so strongly, that the knotty string
Of his huge taile he quite asonder cleft ;
Five ioints thereof he hewd, and but the stump
him lefte.

xxxiv. 9. *So new this new-borne Knight to battell new did rise.* *New-borne*. i. e. being as it were regenerated by baptism in the well of life. *UPRON.*

xxxvii. 6. — *the buxome aire*] *The buxom air*, that is, the *yielding air*, is a common phrase in our old poetry. *TODD.*

xxxviii. 2. — *Intended*] *Stretched out*. *Lat. intendo.* *CHURCH.*

xli.

Hart cannot thinke, what outrage and what cries,
With fowle enfouldred smoake and flashing fire,
The hell-bred Beast threw forth unto the skies,
That all was covered with darknesse dire :
Then fraught with rancour, and engorged yre,
He cast at once him to avenge for all ;
And, gathering up himselfe out of the mire
With his uneven wings, did fiercely fall
Upon his sunne-bright shield, and grypt it fast
withall.

xlii.

Much was the Man encombred with his hold,
In feare to lose his weapon in his paw,
Ne wist yett, how his talants to unfold ;
Nor harder was from Cerberus greedy iaw
To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw
To reave by strength the griped gage away :
Thrise he assayd it from his foote to draw,
And thrise in vaine to draw it did assay ;
It booted nought to thinke to robbe him of his
pray.

xliii.

Tho, when he saw no power might prevaile,
His trusty sword he cald to his last aid,
Wherewith he fierly did his foe assaile,
And double blowes about him stoutly laid,
That launcing fire out of the yron plaid ;
As sparckles from the anvile use to fly,
When heavy hammers on the wedg are swaid ;
Therewith at last he forst him to unty
One of his grasping feete, him to defend thereby.

xliv.

The other foote, fast fixed on his shield, [*straine*
Whenas no strength nor stroks mote him con-
To loose, ne yet the warlike pledg to yeld ;
He smott therat with all his might and maine,
That nought so wondrous puissaunce might sus-
taine :
Upon the ioint the lucky steele did light, [*twaine* ;
And made such way, that hewd it quite in
The paw yett missed not his minisht might,
But houg still on the shield, as it at first was pight.

xlv.

For griefe thereof and divelish despight,
From his infernall founnace forth he threw
Huge flames, that dimmed all the hevens light,
Enroll in duskish smoke and brimstone blew :
As burning Aetna from his boyling stew
Doth belch out flames, and rockes in peeces broke,
And ragged ribs of mountaines molten new,
Enwrapt in coleblacke cloudis and filthy smoke,
That al the land with stench, and heven with hor-
ror, choke.

xlvi.

The heate whereof, and harmefull pestilence,
So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire
A little backward for his best defence,
To save his body from the scorching fire,

xl. 2. *With fowle enfouldred smoake*] The sense is, Together with fowle smoake and flashing fire (*enfouldred*) thrown forth like thunder and lightning. *Fr. fouldroyer* *CHURCH.*

xliii. 8. — *his minisht might*,] His *diminished* might. *TODD.*

xlv. 2. — *noyd*,] *Annoyol*, injured. *TODD.*

Which he from hellish entrailes did expire.
It chaunst, (Eternall God that cl'auce did guide,)
As he recoiled backward, in the mire
His nigh forwardeed feeble feet did slide,
And downe he fell, with dread of shame sore ter-
rífide.

XLVI.

There grew a goodly Tree him faire beside,
Loaden with fruit and apples rosy redd,
As they in pure vermilion had been dide,
Whereof great vertues over all were redd :
For happy life to all which thereon fedd,
And life eke everlasting did befall :
Great God it planted in that blessed stedd
With his Almighty hand, and did it call
The Tree of Life, the crime of onr first Fathers fall.

XLVII.

In all the world like was not to be fownd,
Save in that soile, where all good things did grow,
And freely sprong out of the fruitfull ground,
As incorrupted Nature did them sow,
Till that dredd Dragon all did overthrow.
Another like faire Tree eke grew thereby,
Whereof whoso did eat, eftsoones did know
Both good and ill : O mournfull memory !
That Tree through one Mans fault hath doen us
all to dy !

XLVIII.

From that first Tree forth flowd, as from a well,
A trickling streame of balme, most soveraine
And dainty deare, which on the ground still fell,
And overflowed all the fertile plaine,
As it had deawed bene with timely raine :
Life and long health that gracions ointment gave ;
And deadly wounds could heale ; and reare againe
The sencelesse corse appointed for the grave :
Into that same he fell, which did from death him save.

XLIX.

For nigh thereto the ever-damned Beast
Durst not approach, for he was deadly made,
And al that life preserved did detest ;
Yet he it oft adventur'd to invade.
By this the dropping Day-light gan to fade,
And yield his rowme to sad sneeceeding Night,
Who with her sable mantle gan to shade
The face of earth and wayes of living wight,
And high her burning torch set up in heaven bright.

L.

When gentle Una saw the second fall
Of her deare Knight, who, weary of long fight
And faint through losse of blood, moov'd not at all,
But lay, as in a dreame of deep delight, [might
Besmeard with pretions balme, whose vertuous
Did heale his woundes, and scorching heat alay ;
Againe she stricken was with sore affright,

XLV. 5. Which he from hellish entrailes did expire.] Which he (the dragon) did breath forth. Lat. *expiro*. CHURCH.

XLVI. 9. — the crime] *Crime* here is not to be understood for *fault* ; but signifies, as the Latin word *crimen* does, *reproach*. CHURCH.

XLIX. 2. For he was deadly made,] Made for death hell, and destruction ; not for life, heaven, and happiness. UPTON.

And for his safetie gan devoutly pray,
And watch the noyous night, and wait for ioyous
day.

LI.

The ioyous day gan early to appeare ;
And fayre Aurora from the deawy bed
Of aged Tithone gan herselfe to reare
With rosy cheekes, for shame as blushing red :
Her golden locks, for hast, were loosely shed
About her eares, when Una her did marke
Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers spred,
From heven high to chace the chearelesse darke ;
With mery note her lowd salutes the mounting
larke.

LII.

Then freshly up arose the doughty Knight,
All healed of his hurts and woundes wide,
And did himselfe to battaile ready dight ;
Whose early Foe awaiting him beside
To have devourd, so soon as day he spyde,
When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare,
As if late fight had nought him damnifyde,
He woxe dismaid, and gan his fate to feare :
Nathlesse with wonted rage he him advanced
neare ;

LIII.

And in his first encounter, gaping wyde,
He thought atonce him to have swallowd quight,
And rusht upon him with outragions pryde ;
Who him rencounting fierce, as hauke in flight,
Perforce rebutted back : The weapon bright,
Taking advantage of his open iaw,
Ran through his month with so impörtune might,
That deepe emperst his darksom hollow maw,
And, back retyrd, his life blood forth withal did
draw.

LIV.

So downe he fell, and forth his life did breath,
That vanisht into smoke and clonds swift ;
So downe he fell, that th' earth him underneath
Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift ;
So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift,
Whose false foundation waves have washt away,
With dreadful poysse is from the mayneland rift,
And, rolling downe, great Neptune doth dismay :
So downe he fell, and like an heaped mountaine
lay.

LV.

The Knight himselfe even trembled at his fall,
So huge and horrible a masse it seemd ;
And his deare Lady, that beheld it all,
Durst not approach for dread which she mis-
deemd ;
But yet at last, whenas the direfull Feend
She saw not stirre, off-shaking vaine affright
She nigher drew, and saw that ioyous end :
Then God she praysd, and thankt her faithfull
Knight, [might
That had atchievde so great a conquest by his

LIII. 9. And, back retyr'd,] And, when drawn out back again. Fr. *retirer*. CHURCH.

LV. 4. — for dread which she misdeemd,] That is, she durst not approach, through fear, which she misconceived, that the Knight had been oppressed by the fall of the Dragon. CHURCH.

CANTO XII.

Fayre Una to the Redcrosse Knight
Betrouthed is with ioy;
Though false Hue-sa, it to barre,
Her false sleights doe employ.

I.

BEHOLD I see the haven nigh at hand,
To which I meane my wearie course to bend;
Vere the maine shete, and beare up with the
The which afore is fayrly to be kend, [land,
And seemeth safe from storms that may offend:
There this fayre Virgin wearie of her way
Must landed bee, now at her ionrneyes end;
There eke my feeble barkē a while may stay,
Till mery wynd and weather call her thence away.

II.

Scarsely had Phœbus in the glooming east
Yett harnessed his fyrie-footed teeme,
Ne reard above the earth his flaming creast;
When the last deadly smoke aloft did steeme,
That signe of last outbreathed life did secme
Unto the watchman on the castle-wall,
Who thereby dead that balefull Beast did deeme,
And to his Lord and Lady lowd gan call,
To tell how he had scene the Dragons fatal fall.

III.

Uprose with hasty ioy, and feeble speed,
That aged syre, the Lord of all that land,
And looked forth, to weet if trew indeed
Those tydings were, as he did understand:
Which whenas trew by tryall he out found,
He badd to open wyde his brasen gate,
Which long time had beene shut, and out of hond
Proclaymed ioy and peace through all his state;
For dead now was their Foe, which them forrayed
late.

IV.

Then gan triumphant trompets sownd on hye,
That sent to heven the echoed report
Of their new ioy, and happie victory
Gainst him, that had them long opprest with
And fast imprisoned in sieged fort. [tort,
Then all the people, as in solemne feast,
To him assembled with one full consórt,
Reioycing at the fall of that great Beast,
From whose eternall bondage now they were re-
least.

V.

Forth came that auncient Lord, and aged Queene,
Arayd in ántique robes downe to the grownd,
And sad habiliments right well beseene:
A noble crew about them waited rownd
Of sage and sober peres, all gravely gownd;
Whom far before did march a goodly band
Of tall young men, all hable armes to sownd,
But now they laurrell branches bore in hand;
Glad signe of victory and peace in all their land.

VI.

Unto that doughtie Conquerour they came,
And, him before themselves prostrating low,
Their Lord and Patrone loud did him proclame,
And at his feet their lawrell boughes did throw.
Snone after them, all dauncing on a row,

iv. 4. ——— tort.] Injury Fr. CHURCH.

The comely virgins came, with girlands dight,
As fresh as flowres in meadow greene doe grow,
When morning deaw upon their leaves doth
light;
And in their handes sweet timbrells all upheld on
hight.

VII.

And, them before, the fry of children yong
Their wanton sportes and childish mirth did play,
And to the maydens sowing tymbrels song
In well attuned notes a ioyous lay,
And made delightfull musick all the way,
Untill they came, where that faire Virgin stood:
As fayre Diana in fresh summers day
Beholdes her nymphes enraung'd in shady wood,
Some wrestle, some do run, some bathe in christal
flood;

VIII.

So she beheld those maydens meriment [came,
With chearefull vew; who, when to her they
Themselves to ground with gracious humblesse
And her ador'd by honorable name, [bent,
Lifting to heven her everlasting fame:
Then on her head they sett a girlond greene,
And crowned her twixt earnest and twixt game
Who, in her self-resemblance well beseene,
Did seeme, such as she was, a goodly Maiden
Queene.

IX.

And after all the raskall many ran,
Heaped together in rude rablement,
To see the face of that victorious Man,
Whom all admired as from heaven sent,
And gaz'd upon with gaping wonderment.
But when they came where that dead Dragon lay,
Stretcht on the ground in monstrous large extent,
The sight with ydle feare did them dismay,
Ne durst approach him nigh, to touch, or once assay.

X.

Some feard, and fledd; some feard, and well it
faynd;
One, that would wiser seeme then all the rest,
Warnd him not touch, for yet perhaps remaynd
Some lingring life within his hollow brest,
Or in his wombe might lurke some hidden nest
Of many dragonettes, his fruitfull seede;
Another saide, that in his eyes did rest
Yet sparkling fyre, and badd thereof take heed;
Another said, he saw him move his eyes indeed.

XI.

One mother, whenas her foolehardy chyld
Did come too neare, and with his talants play,
Halfe dead through feare, her litle babe reuyld,
And to her gossibs gan in counsell say;
"How can I tell, but that his talants may
Yet scratch my sonne, or rend his tender hand?"
So diversly themselves in vaine they fray;

vii. 3. *And to the maydens sowing tymbrels song &c.]*
The construction is, And did sing in well attuned notes to
the sounding tymbrels of the maydens. URTON.

viii. 3. ——— humblesse] *Humility.* TODD.

ix. 1. *And after all the raskall many] The rascality, à*
ωολλδ. Gall. *racaille.* URTON.

ix. 9. *Ne durst approach him nigh,]* An ellipsis. Ne
durst they approach him nigh. T. WARTON.

xi. 4. ——— gossibs] *Comperes,* her friends. CHURCH

Whiles some more bold to measure him nigh
stand,
To prove how many acres he did spred of land.

xii.

Thus flocked all the folke him rownd about ;
The whiles that hoarie King, with all his traine,
Being arrived where that Champion stout
After his Foes defeasaunce did remaine,
Him goodly greetes, and fayre does entertayne
With princely gifts of yvory and gold, [paine.
And thousand thanks him yeeldes for all his
Then when his Daughter deare he does behold,
Her dearely doth inbrace, and kisseth manifold.

xiii.

And after to his pallace he them bringes,
With shaumes, and trompcts, and with clarions
And all the way the ioyous people singes, [sweet ;
And with their garments strowes the paved
street ; [meet
Whence mounting up, they fynd perveyaunce
Of all, that royall princes court became ;
And all the floore was underneath their feet
Bespredd with costly scarlott of great name,
On which they lowly sitt, and fitting purpose frame.

xiv.

What needes me tell their feast and goodly guize,
In which was nothing riotous nor vaine ?
What needes of dainty dishes to devize,
Of comely services, or courtly trayne ?
My narrow leaves cannot in them contayne
The large discourse of roiall princes state.
Yet was their manner then but bare and playne ;
For th' antique world excesse and pryde did hate :
Such proud luxurious pompe is swollen up but late.

xv.

Then, when with meates and drinkes of every kinde
Their fervent appetites they quenched had,
That aunccient Lord gan fit occasion finde,
Of straunge adventures, and of perils sad
Which in his travell him befallen had,
For to demanda of his renowned guest :
Who then with utt'rance grave, and count'nance
From poynt to poynt, as is before exprest, [sad,
Discourst his voyage long, according his request.

xvi.

Great pleasure, mixt with pittifull regard,
That godly King and Queene did passionate,
Whyles they his pittifull adventures heard ;
That oft they did lament his lucklesse state,
And often blame the too impörtune fate
That heapt on him so many wrathfull wreakes ;
(For never gentle Knight, as he of late,
So tossed was in fortunes cruell freakes ;)
And all the while salt teares bedecawd the hearers
cheaks.

xiii. 8. — *scarlott of great name,* of great celebrity. Todd.

xiii. 9. — *and fitting purpose frame.*] That is, their conversation was suitable to the occasion of their meeting. Chunch.

xv. 9. — *according his request.*] That is, granting his request. Tomp.

xvi. 2. — *did passionate.*] That is, did express with affection. Ursum.

xvi. 5. *And often blame the too impörtune fate*] The ruell fate. Ursum.

xvii.

Then sayd that royall pere in sober wise ;
"Deare some, great beene the evils which ye
From first to last in your late enterprise, [bore
That I no'te, whether praise or pittie more :
For never living man, I weene, so sore
In sea of deadly daungers was distrest :
But since now safe ye seised have the shore,
And well arrived are, (High God be blest !)
Let us devize of ease and everlasting rest."

xviii.

"Ah dearest Lord," said then that doughty Knight,
"Of ease or rest I may not yet devize ;
For by the faith, which I to armes have plight,
I bownden am streight after this emprise,
As that your Daughter can ye well advize,
Backe to retourne to that great Faery Queene,
And her to serve sixe yeares in warlike wize,
Gainst that prond Paynim King that works her
teene :
Therefore I ought crave pardon, till I there have
beene."

xix.

"Unhappy falls that hard necessity,"
Quoth he, "the troubler of my happy peace,
And vowed foe of my felicity ;
Ne I against the same can justly preace.
But since that band ye cannot now release,
Nor doen undo, (for vowes may not be vayne,)
Soone as the terme of those sixe yeares shall cease.
Ye then shall hether backe retourne agayne,
The marriage to accomplish vowd betwixt you
twayn :

xx.

"Which, for my part, I covet to performe,
In sort as through the world I did proclame,
That whoso kild that Monster most deforme,
And him in hardy battayle overcame,
Should have mine onely Daughter to his Dame.
And of my kingdome heyre apparaunt bee :
Therefore since now to thee perteynes the same.
By dew desert of noble chevalree,
Both Daughter and eke Kingdome lo ! I yield to
thee."

xxi.

Then forth he called that his Daughter fayre,
The fairest Un', his onely Daughter deare,
His onely Daughter and his onely hayre ;
Who forth proceeding with sad sober cheare,
As bright as doth the morning starre appeare
Out of the east, with flaming lockes bedight,
To tell that dawning day is drawing neare,
And to the world does bring long-wished light :
So faire and fresh that Lady shewd herselfe in
sight :

xxii.

So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in May ;
For she had layd her mournfull stole aside,
And widow-like sad wimple throwne away,

xviii. 8. — *her teene*:] *Vexation, or grief.* Todd.
xxi. 4. — *with sad sober cheare,*] *With grave and modest countenance.* Todd.

xxii. 2. — *her mournfull stole*] *Fr. Stole, a long robe or garment, reaching to the ancles or heels, according to Cotgrave.* Todd.

xxii. 3. — *wimple*] *Fr. Guimpe.* It is generally used to denote the linen plaited cloth, which nuns wear about their necks. Tomp.

Wherewith her heavenly beautie she did hide,
Whiles on her wearie iourney she did ride ;
And on her now a garment she did weare
All lilly white, withoutten spot or pride,
That seemd like silke and silver wovon neare ;
But neither silke nor silver therein did appeare.

xxiii.

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties beame,
And glorious light of her sunshyny face,
To tell, were as to strive against the streame :
My ragged rimes are all too rude and bace
Her heavenly lineaments for to enchace.
Ne wonder ; for her own deare loved Knight,
All were she daily with himselfe in place,
Did wonder much at her celestial sight :
Oft had he scene her faire, but never so faire dight.

xxiv.

So fairely dight when she in presence came,
She to her Syre made humble reverence,
And bowed low, that her right well became,
And added grace unto her excellence :
Who with great wisdom and grave eloquence
Thus gan to say—But, eare he thus had sayd,
With flying speede, and seeming great pretence,
Came running in, much like a man dismayd,
A Messenger with letters, which his message sayd.

xxv.

All in the open hall amazed stood
At suddennesse of that unwarly sight,
And wondred at his breathlesse hasty mood :
But he for nought would stay his passage right,
Till fast before the King he did alight ;
Where falling flat great humblesse he did make.
And kist the ground whereon his foot was pight ;
Then to his handes that writt he did betake,
Which he disclosing, read thus, as the paper spake ;

xxvi.

‘ To thee, most mighty King of Eden fayre,
‘ Her greeting sends in these sad lines adrest
‘ The wofull Daughter and forsaken Heyre
‘ Of that great Emperour of all the West ;
‘ And bids thee be advized for the best ;
‘ Ere thou thy Daughter linck, in holy band
‘ Of wedlocke, to that new unknowne Guest :
‘ For he already plighted his right hand
‘ Unto another love, and to another land.

xxvii.

To me sad Mayd, or rather Widow sad,
‘ He was affyaunced long time before,
‘ And sacred pledges he both gave, and had,
‘ False erraunt Knight, infamous, and forswore ;
‘ Witnesse the burning altars, which he swore,
‘ And guilty heavens of his bold perjury ;
‘ Which though he hath polluted oft of yore,
‘ Yet I to them for iudgement iust doe fly,
‘ And them coniure t’ avenge this shameful
injury !

xxiii. 7. *All were she*] Although she were. CHURCH.
xxv. 2. — *unwarly*] *Unexpected*, of which they were not aware. CHURCH.

xxv. 8. *he did betake*] *Commit*. This appears to have been a common acceptation of *betake*. Spenser often uses the word in this sense. TODD.

xxvii. 5. *Witnesse the burning altars which he swore*] That is, by which he swore. Spenser often omits the preposition. UPON.

xxviii.

‘ Therefore since mine he is, or free or bond,
‘ Or false or trew, or living or else dead,
‘ Withhold, O soverayne Prince, your hasty hond
‘ From knitting league with him, I you adrest ;
‘ Ne weene my right with strength adowne to tread,
‘ Through weaknesse of my widowed or woe :
‘ For Truth is strong her rightfull cause to plead,
‘ And shall finde friends, if need requireth see.
‘ So bids thee well to fare, thy neither friend nor foe,
Fidessa.’

xxix.

When he these bitter hyting wordes had red,
The tydings straunge did him abashed make,
That still he sate long time astonished,
As in great muse, ne word to creature spake.
At last his solem silence thus he brake,
With doubtfull eyes fast fixed on his Gnest ;
‘ Redoubted Knight, that for myne only sake
Thy life and honor late adventrest ;
Let nought be hid from me, that ought to be
express.

xxx.

‘ What meane these bloody vowes and idle threats,
‘ Throwne out from womanish impatient mynd ?
‘ What heveus ? what altars ? what enraged
heates,
‘ Here heaped up with termes of love unkynd,
‘ My conscience cleare with guilty bands would
bynd ?
‘ High God be witness, that I guiltlesse ame !
‘ But if yourselfe, Sir Knight, ye faulty fynd,
‘ Or wrapped be in loves of former Dame,
‘ With cryme doe not it cover, but disclose the same.’

xxxi.

To whom the Redecrosse Knight this answere sent ;
‘ My Lord, my King ; be nought hereat dis-
mayd,
‘ Till well ye wote by grave intendment,
‘ What Woman, and wherefore, doth me upbrayd
‘ With breach of love and loialty betrayd.
‘ It was in my mishaps, as hitherward
‘ I lately traveld, that unwares I strayd [bard ;
‘ Out of my way, through perils straunge and
‘ That day should faile me ere I had them all declard.

xxxii.

‘ There did I find, or rather I was fownd
‘ Of this false Woman that Fidessa hight,
‘ Fidessa hight the falsest Dame on grownd,
‘ Most false Duessa, royall richly dight,
‘ That easy was t’ inveigle weaker sight :
‘ Who by her wicked arts and wiely skill,
‘ Too false and strong for earthly skill or might,
‘ Unwares me wrought unto her wicked will,
‘ And to my foe betrayd, when least I feared ill.’

xxxiii.

Then stepped forth the goodly royall Mayd,
And, on the ground herselfe prostrating low,
With sober countenance thus to him sayd ;
‘ O pardon me, my soveraine Lord, to show
The secret treasons, which of late I know

xxviii. 4. — *I you adrest*] I advise you. TODD.
xxxii. 4. — *royall richly dight*] *Richly dight* is a frequent phrase in our elder poetry. *Dight* is *adorned*. TODD.

To have hene wrought by that false Sorceresse :
 Shee, onely she, it is, that earst did throw
 This gentle Knight into so great distresse,
 That death him did awaite in daily wretchednesse.

xxxiv.

“ And now it seemes, that she suburned hath
 This crafty Messenger with letters vaine,
 To worke new woe and unprovided seath,
 By breaking of the band betwixt us twaine ;
 Wherein she used hath the practicke paine
 Of this false Footman, clokt with simplesse,
 Whome if ye please for to discover plaine,
 Ye shall him Archimago find, I ghesse,
 The falsest man alive ; who tries, shall find no
 lesse.”

xxxv.

The King was greatly moved at her speach ;
 And, all with suddain indignation fraight,
 Bad on that Messenger rude hands to reach.
 Eftsoones the gard, which on his state did wait,
 Attacht that Faylor false, and bound him strait:
 Who seeming sorely chauffed at his band,
 As chained beare whom cruell dogs doe bait,
 With ydle force did faime them to withstand ;
 And often semblance made to scape out of their
 hand.

xxxvi.

But they him layd full low in dungeon deepe,
 And bound him hand and foote with yron chains ;
 And with continual watch did warely keepe.
 Who then would thinke, that by his subtile trairs
 He could escape fowle death or deadly pains ?
 Thus, when that princes wrath was pacified,
 He gan renew the late forbidden baines,
 And to the Knight his Daughter dear he tyde
 With sacred rites and voves for ever to abyde.

xxxvii.

His owne two hands the holy knotts did knitt,
 That none but death for ever can divide ;
 His owne two hands, for such a turne most fitt,
 The housling fire did kinde and provide,
 And holy water thereon sprinkled wide ;
 At which the bushy teade a grome did light,
 And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide,
 Where it should not be quenched day nor night,
 For feare of evil fates, but burnen ever bright.

xxxviii.

Then gan they sprinkle all the posts with wine,
 And made great feast to solemnize that day :
 They all perfume with frankincense divine,
 And precious odours fetcht from far away ;
 That all the house did sweat with great aray :
 And all the while sweete musicke did apply
 Her curious skill the warbling notes to play,
 To drive away the dull melancholy ;
 The whiles one sung a song of love and iollity.

xxxiv. 2. ——— with letters vaine.] *Vaine*, that is, idle letters CHURCH.

xxxiv. 3. ——— unprovided seath.] *Unforeseen mischief*, as Mr. Church has observed. *Seath* is hurt, or damage. TOMP.

xxxiv. 5. ——— the practieke paine] *The practice and endeavour*. UPRON.

xxxv. 5. ——— Faylor] *Faylor* is a law-term : A *vagabond*, idle fellow. Fr. *Failard*. CHURCH.

xxxvii. 4. *The housling fire*] That is, the sacramental fire, or fire used in the sacrament of marriage. UPRON

xxxix.

During the which there was an heavenly noise
 Heard sownd through all the pallace pleasantly,
 Like as it had bene many an angels voice
 Singing before th' Eternal Maiesty,
 In their trinall triplicities on hye :
 Yett wist no creature whence that hevenly sweet
 Proceeded, yet each one felt secretly
 Himselfe thereby reffe of his senses meet,
 And ravished with rare impression in his sprite.

xl.

Great ioy was made that day of young and old,
 And solemne feast proclaymd throughout the land,
 That their exceeding merth may not be told :
 Suffice it heare by signes to understand
 The usuall ioyes at kuiting of loves band.
 Thrise happy man the Knight himselfe did hold,
 Possessed of his Ladies hart and hand ;
 And ever, when his eie did her behold,
 His heart did seeme to melt in pleasures manifold.

xli.

Her ioyous presence, and sweet company,
 In full content he there did long eniay ;
 Ne wicked envy, ne vile gealosity,
 His deare delights were hable to annoy :
 Yet, swimming in that sea of blissfull ioy,
 He nought forgott how he whilome had sworne,
 In case he could that monstrous Beast destroy,
 Unto his Faery Queene backe to retourne ;
 The which he shortly did, and Una left to mourne.

xlii.

Now, strike your sailes, yee iolly mariners,
 For we be come unto a quiet rode,
 Where we must land some of our passengers,
 And light this weary vessell of her lode.
 Here she a while may make her safe abode,
 Till she repaired have her tackles spent,
 And wants supplide ; and then againe abroad
 On the long voiage whereto she is bent :
 Well may she speede, and fairely finish her intent

[Our poet having brought his vessel into harbour, to reft and repair ; let us, like travellers, talk over the wonders we have seen, and the regions we have passed over of fable, mystery, and allegory.

However the wise, and the grave, may affect to despise wonderful tales ; yet well related, with novelty and variety, they work upon the heart by secret charms and philtres, and never fail both to surprise and to delight. But delight and entertainment are not all ; for a good poet should instruct ; not in the narration of particular facts, like an historian ; but in exhibiting universal truths, as a philosopher : by showing the motives, causes, and springs of action ; by bringing before your eyes truth in her lovely form, and error in her loathsome and filthy shape ; *virtues* should be stripped, and *vices* laid open : and, while wonderful stories and representations of visionary images engage the fancy, the poet should all along intend these only as initiations into the more sacred mysteries of morals and religion.

Let us should object to the probability of his stories, the poet names the time, when these wonders were performed, viz. during the minority of Prince Arthur ; and mentions the very persons who performed them ; Prince Arthur, St. George, Sir Satyrane, Archimago, &c. nay, he points out the very places, wherein the adventures were achieved. If after so circumstantial a recital of time, place,

and persons, you will still not believe him, you must be enrolled, I think, among the very miscreants; for as to his wonderful tales of enchantments, witches, apparitions, &c. all this is easily accounted for by supernatural assistance.

This first book bears a great resemblance to a tragedy, with a catastrophe not unfortunate. The Redersse Knight and Una appear together on the stage; nothing seeming to thwart their happiness; but, by the plots and pains of Archimago, they are separated; hence suspicions and distresses: She with difficulty escapes from a lawless Sarazin and Satyrs, and he is actually made a prisoner by a merciless Giant: When unexpectedly Prince Arthur, like some god in a machine, appears, and releases the Knight; who becomes a new man, and with new joy is contracted to his ever-faithful Una.

If we consider the persons or characters in the drama, we shall find them all consistent with themselves, yet masterly opposed and contrasted: The simplicity and innocence of Una may be set in opposition to the flaunting falsehood of the Scarlet Where: The pious Knight is diametrically opposite to the impious Sarazin: the sly hypocrite Archimago differs from the sophist Despair. And even in laudable characters, if there is a sameness, yet too there is a difference; as in the magnificence of Prince Arthur, in the plainness of the Christian Knight, and in the honest behaviour of Sir Satyrane.

How well adapted to their places are the paintings of the various scenes and decorations! Some appear horrible, as

the den of Error; Hell; the Giant; the cave of Despair; the Dragon, &c.: others terrible and wonderful, as the magical cottage of Archimago; the plucking of the bloody bough; the Sarazin's supernatural rescue and cure, &c.: others are of the pastoral kind, as the pleasing prospects of the woods, and diversions of the wood-born people, with old Sylvanus; or magnificent, as the description of Prince Arthur, and the solemnizing of the contract of marriage between the Knight and Una.

The scene lies chiefly in Fairy land, (though we have a view of the house of Morpheus, in the first canto, and of hell in the fifth,) and changes to the land of Eden, in the eleventh and twelfth cantos.

Should we presume to lift up the mysterious veil, wrought with such subtle art and ornament, as sometimes to seem utterly to hide, sometimes lying so transparent, as to be seen through; should we take off, I say, this fabulous covering; under it we might discover a most useful moral: *The beauty of truth; the foulness of error; sty hypocrisy; the pride and cruelty of false religion; holiness completed in virtues; and the church, if not in its triumphant, yet in its triumphing, state.* Spenser, in his letter to Sir W. R., tells us his poem is a continued allegory: Where therefore the moral allusion cannot be made apparent, we must seek (as I imagine) for an historical allusion; and always we must look for more than meets the eye or ear; the words carrying one meaning with them, and the secret sense another.

UPTON.]

THE SECOND BOOK OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAINING

THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE.

I.
 RIGHT well I wote, most mighty Sovereaine,
 That all this famous antique history
 Of some th' abundance of an ydle braine
 Will iudged be, and painted forgery,
 Rather then matter of iust memory;
 Sith none that breatheth living aire doth know
 Where is that happy land of Faëry,
 Which I so much doe vaunt, yet no where show;
 But vouch antiquities, which no body can know.

II.
 But let that man with better sence advize,
 That of the world least part to us is red;
 And daily how through hardy enterprize
 Many great regions are discovered,
 Which to late age were never mentioned.
 Who ever heard of th' Indian Peru?
 Or who in venturous vessell measured
 The Amazon huge river, now found trew?
 Or fruitfulest Virginia who did ever vew?

III.
 Yet all these were, when no man did them know,
 Yet have from wisest ages hidden beene; [show.
 And later times things more unknowen shall
 Why then should witlesse man so much misweene,

That nothing is, but that which he hath seene?
 What, if within the moones fayre shining spheare,
 What, if in every other starre unseene
 Of other worldes he happily should heare?
 He wonder would much more; yet such to some
 appeare.

IV.
 Of Faery lond yet if he more inquire,
 By certain signes, here sett in sondrie place,
 He may it fynd; ne let him then admyre,
 But yield his sence to bee too blunt and base,
 That no'te without an hound fine footing trace.
 And thou, O fayrest Princesse under sky,
 In this fayre mirrhour maist behold thy face,
 And thine owne realmes in lond of Faëry,
 And in this antique ymage thy great auncestry.

V.
 The which O! pardon me thus to enfold
 In covert vele, and wrapt in shadowes light,
 That feeble eyes your glory may behold,
 Which ells could not endure those beam's bright,

rv. 1. — more] Greatly. The sense is, if he is greatly desirous to know what place is meant by Fairy land. CROUCH.

F

But would bee dazed with exceeding light.
O! pardon, and vouchsafe with patient eare
The brave adventures of this Faery Knight,
The good Sir Guyon, gratically to heare;
In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly doth
appeare.

CANTO I.

Guyon, by Archmage abas'd,
The Redcrosse Knight awaytes;
Fyndes Mordant and Amavia slaine
With Pleasures poisoned baytes.

I.

THAT conning Architect of cancred guyle,
Whom Princes late displeasure left in bands,
For falsed letters, and suborned wyle;
Soone as the Redcrosse Knight he understands
To beene departed out of Eden landes,
To serve againe his souveraine Elfin Queene;
His artes he moves, and out of caytives handes
Himselfe he frees by secret meanes unseene;
His shackles emptie lefte, himselfe escaped cleene;

II.

And forth he fares, full of malicious mynd,
To worken mischief, and avenging wee,
Whereever he that godly Knight may fynd,
His onely hart-sore and his onely foe;
Sith Una now he algates must forgoe,
Whom his victorious handes did earst restore
To native crowne and kingdom late ygoe;
Where she enjoyes sure peace for evermore,
As wetherbeaten ship arry'd on happie shore.

III.

Him therefore now the object of his spight
And deadly food he makes: him to offend
By forged treason, or by open fight,
He seekes, of all his drifte the aymed end:
Thereto his subtle engins he does bend,
His practick witt and his fayre fyled tonge,
With thousand other sleights; for well he kend
His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong:
For hardly could bee hurt, who was already stong.

IV.

Still, as he went, he craftie stales did lay,
With cunning traynes him to entrap unwares,
And privy spyals plast in all his way,
To weete what course he takes, and how he fares;
To ketch him at a vantage in his snares.
But now so wiss and wary was the Knight
By tryall of his former harmes and cares,
That he descryde, and shonned still, his slight:
The fish, that once was caught, new hayt wil hardly
byte.

- II. 4. *His onely &c.*] *Greatest.* CHURCH.
II. 5. ——— *algates*] *Wholly, altogether.* TODD.
II. 7. ——— *late ygoe*] *Lately.* CHURCH.
III. 2. *And deadly food*] *That is, feud.* TODD.
III. 9. *For hardly could bee hurt,*] *For hardly could
be hurt, &c.* TODD.
IV. 1. ——— *stales*] *Devices, tricks.* TODD.
IV. 3. *And privy spyals*] *Espials, or spies.* TODD.
IV. 5. ——— *at a vantage in his snares.*] *To have
the odds of him, to catch him completely in his snares.*
FR. *A Vantage.* TODD.

V.

Nath'lesse th' Enchaunter would not spare his
payne,
In hope to win occasion to his will;
Which when he long awaited had in vayne,
He chaungd his mynd from one to other ill:
For to all good he enemy was still.
Upon the way him fortun'd to meete,
Fayre marching underneath a shady hill,
A goodly Knight, all armd in harness meete,
That from his head no place appeared to his feete.

VI.

His carriage was full comely and upright;
His countenance demure and temperate;
But yett so sterne and terrible in sight,
That cheard his friendes, and did his foes amate:
He was an Elfin borne, of noble state
And mickle worship in his native land;
Well could he tourney, and in lists debate,
And knighthood tooke of good Sir Huons hand,
When with king Oberon he came to Fary land.

VII.

Him als accompanyd upon the way
A comely Palmer, clad in black attyre,
Of rypest yeares, and heares all hoarie gray,
That with a staffe his feeble steps did stire,
Least his long way his aged limbes should tire:
And, if by lookes one may the mind aread,
He seemd to be a sage and sober syre;
And ever with slow pace the Knight did lead,
Who taught his trampling steed with equal steps to
tread.

VIII.

Such whenas Archimago them did view,
He weened well to worke some uncouth wyle:
Eftsoones, untwisting his deceitfull clew,
He gan to weave a web of wicked guyle;
And, with faire countenance and flattering style
To them approaching, thus the Knight bespakes;
"Fayre sonne of Mars, that seekes with warlike
spoyle,
And great achiev'ments, great yourselfe to make,
Vouchsafe to stay your steed for humble misers
sake."

IX.

He stayd his steed for humble misers sake,
And badd tell on the tenor of his playnt:
Who feigning then in every limb to quake
Through inward feare, and seeming pale and
faynt, [paynt;
With piteous mone his percing speach gan
"Deare Lady! how shall I declare thy care,
Whom late I left in languourous constraynt?
Would God! thyselfe now present were in place
To tell this ruefull tale: Thy sight could win thee
grace:

X.

"Or rather would, O! would it so had chaunst,
That you, most noble Sir, had present beene

V. 8. ——— *all armd &c.*] *That is, armed cap-a-pee.*
CHURCH.

VI. 6. *And mickle worship*] *Honour.* The word is
often so used by Spenser. TODD.

VII. 4. ——— *did stire,*] *Stir, move.* Lat. *movere.*
CHURCH.

VIII. 9. ——— *humble misers sake.*] *A poor miserable
man's sake.* Lat. *misere* CHURCH.

When that lewd rybauld, with vyle lust aduauſt,
Laid first his filthie hands on Virgin cleene,
To spoyle her dainty corps, so faire and sheene
As on the earth, great mother of us all,
With living eye more fayre was never seene
Of chastity and honour virginall :
Witnes, ye heavens, whom she in vaine to help did
call !

xi.

"How may it be," said then the Knight halfe wroth,
"That Knight should knighthood ever so have
shent ?" [for troth,
"None but that saw," quoth he, "would weene
How shamefully that Mayd he did torment :
Her looser golden lockes he rudely rent,
And drew her on the ground ; and his sharpe sword
Against her snowy brest he fiercely bent,
And threatned death with many a bloodie word ;
Tounge hates to tell the rest that eye to see ab-
horrd."

xii.

Therewith amoved from his sober mood, [act ?
"And lives he yet," said he, "that wrought this
And doen the heavens afford him vitall food ?"
"He lives," quoth he, "and boasteth of the fact,
Ne yet hath any Knight his courage crackt."
"Where may that treachour then," said he, "be
found,
Or by what means may I his footing tract ?"
"That shall I shew," said he, "as sure as wound
The stricken deare doth chaleng by the bleeding
wound."

xiii.

He staid not lenger talke, but with fierce yre
And zealous haste away is quickly gone
To seeke that Knight, where him that crafty
Supposed to be. They do arrive anone [Squyre
Where sate a gentle Lady all alone,
With garments rent, and heare discheveled,
Wringing her handes, and making piteous mone :
Her swollen eyes were much disfigured,
And her faire face with teares was fowly blub-
bered.

xiv.

The Knight, approaching nigh, thus to her said ;
"Faire Lady, through fowle sorrow ill bedight,
Great pity is to see you thus dismayd,
And marre the blossom of your beauty bright :
Forthy appease your griefe and heavy plight,
And tell the cause of your conceived payne ;
For, if he live that hath you doen despight,
He shall you doe dew recompence agayne,
Or els his wrong with greater puissance main-
taine."

xv.

Which when she heard, as in despightfull wise
She wilfully her sorrow did augment,
And offred hope of comfort did despise :
Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent,
And scratcht her face with ghastly dremiment ;

x. 3. *When that lewd rybauld, with vyle lust aduauſt,*]
Ribauld, Fr. A scoundrel, a ruffian. Advauſt here
means driven forward, impelled, or hastened, Fr. avaneé.
TODD.

xi. 1. *How may it be,*] That is, *How can it be.* CHURCH.

xii. 9. *The stricken deare]* The wounded deer. CHURCH.

xiv. 5. *Forthy]* Therefore. TODD.

Ne would she speake, ne see, ne yet be scene,
But hid her visage, and her head downe bent,
Either for grievous shame, or for great teene,
As if her hart with sorrow had transfixt beene :

xvi.

Till her that Squyre bespake ; "Madame, my liefe
For Gods deare love be not so wilfull bent,
But doe vouchsafe now to receive reliefe,
The which good fortune doth to yon present.
For what bootes it to weepe and to wayment
When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill increase,
And the weake minde with double woe torment ?"
When she her Squyre heard speake, she gan
appease
Her voluntarie paine, and feele some secret ease.

xvii.

Eftsoone she said ; "Ah ! gentle trustie Squyre,
What comfort can I, wofull wretch, conceive !
Or why should ever I henceforth desyre
To see faire heavens face, and life not leave,
Sith that false Traytour did my honour reave ?"
"False traytour certes," saide the Faerie Knight,
"I read the man, that ever would deceave
A gentle Lady, or her wrong through might :
Death were too litte paine for such a fowle despight."

xviii.

"But now, fayre Lady, comfort to you make,
And read who hath ye wrought this shameful
plight,
That short revenge the man may overtake,
Whereso he be, and soone upon him light."
"Certes," said she, "I wote not how he hight,
But under him a gray steede he did wield,
Whose sides with dapled circles were dight ;
Upright he rode, and in his silver shield
He bore a Bloodie Crosse, that quarterd all the
field."

xix.

"Now by my head," saide Guyon, "much I munse,
How that same Knight should doe so fowle amis,
Or ever gentle Damzell so abuse :
For may I boldly say, he surely is
A right good Knight, and trew of word ywis :
I present was, and can it witnesse well,
When armes he swore, and streight did enterpris
Th' Adventure of the Errant Damozell ;
In which he hath great glory wonne, as I heare tell."

xx.

"Nathlesse he shortly shall againe be tryde,
And fairely quit him of th' imputed blame ;
Els, be ye sure, he dearely shall abyde,
Or make you good amendment for the same :
All wrongs have mendes, but no amendes of shame.
Now therefore, Lady, rise out of your paine,
And see the salving of your blotted name."
Full loth she seemd thereto, but yet did faine ;
For she was inly glad her purpose so to gaine.

xxi.

Her purpose was not such as she did faine,
Ne yet her person such as it was scene ;
But under simple shew, and semblant plaine,
Lurkt false Duessa secretly unseene,

xvi. 5. — wayment] *Bewail, lament.* UPTON.

xix. 5. — ywis:] *Certainty, or truly.* TODD.

As a chaste Virgin that had wronged beene ;
So had false Archimago her disguysd,
To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad teene ;
And eke himselfe had craftily devisd
To be her Squire, and do her service well aguisd.

xxii.

Her, late forlorne and naked, he had found,
Where she did wander in waste wilderness,
Lurking in rockes and caves far under ground,
And with greene mosse cov'ring her nakednesse
To hide her shame and loathly filthinesse,
Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments
And borrowd beauty spoyld : Her nath'lesse
Th' Enchaunter finding fit for his intents
Did thus revest, and deckt with dew habiliments.

xxiii.

For all he did was to deceive good Knights,
And draw them from pursuit of praise and fame
To slug in slouth and sensuall delights,
And end their daies with irrenowned shame.
And now exceeding grieffe him overcame,
To see the Redcrosse thus advanced hye ;
Therefore this craftie engine he did frame,
Against his praise to stirre up enmitye
Of such, as vertues like mote unto him allye.

xxiv.

So now he Guyon guides an uncouth way
Through woods and mountaines, till they came
Into a pleasant dale that lowly lay [at last
Betwixt two hills, whose high heads, overlapt,
The valley did with coole shade overcast ;
Through midst thereof a little river rold,
By which there sate a Knight with helme unlaste,
Himselfe refreshing with the liquid cold,
After his travell long and labours manifold.

xxv.

"Lo ! yonder he," cryde Archimago lowd,
"That wrought the shamefull fact which I did
shew ;
And now he doth himselfe in secret shrowd,
To fly the vengeance for his outrage dew ;
But vaine ; for ye shall dearely do him rev ;
(So God ye speed and send you good successe !)
Which we far off will here abide to vew."
So they him left inflam'd with wrathfulness,
That streight against that Knight his speare he did
addresse.

xxvi.

Who, seeing him from far so fierce to pricke,
His warlike armes about him gan embrace,
And in the rest his ready speare did sticke ;
Tho, whenas still he saw him towards pace,
He gan encounter him in equal race.
They bene ymett, both ready to affrap,
When suddainly that Warriour gan abace
His threatned speare, as if some new mishap
Had him betide, or hidden danger did entrap ;

xxi. 9. — well aguisd.] *Accoutred, or dressed.* TODD.
xxii. 9. *Did thus revest,]* *Revestir.* Fr. *reinvest, clothe*
or apparel again. TODD.

xxiii. 3. *To slug in slouth]* See Cotgrave's F. Dict. "*To*
slugge it, FARESSER, to laze it, to live idly." TODD.

xxvi. 6. — ready to affrap.] *Encounter.* Ital. *affrap-*
pare. Fr. *trapper.* UPRON.

xxvii.

And cryde, "Mercie, Sir Knight ! and mercie, Lord,
For mine offence and heedelesse hardiment,
That had almost committed crime abhord,
And with reprochfull shame mine honour shent,
Whiles cursed steele against that Badge I bent,
The sacred Badge of my Redeemers death,
Which on your shield is set for ornament !"
But his fierce foe his steed could stay uneath,
Who, prickt with courage kene, did cruell battell
breath.

xxviii.

But, when he heard him speake, streight way he
knew
His error ; and, himselfe inclyning, sayd ;
" Ah ! deare sir Guyon, well becometh you,
But me behoveth rather to upbrayd,
Whose hastie hand so far from reason strayd,
That almost it did haynous violence
On that fayre ymage of that heavenly Mayd,
That decks and armes your shield with faire de-
fence :
Your court'sie takes on you anothers dew offence."

xxix.

So beene they both atone, and doen uppreare
Their bevers bright each other for to greet ;
Goodly comportance each to other beare,
And entertaine themselves with court'sies meet.
Then said the Redcrosse Knight ; " Now mote
Sir Guyon, why with so fierce saliaunce, [I weet,
And fell intent, ye did at earst me meet ;
For, sith I know your goodly gouvernance,
Great cause, I weene, you guided, or some uncouth
chance."

xxx.

" Certes," said he, " well mote I shame to tell
The fond enchason that me hether led.
A false infamous Faitour late befell
Me for to meet, that seemed ill bested,
And playnd of grievous outrage, which he red
A Knight had wrought against a Lady gent ;
Which to avenge, he to this place me led,
Where you he made the marke of his intent,
And now is fled : foule shame him follow wher he
went !"

xxxi.

So can he turne his earnest unto game,
Through goodly handling and wise temperance.
By this his aged Guide in presence came ;
Who, soone as on that Knight his eye did glaunce,
Eftsoones of him had perfect cognizaunce,
Sith him in Faery court he late avizd ; [chance,
And said ; " Fayre sonne, God give you happy

xxviii. 2. — himselfe inclyning.] *Bowing.* TODD.
xxix. 1. *So beene they both atone,]* That is, *friends*
again ; at one, atoned, reconciled. UPRON.
xxix. 6. — saliaunce.] *Assault or sally.* Fr. *saillier.*
TODD.

xxix. 7. — at earst] *Lately.* CHURCH.
xxx. 1. — well mote I shame] Well may I be
ashamed. CHURCH.

xxx. 2. *The fond enchason]* The foolish occasion.
CHURCH.

xxx. 4. — ill bested,] *In bad plight.* CHURCH.
xxxi. 1. *So can he turne his earnest unto game.]* This
familiar phrase is the language of romance. Can is here
again used by Spenser for began. TODD.

xxxi. 6. — avizd ;] *Saw.* Fr. *aviser.* CHURCH.

And that deare Crosse upon your shield devizd,
Wherewith above all Knights ye goodly seeme
aguizd !

xxxii.

"Joy may you have, and everlasting fame,
Of late most hard atchiev'ment by you donne,
For which enrolled is your glorious name
In heavenly registers above the sunne, [wonne !
Where you a Saint with Saints your seat have
But wretched we, where ye have left your marke,
Must now anew begin like race to ronne.
God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy warke,
And to the wished haven bring thy weary harke !"

xxxiii.

"Palmer," him answered the Redcrosse Knight,
"His be the praise, that this atchiev'ment
wrought,
Who made my hand the organ of His might !
More then goodwill to me attribute nought ;
For all I did, I did but as I ought.
But you, faire Sir, whose pageant next ensewes,
Well mote yee thee, as well can wish your
thought,
That home ye may report thrice happy newes !
For well ye worthy bene for worth and gentle
thewes."

xxxiv.

So courteous congé both did give and take,
With right hands plighted, pledges of good will.
Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make
With his blacke Palmer, that him guided still :
Still he him guided over dale and hill,
And with his steedy staffe did point his way ;
His race with reason, and with words his will,
From fowle intemperance he ofte did stay,
And suffred not in wrath his hasty steps to stray.

xxxv.

In this faire wize they traveld long yfere,
Through many hard assayes which did betide ;
Of which he honour still away did beare,
And spread his glory through all countrey wide.
At last, as chaunst them by a forest side
To passe, for succour from the scorching ray,
They heard a ruefull voice, that dearly cride
With percing shriekes and many a dolefull lay ;
Which to attend, awhile their forward steps they
stay.

xxxvi.

"But if that carelesse heavens," quoth she, "despise
The doome of iust revenge, and take delight
To see sad pageaunts of mens miseries,
Asbownd by them to live in lives despight ;
Yet can they not warne Death from wretched
wight. [to me,
Come, then ; come soone ; come, sweetest Death,
And take away this long lent loathed light : [be,
Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweete the medicines
That long captived soules from weary thraldome
free.

xxxv. 9. — aguizd !] *Adorned.* TODD.xxxiii. 7. *Well mote yee thee,*] *Thrive, prosper.* UPRON.
find this expression often in our old poets.xxxiv. 1. *So courteous congé &c.*] *Leave.* TODD.xxxv. 7. — *that dearly crid.*] *That cried mourn-
fully.* TODD.

xxxvii.

"But thou, sweete Babe, whom frowning froward
fate
Hath made sad witesse of thy fathers fall,
Sith seven thee deignes to hold in living state,
Long maist thou live, and better thrive withall
Then to thy lucklesse parents did befall !
Live thou ! and to thy mother dead attest,
That cleare she dide from blemish criminall :
Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding brest
Loe ! I for pledges leave ! So give me leave to rest !"

xxxviii.

With that a deadly shriek she forth did throw
That through the wood re-echoed againe ;
And after gave a grone so deepe and low
That seemd her tender hart was rent in twaine,
Or thrild with point of thorough-piercing paine :
As gentle hynd, whose sides with cruell steele
Through lanchted, forth her bleeding life does
raine,
Whiles the sad pang approching shee does feele,
Braies out her latest breath, and up her eies doth
seele.

xxxix.

Which when that Warriour heard, dismounting
straict
From his tall steed, he rusht into the thick,
And soone arrived where that sad Pourtraict
Of death and dolour lay, halfe dead, halfe quick ;
In whose white alabaster brest did stick
A cruell knife that made a griesly wovnd, [thick,
From which forth gusht a stream of gore-blood
That all her goodly garments stained grownd,
And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassy grownd.

xl.

Pitifull spectacle of deadly smart,
Beside a bubling fountaine low she lay,
Which shee increased with her bleeding hart,
And the cleane waves with purple gore did ray :
Als in her lap a lovely Babe did play
His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew ;
For in her streaming blood he did embay
His litle hands, and tender joints embrew :
Pitifull spectacle, as ever eie did vew !

xli.

Besides them both, upon the soiled gras
The dead corse of an armed Knight was spread,
Whose armour all with blood besprincl was ;
His ruddy lips did smyle, and rosy red
Did paint his chearefull cheekes, yett being ded ;
Seemd to have bene a goodly personage,
Now in his freshest flowre of lustyhed,
Fitt to inflame faire Lady with loves rage,
But that fiers fate did crop the blossome of his age.

xlii.

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did behold,
His hart gan waxe as starke as marble stone,
And his fresh blood did frieze with fearefull cold,
That all his senses seemd berefte atone :
At last his mighty ghost gan deepe to grone,
As lion, grudging in his great disdain,
Mournes inwardly, and makes to himselfe moue

xxxix. 2. — *into the thick,*] *The thicket.* TODD.xl. 4. — *did ray ;*] *Defile.* TODD.

Til ruth and fraile affection did constraîne
His stout couraige to stoupe, and shew his inward
paine.

XLIII.

Out of her gored wound the cruell steel
He lightly snatch, and did the floodgate stop
With his faire garment : then gan softly feel
Her feeble pulse, to prove if any drop
Of living blood yet in her veynes did hop :
Which when he felt to move, he hoped faire
To call backe life to her forsaken shop :
So well he did her deadly wounds repaire,
That at the last shee gan to breath out living aire.

XLIV.

Which he perceiving, greatly gan reioice,
And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart
Is meekest med'cine, tempered with sweete voice ;
" Ay me ! deare Lady, which the ymage art
Of ruefull pity and impatient smart,
What direfull chauce armd with avenging fate,
Or cursed hand, hath plaid this cruell part,
Thus fowle to hasten your untimely date ?
Speake, O dear Lady, speake ; help never comes
too late."

XLV.

Therewith her dim eie-lids she up gan reare,
On which the drey Death did sitt as sad
As lump of lead, and made darke clouds appeare :
But when as him, all in bright armour clad,
Before her standing she espied had,
As one out of a deadly dreame affright,
She weakely started, yet she nothing drad :
Streight downe againe herselfe in great despight
She groveling threw to ground, as hating life and
light.

XLVI.

The gentle Knight her soone with carefull paine
Uplifted light, and softly did uphold :
Thrise he her reard, and thrise she sunck againe,
Till he his armes about her sides gan fold,
And to her said ; " Yet, if the stony cold
Have not all seized on your frozen hart,
Let one word fall that may your grief unfold,
And tell the secrete of your mortall smart :
He oft finds present helpe, who does his griefe
impart."

XLVII.

Then, casting up a deadly looke, full low
She sigh't from bottome of her wounded brest ;
And, after many bitter throbs did throw,
With lips full pale and foltring tong opprest,
These words she breathed forth from riven chest ;
" Leave, ah ! leave off, whatever wight thou bee,
To let a weary wretch from her dew rest,
And trouble dying soules tranquillitee ;
Take not away now got, which none would give to
me."

XLVIII.

" Ah ! far be it," said he, " deare Dame, fro mee,
To hinder soule from her desired rest,
Or hold sad life in long captivitee ;
For, all I seeke, is but to have redrest
The bitter pangs that doth your heart infest.

XLV. 2. *as sad*] *As heavy.* TODD.

XLVI. 1. ——— *paine*] *Labour.* FR. CHURCH.

XLVII. 7. *To let*] *Hinder.* TODD.

Tell then, O Lady, tell what fatal priefe
Hath with so huge misfortune you opprest ;
That I may cast to compas your reliefe,
Or die with you in sorrow, and partake your griefe."

XLIX.

With feeble hands then stretched forth on hye,
As heven accusing guilty of her death,
And with dry drops congealed in her eye,
In these sad wordes she spent her utmost breath ;
" Heare then, O Man, the sorrowes that unneath
My tong can tell, so far all sence they pas !
Loe ! this dead corpse, that lies here underneath,
The gentlest Knight, that ever on greene gras
Gay steed with spurs did pricke, the good Sir Mor-
dant was :

L.

" Was, (ay the while, that he is not so now !)
My Lord, my Love, my deare Lord, my deare
So long as hevns iust with equall brow [Love,
Vouchsafed to behold us from above.
One day, when him high corage did emmove,
(As wont ye Knightes to seeke adventures wilde,)
He pricked forth his puissaunt force to prove,
Me then he left enwombed of this childe,
This luckles childe, whom thus ye see with blood
defild.

LI.

" Him fortun'd (hard fortune ye may ghesse !)
To come, where vile Acrasia does wonne ;
Acrasia, a false Enchaunteresse,
That many errant Knightes have fowle fordonne ;
Within a wandring Island, that doth ronne
And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling is :
Fayre Sir, if ever the ye travell, shonne
The cursed land where many wend amis,
And know it by the name ; it hight the *Bowre of*
Blis.

LII.

" Her blis is all in pleasure, and delight,
Wherewith she makes her lovers dronken mad ;
And then with words, and weedes, of wondrous
might,
On them she workes her will to uses bad :
My liefest Lord she thus beguiled had ;
For he was flesh : (all flesh doth fraytie breed !)
Whom when I heard to beeme so ill bestad,
(Weake wretch) I wrapt myselve in palmers weed,
And cast to seek him forth through danger and
great dreed.

LIII.

" Now had fayre Cynthia by even tournes
Full measured three quarters of her yeare,
And thrice three tymes had fil'd her crooked
hornes,
Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbear,
And bad me call Lucina to me neare.
Lucina came : a manchild forth I brought :
The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my mid-
wives, weare : [bought ;
Hard help at need ! So deare thee, Babe, I
Yet nought too dear I deemd, while so my deare
I sought.

XLVIII. 8. ——— *cast*] *Consider how.* CHURCH.

LII. 4. *Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbear,*
That is, I] bear any longer. UPRON.

LIII. 6. *The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my midwives,*
weare ;] That is, the woods were my chambers ; the
nymphs, my midwives. CHURCH.

LIV.

"Him so I sought ; and so at last I fownd,
Where him that Witch had thrall'd to her will,
In chaines of lust and lewde desyres ybownd,
And so transformed from his former skill,
That me he knew not, nether his owne ill ;
Till, through wise handling and faire governaunce,
I him recured to a better will,
Purged from drugs of fowle intempraunce :
Then meanes I gan devise for his deliveraunce.

LV.

"Which when the vile Enchaunteresse perceiv'd,
How that my Lord from her I would reprove,
With cup thus charmd him parting she deceiv'd ;
'Sad Verse, give death to him that death does
give,
'And losse of love to her that loves to live,
'So soone as Bacchus with the Nympe does
lincke !'
So parted we, and on our iourney drive ;
Till, coming to this well, he stoupt to drinke :
The charme fulfilld, dead suddainly he downe did
sincke.

LVI.

"Which when I, wretch"—Not one word more she
sayd,
But breaking off the end for want of breath,
And slyding soft, as downe to sleepe her layd,
And ended all her woe in quiet death.
That seeing, good Sir Guyon could unweath
From teares abstayne ; for grieve his hart did
grate,
And from so heavie sight his head did wreath,
Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate,
Which plunged had faire Lady in so wretched state :

LVII.

Then, turning to his Palmer, said ; "Old syre,
Behold the ymage of mortalitie,
And feeble nature cloth'd with fleshy tyre !
When raging Passion with fierce tyranny
Robs Reason of her dew regalitie,
And makes it servaunt to her basest part ;
The strong it weakens with infirmitie,
And with bold furie armes the weakest hart :
The strong through pleasure soonest falles, the
weake through smart."

LVIII.

"But Temperance," said he, "with golden squire
Betwixt them both can measure out a meane ;
Nether to melt in pleasures whott desyre,
Nor frye in hartlesse grieve and dolefull tene :
Thrise happy man, who fares them both atweene !
But sith this wretched woman overcome
Of anguish, rather then of crime, hath bene,
Reserve her cause to her eternall doome ;
And, in the meane, vouchsafe her honorable
toombe."

LIX.

"Palmer," quoth he, "death is an equall doome
To good and had, the common In of rest ;

LVIII. 1. *But Temperance, said he, with golden squire]*
Square, spelt squire for the sake of the rhyme. URRON.

LVIII. 2. — a meane ;] Alluding to the Golden Mean.
CHURCH.

LVIII. 3. — whott.] *Hot, spelt whot in the old editions*
of the Bible, and so pronounced to this day in the West of
England. URRON.

But after death the tryall is to come,
When best shall bee to them that lived best :
But both alike, when death hath both supprest,
Religious reverence doth buriall teene ;
Which whoso wants, wants so much of his rest :
For all so greet shame after death I weene,
As selfe to dyen bad, unburied bad to beene.

LX.

So both agree their hodies to engrave :
The great earthes wombe they open to the sky,
And with sad cypresse seemely it embrace ;
Then, covering with a clod their closed eye,
They lay therein their corses tenderly,
And bid them sleepe in everlasting peace.
But, ere they did their utmost obsequy,
Sir Guyon more affection to increase,
Bynempt a sacred vow, which none should ay
releace.

LXI.

The dead Knights sword out of his sheath he drew
With which he cutt a lock of all their heare,
Which medling with their blood and earth he
threw
Into the grave, and gan devoutly sweare ;
"Such and such evil God on Guyon reare,
And worse and worse, young Orphane, be thy
payne,
If I, or thou, dew vengeaunce doe forbear,
Till guiltie blood her guerdon doe obtayne !"—
So, shedding many teares, they closd the earth
agayue.

CANTO II.

Babes bloody handes may not be cleansd.
The face of Golden Meane:
Her sisters, Two Extremities,
Strive her to banish cleane.

I.

Thus when Sir Guyon with his faithfull Guyde
Had with dew rites and dolorous lament
The end of their sad tragedie uptyde,
The litle Babe up in his armes he hent ; [ment
Who with sweet pleasaunce, and bold blandish
Gan smyle on them, that rather ought to weepe
As carelesse of his woe, or innocent
Of that was doen ; that ruth emperced deepe
In that Knights hart, and wordes with bitter teare
did steepe :

LIX. 6. — *doth buriall teene ;]* *Affords the melan-*
choly rites of burial. CHURCH.

LIX. 8. *For all so greet shame]* That is, For I imagine
it altogether as great a shame after death *unburied bad to*
beene, as for a man's self to dyen bad. URRON.

LX. 1. — *to engrave ;]* *Bury. CHURCH.*

LX. 3. *And with sad cypresse seemely it embrace ;]* *Deco-*
rate it with strewments of funeral cypresse, as he calls the
tree, F. Q. i. 8. TOWN.

LX. 9. *Bynempt]* *Dictated, or named ; from be and*
nempt. TOWN.

LXI. 3. *Which medling]* *Mixing the hair &c. Fr. mêler*
CHURCH.

ARG. 1. — *may not be cleansd.]* That is, *cannot be*
cleansed. See st. 10. CHURCH.

1. 4. — *he hent ;]* *Seized, took hold of. Sax. hende*
Lat. prehendere. TOWN.

II.

" Ah ! lucklesse Babe, borne under cruell starre,
 And in dead parents balefull ashes bred,
 Full litle weenest thou what sorrowes are
 Left thee for porcion of thy livelyhed ;
 Poore Orphane ! in the wide world scattered,
 As budding branch rent from the native tree,
 And throwen forth, till it be withered !
 Such is the state of men ! Thus enter we
 Into this life with woe, and end with miseree !"

III.

Then, soft himselfe inclining on his knee
 Downe to that well, did in the water weene
 (So love does loath disdainfull niceties)
 His guiltie handes from bloody gore to cleene :
 He washt them oft and oft, yet nought they beene
 For all his washing cleaner : Still he strove ;
 Yet still the litle hands were bloody seene :
 The which him into great amazement drove,
 And into diverse doubt his wavering wonder clove.

IV.

He wist not whether blott of fowle offence
 Might not be purgd with water nor with bath ;
 Or that High God, in lieu of innocence,
 Imprinted had that token of His wrath,
 To shew how sore bloodguiltinesse He hat'h ;
 Or that the charme and veneme, which they
 dronck,
 Their blood with secret filth infected hath,
 Being diffused through the senceless tronck
 That, through the great contagion, direful deadly
 stonck.

V.

Whom thus at gaze the Palmer gan to bord
 With goodly reason, and thus fayre bespake ;
 " Ye bene right hard amated, gracious Lord,
 And of your ignorance great mervell make,
 Whiles cause not well conceived ye mistake.
 But know, that secret vertues are infusd
 In every fountaine, and in everie lake,
 Which, who hath skill them rightly to have chusd,
 To proove of passing wonders hath full often usd :

VI.

" Of those, some were so from their sourse indewd
 By great dame Nature, from whose fruitfull pap
 Their welheads spring, and are with moisture
 deawd ;
 Which feeds each living plant with liquid sap,
 And filles with flowres fayre Florae painted lap :
 But other some, by guifte of later grace,
 Or by good prayers, or by other hap,
 Had vertue pouerd into their waters bace,
 And thenceforth were renownd, and sought from
 place to place.

VII.

" Such is this well, wrought by occasion straunge,
 Which to her nymph befell. Upon a day,
 As she the woodes with bow and shaftes did
 range,
 The hartlesse hynd and roebucke to dismay,
 Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the way,
 And, kindling fire at her faire-burning eye,
 Inflamed was to follow beauties chace,

v. 1. — to bord] *Accost, or address.* TODD.

v. 3. — amated,] *Perplexed.* Fr. *amat.* TODD.

And chased her, that fast from him did fly ;
 As hynd from her, so she fled from her enmy.

VIII.

" At last, when fayling breath began to faint,
 And saw no meanes to scape ; of shame affrayd,
 She set her downe to weepe for sore constraint ;
 And, to Diana calling lowd for ayde,
 Her deare besought to let her die a mayd.
 The goddesse heard ; and suddaine, where she sate
 Welling out streames of teares, and quite dismayd
 With stony feare of that rude rustick mate,
 Transformd her to a stone from stedfast Virgins state.

IX.

" Lo ! now she is that Stone ; from whose two heads,
 As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames do flow,
 Yet colde through feare and old conceived dreads :
 And yet the Stone her semblance seemes to show,
 Shapt like a Maide, that such ye may her know ;
 And yet her vertues in her water byde ;
 For it is chaste and pure as prenest snow,
 Ne lets her waves with any filth be dyde ;
 But ever, like herselfe, unstayned hath bene tryde.

X.

" From thence it comes, that this Babes bloody hand
 May not be clennd with water of this well :
 Ne certes, Sir, strive you it to withstand,
 But let them still be bloody, as befell,
 That they his mothers innocence may tell,
 As she bequeathd in her last testament ;
 That, as a sacred symbole, it may dwell
 In her sonnes flesh, to mind revengement,
 And be for all chaste Dames an endlesse moniment."

XI.

He hearkned to his reason ; and the childe
 Uptaking, to the Palmer gave to beare ;
 But his sad fathers armes with blood defilde,
 Au heavie load, himselfe did lightly reare ;
 And turning to that place, in which whyleare
 He left his loftie steed with golden sell
 And goodly gorgeous barbes, him found not
 By other accident, that carst befell, [there :
 He is convaide ; but how, or where, here fits not tell.

XII.

Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he wroth,
 Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease,
 And fairly fare on foot, however loth :
 His double burden did him sore disease.
 So, long they travelled with litle ease,
 Till that at last they to a Castle came,
 Built on a rocke adjoyning to the seas :
 It was an auncient worke of antique fame,
 And wondrous strong by nature and by skilfull
 frame.

XIII.

Therein three Sisters dwelt of sundry sort,
 The children of one syre by mothers three ;

viii. 3. — constraint:] *Uneasiness.* CHURCH.
 viii. 9. *Transformed her to a stone from stedfast Virgins state.] Stedfast, i. e. in which state she supposed stedfastly to continue.* UPON.

ix. 3. Yet] That is, still. So yet signifies in the fourth and sixth lines also. CHURCH.

xi. 6. — with golden sell
 And goodly gorgeous barbes.] *Sell is saddle, Fr. selle. Barbes are bits or bridles.* TODD.

Who, dying whylome, did divide this fort
To them by equall shares in equall fee :
But stryfull mind and diverse qualitee
Drew them in partes, and each made others foe :
Still did they strive and daily disagree ;
The eldest dia against the youngest goe,
And both against the middest meant to worken woe.

xiv.

Where when the Knight arriv'd, he was right well
Receiv'd, as Knight of so much worth became,
Of second Sister, who did far excell
The other two ; Medina was her name,
A sober sad and comely courteous Dame :
Who rich arayd, and yet in modest guise,
In goodly garments that her well became,
Fayre marching forth in honorable wize,
Him at the threshold mett and well did enterprize.

xv.

She led him up into a goodly bowre,
And comely courted with meet modestie ;
Ne in her speach, ne in her haviour,
Was lightnesse seeme or looser vanitie,
But gracious womanhood, and gravitie,
Above the reason of her youthly yeares :
Her golden lockes she roundly did upnye
In breaded tramels, that no looser heares
Did out of order stray about her daintie eares.

xvi.

Whilst she her selfe thus busily did frame
Seemely to entertaime her new-come guest,
Newes hereof to her other Sisters came,
Who all this while were at their wanton rest,
Accourting each her friend with lavish fest :
They were two Knights of perlesse puissance,
And famous far abroad for warlike gest,
Which to these Ladies love did countenance,
And to his Mistresse each himselfe strove to ad-
vaunce.

xvii.

He, that made love unto the eldest Dame,
Was hight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man ;
Yet not so good of deedes as great of name,
Which he by many rash adventures wan,
Since errant armes to sew he first began.
More huge in strength then wise in workes he was,
And reason with foole-hardize over-ran ;
Sterne melancholy did his courage pas ;
And was, for terrour more, all armd in shyning
bras.

xviii.

But he, that lov'd the youngest, was Sansloy ;
He, that faire Una late fowle outraged,
The most unruly and the boldest boy
That ever warlike weapons menaged,

xiv. 9. — did enterprize.] i. e. received him kindly. TODD.

xv. 6. — reason] Reason here means proportion. Lat. *ratio*. Her gravity was disproportioned to her youth. CHURCH.

xv. 7. Her golden lockes she roundly did upnye
In breaded tramels, &c.] In woven or plaited divisions, representing a kind of net-work. *Tramel* is from the Fr. *travail*, a net. TODD.

xy. 9 — daintie] Delicate, or elegant. TODD.

xvii. 5. — sew] Pursue, follow. CHURCH.

xvii. 9. And was, for terrour more, &c.] He means, And he was, for terrour more, &c. T. WARTON.

And all to lawlesse lust encouraged
Through strong opinion of his matchlesse might ;
Ne ought he car'd whom he endamaged
By tortious wrong, or whom bereav'd of right ;
He, now this Ladies champion, chose for love to
fight.

xix.

These two gay Knights, vowd to so diverse loves,
Each other does envy with deadly hate,
And daily warre against his foeman moves,
In hope to win more favour with his mate,
And th' others pleasing service to abate,
To magnifie his owne. But when they heard
How in that place straunge Knight arrived late,
Both Knights and Ladies forth right angry far'd,
And fiercely unto battell sternè themselves pre-
par'd.

xx.

But, ere they could proceede unto the place
Where he abode, themselves at discord fell,
And cruell combat ioynd in middle space :
With horrible assault, and fury fell,
They heapt huge strokes the scorned life to quell,
That all on uprose from her settled seat
The house was raysd, and all that in did dwell ;
Seemd that lowde thunder with amazement great
Did rend the rattling skyes with flames of fouldring
heat.

xxi.

The noyse thereof cald forth that stranger Knight,
To weet what dreadful thing was there in hond ;
Where whenas two brave Knights in bloody
fight
With deadly rancour he enraunged fond,
His sunbroad shield about his wrest he hond,
And shyning blade unsheathd, with which he ran
Unto that stead, their strife to understand ;
And, at his first arrivall, them began
With goodly meanes to pacifie, well as he can.

xxii.

But they, him spying, both with greedy forse
Attonce upon him ran, and him beset
With strokes of mortall steele without remorse,
And on his shield like yron sledges bet.
As when a beare and tygre, being met
In cruell fight on Lybicke ocean wide,
Espye a traveller with feet surbet,
Whom they in equall pray hope to divide,
They stint their strife and him assayle on everie
side.

xxiii.

But he, not like a weary traveller,
Their sharp assault right boldly did rebut,
And suffred not their blowes to byte him nere,
But with redoubled buffes them hacke did put :
Whose grieved mindes, which choler did englut,
Against themselves turning their wrathfull spight,

xviii. 8. — tortious] Injurious. TODD.

xx. 9. — fouldring heat.] Fouldring, that is, thun-
dering. Fr. *fouldroyant*. CHURCH.

xxii. 6. — on Lybicke ocean wide.] The Lybicke
ocean means those mounds of sands in the Libyck deserts,
whose wide and extended plains may be imagined an ocean.
UPTON.

xxii. 7. — surbet.] Wearing, or bruised. TODD.

xxiii. 3. And suffred not their blowes to byte him nere,]
That is, to pierce him to the quick. T. WARTON.

Gan with new rage their shieldes to hew and cut.
But still, when Guyon came to part their fight,
With heaue load on him they freshly gan to smight.

xxiv.

As a tall shiip tossed in troublous seas,
Whom raging windes, threatning to make the
Of the rough rockes, doe diuersly disease, [pray
Meetes two contrarie hillowes by the way,
That her on either side doe sore assay,
And boast to swallow her in greedy grave ;
Shee, scorning both their spights, does make
wide way,
And, with her brest breaking the fomy wave,
Does ride on both their backs, and faire herself
doth save :

xxv.

So boldly he him beares, and rusheth forth
Betweene them both, hy conduct of his blade.
Wondrous great prowess and heroick worth
He shewed that day, and rare ensample made,
When two so mighty warriors he dismade :
Attonce he wards and strikes ; he takes and paies ;
Now forst to yield, now forcing to invade ;
Before, behind, and round about him laies :
So double was his paines, so double he his praise.

xxvi.

Strange sort of fight, three valiaunt Knights to see
Three combates ioine in one, and to darraine
A triple warre with triple enmittee,
All for their Ladies froward love to gaine,
Which, gotten, was but hate. So Love does raine
In stoutest minds, and maketh monstrous warre ;
He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe,
And yett his peace is but continual iarre :
O miserable men, that to him subiect arre !

xxvii.

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious armes,
The faire Medina with her tresses torne
And naked brest, in pittie of their harmes,
Amongst them ran ; and, falling them before,
Besought them by the womb which them had born,
And by the loves which were to them most deare,
And by the knighthood which they sure had sworn,
Their deadly cruell discord to forbear,
And to her iust^s conditions of faire peace to heare.

xxviii.

But her two other Sisters, standing by,
Her lowd gainsaid ; and both their champions had
Pursew the end of their strong enmity,
As euer of their loves they would be glad :
Yet she with pittie words, and counsell sad,
Still strove their stubborn rages to reuoke ;
That at the last, suppressing fury mad,
They gan abstaine from dint of direfull stroke,
And hearken to the sober speeches which she
spoke ;

xxix.

" Ah ! puissant Lords, what cursed evill spright,
Or fell Erinnye, in your noble harts
Her hellish brond hath kindled with despight,
And stird you up to worke your wilfull smarts ?
Is this the ioy of armes ? be these the parts
Of glorious knighthood, after blood to thrust,

xxviii. 5. — counsell sad,] *Grave advice.* CHURCH.
xxix. 6. — thrust,] *Thirst.* TODD.

And not regard dew right and iust desarts ?
Vaine is the vaunt, and victory uniust,
That more to mighty hands then rightfull cause
doth trust.

xxx.

" And were there rightfull cause of difference,
Yet were not better fayre it to accord,
Then with blood-guiltinesse to heape offence,
And mortal vengeance ioine to crime abhord !
O ! fly from wrath ; fly, O my liefest Lord !
Sad be the sights, and bitter fruites of warre,
And thousand furies wait on wrathfull sword :
Ne ought the praise of prowess more doth marre
Then fowle revenging rage, and base conten-
tious iarre.

xxxI.

" But lovely concord, and most sacred peace,
Doth nourish vertue, and fast friendship breeds,
Weake she makes strong, and strong thing does
increase,
Till it the pitch of highest praise exceeds ;
Brave be her warres, and honorable deeds,
By which she triumphes over yre and pride,
And winnes an olive girlond for her meeds.
Be therefore, O my deare Lords, pacifide,
And this misseeming discord meekely lay aside."

xxxII.

Her gracious words their rancour did appall,
And suncke so deepe into their hoyling brests,
That downe they lett their cruell weapons fall,
And lowly did abase their lofty crests
To her faire presence and discrete behests.
Then she began a treaty to procure,
And stablish terms betwixt both their requests,
That as a law for ever should endure ;
Which to observe, in word of Knights they did
assure.

xxxIII.

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their league,
After their weary sweat and bloody toile,
She them besought, during their quiet treague,
Iuto her lodging to repaure a while,
To rest themselves, and grace to reconcile.
They sooue consent : So forth with her they fare ;
Where they are well receivd, and made to spoile
Themselves of soiled armes, and to prepare
Their minds to pleasure, and their mouths to dainty
fare.

xxxIV.

And those two froward Sisters, their faire loves,
Came with them eke, all were they wondrous loth,
And fained cheare, as for the time behoves ;
But could not colour yet so well the troth,
But that their natures had appeard in both :
For both did at their second Sister grutch
And inly grieve, as doth an hidden moth
The inner garment frett, not th' utter touch ;
One thought her cheare too litle, th' other thought
too much.

xxxV.

Elissa (so the eldest hight) did deeme
Such entertainment base, ne ought would eat,

xxxiii. 3. — treague,] *A truce, or cessation of arms.*
Ital. *tregua.* Germ. *treuga.* UPRON.

xxxiii. 5. — grace to reconcile.] *To regain each
other's favour.* A Latinism. CHURCH.

Ne ought would speake, but evermore did seeme
As discontent for want of merth or meat ;
No solace could her paramour intreat
Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliance ;
But with bent lowring browes, as she would threat,
She scould, and frownd with froward counte-
naunce ;

Unworthy of faire Ladies comely governaunce.

xxxvi.

But young Perissa was of other mynd,
Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light,
And quite contrary to her Sisters kynd ;
No measure in her mood, no rule of right,
But poured out in pleasure and delight :
In wine and meats she flowd above the banck,
And in excesse exceeded her owne might ;
In sumptuous tise she ioyd her selfe to pranck,
But of her love too lavish : litle have she thanck !

xxxvii.

Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sans oy,
Fitt mate for such a mincing mineon,
Who in her loosenesse tooke exceeding ioy ;
Might not be found a francker franion,
Of her leawd parts to make companion.
But Huddibras, more like a malecontent,
Did see and grieve at his bold fashion ;
Hardly could he endure his hardiment ;
Yett still he satt, and inly did himselfe torment.

xxxviii.

Betwixt them both the faire Medina sate
With sober grace and goodly carriage :
With equal measure she did moderate
The strong extremities of their outrage ;
That forward paire she ever would asswage,
When they would strive dew reason to exceed ;
But that same froward twaine would accorage,
And of her plenty adde unto their need :
So kept she them in order, and herselfe in heed.

xxxix.

Thus fairely shee attemperd her feast,
And pleasd them all with meete satiety :
At last, when lust of meat and drinke was ceast,
She Guyon deare besought of curtesie
To tell from whence he came through ieopardy,
And whether now on new adventure bownd :
Who with hold grace, and comely gravity,
Drawing to him the eies of all arownd,
From lofty sieg began these words aloud to sownd.

xl.

"This thy demaund, O Lady, doth revive
Fresh memory in me of that great Queene,
Great and most glorious Virgin Queene alive,
That with her soveraine power, and scepter shene,
All Faery lond does peaceably sustene.
In widest ocean she her throne does reare,
That over all the earth it may be seene ;
As morning sunne her beames dispredden cleare ;
And in her face faire peace and mercy doth appeare.

xxxvi. 3. — kynd ;] *Nature*. Todd.

xxxvii. 2. — such a mincing mineon,] Such an affected wanton. Fr. *Mignon*. Todd.

xxxviii. 5. — forward] That is, bold. Church.

xxxix. 9. From lofty sieg began] *Sieg* is seat. Fr. *Siege*. Church.

xli.

"In her the riches of all heavenly grace
In chiefe degree are heaped up on hye :
And all, that els this worlds enclosure bace
Hath great or glorious in mortall eye,
Adornes the person of her Maicstye ;
That men, beholding so great excellence
And rare perfection in mortalitye,
Doe her adore with sacred reverence,
As th' Idole of her Makers great magnificence.

xlii.

"To her I homage and my service owe,
In number of the noblest Knightes on ground,
Mongst whom on me she deigned to bestowe
Order of Maydenhead, the most renownd,
That may this day in all the world be found.
An yearly solemne feast she wontes to make,
The day that first doth lead the yeare around,
To which all Knights of worth and courage bold
Resort, to heare of straunge adventures to be told.

xliii.

"There this old Palmer shewd himselfe that day,
And to that mighty Princesse did complaine
Of grievous mischiefs, which a wicked Fay
Had wrought, and many whelmd in deadly paine,
Whereof he crav'd redresse. My Sovereine,
Whose glory is in gracious deeds, and ioyes
Throughout the world her mercy to maintaine,
Eftsoones devisd redresse for such annoyes :
Me, all unfitt for so great purpose, she employes.

xliv.

"New hath faire Phebe with her silver face
Thrise seene the shadowes of the neather world,
Sith last I left that honorable place,
In which her roial presence is entold ;
Ne ever shall I rest in house nor hold,
Till I that false Acrasia have woune ;
Of whose fowle deedes, too hideous to bee told,
I witnesse am, and this thy wretched sonne
Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly fordonne."

xlv.

"Tell on, fayre Sir," said she, "that dolefull tale,
From which sad ruth does seeme you to restraine,
That we may pity such unhappie hale,
And learne from Pleasures poyson to abstaine :
Ill, by ensample, good doth often gayne."
Then forward he his purpose gan pursew,
And told the story of the mortall payne,
Which Mordant and Amavia did rew ;
As, with lamenting eyes, himselfe did lately vew.

xlvi.

Night was far spent ; and now in ocean deep
Orion, flying fast from hissing Snake,
His flaming head did hasten for to steep,
When of his pitteous tale he end did make .
Whilst with delight of that he wisely spake
Those gueses beguyled did beguyle their eyes
Of kindly sleepe, that did them overtake.
At last, when they had markt the changed skyes,
They wist their houre was spent ; than each to rest
him hyes.

xli. 9. As th' Idole] That is, as the *image*. Lat. *idolium* Church.

xliv. 4. — entold ;] It should be *enroll*, that is, *encircled*. Church.

CANTO III.

Vaine Braggadochio, getting Guy-
ous horse, is made the scorn
Of knight-hood trow; and is of fayre
Belphoebe fowle forlorne.

i.

SOONE as the morrow fayre with purple beames
Disperst the shadowes of the misty night,
And Titan, playing on the easteru streames,
Gan cleare the deawy ayre with springing light;
Sir Guyon, mindfull of his vow yplight,
Uprose from drowsie couch, and him address
Unto the iourney which he had behight:
His puissant armes about his noble brest,
And many-folded shield he bound about his wrest.

ii.

Then, taking congè of that Virgin pure,
The bloody-handed Bahe unto her truth
Did earnestly committ, and her coniure
In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth,
And all that gentle noriture ensu'th;
And that, so soone as ryper yeares he raught,
He might, for memory of that dayes ruth,
Be called Ruddymane; and thereby taught
T' avenge his parents death on them that had it
wrought.

iii.

So forth he far'd, as now befell, on foot,
Sith his good steed is lately from him gone;
Patience perforce: helpless what may it boot
To fret for anger, or for griefto mone?
His Palmer now shall foot no more alone.
So fortune wrought, as under greene woodes syde
He lately heard that dying Lady grone,
He left his steed without, and speare besyde,
And rushed in on foot to ayd her ere she dyde.

iv.

The whyles a Losell wandring by the way,
One that to bountie never cast his mynd,
Ne thought of honour ever did assay
His baser brest, but in his kestrell kynd
A pleasing vaine of glory he did fynd,
To which his flowing tounge and troublous spright
Gave him great ayd, and made him more inlynd;
He, that brave steed thes finding ready dight,
Purloynd both steed and speare, and ran away full
light.

v.

Now gan his hart all swell in iollity,
And of himselfe great hope and help conceiv'd,
That puffed up with smoke of vanity,
And with selfe-loved personage deceiv'd,
He gan to hope of men to be receiv'd
For such, as he him thought, or faine would bee:
But for in Court gay portance he perceiv'd,

i. 7. — behight:] *Promised.* Tonn.

ii. 1. *Then taking congè of that Virgin.] Taking leave of Medina.* CHURCH.

iv. 1. — a Losell] A loose, good-for-nothing fellow, as the poet explains it in the next line. CHURCH.

iv. 2. — bountie] *Goodness,* Fr. *Bonté.* CHURCH.

iv. 4. — in his kestrell kynd] In his base kynd, or nature. *Kestrell* is a bastard kind of hawk. UPTON.

v. 7. But for] *And because.* CHURCH.

And gallant shew to be in greatest gree,
Eftssoones to Court he cast t' aduance his first
degree.

vi.

And by the way he chaunced to espy
One sitting ydle on a sunny banck,
To whom auanting in great bravery,
As peacocke that his painted plumes doth pranck,
He smote his courser in the trembling flank,
And to him threatned his hart-thrilling speare:
The seely man, seeing him ryde so ranck
And ayne at him, fell flat to ground for feare,
And crying, "Mercy," loud, his pitious haudes gan
reare.

vii.

Thereat the Scarcrow vexed wondrous prowde,
Through fortune of his first adventure fayre,
And with big thundring voice reuyld him lowd;
"Vile caytive, vassall of dread and despayre,
Unworthie of the commune breathed ayre,
Why livest thou, dead dog, a lenger day,
And doest not unto death thyselfe prepayre?
Dy, or thyselfe my captive yield for ay:
Great favour I thee graunt for answers thus to
stay."

viii.

"Hold, O deare Lord, hold your dead-doing hand,"
Then loud he cryde, "I am your humble thrall."
"Ah wretch," quoth he, "thy destinies withstand
My wrathfull will, and doe for mercy call.
I give thee life: Therefore prostrated fall,
And kisse my stirrup; that thy homage bee."
The Miser threw himselfe, as an offall,
Streight at his foot in base humilitee,
And cleeped him his liege, to hold of him in fee.

ix.

So happy peace they made and faire accord.
Eftssoones this Liegeman gan to waxe more bold,
And, when he felt the folly of his Lord,
In his owne kind he gan himselfe unfold:
For he was wylie witted, and growne old
In cunning sleights and practick knavery.
From that day forth he cast for to uphold
His ydle humour with fine flattery,
And blow the bellowes to his swelling vanity.

x.

Trompart, fitt man for Braggadochio
To serve at Court in view of vaunting eye;
Vaine-glorious man, when fluttring wind does blow
In his light winges, is lifted up to skye;
The scorn of knight-hood and trow cheualrye,
To thinke, without desert of gentle deed
And noble worth, to be aduanced hye;
Such prayse is shame; but honour, vertues meed,
Doth beare the fayrest flowre in honourable seed.

xi.

So forth they pas, a well consorted payre,
Till that at length with Archimage they meet:
Who seeing one, that shone in armour fayre,
On goodly courser thondring with his feet,

v. 8. — in greatest gree.] In greatest estimation or liking. TODD.

vi. 3 — auanting] *Boasting.* UPTON.

vi. 7 — ryde so ranck] That is, ride so fiercely CHURCH.

ix. 8. His] *Braggadochio's.* CHURCH.

Eftsoones supposed him a person meet
Of his revenge to make the instrument :
For since the Redcrosse Knight he erst did weat
To been with Guyon knitt in one consent,
The ill, which earst to him, he now to Guyon ment.

xii.

And comming close to Trompart gan inquere
Of him, what mightie warriour that mote bee,
That rode in golden sell with single spere,
But wanted sword to wreake his enmittee.
"He is a great adventurer," said he,
"That hath his sword through hard assay forgone,
And now hath vow'd, till he avenged bee
Of that despight, never to wearen none ;
That speare is him enough to doen a thousand grone."

xiii.

Th' Enchaunter greatly ioyed in the vaunt,
And weened well ere long his will to win,
And both his foeen with equall feyle to daunt :
Tho to him louting lowly did begin
To plaine of wronges, which had committed bin
By Guyon, and by that false Redcrosse Knight ;
Which two, through treason and deceitfull gin,
Had slayne Sir Mordant and his Lady bright :
That mote him honour win, to wreakso foule despight.

xiv.

Therewith all suddenly he seemd enrag'd,
And threatned death with dreadfull countenance,
As if their lives had in his hand beneen gag'd ;
And with stiffe force shaking his mortall launce,
To let him weet his doughtie valiaunce,
Thus said ; "Old man, great sure shal he thy
meed, [geaunce]
If, where those Knights for feare of dew ven-
Doe lurke, thou certainly to mee areed,
That I may wreake on them their hainous hateful
deed."

xv.

"Certes, my Lord," said he, "that shall I soone,
And give you eke good helpe to their decay.
But mote I wisely you advise to doon ;
Give no ods to your foes, but doe purvay
Yourselfe of sword before that bloody day ;
(For they be two the prowtest Knights on ground,
And oft approv'd in many hard assay ;)
And eke of surest steele, that may be fownd,
Do arme yourselfe against that day, them to con-
fownd."

xvi.

"Dotard," saide he, "let be thy deepe advise ;
Seemes that through many yeares thy wits thee
faile,
And that weake eld bath left thee nothing wise,
Els never should thy iudgement be so frayle
To measure manhood by the sword or mayle.
Is not enough fowre quarters of a man,
Withouten sword or shield, an hoste to quayle ?
Thou litle wotest that this right-hand can :
Speake they, which have beheld the battailes which
it wan."

xii. 6. *That hath his sword through hard assay forgone,*
Hath lost his sword in a dangerous enterprise. Todd.

xiii. 7. — gin.] *Engine, or plot.* Todd.

xiv. 5. — valiaunce.] *Valour.* Fr. *Valliance.* Upton.

xvi. 1 — let be] *Away with.* Church.

xvii.

The man was much abashed at his boast ;
Yet well he wist that whoso would contend
With either of those Knightes on even coast,
Should neede of all his armes him to defend ;
Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend :
When Braggadocchio saide ; "Once I did sweare,
When with one sword seven Knightes I brought
to end,
Thenceforth in battaile never sword to beare,
But it were that which noblest Knight on earth
doth weare."

xviii.

"Perdy, Sir Knight," saide then th' Enchaunter
blive,
"That shall I shortly purchase to your hond :
For now the best and noblest Knight alive
Prince Arthiur is, that wannes in Faerie lond ;
He hath a sword, that flames like burning brond :
The same, by my device, I undertake
Shall by to morrow hy thy side be fond."
At which bold word that Boaster gan to quake,
And wondred in his minde what mote that monster
make.

xix.

He stayd not for more bidding, but away
Was suddain vanished out of his sight :
The northerne winde his wings did broad display
At his commaund, and reared him up light
From off the earth to take his aerie flight.
They lookt about, but no where could espye
Tract of his foot : then dead through great affright
They both nigh were, and each bad other flye :
Both fled atonce, ne ever backe returned eye ;

xx.

Till that they come unto a forrest greene. [feare ;
In which they shrowd themselves from causeles
Yet feare them followes still, where so they benee :
Each trembling leafe and whistling wind they
heare,
As ghastly bug, does greatly them affeare :
Yet both doe strive their fearefulnessse to faine.
At last they heard a horne that shrilled cleare
Throughout the wood that echoed againe,
And made the forrest ring, as it would rive in
twaiue.

xxi.

Eft through the thicke they heard one rudely rush ;
With noyse whereof he from his loftie steed
Downe fell to ground, and crept into a bush,
To hide his coward head from dying dread.
But Trompart stoutly stayed to taken heed
Of what might hap. Eftsoone there stepped
A godly Ladie clad in hunters weed, [fourth
That seemd to be a woman of great worth,
And by her stately portance borne of heavenly
birth.

xxii.

Her face so faire, as flesh it seemed not,
But hevenly pourtraict of bright angels hew,

xviii. 1. — blive,] *Presently, the same as bilive ;* an
adverb of frequent occurrence in our old poetry. Todd.

xix. 1. He] *Archimago.* Church.

xx. 5. *As ghastly bug,*] *Bug* is a common word, in our old
poetry, for any frightful appearance. Todd.

xxi. 1. — the thicke] *Thicket.* Todd.

xxi. 9. — portance] *Compartment, carriage.* Ital.
portamento. Upton.

Clere as the skye, withouten blame or blot,
Through goodly mixture of complexions dew ;
And in her cheekes the vermeill red did shew
Like roses in a bed of lillies shed,
The which ambrosiall odours from them threw,
And gazers sence with double pleasure fed,
Hable to heale the sicke and to revive the ded.

xxxiii.

In her faire eyes two living lamps did flame,
Kindled above at th' Hevenly Makers light,
And darted fyrie beames out of the same,
So passing persant, and so wondrous bright,
That quite bercav'd the rash beholders sight :
In them the blinded god his lustfull fyre
To kindle oft assayd, but had no might ;
For, with dredd maiestie and awfull yre,
She broke his wanton darts, and quenched bace
desyre.

xxxiv.

Her yvorie forehead, full of hountie brave,
Like a broad table did itselfe disprede,
For Love his loftie triumphes to engrave,
And write the battailes of his great godhed :
All good and honour might therein be red ;
For there their dwelling was. And, when she
spake, [shed ;
Sweete wordes, like dropping honny, she did
And twixt the perles and rubins softly brake
A silver sound, that heavenly musicke seemd to
make.

xxv.

Upon her eyelids many Graces sate,
Under the shadow of her even browes,
Working belgardes and amorous retrate ;
And everie one her with a grace endowes,
And everie one with meekenesse to her bowes :
So glorious mirrhour of celestiall grace,
And soveraine moniment of mortall vowes,
How shall frayle pen describe her heavenly face,
For feare, through want of skill, her beauty to dis-
grace !

xxvi.

So faire, and thousand thousand times more faire,
She seemd, when she presented was to sight ;
And was yclad, for heat of scorching aire,
All in a silken Camus lilly whight,
Purified upon with many a folded plight,
Which all above besprinkled was throughout
With golden aygulets, that glistred bright,
Like twinkling starres ; and all the skirt about
Was hemd with golden fringe.

xxvii.

Below her ham her weed did somewhat trayne,
And her streight legs most bravely were embayld

xxiv. 2. *Like a broad table*] *Board*, such as pictures are
painted upon. Lat. *Tabula*. CHURCH.

xxv. 3. — belgardes] *Sweet or beautiful looks*. TODD.

xxv. 8. — describe] *Describe*. Ital. *descrivere*. TODD.

xxvi. 4. — *Camus*] A thin, transparent, dress. TODD.

xxvi. 5. — Purified] *Wrought or embroidered*. The
Fr. *pourfiture* signifies the fringe or trimming of women's
gowns. TODD.

xxvi. 7. — aygulets,] *Tagged points*, the Fr. word,
aliquette. UPTON.

xxvii. 2. — embayld] *Bound up*. Fr. *emballer*, Germ.
einballen. UPTON.

In gilden buskins of costly cordwayne,
All bard with golden bendes, which were entayld
With curious antiekes, and full fayre aumayld :
Before, they fastned were under her knee
In a rich iewell, and therein entrayld
The ends of all the knots, that none might see
How they within their fouldings close enwrapped bee.

xxviii.

Like two faire marble pillours they were seeme,
Which doe the temple of the gods support,
Whom all the people decke with girlands greene,
And honour in their festivall resort ;
Those same with stately grace and princely port
She taught to tread, when she herselfe would grace ;
But with the woody nymphes when she did play,
Or when the flying libbard she did chace,
She could them nimbly move, and after fly apace.

xxix.

And in her hand a sharpe hore-speare she held,
And at her backe a bow and quiver gay,
Stuff with steel-headed dartes wherewith she queld
The salvage beastes in her victorious play,
Knit with a golden hauldricke which forelay
Athwart her snowy brest, and did divide
Her daintie paps ; which, like young fruit in May,
Now little gan to swell, and being tide
Through her thin weed their places only signified.

xxx.

Her yellow lockes, crisped like golden wyre,
About her shoulders weren loosely shed,
And, when the winde amongst them did inspyre,
They waved like a penon wyde disprede,
And low behinde her backe were scattered :
And, whether art it were or heedlesse hap,
As through the flouring Forrest rash she fled,
In her rude heares sweet flowres themselves did
lap,
And flourishing fresh leaves and hlossomes did en-
wrap.

xxxi.

Such as Diana by the sandy shore
Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus greene,
Where all the nymphes have her unwares forelore,
Wandreth alone with bow and arrowes keene,
To seeke her game : Or as that famous queene
Of Amazons, whom Pyrrhus did destroy,
The day that first of Priame she was seene,
Did shew herselfe in great triumphant ioy,
To succour the weake state of sad afflicted Troy.

xxxii.

Such when as hartlesse Trompart her did vew,
He was dismayed in his coward minde,
And doubted whether he himselfe should shew,
Or fly away, or bide alone behinde ;
Both feare and hope he in her face did finde :
When she at last him spying thus bespake ;
" Hayle, groomme ; didst not thou see a bleeding
hynde,

xxvii. 4. — entayld] *Carved*. TODD.

xxvii. 5. — aumayld ;] *Enamelled*. Ital. *smalto* ; Fr.
email, *emaille*. UPTON.

xxvii. 7. — entrayld] *Twisted*. CHURCH.

xxx. 3. — *did inspyre*,] *Did breathe*. Lat. *inspro*.
CHURCH.

xxxii. 7. — groomme ;] *Young man*. TODD.

Whose right haunch earst my stedfast arrow
strake?
If thou didst, tell me, that I may her overtake."

xxxiii.

Wherewith reviv'd, this answer forth he threw;
"O goddesse, (for such I thee take to bee,
For nether doth thy face terrestrial shew,
Nor voyee sound mortall; I avow to thee,
Such wounded beast, as that, I did not see,
Sith earst into this forrest wild I came.
But mote thy goodlyhed forgive it mee,
To weete which of the gods I shall thee name,
That unto thee dew worship I may rightly frame."

xxxiv.

To whom she thus—But ere her words ensewd,
Unto the bush her eye did suddain glaunce,
In which vaine Braggadocchio was mawd,
And saw it stirre: She lefte her percing launce,
And towards gan a deadly shafte advaunce,
In mind to marke the beast. At which sad
stowre,
Trompart forth stept, to stay the mortall chaunce,
Out erying; "O! whatever heavenly powre,
Or earthly wight thou be, withhold this deadly
howre!

xxxv.

"O! stay thy hand; for yonder is no game
For thy fiers arrowes, them to exercize;
But loe! my Lord, my Liege, whose warlike name
Is far renownd through many bold emprise;
And now in shade he shrowded yonder lies."
She staid: With that he erauld out of his nest,
Forth creeping on his caitive hands and thies;
And standing stoutly up his lofty crest
Did fiercely shake, and rowze as comming late from
rest.

xxxvi.

As fearfull fowle, that long in secret cave
For dread of soring hauke herselfe hath hid,
Not caring how, her silly life to save,
She her gay painted plumes disorderid;
Seeing at last herselfe from daunger rid,
Peeps forth, and soone renews her native pride;
She gins her feathers fowle disfigured
Proudly to prune, and sett on every side;
She shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she did
her hide.

xxxvii.

So when her goodly visage he beheld,
He gan himselfe to vaunte: But, when he vewd
Those deadly tooles which in her hand she held,
Soone into other fitts he was transmewd,
Till she to him her gracious speach renewed;
"All haile, Sir Knight, and well may thee befall,
As all the like, which honor have pursewd
Through deeds of armes and prowess martiall!
All vertue merits praise, but such the most of all."

xxxviii.

To whom he thus; "O fairest under skie,
Trew be thy words, and worthy of thy praise,
That warlike feats doest highest glorifie.

xxxvi. 8. *Proudly to prune,*] *Smooth or set them in order.* T. WARTON.

xxxvii. 4. — transmewd,] *Changed, transformed.* Fr. transmuert. TODD.

Therein I have spent all my youthly daies,
And many battailes fought and many fraies
Throughout the world, wherso they might be
Endevoring my dreed name to raise [found,
Above the moone, that Fame may it resound
In her eternall tromp with laurell gir'lond croud.

xxxix.

"But what art thou, O Lady, which doest rounge
In this wilde forest, where no pleasure is,
And doest not it for ioyous Court exchange,
Emongst thine equal peres, where happy blis
And all delight does raigne much more then this?
There thou maist love, and dearly loved be,
And swim in pleasure, which thou here doest mis;
There maist thou best be seene, and best maist
see:

The wood is fit for beasts, the Court is fitt for Thee."

xl.

"Whoso in pompe of prouwd estate," quoth she,
"Does swim, and bathes himselfe in courtly blis,
Does waste his daies in darke obscuritee,
And in oblivion ever buried is:
Where ease abownds, yt's eath to doe amis:
But who his limbs with labours, and his mynd
Behaves with cares, cannot so easy mis.
Abroad in armes, at home in studious kynd,
Who seeks with painfull toile, shall Honor soonest
fynd:

xli.

"In woods, in waves, in warres, she wents to dwell,
And wil be found with perill and with paine;
Ne can the man, that moulds in ydle cell,
Unto her happy mansion attaine:
Before her gate High God did Sweate ordaine,
And wakefull Watches ever to abide:
But easy is the way and passage plaine
To Pleasures pallace; it may soone be spide,
And day and night her dores to all stand open wide.

xlii.

"In Princes Court"—The rest she would have sayd,
But that the foolish man, (fild with delight
Of her sweete words that all his sence dismayd,
And with her wondrous beauty ravisht quight),
Gan burne in filthy lust; and, leaping light,
Thought in his bastard armes her to embrace.
With that she, swarving backe, her iavelin bright
Against him bent, and fiercely did menaace:
So turned her about, and fled away apace.

xliii.

Which when the Pessaunt saw, amazd he stood,
And grieved at her flight; yet durst he not
Pursew her steps through wild unknowen wood;
Besides he feard her wrath, and threatend shott,
Whiles in the bush he lay, not yet forgott:
Ne car'd he greatly for her presence wayne,

xl. 7. Behaves] Here is an instance of *behaves* used in its primitive sense. Germ. *haben*, Anglo-S. *habban*, Zehabban, *to possess, use, or occupy*: Somn. "Who behaves, employes, uses &c. his limbs with labour, and his mind with cares," i. e. with *study*, and *thought*; as *cura* is used in Latin. Upron.

xlii. 6. — *bastard armes*] That is, *base arms*. Todd. xliii. 6. *Ne car'd he greatly for her presence wayne.*] That is, *useless*; her presence was of no service or use to him. Upron.

But turning said to Trompart; "What fowle blott
Is this to Knight, that Lady should agayne
Depart to woods untoucht, and leave so proud
disdayne!"

XLIV.

"Perdy," said Trompart, "lett her pass at will,
Least by her presence daunger mote befall.
For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill)
But that shee is some powre celestia! ?
For, whiles she spake, her great words did appall
My feeble corage, and my heart oppresse,
That yet I quake and tremble over all."
"And I," said Braggadocchio, "thought no lesse,
When first I heard her horn sound with such
ghastlinesse.

XLV.

"For from my mothers wombe this grace I have
Me given by eternall destiny,
That earthly thing may not my corage brave
Dismay with feare, or cause one foote to flye,
But either hellish feends, or powres on hye :
Which was the cause, when earst that horne I
heard,
Weening it had beere thunder in the skye,
I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard ;
But, when I other knew, my self I boldly reard.

XLVI.

"But now, for feare of worse that may betide,
Let us soone hence depart." They soone agree :
So to his steed he gott, and gan to ride
As one unfit therefore, that all might see
He had not trayned bene in chevalree.
Which well that valiaunt courser did discerne ;
For he despisd to tread in dew degree, [sterne,
But chaufd and fom'd with corage fiers and
And to be easd of that base burden still did erne

CANTO IV.

Guyon does Furor bind in chaines,
And stops Occasion :
Delivers Phaon, and therefore
By Strife is rayld upon.

I.

In brave poursuitt of honorable deed,
There is I know not what great difference
Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed,
Which unto things of valorous pretence
Seemes to be borne by native influence ;
As feates of armes ; and love to entertaine :
But chiefly skill to ride seemes a sciënce
Proper to gentle blood : Some others faine
To menage steeds, as dil this Vaunter ; but in
vaine.

II

But he, the rightfull owner of that steede,
Who well could menage and subdew his pride,
The whiles on foot was forced for to yeed
With that blacke Palmer, his most trusty guide,
Who suffred not his wandring feete to slide ;

XLIII. 9. Depart to woods untoucht, and leave so proud
disdayne !] Untoucht, intacta. And leave so proud dis-
ayne, i. e. And leave so proud a disdain behind her ; or,
and leave us so disdainfully. UPON

But when strong passion, or weake fleshlinesse,
Would from the right way seeke to draw him
wide, [nesse,
He would, through temperaunce and stedfast-
Teach him the weak to strengthen, and the strong
suppresse.

III.

It fortun'd, forth faring on his way,
He saw from far, or seemed for to see,
Some troublous uprore or contentious fray,
Whereto he drew in hast it to agree.
A Mad Man, or that feigned mad to bee,
Drew by the heare along upon the grownd
A haudson Stripling with great crueltée,
Whom sore he bett, and gor'd with many a
wound,
That cheekes with teares, and sydes with blood,
did all abownd.

IV.

And him behynd a wicked Hag did stalke,
In ragged robes and filthy disaray ;
Her other leg was lame, that she no'te walke,
But on a staffe her feeble steps did stay ;
Her lockes, that loathly were and hoarie gray,
Grew all afore, and loosly hong unrold ;
But all behinde was bald, and worne away,
That none thereof could ever taken hold ;
And eke her face ill-favour'd, full of wrinckles old.

V.

And, ever as she went, her toung did walke
In fowle reproch and termes of vile despight,
Provoking him, by her outrageous talke,
To heape more vengeance on that wretched wight :
Sometimes she raught him stones, wherewith to
smite ;
Sometimes her staffe, though it her one leg were,
Withouten which she could not goe upright ;
Ne any evil meanes she did forbear,
That might him move to wrath, and indignation
reare.

VI.

The noble Guyon, mov'd with great remorse,
Approching, first the Hag did thrust away ;
And after, adding more impetuous forse,
His mighty hands did on the Madman lay,
And pluckt him backe ; who, all on fire streight-
way,
Against him turning all his fell intent,
With bestly brutish rage gan him assay,
And smott, and bitt, and kickt, and scratcht,
and rent,
And did he wist not what in his avengement.

VII.

And sure he was a man of mickle might,
Had he had governaunce it well to guyde :
But, when the frantick fit inflamd his spright,
His force was vaine, and strooke more often wyde
Then at the aymed marke which he had eyde :
And oft himselfe he chaunst to hurt unwares,
Whylest reason, blent through passion, nought
descryde ;
But, as a blindfold bull, at randon fares,
And where he hits nought knowes, and whom he
hurts nought cares.

v. 3. — him,] *Furor.* CHURCH.

vii. 8. — at randon] The old spelling of *random*.
TODD.

VIII.

His rude assault and rugged handling
 Straunge seemed to the Knigat, that aye with foe
 In fayre defence and goodly menaging
 Of armes was wont to fight; yet nathemoe
 Was he abashed now, not fighting so;
 But, more enierced through his currish play,
 Him sternly grypt, and, hailing to and fro,
 To overthrow him strongly did assay,
 But overthrew himselfe unwares, and lower lay :

IX.

And being downe the Villein sore did beate
 And bruze with clownish fistes his manly face :
 And eke the Hag, with many a bitter threat,
 Still cald upon to kill him in the place.
 With whose reproch, and odious menaëce,
 The Knight emboyling in his haughtie hart
 Knitt all his forces, and gan soone unbrace
 His grasping hold : so lightly did upstart,
 And drew his deadly weapon to maintaine his part.

X.

Which when the Palmer saw, he loudly cryde,
 "Not so, O Guyon, never thinke that so
 That Monster can be maistred or destroyd :
 He is not, ah ! he is not such a foe,
 As steele can wound, or strength can overthrowe.
 That same is Furor, cursed cruel wight, [woe ;
 That unto knighthood workes much shame and
 And that same Hag, his aged mother, hight
 Occasion ; the roote of all wrath and despight.

XI.

"With her, whose will raging Furor tame,
 Must first begin, and well her amenage :
 First her restraine from her reprochfull blame
 And evill meanes, with which she doth enrage
 Her frantick sonne, and kindles his corsage ;
 Then, when she is withdrawne or strong with-
 It's eath his ydle fury to aswage, [stood,
 And calme the tempest of his passion wood :
 The hankes are overflowne when stopped is the
 flood."

XII.

Therewith Sir Guyon left his first emprise,
 And, turning to that Woman, fast her hent
 By the hoare lockes that hong before her eyes,
 And to the ground her threw : yet n'ould she
 Her bitter rayling and foule revilement ; [stent
 But still provokt her sonne to wreake her wrong :
 But nathëlesse he did her still torment,
 And, catching hold of her ungratious tong,
 Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and strong.

XIII.

Then, whenas use of speach was from her reft,
 With her too crooked handes she signes did make,

VIII. 9. — lower] That is, low. CHURCH.

IX. 1. *And being downe*] That is, Him (Guyon) being downe, &c. CHURCH.

IX. 4. *Still cald upon* &c.] That is, Still called upon him to kill &c. An ellipsis. T. WARTON.

XI. 2. — amenage:] *Manage*, carriage. *Amenage*, l'action d'amener. UPTON.

XI. 8. — wood:] *Mad*. TODD.

XII. 4. — stent] *Stint*, restrain. CHURCH.

XII. 7. — he] *Sir Guyon*. CHURCH.

And beckned him ; the last help she had left :
 But he that last left helpe away did take,
 And both her handes fast bound unto a stake,
 That she no'te stirre. Then gan her sonne to flye
 Full fast away, and did her quite forsake :
 But Guyon after him in hast did hye,
 And soone him overtooke in sad perplexitye.

XIV.

In his strong armes he stifly him embraste,
 Who him gain-striving nought at all prevaild ;
 For all his power was utterly defaste,
 And furious fitts at earst quite weren quaild :
 Off he re'nforst, and oft his forces fayld,
 Yet yield he would not, nor his rancor slacke.
 Then him to ground he cast, and rudely hayld,
 And both his hands fast bound behind his backe,
 And both his feet in fetters to an yron racke.

XV.

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind,
 And hundred knots, that did him sore constraine:
 Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind
 And grimly gnash, threatening revenge in vaine :
 His burning eyes, whom bloody strakes did staine,
 Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes of fyre ;
 And, more for rancd despight then for great paine,
 Shakt his long lockes colourd like copperwyre,
 And bitt his tawny beard to shew his raging yre.

XVI.

Thus whenas Guyon Furor had captivd,
 Turning about he saw that wretched Squyre,
 Whom that Mad Man of life nigh late deprivd,
 Lying on ground, all soild with blood and myre :
 Whom whenas he perceivd to respyre,
 He gan to comfort, and his woundes to dresse.
 Being at last recured, he gan inquire
 What hard mishap him brought to such distresse,
 And made that Caytives thrall, the thrall of
 wretchednesse.

XVII.

With hart then throbbing, and with watry eyes,
 "Fayre Sir," quoth he, "what man can shun the
 That hidden lyes unwares him to surpryse ? [hap,
 Misfortune waites advantage to entrap
 The man most wary in her whelming lap.
 So me weake wretch, of many weakest one,
 Unweeing and unware of such mishap,
 She brought to mischief through occasion,
 Where this same wicked Villein did me light upon.

XVIII.

"It was a faithlesse squire, that was the sourse
 Of all my sorrow and of these sad teares,
 With whom from tender dug of commune nurse
 Attence I was upbrought ; and eft, when yeares
 More rype us reason lent to chose our peares,
 Ourselves in league of vowed love we knitt ;
 In which we long time, without jealous feares
 Or faultie thoughts, contynewd as was fitt ;
 And, for my part I vow, dissembled not a whitte.

XIII. 3. him] *Her son*. CHURCH.

XIII. 4. — he] *Sir Guyon*. CHURCH.

XIV. 4. — at earst] *Instantly*. CHURCH.

XIV. 5. — re'nforst,] *Reinforced*, made fresh at-tempts. CHURCH.

XVIII. 4. — eft,] *Afterwards*. CHURCH.

xix.

"It was my fortune, commone to that age,
To love a Lady fayre of great degree,
The which was borne of noble parentage,
And set in highest seat of dignitee,
Yet seemd no lesse to love then lovd to bee :
Long I her serv'd, and found her faithfull still,
Ne ever thing could cause us disagree : [will :
Love, that two harts makes one, makes eke one
Each strove to please, and others pleasure to
fulfill.

xx.

"My friend, hight Philemon, I did partake
Of all my love and all my privitie ;
Who greatly ioyous seemed for my sake,
And gracious to that Lady, as to mee ;
Ne ever wight, that mote so welcome bee
As he to her, withouten blott or blame ;
Ne ever thing, that she could think or see,
But unto him she would impart the same :
O wretched man, that would abuse so gentle dame !

xxi.

"At last such grace I found, and meanes I wrought,
That I that Lady to my spouse had wonne ;
Accord of friendes, consent of parents sought,
Affyaunce made, my happinesse begonne,
There wanted nought but few rites to be donne,
Which marriage make : That day too farre did
seeme !
Most ioyous man, on whom the shining sunne
Did shew his face, myselfe I did esteeme,
And that my falsder friend did no less ioyous deeme.

xxii.

"But, ere that wished day his beame disclosd,
He, either envying my toward good,
Or of himselfe to treason ill disposd,
One day unto me came in friendly mood,
And told, for secret, how he understood
That Lady, whom I had to me assynd,
Had both distaind her honorable blood,
And eke the faith which she to me did bynd ;
And therefore wisht me stay, till I more truth
should fynd.

xxiii.

"The gnawing anguish, and sharp gelosy,
Which his sad speach infixd in my brest,
Ranckled so sore, and festred inwardly,
That my engreeved mind could find no rest,
Till that the truth thereof I did out wrest ;
And him besought, by that same sacred band
Betwix us both, to counsell me the best :
He then with solemne oath and plighted hand
Assurd, ere long the truth to let me understand.

xxiv.

"Ere long with like againe he boarded mee,
Saying, he now had boutled all the flour, e,
And that it was a groome of base degree,
Which of my Love was partner paramoure :

xx. 1. ——— *I did partake*] That is, *I made partaker*
xc. CHURCH.

xxii. 2. ——— *my toward good,*] That is, my approaching
happiness. CHURCH.

xxiv. 1. ——— *he boarded mee,*] He addressed me. TODD.

xxiv. 2. ——— *had boutled all the flour,*] Had sifted
the whole affair; *bottled* it all to the very bran. UPON.

Who used in a darkesome inner bowre
Her oft to meete : Which better to approve,
He promised to bring me at that howre,
When I should see that would me nearer move,
And drive me to withdraw my blind abused love.

xxv.

"This gracelesse man, for furtherance of his guile,
Did court the handmayd of my Lady deare,
Who, glad t' embosome his affection vile,
Did all she might more pleasing to appeare.
One day, to worke her to his will more neare,
He woo'd her thus ; Pryené, (so she hight,)
What great despight doth fortune to thee beare,
Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright,
That it should not deface all others lesser light ?

xxvi.

"But if she had her least helpe to thee lent,
T' adorne thy forme according thy desart,
Their blazing pride thou wouldest soome have
blent, [part ;
And staynd their prayses with thy least good
Ne should faire Claribell with all her art,
Tho' she thy Lady be, approach thee neare :
For prooffe thereof, this evening, as thou art,
Aray thyselfe in her most gorgeous geare,
That I may more delight in thy embracement
deare.

xxvii.

"The mayden, proud through praise and mad
through love,
Him hearkned to, and soone herselfe arayd ;
The whiles to me the treachour did remove
His craftie eugin ; and, as he had sayd,
Me leading, in a secret corner layd,
The sad spectatour of my tragedie : [playd,
Where left, he went, and his owne false part
Disguised like that groome of base degree,
Whom he had feignd th' abuser of my love to bee.

xxviii.

"Eftsoones he came unto th' appointed place,
And with him brought Pryené, rich arayd,
In Claribellæes clothes : Her proper face
I not discerned in that darkesome shade,
But weend it was my Love with whom he playd.
Ah God ! what horrour and tormenting grieft
My hart, my handes, mine eies, and all assayd !
Me liefer were ten thousand death's priefe
Then wounde of gealous worme, and shame of such
repriefe.

xxix.

"I home returning, fraught with fowle despight,
And chawing vengeance all the way I went,
Soone as my loathed Love appeared in sight,
With wrathfull hand I slew her innocent ;
That after soone I dearely did lament :
For, when the cause of that outrageous deede
Demaunded I made plaine and evident,
Her faultie handmayd, which that bale did breede,
Confest how Philemon her wrought to change
her weede.

xxvi. 7. ——— *as thou art,*] That is, lovely as thou
art. CHURCH.

xxvi. 9. *That I may more &c.*] *More* is here used, as
elsewhere, for *greatly*. CHURCH.

xxx.

"Which when I heard, with horrible affright
And hellish fury all enragd, I sought
Upon myselfe that vengeable despight
To punish : Yet it better first I thought
To wreake my wrath on him, that first it
To Philemon, false faytour Philemon, [wrought :
I cast to pay that I so dearely bought :
Of deadly drugs I gave him drinke anon,
And washt away his guilt with guilty potion.

xxxii.

"Thus heaping crime on crime, and griefe on griefe,
To losse of Love adioyning losse of Frend,
I meant to purge both with a third mischiefe,
And in my woes beginner it to end :
That was Pryené ; she did first offend,
She last should smart : With which cruell intent,
When I at her my murderous blade did bend,
She fled away with ghastly dreriment,
And I, poursewing my fell purpose, after went.

xxxiii.

"Feare gave her winges, and Rage enforst my flight ;
Through woods and plaines so long I did her
chace,
Till this Mad Man, whom your victorious might
Hath now fast bound, me met in middle space :
As I her, so he me poursewd apace,
And shortly overtooke : I, breathing yre,
Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace,
Aud with my heat kindled his cruell fyre ;
Which kindled once, his mother did more rage
inspyre.

xxxiiii.

"Betwixt them both they have me doen to dye,
Through wounds, and strokes, and stubborne
handeling,
That death were better then such agony,
As griefe and fury unto me did bring ;
Of which in me yet stickes the mortal sting,
That during life will never be appeas'd !"
When he thus ended had his sorrowing, [eas'd ;
Said Guyon ; "Squyre, sore have ye bene dis-
But all your hurts may soone through temperance
be eas'd."

xxxv.

Than gan the Palmer thus ; "Most wretched man,
That to Affections does the bridle lend !
In their beginning they are weake and wan, [end :
But soone through suff'rance growe to fearefull
Whiles they are weake, betimes with them con-
tend ;
For, when they once to perfect strength do grow,
Strong warres they make, and cruell battry bend
Gainst fort of Reason, it to overthrow :
Wrath, Geoloy, Griefe, Love, this Squyre have
laide thus low.

xxxvi.

"Wrath, Gealositie, Griefe, Love, do thus expell :
Wrath is a fire ; and Gealositie a weede ;
Griefe is a flood ; and Love a monster fell ;
The fire of sparkes, the weede of little seede,

xxxiv. 2. *That to Affections &c.] Affections, i. e. pas-
sions. So the Latin, affectus. UPRON.*

xxxv. 1. — *do thus expell :* That is, Do thou thus
expe l. Presently after, *Do thus delay, i. e. See that thou
dost t. us delay, put off, take away, &c. UPRON.*

The flood of drops, the monster filth did breede :
But sparkes, seed, drops, and filth, do thus delay ;
The sparkes soone quench, the springing seed out-
weed,

The drops dry up, and filth wipe cleane away :
So shall Wrath, Gealosity, Griefe, Love, die and
decay."

xxxvii.

"Unlucky Squire," saide Guyon, "sith thou hast
Falne into mischiefe through intemperance,
Henceforth take heede of that thou now hast past,
And gyde thy waies with warie governaunce,
Least worst betide thee by some later chauce.
But read how art thou nam'd, and of what kin."
"Phaon I hight," quoth he, "and do advance
Mine auncestry from famous Coradin,
Who first to rayse our house to honour did begin."

xxxviii.

Thus as he spake, lo ! far away they spyde
A Varlet ronning towardes hastily,
Whose flying feet so fast their way applyde,
That round about a cloud of dust did fly,
Which, mingled all with sweate, did dim his eye.
He soone approched, panting, breathelesse, whot,
And all so soyled, that none could him descry ;
His countenance was bold, and bashed not
For Guyons lookes, but scornfull ey-glance at
him shot.

xxxix.

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield,
On which was drawn faire, in colours fit,
A flaming fire in midst of bloody field,
And round about the wreath this word was writ,
Burnt I doe burne : Right well besemed it
To be the shield of some redoubted Knight :
And in his hand two dartes exceeding flit
And deadly sharp he held, whose heads were dight
In poyson and in blood of malice and despight.

xl.

When he in presence came, to Guyon first
He boldly spake ; "Sir Knight, at Knight thou
Abandon this forestalld place at first, [bee,
For feare of further harme, I counsell thee ;
Or bide the chauce at thine owne leopardee."
The Knight at his great boldnesse wondered ;
And, though he scorn'd his ydle vanitee,
Yet mildly him to purpose answered ;
For not to grow of nought he it coniectured ;

xli.

"Varlet, this place most dew to me I deeme,
Yielded by him that held it forcibly : [dost seeme
But whence shold come that harme, which thou
To threat to him that mindes his chauce t' aby'e ?"
"Perdy," sayd he, "here comes, and is hard by,
A Knight of wondrous powre and great assay,
That never yet encountred enemy,
But did him deadly daunt, or fowle dismay ;
Ne thou for better hope, if thou his presence stay."

xlii.

"How hight he," then sayd Guyon, "and from
whence ?"
"Pyrochles is his name, renowned farre

xxxviii. 4. — *this word] This motto. Todd.*
xli. 1. *Varlet.] Page or Squire. In the old romances
varlet is a common phrase for these attendants upon
Knights. Todd.*

For his bold feates and hardy confidence,
Full oft approvd in many a cruell warre ;
The brother of Cymochles ; both which arre
The sounes of old Acrates and Despight ;
Acrates, sonne of Phlegeton and Iarre ;
But Phlegeton is sonne of Herebus and Night ;
But Herebus sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

XLII.

“So from immortal race he does proceede,
That mortall hands may not withstand his might,
Drad for his derring doe and bloody deed ;
For all in blood and spoile is his delight.
His am I Atin, his in wrong and right,
That matter make for him to worke upon,
And stirre him up to strife and cruell fight.
Fly therefore, fly this fearefull stead anon,
Least thy foolhardize worke thy sad confusion.”

XLIII.

“His be that care, whom most it doth concerne,”
Sayd he : “but whether with such hasty flight
Art thou now bownd ? for well mote I discern
Great cause, that carries thee so swift and light.”
“My Lord,” quoth he, “me sent, and streight
To seeke Occasion, where so she bee : [behight
For he is all disposd to bloody fight,
And breathes out wrath and hainous crueltee ;
Hard is his hap, that first fals in his iepardee.”

XLIV.

“Mad man,” said then the Palmer, “that does seeke
Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife ;
Shee comes unsought, and shomned followes eke.
Happy ! who can abstaine, when Rancor rife
Kindles Revenge, and threats his rusty knife :
Woe never wants, where every cause is caught ;
And rash Occasion makes unquiet life !”
“Then loe ! wher bound she sis, whom thou hast
sought,” [brought.”
Said Guyon ; “let that message to thy Lord be

XLV.

That when the Varlett heard and saw, streightway
He wexed wondrous wroth, and said ; “Vile
Knight, [upbray,
That knights and knighthood doest with shame
And shewst th’ ensample of thy childishe might,
With silly weake old woman thus to fight !
Great glory and gay spoile sure hast thou gott,
And stoutly prov’d thy puissaunce here in fight !
That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wott,
And with thy blood abolish so reprochfull blott.”

XLVI.

With that, one of his thrillant darts he threw,
Headed with yre and vengeable despight :
The quivering steele his aymed end wel knew,
And to his brest itselfe intended right :
But he was wary, and, ere it empight
In the meant marke, advaunst his shield atween,
On which it seizing no way enter might,
But backe rebownding left the forehead keene :
Eftsoones he fled away, and might no where be seene.

XLII. 3. — his derring doe] His daring deeds. TODD.

XLII. 8. — stead] That is, sted, place. CHURCH.

XLIII. 5. — streight behight] Strictly commanded. CHURCH.

XLVI. 1. — his thrillant darts] His piercing darts. TODD.

CANTO V.

Pyrochles does with Guyon fight,
And Furors chayne untyes,
Who him sore wounds ; whiles Atin to
Cymochles for ayd flies.

I.

WHOEVER doth to Temperaunce apply
His stedfast life, and all his actions frame,
Trust me, shal find no greater enmy,
Then stubborn Perturbation, to the same ;
To which right wel the wise doe give that name ;
For it the goodly peace of staid mindes
Does overthrow, and troublous warre proclame :
His owne woes author, who so bound it findes,
As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully unbides.

II.

After that Varlets flight, it was not long
Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon side
One in bright armes embatteiled full strong,
That, as the sunny beames do glauce and glide
Upon the trembling wave, so shined bright,
And round about him threw forth sparkling fire,
That seemd him to enflame on every side :
His steed was bloody red, and dmed yre, [stire.
When with the maistring spur he did him roughly

III.

Approching nigh, he never staid to greete,
Ne chaffar words, prowd corage to provoke,
But prickt so fiers, that underneath his feete
The smouldring dust did rownd about him smoke,
Both horse and man nigh able for to choke ;
And, fayrly couching his steeleheaded speare,
Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke :
It booted nought Sir Guyon, comming neare,
To thincke such hideous puissaunce on foot to
beare ;

IV.

But lightly shunned it ; and, passing by,
With his bright blade did smite at him so fell,
That the sharpe steele, arriving forcibly
On his broad shield, bitt not, but glaucing fell
On his horse necke before the quilted sell,
And from the head the body sundred quight :
So him dismounted low he did compell
On foot with him to matchen equal fight ;
The trunked beast fast bleeding did him fowly
dight.

V.

Sore bruized with the fall he slow uprose,
And all enraged thus him loudly shent ;
“Disleall Knight, whose coward corage chose
To wreake itselfe on beast all innocent,
And shund the marke at which it should be ment ;
Therby thine armes seem strong, but manhood
frayl :

II. 9. — stire.] Stir, incite. Lat. *incitare*. CHURCH.
IV. 9. The trunked beast] The beast whose body was
without the head. Lat. *truncatus*, maimed or mangled.
TODD.

V. 2. — shent ;] Reproached, blamed. URRON.

V. 3. Disleall Knight.] The word *disleall*, from the
Italian *disleale*, frequently occurs in the old romances, and
carries with it the highest affront, signifying *perfidious*,
treacherous, &c. TODD.

Ibid. — corage] Corage is heart, or mind. *Coragium*,
in the hase Latinity, was used for *cor*. URRON.

So hast thou oft with guile thine honor blent ;
But litle may such guile thee now awayl,
If wonted force and fortune doe me not much
fayl."

vi.

With that he drew his flaming sword, and strooke
At him so fiercely, that the upper marge
Of his sevenfolded shield away it tooke,
And, glaucing on his helmet, made a large
And open gash therein : were not his targe
That broke the violence of his intent,
The weary sowle from thence it would discharge ;
Nathelasse so sore a buff to him it lent,
That made him reele, and to his brest his bever
bent.

vii.

Exceeding wroth was Guyon at that blow,
And much ashamd that stroke of living arme
Should him dismay, and make him stoup so low,
Though otherwise it did him litle harme :
Tho, hurling high his yron-braced arme,
He smote so manly on his shoulder plate,
That all his left side it did quite disarme ;
Yet there the steel stayd not, but inly bate
Deepe in his flesh, and opened wide a red flood-
gate.

viii.

Deadly dismayd with horror of that dint
Pyrochles was, and grieved eke entyre ;
Yet nathemore did it his fury stint,
But added flame unto his former fire,
That wel-nigh molt his hart in raging yre :
Ne thenceforth his approved skill, to ward,
Or strike, or hurtle round in warlike gyre,
Rememberd he, ne car'd for his saulgard,
But rudely rag'd, and like a cruell tygre far'd.

ix.

He hewd, and lasht, and foynd, and thondred
And every way did seeke into his life ; [blowes,
Ne plate, ne male, could ward so mighty throwes,
But yielded passage to his cruell knife,
But Guyon, in the heat of all his strife,
Was wary wise, and closely did awayt
Avauntage, whilset his foe did rage most rife ;
Sometimes athwart, sometimes he strook him
strayt,
And falsed off his blowes t' illude him with such
bayt.

x.

Like as a lyon, whose imperiall powre
A prowde rebellious unicorn defyes,
T' avoide the rash assault and wrathfull stowre
Of his fiers foe, him to a tree applyes,
And when him ronning in full course he spies,
He slips aside ; the whiles that furious beast

v. 7. — blent ;] *Confounded*, spoiled with mixing.

Anglo-Sax. *bleuban*, *miscere*, *confundere*. UPRON.

vii. 8. — but inly bate] That is, *did bite*. UPRON.

viii. 7. Or strike, or hurtle round in warlike gyre,]
"To hurtle round in warlike gyre," is to skirmish wheel-
ing round the foe, trying to strike him with advantage.
UPRON.

ix. 1. — foynd,] *Pushed as in fencing*. Fr. *foin*, a
thrust, *poindre*, *ferire*. UPRON.

ix. 9. And falsed off his blowes] That is, he made feints ;
he *falsified* his thrust in fencing by making feigned passes.
From the Ital. *falsare*. UPRON.

His precious horne, sought of his enimyes,
Strikes in the stoeke, ne thence can be releast,
But to the mighty victor yields a bounteous feast.

xi.

With such faire sleight him Guyon often fayld,
Till at the last all breathlesse, weary, faint,
Him spying, with fresh onsett he assayld,
And, kindling new his corage seeming quaint,
Stroke him so hugely, that through great con-
straint

He made him stoup perforce unto his knee,
And doe unwilling worship to the Saint,
That on his shield depainted he did see ;
Such homage till that instant never learned hee.

xii.

Whom Guyon seeing stoup, poursewed fast
The present offer of faire victory,
And soome his dreadfull blade about he cast,
Wherewith he smote his haughty crest so hye,
That streight on grownd made him full low tolye ;
Then on his brest his victor foote he thrust :
With that he cryde ; "Mercy, doe me not dye,
Ne deeme thy force by fortunes doome uniuist,
That hath (maugre her spight) thus low me laid
in dust."

xiii.

Eftsoones his cruel hand Sir Guyon stayd,
Tempering the passion with aduizement slow,
And maistring might on enmy dismayd ;
For th' equall die of warre he well did know :
Then to him said ; "Live, and alleagaunce owe
To him, that gives thee life and liberty ;
And henceforth by this daies ensample trow,
That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardry,
Doe breede repentance late, and lasting infamy."

xiv.

So up he let him rise ; who, with grim looke
And count'nanne sterne upstanding, gan to grind
His grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke
His sandy lockes, long hanging downe behind,
Knotted in blood and dust, for grief of mind
That he in ods of armes was couquered ;
Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find,
That him so noble Knight had mastered ;
Whose bounty more then might, yet both, he
wondered.

xv.

Which Guyon marking said ; "Be nought agriev'd,
Sir Knight, that thus ye now subdewed arre ;
Was never man, who most conquestes atchiev'd,
But sometimes had the worse, and lost by warre ;
Yet shortly gaynd, that losse exceeded farre :
Losse is no shame, nor to bee lesse then foe ;
But to bee lesser then himselfe doth marre
Both losers lott, and victours prayse alsöe :
Vaine others overthrowes who selfe doth overthrow.

xi. 1. — fayld,] *Deceived*. Lat. *fallere*. CHURCH.

xi. 4. — quaint,] For *quench*, extinguished. CHURCH.

xii. 7. — be] *Pyrochles*. CHURCH.

xiii. 7. — trow,] *Believe*. CHURCH.

xiv. 9. — bounty] *Generosity*. CHURCH.

xv. 3. — most] *Greatest*. TODD.

xv. 5. *Yet shortly gaynd, that losse exceeded farre.*] The
which gain far exceeded the loss. UPRON.

xv. 7. *But to bee lesser (then himselfe)*] This is a Grecism,
ἡ τὸν αὐτοῦ, minor, i. e. inferior *seipso*. UPRON.

xvi

"Fly, O Pyrochles, fly the dreadful warre
That in thyselfe thy lesser partes do move ;
Outrageous Anger, and woe-working Larre,
Direfull Impatience and hart-murdring Love :
Those, those thy foes, those warriors, farremore,
Which thee to endlesse hale captived lead.
But, sith in might thou didst my merey prove,
Of courtesie to mee the cause aread
That thee againstme drew with so impetuous dread."

xvii

"Dreadlesse," said he, "that shall I soone declare :
It was complaind that thou hadst done great trott
Unto an aged Woman, poore and bare,
And thralld her in chaines with strong effort,
Voide of all succour and needfull comfort :
That ill beseemes thee, such as I thee see,
To worke such shame : Therefore I thee exhort
To change thy will, and set Occasion free,
And to her captive Sonne yield his first libertee."

xviii

Thereat Sir Guyon smylde ; "And is that all,"
Said he, "that thee so sore displeas'd hath ?
Great mercy sure, for to enlarge a thrall,
Whose freedom shall thee turne to greatest scath !
Nath'lesse now quench thy whott embolyng
wrath :
Loe ! there they hee ; to thee I yield them free."
Thereat he, wondrous glad, out of the path
Did lightly leape, where he them bound did see,
And gan to breake the bands of their captivitee.

xix

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe untyde,
Before her Sonne could well assoyled bee,
She to her use returnd, and streight defyde
Both Guyon and Pyrochles ; th' one (said shee)
Bycause he womne ; the other, because hee
Was womne : So matter did she make of nought,
To stirre up strife, and garre them disagree :
But, soone as Furor was enlargd, she sought
To kindle his quencht fyre, and thousand causes
wrought.

xx

It was not long ere she inflam'd him so,
That he would algates with Pyrochles fight,
And his redeemer chalengd for his foe,
Because he had not well mainteind his right,
But yielded had to that same stranger Knight.
Now gan Pyrochles wex as wood as hee,
And him affronted with impatient might :
So both together fiers engrasped bee, [see.
Whyles Guyon standing by their unecouth strife does

xxi

Him all that while Occasion did provoke
Against Pyrochles, and new matter fram'd
Upon the old, him stirring to bee wroke

xviii. 3. *Great mercy &c.*] Fr. *Grandmerci*. A great favour ; it deserves great thanks ! Ironically spoken. CHURCH.

xviii. 4. ——— scath] *Damage*. TODD.

xviii. 5. ——— whott] *Whot* was no uncommon spelling of *hot*. TODD.

xix. 2. ——— assoyled] *Released, or freed*. TODD.

xix. 7. ——— garre] *Cause*. TODD.

xx. 7. ——— affronted] *Opposed*. TODD.

Of his late wronges, in which she oft him blam'd
For suffering such abuse as knighthood sham'd,
And him dishab'd quyte : But he was wise,
Ne would with vaine occasions be inflam'd ;
Yet others she more urgent did devise :
Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

xxii

Their fell contention still increased more,
And more thereby increased Furors might,
That he his foe has hurt and wounded sore,
And him in blood and durt deformed quight.
His Mother eke, more to augment his spight,
Now brought to him a flaming fyre-broud,
Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning bright,
Had kindled : that she gave into his hound,
That armd with fire more hardly he mote him with-
stand.

xxiii

The gan that Villein wex so fiers and strong,
That nothing might sustaine his furious force :
He cast him downe to ground, and all along
Drew him through durt and myre without re-
And fowly battered his comely corse, [morse,
That Guyon much disdeign'd so loathly sight.
At last he was compeld to cry perforce,
"Help, O Sir Guyon ! helpe, most noble Knight,
To ridd a wretched man from handes of hellish
wight !"

xxiv

The Knight was greatly moved at his playnt,
And gan him dight to succour his distresse,
Till that the Palmer, by his grave restraynt,
Him stayd from yielding pitifull redresse,
And said ; "Deare sonne, thy causeless ruth re-
Ne let thy stout hart melt in pitty vayne : [presse,
He that his sorrow sought through wilfulnessse,
And his foe fettred would release agayne,
Deserves to taste his follies fruit, repented payne."

xxv

Guyon obayd : So him away he drew
From needlesse trouble of renewing fight
Already fought, his voyage to poursew.
But rash Pyrochles varlet, Atin light,
When late he saw his Lord in heavie plight,
Under Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to fall,
Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in sight,
Fledd fast away to tell his funerall
Unto his brother, whom Cymochles men did call.

xxvi

He was a man of rare redoubt'd might,
Famous throughout the world for warlike prayse,
And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilous fight :
Full many doughtie knightes he in his dayes
Had doen to death, subdewde in equall frayes ;
Whose carcases, for terrour of his name,
Of fowles and beastes he made the piteous prayes,
And hong their conquerd armes for more defame
On gallow trees, in honour of his dearest Dame.

xxvii

His dearest Dame is that Enchaunteresse,
The vyle Aerasia, that with vaine delighes,

xxi. 6. ——— disabled] *Lessened*. Lat. *extenuare* CHURCH.

xxiv. 2. *And gan him dight*] And was making himself ready. CHURCH.

And ydle pleasures in her Bowre of Blisse,
Does charme her lovers, and the feeble sprightes
Can call out of the bodies of fraile wightes ;
Whom then she does trasforme to monstrous
hewes,

And horribly misshapes with ugly sightes,
Captiv'd eternally in yron mewes
And darksom dens, where Titan his face never
shewes.

xxviii.

There Atin fownd Cymochles sojourning,
To serve his Lemans love : for he by kynd
Was given all to Inst and loose living,
Whenever his fiers handes he free mote fynd :
And now he has pourd out his ydle mynd
In dautie delices and lavish ioyes,
Having his warlike weapons cast behynd,
And flowes in pleasures and vaine pleasing toyes,
Mingled amongst loose ladies and lascivious boyes.

xxix.

And over him art, stryving to compayre
With nature, did an arber greene dispred,
Framed of wanton yvie, flouing fayre,
Through which the fragrant eglantine did spred
His prickling armes, entrayld with roses red,
Which dautie odours round about them threw :
And all within with flowres was garnished,
That, when myld Zephyrus amongst them blew,
Did breath out bounteous smels, and painted colors
shew.

xxx.

And fast beside there trickled softly downe
A gentle streame, whose numring wave did play
Emongst the pumy stones, and made a sowne,
To lul him soft asleepe that by it lay :
The wearie traveler, wandring that way,
Therein did often quench his thirsty heat,
And then by it his wearie limbes display,
(Whiles creeping slomber made him to forget
His former payne,) and wypt away his toilsom
sweat.

xxxi.

And ou the other syde a pleasaunt grove
Was shott up high, full of the stately tree
That dedicated is t' Olympick Love,
And to his some Alcides, whenas hee
In Nemus gayned goodly victoree :
Therein the mery birdes of every sorte
Chaunted aloud their chearefull harmonie,
And made emongst themselves a sweete consórt,
That quickned the dull spright with musicall com-
fórt.

xxxii.

There he him found all carelesly displaid,
In secrete shadow from the sunny ray,
On a sweet bed of lillies softly laid,
Amidst a flock of damzelles fresh and gay,
That round about him dissolute did play
Their wanton follies and light meriment ;

xxvii. 8. — in yron mewes] Prisons. TODD.

xxviii. 2. — his Lemans love:] The word *len* an,
which often occurs in our old romances and poetry, sig-
nifies a *sweetheart*, a *concubine*. TODD.

Ind. — by kynd] From his natural disposition.
CHURCH.

xxviii. 6. — delices] Delights. TODD.

Every of which did loosely disaray
Her upper partes of meet habiliments,
And shewd them naked, deckt with many orna-
ments.

xxxiii.

And every of them strove with most delights
Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew :
Some framd faire lookes, glancing like evening
lights ;
Others sweet wordes, dropping like honny dew .
Some bathed kisses, and did soft embrew
The sugred licour through his melting lips :
One boastes her beantie, and does yield to vew
Her dauty limbes above her tender hips ;
Another her out boastes, and all for tryall strips.

xxxiv.

He, like an adder lurking in the weedes,
His wandring thought in deepe desire does steepe,
And his frayle eye with spoyle of beauty feedes :
Sometimes he falsly faines himselfe to sleepe,
Whiles through their hidshis wanton eies do peepe
To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,
Whereby close fire into his hart does creepe :
So' he them deceives, deceivd in his conceipt,
Made dronke with drugs of deare voluptuous re-
ceipt.

xxxv.

Atin, arriving there, when him he spyde
Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade,
Fiercely approaching to him lowdly cryde,
“Cymochles ; oh ! no, hut Cymochles shade,
In which that manly person late did fade !
What is become of great Acrates soune ?
Or where hath he hong up his mortal blade,
That hath so many hanghty conquests wonne ?
Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne ?”

xxxvi.

Then, pricking him with his sharp-pointed dart,
He said ; “Up, up, thou womanish weake Knight,
That here in Ladies lap entombd art,
Umindfull of thy praise and prowest might,
And weetesle eke of lately-wrought despight ;
Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on sencelesse ground,
And groneth out his utmost grudging spight
Through many a stroke and many a streaming
wound,
Calling thy help in vaine, that here in ioyes art
dround.”

xxxvii.

Snddeinly out of his delightfull dreame [more ;
The Man awoke, and would have questiond
But he would not endure that wofull theame
For to dilate at large, but urged sore,
With percing wordes and pittifull implore,
Him hasty to arise : As one affright
With hellish feends, or Furies mad uprore,
He then uprose, inflamd with fell despight,
And called for his armes ; for he would algates
fight :

xxxiii. 1. — most delights] That is, greatest. TODD.
xxxviii. 3. But he] Atin. CHURCH.

xxxvii. 5. — and pittifull implore.] *Implore* is here
used as a substantive. TODD.

xxxvii. 9. — would algates fight:] Would by all
means fight.

XXXVIII

They bene ybrought ; he quickly does him dight,
 And lightly mounted passeth on his way ;
 Ne Ladies loves, ne sweet entreaties, might
 Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay ;
 For he as vowd to beene avengd that day
 (That day itselfe him seemed all too long)
 On him, that did Pyrochles deare dismay :
 So proudly pricketh on his courser strong,
 And Atin ay him pricks with spurs of shame and
 wrong.

CANTO VI.

Guyon is of Immodest Merth
 Led into loose desyre ;
 Fights with Cymochles, whiles his bro-
 ther burnes in furious fyre.

A HARDER lesson to learne confuence
 In ioyous pleasure then in grievous paine :
 For sweetnesse doth allure the weaker sence
 So strongly, that unceathes it can refraine
 From that which feeble nature covets faine :
 But grieffe and wrath, that be her enemies
 And foes of life, she better can restraine :
 Yet Vertue vauntes in both her victories ;
 And Guyon in them all shewes goodly maysteries.

Whom bold Cymochles traveling to finde,
 With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him
 The wrath which Atin kindled in his mind,
 Came to a river, by whose utmost brim
 Wayting to passe he saw whereas did swim
 Along the shore, as swift as glauce of eye,
 A litle gondelay, bedecked trim
 With boughes and arbours woven cunningly,
 That like a litle Forrest seemed outwardly.

And therein sate a Lady fresh and fayre,
 Making sweet solace to herselfe alone :
 Sometimes she song as lowd as larke in ayre,
 Sometimes she laught, that nigh her breath was
 Yet was there not with her else any one, [gone ;
 That to her might move cause of merriment :
 Matter of merth enough, though there werenone,
 She could devise ; and thousand waies invent
 To feed her foolish humour and vaine iolliment.

Which when far off Cymochles heard and saw,
 He lowdly cald to such as were aboard
 The litle barke unto the shore to draw,
 And him to ferry over that deepe ford.
 The merry Mariner unto his word
 Soone hearkned, and her painted botestreightway
 Turnd to the shore, where that same warlike
 She in receiv'd ; but Atin by no way [Lord
 She would admit, albe the Knight her much did
 pray.

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did slide,
 More swift then swallow sheres the liquid skye,
 Withouten oare or pilot it to guide,
 Or winged canvas with the wind to fly :
 Onely she turnd a pin, and by and by

It cut away upon the yielding wave,
 (Ne cared she her course for to apply,)
 For it was taught the way which she would have,
 And both from rocks and flats itselfe could wisely
 save.

And all the way the wanton Damsell found
 New merth her Passenger to entertaine ;
 For she in pleasaunt purpose did abound,
 And greatly ioyed merry tales to fayne,
 Of which a store-house did with her remaine ;
 Yet seemed, nothing well they her became :
 For all her wordes she drownd with laughter vaine,
 And wanted grace in ut'tring of the same,
 That turned all her pleasaunce to a scoffing game.

And other whiles vaine toyes she would devise,
 As her fantasticke wit did most delight :
 Sometimes her head she fondly would aguize
 With gaudy girlonds, or fresh flowrets dight
 About her necke, or rings of rushes plight :
 Sometimes, to do him laugh, she would assay
 To laugh at shaking of the leav's light,
 Or to behold the water worke and play
 About her litle frigot, therein making way.

Her light behavioir and loose dalliaunce
 Gave wondrous great contentment to the Knight,
 That of his way he had no sovenaunce,
 Nor care of vow'd revenge and cruell fight ;
 But to weake wench did yield his martiall might.
 So easie was to quench his flamed minde
 With one sweete drop of sensuall delight !
 So easie is t'appease the stormy winde
 Of malice in the calme of pleasaunt womankind !

Diverse discourses in their way they spent ;
 Mongst which Cymochles of her questioned
 Both what she was, and what that usage ment,
 Which in her cott she daily practiced :
 " Vaine man," saide she, " that wouldest he reck-
 A straunger in thy home, and ignorraunt [oned
 Of Phædria, (for so my name is red,)
 Of Phædria, thine owne fellow servaunt ;
 For thou to serve Acrasia thy selfe doest vaunt.

" In this wide inland sea, that hight by name
 The Idle Lake, my wandring ship I row,
 That knowes her port, and thether sayles by ayme,
 Ne care ne feare I how the wind do blow,
 Or whether swift I wend or whether slow :
 Both slow and swift alike do serve my tourne ;
 Ne swelling Neptune ne lowd-thundering Iove
 Can change my cheare, or make me ever mourne ;
 My litle boat can safely passe this perilous bourne."

v. 7. *Ne cared she her course for to apply,*] Nor was she
 concerned to mind which way she steered CHURCH.
 vi 3. ——— purpose] *Conversation.* CHURCH.
 vii 3. ——— would aguize] *Deck or adorn.* UPTON.
 vii 5. ——— of rushes plight :] *Folded.* T. WARTON.
 viii 3. ——— sovenaunce,] *Remembrance.* FR. CHURCH.
 ix. 4. ——— cott] *Cott is a little boat.* CHURCH.
 x. 9. ——— this perilous bourne.] *Bourn is simply*
 nothing more than a boundary. T. WARTON.

xI.
Whiles thus she talked, and whiles thus she toyd,
They were far past the passage which he spake,
And come unto an Island waste and voyd,
That floted in the midst of that great Lake ;
There her small gondelay her port did make,
And that gay payre issewing on the shore
Disburnd her : Their way they forward take
Into the land that lay them faire before,
Whose pleasaunce she him shewd, and plentifull
great store.

xII.
It was a chosen plott of fertile land,
Amongst wide waves sett, like a litle nest,
As if it had by natures cunning hand
Bene choycely picked out from all the rest,
And laid forth for ensample of the best :
No daintie flowre or herbe that growes on ground,
No arborett with painted blossomes drest
And smelling sweete, but there it might be fownd
To bud out faire, and her sweete smels throwe al
arownd.

xIII.
No tree, whose branches did not bravely spring ;
No branch, whereon a fine bird did not sitt ;
No bird, but did her shrill notes sweetely sing ;
No song, but did containe a lovely ditt.
Trees, branches, birds, and songs, were framed
For to allure fraile mind to carelesse ease. [fitt
Carelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake
witt
Was overcome of thing that did him please :
So pleased did his wrathfull purpose faire appease.

xIV.
Thus when shee had his eyes and senses fed
With false delights, and filld with pleasures vayn,
Into a shady dale she soft him led,
And layd him downe upon a grassy playn ;
And her sweete selfe without dread or disdayn
She sett beside, laying his head disarmd
In her loose lap, it softly to sustayn,
Where soone he slumbred fearing not be harmd:
The whiles with a love lay she thus him sweetly
charm'd ;

xV.
“ Behold, O man, that toilesome paines doest take,
The flours, the fields, and all that pleasaunt
growes,
How they themselves doe thine ensample make,
Whiles nothing envious nature them forth throwes
Out of her fruitfull lap ; how, no man knowes,
They spring, they bud, they blossome fresh and
faire,
And decke the world with their rich pompous
shoves ;
Yet no man for them taketh paines or care,
Yet no man to them can his carefull paines compare.

xVI.
“ The lilly, lady of the flowering field,
The flowre-deluce, her lovely paramoure,
Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labors yield,
And soone leave off this toylsome weary stoure :

Loe ! loe, how brave she decks her bounteous
With silkin curtens and gold coverletts, [boure,
Therein to shrowd her sumptuous belamoure !
Yet nether spinnes nor cards, ne cares nor fretts,
But to her mother nature all her care she lettis.

xVII.
“ Why then doest thou, O man, that of them all
Art Lord, and eke of nature Sovereaine,
Wilfully make thyselfe a wretched thrall,
And waste thy ioyous howres in ueedlesse paine,
Seeking for daunger and adventures vaine ?
What bootes it al to have and nothing use ?
Who shall him rew that swimming in the maine
Will die for thrist, and water doth refuse ?
Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present pleasures
chuse.”

xVIII.
By this she had him lulled fast asleepe,
That of no worldly thing he care did take :
Then she with liquors strong his eies did steepe,
That nothing should him hastily awake.
So she him left, and did herselfe betake
Unto her boat again, with which she clefte
The slouthfull wave of that great griesy Lake :
Soone shee that Island far behind her left,
And now is come to that same place where first she
wefte.

xIX.
By this time was the worthy Guyon brought
Unto the other side of that wide strond
Where she was rowing, and for passage sought :
Him needed not long call ; shee soone to hond
Her ferry brought, where him she byding fond
With his sad Guide : himselfe she tooke aboard,
But the Blacke Palmer suffred still to stound,
Ne would for price or prayers once affoord
To ferry that old man over the perloous foord.

xx.
Guyon was loath to leave his Guide behind,
Yet being entred might not backe retyre ;
For the flitt barke, obeying to her mind,
Forth launched quickly as shee did desire,
Ne gave him leave to bid that aged sire
Adieu, but nimbly ran her wonted course
Through the dull billowes thicke as troubled mire,
Whom nether wind out of their seat could forse,
Nor timely tides did drive out of their sluggish sourse.

xxI.
And by the way, as was her wonted guise,
Her mery fit she freshly gan to reare,
And did of ioy and illolity devise,
Herselfe to cherish, and her guest to cheare.
The Knight was courteous, and did not forebare
Her honest merth and pleasaunce to partake ;
But when he saw her toy, and gibe, and geare,
And passe the bonds of modest merimake,
Her dalliaunce he despis'd and follies did forsake.

xxII.
Yet she still followed her former style,
And said, and did, all that mote him delight,

xvi. 7. — her sumptuous belamours.] Her sumptuous lover. TODD.

xix. 6. — sad] Grave. CHURCH.

xxi. 7. — and gibe, and geare,] To gibe is to jest, and geare is the old orthography of jeer. TODD

xiii. 4. — a lovely ditt.] Song or ditty. TODD.

xv. 4. Whiles nothing envious nature &c.] Nothing envious nature is a Latinism : as nature is nihil indiya, so she is nihil invida. UFFON.

Till they arrived in that pleasaunt Ile,
Where sleeping late she lefte her other Knight.
But, whenas Guyon of that laud had sight,
He wist himselfe amisse, and angry said ;
" Ah ! Dame, perdy ye have not doen me right,
Thus to mislead mee, whiles I you obaid ;
Me htle needed from my right way to have straid."

xxviii.

" Faire Sir," quoth she, " be not displeas'd at all ;
Who fares on sea may not commaund his way,
Ne wind and weather at his pleasure call :
The sea is wide, and easy for to stray ;
The wind unstable, and doth never stay.
But here a while ye may in safety rest,
Till season serve new passage to assay :
Better safe port then be in seas distrest."
Therewith she laught, and did her earnest end
in iest.

xxiv.

But he, halfe discontent, mote nath'lesse
Himselfe appease, and issewd forth on shore :
The ioyes whereof and happy fruitfulnessse,
Such as he saw, she gan him lay before, [more.
And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made much
The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly spring,
The trees did bud, and early blossomes bore ;
And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing,
And told that Gardins pleasures in their caroling.

xxv.

And she, more sweete then any bird on bough,
Would oftentimes amongst them beare a part,
And strive to passe (as she could well enough)
Their native musick by her skilful art :
So did she all, that might his constant hart
Withdraw from thought of warlike enterprize,
And drowne in dissolute delights apart,
Where noise of armes, or vew of martiall guize,
Might not revive desire of knightly exercize :

xxvi.

But he was wise, and wary of her will,
And ever held his hand upon his hart ;
Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill,
As to despise so courteous seeming hart
That gentle Lady did to him impart :
But, fairly tempring, fond desire subdewd,
And ever her desired to depart.
She list not heare, but her disports poursewd,
And ever bad him stay till time the tide renewd.

xxvii.

And now by this Cymochles howre was spent,
That he awoke out of his ydle dreame ;
And, shaking off his drowsy dreriment,
Gan him avize, howe ill did him beseme
In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme,
And quench the brond of his conceived yre.
Tho up he started, stird with shame extreme,

xxviii. 7. — perdy] Hughes, in his Glossary, interprets *perdie* as an old oath, *par dieu*, Fr. Mr. Church believes the word to be used as an asseveration signifying *verily*, rather than as an oath, in Spenser. Todd.

xxix. 4. *The sea is wide, and easy for to stray* ;] And easy to cause us to go astray. Upton.

xxvi. 3. — thewed ill,] *Ill-bred*, ill-mannered. Church.

xxvii. 5. — to steme,] That is, to *exhale*, to *evaporate*, his melted heart in sleep. Upton.

Ne staid for his Damsell to inquire,
But marched to the stroud, there passage to require.

xxviii.

And in the way he with Sir Guyon mett,
Accompanyde with Phædria the faire ;
Eftsoones he gan to rage, and inly frett,
Crying ; " Let be that Lady debonaire, [paire
Thou recreant Knight, and some thyselfe pre-
To batteile, if thou meane her love to gayn.
Loe ! loe already how the fowles in aire
Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn
Thy carcas for their pray, the guerdon of thy
payu."

xxix.

And there-withall he fierly at him flew,
And with impörtune outrage him assayld ;
Who, soone prepar'd to field, his sword forth drew,
Aud him with equall vauel countervayld ;
Their mightie strokes their haberieons dismayld,
And naked made each others manly spalles ;
The mortall steele despiteously entayld
Deepe in their flesh, quite through the yron walles,
That a large purple streame adown their giambeux
falles.

xxx.

Cymochles, that had never mett before
So puissant foe, with envious despight
His provd presumed force increased more,
Disdeigning to bee held so long in fight.
Sir Guyon, grudging not so much his might
As those unknighly raylings which he spoke,
With wrathfull fire his corage kindled bright,
Thereof devising shortly to be wroke,
And donbling all his powres redoubled every stroke.

xxxi.

Both of them high attonce their hands enhaunst,
And both attonce their huge blowes down did
sway :
Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglauust,
And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away :
But Guyons angry blade so fiers did play
On th' others helmet, which as Titan shone,
That quite it clove his plumed crest in tway,
And bared all his head unto the bone ;
Where-with astonisht still he stood as senelesse
stone.

xxxii.

Still as he stood, fayre Phædria, that beheld
That deadly daunger, soone atweene them ran ;

xxviii. 4. — Let be] *Let go*. Church.
Ibid. 4. — *that Lady debonaire*,] *Debonaire*, applied to the Ladies, means *elegant*, *winning*, *accomplished* ; to Knights, *courteous* and *just*. Todd.

xxviii. 9. — *the guerdon of thy payn*.] The reward of thy attempt to gain the Lady. Church.

xxix. 2. — *with impörtune outrage*] *Impörtune* is *cruel*, *savage*, &c. as *impörtunus* in Latin ; and thus Spenser has "*impörtune fate*." Todd.

xxix. 3. *Who some prepar'd to field*.] That is, to battle Germ. *feld*, hellum. Upton.

xxix. 5. — *haberieons*] *Sleeves*, and *Gorget of mail* ; armour covering the neck and breast. Todd.

xxix. 6. — *spalles* ;] *Shoulders*, Fr. *espauls*. Upton

xxix. 7. — *entayld*] *Entayled* is usually employed for *carved* or *engraved*. Todd.

xxix. 9. — *adown their giambeux falles*.] *Giambeux*, that is, *boots*. T. Warton.

xxx. 3. — *presumed force*] Strength that he had too high an opinion of. Church.

And at their feet herselfe most humbly feld,
Crying with pitteous voyce, and count'nance wan,
"Ah, well away! most noble Lords, how can
Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous sight,
To shed your lives on ground? Wo worth the
man,
That first did teach the cursed steele to bight
In his owne flesh, and make way to the living
spright!

xxxiii.

"If ever love of Lady did empierce
Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place,
Withhold your bloody handes from battaill fierce;
And, sith for me ye fight, to me this grace
Both yield, to stay your deadly stryfe a space."
They stayd a while; and forth she gan proceede:
"Most wretched woman and of wicked race,
That am the authour of this hainous deed,
And cause of death betwene two doughtie Knights
do breed!

xxxiv.

"But, if for me ye fight, or me will serve,
Not this rude kynd of battaill, nor these armes
Are meet, the which doe men in bale to sterue,
And doolefullsorrowe heape with deadly harmes:
Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes.
Another warre, and other weapons, I
Doe love, where Love does give his sweet alarmes
Without bloodshed, and where the enimy
Does yield unto his foe a pleasaunt victory.

xxxv.

"Debatefull strife, and cruell enmity,
The famous name of knighthood fowly shend;
But lovely peace, and gentle amity,
And in amours the passing howres to spend,
The mightie martial handes doe most commend;
Of love they ever greater glory bore
Then of their armes: Mars is Cupidoes friend,
And is for Venus loves renowned more
Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he did of
yore.

xxxvi.

Therewith she sweetly smyled. They, though full
To prove extremities of bloody fight, [bent
Yet at her speach their rages gan relent,
And calme the sea of their tempestuous spight:
Such powre have pleasing wordes! Such is the
Of courteous clemency in gentle hart! [might
Now after all was ceast, the Faery Knight
Besought that Damzell suffer him depart,
And yield him ready passage to that other part.

xxxvii.

She no lesse glad then he desirous was
Of his departure thence; for of her ioy
And vaine delight she saw he light did pas,
A foe of folly and immodest toy,

xxxiii. 7. — [Wo worth the man,] That is, *Cursed be the man.* CHURCH.

xxxiv. 3. *The which doe men in bale to sterue,* Which cause mankind to *perish* in trouble, [reapfan, *mori*]; though now used in a particular sense, to *die with hunger.* URTON.

xxxiv. 5. *Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes.* *Scarmoges*, skirmishes. Ital. *scaramuchia*, Gall. *escar-mouche.* URTON.

xxxvii. 3. — [He light did pas,] He made light of it; he passed over lightly. URTON.

Still solemne sad, or still disdainfull coy;
Delighting all in armes and cruell warre,
That her sweet peace and pleasures did annoy,
Troubled with terrour and unquiet iarre,
That she well pleased was thence to amove him
farre.

xxxviii.

Tho him she brought aboard, and her swift bote
Forthwith directed to that further strand;
The which on the dull waves did lightly flote,
And soone arrived on the shallow sand,
Where gladsome Guyon salied forth to land,
And to that Damsell thankes gave for reward.
Upon that shore he spyed Atin stand,
There by his maister left, when late he far'd
In Phædris flitt barck over that perloous shard.

xxxix.

Well could he him remember, sith of late
He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made;
Streight gan he him revyle, and bitter rate,
As shepherdes curre, that in darke eveninges
shade
Hath tracted forth some salvage beastes trade:
"Vile miscreant," said he, "whether dost thou
flye [invade?
The shame and death, which will thee soone
What coward hand shall doe thee next to dye,
That art thus fowly fledd from famous enimy!"

xli.

With that he stifly shooke his steelhead dart:
But sober Guyon hearing him so rayle,
Though somewhat moved in his mightie hart,
Yet with strong reason maistred passion fraile,
And passed fayrely forth: He, turning taile,
Backe to the strond retyrd, and there still stayd,
Awaiting passage, which him late did faile;
The whiles Cymochles with that wanton Mayd
The hasty heat of his avowd revenge delayd.

xlii.

Whylest there the Varlet stood, he saw from farre
An armed Knight that towards him fast ran;
He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre
His forlorne steed from him the victour wan:
He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint, and wan;
And all his armour sprinckled was with blood,
And soyl'd with durtie gore, that no man can
Discerne the hew thereof: He never stood,
But bent his hastie course towards the Ydle Flood.

xliii.

The Varlet saw, when to the Flood he came
How without stop or stay he fiersly lept,
And deepe himselfe beducked in the same,
That in the Lake his loftie crest was stept,
Ne of his safetie seemed care he kept;
But with his raging armes he rudely flast

xxxviii. 5. — [salied] *Salied*, that is, *leaped.* Lat. *salio.* CHURCH.

xxxviii. 9 — [that perloous shard.] That is, *Bourn* or *boundary.* T. WARTON.

xxxix. 1. *Well could he him remember,* That is, *Atin* well remembered Guyon. CHURCH.

xxxix. 5. — [trade:] For *tread*, footsteps. CHURCH.

xl. 5. — [fayrely] *Softly.* TODD.

Ibid. — [He.] *Atin.* CHURCH.

xl. 9. — [delayd.] *Put away*, removed from him. CHURCH.

The waves about, and all his armour swept,
That all the blood and filth away was washt ;
Yet still he bet the water, and the billowes dasht.

XLIII.

Atin drew nigh to weet what it mote bee ;
For much he wondred at that ūncouth sight: [see,
Whom should he but his owne deare Lord there
His owne deare Lord Pyrochles in sad plight,
Ready to drowne himselfe for fell despight :
" Harrow now, out and well away ! " he cryde,
" What dismall day hath lent this cursed light,
To see my Lord so deadly damnifyde ?
Pyrochles, O Pyrochles, what is thee betyde ? "

XLIV.

" I burne, I burne, I burne, " then lowd he cryde,
" O how I burne with implacable fyre !
Yet nought can quench mine inly flaming syde,
Nor sea of licour cold, nor Lake of myre ;
Nothing but death can doe me to respyre. "
" Ah ! be it, " said he, " from Pyrochles farre
After pursewing death once to requyre, [marre :
Or think, that ought those puissant hands may
Death is for wretches borne under unhappy starre. "

XLV.

" Perdye, then is it fit for me, " said he,
" That am, I weene, most wretched man alive ;
Burning in flames, yet no flames can I see,
And, dying dayly, dayly yet revive :
O Atin, helpe to me last death to give ! "
The Varlet at his plaint was grievd so sore,
That his deepe-wounded hart in two did rive ;
And, his owne health remembering now no more,
Did follow that ensample which he blam'd afore.

XLVI.

Into the Lake he leapt his Lord to ayd,
(So love the dread of daunger doth despise,)
And, of him catching hold, him strongly stayd
From drowning ; but more happy he then wise
Of that seas nature did him not advise :
The waves thereof so slow and sluggish were,
Engrost with mud which did them fowle agrise,
That every weighty thing they did appeare,
Ne ought mote ever sinck downe to the bottom
there.

XLVII.

Whyles thus they strugled in that Ydle Wave,
And strove in vaine, the one himselfe to drowne,
The other both from drowning for to save ;
Lo ! to that shore one in an ancient gowne,
Whose hoary locks great gravitie did crowne,
Holding in hand a goodly arming sword,
By fortune came, ledd with the troublous sowne :
Where drenched deepe he fownd in that dull ford
The carefull servaunt stryving with his raging Lord.

XLVIII.

Him Atin spying knew right well of yore,
And lowdly cald ; " Help ! helpe, O Archimago,

XLIII. 6. Harrow now, out and well away ! he cryde,] *Haro* is a form of exclamation anciently used in Normandy, to call for help, or to raise the *Hue and Cry*. T. WARTON.

XLIII. 8. ——— damnifyde ?] *Injured*. TODD.

XLV. 5. ——— helpe &c.] That is, Assist in putting an end to my misery. CHURCH.

XLVI. 5. ——— did him not advise :] Did not bethink himself. Fr. *s'avisier*. CHURCH.

To save my Lord in wretched plight forelore ;
Helpe with thy hand, or with thy counsell sage:
Weake handes, but counsell is most strong in age. "
Him when the old man saw, he wounded sore
To see Pyrochles there so rudely rage :
Yet sithe his helpe, he saw, he needed more
Then pitty, he in hast approached to the shore,

XLIX.

And cald ; " Pyrochles, what is this I see ?
What hellish fury hath at earst thee hent ?
Furious ever I thee knew to bee,
Yet never in this straunge astonishment. "
" These flames, these flames, " he cryde, " doe
me torment ! " [see
" What flames, " quoth he, " when I thee present
In daunger rather to be drent then brent ? " [he,
" Harrow ! the flames which me consume, " said
" Ne can be quencht, within my secret bowelles hee.

L.

" That cursed man, that cruel feend of hell,
Furor, oh ! Furor hath me thus bedight :
His deadly woundes within my liver swell,
And his whott fyre burnes in mine entralles
bright,
Kindled through his infernall bond of spight,
Sith late with him I bateill vaine would boste ;
That now I weene Ioves dreaded thunderlight
Does scorch not halfe so sore, nor damned ghoste
In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste. "

LI.

Which whenas Archimago heard, his griefe
He knew right well, and him attonce disarm'd :
Tben searcht his secret woundes, and made a
priefe
Of every place that was with bruizing harmd,
Or with the hidden fier inly warmd. [applyde,
Which doen, he balmes and herbes thereto
And evermore with mightie spels them charmd ;
That in short space he has them qualifyde,
And him restord to helth, that would have algates
dyde.

CANTO VII.

Guyon findes Mammon in a delve
Sunning his treasure hore ;
Is by him tempted, and led downe
To see his secreete store.

I.

As pilot well expert in perilous wave,
That to a stedfast starre his course hath bent,
When foggy mistes or cloudy tempests have
The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,
And cover'd heaven with hideous dreriment ;
Upon his card and compass firmes his eye,

XLIX. 2. ——— at earst] *Suddenly*. CHURCH.

Ibid. ——— hent ?] *Seized*. TODD.

XLIX. 7. ——— drent then brent ?] Drowned than burnt. CHURCH.

I. 9. ——— so felly roste.] *Cruelly* or *fiercely*. Ital. *fellone*. TODD.

LI. 9. ——— that would have algates dyde.] That had wished by all means to die. TODD.

Arg. 2. ——— his treasure hore ;] From the Anglo-S. *hoftu*, *sordidus*, *muicidus*; not *hoary*, which is from *harp*, *canus*. UPTON.

I. 5. ——— dreriment ;] *Darkness*. CHURCH.

The maisters of his long experiment,
And to them does that Ydle helme apply,
Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward fly ;

II.

So Guyon having lost his trustie Guyde,
Late left beyond that Ydle Lake, procedes
Yet on his way, of none accompanyde ;
And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes
Of his own vertues and praise-worthie deedes.
So, lough he yode, yet no adventure found,
Which Fame of her shrill trompet worthy reedes :
For still he travell'd through wide wasifull ground,
That nought but desert wilderness shewd all around.

III.

At last he came unto a gloomy glade, [light,
Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens
Whereas he sitting found in secret shade
An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile Wight,
Of grisly hew and fowle ill-favour'd sight ;
His face with smoke was tand, and eies were
bleard,
His head and beard with sout were ill bedight,
His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have ben seard
In smythes fire-spitting forge, and nayles like
clawes appeard.

IV.

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust,
Was underneath enveloped with gold ;
Whose glistring glosse, darkned with filthy dust,
Well yet appeared to have bene of old
A worke of rich entayle and curious mould,
Woven with anticke and wyld ymagery :
And in his lap a masse of coyne he told,
And turned upside downe, to feede his eye
And covetous desire with his huge theasury.

V.

And round about him lay on every side
Great heapes of gold that never could be spent ;
Of which some were rude owre, not purifide
Of Mulcibers devouring element ;
Some others were new driven, and distent
Into great ingowes and to wedges square ;
Some in round plates withouten moniment :
But most were scampt, and in their metal bare
The antique shapes of kings and Kesars straung
and rare.

VI.

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright
And haste he rose for to remove aside
Those pretious hills from strangers envious sight,
And downe them poured through an hole full
Into the hollow earth, them there to hide : [wide
But Guyon, lightly to him leaping, stayd
His hand that trembled as one terrifyde ;
And though himselfe were at the sight dismayd,
Yet him perforce restraynd, and to him doubtfull
said ;

III. 9 *In smythes fire-spitting &c.] Spett seems anciently to have more simply signified disperse, without the low idea which we at present affix to it. T. WARRON.*

IV. 5. — of rich entayle,] *Carving, sculpture. Ital. intagliare, intaglio. UPRON.*

V. 7. *Some in round plates withouten moniment ;] Spelt as the Ital. movimento ; meaning here, image, superscription, ornament ; ydyqurpa, gnorisma, monumentum. UPRON.*

VII.

“What art thou, Man, (if man at all thou art),
That here in desert hast thine habitaunce,
And these rich hills of weith doest hide apart
From the worlde eye, and from her right
usaunce ?”
Thereat, with staring eyes fixed askaunce,
In great disdain he answerd ; “Hardy Elfe,
That darest view my direfull countenance !
I read thee rash and heedlesse of thyselfe,
To trouble my still seate and heapes of pretious pelfe.

VIII.

“God of the world and worlthings I me call,
Great Mammon, greatest god below the skye,
That of my plenty poure out unto all,
And unto none my graces do envye :
Riches, renowne, and principality,
Honour, estate, and all this world's good,
For which men swinck and sweat incessantly,
Fro me do flow into an ample flood,
And in the hollow earth have their eternall brood.

IX.

“Wherefore if me thou deigne to serve and sew,
At thy commaund lo ! all these mountaines bee :
Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew,
All these may not suffice, there shall to thee
Ten times so much be nombred francke and free.”
“Mammon,” said he, “thy godheads vaunt is
And idle offers of thy golden fee ; [vaine,
To them that covet such eye-glutting gaine
Proffer thy giftes, and fitter servaunts entertaîne.

X.

“Me ill hesits, that in derdoing armes
And honours suit my vowed daies do spend,
Unto thy bounteous baytes and pleasing charmes,
With which weake men thou witchest, to attend ;
Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend
And low abase the high heroicke spright,
That ioyes for crownes and kingdomes to contend :
Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes, be my
delight ;
Those be the riches fit for an advent'rous Knight.”

XI.

“Vaine glorious Elfe,” said he, “doest not thou
weet,
That money can thy wantes at will supply ?
Sheilds, steeds, and armes, and all things for thee
It can purvay in twinkling of an eye ; [meet,
And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply.
Do not I kings create, and throw the crowne
Sometimes to him that low in dust doth ly,
And him that raignd into his rowme thrust
downe ;
And, whom I lust, do heape with glory and re-
nowne ?”

XII.

“All otherwise,” said he, “I riches read,
And deeme them roote of all disquietnesse ;
First got with guile, and then preserv'd with dread,
And after spent with pride and lavishnesse,
Leaving behind them griefe and heavinesse :

VIII. 7. *For which men swinck] Labour. TOTO.*

IX. 1. — and sew,] *Follow. Fr. suivre. UPRON.*

X. 1. *Me ill besits,] It ill becomes me. TOTO.*

X. 5. — blend] *Blemish. CHURCH.*

Infinite mischiefs of them doe arise ;
Strife and debate, bloodshed and bitternesse,
Outrageous wrong and hellish covetize ;
That noble heart, as great dishonour, doth despize.

XIII.

"Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine ;
But realmes and rulers thou doest both confound,
And loyall truth to treason doest incline :
Witness the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on ground ;
The crowned often slaine ; the slayer cround ;
The sacred diademe in peeces rent ;
And purple robe gored with many a wound ;
Castles surprizd ; great cities sackt and brent :
So mak'st thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull
government !

XIV.

"Long were to tell the troublous stormes that tosse
The private state, and make the life unswet :
Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth crosse,
And in frayle wood on Adrian gulf doth fleet,
Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet."
Then Mammon waxing wroth ; "And why then,"
"Are mortall men so fond and undiscreet [said,
So evil thing to seeke unto their ayd ;
And, having not, complaine ; and, having it,
upbrayd ?"

XV.

"Indeed," quoth he, "through fowle intemperance,
Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise :
But would they thinke with how small allowance
Untroubled nature doth herselfe suffice,
Such superfluities they would despise,
Which with sad cares empeach our native ioyes.
At the well-head the purest streames arise ;
But mucky filth his branching armes annoyes,
And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave ac-
cloyes.

XVI.

"The antique world, in his flowering youth,
Fownd no defect in his Creators grace ;
But with glad thanks, and unreproved truth,
The gifts of sovaine bounty did embrace :
Like angels life was then mens happy cace :
But later ages pride, like corn-fed steede,
Abusd her plenty and fat-swolne conceit
To all licentious lust, and gan exceed
The measure of her meane and naturall first need.

XVII.

"Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe
Of his great grandmother with steele to wound,
And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe
With sacriledge to dig : Therein he fownd
Fountaines of gold and silver to abownd,
Of which the matter of his huge desire
And pompous pride eftsoones he did compownd ;
Then Avarice gan through his veines inspire
His greedy flames, and kindled life-devouring fire."

xiv. 6. — *And why then, sayd,*] And why then, sayd
he. An uncommon ellipsis. TODD.

xv. 1. — *quoth he,*] *Str Guyon.* CHURCH.

xv. 6. — *empeach*] *Hinder.* URTON.

xvi. 9. — *accloyes,*] *Chokes, or clogs up.* TODD.

xvi. 3. — *unreproved truth,*] Spenser by *unreproved
truth* means *sincerity*. The sense is, The antique world
was *sincerely* thankful for the grace or favour of its
Creator. CHURCH.

XVIII.

"Sonne," said he then, "lett be thy bitter scorne,
And leave the rudenesse of that antique age
To them, that liv'd therein in state forlorne.
Thou, that doest live in later times, must wage
Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage.
If then thee list my offred grace to use,
Take what thou please of all this surplusage ;
If thee list not, leave have thou to refuse.
But thing refused doe not afterward accuse."

XIX.

"Me list not," said the Elfin Knight, "reave
Thing offred, till I know it well be gott ;
Ne wote I but thou didst these goods bereave
From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott,
Or that blood-guiltinesse or guile them blott."
"Perdy," quoth he, "yet never eie did wev,
Ne tong did tell, ne band these handled not ;
But safe I have them kept in secret mew
From hevens sight and powre of al which them
poursew."

XX.

"What secret place," quoth he, "can safely hold
So huge a masse, and hide from heavens eie ?
Or where hast thou thy wonne, that so much gold
Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery ?"
"Come thou," quoth he, "and see." So by and by
Through that thick covert he him led, and fownd
A darksome way, which no man could descry,
That deep descended through the hollow grownd,
And was with dread and horror compassed around.

XXI.

At length they came into a larger space,
That stretcht itselfe into an ample playne ;
Through which a beaten broad high way did
traee,
That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly rayne :
By that wayes side there sate infernall Payne,
And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife ;
The one in hand an yron whip did strayne,
The other brandished a bloody knife ;
And both did gnash their teeth, and both did
threaten Life.

XXII.

On th' other side in one consort there sate
Cruell Revenge, and rancorous Despight,
Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate ;
But gnawing Gealosy, out of their sight
Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight ;
And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,
And fownd no place wher safe he shroud in
might :
Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye ;
And Shame his ugly face did hide from living eye

XXIII.

And over them sad Horror with grim hew
Did alwaies sore, beating his yron wings ;
And after him owles and night-ravens flew,

xviii. 1. — *lett be*] *Leave off,* away with. CHURCH.

xviii. 4. — *must wage*

Thy workes &c.] Must wage, i. e. must please.
CHURCH.

xx. 3. — *thy wonne,*] *Habitation.* The word is
often thus used as a substantive in Spenser. URTON.

xxi. 4. — *rayne:*] *Reign* in our old poetry is used for
realm or *region*. URTON.

The hatefull messengers of heavy things,
Of death and dolor telling sad tidings ;
Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte,
A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings,
That hart of flint asonder could have rifte ;
Which having ended after him she flyeth swift.

xxiv.

All these before the gates of Pluto lay ;
By whom they passing spake unto them nought
But th' Elfin Knight with wonder all the way
Did feed his eyes, and fill his inner thought.
At last him to a litle dore he brought,
That to the gate of hell, which gaped wide,
Was next adioyning, ne them parted ought :
Betwixt them both was but a litle stride,
That did the House of Richesse from hell-mouth
divide.

xxv.

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care,
Day and night keeping wary watch and ward,
For feare least Force or Fraud should unaware
Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in gard :
Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thether-ward
Approch, albe his drowsy den were next ;
For next to Death is Sleepe to be compar'd ;
Therefore his house is unto his annex ;
Here Sleep, there Richesse, and hel-gate them
both betwext.

xxvi.

So soon as Mammon there arrivd, the dore
To him did open and afforded way :
Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore,
Ne darknesse him ne daunger might dismay.
Soone as he entred was, the dore straightway
Did shutt, and from behind it forth there left
An ugly Feend, more fowle then dismall day ;
The which with monstrous stalke behind him stept,
And ever as he went dew watch upon him kept.

xxvii.

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy Guest,
If ever covetous hand, or lustfull eye,
Or lips he layd on thing that likt him best,
Or ever sleepe his eie-strings did untye,
Should be his pray : And therefore still on hye
He over him did hold his cruell clawes,
Threatning with greedy gripe to doe him dye,
And rend in peeces with his ravenous pawes,
If ever he transgrest the fatal Stygian lawes.

xxviii.

That Houses forme within was rude and strong,
Lyke an huge cave hewne out of rocky clifte,
From whose rough vault the ragged breaches hong
Embost with massy gold of glorious guifte,
And with rich metall loaded every rifte,
That heavy ruine they did seeme to threatt ;
And over them Arachne high did lifte
Her cunning web, and spred her subtle nett,
Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more black
than iett.

xxix.

Both rooffe, and floore, and walls, were all of gold,
But overgrowne with dust and old decay,
And hid in darknes, that none could behold
The hew thereof : for vew of cherefull day
Did never in that House itselle display,
But a faint shadow of uncertein light ;

Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away ;
Or as the moone, cloathed with cloudy night,
Does shew to him that walkes in feare and sad affright.

xxx.

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene
But huge great yron chests, and coffers strong,
All bard with double bends, that none could weene
Them to enforce by violence or wrong ;
On every side they placed were along.
But all the grownd with sculs was scattered
And dead mens bones, which round about were
flong ;
Whose lives, it seemed, whilome there were shed,
And their vile carcasses now left unburied.

xxx.i.

They forward passe ; ne Guyon yet spoke word,
Till that they came unto an yron dore,
Which to them opened of his owne accord,
And shewd of richesse such exceeding store
As eie of man did never see before,
Ne ever could within one place be fownd,
Though all the wealth, which is or was of yore,
Could gatherd be through all the world arownd,
And that above were added to that under grownd.

xxx.ii.

The charge thereof unto a covetous Spright
Commaunded was, who thereby did attend,
And warily awaited day and night,
From other covetous Feends it to defend,
Who to rob and ransacke did intend.
Then Mammon, turning to that Warriour, said ;
“ Loe, here the world's blis ! loe, here the end,
To which al men do ayne, rich to be made !
Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.”

xxx.iii.

“ Certes,” said he, “ I n'll thine offred grace,
Ne to be made so happy doe intend !
Another blis before mine eyes I place,
Another happines, another end.
To them, that list, these base regards I lend :
But I in armes, and in achievements brave,
Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend,
And to be lord of those that riches have,
Then them to have my selfe, and be their servile
slave.”

xxxiv.

Thereat the Feend his gnashing teeth did grate,
And griev'd, so long to lacke his greedie pray ;
For well he weened that so glorious hayte
Would tempt his Guest to take thereof assay :
Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away
More light than culver in the falcons fist :
Eternall God thee save from such decay !
But, whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist,
Him to entrap unwares another way he wist.

xxxv.

Thence, forward he him ledd and shortly brought
Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright
To him did open as it had beene taught :
Therein an hundred raunges weren bright,
And hundred furnaces all burning bright ;
By every founance many Feends did byde,
Deformed creatures, horrible in sight ;
And every Feend his busie paines applyde
To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

xxxvi.

One with great bellows gathered filling ayre,
And with first wind the fewell did inflame ;
Another did the dying bronds repayre
With yron tongs, and sprinckled ofte the same
With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame,
Who, maystring them, renewd his former heat :
Some scumd the drosse that from the metall came ;
Some stird the molten owre with ladles great :
And every one did swincke, and every one did sweat.

xxxvii.

But, when an earthly wight they present saw
Glistring in armes and battailous aray,
From their whot work they did themselves with-
To wonder at the sight ; for, till that day, [draw
They never creature saw that cam that way :
Their staring eyes sparkling with fervent fyre
And ugly shapes did nigh the Man dismay,
That, were it not for shame, he would retyre ;
Till that him thus bespake their souveraine lord and
syre ;

xxxviii.

“ Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall eye,
That living eye before did never see !
The thing, that thou didst crave so earnestly,
To weet whence all the wealth late shewd by mee
Proceeded, lo ! now is reveald to thee.
Here is the fountaine of the worldès good !
Now therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,
Avisé thee well, and change thy wilfull mood ;
Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be with-
stood.”

xxxix.

“ Suffise it then, thou Money-god,” quoth hee,
“ That all thine ydle offers I refuse.
All that I need I have ; what needeth mee
To covet more then I have cause to use ? [abuse ;
With such vaine shewes thy worldlings vyle
But give me leave to follow mine emprise.”
Mammon was much displeasd, yet no'te he chuse
But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise ;
And thence him forward ledd, him further to
entise.

xl.

He brought him, through a darksom narrow strait,
To a broad gate all built of beaten gold :
The gate was open ; but therein did wayt
A sturdie Villein, stryding stiffe and bold,
As if the Highest God defy he would :
In his right hand an yron club he held,
But he himselfe was all of golden mould,
Yet had both life and sence, and well could weld
That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes he queld.

xli.

Disdayne he called was, and did disdayne
To be so cald, and who so did him call :
Sterne was his looke, and so did him call ;
His portance terrible, and stature tall,
Far passing th' hight of men terrestriall ;

xxxvii. 5. — creature] He means earthly creature.
CHURCH.

xxxix. 8. — mesprise.] Contempt, or neglect. FR.
TODD.

xl. 1. — a darksome narrow strait,] That is, street,
“ Strata viarum.” The letters answer to the rhyme.
UPTON

Like an huge gyant of the Titans race ; [small.
That made him scorne all creatures great and
And with his pride all others powre deface :
More fitt amongst black fiendes then men to have
his place.

xlii.

Soone as those glitterand armes he did espye,
That with their brightnesse made that darknes
His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye, [light,
And threaten batteill to the Faery Knight ;
Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight,
Till Mammon did his hasty hand withhold,
And counsell him abstaine from perillous fight ;
For nothing might abash the Villein bold,
Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated mould.

xliii.

So having him with reason pacifyde,
And that fiers Carle commanding to forbear,
He brought him in. The rowme was large and
wyde,
As it some gyeld or solemne temple weare ;
Many great golden pillours did upbeare
The massy rooffe, and riches huge sustayne ;
And every pillour decked was full deare
With crownes, and diademes, and titles vaine,
Which mortall princes wore whiles they on earth
did rayne.

xliv.

A route of people there assembled wore,
Of every sort and nation under skye,
Which with great upore preaced to draw nere
To th' upper part, where was advanced hie
A stately siege of souveraine maicesty ;
And thereon satt a Woman gorgeous gay,
And richly cladd in robes of royaltie,
That never earthly prince in such aray
His glory did enhance, and pompous pryde display.

xlv.

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to bee,
That her broad beauties beam great brightnes
threw
Through the dim shade, that all men might it see ;
Yet was not that same her owne native hew,
But wrought by art and counterfetted shew,
Thereby more lovers unto her to call ;
Nath'lesse most heavenly faire in deed and vew
She by creation was, till she did fall ; [withall,
Thenceforth she sought for helps to cloke her crime

xlvi.

There, as in glistring glory she did sitt,
She held a great gold chaine ylincked well,
Whose upper end to highest heven was knitt,
And lower part did reach to lowest hell ;
And all that preace did rownd about her swell
To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby
To climbe aloft, and others to excell :
That was Ambition, rash desire to sty,
And every linck thereof a step of dignity.

xliii. 4. — gyeld] Hall, a guild-hall. Anglo-Sax.
gild, Germ. gilde. UPTON.

xliv. 5. — siege] Seat. CHURCH.

xlv. 9. — crime] Reproach. CHURCH.

xlvi. 8. — rash desire to sty,] The lexicographers
inform us, that sty signifies to soar, to ascend ; so that the
sense, in the verse before us is, That was ambition, which
is a rash desire of still ascending upward. T. WARTON.

XLVII.

Some thought to raise themselves to high degree
By riches and unrighteous reward ;
Some by close shonldring ; some by flatteree ;
Others through friendes ; others for base regard ;
And all, by wrong waies, for themselves prepar'd :
Those, that were up themselves, kept others low ;
Those, that were low themselves, held others
Ne suffred them to ryse or greater grow ; [hard,
But every one did strive his fellow downe to throw.

XLVIII.

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire,
What meant that preace about that Ladies throne,
And what she was that did so high aspyre ?
Him Mammon answered ; " That goodly one,
Whom all that folke with such contention
Doe flock about, my deare, my daughter is :
Honour and dignitie from her alone
Derived are, and all this world's blis, [mis :
For which ye men doe strive ; few gett, but many

XLIX.

" And fayre Philotimé she rightly hight,
The fairest wight that wonneth under skie,
But that this darksom neather world hér light
Doth dim with horror and deformity,
Worthie of heven and hye felicitie,
From whence the gods have her for envy thrust :
But, sith thou hast found favour in mine eye,
Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust ;
That she may thee advance for works and merits
inst."

L.

" Gramercy, Mammon," said the gentle Knight,
" For so great grace and offred high estate ;
But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,
Unworthy match for such immortal mate
Myselfe well wote, and mine unequal fate :
Aud were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,
And love avowd to other Lady late,
That to remove the same I have no might :
To change love causelesse is reproch to warlike
Knight."

LI.

Mammon emmowed was with inward wrath ;
Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence ledd,
Through griesly shadowes by a heaten path,
Into a Gardin goodly garnished
With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not be
redd :
Not such as earth out of her fruitfull woomb
Throws forth to men, sweet and well-savored,
But direfull deadly black, both leafe and bloom,
Fitt to adorne the dead and deck the dreary toombe.

LII.

There mournfull cypresse grew in greatest store ;
And trees of bitter gall ; and heben sad ;
Dead sleeping poppy ; and black hellebore ;
Cold coloquintida ; and tetra mad ;
Mortall samnitis ; and cicuta had,
With which th' unist Atheniens made to dy
Wise Socrates, who, thereof quaffing glad,
Pound out his life and last philosophy
To the fayre Critias, his dearest belamy !

L. I. Gramercy.] *Great thanks.* Fr. *Grand merci.* TODD.
LII. 9. — belamy.] *Fair friend.* Fr. *bel ami.* CHURCH.

LIII.

The Gardin of Prosérpina this hight :
And in the midst thereof a silver seat,
With a thick arber goodly over-dight,
In which she often usd from open heat
Herselfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat :
Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,
With braunches broad dispredd and body great,
Clothed with leaves, that none the wood mote see,
And loaden all with fruit as thick as it might bee.

LIV.

Their fruit were golden apples glistring bright,
That goodly was their glory to behold ;
On earth like never grew, ne living wight
Like ever saw, but they from hence were sold ;
For those, which Hercules with conquest bold
Got from great Atlas daughters, hence began,
And planted there did bring forth fruit of gold ;
And those, with which th' Eubcean young man wau
Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out ran.

LV.

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,
With which Acontius got his lover trew,
Whom he had long time sought with fruitlesse
Here eke that famous golden apple grew, [suit :
The which amongst the gods false Ate threw ;
For which th' Ideean Ladies disagreed,
Till partial Paris dempt it Venus dew,
And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,
That many noble Greekes and Troians made to bleed

LVI.

The warlike Elfe much wondred at this tree,
So fayre and great, that shadowed all the ground ;
And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee,
Did stretch themselves without the utmost bound
Of this great Gardin, compast with a mound :
Which over-hanging, they themselves did steepe
In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it round ;
That is the river of Coccytus deepe, [weepe.
In which full many soules do endlesse wayle and

LVII.

Which to behold he clomb up to the haneke ;
And, looking downe, saw many damned wightes
In those sad waves, which direfull deadly stancke,
Plonged continually of cruell sprightes,
That with their piteous cries, and yelling shrighites,
They made the further shore resounden wide :
Emongst the rest of those same ruefull sightes,
One cursed creature he by chance espide,
That drenched lay full deepe under the Garden side.

LVIII.

Deepe was he drenched to the upmost chin,
Yet gaped still as coveting to drinke
Of the cold liquour which he waded in ;
And, stretching forth his hand, did often thinke
To reach the fruit which grew upon the brincke ;
But both the fruit from hand, and flood from
mouth,
Did fly abacke, and made him vainely swincke ;
The whiles he sterv'd with hunger, and with drouth
He daily dyde, yet never throughly dyen couth.

LV. 7. — dempt] *Judged, or deemed.* Anglo-Sax
deman. TODD.

LVII. 5. — shrighites] *Shricks.* TODD.

H

LIX.

The Knight, him seeing labour so in vaine,
 Askt who he was, and what he meant thereby ?
 Who, groning deepe, thus answered him againe ;
 " Most cursed of all creatures under skye,
 Lo Tantalus, I here tormented lye !
 Of whom high Iove wont whylome feasted hee ;
 Lo, here I now for want of food doe dye !
 But, if that thou be such as I thee see, [mee !"
 Of grace I pray thee give to eat and drinke to

LX.

" Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus," quoth he,
 " Abide the fortune of thy present fate ;
 And, unto all that live in high degree,
 Ensamble be of mind intemperate,
 To teach them how to use their present state."
 Then gan the cursed Wretch aloud to cry,
 Accusing highest Iove and gods ingrate ;
 And eke blaspheming heauen bitterly,
 As author of iniustice, there to let him dye.

LXI.

He lookt a litle further, and espyde
 Another Wretch, whose carcas deepe was drent
 Within the river which the same did hyde :
 But both his handes, most filthy feculent,
 Above the water were on high extent,
 And faynd to wash themselves incessantly,
 Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent,
 But rather fowler seemed to the eye ;
 So lost his labour vaine and ydle industry.

LXII.

The Knight, him calling, asked who he was ?
 Who, lifting up his head, him answered thus ;
 " I Pilate am, the falsest iudge, alas !
 And most uniuist ; that, by unrighteous
 And wicked doome, to Iewes despitesous
 Delivered up the Lord of Life to dye,
 And did acquite a murderer felonous ;
 The whiles my handes I washt in purity,
 The whiles my soule was soyled with fowle iniquity."

LXIII.

Infinite moe tormented in like paine
 He there beheld, too long here to be told :
 Ne Mammon would there let him long remayne,
 For terrour of the tortures manifold,
 In which the damned soules he did behold,
 But roughly him bespake : " Thou fearefull foole,
 Why takest not of that same fruite of gold ?
 Ne sittest downe on that same silver stoole,
 To rest thy weary person in the shadow coole ?"

LXIV.

All which he did to do him deadly fall
 In frayle intemperance through sinful bayt ;
 To which if he inclined had at all, [wayt,
 That dreadfull Feend, which did behinde him
 Would him have rent in thousand peeces strayt :
 But he was wary wise in all his way,
 And well perceived his deceiptfull sleight,
 Ne suffred lust his safety to betray :
 So goodly did beguile the gulyer of his pray.

LX. 9. — *there to let him dye.*] That is, to lie in eternal punishment; which is called death in the Scripture language. UPTON.

LXII. 8. — *in purity.*] In sign of purity. TODD.

LXV.

And now he has so long remained there,
 That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and wan
 For want of food and sleepe, which two upheare,
 Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of man,
 That none without the same endure can :
 For now three dayes of men were full outwrought,
 Since he this hardy enterprize began :
 Forthy great Mammon fayrely he besought
 Into the world to guydo him backe, as he him
 brought.

LXVI.

The god, though loth, yet was constrynd t' obay ;
 For lenger time, then that, no living wight
 Below the earth might suffred be to stay :
 So backe againe him brought to living light.
 But all so soome as his enfeebled spirit
 Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,
 As overcome with too exceeding might,
 The life did fit away out of her nest,
 And all his sences were with deadly fit opprest.

CANTO VIII.

Sir Guyon, layd in swoone, is by
 Acrates sonnes despoyled ;
 Whom Arthure soone bath reawaked,
 And Paynim brethren foyled.

I.

AND is there care in heauen ? And is there love
 In heavenly spirits to these creatures base,
 That may compassion of their evils move ? [care
 There is :—else much more wretched were tho
 Of men then beasts : But O ! th' exceeding grace
 Of Highest God that loves his creatures so,
 And all his workes with mercy doth embrace,
 That blessed Angels he sends to and fro,
 To serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked foe !

II.

How oft do they their silver bowers leave
 To come to succour us that succour want !
 How oft do they with golden pineons cleave
 The fitting skyes, like flying pursuivant
 Against fowle feendes to ayd us militant !
 They for us fight, they watch and dewly ward,
 And their bright squadrons round about us plant ;
 And all for love and nothing for reward :
 O, why should Hevenly God to men have such
 regard !

III.

During the while that Guyon did abide
 In Mammons House, the Palmer, whom whyleare
 That wanton Mayd of passage had denide,
 By further search had passage found elsewhere ;
 And, being on his way, approached nere
 Where Guyon lay in traunce ; when suddainly
 He heard a voyce that called lowd and cleare,
 " Come hether, come hether, O ! come hastily !"
 That all the fields resounded with the ruefull cry.

IV.

The Palmer lent his care unto the noyce,
 To weet who called so impörtunely :
 Againe he heard a more efforced voyce,

III. 3. *That wanton Mayd*] Phædría. CHURCH.

That bad him come in haste : He by and by
His feeble feet directed to the cry ;
Which to that shady delve him brought at last,
Where Mammon earst did sunne his treasury :
There the good Guyon he found slumbering fast
In senecles dreame ; which sight at first him sore
aghast.

v.

Beside his head there satt a faire young man,
Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares,
Whose tender bud to blossom new began,
And florish faire above his equal peares :
His snowy front, curled with golden heares,
Like Phoebus face adorn'd with sunny rayes,
Divinely shone ; and two sharpe winged sheares,
Decked with diverse plumés, like painted jayes,
Were fixed at his backe to cut his ayery wayes.

vi.

Like as Cupido on Idæan hill,
When having laid his cruell bow away
And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill
The world with murderous spoiles and bloody pray,
With his faire mother he him dights to play,
Aud with his goodly sisters, Graces three ;
The goddesse, pleased with his wanton play,
Suffers herselfe through sleepe beguiled to bee,
The whiles the other ladies mind theyr mery glee.

vii.

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was [say,
Through fear and wonder, that he nought could
Till him the Childe bespoke ; " Long lackt, alas,
Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay !
Whiles deadly fitt thy Pupill doth dismay,
Behold this heavy sight, thou reverend Sire !
But dread of death and dolor doe away ;
For life ere long shall to her home retire,
And he, that hreathlesse seems, shal corage bold
respire.

viii.

" The charge, which God doth unto me arrett,
Of his deare safety, I to thee commend ;
Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett
The care thereof myselfe unto the end,
But evermore him succour, and defend
Against his foe and mine : Watch thou, I pray ;
For evill is at hand him to offend."
So having said, oftsometimes he gan display
His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

ix.

The Palmer seeing his left empty place,
And his slow eies beguiled of their sight,
Woxe sore afraid, and standing still a space
Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight :
At last, him turning to his charge behight,
With trembling hand his troubled pulse gan try ;
Where finding life not yet dislodged quight,

He much reioyst, and courd it tenderly,
As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

x.

At last he spide where towards him did pace
Two Paynim Knights al armd as bright as skie,
And them beside an aged Sire did trace,
And far before a light-foote Page did flie
That breathed strife and troublous enmitie.
Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old,
Who, meeting earst with Archimago slie
Foreby that Idle Strond, of him were told
That he, which earst them combatted, was Guyon
bold.

xi.

Which to avenge on him they dearly vowd,
Wherever that on ground they mote him find :
False Archimage provokt their corage prowde,
And stryful Atin in their stubborne mynd
Coles of contention and whot vengeance tind,
Now bene they come whereas the Palmer sate,
Keeping that slombred corse to him assind :
Well knew they both his person, sith of late
With him in bloody armes they rashly did debate.

xii.

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage
That Sire he fowl hespake ; " Thou dotard vile,
That with thy brutenesse shendst thy comely age,
Abandon soone, I read, the caytive spoile
Of that same outcast carcass, that erewhile
Made itselfe famous through false trechery,
And crowd his coward crest with knightly stile ;
Loe ! where he now inglorious doth lye,
To proove he lived il, that did thus fowly dye."

xiii.

To whom the Palmer fearelesse answered ;
" Certes, Sir Knight, ye bene too much to blame,
Thus for to blott the honor of the dead,
And with fowle cowardize his carcass shame
Whose living handes immortalized his name.
Vile is the vengeance on the ashes cold ;
And envy base to barke at sleeping fame :
Was never wight that treason of him told :
Yourselſe his prowess prov'd, and found him fiers
and bold."

xiv.

Then sayd Cymochles ; " Palmer, thou deest dote,
Ne canst of prowess ne of knighthood deeme,
Save as thou seest or hearst : But well I wote,
That of his puissaunce tryall made extreme :
Yet gold all is not that doth golden seeme ;
Ne al good Knights that shake well speare and
shield :
The worth of all men by their end esteeme ;
And then dew praise or dew reproch them yield ;
Bad therefore I him deeme that thus lies dead on
field."

ix. 8. — and courd it tenderly,

As chicken newly hatcht,] And protected it, as a hen sits cowering over her young chicken. URRON.

xi. 5. — tind.] Kindled, excited. TOOP.

xii. 3. — brutenesse] Sottishness, stupidity of a brute, brutishness. URRON.

xiii. 7. And envy base to barke at sleeping fame:] " At sleeping fame," i. e. at the fame of a person now dead; of one now fallen asleep, εὐνομήμιον, mortui. URRON.

viii. 1. — arrett] Appoint, allot. Fr. arrêter, arrêter. URRON.

ix. 1. The Palmer seeing his left empty place, And his slow eies beguiled &c.] That is, the Palmer seeing his place empty, and his eye being beguiled of their sight, woxe sore afraid. URRON.

ix. 5. — to his charge behight,] To the charge entrusted to him. TOOP.

xv.

"Good or bad," gan his brother fiers reply,
 "What do I recke, sith that he dide entire?
 Or what doth his bad death now satisfy
 The greedy hunger of revenging yre,
 Sith wrathfull hand wrought not her owne desire?
 Yet, since no way is lefte to wreake my spight,
 I will him reave of armes, the victors hire,
 And of that shield, more worthy of good Knight;
 For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour
 bright?"

xvi.

"Fayr Sir," said then the Palmer suppliant,
 "For knightoods love doe not so fowle a deed,
 Ne blame your honor with so shamefull vaunt
 Of vile revenge: To spoile the dead of weed
 Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes exceed:
 But leave these relicks of his living might
 To decke his herce, and trap his tomb-blacke
 steed." [dight,
 "What herce or steed," said he, "should he have
 But be entombd in the raven or the kight?"

xvii.

With that, rude hand upon his shield he laid,
 And th' other brother gan his helme unlace;
 Both fiercely bent to have him disaraid:
 Till that they spyde where towards them did pace
 An armed Knight, of bold and bounteous grace,
 Whose Squire bore after him an heben launce
 And coverd shield: Well kend him so far space
 Th' Enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce,
 When under him he saw his Lybian steed to prounce;

xviii.

And to those brethren said; "Rise, rise bylive,
 And unto batteill doe yourselves addresse;
 For yonder comes the prowest Knight alive,
 Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and nobillesse,
 That hath to Paynim Knights wrought gret dis-
 tresse,
 And thousand Sar'zins fowly donne to dye."
 That word so deepe did in their harts impresse,
 That both eftswoones upstart furiously,
 And gan themselves prepare to batteill greedily.

xix.

But fiers Pyrochles, lacking his owne sword,
 The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine,
 And Archimage besought, him that afford
 Which he had brought for Braggadochio vaine.
 "So would I," said th' Enchaunter, "glad and
 Beteeme to you this sword, you to defend, [faine
 Or ought that els your honour might maintaine;

xv. 2. — sith that he dide entire? That is, seeing that he died a natural death. This sense is suitable to the mind of the speaker. CHURCH.

xvi. 3. Ne blame your honor.] Cast not blame or reproach on your honour. Fr. *blâmer*. Ital. *biasimare*, à Lat. *blasphemare*, *βλασφημῆναι*. UPTON.

xvi. 4. — of weed] Of raiment. TOOD.

xvii. 8. — amenaunces.] Carriage, behaviour. Fr. *amener*, Ital. *ammannare*. UPTON.

xvii. 9. — his Lybian steed] His Arabian horse. CHURCH.

xviii. 3. — the prowest Knight] The bravest Knight. TOOD.

xix. 6. — Beteeme to you] That is, give, deliver, to you. UPTON.

But that this weapons powre I well have kend
 To be contrary to the worke which ye intend :

xx.

"For that same Knights owne sword this is, of yore
 Which Merlin made by his almightie art
 For that his Noursling, when he knightood swore,
 Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart.
 The metall first he mixt with medæwart,
 That no enchantment from his dint might save;
 Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart,
 And seven times dipped in the bitter wave
 Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it gave.

xxi.

"The vertue is, that nether steele nor stonc
 The stroke thereof from entrance may defend;
 Ne ever may be used by his fone;
 Ne forst his rightful owner to offend;
 Ne ever will it breake, ne ever bend;
 Wherefore *Morddure* it rightfully is hight.
 In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend
 The same to thee, against his Lord to fight;
 For sure yt would decee thy labor and thy might."

xxii.

"Foolish old man," said then the Pagan wroth,
 "That weenest words or charms may force with-
 stand:
 Soone shalt thou see, and then beleeve for troth,
 That I can carve with this enchanted brond
 His Lords owne flesh." Therewith out of his
 hond
 That vertuons steele he rudely snatch away;
 And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond:
 So ready dight, fierce battaile to assay,
 And match his brother proud in battailous aray.

xxiii.

By this, that straunger Knight in presence came,
 And goodly salved them; who nought againe
 Him answered, as courtesie became;
 But with sterne lookes, and stomachous disdaine,
 Gave signes of grudge and discontentment vaine:
 Then, turning to the Palmer, he gan spy
 Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne
 And deadly bew, an armed eorse did lye,
 In whose dead face he redd great magnanimity.

xxiv.

Sayd he then to the Palmer; "Reverend Syre,
 What great misfortune hath betidd this Knight?
 Or did his life her fatal date expyre,
 Or did he fall by treason, or by fight?
 However, sure I rew his pitteous plight."
 "Not one, nor other," said the Palmer grave,
 "Hath him befalne; but cloudes of deadly night
 Awhile his heavy eyelids cover'd have,
 And all his sences drowned in deepe sencelesse wave:

xxv.

"Which those his cruell foes, that stand hereby,
 Making advantage, to revenge their spight,
 Would him disarm and treaten shamefully;
 Unworthise usage of redoubted Knight!
 But you, faire Sir, whose honourable sight

xxxiii. 2. And goodly salved] Saluted them. UPTON.

xxxiii. 7. — demayne] Demeanour or appearance. TOOD.

Doth promise hope of helpe and timely grace,
Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,
And by your powre protect his feeble cace?
First prayse of knighthood is, fowle outrage to
deface."

XXVI.

"Palmer," said he, "no Knight so rude, I weene,
As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost:
Ne was there ever noble corage scene,
That in advauntage would his puissaunce host:
Honour is least, where oddes appeareth most.
May bee, that better reason will aswage
The rash revengers heat. Words, well dispost,
Have secrete powre t' appease inflamed rage:
If not, leave unto me thy Knights last patronage."

XXVII.

Tho, turning to those brethren, thus bespoke;
"Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might,
Itseemes, iust wronges to vengeance doe provoke,
To wreake your wrath on this dead-seeming
Knight,
Mote ought allay the storme of your despight,
And settle patience in so furious heat?
Not to debate the challenge of your right,
But for his carkas pardon I entreat,
Whom fortune hath already laid in lowest seat."

XXVIII.

To whom Cymochles said; "For what art thou,
That mak'st thyselfe his dayes-man, to prolong
The vengeance prest? Or who shall let me now
On this vile body from to wreak my wrong,
And make his carkas as the outcast dong?
Why should not that dead carrion satisfye
The guilt, which, if he lived had thus long,
His life for dew revenge should deare abyē?
The trespass still doth live, albee the person dye."

XXIX.

"Indeed," then said the Prince, "the evill donne
Dyes not, when breath the body first doth leave;
But from the grandsyre to the nephewes sonne
And all his seede the curse doth often cleave,
Till vengeance utterly the guilt bereave:
So streightly God doth iudge. But gentle Knight,
That doth against the dead his hand upreare,
His honour staines with rancour and despight,
And great disparagment makes to his former
might."

XXX.

Pyrochles gan reply the second tyme,
And to him said; "Now, felon, sure I read,
How that thou art partaker of his cryme:
Therefore by Termagaunt thou shalt be dead."
With that, his hand, more sad than lomp of lead,
Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure,
His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave his
head.
The faithfull steele such treason no'uld endure,
But, swarving from the marke, his Lordes life did
assure.

xxviii. 2. — his dayes-man,] *Arbitrator, or judge.*

TODD.

xxviii. 3. — prest?] *Ready at hand, or quick.* TODD.

xxviii. 4. — from to wreak my wrong,] *A Grecism,*

ἐπὶ τοῦ ἐκκαθάσαι, *from wreaking.* Who shall now hinder
me from revenging my wrongs on this vile body? UPRON.

xxx. 5. — more sad] *More heavy.* TODD.

XXXI.

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,
That horse and man it made to reele asyde:
Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his sell,
(For well of yore he learned had to ryde,
But full of anger fierly to him cryde;
"False traitour, miscreaut, thou broken hast
The law of armes, to strike foe undefide:
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt taste
Right sowre, and feele the law, the which thou hast
defast."

XXXII.

With that his halefull speare he fierely hent
Against the Pagans brest, and therewith thought
His cursed life out of her lodg have rent:
But, ere the point arrived where it ought,
That seven-fold shield, which he from Guyon
brought,
He cast between to ward the bitter stownd:
Through all those foldes the steelehead passage
wrought, [ground
And through his shoulder perst; wherwith to
He groveling fell, all gored in his gushing wound.

XXXIII.

Which when his brother saw, fraught with great
And wrath, he to him leaped furiously, [griefe
And fowly saide; "By Mahoune, cursed thiefe.
That direfull stroke thou dearly shalt aby."
Then, hurling up his harmefull blade on hy,
Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,
That from his saddle forced him to fly:
Els mote it needes downe to his manly brest
Have cleft his head in twaine, and life thence dis-
possesst.

XXXIV.

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse,
Wanting his sword, when he on foot should fight:
His single speare could doe him small redresse
Against two foes of so exceeding might,
The least of which was match for any Knight.
And now the other, whom he earst did daunt,
Had reard himselfe againe to cruel fight
Three times more furious and more puissaunt,
Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignorant.

XXXV.

So both attonce him charge on oither syde
With hideous strokes and importable powre,
That forced him his ground to traverse wyde,
And wisely watch to ward that deadly stowre:
For on his shield, as thicke as stormie showre,
Their strokes did raine; yet did he never quailo,
Ne backward shrinke; but as a stedfast towre,
Whom foe with double battry doth assaile,
Them on her hulwarke beares, and bids their
nought availe.

XXXVI.

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay;
Till that at last, when he advantage spyde,
His poynant speare he thrust with puissant sway
At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was wyde,
That through his thigh the mortall steele did
gryde:

xxxv. 2. — and importable powre,] *Power not to be
borne, as Mr. Upton observes; who adds, that importable
is used by Chaucer. TODD.*

xxxvi. 5. — did gryde:] *Cut or pierce.* TODD.

He, swarving with the force, within his flesh
Did breake the lance, and let the head ahyde :
Out of the wound the red blood flowed fresh,
That underneath his feet soone made a purple
plesh.

xxxvii.

Horribly then he gan to rage and rayle,
Cursing his gods, and himselfe damning deepe :
Als when his brother saw the red blood rayle
A downe so fast, and all his armour steepe,
For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe,
And said ; " Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond,
That twice hath spedd ; yet shall it not thee keepe
From the third brunt of this my fatal brond :
Lo, where the dreadfull Death behynd thy backe
doth stond ! "

xxxviii.

With that he strooke, and th' other strooke withall,
That nothing seemd mote beare so monstrous
might :
The one upon his covered shield did fall,
And glauncing downe would not his owner byte :
But th' other did upon his troncheon myte ;
Which hewing quite asunder, further way
It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,
The which dividing with impörtune sway,
It seizd in his right side, and there the dint did
stay.

xxxix.

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme flood,
Red as the rose, thence gushed grievously ;
That when the Paynym spyde the streaming
Gave him great hart and hope of victory. [blood,
On th' other side, in huge perplexity
The Prince now stood, having his weapon broke ;
Nought could he hurt, but still at warde did ly :
Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke
Cymochles twice, that wise him forst his foot
revoke.

xl.

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse,
Sir Guyons sword he lightly to him raught,
And said ; " Fayre sonne, great God thy right
hand blesse,
To use that sword so well as he it ought ! "
Glad was the Knight, and with fresh courage
When as againe he armed felt his hond : [fraught,
Then like a lyon, which had long time saught
His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond
Emongst the shepheard swaynes, then wexeth wood
and yond :

xli.

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes
On either side, that neither mayle could hold,
Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes :
Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told ;

xxxvii. 3. — the red blood rayle.] To rail is often
used by Spenser for to flow. Todd.

xxxvii. 5. For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe.] He
gan to cry aloud for very fierceness. Todd.

xxxviii. 7. — hacqueton] A jacket without sleeves,
according to the Glossary in Urry's Chaucer; more pro-
perly, the stuffed jacket worn under the armour. Todd.

xl. 2. — raught,] Reached, from reach; as taught
from teach. Upton.

xl. 4. — so well as he it ought!] That is, So well
as the owner of it could have used it. Church.

xl. 9. — wood and yond.] Fierce and furious. Todd.

Eft to Cymochles twice so many fold ;
Then, backe againe turning his busie hond,
Them both atonce compeld with courage bold
To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond ;
And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not
both withstand.

xlii.

As salvage bull, whom two fierce mastives bayt,
When rancour doth with rage him once engore,
Forgets with wary warde them to awayt,
But with his dreadfull hornes them drives afore,
Or flings aloft, or treades downe in the flore,
Breathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine,
That all the forest quakes to hear him rore :
So rag'd Prince Arthur twixt his foemen twaine,
That neither could his mightie puissance sustaine.

xliii.

But ever at Pyrochles when he smitt,
(Who Guyons shield cast ever him before,
Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtract was writt,)
His hand relented and the stroke forbore,
Which oft the Paynim sav'd from deadly stowre :
But him henceforth the same can save no more ;
For now arrived is his fatal howre,
That no'te avoyded he by earthly skill or powre.

xliv.

For when Cymochles saw the fowle reproch,
Which them appeached ; prickt with guiltie shame
And inward grieffe, he fiercely gan approach,
Resolv'd to put away that loathly blame,
Or dye with honour and desert of fame ;
And on the haubergh stroke the Prince so sore,
That quite parted all the linked frame,
And pierced to the skin, but bit no more ; [aftre.
Yet made him twice to reele, that never moov'd

xlv.

Whereat renfierst with wrath and sharp regret,
He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade,
That it empierst the Pagans burganet ;
And, cleaving the hard steele, did deepe invade
Into his head, and cruell passage made
Quite through his brayne : He, tumbling downe
on ground, [shade
Breath'd out his ghost, which, to th' infernall
Fast flying, there eternall torment found
For all the sinnes wherewith his lewd life did abound.

xlvi.

Which when his german saw, the stony feare
Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd ;
Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare :
But, as a man whom hellish feendes have frayd,
Long trembling still he stodee ; at last thus sayd ;
" Trayteur, what hast thou doen ! How ever may
Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd

xli. 5. Eft] Afterwards. Church.

xlii. 2. — engore,] From en and gore, to pierce, to
prick, to make bloody or gory. Upton.

xliii. 2. — appeached,] Censured or impeached.
Todd.

xliv. 6. — haubergh] A coat of mail, without sleeves,
made of plate or of chain-mail. Todd.

xlv. 1. — renfierst] Reinforced, again made fierce
and bold. Upton.

xlv. 3. — burganet,] Fr. Bourguignote, a Spanish
murrion, or steel headpiece. Church.

xlvi. 1. — his german] His brother. Todd.

Against that Knight! Harrow and well away!
After so wicked deede why liv'st thou longer day!"

XLVII.

With that all desperate, as loathing light,
And with revenge desyring soone to dye,
Assembling all his force and utmost might,
With his owne sword he fierce at him did flye,
And strooke, and foyn'd, and lasht outrageously,
Withouten reason or regard. Well knew
The Prince, with patience and sufferance sly,
So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew:
Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that battell gan
renew.

XLVIII.

As when a windy tempest bloweth hie,
That nothing may withstand his stormy stowre,
The cloudes, as things affrayd, before him flye;
But, all so soone as his outrageous powre
Is layd, they fiercely then begin to shoure;
And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,
Now all attonce their malice forth do poure:
So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in fight,
And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle might.

XLIX.

At last whenas the Sarazin perceiv'd
How that straunge sword refusd to serve his
neede,
But, when he stroke most strong, the dint deceiv'd;
He flong it from him; and, devoyd of dreed,
Upon him lightly leaping without heed
Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,
Thinking to overthrowe and downe him tred:
But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast,
And through his nimble sleight did under him down
cast.

L.

Nought booted it the Paynim then to strive;
For as a hittur in the eagles clawe,
That may not hope by flight to scape alive,
Still waytes for death with dread and trembling
aw;
So he, now subiect to the victours law,
Did not once move, nor upward cast his eye,
For vile disdain and rancour, which did gnaw
His hart in twaine with sad melancholy;
As one that loathed life, and yet despysd to dye.

LI.

But, full of princely bounty and great mind,
The Conqueror nought cared him to slay;
But, casting wronges and all revenge behind,
More glory thought to give life then decay,
And sayd; "Paynim, this is thy dismall day;
Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreance,

XLVII. 4. *With his owne sword*] With the Prince's own sword Morddure. CHURCH.

XLVII. 9. *Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that battelle gan renew.*] Then, when this Paynim grew breathlesse, that Prince renewed battle. UPTON.

XLIX. 2. — *that straunge sword*] That is, the sword that was not his own. CHURCH.

XLIX. 3. *But, when he stroke most strong, the dint deceived*] The impression made by the sword, or force with which he stroke, deceived him; for it did not wound its true master. UPTON.

And my trew liegeman yield thyselfe for ay,
Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,
And all thy wronges will wipe out of my sove-
naunce."

LII.

"Foole," sayd the Pagan, "I thy gift defye;
But use thy fortune, as it doth befall;
And say, that I not overcome doe dye,
But in despite of life for death do call."
Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet withall,
That he so wilfully refused grace;
Yet, sith his fate so cruelly did fall,
His shining helmet he gan soone unlace,
And left his headlesse body bleeding all the place.

LIII.

By this, Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt,
Life having maastered her senceless foe;
And looking up, whenas his shield he lakt
And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe:
But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe
Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad he grew,
And saide; "Deare Sir, whom wandring to
fro
I long have lakt, I ioy thy face to vew!
Firme is thy faith, whom daunger never fro me
drew.

LIV.

"But read what wicked hand hath robbed mee
Of my good sword and shield?" The Palmer
glad
With so fresh hew uprissing him to see,
Him answered; "Fayre sonne, be no whit sad
For want of weapons; they shall soone be had."
So gan he to discourse the whole debate,
Which that straunge Knight for him sustained
had,
And those two Sarazins confounded late,
Whose carcases on ground were horribly prostrate.

LV.

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens trew,
His hart with great affection was embayd,
And to the Prince, with bowing reverence dew,
As to the patrone of his life, thus sayd:
"My Lord, my Liege, by whose most gracious ayd
I live this day, and see my foes subdewd,
What may suffice to be for meede repayd
Of so great graces as ye have me shewd,
But to be ever bound"—

LVI.

To whom the Infant thus; "Fayre Sir, what need
Good turnes be counted, as a servile bond,
To bind their doers to receive their meed?
Are not all Knightes by oath bound to withstond
Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond?
Sufise, that I have done my dew in place."
So goodly purpose they together fond
Of kinnesse and of courteous agrace;
The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled apace.

LIII. 4. — *he wexed wondrous woe*] That is, very sad. Anglo-Sax. *Waa, mastus*. UPTON.

LIV. 6. — *debate*] *Fight*. TODD.

LV. 2. — *embayd*] *Delighted*. TODD.

LVI. 1. — *the Infant*] That is, the Prince. TODD.

LVI. 3. — *agrace*] *Favour, kindness*. Ital. *aggratiare*. UPTON.

CANTO IX.

The House of Temperance, in which
Doth sober Alma dwell,
Besieged of many foes, whom strange-
er Knights to flight compell.

I.

Of all Gods workes, which doe this worlde adorne,
There is no one more faire and excellent
Then is mans body, both for powre and forme,
Whiles it is kept in sober government ;
But none then it more fowle and indecent,
Distempred through misrule and passions hacc ;
It grows a monster, and incontinent
Doth lose his dignity and native grace :
Behold, who list, both one and other in this place.

II.

After the Paynim brethern conquer'd were,
The Briton Prince recov'ring his stolnc sword,
And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere
Forth passed on their way in fayre accord,
Till him the Prince with gentle courtd did bord ;
" Sir Knight, mote I of you this court'sy read,
To weet why on your shield, so goodly scord,
Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head ?
Full lively is the semblaunt, though the substance
dead."

III.

Fayre Sir," said he, " if in that picture dead
Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew ;
What mote ye weene, if the trew lively-head
Of that most glorious visage ye did vew !
But yf the beauty of her mind ye knew,
That is, her bounty, and imperiall powre,
Thousand times fairer then her mortall hew,
O ! how great wonder would your thoughts
devoure,
And infinite desire into your spirite poure !

IV.

' She is the mighty Queene of Faëry,
Whose faire retraits I in my shield doe beare ;
Shee is the floure of grace and chastity,
Throughout the world renowned far and neare,
My Life, my Liege, my Sovereaine, my Deare,
Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,
And with her light the earth enlumines cleare ;
Far reach her mercies, and her praises farre,
As well in state of peace, as puissaunce in warre."

V.

" Thrise happy man," said then the Briton Knight,
" Whom gracious lott and thy great valiaunce
Have made thee soldier of that Princesse bright,
Which with her bounty and glad countenaunce
Doth blesse her servants, and them high
advantage !
How may strange Knight hope ever to aspire,
By faithfull service and meete amenaunce,
Unto such blisse ? sufficient were that hire
For losse of thousand lives, to die at her desire."

VI.

Said Gnyon, " Noble Lord, what meed so great,
Or grace of earthly Prince so souveraine,

1 9. — in this place.] That is, in the opposite char-
acters of Prince Arthur and the Two Brethren. CHURCH.
iv. 2. — retraits] Picture, portrait. Ital. ritratto.
MURCH.

But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat
Ye well may hope, and easely attaine ?
But were your will her sold to entertaine,
And numbred be mongst Knights of Maydenhed,
Great guerdon, well I wote, should you remaine,
And in her favor high hee reckoned,
As Arthegall and Sophy now heene honored."

VII.

" Certes," then said the Prince, " I God avow,
That sith I armes and knighthood first did plight,
My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now,
To serve that Queene withal my powre and might.
Now hath the sunne with his lamp-burning light
Walkt round about the world, and I no lesse,
Sith of that Goddesse I have sought the sight,
Yet no where can her find : such happinesse
Heven doth to me envy and fortune favourlesse."

VIII.

" Fortune, the foe of famous chevisaunce,
Seldom," said Guyon, " yields to vertue aide,
But in her way throwes mischief and mischaunce,
Whereby her course is stopt and passage staid.
But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid,
But constant keepe the way in which ye stand ;
Which were it not that I am els delaid
With hard adventure, which I have in hand,
I labour would to guide you through al Fary land."

IX.

" Gramercy Sir," said he ; " but mote I weete
What strange adventure doe ye now pursew ?
Perhaps my succour or advizement meete
Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew."
Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew
Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles ;
Which to avenge, the Palmer him forth drew
From Faery Court. So talked they, the whiles
They wasted had much way, and measurd many
miles.

X.

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in haste
His weary wagon to the westerne vale,
Whenas they spide a goodly Castle, plaste
Foreby a river in a pleasaunt dale ;
Which choosing for that evenings hospitale,
They thither marcht : but when they came in
And from their sweaty coursers did avale, [sight,
They found the gates fast barred long cre night,
And every loup fast lockt, as fearing foes despight.

XI.

Which when they saw, they weened fowle reproch
Was to them doen, their entranche to forstall ;
Till that the Squire gan nigher to approach,
And wind his horne under the Castle wall,
That with the noise it shooke as it would fall.
Eftsoones forth looked from the highest spire
The Watch, and lowd unto the Knights did call,
To weete what they so rudely did require :
Who gently answered, They entranche did desire."

vi. 5. But were your will her sold to entertaine.] To re-
ceive her pay. Fr. solde, a soldier's pay. CHURCH.

viii. 1. — of famous chevisaunce.] Chevisaunce is
enterprise, from the Fr. chevisaunce. TODD.

x. 5. — hospitale.] Inn. Lat. hospitium. CHURCH.

x. 7. — avale.] Come down, dismount. Fr. avaller.
TODD.

xii.
 "Fly fly, good Knights," said he, "fly fast away,
 If that your lives ye love, as meete ye should ;
 Fly fast, and save yourselves from neare decay ;
 Here may ye not have entraunce, though we
 would :
 We would and would againe, if that we could ;
 But thousand enemies about us rave,
 And with long siege us in this Castle holdt :
 Seven yeares this wize they us besieged have,
 And many good Knights slaine that have us sought
 to save."

xiii.
 Thus as he spoke, loe ! with outrageous cry
 A thousand Villains round about them swarnd
 Out of the rockes and eaves adioyning nye ;
 Vile captiue wretches, ragged, rude, deformed,
 All threatening death, all in straunge manner
 armd ;
 Some with unweldy clubs, some with long speares,
 Some rusty knives, some staves in fier warnd :
 Sterne was their looke ; like wild amazed steares,
 Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe upstanding
 heares.

xiv.
 Fiersly at first those Knights they did assayle,
 And drove them to recoile : but, when againe
 They gave fresh charge, their forces gan to fayle,
 Unhable their encounter to sustaine ;
 For with such puissance and impetuous maine
 Those Champions broke on them, that forst them
 fly,
 Like scattered sheepe, whenas the shepherds
 A lion and a tigre doth espye [swaine
 With greedy paece forth rushing from the forest nye.

xv.
 A while they fled, but soone retournd againe
 With greater fury then before was found ;
 And evermore their cruell Capitaine [round,
 Sought with his raskall routs t'enclose them
 And overronne to tread them to the grownd :
 But soone the Knights with their bright-burning
 blades [fownd,
 Broke their rude tronpes, and orders did con-
 felling and slashing at their idle shades ;
 For though they bodies seem, yet substance from
 them fades.

xvi.
 As when a swarme of gnats at eventide
 Out of the fennes of Allan doe arise,
 Their murmuring small trompetts sownden wide,
 Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,
 That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies ;
 Ne man nor beast may rest or take repast
 Fer their sharpe wounds and noyons iniuries,
 Till the fierce northerne wind with blustering blast
 Doth blow them quite away, and in the ocean cast.

xvii.
 Thus when they had that troublous rout disperst,
 Unto the Castle gate they come againe,
 And entraunce crav'd, which was denied erst.
 Now when report of that their perloous paine,
 And combrous confict which they did sustaine,

xv. 4. — his raskall routs] This expression appears
 to have been common for a mob of the lowest kind.
 Todd.

Came to the Ladies eare which there did dwell,
 Shee forth issued with a goodly traine
 Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well,
 And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

xviii.
 Alma she called was ; a Virgin bright,
 That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage ;
 Yet was shee woo'd of many a gentle Knight,
 And many a Lord of noble parentage,
 That sought with her to lincke in marriage :
 For shee was faire, as faire mote ever bee,
 And in the flowre now of her freshest age ;
 Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,
 That even heven reioyceed her sweete face to see.

xix.
 In robe of lilly white shee was arayd,
 That from her shoulder to her heele downe raught ;
 The traine whereof loose far behind her strayd,
 Branched with gold and perle most richly
 wrought,
 And borne of two faire damsels which were taught
 That service well : Her yellow golden heare
 Was trimly woven and in tresses wrought,
 Ne other tye shee on her head did weare,
 But crowned with a garland of sweete rosiers.

xx.
 Goodly shee entertaind those noble Knights,
 And brought them up into her Castle hall ;
 Where gentle court and graecious delight
 Shee to them made, with mildnesse virginall,
 Shewing herselfe both wise and liberall.
 There when they rested had a season dew,
 They her besought of favour speciall
 Of that faire Castle to afford them vew :
 Shee granted ; and, them leading forth, the same
 did shew.

xxi.
 First shee them led up to the Castle wall,
 That was so high as foe might not it elime,
 And all so faire and sensible withall ;
 Not built of brieke, ne yet of stone and lime,
 But of thing like to that Ægyptian slime,
 Whereof King Nine whilome built Babel towre
 But O great pitty, that no lenger time
 So goodly workmanship should not endure !
 Soone it must turne to earth: No earthly thing is sure.

xxii.
 The frame thereof seemd partly circulare,
 And part triangulare ; O worke divine !
 Those two the first and last proportions are ;
 The one imperfect, mortall, feminine ;
 Th' other immortal, perfect, masculine ;
 And twixt them both a quadrate was the base,
 Proportiond equally by seven and nine ;
 Nine was the circle sett in heavens place :
 All which compacted made a goodly diapase.

xxiii.
 Therein two gates were placed seemly well :
 The one before, by which all in did pas,
 Did th' other far in workmanship excell ;
 For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,
 But of more worthy substance fram'd it was :

xviii. 1. Alma] That is, *The Mind*. CHURCH.
 xix. 9. — rosiers.] *The rose-tree*. CHURCH.

Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,
That, when it locked, none might thorough pass,
And, when it opened, no man might it close ;
Still opened to their friends, and closed to their foes.

xxiv.

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely wrought,
Stone more of valew, and more smooth and fine,
Then iett or marble far from Ireland brought :
Over the which was cast a wandring vine,
Enchaced with a wanton yvie twine :
And over it a fayre portcullis hong,
Which to the gate directly did incline
With comely compasse and compacture strong,
Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding long.

xxv.

Within the barbican a Porter sate,
Day and night duely keeping watch and ward ;
Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the gate,
But in good order, and with dew regard ;
Utters of secrets he from thence debar,
Bablers of folly, and blazers of cryme :
His larum-bell might lowd and wyde be hard
When cause requyrd, but never out of time ;
Early and late it rong, at evening and at prime.

xxvi.

And rownd about the porch on every syde
Twise sixteene Warders satt, all armed bright
In glistring steele, and strongly fortifyde :
Tall yeomen seemed they and of great might,
And were enraunged ready still for fight.
By them as Alma passed with her guesstes,
They did obeysaunce, as beseeemed right,
And then againe returned to their restes :
The Porter eke to her did lout with humble gistes.

xxvii.

Thence she them brought into a stately hall,
Wherein were many tables fayre dispreed,
And ready dight with drapets festiuall,
Against the viaundes should be ministred.
At th' upper end there sate, yclad in red
Downe to the ground, a comely personage,
That in his hand a white rod menaged ;
He Steward was, light Diet ; rype of age,
And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

xxviii.

And through the hall there walked to and fro
A iolly yeoman, Marshall of the same,
Whose name was Appetite ; he did bestow
Both guesstes and meate, whenever in they came,
And knew them how to order without blame,
As him the Steward badd. They both attone
Did dewty to their Lady, as became ;
Who, passing by, forth ledd her guesstes anone
Into the kitchen rowme, ne spard for nicenesse none.

xxix.

It was a vault ybuilt for great dispence,
With many raunges reard along the wall,

xxv. 1. — barbican] *The watch-tower*, generally meaning a strong and lofty wall with turrets, intended for the defence of the gate and drawbridge of the old castles. *Toon*.

xxvii. 3. — drapets] *Linen cloths*. Ital. *drappo*. *Upton*.

xxix. 1. — dispence.] *Consumption*. He uses it for *expence*, F. Q. ii. xii. 42. *Church*.

And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence
The smoke forth threwe : And in the midst of all
There placed was a caudron wide and tall
Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott,
More whott then Aetm', or flaming Mongiball :
For day and night it brent, ne ceased not,
So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

xxx.

But to delay the heat, least by mischaunce
It might breake out and set the whole on fyre,
There added was by goodly ordinaunce
An huge great payre of bellows, which did styre
Continually, and cooling breath inspyre.
About the caudron many Cookes accoyld
With hookes and laddes, as need did requyre ;
The whyles the viaundes in the vessell boyl'd,
They did about their businesse sweat, and sorely toyld.

xxxi.

The maister Cooke was cald Concoction ;
A carefull man, and full of comely gyuse :
The kitchin Clerke, that hight Digestion,
Did order all th' achates in seemely wise,
And set them forth, as well he could devise.
The rest had severall offices assynd ;
Some to remove the scum as it did rise ;
Others to beare the same away did mynd ;
And others it to use according to his kynd.

xxxii.

But all the liquour, which was fowle and waste,
Not good nor serviceable elles for ought,
They in another great rownd vessell plaste,
Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought,
And all the rest, that noyous was and nought,
By secret wayes, that none might it espy,
Was close convaidd, and to the backgate brought,
That cleped was Port Esquiline, whereby
It was avoided quite, and throwne out privly.

xxxiii.

Which goodly order and great workmans skill
Whenas those Knightes beheld, with rare delight
And gazing wonder they their mindes did fill ;
For never had they seene so straunge a sight.
Thence backe againe faire Alma led them right,
And soone into a goodly parlour brought,
That was with royall arras richly dight,
In which was nothing pourtrahed nor wrought ;
Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but easie to be thought :

xxxiv.

And in the midst thereof upon the floure
A lovely bevy of faire Ladies sate,
Courtred of many a iolly paramoure,
The which them did in modest wise amate,
And each one sought his Lady to agrate :

xxix. 7. *More whott then Aetm' or flaming Mongiball:] Aetna*, or, as it is likewise called, *Montgibel*. Or is not a disjunctive particle. *Upton*.

xxx. 1. — delay] *Temper*. Wine is said to be *delayed*, when it is tempered with water. *Church*.

xxx. 5. — inspyre.] *Blow*, or *breathe*. *Toon*.

xxx. 6. — accoyld] *Stood around*, coiled up together, gathered together. Ital. *accogliere*, from *ad* and *colligere*. *Upton*.

xxxi. 4. *Did order all th' achates.] Provisions*, old French, *achet*, a thing bought. *Toon*.

xxxiv. 2. *A lovely bevy] Company*. *Toon*.

And eke amongst them litle Cupid playd
His wanton sportes, being returned late
From his fierce warres, and having from him layd
His cruell bow, wherewith he thousands hath dis-
mayd.

xxxv.

Diverse delights they fownd themselves to please ;
Some song in sweet consórt ; some laught for ioy ;
Some plaid with strawes ; some ydly satt at ease ;
But other some could not abide to toy,
All pleaunce was to them griefe and annoy :
This frownd ; that faund ; the third for shame did
Another seemed envious, or coy ; [blush ;
Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush :
But at these straungers presence every one did hush.

xxxvi.

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place,
They all attonce out of their seates arose,
And to her homage made with humble grace :
Whom when the Knights beheld, they gan dispose
Themselves to court, and each a damzell chose :
The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light,
That was right faire and fresh as morning rose,
But somewhat sad and solemne eke in sight,
As if some pensive thought constrained her gentle
spright.

xxxvii.

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold
Was fretted all about, she was arayd ;
And in her hand a poplar branch did hold :
To whom the Prince in courteous maner sayd ;
" Gentle Madáme, why beene ye thus dismayd,
And your faire beautie doe with sadnes spill ?
Lives any that you hath thus ill apayd ?
Or doen you love, or doen you lack your will ?
Whatever bee the cause, it sure besemes you ill."

xxxviii.

" Fayre Sir," said she, halfe in disdainful wise,
" How is it that this word in me ye blame,
And in yourselfe doe not the same advise ?
Him ill besemes anothers fault to name,
That may unwares be blotted with the same :
Pensive I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,
Through great desire of glory and of fame ;
Ne ought I weene are ye therein behynd,
That have twelve monthes sought One, yet no where
can Her find."

xxxix.

The Prince was inly moved at her speach,
Well weeting trew what she had rashly told ;
Yet with faire semblaunt sought to hyde the
breach,
Which change of colour did perforce unfold,
Now seeming flaming whott, now stony cold :
Tho, turning soft aside, he did inquire
What might she was that poplar branch did hold :
It answered was, her name was Prays-desire,
That by well doing sought to honour to aspyre.

xl.

The whiles the Faery Knight did entertaine
Another Damsell of that gentle crew,
That was right fayre and modest of demayne,
But that too oft she chaung'd her native hew :

xxxix. 2. — rashly] *At a venture*, that is, without
knowing that she spake true. CHURCH.

Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment blew,
Close rownd about her tuckt with many a plight :
Upon her fist the bird, which shoneth vew
And keeps in covertes close from living wight,
Did sitt, as yet ashamd how rude Pan did her dight.

xli.

So long as Guyon with her communed,
Unto the grownd she cast her modest eye,
And ever anone with rosy red
The bashfull blood her snowy cheekes did dye,
That her became, as polisht yvory
Which cunning craftsman hand hath overlaid
With fayre vermilion or pure castory.
Great wonder had the Knight to see the Mayd
So straungely passioned, and to her gently said ;

xlii.

" Fayre Damzell, seemeth by your troubled cheare,
That either me too bold ye weene, this wise
You to molest, or other ill to feare
That in the secret of your hart close lyes,
From whence it doth, as cloud from sea, aryse :
If it be I, of pardon I you pray ;
But, if ought else that I mote not devyse,
I will, if please you it discure, assay
To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may."

xliii.

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame
Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely face
The flashing blood with blushing did inflame,
And the strong passion mard her modest grace,
That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace ;
Till Alma him bespake ; " Why wonder yee,
Faire Sir, at that which ye so much embrace ?
She is the fountaine of your modestee ;
You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes itselfe is shcc."

xliv.

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,
And turnd his face away ; but she the same
Dissembled faire, and faynd to oversee.
Thus they awhile with court and goodly game
Themselves did solace each one with his Dame,
Till that great Lady thence away them sought
To vew her Castles other wondrous frame :
Up to a stately turret she them brought,
Ascending by ten steps of alabaster wrought.

xlv.

That turrets frame most admirable was,
Like highest heaven compassed around,
And lifted high above this earthly masse,
Which it surweyd, as hills doen lower ground :
But not on ground mote like to this be found ;
Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome built
In Thebes, which Alexander did confound ;
Nor that proud towre of Troy, though richly guilt,
From which young Hectors blood by cruell Greekes
was spilt.

xlvi.

The rooffe hereof was arched over head,
And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily ;
Two goodly beacons, set in watches stead,
Therein gave light, and flamd continually :

xli. 9. — passioned,] *Disordered*. CHURCH.
xlvi. 3. — set in watches stead,] In the stead of
place of watches. UPRON.

For they of living fire most subtilly
Were made, and set in silver sockets bright,
Cover'd with lids deviz'd of substance sly,
That readily they shnt and open might.
O, who can tell the prayes of that Makers might!

XLVII.

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell, [powre,
This parts great workmanship and wondrous
That all this other worldes worke doth excell,
And likest is unto that heavenly towre
That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre.
Therein were divers rowmes, and divers stages;
But three the chiefeest and of greatest powre,
In which there dwelt three honorable Sages,
The wisest men, I weene, that lived in their ages.

XLVIII.

Not he, whom Greece, the nurse of all good arts,
By Phœbus doome the wisest thought alive,
Might be compar'd to these by many parts:
Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did survive
Three ages, such as mortall men contrive,
By whose advise old Priams cittie fell,
With these in praise of pollicies mote strive.
These three in these three rowmes did sondry
dwell,
And counselled faire Alma how to governe well.

XLIX.

The First of them could things to come foresee;
The Next could of things present best advise;
The Third things past could keep in remembrance:
So that no time nor reason could arise,
But that the same could one of these comprize.
Forthy the First did in the forepart sit,
That nought mote hinder his quicke preindize;
He had a sharpe foresight and working wit
That never idle was, ne once would rest a whit.

L.

His chamber was dispaired all within
With sondry colours, in the which were writ
Infinite shapes of things dispersed thin;
Some such as in the world were never yit,
Ne can devized be of mortall wit;
Some daily scene and known by their names,
Such as in idle fantasies do flit;
Infernall hags, centaurs, feendes, hippodames,
Apes, lyons, aegles, owles, fooles, lovers, children,
dames.

LI.

And all the chamber filled was with flies
Which buzzed all about, and made such sound
That they encombred all mens eares and eyes;
Like many swarmes of bees assembled round,
After their hives with honny do abound.
All those were idle Thoughtes and Fantasies,
Devioces, Dreames, Opinions unsound,
Shewes, Visions, Sooth-sayes, and Prophecies;
And all that fained is, as Leasings, Tales, and Lies.

XLVI. 7. *Covered with lids deviz'd of substance sly.* *Sty*
is here used in the sense of *thin, fine*. TODD.

XLVIII. 5. ——— *contrive.* Spenser abounds with Latin-
isms, which makes me think that *contrive* may be from
conterere, to wear out. JORTIN.

XLIX. 1. *The First of them &c.*] The allegorical persons
here spoken of, are Imagination, Judgement, Memory.

CHURCH.
L. 8. ——— *hippodames,*] *Sea-horses.* TODD.

LII.

Emongst them all sate he which wonned there,
That hight Phantastes by his nature trew;
A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote appere,
Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew,
That him full of melâcholy did shew;
Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring eyes,
That mad or foolish seemd: one by his vew
Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed skyes,
When oblique Saturne sate in th' house of agonyes.

LIII.

Whom Alma having shewed to her Guestes,
Thence brought them to the second rowme, whose
Were painted faire with memorable gestic [wals
Of famons wisards; and with picturals
Of magistrates, of courts, of tribunals,
Of common wealthes, of states, of pollicy,
Of lawes, of indgements, and of décrets, all,
All artes, all science, all philosophy,
And all that in the world was ay thought wittily.

LIV.

Of those that rowme was full; and them among
There sate a Man of ripe and perfect age,
Who did them meditate all his life long,
That through continual practise and usage [sage:
He now was growne right wise and wondrous
Great plesure had those straunger Knights to
His goodly reason and grave personage, [see
That his disciples both desyrd to bee:
But Alma thence them led to th' hindmost rowme
of three.

LV.

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,
And therefore was removed far behind,
Yet were the wals, that did the same uphold,
Right firme and strong, though somewhat they
declind;
And therein sat an Old old Man, halfe blind,
And all decrepit in his feeble corse,
Yet lively vigour rested in his mind,
And recompens them with a better score:
Weake body well is chang'd for minds redoubled
force.

LVI.

This Man of infinite remembrance was,
And things foregone through many ages held,
Which he recorded still as they did pas,
Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,
As all things els the which this world doth wold;
But laid them up in his immortal scrine,
Where they for ever incorrupt dweld:
The warres he well remembered of king Nine,
Of old Assaracus, and Inachus divine.

LVII.

The yeares of Nestor nothing were to his,
Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liv'd;
For he remembered both their infancis:
Ne wonder then if that he were depriv'd
Of rative strength now that he them surviv'd.
His chamber all was hangd about with rolls
And old recôrds from auncient times deriv'd,
Some made in books, some in long parchment
scrolls,
That were of all worm-eaten and full of canker holes.

LII. 2. ——— *Phantastes*] *The Imagination.* CHURCH.

LIV. 2. *There sate a Man*] *The Judgement.* CHURCH.

LV. 8. ——— *score:*] *Exchange.* CHURCH.

LVIII.

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett,
Tossing and turning them withouten eud ;
But for he was unable them to fectt,
A litle Boy did on him still attend
To reach, whenever he for ought did send ;
And oft when things were lost, or laid amis,
That Boy them sought and unto him did lend :
Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is ;
And that Old Man Eumnestes, by their proprietis.

LIX.

The Knightes there entring did him reverence dew,
And wondred at his endless exercise.
Then as they gan his library to vew,
And antique registers for to avise,
There chanced to the Princes hand to rize
An auncient booke, hight *Briton Moniments*,
That of this lands first conquest did devise,
And old division into regiments,
Till it reduced was to one mans governements.

LX.

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke,
That hight *Antiquitee of Faery Lond* :
In which whenas he greedily did looke,
Th' offspring of Elves and Faryes there he fond,
As it delivered was from hond to hond :
Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire
Their Countreys Auncestry to understand,
Crav'd leave of Alma and that aged Sire
To read those bookes ; who gladly granted their
desire.

CANTO X.

A Chronicle of Briton Kings,
From Brute to Uthers rayne ;
And Rolls of Elfin Emperours,
Till time of Gloriane.

I.

Who now shall give unto me words and sound
Equall unto this haughty enterprise ?
Or who shall lend me wings, with which from
My lowly verse may loftily arise, [ground
And lift itselfe unto the highest skyes ?
More ample spirit than hetherto was wount
Here needs me, whiles the famous Auncestries
Of my most dreaded Sovereaigne I recount,
By which all earthly Princes she doth far surmount.

II.

Ne under sunne that shines so wide and faire,
Whence all that lives does borrow life and light,
Lives ought that to her Linage may compare ;

LVIII. 3. But for] *But because.* CHURCH.

LVIII. 8. Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is ;

And that Old Man Eumnestes, by their proprietis.]
These two are known "by their properties." The old
man, being of infinite remembrance, was hence called
Eumnestes, from *eu bene* and *μηνησις*, *memoria*, *μνησθηναι*,
meminisse. And the boy, that attended on this old man
was called *Anamnestes*, from *αναμνησθαι* or *αναμνησθαι*
remniscor, *recordor*. UPRON.

LIX. 4. ——— advise.] *To look upon.* CHURCH.

LIX. 6. ——— Briton Moniments,] That is, Britons'
moniments, or, The antiquities of Britain. CHURCH.

LIX. 8. And old division into regiments,] That is, inde-
pendent governments. UPRON.

Which though from earth it be derived right,
Yet doth itselfe stretch forth to heavens high,
And all the world with wonder overspred ;
A labor huge, exceeding far my might !
How shall fraile pen, with fear disparaged,
Conceive such soveraine glory and great bounty-
had !

III.

Argument worthy of Maonian quill ;
Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote,
Whereon the ruines of great Ossa hill,
And triumphes of Phlegrean Iove, he wrote,
That all the gods admird his lofty note.
But, if some relish of that heavenly lay
His learned daughters would to me report
To decke my song withall, I would assay
Thy name, O soveraine Queene, to blazon far
away.

IV.

Thy name, O soveraine Queene, thy realme, and
race,
From this renowned Prince derived arre,
Who mightily upheld that royall mace
Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended farre
From mighty kings and conquerours in warre,
Thy fathers and greatgrandfathers of old,
Whose noble deeds above the northern starr
Immortal Fame for ever hath enroll ;
As in that Old Mans booke they were in order
told.

V.

The Land which warlike Britons now possesse,
And therein have their mighty empire raysd,
In antique times was salvage wilderness,
Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprov'd, unpraysd ;
Ne was it island then, ne was it payd
Amid the ocean waves, ne was it sought
Of merchants farre for profits therein praysd ;
But was all desolate, and of some thought
By sea to have bene from the Celticke mayn-land
brought.

VI.

Ne did it then deserve a name to have,
Till that the venturous mariner that way
Learning his ship from those white rocks to save,
Which all along the southerne sea-coast lay
Threatuing unhcedy wrecke and rash decay,
For safety that same his sea-marke made,
And nam'd it ALBJON : But later day,
Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,
Gan more the same frequent, and further to invade

VII.

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt
Of hideous giaunts, and halfe-beasty men,
That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt ;
But wild like beastes lurking in loathsome den,
And flying fast as roebucke through the fen,
All naked without shame or care of cold,
By hunting and by spoiling livened ;
Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold,
That sonnes of men amazd their sternesse to behold.

III. 2. ——— rote,] *A musical instrument.* TODD.

V. 5. ——— payd] *Poised.* Fr. *peser.* *To poise* is thus
used in Scotland. TODD.

VI. 7. ——— *Albion*] So called from the *white rocks*.
CHURCH.

viii.

But whence they sprong, or how they were begott,
 'Tis breath is to assure ; uneach to wene
 That monstrous error which doth some assott,
 That Dioclesians fifty daughters shene
 Into this Land by chauce have driven bene ;
 Where, companing with feends and filthy sprights
 Through vaine illusion of their lust unclenc,
 They brought forth geaunts, and such dreadful
 wights
 As far exceeded men in their immeasurd mights.

ix.

They held this Land, and with their filthinesse
 Polluted this same gentle soyle long time ;
 That their owne mother loathd their beastlinesse,
 And gan abhorre her broods unkindly crime,
 All were they borne of her owne native slime :
 Until that Brutus, anciently deriv'd
 From roiall stocke of old Assaracs line,
 Driven by fatal error here arriv'd,
 And them of their unjust possession depriv'd.

x.

But ere he had established his throne,
 And spred his empire to the utmost shore,
 He fought great batteils with his salvage fone ;
 In which he them defeated evermore,
 And many giaunts left on groning flore :
 That well can wites yet unto this day
 The westerne Hogh, besprinckled with the gore
 Of mighty Goëmot, whome in stout fray
 Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

xi.

And eke that ample pitt, yet far renownd
 For the large leape which Debon did compell
 Conlin to make, being eight lugs of grownd,
 Into the which retourning backe he fell :
 But those three monstrous stones doe most excell,
 Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion,
 Whose father Hercules in Fraunce did quell,
 Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention,
 At bold Canutus ; but of him was slaine anon.

xii.

In meed of these great conquests by them gott,
 Corineus had that province utmost west
 To him assigned for his worthy lott,
 Which of his name and memorable gest
 He called Cornwaile, yet so called best :
 And Debons shayre was, that is Devonshyre :
 But Canuto had his portion from the rest,
 The which he calld Cantium, for his hyre ;
 Now Cantium, which Kent we comenly inqyre.

xiii.

Thus Brute this Realme unto his rule subdewd,
 And raigned long in great felicity,
 Lov'd of his freends, and of his foes eschewd :
 He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,

viii. 3. — assott,] *Beguile, bewitch, or deceive*; a word frequent in romance. Todd.

ix. 8. *Driven by fatal error*] That is, by *wandering* (Lat. *error*) as the *fates* directed. Church.

x. 7. *The westerne Hogh*] That is, as Camden calls it, the *Haw*. Church.

xi. 3. — lugs] A *lug* is a perch or rod with which land is measured, containing sixteen feet and an half. Church.

Borne of fayre Inogene of Italy ;
 Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,
 And Locrine left chiefe lord of Britany.
 At last ripe age bad him surrender late
 His life, and long good fortune, unto finall fate.

xiv.

Locrine was left the soveraine lord of all ;
 But Albanact had all the northerne part,
 Which of himselfe Albania he did call ;
 And Camber did possesse the westerne quart,
 Which Severne now from Logris doth depart :
 And each his portion peaceably enioyd,
 Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge in hart,
 That once their quiet government annoyd ;
 But each his paynes to others profit still employd.

xv.

Untill a Nation straung, with visage swart
 And corage fierce that all men did affray,
 Which through the world then swarmd in every
 And overfloud all countries far away, [part,
 Like Noyes great flood, with their impörtune
 This Land invaded with like violence, [sway,
 And did themselves through all the north display:
 Untill that Locrine for his Realmes defence,
 Did head against them make and strong munificence.

xvi.

He them encountred, a confused rout,
 Foreby the river that whylome was hight
 The ancient Abus, where with courage stout
 He them defeated in victorious fight,
 And chaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,
 That forst their chieftain, for his safeties sake,
 (Their chieftain Humber named was aright,)
 Unto the mighty streame him to betake,
 Where he an end of batteill and of life did make.

xvii.

The King retourned proud of victory,
 And insolent wox through unwonted ease,
 That shortly he forgot the iopardy,
 Which in his Land he lately did appease,
 And fell to vaine voluptuous disease :
 He lov'd faire Ladie Estrild, leudly lov'd,
 Whose wanton pleasures him too much did please,
 That quite his hart from Guendolene remov'd,
 From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies faith-
 ful prov'd.

xviii.

The noble daughter of Corineus
 Would not endure to bee so vile disdaind,
 But, gathering force and corage valorous,
 Encountred him in batteill well ordaind,
 In which him vanquist she to fly constraind :
 But she so fast pursewd, that him she tooke
 And threw in bands, where he till death remaind ;
 Als his faire leman flying through a brooke
 She overhent, nought moved with her piteous looke ;

xiv. 4. — quart,] *Division*, the fourth part. Fr. *quart*. Upton.

xiv. 5. — depart:] *Separate*. Church.

xv. 9. — munificence.] *By munificence* our author signifies *defence*, or *fortification* ; from *munio* and *facio*. T. Warton.

xvi. 3. *The ancient Abus*.] *The Humber* in Yorkshire. *Abus* is from the British *Aber*, which signifies the *mouth* of a river. Church.

xviii. 4. — *in batteill well ordaind*.] This is a Latinism, *Prælio bene ordinato*. Upton.

xix.

But both herselfe, and eke her daughter deare
 Begotten by her kingly paramoure,
 The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare,
 She there attached, far from all succouere ;
 The one she slew upon the present floure ;
 But the sad virgin innocent of all
 Adowne the rolling river she did poare,
 Which of her name now Severne men do call :
 Such was the end that to disloyall love did fall.

xx.

Then for her sonne, which she to Loerin bore,
 (Madan was young, unmeete the rule to sway,)
 In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store,
 Till ryper years he raught and stronger stay :
 During which time her powre she did display
 Through all this Realme, the glory of her sex,
 And first taught men a woman to obey :
 But, when her sonne to mans estate did wex,
 She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger vex.

xxi.

Tho Madan raignd, unworthie of his race ;
 For with all shame that sacred throne he filld.
 Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place,
 In which being consorted with Manild,
 For thrist of single kingdom him he killd.
 But Ebranck salved both their infamies
 With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild
 In Henault, where yet of his victories
 Brave monuments remaine, which yet that land
 envies.

xxii.

An happy man in his first dayes he was,
 And happy father of faire progeny :
 For all so many weekes, as the yeare has,
 So many children he did multiply ;
 Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply
 Their mindes to prayse and chevalrons desyre :
 Those germans did subdew all Germany,
 Of whom it high ; but in the end their syre
 With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to
 retyre.

xxiii.

Which blott his sonne succeeding in his seat,
 The second Brute, the second both in name
 And eke in semblaunce of his puissaunce great,
 Right well recur'd, and did away that blame
 With recompence of everlasting fame :
 He with his victour sword first opened
 The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame,
 And taught her first how to be conquered ;
 Since which, with sondrie spoiles she hath been
 ransacked.

xxiv.

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania,
 And let the marsh of Esthambruges tell,
 What colour were their waters that same day,
 And all the moore twixt Elversbam and Dell,
 With blood of Henaiois which therein fell.
 How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see
 The *greene shield* dyde in dolorous vermell ?

xix. 5. — upon the present floure ;] That is, upon the spot. Todd.

xx. 2. — the rule to sway,] Rule is here used for *reign*, as in st. 66. The sense is thus perspicuous: Madan was young, unfit to sway the realm. Todd.

That not *scuith guiridh* it mote seeme to bee,
 But rather *y scuith gogh*, signe of sad crueltee.

xxv.

His sonno king Leill, by fathers labour long,
 Enioyd an heritage of lasting peace,
 And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong.
 Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease,
 But taught the Land from wearie wars to cease.
 Whose footsteps Bladud following, in artes
 Excelld at Athens all the learned peace,
 From whence he brought them to these salvage
 parts,
 And with sweet science mollifide their stubborne
 harts.

xxvi.

Ensampl of his wondrous faculty,
 Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon,
 Which seeth with secret fire eternally,
 And in their entrailles, full of quick brimstón,
 Nourish the flames which they are warmed upon,
 That to their people wealth they forth do well,
 And health to every forreyne nation :
 Yet he at last, contending to excell [fell.
 The reach of men, through flight into fond mischief

xxvii.

Next him king Leyr in happie peace long raynd,
 But had no issue male him to succeed,
 But three faire daughters, which were well
 uptraind
 In all that seemed fitt for kingly seed ;
 Mongst whom his Realme he equally decreed
 To have divided : Tho, when feeble age
 Nigh to his utmost date he saw proceed,
 He cald his daughters, and with speeches sage
 Inquyrd, which of them most did love her parentage.

xxviii.

The eldest Gonorill gan to protest,
 That she much more than her owne life him lov'd ;
 And Regan greater love to him profest
 Then all the world, whenever it were proov'd ;
 But Cordeill said she lov'd him as behoov'd :
 Whose simple answer, wanting colours fayre
 To paint it forth, him to displeasance moov'd,
 That in his crown he counted her no hayre,
 But twixt the other twain his Kingdom whole did
 shayre.

xxix.

So wedded th' one to Maglian king of Scottes,
 And th' other to the king of Cambria,
 And twixt them shayrd his Realme by equall lottes ;
 But, without dowre, the wise Cordelia
 Was sent to Aganip of Celtaica :
 Their aged syre, thus eased of his crowne,
 A private life ledd in Albania
 With Gonorill, long had in great renowne,
 That nought him griev'd to bene from rule deposed
 downe.

xxx.

But true it is that, when the oyle is spent,
 The light goes out, and weeke is throwne away ;

xxiv. 9. *But rather &c.*] The sense is, Inasmuch that it might then not so properly have been called "scuith guiridh," *green shield*, as "y scuith gogh," *The red shield*. CHURCH.

xxvi. 6. *That to their people wealth they forth do well,*] Forth do well, i. e. pour forth. Upton.

So, when he had resign'd his regiment,
His daughter gan despise his drouping day,
And wearie wax of his continuall stay :
Tho to his daughter Regan he repayrd,
Who him at first well used every way ;
But, when of his departure she despayrd,
Her bountie she abated, and his cheare empayrd.

xxxI.

The wretched man gan then advise too late,
That love is not where most it is profest ;
Too truly tryde in his extremest state !
At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the rest,
He to Cordelia himselfe addressd,
Who with entyre affection him receav'd,
As for her syre and king her seemed best ;
And after all an army strong she leav'd, [reav'd.
To war on those which him had of his Realme be-

xxxII.

So to his crowne she him restord againe ;
In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,
And after wild it should to her remaine :
Who peaceably the same long time did weld,
And all mens harts in dew obedience held ;
Till that her sisters children, woxen strong,
Through proud ambition against her rebelld,
And overcommen kept in prison long,
Till weary of that wretched life herselfe she hong.

xxxIII.

Then gan the bloody brethren both to raine :
But fierce Cundah gan shortly to envy
His brother Morgan, prickt with proud disdain
To have a pere in part of sovereignty ;
And, kindling coles of cruell enmity,
Raid warre, and him in batteill overthrowd ;
Whence as he to those woody hilles did fly,
Which hight of him Glamorgan, there him slew :
Then did he raigne alone, when he none equal knew.

xxxIV.

His sonne Rivall' his dead rowme did supply ;
In whose sad time blood did from heaven rayne.
Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cecily,
In constant peace their kingdomes did containe.
After whom Lago, and Kinmarke did rayne,
And Gorbogud, till far in years he grew :
Then his ambitious sonnes unto them twayne
Arraught the rule, and from their father drew ;
Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison
threw.

xxxv.

But O ! the greedy thirst of royall crowne,
That knowes no kinred, nor regards no right,
Stird Porrex up to put his brother downe ;
Who, unto him assembling foreigne might,
Made warre on him, and fell himselfe in fight :
Whose death t'avenge, his mother mercilesse,
Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,
Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,
And with most cruell hand him muredred pittilesse.

xxxvi.

Here ended Brutus sacred progeny,
Which had seven hundred years this scepter
With high renowme and great fealicy : [borne

The noble branch from il' aútiqve stocke was
torne
Through discord, and the roial throne forlorne.
Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent,
Whilost each of Brutus boasted to be borne,
That in the end was left no monument
Of Brutus, nor of Britons glorie aúcient.

xxxvII.

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might,
And wondrous wit to menage high affayres,
Who, stird with pity of the stressed plight
Of this sad Realme, cut into sondry shayres
By such as claymd themselves Brutes rightfull
Gathered the princes of the people loose [hayres,
To take counsell of their common cares ;
Who, with his wisdom won, him streight did
choose,
Their King, and swore him fealty to win or loose.

xxxvIII.

Then made he head against his enimics,
And Ymner slew of Logris miscreatee ;
Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allies,
This of Albány newly nominate,
And that of Cambry king confirmed late,
He overthrowd through his owne valiaunce ;
Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state,
And shortly brought to civile governaunce,
Now one, which earst were many made through
variaunce.

xxxix.

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men say
Were unto him reveald in vision ;
By which he freed the travelers high-way,
The churches part, and ploughmans portion,
Restraining stealth and strong extortion ;
The gracious Numa of great Britany :
For, till his dayes, the chiefe dominion
By strength was wielded without pollicy :
Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignity

xl.

Donwallo dyde, (for what may live for ay ?)
And left two sonnes, of peacelesse prowess both
That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,
The recompence of their periured oth ; [wroth ;
And ransackt Greece wel tryde, when they were
Besides subiected France and Germany,
Which yet their praises speake, all be they loth,
And inly tremble at the memory
Of Brennus and Belinus, kings of Britany.

xli.

Next them did Gurgunt, great Belinus sonne,
In rule succede, and eke in fathers praise :
He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarke wonne,
And of them both did foy and tribute raise,
The which was dew in his dead fathers daies :
He also gave to fugitives of Spayne,
Whom he at sea found wandring from their waies,
A seate in Ireland safely to remaine, [táync.
Which they should hold of him as subiect to Bri-

xlii.

After him raigned Guithelme his hayre,
The iustest man and trewest in his daics,

xxxI. 6. — leav'd,] *Leviéd*, raised. Gall. *lever*. UPTON.
xxxIV. 6. Arraught] *Seizéd*. Fr. *arracher*, to snatch
or wrest. TODD.

xli. 4. — foy] *The tribute due from subjects*. An
expression borrowed from the old French. *Homme de foy*
is a vassal, or tenant, that holds by fealty. TODD.

Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,
A woman worthy of immortal praise,
Which for this Realme found many goodly layes,
And wholesome statutes to her husband brought :
Her many deemd to have beene of the Fayes,
As was Aegerié that Numa taught : [thought.
Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd and

XLIII.

Her sonne Sifillus after her did rayne :
And then Kimarus ; and then Danius :
Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustayne ;
Who, had he not with wrath outrageous
And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous
And mightie deedes, should matched have the
As well in that same field victorious [best :
Against the ferreine Morands he exprest ;
Yet lives his memorie, though carcass sleepe in rest.

XLIV.

Five sonnes he left hegotten of one wife,
All which successively by turnes did rayne :
First Gorcheman, a man of vertuous life ;
Next Archigald, who for his proud disdayne
Deposed was from princedome soverayne,
And pitteous Eldure put in his sted ;
Who shortly it to him restord agayne,
Till by his death he it recovered ;
But Peridure and Vigent him dithronized :

XLV.

In wretched prison long he did remaine,
Till they out-raigued had their utmost date,
And then therein reseized was againe,
And ruled long with honorable state,
Till he surrendered realme and life to fate.
Then all the sonnes of these five brethren raynd
By dew successe, and all their nephewes late ;
Even thirise eleven descents the crowne retaynd,
Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

XLVI.

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud,
Left of his life most famous memory,
And endlesse monuments of his great good :
The ruin'd wals he did readifye
Of Troynovant, gainst force of eminy,
And built that Gate which of his name is hight,
By which he lyes entombéd solemnly :
He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,
Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his might.

XLVII.

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane their eme
Was by the people chosen in their sted,
Who on him tooke the roiall diademe,
And goodly well long time it governed ;
Till the prowde Romanes him disquieted,
And warlike Cæsar, tempted with the name
Of this sweet Island never conquered,
And envying the Britons blazed fame,
(O hideous hunger of dominion !) hether came.

XLII. 5. — layes,] *Laws*, for the rhyme's sake. CHURCH.

XLV. 3. — reseized] *Had seisin or possession again* ; reinstated in his kingdom. UPON.

XLV. 7. *By dew successo*,] That is, by due succession ; in *their dew descents*, as he expresses it, st. 74. CHURCH.

Ibid. — nephewes] *Nephews* are *nepotes*, grandsons. JORTIN.

XLVII. 1. — *their eme*] *Their uncle*. CHURCH.

XLVIII.

Yet wise they were repulsed backe againe,
And wise renforst backe to their ships to fly ;
The whiles with blood they all the shore did
And the gray ocean into purple dy : [staine,
Ne had they footing found at last perdie,
Had not Androgeus, false to native soyle,
And envious of his uncles soveraintie,
Betrayd his country unto ferreine speyle. [foyle !
Nought els but treason from the first this land did

XLIX.

So by him Cæsar got the victory,
Through great bloodshed and many a sad assay
In which himselfe was charged heavily
Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,
But lost his sword, yet to be scene this day.
Thenceforth this Land was tributarie made
T'ambitious Rome, and did their rule obey,
Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd : [swayd.
Yet oft the Britan Kings against them strongly

L.

Next him Tenantius raignd ; then Kimbeline,
What time th' Eternal Lord in fleshy slime
Enwombéd was, from wretched Adams line
To purge away the guilt of sinful crime.
O ioyous memorie of happy time,
That heavenly grace so plenteously displayd !
O too high ditty for my simple rime !—
Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd ;
For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

LI.

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour,
An army brought, and with him batteile fought,
In which the King was by a treachetour
Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought :
Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought :
For Arvirage his brothers place supplyde
Both in his armes and crowne, and by that draught
Did drive the Romanes to the weaker syde,
That they to peace agreed. So all was pacifyde.

LII.

Was never King more highly magnifide,
Nor dredd of Romanes, then was Arvirage ;
For which the Emperour to him allide
His daughter Genuiss' in marriage :
Yet shortly he renounst the vassallage
Of Rome againe, who hether hastily sent
Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage
Forwasted all, till Genuissa gent
Persuaded him to cease, and her lord to relent.

LIII.

He hidde ; and him succeeded Marius,
Who ioyd his dayes in great tranquillity.
Then Coyll ; and after him good Lucius,
That first received Christianity,
The sacred pledge of Christes Evangely.
Yet true it is, that long before that day

XLVIII. 2. — *renforst*] So all the editions. I think it should be *enforst*, i. e. forced, obliged. CHURCH.

XLVIII. 9. — *foyle* !] *Foil* here signifies to *defeat* or *conquer*, as it also signifies, in F. Q. v. xi. 33, and in other places. TODD.

LI. 7. — *by that draught*] That is, by that *resemblance*, by the stratagem of putting on his Brother's armour. CHURCH.

Hither came Ioseph of Arimathy, [say,
Who brought with him the Holy Grayle, (they
And preacht the truth ; but since it greatly did
decay.

LV.

This good King shortly without issew dide,
Whereof great trouble in the Kingdome grew,
That did herselfe in sondry parts divide,
And with her powre her owne selfe overthrew,
Whilst Romanes daily did the weake subdew :
Which seeing, stout Bunduca up arose,
And taking armes the Britons to her drew ;
With whom she marched straightagainst her foes,
And them unwares besides the Severne did enclose.

LV.

There she with them a cruell batteill tryde,
Not with so good successe as shée deserv'd ;
By reason that the captaines on her syde,
Corrupted by Paulinus, from her swerv'd,
Yet such, as were through former flight preserv'd,
Gathering againe, her host she did renew,
And with fresh corage on the victor servd :
But being all defeated, save a few,
Rather than fly, or be captiv'd, herselfe she slew.

LVI.

O famous monument of womens prayse !
Matchable either to Semiramis,
Whom antique history so high doth rayse,
Or to Hypsipil', or to Thomiris :
Her host two hundred thousand numbred is ;
Who, whilst good fortune favoured her might,
Triumphed oft against her enemies ;
And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight,
Shee triumphed on death, in enemies despight.

LVII.

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered,
Fought with Severus, and him overthrew ;
Yet in the chace was slaine of them that fled ;
So made them victors whome he did subdew.
Then gan Carausius tyrannize anew,
And gainst the Romanes bent their proper powre ;
But him Allectus treacherously slew,
And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure :
Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short happy howre.

LVIII.

For Aselepiodate him overcame,
And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne,
Without or robe or rag to hide his shame ;
Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne ;
But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine :
Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme,
Was of the Britons first crownd Sovereaine :
Then gan this Realme renew her passed prime :
He of his name Coychester built of stone and lime.

LIX.

Which when the Romanes heard, they hether sent
Constantins, a man of mickle might,
With whome King Coyll made an agreement,
And to him gave for wife his daughter bright,
Fayre Helena, the fairest living wight,
Who in all godly thewes and goodly praise
Did far excell, but was most famous light
For skil in musicke of all in her daies,
As well in curious instruments as cunning laies :

liv. 9. — besides] *Near.* CHURCH.

LX.

Of whome de did great Constantine begett,
Who afterward was emperour of Rome ;
To which whilst absent he his mind did sett,
Octavius here lept into his roome,
And it usurped by unrighteous doome :
But he his title iustifide by might,
Slaying Traherne, and having overcome
The Romane legion in dreadfull fight :
So settled he his kingdome, and confirmed his right :

LXI.

But, wanting yssew male, his daughter deare
He gave in wedlocke to Maximian,
And him with her made of his kingdome heyre,
Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan,
Till murdered by the freends of Gratian.
Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade this Land,
During the raigne of Maximinian ;
Who dying left none heire them to withstand ;
But that they overran all parts with easy hand.

LXII.

The weary Britons, whose war-hable youth
Was by Maximian lately ledd away,
With wretched miseryes and woefull ruth
Were to those Pagans made an open pray,
And daily spectacle of sad decay : [yeares
Whome Romane warres, which now fowr hundred
And more had wasted, could no whit dismay ;
Til, by consent of Commons and of Peares,
They crownd the second Constantine with ioyous
teares :

LXIII.

Who having oft in batteill vanquished
Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming Easterlings,
Long time in peace his Realme established,
Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings
Of neighbour Scots, and forrein scatterlings
With which the world did in those dayes abound :
Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings
From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound,
Which from Alchuid to Panwelt did that border
bownd.

LXIV.

Three sonnes he dying left, all under age ;
By meanes whereof their uncle Vortigere
Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage ;
Which th' infants tutors gathering to feare,
Them closely into Armorick did beare :
For dread of whom, and for those Picts annoyes,
He sent to Germany straunge aid to reare ;
From whence eftsoones arrived here three hoyes
Of Saxons, whom he for his safety employes.

LXV.

Two brethren were their capitayns, which hight
Hengist and Horsus, well approv'd in warre,
And both of them men of renowned might ;
Who making vantage of their civile iarre,
And of those forreyners which came from farre,

LXIII. 4. — bordragings] *Bordraging* is an incursion on the borders or marches of a country. TODD.

LXIII. 5. — scatterlings] *Scattered or dispersed rovers or ravagers.* UPRON.

LXIII. 7. — pyonings] *Works of pioneers : military works raised by pioneers.* UPRON.

LXIV. 4. — gathering to feare.] *Gathering to feare is, fearing the usurpation of Vortigere.* CHURCH.

LXIV. 7. — *straunge aid to reare ;*] *To hire foreign troops.* CHURCH.

Grew great, and got large portions of land,
That in the Realme ere long they stronger arpe
Then they which sought at first their helping
hand,
And Vortiger enforst the Kingdome to aband.

LXVI.

But, by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne,
He is againe unto his rule restord ;
And Hengist, seeming sad for that was donne,
Received is to grace and new accord, [word.
Through his faire daughters face aud flattering
Soone after which, three hundred lords he slew
Of British blood, all sitting at his bord ;
Whose dolefull monuments who list to rew,
Th' eternall marks of treason may at Stonheng
vew.

LXVII.

By this the sonnes of Constantine, which fled,
Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares attayne,
And, here arriving, strongly challenged
The crowne which Vortiger did long detainne :
Who, flying from his guilt, by them was slayne ;
And Hengist eke soone brought to shamefull
death.

Thereforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,
Till that through poyson stopped was his breath ;
So now entombed lies at Stoneheng by the heath.

LXVIII.

After him Uther, which Pendragon hight,
Succeeding—There abruptly it did end,
Without full point, or other cesure right ;
As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,
Or th' author selfe could not at least attend
To finish it : that so untimely breach
The Prince himselfe halfe seemed to offend ;
Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,
And wonder of antiquity long stopt his speach.

LXIX.

At last, quite ravisht with delight to heare
The royall ospring of his native land, [deare
Cryde out ; " Deare Countrey ! O how dearely
Ought thy remembrance and perpetuall band
Be to thy foster childe, that from thy hand
Did commun breath and nouriture receive !
How brutish is it not to understand
How much to Her we owe, that all us gave ;
That gave unto us all whatever good we have ! "

LXX.

But Guyon all this while his booke did read,
Ne yet has ended : for it was a great
And ample volume, that doth far exceed
My leasure so long leaves here to repeat :
It told how first Prometheus did create
A man, of many parts from beasts deryv'd,
And then stole fire from heven to animate
His worke, for which he was by Iove depriv'd
Of life himselfe, and hart-strings of an aegle ryv'd.

LXXI.

That man so made he called Elfe, to weest
Quick, the first author of all Elfin kynd ;
Who, wandring through the world with wearie
Did in the gardins of Adonis fynd [feet,
A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mynd

To be no earthly wight, but either spright,
Or angell, th' author of all woman kynd ;
Therefore a Fay he her according light,
Of whom all Faryes spring, and fetch their lignage
right.

LXXII.

Of these a mighty people shortly grew,
And puissant kunges which all the world warrayd,
And to themselves all nations did subdew :
The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,
Was Elfin ; him all India obeyd,
And all that now America men call :
Next him was noble Elfinan, who laid
Cleopolis foundation first of all :
But Elfiline enclosed it with a golden wall.

LXXIII.

His soune was Elfinell, who overcame
The wicked Gobbelines in bloody field :
But Elfant was of most renowned fame,
Who all of christall did Panthea build :
Then Elfar, who two bresthreu gyauntes kild,
The one of which had two heades, th' other three :
Then Elfinor, who was in magick skild ;
He built by art upon the glassy see
A bridge of bras, whose sound hevens thunder
seem'd to be.

LXXIV.

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd,
And all their ofspring, in their dew descentes ;
Even seven hundred princes, which maintaynd
With mightie deedes their sondry governments
That were too long their infinite contents
Here to record, ne much materiall :
Yet should they be most famous monuments,
And brave ensample, both of martiall
And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

LXXV.

After all these Elficleo did rayne,
The wise Elficleo in great maiestie,
Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,
And with rich spoyles and famous victorie
Did high advance the crowne of Faerye ;
He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon,
The eldest brother, did untimely dy ;
Whose emptie place the mightie Oberon
Doubly supplide, in spousal and dominion.

LXXVI.

Great was his power and glorie over all
Which, him before, that sacred seate did fill,
That yet remains his wide memoriall :
He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,
Him to succede therein, by his last will :
Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre,
Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill ;
Therefore they Glorian call that glorious frowre :
Long mayst thou, Glorian, live in glory and great
powre !

LXXVII.

Begynd thus with delight of novelties,
And naturall desire of Countryes state,
So long they redd in those antiquities,
That how the time was fled they quite forgate ;
Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late,
Perforce their studies broke, and them besought
To thinke how snpper did them long awaite :
So halfe unwilling from their bookes them brought,
And fayrely feasted as so noble Knightes she ought.

CANTO XI

The Enimies of Temperance
Besiege her dwelling place:
Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle
Maleger doth deface.

I.

WHAT warre so cruel, or what siege so sore,
As that, which strong Affections doe apply
Against the forte of Reason evermore,
To bring the sowle into captivity!
Their force is fiercer through infirmity
Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage;
And exercise most bitter tyranny
Upon the partes, brought into their bondage:
No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.

II.

But in a body which doth freely yeeld
His partes to Reasons rule obedient,
And letteth Her that ought the scepter weeld,
All happy peace and goodly government
Is settled there in sure establishment.
There Alma, like a Virgin Queene most bright,
Doth flourish in all beauteie excellent;
And to her guesstes doth bounteous banquet dight,
Attempted goodly well for health and for delight.

III.

Early, before the Morne with cremosin ray
The windowes of bright heaven opened had,
Through which into the world the dawning Day
Might looke, that maketh every creature glad,
Uprose Sir Guyon in bright armour clad,
And to his purposd iourney him prepar'd:
With him the Palmer eke in habit sad
Himselfe address to that adventure hard:
So to the rivers syde they both together far'd:

IV.

Where them awaited ready at the ford
The Ferriman, as Alma had beight,
With his well-rigged bote: They goe aboard,
And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forthright.
Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,
And fast the land behynd them fled away.
But let them pas, whiles winde and wether right
Doe serve their turnes: here I a while must stay,
To see a cruell fight doen by the Prince this day.

V.

For, all so soone as Guyon thence was gon
Upon his voyage with his trustie Guyde,
That wicked band of Villeins fresh began
That Castle to assaile on every side,
And lay strong siege about it far and wyde.
So huge and infinite their numbers were,
That all the land they under them did hyde;
So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare
Their visages imprest, when they approached neare.

VI.

Them in twelve Troupes their Captein did dispart,
And round about in fittest steades did place,
Where each might best offend his proper part,
And his contrary object most deface,
As every one seem'd meetest in that cae.
Seven of the same against the Castle-Gate

1. 9. — vellenage.] *Servitude*, old Fr. any base or servile tenure. TODD.

In strong entrenchments he did closely place,
Which with incessant force and endless hate
They battred day and night, and entranche did awate.

VII.

The other Five five sondry wayes he sett
Against the five great Bulwarke of that pyle,
And unto each a Bulwarke did arrett,
T' assaile with open force or hidden guyle,
In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.
They all that charge did fervently apply
With greedie malice and importune toyle,
And planted there their huge artillery,
With which they dayly made most dreadfull battery.

VIII.

The first Troupe was a monstrous rablement
Of fowle misshapen wightes, of which some were
Headed like owles, with beckes uncomely bent;
Others like dogs; others like gryphons dreare;
And some had wings, and some had clawes to
And every one of them had lyncees eyes; [teare;
And every one did bow and arrowes beare:
All those were lawlesse Lustes, corrupt Envyes,
And covetous Aspéct, all cruel enimyes.

IX.

Those same against the Bulwarke of the Sight
Did lay strong siege and battailous assault,
Ne once did yield it resspit day nor night;
But soone as Titan gan his head exault,
And soone againe as he his light withhault,
Their wicked engines they against it bent;
That is, each thing by which the eyes may fault:
But two then all more huge and violent,
Beautie and Money, they that Bulwarke sorely rent.

X.

The second Bulwarke was the Hearing Sence,
Gainst which the second Troupe dessignment
makes;
Deformed creatures, in straunge difference:
Some having heads like harts, some like to snakes,
Some like wild bores late rouz'd out of the brakes:
Slaunderous Reproches, and fowle Infamies,
Leasinges, Backbyttinges, and vain-glorious
Crakes,
Bad Counsels, Prayses, and false Flatteries:
All those against that Fort did bend their batteries.

XI.

Likewise that same third Fort, that is the Smell,
Of that third Troupe was cruely assayd;
Whose hideous shapes were like to feendes of hell,
Some like to houndes, some like to apes, dismayd;
Some, like to puttockes, all in plumes arayd;
All shap't according their conditions:

VII. 3. — arrett.] *Appoint*, or *assign*. The poet often uses the word in this sense. TODD.

VII. 6. — apply] *Mind*, *observe*. TODD.

IX. 7. *That is, each thing by which the eyes may fault*: Their wicked engines, meaning each thing by which the eyes may offend, or be in fault. The substantive is changed into a verb. UPRON.

X. 7. — Crakes,] *Boastings*. To *crack*, is still used in the North of England, and in Scotland, for to brag or boast. TODD.

XI. 4. — dismayd:] *Dismayd is frightened*. But I can hardly think that Spenser uses it here in that sense. Possibly by *dismayd* or *dismad* he means ugly, ill-shaped, in French *malfait*. JOHNSON.

For by those ugly formes, weren pourtrayd
Foolish Delights, and fond Abusions,
Which doe that Sence besiege with light illusions.

xii.

And that fourth Band which cruell battry bent
Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the Taste,
Was, as the rest, a grysie rablement ;
Some mouth'd like greedy oystrigues ; some faste
Like loathly toades ; some fashioned in the waste
Like swine : for so deformd is Luxury,
Surfeat, Misdiet, and unthriftie Waste,
Vaine Feastes, and ydle Superfluity :
All those this Sences Fort assayle incessantly.

xiii.

But the fift Troupe, most horrible of hew
And ferce of force, is dreadfull to report ;
For some like snailes, some did like spyders shew,
And some like ugly urchins thick and short :
Cruelly they assayled that fift Fort,
Armed with dartes of sensuall Delight,
With stinges of carnall Lust, and strong effort
Of feeling Pleasures, with which day and night
Against that same fift Bulwarke they continued
fight.

xiv.

Thus these twelve Troupes with dreadfull puis-
saunce
Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay,
And evermore their hideous ordinaunce
Upon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play,
That now it gan to threaten nere decay :
And evermore their wicked Capitayn
Provoked them the breaches to assay, [gayn,
Sometimes with threats, sometimes with hope of
Which by the ransack of that Peece they should
attayn.

xv.

On th' other syde, th' assieged Castles Ward
Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,
And many bold repulse and many hard [payne,
Atchievement wrought, with perill and with
That godly Frame from ruine to sustaine :
And those two brethren Gyauntes did defend
The walles so stoutly with their sturdie mayne,
That never entraunce any durst pretend,
But they to direfull death their groning ghosts did
send.

xvi.

The noble virgin, Ladie of the place,
Was much dismayed with that dreadful sight,
(For never was she in so evill case),
Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight,
Gan her recomfort from so sad affright,
Offering his service and his dearest life
For her defence against that Carle to fight,
Which was their Chiefe and th' authour of that
strife :
She him remerciad as the patrone of her life.

xii. 4. — faste] *Faced*, having faces. CHURCH.

xiii. 4. — urchins] *Hedge-hogs*, which make indeed
a considerable figure in the demonologicke system. TODD.

xiv. 9. — that Peece] *Peece* is often used by Spenser
for *castle*. TODD.

xv. 1. — Ward] *The guards*, or garrison. TODD.

xv. 6. — those two brethren Gyauntes] Prince
Arthur, and his Squire Timias: giants in prowess and
in courage. UPRON.

xvi. 9. — remerciad] *Thanked*. FR. CHURCH.

xvii.

Eftsouones himselve in glitteraud armes he dight,
And his well proved weapons to him hent ;
So taking comteous congè, he behight
Those gates to be unbar'd, and forth he went.
Fayre mote he thee, the prowest and most gent,
That ever handrished bright steele on hye I
Whom soone as that unruly rablement
With his gay Squyre issewing did espye,
They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling cry :

xviii.

And therewithall attonce at him let fly
Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of snow,
And round about him flocke impetuously,
Like a great water-flood, that tumbling low
From the high mountaines, threatens to overflow
With suddeiu fury all the fertile playne,
And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw
Adowne the streame, and all his vowes make
vayne ;
Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may
sustayne.

xix.

Upon his shield there heaped hayle he bore,
And with his sword disperst the raskall flocks,
Which fled asonder, and him fell before ;
Aswithered leaves drop from their dried stockes,
When the wroth western wind does reave their
locks :
And underneath him his courageous steed,
The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like docks ;
The fierce Spumador horne of heavenly seed ;
Such as Laomedon of Phœbus race did breed.

xx.

Which suddeine horrour and confused cry
When as their Capteine heard, in haste he yode
The cause to weet, and fault to remedy :
Upon a tygre swift and fierce he rode,
That as the winde ran underneath his lode,
Whiles his long legs nigh raught unto the ground :
Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode ;
But of such subtle substance and unsound,
That like a ghost he seem'd whose grave-clothes
were unbound :

xxi.

And in his hand a bended bow was seene,
And many arrows under his right side,
All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,
Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide ;
Such as the Indians in their quivers hide :
Those could he well direct and streight as line,
And bid them strike the marke which he had
eyde ;
Ne was there salve, ne was there medicine,
That mote recure their wounds ; so inly they did tine.

xxii.

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke ;
His body leane and meagre as a rake ;
And skin all withered like a dried rooke ;
Thereto as cold and drery as a snake ;

xvii. 3. — behight] *Commanded*. TOON.

xvii. 5. *Fayre mote he thee*] *Thrive*, prosper. UPRON.
Ibid. — gent,] *Gent* is a frequent epithet, in the
old romances, as applied to *ladies*. TOON.

xxi. 9. — tinc.] *Inflame*, rage, Anglo-Sax, *tenban*
accendere. UPRON.

That seemd to tremble evermore and quake :
 All in a canvas thin he was bedight,
 And girded with a belt of twisted light :
 Upon his head he wore an helmet bright,
 Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a ghastly
 sight :

xxiii.

Maleger was his name : And after him
 There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags,
 With hoary lockes all loose, and visage grim ;
 Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in rags,
 And both as swift on foot as chased stags ;
 And yet the one her other legge had lame,
 Which with a staffe all full of litle snags
 She did support, and Impotence her name :
 But th'other was Impatience armd with raging flame.

xxiv.

Soone as the Carle from far the Prince espyde
 Glistering in armes and warlike ornament,
 His beast he felly prickt on either syde,
 And his mischievous bow full readie bent,
 With which at him a cruell shaft he sent :
 But he was warie, and it warded well
 Upon his shield, that it no further went,
 But to the ground the idle quarrell fell :
 Then he another and another did expell.

xxv.

Which to prevent, the Prince his mortall speare
 Soone to him rought, and fierce at him did ride,
 To be avenged of that shot whyleare :
 But he was not so hardy to abide
 That bitter stownd, but, turning quicke aside
 His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare :
 Whom to pourse, the Infant after hide
 So fast as his good courser could him beare ;
 But labour lost it was to weene approach him neare.

xxvi.

Far as the winged wind his tigre fled,
 That vew of eye could scarce him overtake,
 Ne scarce his feet on ground were seene to tread ;
 Through hils and dales he speedy way did make,
 Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake,
 And in his flight the Villeine turn'd his face
 (As wents the Tartar by the Caspian lake,
 Whenas the Russian him in fight does chace,)
 Unto his tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

xxvii.

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace,
 Still as the greedy Knight nigh to him drew ;
 And oftentimes he would relent his pace,
 That him his foe more fiercely should poursew :
 But, when his uncouth manner he did vew,
 He gan avize to follow him no more,
 But keepe his standing, and his shaftes eschew,
 Untill he quite had spent his perulous store,
 And then assaile him fresh, ere he could shift for
 more.

xxviii.

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew
 His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe,
 And to him brought, fresh batteill to renew ;
 Which he espying cast her to restraine

xxiii. 6. — her other legge.] That is, her *left* leg.
 UPRON.

xxiv. 8. — quarrell] Fr. *Carreau*, or *Quarreau*, a
 short thick square dart shot out of cross-bows. CHURCH.

From yielding succour to that cursed Swaine,
 And her attaching thought her hands to tye ;
 But, soone as him dismounted on the plaine
 That other Hag did far away espye
 Binding her Sister, she to him ran hastily ;

xxix.

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,
 Him backward overthrew, and downe him stayd
 With their rude handes and gresly graplement ;
 Till that the Villein, comming to their ayd,
 Upon him fell, and lode upon him layd :
 Full litle wanted, but he had him slaine,
 And of the battell balefull end had made,
 Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine,
 And commen to his reskew ere his bitter bane.

xxx.

So greatest and most glorious thing on ground
 May often need the helpe of weaker hand ;
 So feeble is mans state, and life unsond,
 That in assurance it may never stand,
 Till it dissolv'd be from earthly band !
 Proove be thou, Prince, the prowest man alyve,
 And noblest borne of all in Briton land ;
 Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely drive,
 That, had not Grace thee blest, thou shouldest not
 survive.

xxxi.

The Squyre arriving, fiercely in his armes
 Snatcht first the one, and then the other Jade,
 His chiefest letts and authors of his harmes,
 And them perforce withheld with threatned blade,
 Least that his Lord they should behinde invade ;
 The whiles the Prince, prickt with reprochful
 shame,
 As one awakte out of long slombring shade,
 Revivying thought of glory and of fame,
 United all his powres to purge himselfe from blame.

xxxii.

Like as a fire, the which in hollow cave
 Hath long bene underkept and downe suppress,
 With murmurous disdayne doth inly rave,
 And grudge, in so streight prison to be prest,
 At last breakes forth with furious unrest,
 And strives to mount unto his native seat ;
 All that did earst it hinder and molest,
 Yt now devoures with flames and scorching heat,
 And carries into smoake with rage and horror great:

xxxiii.

So mightly the Briton Prince him rouzd
 Out of his holde, and broke his caytive hands ;
 And as a beare, whom angry curres have touzd,
 Having off-shakt them and escapt their hands,
 Becomes more fell, and all that him withstands
 Treads down and overthrowes. Now had the Carle
 Alighted from his tigre, and his hands
 Discharged of his bow and deadly quar'le,
 To seize upon his foe flatt lying on the marle.

xxxiv.

Which now him turnd to disavantage deare :
 For neither can he fly, nor other harme,

xxxiii. 8. — quar'le.] *Quarrell*, as before, in st. 24
 CHURCH.

xxxiv. 2. — nor other harme,] That is, *otherwise*
 UPRON.

But trust unto his strength and manhood weare,
Sith now he is far from his monstrous swarme,
And of his weapons did himselfe disarm.
The Knight, yet wrothfull for his late disgrace,
Fiercely advaunst his valorous right arme,
And him so sore smott with his yron mace,
That groveling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

xxxv.

Wel weened hee that field was then his owne,
And all his labor brought to happy end ;
When suddain up the Villeine overthrowne
Out of his sworne arose, fresh to contend,
And gan himselfe to second battaill bend,
As hurt he had not benee. Thereby there lay
An huge great stone, which stood upon one end,
And had not bene removed many a day ; [way :
Some land-mark seemd to bee, or signe of sundry

xxxvi.

The same he snatcht, and with exceeding sway
Threw at his foe, who was right well aware
To shonne the engin of his meant decay ;
It booted not to thinke that throw to beare,
But grownd he gave, and lightly lept areare :
Eft fierce retourning, as a faulcon fayre,
That once hath failed of her souse full neare,
Remounts againe into the open ayre,
And unto hetter fortune doth herselfe prepayre :

xxxvii.

So brave retourning, with his brandisht blade,
He to the Carle himselfe agayn address,
And strooke at him so sternely, that he made
An open passage through his riven brest,
That halfe the steele behind his backe did rest ;
Which drawing backe, he looked evermore
When the hart blood should gush out of his chest,
Or his dead corse should fall upon the flore ;
But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathẽmore :

xxxviii.

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee,
All were the wound so wide and wonderous
That through his carcas one might playnly see.
Halfe in amaze with horror hideous,
And halfe in rage to be deluded thus, [quight,
Again through both the sides he strooke him
That made his spright to grone full piteous ;
Yet nathẽmore forth fled his groning spright,
But freshly, as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

xxxix.

Thereat he smitten was with great affright,
And trembling terror did his hart apall ;
Ne wist he what to thinke of that same sight,
Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all :
He doubted least it were some magicall
Illusion that did beguile his sense,
Or wandring ghost that wanted funerall,
Or aery spirite under false pretence,
Or hellish feend raysd up through divelish science.

xl.

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach,
That he began to doubt his dazeled sight,
And oft of error did himselfe appeach :
Flesh without blood, a person without spright,

xxxiv. 9. ——— and fild his place.] That is, and he filled
or covered the place on which he lay with his body. Upton.

Wounds without hurt, a body without might,
That could doe harme, yet could not harmed bee,
That could not die, yet seemd a mortall wight,
That was most strong in most infirmitee ;
Like did he never heare, like did he never see.

xli.

Awhile he stood in this astonishment,
Yet would he not for all his great dismay
Give over to effect his first intent,
And th' utmost meanes of victory assay,
Or th' utmost yssow of his owne decay.
His owne good sword Mordure, that never fayld
At need till now, he lightly threw away,
And his bright shield that nought him now avayld ;
And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

xlii.

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he snatcht,
And crusht his carcas so against his brest,
That the disdainfull sowle he thence dispatcht,
And th' yde breath all utterly exprest :
Tho, when he felt him dead, adowne he kest
The lumpish corse unto the sencelesse grownd ;
Adowne he kest it with so puissant wrest,
That backe againe it did alofte rebownd,
And gave against his mother Earth a gronefull
sownd.

xliii.

As when Ioves harness-bearing bird from hie
Stonpes at a flying heron with proud disdayne,
The stone-dead quarrey falls so forcibly,
That yt rebownds against the lowly playne,
A second fall redoubling backe agayne.
Then thought the Prince all peril sure was past,
And that he victor onely did remaine ;
No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast
Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he down was
cast.

xliv.

Nigh his wits end then woxe th' amazed Knight,
And thought his labor lost, and travell vayne,
Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight :
Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty mayne,
That, whiles he marveild still, did still him payne ;
Forthy he gan some other wayes advize,
How to take life from that dead-living swayne,
Whom still he marked freshly to arise
From th' earth, and from her womb new spirits to
reprize.

xlv.

He then remembered well, that had bene sayd,
How th' Earth his mother was, and first him bore ;
She eke, so often as his life decayd,
Did life with usury to him restore,
And reysd him up much stronger then before,
So soone as he unto her wombe did fall :
Therefore to grownd he would him cast no more,
Ne him committ to grave terrestriall,
But beare him farre from hope of succour usuall.

xlii. 4. ——— exprest:] *Pressed out. Lat. exprimo.*
The French use *exprimer* and *expression* in the same
sense. Todd.

xliii. 3. ——— *quarrey*] A term in falconry. Any
fowl that is flown at and killed. It is used for *game* in
general. Church.

xlv. 9. ——— *to reprize.*] *To take again. Fr. reprendre.*
Church.

XLVI.

Tho up he caught him twixt his puissant hands,
 And having scruzd out of his carrion horse
 The lothfull life, now loosed from sinfull hands,
 Upon his shoulders carried him perforce
 Above three furlongs, taking his full course,
 Until he came unto a standing lake ;
 Him thereinto he threw without remorse,
 Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsake :
 So end of that Carles dayes and his owne paynes
 did make.

XLVII.

Which when those wicked Hags from far did spye,
 Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands ;
 And th' one of them with dreadfull yelling crye,
 Throwing away her broken chaines and bands,
 And having quencht her burning fier-brands,
 Hedlong herselfe did cast into that lake :
 But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands
 One of Malegers cursed darts did take,
 So ryv'd her trembling hart, and wicked end did
 make.

XLVIII.

Thus now alone he conquerour remaines :
 Tho, cumming to his Squire that kept his steed,
 Thought to have mounted ; but his feeble vaines
 Him faild thereto, and served not his need,
 Through losse of blood which from his wounds
 did bleed,
 That he began to faint, and life decay :
 But his good Squire, him helping up with speed,
 Wich stedfast hand upon his horse did stay,
 And led him to the Castle by the beaten way.

XLIX.

Where many Groomes and Squiers ready were
 To take him from his steed full tenderly ;
 And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there
 With halruie, and wine, and costly spicery,
 To comfort him in his infirmity :
 Efte-soones she caused him up to be convyad,
 And of his armes despoyled easily
 In sumptuous bed shee made him to he layd ;
 And, al the while his wounds were dressing, by
 him stayd.

CANTO XII.

Guyon, by Palmers governance,
 Passing through perilles great,
 Doth overthrow the Bowre of Bliss,
 And Acrasy defeat.

I.

Now ginnes that goodly frame of Temperance
 Fayrely to rise, and her adorned hed
 To pricke of highest prayse forth to advance,
 Formerly grounded and fast setteled
 On firme foundation of true bountyhed :
 And this brave Knight, that for this vertue fightes,
 Now comes to point of that same perillous sted,
 Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall delights,
 Mougst thousand dangers and ten thousand magick
 nightes.

XLVI. 2. ——— scruzd] *Pressed out.* TODD.
 I. 8. ——— *Pleasure*] The same as Acrasy or Acrasia.
 See st. 48. CHURCH.

II.

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,
 Ne ever land beheld, ne living wight,
 Ne ought save perill, still as he did pas :
 Tho, when appeared the third Morrow bright
 Upon the waves to spred her trembling light,
 An hideous roring far away they heard,
 That all their senses filled with affright ;
 And streight they saw the raging surges reard
 Up to theskyes, that them of drowning made affeard.

III.

Said then the Boteman, "Palmer, stere aright,
 And keepe an even course ; for yonder way
 We needes must pas (God doe us well acquight !)
 That is the Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say,
 That deepe engorgeth all this world's pray ;
 Which having swallowd up excessively,
 He soone in vomit up againe doth lay,
 And belcheth forth his superfluity,
 That all the seas for feare doe seeme away to fly.

IV.

"On th' other syde an hideous Rock is pight
 Of mightie magnes stone, whose craggie clift
 Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight,
 Over the waves his rugged armes doth lift,
 And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift
 On whoso cometh nigh ; yet nigh it drawes
 All passengers, that none from it can shift :
 For, whiles they fly that Gulfe's devouring iawes,
 They on the rock are rent, and sunck in helpes
 wawes."

V.

Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes,
 Utill they nigh unto that Gulfe arryve,
 Where streame more violent and greedy growes :
 Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve
 To strike his cares, and mightily doth dryve
 The hollow vessell through the threatfull wave ;
 Which, gaping wide to swallow them alyve
 In th' huge abysses of his engulging grave,
 Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terrour
 rave.

VI.

They, passing by, that grisly mouth did see
 Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,
 That seemd more horrible than hell to bee,
 Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe
 Through which the damned ghosts doen often
 Backe to the world, bad livers to torment : [creep
 But nought that falls into this direfull deepe,
 Ne that approacheth nigh the wyde descent,
 May hacke retourne, but is condemned to be drent.

VII.

On th' other side they saw that perillous Rocke,
 Theatning itselfe on them to ruinate,
 On whose sharp cliftes the ribs of vessels broke ;
 And shivered ships, which had bene wrecked
 Yet stuck with carcases exanimate [late,
 Of such, as having all their substance spent
 In wanton ioyes and lustes interperate,
 Did afterwarde make shipwrack violent
 Both of their life and fame for ever fowly blent.

IV. 9. ——— *in helpes wawes.*] *Waves* put, for the
 sake of the rhyme, for *waves*, or perhaps for *woccs*. HUGHES
 VII. 2. ——— *to ruinate.*] *To fall.* Ital. *ruinare.* TODD

VIII.

Forthy this hight the Rock of vile Reproch,
 A dangerous and detestable place,
 To which nor fish nor fowle did once approach,
 But yelling meawes, with seagullshoars and bace,
 And cormoyraunts, with birds of ravenous race,
 Which still sat wayting on that wastfull clift
 For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,
 After lost credit and consumed thriфт,
 At last them driven hath to this despairefull drift.

IX.

The Palmer, seeing them in safetie past,
 Thus saide ; " Behold th' ensamples in our sightes
 Of lustfull luxurie and thriflesse wast !
 What now is left of miserable wightes,
 Which spent their looser daies in leud delightes,
 But shame and sad reproch, here to be red
 By these rent reliques speaking their ill plights !
 Let all that live hereby be counselled
 To shunne Rock of Reproch, and it as death to
 dread ! "

X.

So forth they rowed ; and that Ferryman
 With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so strong,
 That the hoare waters from his frigot ran,
 And the light hubles daunced all along,
 Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong.
 At last far off they many Islesandes spy
 On every side flotig the floodes emong :
 Then said the Knight ; " Lo ! I the land descry ;
 Therefore, old Syre, thy course doe thereunto
 apply."

XI.

" That may not bee," said then the Ferryman,
 " Least wee unweeting hap to be fordonne :
 For those same Islesandes, seeming now and than,
 Are not firme land, nor any certein wounne,
 But stragling plots, which to and fro doe ronne
 In the wide waters ; therefore are they hight
 The Wandring Islesandes : Therefore doe them
 shonne ;
 For they have oft drawne many a wandring wight
 Into most deadly daunger and distressed plight.

XII.

" Yet well they seeme to him, that farre doth vew,
 Both faire and fruitfull, and the grownd dispreed
 With grassy greene of delectable hew ;
 And the tall trees with leaves appeared
 Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white and red,
 That mote the passengers thereto allure ;
 But whosoever once hath fastened
 His foot thereon, may never it recure,
 But wandreth evermore uncertein and unsure.

XIII.

" As th' isle of Delos whylome, men report,
 Amid th' Aegean sea long time did stray,
 Ne made for shipping any certeine port,
 Till that Latona traveling that way,
 Flying from Iunoes wrath and hard assay,
 Of her fayre twins was there delivered,
 Which afterwards did rule the night and day ;
 Thenceforth it firmly was established,
 And for Apolloes temple highly herried."

xii. 8. ——— recure,] *Recover*. So, in st. 19, *recur'd* for *recover'd*. CHURCH.

xiii. 9. ——— herried,] *Honoured*. TODD.

XIV.

They to him hearken, as beseeemeth meete ;
 And passe on forward : so their way does ly,
 That one of those same Islesandes, which doe fleet
 In the wide sea, they needes must passen by,
 Which seemd so sweet and pleasaunt to the eye,
 That it would tempt a man to touchen there :
 Upon the hanck they sitting did espy
 A daintie Damsell dressing of her heare,
 By whom a little skippet flotig did appeare.

XV.

She, them espying, loud to them can call,
 Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore,
 For she had cause to busie them withall ;
 And therewith lowdly laught : But nathemore
 Would they once turne, but kept on as afore :
 Which when she saw, she left her lockes undight,
 And running to her boat withouten ore,
 From the departing land it launched light,
 And after them did drive with all her power and
 might.

XVI.

Whom overtaking, she in merry sort
 Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly ;
 Now faining dalliance and wanton sport,
 Now throwing forth lewd wordes immodestly ;
 Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly
 Her to rebuke for being loose and light :
 Which not abiding, but more scornfully
 Scoffing at him that did her iustly wite,
 She turnd her bote about, and from them rowed
 quite.

XVII.

That was the wanton Phaedria, which late
 Did ferry him over the Idle Lake :
 Whom nought regarding they kept on their gate,
 And all her vaine allurements did forsake ;
 When them the wary Boteman thus bespake ;
 " Here now behoveth us well to avyde,
 And of our safety good heede to take ;
 For here before a perulous passage lyes,
 Where many Mermayds haunt making false melo-
 dies :

XVIII.

" But by the way there is a great Quicksand,
 And a Whirlepoole of hidden ieopardy ;
 Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an even hand ;
 For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly."
 Scarce had he saide, when hard at hand they spy
 That Quicksand nigh with water covered ;
 But by the checked wave they did descry
 It plaine, and by the sea discoloured :
 It called was the Quikesand of Unthriftyhed.

XIX.

They, passing by, a goodly ship did see,
 Laden from far with precious merchandize,
 And bravely furnished as ship might bee,
 Which through great disaventure, or mesprize,

xvi. 2. *Them gan to bord,*] *To accost*. Often used in this sense by Spenser. Fr. *Aborder*. TODD.

Ibid. ——— *and purpose diversly* ;] That is, and dis- course of different things. CHURCH.

xvi. 8. ——— wite,] *Blame*. TODD.

xvii. 2. ——— *him*] Not the Palmer, but Sir Guyon. CHURCH.

xviii. 7. ——— *the checked wave*] The poet uses *checked* for *chequer'd*, as the context shows. TODD.

Herselfe had ronne into that hazardize ;
Whose mariners and merchants with much toyle
Labour'd in vaine to have recur'd their prize,
And the rich wares to save from pitteous spoyle ;
But neither toyle nor travaill might her backe
recoyle.

xx.

On th' other side they see that perilous Poole,
That called was the Whirlepoole of Decay ;
In which full many had with haplesse doole
Beene suncke, of whom no memorie did stay :
Whose circled waters rapt with whirling sway,
Like to a restlesse wheele, still ronning round,
Did covet, as they passed by that way,
To draw their bote within the utmost bound
Of his wide labyrinth, and then to have them
dround.

xxi.

But th' heedful Boteman strongly forth did stretch
His brawnie arm-s, and all his bodie straine,
That th' utmost sandy breach they shortly fetch,
Whiles the dredd daunger does behind remaine.
Suddeine they see from midst of all the maine
The surging waters like a mountaine rise,
And the great sea, puft up with proude disdaine,
To swell above the measure of his guise,
As threatening to devoure all that his powre despise.

xxii.

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore
Outragiously, as they enraged were,
Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before
His whirling charet for exceeding feare ;
For not one pufte of winde there did appeare ;
That all the three thereat woxe much afraid,
Unweeting what such horroure straunge did reare.
Eftsoones they saw an hideous hoast arrayd
Of huge sea-monsters, such as living sence dismayd :

xxiii.

Most ugly shapes and horrible aspéctes,
Such as dame Nature selfe mote feare to see,
Or shame, that ever should so fowle defects
From her most cunning hand escaped bee ;
All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee : [whales ;
Spring-headed hydres ; and sea-shouldring
Great whirlpooles, which all fishes make to flee ;
Bright scolopendraes arm'd with silver scales ;
Mighty monoceros with unmeasured tayles ;

xxiv.

The dreadful fish, that hath deserv'd the name
Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew ;
The griesly wasserman, that makes his game
The flying ships with swiftnes to pursew ;
The horrible sea-satyre, that doth shew
His fearefull face in time of greatest storme ;
Huge ziffus, whom mariners eschew
No lesse then rockes, as travellers informe ;
And greedy rosmarines with visages deforme :

xxi. 3. ——— sandy breach they shortly fetch,] What is made by the breaking in of the sea, they call a *breach*. They *fetch*, that is, they come up to, arrive at. UPON.
xxii. 3. Or shame,] *Be ashamed*. CHURCH.
xxiii. 6. *Spring-headed hydres* ;] That is, hydres with heads springing or budding forth from their bodies. UPON.
Ibid. ——— *sea-shouldring whales* ;] Whales that shouldered on the seas before them. UPON.

xxv.

All these, and thousand thousands many more,
And more deformed monsters thousand fold,
With dreadfull noise and hollow rombling rore
Came rushing, in the fomy waves enrold,
Which seem'd to fly for feare them to behold :
Ne wonder, if these did the Knight appall ;
For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold,
Be hut as bugs to fearen babes withall,
Compared to the creatures in the seas entrall.

xxvi.

"Feare nought," then saide the Palmer well aviz'd,
"For these same monsters are not these in deed,
But are into these fearefull shapes disguiz'd
By that same wicked Witch, to worke us dreed,
And draw from on this journey to proceed."
Tho, lifting up his vertuous staffe on hyc,
He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed,
And all that dreadfull armie fast gan flye
Into great Tethys bosome, where they hidden lye.

xxvii.

Quit from that danger forth their course they kept ;
And as they went they heard a ruefull cry
Of one that wayld and pittifully wept,
That through the sea th' resounding plaints did flye :
At last they in an Island did espy
A seemely Maiden, sitting by the shore,
That with great sorrow and sad agony
Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,
And lowd to them for succour called evermore.

xxviii.

Which Guyon hearing, streight his Palmer bad
To stere the bote towards that dolefull Mayd,
That he might know and ease her sorrow sad :
Who, him avizing better, to him sayd ;
"Faire Sir, be not displeas'd if disobayd :
For ill it were to hearken to her cry ;
For she is inly nothing ill apayd ;
But onely womaish fine forgery,
Your stubborne hart t' affect with fraile infirmity :

xxix.

"To which when she your courage hath inclin'd
Through foolish pitty, then her guilefull bayt
She will enbosome deeper in your mind,
And for your ruine at the last awayt."
The Knight was ruled, and the Boteman strayt
Held on his course with stayed stedfastnesse,
Ne ever shroncke, ne ever sought to bayt
His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse ;
But with his oares did sweepe the watry wilder-
nesse.

xxx.

And now they nigh approached to the sted
Whereas those Mermayds dwelt : It was a still
And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered
With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill ;

xxvi. 4. *By that same wicked Witch*,] *Acrasia*. CHURCH.
xxvi. 5. *And draw from on this journey to proceed*,] And to draw us from proceeding on this journey ; a Grecism, from to proceed, *ἀπὸ τοῦ προχωρῆσαι*. UPON.
xxviii. 7. *For she is inly nothing ill apayd* ;] That is, dissatisfied. UPON.
xxix. 7. ——— *ne ever sought to bayt*
His tyred armes ;] To bayt here signifies to *rest*. CHURCH.

On th' other side an high rocke toured still,
That twixt them both apleasaut port they made,
And did like an halfe theatre fulfill :
There those five Sisters had continuall trade,
And used to hath themselves in that deceitfull
shade.

xxx.

They were faire Ladies, till they fondly striv'd
With th' Heliconian Maides for maystery ;
Of whom they over-comen were depriv'd
Of their proud beautie, and th' one moyty
Transform'd to fish for their bold surquedry ;
But th' upper halfe their hew retayned still,
And their sweet skill in wonted melody ;
Which ever after they abusd to ill,
T' allure weake travellers, whom gotten they did
kill.

xxxii.

So now to Guyon, as he passed by,
Their pleasaut tunes they sweetly thus applyde ;
" O thou fayre sonne of gentle Faëry
That art in mightie armes most magnifide
Above all Knights that ever battell tryde,
O turne thy rudder hetherward awhile :
Here may thy storme-bett vessel safely ryde ;
This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,
The worldes sweet In from paine and wearisome
turmoyle."

xxxiii.

With that the rolling sea, resounding soft,
In his big base them fitly answered ;
And on the rocke the waves breaking aloft
A solemne meane unto them measured ;
The whiles sweet zephyrus lowd whisteled
His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony ;
Which Guyons senses softly tickeled,
That he the Boteman bad row easily,
And let him heare some part of their rare melody.

xxxiv.

But him the Palmer from that vanity
With temperate advice discourseled,
That they it past, and shortly gan descry
The land to which their course they levelled ;
When suddainly a grosse fog over spred
With his dull vapour all that desert has,
And heavens chearefull face enveloped,
That all things one, and one as nothing was,
And this great universe seemd one confused mas.

xxxv.

Thereat they greatly were dismayd, ne wist
How to direct theyr way in darkenes wide,
But feard to wander in that wastefull mist,
For tomling into mischiefe unespyde :
Worse is the daunger hidden then descride.
Suddainly an innumerable flight
Of harmefull fowles about them fluttering cride,
And with their wicked wings them ofte did smight,
And sore annoyed, groping in that griesly night.

xxxvi.

Even all the nation of unfortunate
And fatall birds about them flocked were,

xxx. 7. *And did like an halfe theatre fulfill :* That is, *And did fulfill, or complete, the whole, like to an amphitheatre.* UPRON.

xxxi. 5. — *their bold surquedry ;*] *Pride.* TODD.
xxxv. 4. *For tomling &c.*] That is, *Let* they should tumble, or, that they might not tumble. CHURCH.

Such as by nature men abhorre and hate ;
The ill-faste owle, deaths dreadfull messengere ;
The hoars night-raven, trump of dolefull dreere ;
The lether-winged batt, dayes enemy ;
The ruefull strich, still waiting on the bere ;
The whistler shrill, that whoso heares doth dy ;
The hellish harpyes, prophets of sad destiny :

xxxvii.

All those, and all that els does horror breed,
About them flew, and fild their sayles with feare :
Yet stayd they not, but forward did proceed,
Whiles th' one did row, and th' other stify steare ;
Till that at last the weather gan to cleare,
And the faire land itselfe did playnly show.
Said then the Palmer ; " Lo ! where does appeare
The sacred soile where all our perills grow !
Therefore, Sir Knight, your ready arms about you
throw."

xxxviii.

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke,
The whiles the nimble bote so well her sped,
That with her crooked keele the land she strooke :
Then forth the noble Guyon sallied,
And his sage Palmer that him goverued ;
But th' other by his hote behind did stay.
They marched fayrly forth, of nought ydred,
Both firmly armd for every hard assay,
With constancy and care, gainst daunger and dismay.

xxxix.

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing
Of many beasts, that roard outrageously,
As if that hungers poynt or Venus sting
Had them enraged with fell surquedry ;
Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,
Untill they came in vew of those wilde beasts,
Who all attonce, gaping full greedily,
And rearing fiercely their upstaring crests,
Ran towards to devour those unexpected guests.

xl.

But, soone as they approcht with deadly threat,
The Palmer over them his staffe upheld,
His mighty staffe, that could all charmes defeat :
Eftsoones their stubborne corages were queld,
And high advanced crests downe meekely feld ;
Instead of fraying they themselves did feare,
And trembled, as them passing they beheld :
Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare,
All monsters to subdew to him that did it beare.

xli.

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,
Of which Caducëus whilome was made,
Caducëus, the rod of Mercury,
With which he wons the Stygian realmes invade
Through ghastly horror and eternal shade ;
Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage,
And Orcus tame, whome nothing can persuade,
And rule the Furies when they most doe rage :
Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer sage.

xxxvi. 7. *The ruefull strich,*] *The scritch-owl, στρίγξ, strīx.* UPRON.

xxxvii. 2. — *and fild their sayles with feare :*] That is, *And filled their sailes with fearful objects.* UPRON.

xxxvii. 8. *The sacred soile*] *The sacred soile is the enchanted soile, as sacra is used by the Italian poets : or cursed, abominable ; for he calls it "the cursed land,"* F. Q. ii. l. 61. UPRON.

XLII.

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe arryve
Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate ;
A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve,
That natures worke by art can imitate :
In which whatever in this worldly state
Is sweete and pleasing unto living sense,
Or that may dayntest fantasy aggrate,
Was poured forth with plentifull dispence,
And made there to abound with lavish affluence.

XLIII.

Goodly it was enclosed rownd about,
Aswell their entred guesstes to keep within,
As those unruly beasts to hold without ;
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin :
Nought feard their force that fortilage to win,
But Wisedomes powre, and Temperaunces might,
By which the mightiest things efferced bin :
And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce light,
Rather for pleasure then for battery or fight.

XLIV.

Yt framed was of precious yvory,
That seemd a worke of admirable witt ;
And therein all the famous history
Of Iason and Medæa was ywritt ;
Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt ;
His goodly conquest of the golden fleecce,
His falsed fayth, and love too lightly flitt ;
The wondred Argo, which in venturous peeces
First through the Euxine seas bore all the flouwr of
Greece.

XLV.

Ye might have seene the frothy billowes fry
Under the ship as thorough them she went,
That seemd the waves were into yvory,
Or yvory into the waves were sent ;
And otherwhere the snowy substaunce sprent
With vermell, like the boyes blood therein shed,
A piteous spectacle did represent ;
And otherwhiles with gold besprinkled
Yt seemd th' enchanted flame, which did Cræusa
wed.

XLVI.

All this and more might in that goodly gate
Be red, that ever open stood to all
Which thether came : but in the porch there sate
A comely personage of stature tall,
And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall,
That travelers to him seemd to entize ;
His looser garment to the ground did fall,
And flew about his heeles in wanton vize,
Not fit for speedy pace or mauly exercize.

XLVII.

They in that place him Genius did call :
Not that celestiall Powre, to whom the care
Of life, and generation of all
That lives, perteines in charge particulare,
Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,
And strange phantomes doth lett us ofte foreseee,
And ofte of secret ills bids us beware :

XLII. 8. — dispence.] *Expence, profusion.* TOMM.
XLIV. 8. — peeces] *Castle.* Ships anciently were so
called CHURCH.

XLV. 5. — sprent] *Sprinkled or spread over.* TOMM.
XLV. 8. *And otherwhiles]* So all the editions. I think
it should be *otherwhere*, as in line 5th. CHURCH.

That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see,
Yet each doth in himselfe it well perceive to see :

XLVIII.

Therefore a god him sage Antiquity
Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call :
But this same was to that quite contrary,
The foe of life, that good envyes to all,
That secretly doth us procure to fall
Through guilefull semblants, which he makes us
He of this Gardin had the governall, [see :
And Pleasures Porter was devizd to hee,
Holding a staffe in hand for more formalitee.

XLIX.

With diverse flowres he daintily was deckt,
And strowed rownd about ; and by his side
A mighty mazer bowle of wine was sett,
As if it had to him bene sacrificde ;
Wherewith all new-come guessts he gratyfyde :
So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by ;
But he his ydle curtesie deside,
And overthrew his bowle disdainfully,
And broke his staffe, with which he charmed sem-
blants sly.

L.

Thus being entred, they beheld arownd
A large and spacious plaine, on every side
Strowed with pleasauns ; whose fayre grassy
grownd
Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide
With all the ornaments of Florae pride,
Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne
Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride
Did decke her, and too lavishly adorne,
When forth from virgin bowre she comes in th'
early morne.

LI.

Thereto the heavens alwayes joviall
Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast state,
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall
Their tender buds or leaves to violate ;
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate,
T' afflict the creatures which therein did dwell ;
But the milde ayre with season moderate
Gently attempted, and disposd so well,
That still it breathed forth sweet spirit and holesom
smell :

LII.

More sweet and holesome then the pleasaunt hill
Of Rhodope, on which the nimphe, that bore
A gyant babe, herselfe for griefe did kill ;
Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of yore
Fayre Daphne Phoebus hart with love did gore ;
Or Ida, where the gods lov'd to repayre,
Whenever they their heavenly bowres forlore ;
Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses fayre ;
Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden mote compayre.

LIII.

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre aspéct
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight

XLVII. 8. — *our Selfe,*] Our Soul. CHURCH.
XLIX. 9. — *with which he charmed semblants sly.*] *Either sly* is here used adverbially for *styly*, cunningly ;
with which he *cunningly* charmed, i. e. conjured up
phantoms : or "semblants sly," and "guilefull semblants,"
st. 48. are synonymous expressions. CHURCH.

To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect;
 But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,
 Brydling his will and maystering his might:
 Till that he came unto another gate;
 No gate, but like one, being goodly dight [dilate
 With bowes and braunches, which did broad
 Their clasping armes in wanton wreathings intri-
 cate:

LIV.

So fashioned a porch with rare device,
 Archt over head with an embracing vine,
 Whose bounches hanging downe seemd to entice
 All passers-by to taste their luscious wine,
 And did themselves into their hands incline,
 As freely offering to be gathered;
 Some deepe empurpled as the hyacine,
 Some as the rubine laughing sweetely red,
 Some like faire emeraudes, not yet well ripened:

LV.

And them amongst some were of burnislt gold,
 So made by art to beautify the rest,
 Which did themselves amongst the leaves enfold,
 As lurking from the vew of covetous guest,
 That the weake boughes with so rich load oppress
 Did bow adowne as overburdened.
 Under that porch a comely Dame did rest
 Clad in fayre weedes but fowle disordered,
 And garments loose that seemd unmeet for woman-
 hed:

LVI.

In her left hand a cup of gold she held,
 And with her right the riper fruit did reach,
 Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,
 Into her cup she scrud with daintie breach
 Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,
 That so faire winepresse made the wine more
 sweet:
 Thereof she usd to give to drinke to each,
 Whom passing by she happened to meet:
 It was her guise all straungers goodly so to greet.

LVII.

So she to Guyon offred it to tast;
 Who, taking it out of her tender hond,
 The cup to ground did violently cast,
 That all in peeces it was broken fond,
 And with the liquor stained all the lond:
 Wherewith Excesse exceedinly was wroth,
 Yet not the same amend, ne yet withstond,
 But suffered him to passe, all were she loth;
 Who, nought regarding her displeasure, forward
 goth.

LVIII.

There the most daintie paradise on ground
 Itselfe doth offer to his sober eye,
 In which all pleasures plenteously abownd,
 And none does others happinesse envye;
 The painted flowres; the trees upshooting hye;
 The dales for shade; the hilles for breathing space;
 The trembling groves; the christall running by;
 And, that which all faire workes doth most
 aggrace, [place.
 The art, which all that wrought, appeared in no

LIV. 5. ——— incline.] *Bend down.* Lat. *inclino.* CHURCH.LVI. 4. ——— daintie] *Delicate.* CHURCH.LVI. 5. ——— fine] *Taper, thin.* CHURCH.

LIX.

One would have thought, (so cunningly the rude
 And scorned partes were mingled with the fine,
 That Nature had for wantonnesse ensude
 Art, and that Art at Nature did repine;
 So striving each th' other to undermine,
 Each did the others worke more beautify;
 So diff'ring both in wills agreed in fine:
 So all agreed, through sweete diversity,
 This Gardin to adorne with all variety.

LX.

And in the midst of all a fountaine stood,
 Of richest substance that on earth might bee,
 So pure and shiny that the silver flood
 Through every channell running one might see;
 Most goodly it with curious ymageree
 Was over-wrought, and shapes of naked boyes,
 Of which some seemd with lively iollitee
 To fly about, playing their wanton toyes,
 Whylest others did themselves embay in liquid
 ioyes.

LXI.

And over all of purest gold was spread
 A trayle of yvie in his native hew;
 For the rich metall was so coloured,
 That wight, who did not well avis'd it vew,
 Would surely deeme it to be yvie trew:
 Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe,
 That themselves dipping in the silver dew
 Their fleecy flowres they fearfully did steepe,
 Which drops of christall seemd for wantones to
 weep.

LXII.

Infinit streames continually did well
 Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,
 The which into an ample laver fell,
 And shortly grew to so great quantitie,
 That like a litle lake it seemd to bee;
 Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight,
 That through the waves one might the bottom see,
 All pav'd beneath with jasper shining bright,
 That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle
 upright.

LXIII.

And all the margent round about was sett
 With shady laurell trees, thence to defend
 The sunny beames which on the billowes bett,
 And those which therein bathed mote offend.
 As Guyon hapned by the same to wend,
 Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde,
 Which therein bathing seemd to contend
 And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde
 Their dainty partes from vew of any which them
 eyd.

LXIV.

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight
 Above the waters, and then downe againe
 Her plong, as over-maystered by might,
 Where both awhile would covered remaine,
 And each the other from to rise restraine;
 The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a vele,
 So through the christall waves appeared plaine:

LX. 9. ——— embay] In its primary sense, *bathe*; in its metaphorical *delight* or *cherish*. TOND.

LXIII. 2 ——— to defend

The sunny beames] That is, to keep off. UPTON.

Then suddenly both would themselves unhele,
And th' amorous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes
revele.

LXV.

As that faire starre, the messenger of morne,
His deawy face out of the sea doth reare :
Or as the Cyprian goddess, newly borne
Of th' ocean's fruitfull froth, did first appeare :
Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare
Chrystalline humor dropped downe apace.
Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him neare,
And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace ;
His stubborne brest gan secret pleasaunce to embrace.

LXVI.

The wanton Maidens him espying, stood
Gazing awhile at his unwanted guise ;
Then th' one herselfe low ducked in the flood,
Abasht that her a straunged did advise :
But th' other rather higher did arise,
And her two lilly paps aloft displayd,
And all, that might his melting hart entyse
To her delights, she unto him bewrayd ;
The rest, hidd underneath, him more desirous made.

LXVII.

With that the other likewise up arose,
And her faire lockes, which formerly were bound
Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose,
Which flowing long and thick her cloth'd around,
And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd :
So that faire spectacle from him was reft,
Yet that which reft it no lesse faire was fownd :
So hidd in lockes and waves from lookers theft,
Nought but her lovely face she for his looking
left.

LXVIII.

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall,
That blushing to her laughter gave more grace,
And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.
Now when they spyde the Knight to slacke his pace
Them to behold, and in his sparkling face
The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare,
Their wanton merriments they did encrease,
And to him beckned to approach more neare,
And shewd him many sights that corage cold could
reare :

LXIX.

On which when gazing him the Palmer saw,
He much rebukt those wandring eyes of his,
And counsell'd well him forward thence did draw.
Now are they come nigh to the Bowre of Blis,
Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis ;
When thus the Palmer ; " Now, Sir, well advise ;
For here the end of all our travaill is :
Here wonnes Acrasia, whom we must surpris,
Els she will slip away, and all our drift despise."

LXX.

Eftsoones they heard a most melodious sound,
Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,
Such as attonce might not on living ground,
Save in this paradise, be heard elsewhere :
Right hard it was for wight which did it heare,
To read what manner musicke that mote bee ;
For all that pleasing is to living eare

LXIV. 8. — unbele,] *Uncover.* TODD.

Was there consorted in one harmonie ;
Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, waters, all
agree:

LXXI.

The ioyous birdes, shrouded in chearefull shade,
Their notes unto the voice attempred sweet ;
Th' angelical soft trembling voyces made
To th' instruments divine response meet ;
The silver-sounding instruments did meet
With the base murmure of the waters fall ;
The waters fall with difference discreet,
Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did call ;
The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.

LXXII.

There, whence that music seemed heard to bee,
Was the faire Witch herselfe now solacing
With a new lover, whom, through sorcere
And witchcraft, she from farre did thether bring :
There she had him now laid a slombering
In secret shade after long wanton ioyes ;
Whilst round about them pleasantly did sing
Many faire ladies and lascivious boyes,
That ever mixt their song with light licentious toyes.

LXXIII.

And all that while right over him she hong
With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight,
As seeking medicine whence she was stong,
Or greedily depasturing delight ;
And oft incluing downe with kisses light,
For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,
And through his humid eyes did sucke his spright,
Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd ;
Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his case she rew.

LXXIV.

The whiles some one did chaunt this lovely lay ;
*Ah ! see, whosa fayre thing doest faire to see,
In springing flowre the image of thy day !
Ah ! see the virgin rose, how sweetly shee
Doth first peepe forth with bashfull modestee,
That fairer seemes the lesse ye see her may !
Lo ! see soome after how more bold and free
Her bared bosome she doth broad display ;
Lo ! see soome after how she fades and falls away !*

LXXV.

*So passeth, in the passing of a day,
Of mortall life the leafe, the bud, the flowre ;
Ne more doth flourish after first decay,
That earst was sought to deck both bed and bowre
Of many a lady' and many a paramoure !
Gather therefore the rose whilst yet is prime,
For soome comes age that will her pride deflowre :
Gather the rose of love whilst yet is time,
Whilst loving thou mayst loved be with equall crime.*

LXXVI.

He ceast ; and then gan all the quire of birdes
Their diverse notes t' attune unto his lay,
As in approvanee of his pleasing wordes.
The constant Payre heard all that he did say,
Yet swarved not, but kept their forward way
Through many covert groves and thickets close,
In which they creeping did at last display

LXXIV. 3. — *the image of thy day !*] The emblem of thy life. CHURCH.LXXVI. 4. *The constant Payre*] *The resolute, persevering companions.* Lat. *constans.* CHURCH.

That wanton Lady with her lover lose,
Whose sleepeie head she in her lap did soft dispose.

LXXVII.

Upon a bed of roses she was layd,
As faint through heat, or dight to pleasant sin ;
And was arayd, or rather disarayd,
All in a vele of silke and silver thin,
That hid no whit her alablaster skin,
But rather shewd more white, if more might bee :
More subtil web Arachne cannot spin ;
Nor the fine nets, which oft we woven see
Of scorched deaw, do not in th' ayre more lightly flee.

LXXVIII.

Her snowy brest was bare to ready spoyle
Of hungry eies, which n'ote therewith be fid ;
And yet, through languour of her late sweet toyle,
Few drops, more cleare then nectar, forth distild,
That like pure orient perles adowne it trild ;
And her faire eyes, sweet smyling in delight,
Moystened their fierie beames, with which she
thrild
Fraile harts, yet quenched not ; like starry light,
Which, sparkling on the silent waves, does seeme
more bright.

LXXIX.

The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to be
Some goodly swayne of honorable place ;
That certes it great pittie was to see
Him his nobility so fowle deface :
A sweet regard and amiable grace,
Mixed with manly sternesse, did appeare,
Yet sleeping, in his well-proportiond face ;
And on his tender lips the downy heare
Did now but freshly spring, and silken blossoms
beare.

LXXX.

His warlike armes, the ydle instruments
Of sleeping praise, were long upon a tree ;
And his brave shield, full of old mouiments,
Was fowly ras't, that none the signes might see ;
Ne for them ne for honour cared hee ;
Ne ought that did to his advancement tend ;
But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuree,
His dayes, his goods, his bodie he did spend :
O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend !

LXXXI.

The noble Elfe and carefull Palmer drew
So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull game,
That suddain forth they on them rusht, and threw
A subtil net, which only for that same
The skilfull Palmer formally did frame :
So held them under fast ; the whiles the rest
Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.
The faire Enchauntresse, so unwares opprest,
Tryde all her arts and all her sleights thence out
to wrest ;

LXXXII.

And eke her lover strove ; but all in vaine :
For that same net so cunningly was wound,
That neither guile nor force might it distraine.
They tooke them both, and both them strongly
bound

LXXXIII. 9. — the silent waves,] Perhaps by silent
waves Spenser means *quiet*, not violently moved. JORTIN.

LXXXI. 4. — for that same] That is, for that purpose.
TODD.

In captive bandes, which there they readie found :
But her in chaines of adamant he tyde ;
For nothing else might keepe her safe and sound :
But Verdant (so hee high) he soone untyde,
And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde.

LXXXIII.

But all those pleasaunt bowres, and pallace brave,
Guyon broke downe with rigour pitiless ;
Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save
Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,
But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse ;
Their groves he feld ; their gardins did deface ;
Their arbers spoyle ; their cabinets suppress ;
Their banquet-houses burne ; their buildings race ;
And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest place.

LXXXIV.

Then led they her away, and eke that Knight
They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad :
The way they came, the same retourn'd they
Till they arrived where they lately had [right,
Charm'd those wild beasts that rag'd with furie
Which, nowawaking, fierce at them gan fly, [mad ;
As in their Mistresse reskew, whom they lad ;
But them the Palmer soone did pacify.
Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes which
there did ly.

LXXXV.

Sayd he ; " These seeming beastes are men in deed,
Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed thus ;
Whylome her lovers, which her lustes did feed,
Now turned into figures hideous,
According to their mindes like monstrous."
" Sad end," quoth he, " of life imtemperate,
And mourneful meed of ioyes delicious !
But, Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,
Let them returned be unto their former state."

LXXXVI.

Streightway he with his vertuous staffe them strooke,
And streight of beastes they comely men became ;
Yet being men they did unmanly looke,
And stared ghastly ; some for inward shame,
And some for wrath to see their captive Dame :
But one above the rest in speciall
That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle by name,
Repynd greatly, and did him miscall
That had from hoggish forme him brought to
naturall.

LXXXVII.

Saide Guyon ; " See the mind of beastly man,
That hath so soone forgot the excellence
Of his creation, when he life began,
That now he chooseth with vile difference
To be a beast, and lacke intelligence !"
To whom the Palmer thus ; " The donghill kinde
Delightes in filth and fowle incontinence ;
Let Gryll be Gryll, and have his hoggish minde ;
But let us hence depart whilest wether serves and
winde."

[Thus are we come to the end of the second book. The
first book which we have already examined, was religious ;
this treats of the foundation of all moral virtue, TEMPER-
ANCE.

The connection of this book with the former, is visible,

LXXXIII. 7. — cabinets] *Cots*, the diminutive of *cabin*.
TODD.

LXXXV. 1. Sayd he ;] *The Faerie*. CHURCH.

not only from the whole thread of the story, but from lesser instances. See B. i. C. xii. st. 36, where the false prophet is bound, and yet escapes, and is now gone forth to trouble Fairy land, whose destruction will not be accomplished, till the throne of the Fairy queen is established in righteousness, and in all moral virtues. "He (*Archimago*) must be loosed a little season: He shall be loosed out of prison." Compare *Revel.* xix. 20, xx. 3, with B. i. C. xii. st. 36. And B. ii. C. i. st. 1.—The false prophet and deceiver had almost by his lies work'd the destruction of Sir Guyon and the Redcrosse Knight, B. ii. C. i. st. 8. The Christian Knight was well warn'd, and well armed against his subtleties. Our moral Knight is now his chief object; who is sent upon a high adventure by the Fairy Queen, to bring captive to her court an Enchantress named Acrasia, in whom is imaged sensual pleasure or intemperance. The various adventures which he meets with by the way, are such as show the virtues and happy effects of temperance, or the vices and ill-consequences of intemperance.

The opening with the adventure of the bloody-handed babe, unites the beginning and end, and is conceived with great art. How opportunely does Prince Arthur appear, the hero of the poem! who is seeking the Fairy Queen, and by his adventures making himself worthy of that *Glory* to which he aspires. He preserves the life of Sir Guyon, and afterwards utterly extirpates that mis-created crew of scoundrels, which, with their meagre, melancholy Captain, were besieging the Castle of Alma.—Shall I guard the reader against one piece of poor curiosity? not enviously to pry into kitchens, out-houses, sinks, &c., while he is viewing a palace: nor to look for moles and freckles, while he is viewing a Medicean Venus. I will

venture to say, if he finds some things too easy, he will find other things too hard. "Wisdom hath builded her house, she hath heavn out her seven pillars," *Prov.* ix. 1 This allegorical house is built with some spoils from the Pythagorean and Socratick writers—Whilst the Prince is extirpating the foes of Alma, Sir Guyon sets forward on his quest, and attacks the Enchantress in her own Island. And here our poet has introduced, keeping in view his general allegory, all those specious miracles, to which Homer, mingling truth with fable, had given a poetical sanction long before; as of Scylla and Charybdis, the songs of the Syrens, floating Islands, men by enchantments and sensuality turned into beasts, &c. which marvellous kind of stories Romance-writers seldom forget. Circe, Alcina, Armida, are all rifled to dress up Acrasia.

The characters in this book are the sage Palmer, the sober Guyon, the magnificent Prince Arthur, all well opposed to the cunning Archimago, and furious Sarazios. Braggadochio, and Trompart, are a kind of comick characters. Medina, Alma, and Belphebe, are quite opposite to Medina's sisters, as likewise to Phædrina and Acrasia.

I am thoroughly persuaded myself, that Spenser has many historical allusions, and in this light I often consider his poem, as well as in that moral allegory, which is more obvious. In the last verse of this book, the Palmer says, "But let us hence depart whilest wether serves and wind." Sir Guyon and the Palmer leave the Island of Acrasia, taking the Enchantress along with them, whom they immediately send to the Queen of Fairy land; they then repair to the house of Alma, and join the Briton Prince. [UPON.]

THE THIRDE BOOK OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAYNING

THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.

I.
It falls me here to write of Chastity,
That fayrest vertue, far above the rest:
For which which needes me fetch from Fairy
Forreine ensamples it to have exprest?
Sith it is shrined in my Soveraines brest,
And formd so lively in each perfect part,
That to all Ladies, which have it profest,
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart;
If pourtrayd it might bee by any living art:

II.
But living art may not least part expresse,
Nor life-resembling pencill it can paynt:
All were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles,
His dædale hand would faile and greatly faynt,
And her perfections with his error taynt:
Ne poets witt, that passeth painter farre

n. 3. All were it] *Although* it were, CRUNCH.

r. 4. His dædale hand] *Dædale hand*, i. e. ingenious, cunning hand: ἀπό τοῦ δαιδάλου, *artificiosæ fingere*. UPTON.

In picturing the parts of beauty daynt,
So hard a workemanship adventure darre,
For fear through want of words her excellence to
marre.

III.
How then shall I, apprentice of the skill
That whilome in divinest wits did rayne,
Presume so high to stretch mine humble quill?
Yet now my lucklesse loth doth me constrayne
Hereto perforce: But, O dredd Soverayne,
Thus far forth pardon, sith that choicest witt
Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure playne,
That I in colourd showes may shadow itt,
And antique praises unto present persons fitt.

IV.
But if in living colours, and right hew,
Thyselfe thou covet to see pictured,

n. 7. daynt,] Old French, *dain*, daintie, fine, &c. TODD.

Who can it doe more lively, or more trew,
Then that sweete verse, with nectar sprinkeled,
In which a gracious servaunt pictured
His Cynthia, his heavens fayrest light?
That with his melting sweetnes ravished,
And with the wonders of her beam's bright,
My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

v.

But let that same delicious poet lend
A little leave unto a rusticke Muse
To sing his Mistresse prayse; and let him mend,
If ought amis her liking may abuse:
Ne let his fayrest Cynthia refuse
In mirrours more then one herselfe to see;
But either Gloriana let her chuse,
Or in Belphoebe fashioned to bee;
In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare chastitee.

CANTO I.

Guyon encountreth Britomart:
Fayre Florinell is chased:
Duesaires traines and Malcega-
taes champions are defaced.

i.

THE famous Briton Prince and Faery Knight,
After long ways and perilous paines endur'd,
Having their weary limbes to perfect plight
Restord, and sory wounds right well recur'd,
Of the layre Alma greatly were procur'd
To make there lenger sojourne and abode;
But, when thereto they might not be allur'd
From seeking praise and deeds of armes abroad,
They courteously conge tooke, and forth together yode.

ii.

But the captiv'd Acrasia he sent,
Because of travaill long, a nigher way,
With a strong gard, all reskew to prevent,
And her to Faery Court safe to convey;
That her for wignes of his hard assay
Unto his Faery Queene he might present:
But he himselfe betooke another way,
To make more trial of his hardiment,
And seek adventures, as he with Prince Arthure
went.

iii.

Long so they traveled through wastefull wayes,
Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did wonne,
To hunt for glory and renowned prayse:
Full many countreyes they did overronne,
From the uprising to the setting sunne,
And many hard adventures did atchieve;
Of all the which they honour ever wonne,
Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve,
And to recover right for such as wrong did grieve.

iv.

At last, as through an open plaine they yode,
They spide a Knight that towards prick'd fayre;
And him beside an aged Squire there rode,

iv. 5. *In which &c.*] *This gracious servaunt* is Sir W. Raleigh, our poet's truly honoured friend, & *Timos*, imaged and shadowed in this, as well as in the other books, under the name of *Timias*. UPTON.

iii. 2. ——— wonne.] *Inhabit*. TODD.

That seemd to couch under his shield three-
square,
As if that age hadd him that burden spare,
And yield it those that stouter could it wield:
He, them espying, gan himselfe prepare,
And on his arme address his goodly shield
That bore a lion passant in a golden field.

v.

Which seeing good Sir Guyon deare besought
The Prince, of grace, to let him ronne that turue,
He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught
His poynant speare, and sharply gan to spurne
His fony steed, whose fiery fecte did burne
The verdant gras as he thereon did tread;
Ne did the other hacke his foote returne,
But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
And bent his dreadful speare against the others
head.

vi.

They beene ymett, and both theyr points arriv'd;
But Guyon drove so furious and fell,
That seemd both shield and plate it would have
Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his sell, [riv'd];
But made him stagger, as he were not well:
But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware,
Nigh a speares length behiud his crouper fell;
Yet in his fall so well himselfe he bare,
That mischievous mischaunce his life and limbs
did spare.

vii.

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke;
For never yet, sith warlike armes he bore
And shivering speare in bloody field first shooke.
He fownd himselfe dishonored so sore.
Ah! gentlest Knight, that ever armor bore,
Let not thee grieve dismounted to have beene,
And brought to grownd, that never wast before
For not thy fault, but secret powre unscene;
That speare enchanted was which layd thee on
the greene!

viii.

But weenedst thou what wight thee overthrew,
Much greater grieve and shamefuller regret
For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew,
That of a single Damzell thou wert met
On equal plaine, and there so hard besett:
Even the famous Britomart it was,
Whom straunge adventure did from Britayne fett
To seeke her lover (love far sought alas!)
Whose image shee had seene in Venus looking-glas.

ix.

Full of disdainefull wrath, he fierce uprose
For to revenge that fowle reprochfull shame,
And snatching his bright sword began to close
With her on foot, and stoutly forward came;
Dye rather would he then endure that same.
Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare
His toward perill, and untoward blame,
Which by that new rencounter he should reare;
For Death sate on the point of that enchanted
speare:

x.

And hasting towards him gan fayre perswade
Not to provoke misfortune, nor to weene

ix. 8. *Which by that new rencounter &c.*] *Rencounter* is an accidental combat or adventure. Fr. *Rencontre*. TODD.
K

His speares default to mend with cruell blade ;
 For by his mightie science he had seenc
 The secrete vertne of that weapon keene,
 That mortall puissaunce mote not withstand :
 Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy beene !
 Great hazard were it, and adventure fond,
 o loose long-gotten honour with one evill hond.

xi.

By such good meanes he him discourseled
 From prosecuting his revenging rage :
 And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,
 His wrathfull will with reason to aswage ;
 And laud the blame, not to his carriage,
 But to his starting steed that swarv'd asyde,
 And to the ill purveyaunce of his Page,
 That had his furnitures not firmly tyde :
 So is his angry corage fayrly pacifyde.

xii.

Thus réconciliation was betwene them knitt,
 Through goodly temperaunce and affection chaste ;
 And either vovd with all their power and witt
 To let not others honour be defaste
 Of friend or foe, whoever it embaste,
 Ne armes to bear against the others syde :
 In which accord the Prince was also plaste,
 And with that golden chaine of concord tyde :
 So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere did ryde.

xiii.

O, goodly usage of those antique tymes,
 In which the sword was servaunt unto right ;
 When not for malice and contentions crymes,
 But all for prayse, and prooffe of manly might,
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight :
 Then honour was the meed of victory,
 And yet the vanquished had no despight :
 Let later age that noble use envy,
 Vyle rancor to avoid and cruel surquedry !

xiv.

Long they thus travelled in friendly wise,
 Through countreyes wastic, and eke well edifyde,
 Seeking adventures hard, to exercise
 Their puissaunce, whylome full dernelly tryde :
 At length they came into a forest wyde,
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling sownd
 Full griesly seemd : Therein they long did ryde,
 Yet tract of living creature none they fownd,
 Save beares, lyons, and buls, which romed them
 arownd.

xv.

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,
 Upon a milk-white palfrey all alone,
 A goodly Lady did foreby them rush,
 Whose face did seeme as cleare as christall stone,
 And eke, through feare, as white as whalés bone :
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
 And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,
 Which fiedd so fast that nothing mote him hold,
 And scarce them leasure gave her passing to behold.

xvi.

Still as she fledd her eye she backward threw,
 As fearing evill that poursewd her fast ;

xiii. 8. — envy.] *Viewith.* Fr. *envier.* CHURCH.

xiv. 2. — well edifyde,] *Well built.* TODD.

xiv. 4. — dernelly] *Dernly* perhaps is here used in the sense of *dearly*, i. e. *earnestly.* TODD.

And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,
 Loosely disperst with puff of every blast :
 All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast
 His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dispredd,
 At sight whereof the people stand aghast ;
 But the sage wisard telles, as he has redd,
 That it impórtunes death and dolefull dreyrhydd.

xvii.

So as they gazed after her awhyle,
 Lo ! where a griesly foster forth did rush,
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle :
 His tyreling-jade he fiersly forth did push
 Through thicke and thin, both overbanck and bush,
 In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,
 That from his gory sydes the blood did gush :
 Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,
 And in his clownish hand a sharp bore-speare he
 shooke.

xviii.

Which outrage when those gentle Knights did see,
 Full of great envy and fell gealosy
 They stayd not to avise who first should bee,
 But all spurd after, fast as they mote fly,
 To reskew her from shamefull villany.
 The Prince and Guyon equally bylive
 Herselfe poursewd, in hope to win thereby
 Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame alive :
 But after the foule foster Timias did strive.

xix.

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant mind
 Would not so lightly follow Beanties chace,
 Ne reckt of Ladies love, did stay behynd ;
 And them awayted there a certaine space,
 To weet if they would turne backe to that place :
 But, when she saw them gone, she forward went,
 As lay her journey, through that perlorus pace,
 With stodfast corage and stout hardiment ;
 Ne evil thing she feard, ne evil thing she ment.

xx.

At last, as nigh out of the wood she came,
 A stately Castle far away she spyde,
 To which her steps directly she did frame.
 That Castle was most goodly edifyde,
 And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest syde :
 But faire before the gate a spatious playne,
 Mantled with greene, itselife did spredde wyde,
 On which she saw six Knights, that did darrayne
 Fiers battail against one with cruell might and
 mayne.

xxi.

Mainely they all attonce upon him laid,
 And sore beset on every side arownd,
 That nighthe breathlesse grew, yet nought dismaid,
 Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd,
 All had he lost much blood through many a
 wownd ;
 But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way,
 To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd,
 Made them recoile, and fly from dredd decay,
 That none of all the six before him durst assay :

xvii. 2. — foster] *Forester.* TODD.

xviii. 9. — Timias] *Prince Arthur's Squire.* TODD.

xx. 9. — against one] *The Redcrosse Knight.* TODD.

xxi. 5. All] *Although.* CHURCH.

xxi. 9. — before him durst assay.] *Durst attack him before,* i. e. *face to face.* CHURCH

xxv.

Like dastard cures, that, having at a bay
 The salvage beast embost in wearie chace,
 Dare not adventure on the stubborne pray,
 Ne byte before, but rome from place to place
 To get a snatch when turned is his face.
 In such distresse and doubtfull iopardy
 When Britomart him saw, she ran apace
 Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry
 Badd those same sixe forbear that single enemy.

xxvii.

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,
 Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse;
 But, gathering him rownd about more neare,
 Their direfull rancour rather did encrease;
 Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse
 Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,
 And soone compeld to hearken unto peace:
 Tho gan she myldly of them to inquire
 The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

xxiv.

Whereto that single Knight did answere frame;
 "These six would me enforce, by oddes of might,
 To chaunge my life, and love another dame;
 That death me liefer were then such despight,
 So unto wrong to yield my wrested right:
 For I love one, the trueest one on ground,
 Nelist me chaunge; she th' Errant Damzell hight;
 For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd
 I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody wovnd."

xxv.

"Certes," said she, "then beene ye sixe to blame,
 To weene your wrong by force to iustify:
 For Knight to leave his Lady were great shame
 That faithfull is; and better were to dy.
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy,
 Then losse of love to him that loves but one:
 Ne may Love be compeld by maistery;
 For, soone as maistery comes, sweete Love anone
 Taketh his nimble winges, and soone away is gone."

xxvi.

Then spake one of those six; "There dwelleth here
 Within this castle-wall a Lady fayre,
 Whose souveraine beautie bath no living pere;
 Thereto so bounteous and so debonayre,
 That never any mote with her compayre:
 She hath ordaind this law, which we approve,
 That every Knight which doth this way repayre,
 In case he have no Lady nor no Love,
 Shall doe unto her service, never to remove:

xxvii.

"But if he have a Lady or a Love,
 Then must he her forgoe with fowle defame,
 Or els with us by dint of sword approve,
 That she is fairer then our fairest Dame;
 As did this Knight, before ye hether came."
 "Perdy," said Britomart, "the choise is hard!
 But what reward had he that overcame?"

"He should advaniced bee to high regard,"
 Said they, "and have our Ladies love for his reward."

xxviii.

"Therefore aread, Sir, if thou have a Love."
 "Love have I sure," quoth she, "but Lady none;
 Yet will I not fro mine owne Love remove,
 Ne to your Lady will I service done,
 But wreake your wronges wrought to this Knight
 alone, [speare
 And prove his cause." With that, her mortall
 She mightly aventred towards one,
 And downe him snote ere well aware he weare;
 And to the next she rode, and downe the next did
 beare.

xxix.

Ne did she stay till three on ground she layd,
 That none of them himselfe could reare againe:
 The fourth was by that other Knight dismayd;
 All were he wearie of his former paine;
 That now there do but two of six remaine;
 Which two did yield before she did them smight.
 "Ah!" said she then, "now may ye all see plaine,
 That Truth is strong, and trew Love most of might,
 That for his trusty servaunts doth so strongly fight."

xxx.

"Too well we see," saide they, "and prove too well
 Our faulty weakenes, and your matchlesse might:
 Forthy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,
 Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,
 And we your liegemen faith unto you plight."
 So underneath her feet their swords they mard,
 And, after, her besought, well as they might,
 To enter in and reape the dew reward:
 She graunted; and then in they all together far'd.

xxxi.

Long were it to describe the goodly frame,
 And stately port of Castle Joyeous,
 (For so that Castle hight by common name,)
 Where they were entertaynd with courteous
 And comely glee of many gracious
 Faire Ladies, and of many gente Knight;
 Who, through a chamber long and spacious,
 Eftsoones them brought unto their Ladies sight,
 That of them cleeped was the Lady of Delight.

xxxii.

But, for to tell the sumptuous aray
 Of that great chamber, should be labour lost;
 For living wit, I weene, cannot display
 The roiall riches and exceeding cost
 Of every pillour and of every post,
 Which all of purest bullion framed were,
 And with great perles and pretious stones embost;
 That the bright glisther of their beam's cleare
 Did sparkle forth great light, and glorious did
 appeare.

xxxiii.

These stranger Knights, through passing, forth were
 Into an inner rowme, whose royaltie [led
 And rich purveyance might unceath be red;
 Mote Princes place beseme so deekt to hee.

xxii. 2. —embost] A deer is said to be embossed, when she is so hard pursued that she foams at the mouth. CHURCH.

xxiii. 6. —gyre,] Circle. Ital. giro. TODD.

xxiv. 7. —she th' Errant Damzell hight,] So he calls Una. The Knight thus assaulted is the Redcrosse Knight, St. George. UPRON.

xxviii. 4. Ne to your Lady will I service done.] Do. Anglo Sax. don, to do. UPRON.

xxviii. 7. —aventred] Pushed at a venture. TODD.

xxx. 6. —mard,] Threw down. Lat. pessumdare, to throw under foot. CHURCH.

Which stately manner whenas they did see,
The image of superfluous riotize,
Exceeding much the state of meane degree,
They greatly wondrous whence so sumptuous guize
Might be maintaynd, and each gan diversely devize.

xxxiv.

The wals were round about apparelled
With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure ;
In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed
The love of Venus and her paramoure,
The fayre Adonis, turned to a flowre ;
A worke of rare device and wondrous wit.
First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,
Which her assayd with many a fervent fit,
When first her tender hart was with his beautie smit :

xxxv.

Then with what sleights and sweet allurements shee
Entyst the boy, as well that art she knew,
And wooed him her paramoure to bee ;
Now making girlouds of each flowre that grew,
To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew ;
Now leading him into a secret shade
From his beauperes, and from bright heavens vew,
Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade,
Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert glade :

xxxvi.

And, whilst he slept, she over him would spred
Her mantle colour'd like the starry skyes,
And her soft arme lay underneath his hed,
And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes ;
And, whilst he bath'd, with her two crafty spies
She secretly would search each daintie lim,
And throw into the well sweet rosemaryes,
And fragrant violets, and paunces trim ;
And ever with sweet nectar she did sprinkle him.

xxxvii.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away,
And ioyd his love in secret unespyde ;
But for she saw him bent to cruell play,
To hunt the salvage beast in Forrest wyde,
Dreadfull of daunger that mote him betyde
She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine
From chase of greater beastes, whose brutish pryde
Mote breede him seath unwares : but all in vaine ;
For who can shun the chance that dest'ny doth
ordaine ?

xxxviii.

Lo ! where beyond he lyeth languishing,
Deadly engored of a great wilde bore ;
And by his side the goddesse groveling
Makes for him endlesse mone, and evermore
With her soft garment wipes away the gore
Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull we :
But, when she saw no helpe might him restore,

xxxiv. 3. ——— with cunning band] With *skilful hand*.
TODD.

xxxv. 7. ——— beauperes,] *Fair compantons, from beaur
and pair, a peer, equal*. UPTON.

xxxvi. 5. ——— with her two crafty spies] *Crafty spies
is here a periphrasis for eyes, but a very inartificial one ;
as it may so easily be mistaken for two persons whom she
employed, with herself, to search &c.* T. WARTON.

xxxvii. 3. *But for*] But because. TODD.

xxxviii. 1. *Lo ! where beyond*] *Beyond*, that is, at some
distance. UPTON.

Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,
Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it lively grew.

xxxix.

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize :
And rownd about it, many beds were dight,
As whylome was the antique world's guize,
Some for untimely ease, some for delight,
As pleased them to use that use it might :
And all was full of Damzels and of Squyres,
Dauncing and reveling both day and night,
And swimming deepe in sensuall desyres ;
And Cupid still emongest them kindled lustfull fyres.

xli.

And all the while sweet Musicke did divide
Her looser notes with Lydian harmony ;
And all the while sweete birdes thereto applide
Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,
Ay caroling of love and iollity,
That wonder was to heare their trim consórt.
Which when those Knights beheld, with scorn-
full eye
They sdeigned such lascivious disport,
And loath'd the loose demaunor of that wanton sort.

xlii.

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew,
Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed
That glistred all with gold and glorious shew,
As the proud Persian queenes accustomed :
She seemd a woman of great bountibed
And of rare beautie, saving that askaunce
Her wanton eyes (ill signes of womanhed)
Did roll too lightly, and too often glauce,
Without regard of grace or comely amenaunce.

xliii.

Long worke it were, and needlesse to devize
Their goodly entertainment and great glee :
She caused them be led in courteous wize
Into a bowre, disarmed for to be,
And cheared well with wine and spicerie :
The Redecrosse Knight was soon disarmed there ;
But the brave Mayd would not disarmed bee,
But onely vented up her umbrière,
And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

xliv.

As when fayre Cynthia, in darke some night,
Is in a noyous cloud enveloped,
Where she may finde the substance thin and light,
Breakes forth her silver beames, and her bright
Discovers to the world discomfited ; [hed
Of the poore traveller that went astray
With thousand blessings she is heried :
Such was the beautie and the shining ray,
With which fayre Britomart gave light unto the
day.

xlv.

And eke those six, which lately with her fought,
Now were disarmd, and did themselves present
Unto her vew, and company unsought ;
For they all seemed courteous and gent,

xl. 9. ——— sort.] *Company*. TODD.
xlii. 8. *But onely vented up her umbrière,*] *Vented up,*
i. e. she gave vent to, or lifted up, the visor of her helmet ;
score her beaver up, as Shakspeare expresses it in Hamlet
"Tis called *umbriere* from *ombrare*, because it shadows the
face. UPTON.

And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent,
Which had them traynd in all civillities,
And goodly taught to tilt and tournament;
Now were they liegmen to this Ladie free,
And her Knights service ought, to hold of her in
fee.

XLV.

The first of them by name Gardantè hight,
A iolly person, and of comely vew;
The second was Parlauntè, a bold Knight;
And next to him Iocantè did ensew;
Basciantè did himselte most courteous shew;
But fierce Bacchantè seemd too fell and keene;
And yett in armes Noctantè greater grew:
All were faire Knights, and goodly well be-
seene; [beene.
But to faire Britomart they all but shadowes

XLVI.

For shée was full of amiable grace
And manly terror mixt therewithall;
That as the one stird up affections bace,
So th' other did mens rash desires apall,
And hold them backe that would in error fall:
As he that hath espide a vermeill rose,
To which sharp thornes and breres the way
forstall,
Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,
But, wishing it far off, his ydle wish doth lose.

XLVII.

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight,
All ignorant of her contrary sex,
(For shée her weend a fresh and lusty Knight,)
Shée greatly gan enamoured to wax,
And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex:
Her fickle hart conceived hasty fyre,
Like sparkes of fire which fall in sclander flex,
That shortly brent into extreme desyre,
And ransackt all her veines with passion entyre.

XLVIII.

Eftsoones shée grew to great impatiencie,
And into termes of open outrage burst,
That plaine discovered her incontinencie;
Ne reckt shée who her meaning did mistrust;
For she was given all to fleshly lust,
And poured forth in sensuall delight,
That all regard of shame she had discust,
And meet respect of honor put to flight:
So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathly sight.

XLIX.

Faire Ladies, that to love captived arre,
And chaste desires doe nourish in your mind,
Let not her fault your sweete affections marre;
Ne blott the bounty of all womankind [find:
'Mongst thousands good, one wanton dame to
Emongst the roses grow some wicked weeds:
For this was not to love, but lust, inclind;
For love does alwaies bring forth bounteous deeds,
And in each gentle hart desire of honor breeds.

xliv. 8. — *Ladie free.*] The term *free* is equal to our
phrase of *gentle*, of *free* or easy carriage. TONO.

xliv. 9. — ought.] *Owe'd* her. CHURCH.

xlvii. 9. — *with passion entyre.*] That is, *inward*
heat, "*in-burning fire*," st. 53. CHURCH.

xlviii. 7. — *disenst.*] *Shaken off.* Lat. *discutere*.
Ital. *discoctare*, to remove or put away. UPRON.

xliv. 4. — *the bounty*] *Goodness.* Fr. *bonté.* CHURCH.

Nought so of love this looser Dame did skill,
But as a cole to kindle fleshly flame,
Giving the bride to her wanton will,
And treading under foote her honest name:
Such love is hate, and such desire is shame.
Still did she rove at her with crafty glance
Of her false eies, that at her hart did ayme,
And told her meaning in her countenance;
But Britomart dissembled it with ignorance.

LI.

Supper was shortly dight, and downe they satt;
Where they were served with all sumptuous fare,
Whiles fruitfull Ceres and Lyæus fait
Poured out their plenty, without spight or spare;
Nought wanted there that dainty was and rare:
And aye the cups their bancks did overflow;
And aye betwene the cups she did prepare
Way to her love, and secret darts did throw;
But Britomart would not such guilfull message
know.

LII.

So, when they slaked had the fervent heat
Of appetite with meates of every sort,
The Lady did faire Britomart entreat
Her to disarmè, and with delightfull sport
To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort:
But when shée mote not thereunto be wonne,
(For shée her sexe under that straunge purpört
Did use to hide, and plaine appaurance shonne),
In playner wise to tell her grievance she begonne;

LIII.

And all atonce discovered her desire [griefe,
With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, and piteous
The outward sparkes of her in-burning fire:
Which spent in vaine, at last she told her brieve,
That, but if she did lend her short reliefe
And doe her comfort, she mote algates dye.
But the chaste Damzell, that had never priefe
Of such malengine and fine forgerye,
Did easely belevee her strong extremitye.

LIV.

Full easy was for her to have beliefe,
Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,
And by long triall of the inward griefe
Wherewith imperious love her hart did vexe,
Could iudge what paines doe loving harts perplexe.
Who means no guile, be guiled soonest shall,
And to faire semblance doth light faith amexe:
The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers call,
Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall.

LV.

Forthy she would not in discourteise wise
Scorne the faire offer of good will profest;

L. 9. *But Britomart &c.*] That is, Britomart seemed as
though she understood her not. CHURCH.

LII. 5. *To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort:*] That is, to let loose, or to unloose, her warlike limbs, and to lay aside her sternness, force or effort, to loose her effort, to relax a little. The same verb, with some difference of signification, is applied to two different substantives. UPRON.

LIII. 5. — but if] *Unless.* CHURCH.

LII. 8. *Of such malengine*] *Guile.* TONN.

LV. 1. *Forthy she would not in discourteise wise*] That is, *discourteously.* UPRON

For great rehuke it is love to despise,
Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request ;
But with faire countenance, as beseemed best,
Her entertaynd ; nath'lesse shee inly deemd
Her love too light, to woove a wandring guest ;
Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
That from like inward fire that outward smoke had
steemd.

LVI.

Therewith awhile she her flit fancy fedd,
Till she mote winne fit time for her desire ;
But yet her wound still inward freshly bledd,
And through her bones the false instilled fire
Did spred itselfe, and venime close inspire.
Tho were the tables taken all away ;
And every Knight, and every gentle Squire,
Gan choose his Dame with *basciomani* gay,
With whom he ment to make his sport and courtly
play.

LVII.

Some fell to daunce ; some fell to hazardry ;
Some to make love ; some to make meryment ;
As diverse witts to diverse things aplay :
And all the while faire Malecasta bent
Her crafty engins to her close intent.
By this th' eternal lampes, wherewith high Love
Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,
And the moist daughters of huge Atlas strove
Into the ocean deepe to drive their weary drove.

LVIII.

High time it seemed then for everie wight
Them to betake unto their kindly rest :
Eftsoones long waxen torches weren light
Unto their bowres to gyden every guest :
Tho, when the Britonesse saw all the rest
Avoided quite, she gan herselfe despoile,
And safe commit to her soft fethered nest ;
Wher through long watch, and late daies weary
toile,
She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did quite
assoile.

LIX.

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe
Yshrowded was, and every mortal wight
Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe ;
Faire Malecasta, whose engrieved spright
Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,
Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,
And, under the blacke veile of guilty night,
Her with a scarlott mantle covered
That was with gold and ermines faire enveloped.

LX.

Then panting softe, and trembling every ioynt,
Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she mov'd,

LV. 8. [*Which*] That is, which affable behaviour. CHURCH.
LVI. 8. — *basciomani*] With *basciomani*, Ital. With
kissing her hands: a phrase, perhaps common in our
author's age, when Italian manners were universally
affected. T. WARTON.

LVII. 1. — to hazardry ;] In F. Q. ii. v. 13, this word
signifies *rashness*. Here it means *playing at hazard*. TODD.

LVIII. 8. *And the moist daughters* &c.] The Hyades, a
constellation of seven stars in the head of the Bull. CHURCH.

LVIII. 4. *Unto their bowres*] *Chambers*. TODD.

LVIII. 9. — *assoile*.] Did *put off*, or was *freed from*.
TODD.

LA. 1. *Then panting softe,*] *Breathing softly*. CHURCH

Where she for secret purpose did appoynt
To lodge the warlike Maide, unwisely loov'd ;
And, to her bed approching, first she proov'd
Whether she slept or wakte : with hersofte hand
She softly felt if any member moov'd,
And lent her wary eare to understand
If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee fond.

LXI.

Which whenas none she fond, with easy shifte,
For feare least her unwares she should abrayd,
Th' embroder'd quilt she lightly up did lifte,
And by her side herselfe she softly layd,
Of every finest fingers touch affrayd ;
Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,
But inly sighd. At last the royall Mayd
Out of her quiet slomber did awake,
And chaungd her weary side the better ease to take.

LXII.

Where feeling one close couched by her side,
She lightly lept out of her filed bedd,
And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride
The loathed leachour : but the Dame, halfe dedd
Through suddaine feare and ghastly dremihedd
Did shriek alowd, that through the hous it rong,
And the whole family therewith adredd
Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,
And to the troubled chamber all in armes did
throng.

LXIII.

And those sixe Knights, that Ladies champions,
And eke the Redcrosse Knight ran to the stownd,
Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them attons :
Where when confusedly they came, they fownd
Their Lady lying on the sencelesse grownd :
On th' other side they saw the warlike Mayd
Al in hersnow-white smocke, with locks unbownd,
Threatning the point of her avenging blade ;
That with so troublous terror they were all dis-
mayd.

LXIV.

About their Ladye first they flockt arownd ;
Whom having laid in comfortable couch,
Shortly they reard out of her frosen swownd ;
And afterwarde they gan with fowle reproch
To stirre up strife, and troublous contecke broch :
But, by ensample of the last dayes losse,
None of them rashly durst to her approach,
Ne in so glorious spoile themselves emhosse :
Her succourd eke the Champion of the Bloody
Crosse.

LXV.

But one of those sixe knights, Gardantè hight,
Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,
Which forth he sent with felonous despight
And fell intent against the Virgin sheene :
The mortal steele stayd not till it was seene
To gore her side ; yet was the wound not deepe,

LX. 8. — *her wary eare*] *Her cautious and attentive*
ear. TODD.

LXI. 2. — *abrayd*.] *Awoke*. TODD.

LXII. 2. — *out of her filed bedd*.] *Out of her defiled*
bed. TODD.

LXII. 3. — *to gride*] *To pierce*. TODD.

LXII. 8. *Rashly*] *Inconsiderately*, not knowing why or
wherefore. CHURCH.

LXIV. 5. — *contecke*] *Contest*. T. WARTON.

LAIV. 8. — *embosse*] *Adorn*. TODD.

But lightly rased her soft silken skin,
That drops of purple blood thereout did weepe,
Which did her lilly smock with staines of vermeil
steep.

LXVI.

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew,
And with her flaming sword about her layd,
That none of them foule mischiefe could eschew,
But with her dreadfull strokes were all dismayd :
Here, there, and every where, about her swayd
Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abyde ;
And eke the Redcrosse Knight gave her goodayd,
Ay ioyning foot to foot, and syde to syde ;
That in short space their foes they have quite ter-
rifyde.

LXVII.

Tho, whenas all were put to shamefull flight,
The noble Britomartis her arayd,
And her bright armes about her body dight :
For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,
Where so loose life, and so ungentle trade,
Was usd of Knightes and Ladies seeming gent :
So, earely, ere the grosse earthes gryesy shade
Was all disperst out of the firmament,
They tooke their steeds, and forth upon their iour-
ney went.

CANTO II.

The Redcrosse Knight to Britomart
Describeth Artegell :
The wondrous Myrrhour, by which she
In love with him did fall.

I

HERE have I cause in men iust blame to find,
That in their proper praise too partiall bee,
And not indifferent to woman kind,
To whom no share in armes and cheualree
They doe impart, ne maken memoree
Of their brave gestes and prowesse martiall :
Scarse do they spare to one, or two, or three,
Rowme in their writtes ; yet the same writing
small
Does all their deedes deface, and dims their glories
a.l.

II.

But by record of antique times I finde
That women wont in warres to beare most sway,
And to all great exploits themselves inclin'd,
Of which they still the girlond bore away ;
Till envious men, fearing their rules decay,
Gan coyne streight lawes to curb their liberty :
Yet, sith they warlike armes have laide away,
They have exceld in artes and pollicy,
That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke t'envy.

III.

Of warlike puissance in ages spent,
Be thou, faire Britomart, whose prayse I wryte ;
But of all wisdom bee thou precedent,
O soveraine Queene, whose prayse I would endyte,
Endite I would as dewtie doth excyte ;
But ah ! my rymes too rude and rugged arre,
When in so high an obiect they doe lyte,

c. 3. — indifferent] *Impartial*. Tonn.

And, striving fit to make, I feare, doe marre :
Thyselfe thy prayses tell, and make them knownen
farre.

IV.

She, travailing with Guyon, by the way
Of sondry things faire purpose gan to find,
T'abridg their iourney long and lingring day :
Mongst which it fell into that Fairies mind
To aske this Briton Maid, what uncouth wind
Brought her into those partes, and what inquest
Made her dissemble her disguised kind :
Faire Lady she him seemd like Lady drest,
But fairest Knight alive when armed was her brest.

V.

Thereat she sighing softly had no powre
To speake awhile, ne ready answere make ;
But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,
As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,
And every daintie limbe with horroure shake ;
And ever and anone the rosy red
Flasht through her face, as it had bene a flake
Of lightning through bright heven fulmined :
At last, the passion past, she thus him answered :

VI.

“ Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre
I taken was from nourses tender pap,
I have been trained up in warlike stowre,
To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap
The warlike ryder to his most mishap ;
Sithence I loathed have my life to lead,
As Ladies wont, in Pleasures wanton lap,
To finger the fine needle and nyce thread ;
Me lever were with point of foemans speare be dead.

VII.

“ All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,
To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,
By sea, by land, wherso they may be mett,
Only for honour and for high regard,
Without respect of richesse or reward :
For such intent into these partes I came,
Withouten compasse or withouten card,
Far fro my native soyle, that is by name
The Greater Brytaine, here to seeke for praise and
fame.

VIII.

“ Fave blazed hath, that here in Faery Lond
Doe many famous Knightes and Ladies wonne,
And many straunge adventures to bee fond,
Of which great worth and worship may be wonne :
Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.
But mote I weete of you, right courtesous Knight,
Tydings of one that hath unto me donne

IV. 6. — and what inquest

Made her dissemble her disguised kind:] And what
quest or adventure, which she now was in pur-uit of, made
her dissemble her kind, nature or sex. URTON.

VI. 4. — affrap] *Strike down*. Ital. *affrapare*. Fr.
frapper. URTON.

VI. 9. *Me lever were] I had rather, or it would be more
agreeable to me*. Tonn.

VII. 9. *The Greater Brytaine,]* To distinguish it from
the Lesser Britanny in France. CHURCH.

VIII. 2 — *wonne,]* *Duell*. The same word rhymes
to *wonne*, i. e. *acquired*, (as here,) in the preceding canto,
st. 3. Words, thus spelt alike, but of different significa-
tion, are frequently employed as rhymes to each other in
Italian and also in old English poetry. Tonn.

Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
The which I seeke to wreake, and Arthegall he
hight."

IX.

The worde gone out she backe againe would call,
As her repenting so to have missayd,
But that he, it uptaking ere the fall,
Her shortly answered; "Faïre martiall Mayd,
Certes ye misavised beene t' upbrayd
A gentle Knight with so unknighly blame:
For, weet ye well, of all that ever playd
At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,
The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the name.

X.

"Forthy great wonder were it, if such shame
Should ever enter in his bounteous thought,
Or ever doe that mote deserven blame:
The noble corage never weeneth ought
That may unworthy of itselfe be thought.
Therefore, faïre Damzell, be ye well aware,
Least that too farre ye have your sorrow sought:
You and your Countrey both I wish welfare,
And honour both; for each of other worthy are."

XI.

The royall Maid woxe inly wondrous glad,
To heare her Love so highly magnifyde;
And ioyd that ever she affixed had
Her hart on Knight so goodly glorifyde,
However finely she it faïnd to hyde.
The loving mother, that nine monethes did beare
In the deare closet of her painefull syde
Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,
Doth not so much reioyce as she reioyced theare.

XII.

But to occasion him to further talke,
To feed her humor with his pleasing style,
Her list in stryfull termes with him to balke,
And thus replyde; "However, Sir, ye fyle
Your courteous tongue his prayeses to comyle,
It il besemes a Knight of gentle sort,
Such as ye have him boasted, to beguyle
A simple Maide, and worke so hainous tort,
In shame of Knighthood, as I largely can report.

XIII.

"Let bee therefore my vengeaunce to disswade,
And read, where I that Faytour false may find."
"Ah! but if reason faïre might you perswade
To slake your wrath, and mollify your mind,"

a. 4. *The noble corage never weeneth ought*

That may unworthy of itselfe be thought.] The noble mind never entertains a thought unworthy of itself. *Corage* is used for heart or mind, often by our poet, as well as by Chancer. UPRON.

xii. 3. *Her list]* She was pleased. CHURCH.

Ibid — in stryfull termes &c.] This is Spenser's manner of spelling *strife*-full. The word has occurred before. TODD.

Ibid. — in stryfull termes with him to halke.] To deal with him in cross purposes, or to baffle him. TODD.

xii. 4. — ye fyle &c.] See the note on *file his tongue*.

F. Q. I. 1. 35. UPRON.

xiii. 1. *Let bee therefore &c.]* Let bee, let alone, omit. UPRON.

xiii. 2. — that Faytour false may find.] "Faitour, a lazy, idle fellow. *Faitard, faitour, un paresseux, piger.* Lacombe." TODD.

Said he, "perhaps ye should it better find:
For hardie thing it is, to weene by might
That man to hard condicions to bind;
Or ever hope to match in equal fight,
Whose prowesse paragone saw never living wight.

XIV.

"Ne soothlich is it easie for to read
Where now on earth, or how, he may be fownd;
For he ne wometh in one certeine stead,
But restlesse walketh all the world around,
Ay doing thinges that to his fame redownd,
Defending Ladies cause and Orphans right,
Whereso he heares that any doth confownd
Them comfortlesse through tyranny or might;
So is his soveraine honour raise to hevens hight."

XV.

His feeling wordes her feeble sence much pleased,
And softly sunck into her molten hart:
Hart, that is inly hurt, is greatly eased
With hope of thing that may allegge his smart;
For pleasing wordes are like to magick art,
That doth the charmed snake in slomber lay:
Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart,
Yet list the same efforce with faïnd gainesay;
(So dischord ofte in musick makes the sweeter lay;)

XVI.

And said; "Sir Knight, these ydle termes for-
And, sith it is uneach to find his haunt, [beare;
Tell me some markes by which he may appeare,
If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt;
For perdy one shall other slay, or daunt:
What shape, what shield, what armes, what steed,
what stedd,

And whatso else his person most may vaunt?"

All which the Redcrosse Knight to point ared,
And him in everie part before her fashioned.

XVII.

Yet him in everie part before she knew,
However list her now her knowledge fayne,
Sith him whylome in Britayne she did vew,
To her revealed in a Mirrhour playne;
Whereof did grow her first engrafted payne,
Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did taste,
That, but the fruit more sweetnes did contayne,
Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote waste,
And yield the pray of love to lothsome death at last.

XVIII.

By straunge occasion she did him behold,
And much more straungely gan to love his sight,
As it in bookes hath written beene of old.
In Deheubarth, that now South-Wales is hight,
What time king Ryence raign'd and dealed right,
The great Magitien Merlin had deviz'd,
By his deepe science and hell-dreaded might,
A Looking-glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,
Whose vertues through the wyde worlde soone
were solemmniz'd.

XIX.

It vertue had to shew in perfect sight
Whatever thing was in the world contaynd,

xiv. 1. — soothlich] *Soothly, truly.* Anglo-Sax.
[*soðlice.* UPRON.

xv. 4. — allegge] *Ease, alleviate.* Fr. *allegger.*
CHURCH.

xvi 4. — paravaunt;] *Peradventure.* TODD

Betwixt the lowest earth and heavens hight,
So that it to the looker appertaynd :
Whatever foe had wrought, or friend had faynd,
Therein discovered was, ne ought mote pas,
Ne ought in secret from the same remaind ;
Forthy it round and hollow shaped was,
Like to the world itselfe, and seemd a World of
Glas.

xx.

Who wonders not, that reads so wonderous worke ?
But who does wonder, that has red the Towre
Wherein th' Aegyptian Phao long did lurke
From all mens vew, that none might her discourse,
Yet she might all men vew out of her howre ?
Great Ptolomæe it for his Lemans sake
Ybuided all of glasse, by magicke powre,
And also it impregnable did make ;
Yet, when his Love was false, he with a peaze it
brake.

xxi.

Such was the glassy Globe that Merlin made,
And gave unto king Ryence for his gard,
That never foes his kingdome might invade,
But he it knew at home before he hard
Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd :
It was a famous present for a prince,
And worthy worke of infinite reward,
That treasons could bewray, and foes convince :
Happy this realme, had it remaind ever since !

xxii.

One day it fortun'd fayre Britomart
Into her fathers closet to repayre ;
For nothing he from her reserv'd apart,
Being his onely daughter and his hayre ;
Where when she had espyde that Mirrhour fayre,
Herselfe awhile therein she vewd in vaine :
Tho, her avizing of the vertues rare
Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe
Her to bethinke of that mote to herselfe pertaine.

xxiii.

But as it falleth, in the gentlest hartes
Imperious Love hath highest set his throne,
And tyrannizeth in the bitter smartes
Of them, that to him buxome are and prone :
So thought this Mayd (as maydens use to done)
Whom fortune for her husband would allot ;
Not that she lusted after any one,
For she was pure from blame of sinfull blott ;
Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that same knot.

xxiv.

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye
A comely Knight, all arm'd in complete wize,

xx. 9. ——— with a peaze it brake.] That is, he brake it with a violent blow, with a stamp, with the weight of his stroke; for so we may interpret *peaze* from the Spanish *peza*. TODD.

xxi. 8. ——— and foes convince:] *Convict* his foes, according to Mr. Church; *overthrow* them, according to Mr. Upton; who adds, that Shakspeare uses *convince* in this sense very often. The Latin word *convincio* admits both interpretations. TODD.

xxii. 6. ——— in vaine:] That is, As she thought of nothing in particular, nothing was represented to her but her own person. CHURCH.

xxii. 7. ——— her avizing] *Bethinking* herself. FR. *s'avisser*. CHURCH.

xxiii. 4. ——— buxome] *Yielding, or obedient*. TODD.

Through whose bright ventayle lifted up on hye
His manly face, that did his foes agrize
And frends to termes of gentle truce entize,
Lookt fourth, as Phoebus face out of the east
Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arise :
Portly his person was, and much increast
Through his heroicke grace and honorable gest.

xxv.

His crest was covered with a couchant hownd,
And all his armour seemd of antique mould,
But wondrous massy and assured sound,
And round about yfretted all with gold,
In which there written was, with cyphers old,
Achilles armes which Arthegall did win:
And on his shield enveloped sevenfold
He bore a crowned little ermin,
That deckt the azure field with her fayre pouldred
skin.

xxvi.

The Damzell well did vew his personage,
And lik'd well; ne further fastned not,
But went her way; ne her unguilty age
Did weene, unawares, that her unlucky lot
Lay hidden in the bottoome of the pot :
Of hurt unwist most daunger doth redound :
But the false archer, which that arrow shot
So slyly that she did not feele the wound,
Did smyle full smoothly at her weedlesse wofull
stound.

xxvii.

Thenceforth the fetter in her lofty crest,
Ruff'd of Love, gan lowly to availe ;
And her proud portance and her princely gest,
With which she earst tryumphed, now did quaille :
Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile,
She woxe; yet wist she nether how, nor why ;
She wist not, silly Mayd, what she did aile,
Yet wist she was not well at ease perly ;
Yet thought it was not love, but some melancholy.

xxviii.

So soome as Night had with her pallid hew
Defaste the beautie of the shyning skye,
And reffe from men the worldes desired vew,
She with her nurse adowne to sleepe did lye ;
But sleepe full far away from her did fly :
Instead thereof sad sighes and sorrowes deepe
Kept watch and ward about her warily ;
That nought she did but wayle, and often steepe
Her dainty couch with teares which closely she did
weepe.

xxix.

And if that any drop of slombing rest
Did chaunce to still into her weary spright,
When feeble nature felt herselfe opprest, [sight
Streightway with dreames, and with fantastick

xxv. 9. ——— with her fayre pouldred skin.] That is, with her skin spotted, or variegated. T. WARTON.

xxvi. 6 *Of hurt unwist &c.*] *Unwist, unknown*. That is, Most danger arises from the hurts we know not of. CHURCH.

xxvii. 2. *Ruff'd of Love, gan lowly to availe ;*] *Ruff'd, i. e. ruffled, disordered. Availe is to sink*. FR. *avaler*. CHURCH.

xxviii. 9. ——— with teares which closely &c.] That is, she wept silently that her nurse might not perceive it. CHURCH.

Of dreadful things, the same was put to flight ;
That oft out of her bed she did astart,
As one with vew of ghastly feends affright :
Tho gan she to renew her former smart,
And thinke of that fayre visage written in her hart.

xxx.

One night, when she was tost with such unrest,
Her aged nurse, whose name was Glauce^e hight,
Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,
And downe againe in her warme bed her dight :
" Ah ! my deare daughter, ah ! my dearest dread,
What uncouth fit," said she, " what evill plight
Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead
Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made thee
dead ?

xxxI.

" For not of nought these sudden ghastly feares
All night afflict thy naturall repose ;
And all the day, whenas thine equal peares
Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,
Thou in dull corners doest thyselfe inclose ;
Ne tastest princes pleasures, ne doest spred
Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but lose
Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely shed,
As one in wilfull bale for ever buried.

xxxII.

" The time that mortall men their weary cares
Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
And every river eke his course forbeares,
Then doth this wicked evill thee infest,
And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled brest :
Like an huge Aetn' of deepe engulfed gryefe,
Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest, [ryfe,
Whence fourth it breakes in sighes and anguish
As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused
stryfe.

xxxIII.

" Ay me ! how much I feare least love it bee !
But if that love it be, as sure I read
By knowen signes and passions which I see,
Be it worthy of thy race and royall seed,
Then I avow, by this most sacred head
Of my dear foster childe, to ease thy griefe
And win thy will : Therefore away doe dread ;
For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe
Shall me debarre : Tell me therefore, my liefest
liefe !"

xxxIV.

So having sayd, her twixt her armes twaine
Shee straightly straynd, and colled tenderly ;
And every trembling ioynt and every vaine
Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily,
To doe the frozen cold away to fly ;
And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare
Shee ofte did bathe, and ofte againe did dry ;
And ever her impörtund not to feare
To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

xxx. 4. — keight,] *Caught.* URTON.

xxxII. 5. — thy thrilled brest.] Thy breast pierced through. TODD.

xxxIII. 7. — Therefore away doe dread.] It would have been more perspicuous if the poet had written "Therefore doe away dread." TODD.

xxxIV. 2. — colled] *Hung about her neck.* Lat. *collum.* CHURCH.

xxxv.

The Damzell pauzd ; and then thus fearfully ;
" Ah ! nurse, what needeth thee to eke my payne !
Is not enough that I alone doe dye,
But it must doubled bee with death of twaine ?
For nought for me but death there doth remaine !"
" O daughter deare," said she, " despire no whit ;
For never sore but might a salve obtaine :
That blinded god, which hath ye blindly smit,
Another arrow hath your Lovers hart to hit."

xxxVI.

" But mine is not," quoth she, " like other wownd ;
For which no reason can finde remedy."
" Was never such, but mote the like be fownd,"
Said she ; " and though no reason may apply
Salve to your sore, yet Love can higher stye
Then Reason reach, and oft hath wonders
donne."
" But neither god of love nor god of skye
Can doe," said she, " that which cannot be donne."
" Things oft impossible," quoth she, " seeme ere
begonne."

xxxVII.

" These idle wordes," said she, " doe nought aswage
Mystubborne smart, but more annoiaunce breed :
For no, no usuall fire, no usuall rage
Yt is, O nurse, which on my life doth feed,
And sucks the blood which from my hart doth
bleed.
But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde
My crime, (if crime it be,) I will it reed.
Nor prince nor pere it is, whose love hath gryde
My feeble brest of late, and launched this wound
wyde :

xxxVIII.

" Nor man it is, nor other living wight ;
For then some hope I might unto me draw ;
But th' only shade and semblant of a Knight,
Whose shape or person yet I never saw,
Hath me subiected to Loves cruell law :
The same one day, as me misfortune led,
I in my fathers wondrous Mirrhour saw,
And, pleased with that seeming goodlyhed,
Unwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed :

xxxIX.

" Sithens it hath infixed faster hold
Within my bleeding bowells, and so sore
Now rancekleth in this same fraile fleshy mould,
That all mine entrails flow with poisonous gore,
And th' ulcer groweth daily more and more ;
Ne can my ronning sore finde remedee,
Other than my hard fortune to deplore,
And languish as the leafe fall from the tree,
Till death make one end of my daies and miseree !"

xl.

" Daughter," said she, " what need ye be dismayd !
Or why make ye such monster of your minde ?
Of much more uncouth thing I was affrayd ;
Of filthy lust, contrary unto kinde :
But this affection nothing strange I finde ;
For who with reason can aye reprove
To love the semblaunt pleasing most your minde,
And yield your heart whence ye cannot remove !
No guilt in You, but in the tyranny of Love.

xli.

" Not so th' Arabian Myrrhe did sett her mynd ;
Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart ;

But lov'd their native flesh against al kynd,
 And to their purpose used wicked art :
 Yet playd Pasiphaë a more monstrous part,
 That lov'd a bull, and leard a heast to be :
 Such shamefull lustes who loaths not, which
 depart
 From course of nature and of modestee ?
 Swete Love such lewdnes bands from his faire
 companee.

XLII.

"But thine, my deare, (welfare thy heart, my deare !)
 Though straunge beginning had, yet fixed is
 On one that worthy may perhaps appeare ;
 And certes seemes bestowed not amis :
 Ioy thereof have thou, and eternal lilies !"
 With that, upleaning on her elbow weake,
 Her alabaster brest she soft did kis,
 Which all that while shee felt to pant and quake,
 As it an earth-quake were : at last she thus bespake ;

XLIII.

"Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease ;
 For though my love be not so lowdly bent
 As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease
 My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,
 But rather doth my helpelesse griefe augment.
 For they, however shamefull and unkinde,
 Yet did possesse their horrible intent :
 Short end of sorrowes they thereby did finde ;
 So was their fortune good, though wicked were their
 minde.

XLIV.

"But wicked fortune mine, though minde be good,
 Can have no end nor hope of my desire,
 But feed on shadowes whiles I die for food,
 And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire
 Affection I doe languish and expire.
 I, fonder then Cephisus foolish chyld,
 Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere
 His face, was with the love thereof beguyld ;
 I, fonder, love a shade, the body far exyld."

XLV.

Nought like," quoth shee ; "for that same wretched
 Was of himselfe the ydle paramoure, [boy
 Both Love and Lover, without hope of ioy ;
 For which he faded to a watry flowre.
 But better fortune thine, and better howre,
 Which lov'st the shadow of a warlike Knight ;
 No shadow, but a body hath in powre :
 That body, wheresoever that it light,
 May learned be by cyphers, or by magicke might.

XLVI.

"But if thou may with reason yet repress
 The growing evill, ere it strength have gott,

XLII. 9. *Swete Love such lewdnes bands from his faire
 companee.*] To band properly signifies to join together in
 a company, to assemble. Spenser therefore, either for the
 convenience of the verse, used bands for disbands ; or,
 what is most probable, the word was written in his copy
 canis, which, according to Junius, is to forbid by proscription,
 interdiceré ; and from whence the verb to banish is
 derived. T. WARRON.

XLIII. 6. ——— unkinde,] *Unnatural.* The same as "con-
 trary unto kinde," st. 40, "Against all kynd," st. 41.
 CHURCH.

XLIV. 7. ——— in a fountain shere] *There is transparent.*
 TONO.

And thee abandond wholly do possesse ;
 Against it strongly strive, and yield thee nott
 Til thou in open fielde adowne be smott :
 But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
 So that needs love or death must be thy lot,
 Then I avow to thee, by wrong or right
 To compas thy desire, and find that loved Knight."

XLVII.

Her chearefull words much heard the feeble spright
 Of the sicke Virgin, that her downe she layd
 In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might ;
 And the old-woman carefully displayd
 The clothes about her round with busy ayd ;
 So that at last a litle creeping sleepe
 Surprizd her sence : Shee, therewith well apayd,
 The drunken lamp down in the oyl did steepe,
 And sett her by to watch, and sett her by to weepe.

XLVIII.

Earely, the morrow next, before that Day
 His ioyous face did to the world revele,
 They both uprose and tooke their ready way
 Unto the church, their prayers to appele,
 With great devotion, and with litle zeale ;
 For the faire Damzell from the holy herse
 Her love-sicke hart to many thoughts did steale :
 And that old Dame said many an idle verse,
 Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reverse.

XLIX.

Retourned home, the royall Infant fell
 Into her former fit ; for why ? no powre
 Nor guidance of herselfe in her did dwell.
 But th' aged nurse, her calling to her bowre,
 Had gathered rew, and savine, and the flowre
 Of camphora, and calamint, and dill ;
 All which she in an earthen pot did poure,
 And to the brim with coltwood did it fill,
 And many drops of milk and blood through it did
 spill.

L.

Then, taking thrise three heares from off her head,
 Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,
 And round about the pots mouth bound the
 thread ;
 And, after having whispered a space
 Certain sad words with hollow voice and hance,
 Shee to the Virgin sayd, thrise sayd she itt ;
 "Come, daughter, come ; come, spit upon my face ;
 Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me spitt ;
 Th' uneven nomber for this busines is most fitt."

LI.

That sayd, her rownd about she from her turnd,
 She turned her contrary to the sunne ;
 Thrise she her turnd contrary, and returnd
 All contrary ; for she the right did shunne ;
 And ever what she did was streight undonne.
 So thought she to undoe her daughter's love :

XLVII. 7. ——— *Shee, therewith well apayd.*] Old Glauce
 well apayd, well satisfied, to see her ward taking a little
 rest, does not blow out the lamp, for that was ill ominous ;
 but steeps it, and thus extinguishes it, in the oil : and then
 sets herself to watch by her, and lamenting her case, weeps
 over her. UPTON.

XLVIII. 6. ——— *from the holy herse*] *Holy herse* is here,
 the rehearsal of the prayers in the church-service, at which
 Britomart is now described as present. T. WARRON.

XLIX. 9. ——— *to reverse.*] *To cause to return.* CHURCH.

But love, that is in gentle brest begonne,
No ydle charmes so lightly may remove ;
That well can witnessse, who by tryall it does prove.

LII.

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd avayle,
Ne slake the fury of her cruell flame,
But that shee still did waste, and still did wayle,
That, through long languour and hart-burning
brame,
She shortly like a pynded ghost became
Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond:
That when old Glauçè saw, for feare least blame
Of her miscarriage should in her be found,
She wist not how t'amend, nor how it to withstand.

CANTO III.

Merlin bewrayes to Britomart
The state of Arthegall:
And shewes the famous progeny,
Which from them springen shall.

I.

Most sacred fyre, that burnest mightily
In living brests, ykindled first above
Emongst th' eternal spheres and lamping sky,
And thence pourd into men, which men call Love;
Not that same, which doth base affections move
In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame ;
But that sweete fit that doth true beutie love,
And choseth Vertue for his dearest dame,
Whence spring all noble deedes and never-dying
fame :

II.

Well did Antiquity a god thee deeme,
That over mortall mindes hast so great might,
To order them as best to thee doth seeme,
And all their actions to direct aright :
The fatal purpose of divine foresight
Thou doest effect in destined descentes,
Through deepe impression of thy secret might,
And sturredst up th' heroës high intents,
Which the late world admyres for wondrous moni-
ments.

III.

But thy dredd dartes in none doe triumph more,
Ne braver prooffe in any of thy powre
Shewd'st thou, then in this royall Maid of yore,
Making her seeke an unknowne Paramoure,
From the worlds end, through many a bitter
stowre : [rayse
From whose two loynes thou afterwarde did
Most famous fruites of matrimoniall bowre,
Which through the earth have spredd their living
praysse,
That fame in tromp of gold eternally displayes.

IV.

Begin then, O my dearest sacred Dame,
Daughter of Phœbus and of Memorye,

LI. 4. ——— brame,] *Severe or sharp.* TODD.

LI. 6. *Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond:]*
Waited, because the body had not the rites of burial.

URTON.

I. 3. ——— lamping sky,] *Ital. lampante,* shining.

URTON.

That doest ennoble with immortall name
The warlike worthies, from antiquity,
In thy great volume of Eternitye ;
Begin, O Clio, and recount from hence
My glorious Sovereaines goodly Auncestrye,
Till that by dew degrees, and long protense,
Thou have it lastly brought unto her Excellence.

V.

Full many wayes within her troubled mind
Old Glauçè cast to cure this Ladies grieve ;
Full many wayes she sought, but none could find,
Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsel that is
chiefe
And choicest med'cine for sick harts reliefe :
Forthy great care she tooke, and greater feare,
Least that it should her turne to fowle repriefe
And sore reproch, whenso her father deare
Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune
heare.

VI.

At last she her avise, that he which made
That Mirrhour, wherein the sicke Damosell
So straungely vewed her straunge lovers shade,
To weet, the learned Merlin, well could tell
Under what coast of heaven the Man did dwell,
And by what means his love might best be
For, though beyond the Africk Ismaël [wrought :
Or th' Indian Peru he were, she thought
Him forth through infinite endeavour to have sought.

VII.

Forthwith themselves disguising both in straunge
And base atyre, that none might them bewray,
To Maridunum, that is now by chaunge
Of name Cayr-Merdin cald, they tooke their way :
There the wise Merliu whylome wont (they say)
To make his wonne, low underneath the ground,
In a deepe delve, farre from the vew of day,
That of no living wight he mote be found,
Whenso he counsell with his sprights encompass
round.

VIII.

And, if thou ever happen that same way
To travcill, go to see that dreadful place :
It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)
Under a rock that lyes a litle space
From the swift Barry, tumbing downe apace
Emongst the woody hilles of Dyneuowre :
But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace
To enter into that same balefull bowre,
For feare the cruell feendes should thee unwares
devowre :

IX.

But standing high aloft low lay thine eare,
And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines
And brasen caudrons thou shalt rombling heare,
Which thousand sprights with long enduring
paines
Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines ;

rv. 8. ——— long protense,] *Protense, a protendo,* from stretching and drawing out. The Italians have *protendere, proteso, protensione.* URTON.

vi. 1. ——— avise,] *Bethought.* CHURCH.

vi. 7. ——— the Africk Ismaël,] The Israelites or Aſſyrians, called afterwards Saracens, conquered a great part of Africa : hence he says "the Africk Ismael." URTON.

And oftentimes great grones, and grievous
stownds,
When too huge toile and labour them constraines ;
And oftentimes loud strokes and ringing sownds
From under that deepe rock most horribly re-
bowndes.

x.

The cause, some say, is this : A litle while
Before that Merlin dyde, he did intyle
A brasen wall in compas to comyle
About Cairmardin, and did it commend
Unto these sprights to bring to perfect end :
During which worke the Lady of the Lake,
Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did send ;
Who, thereby forst his workemen to forsake,
Them bownd, till his retourne, their labour not to
slake.

xi.

In the meane time through that false Ladies traine
He was surprisd, and buried under beare,
Ne ever to his worke returnd againe :
Nath'lesse those feends may not their work for-
beare,
So greatly his commandment they feare,
But there doe toyle and travaile day and night,
Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare :
For Merlin had in magick more insight
Then ever him before or after living wight :

xii.

For he by wordes could call out of the sky
Both sunne and moone, and make them him obey ;
The land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,
And darksom night he eke could turne to day ;
Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,
And hostes of men of meanest things could
Whenso him list his enemies to fray : [frame,
That to this day, for terror of his fame,
The feendes do quake when any him to them does
name.

xiii.

And, sooth, men say that he was not the sonue
Of mortall syre or other living wight,
But wondrously begotten, and begonne
By false illusion of a guilefull spright
On a fair lady Nonne, that whilome hight
Matilda, daughter to Pubidius
Who was the lord of Mathtraval by right,
And coosen unto king Ambrosius ;
Whence he indued was with skill so merveilous.

xiv.

They, here arriving, staid awhile without,
Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend,
But of their first intent gan make new dout
For dread of daunger, which it might portend :
Untill the hardy Mayd (with Love to frend)
First entering, the dreadful Mage there fownd
Deepe busied 'bout worke of wondrous end,
And writing straunge characters in the ground,
With which the stubborne feendes he to his ser-
vice bownd.

xiv. 3. — gan make new dout] Began to raise new
difficulties, new fears. CHURCH.
xiv. 5. — with Love to frend] To befriend her. TODD.
xiv. 6. — Mage] Magician. Lat. magus. CHURCH.

xv.

He nought was moved at their entraunce bold,
For of their coming well he wist afore ;
Yet list them bid their businesse to unfold,
As if ought in this world in secret store
Were from him hidden, or unknowne of yore.
Then Glauce thus ; " Let not it thee offend,
That we thus rashly through thy darksom dore
Unwares have prest ; for either fatall end,
Or other mightie cause, us two did hether send."

xvi.

He bad tell on : And then she thus began ; [light
" Now have three moones with borrowd brothers
Thrise shined faire, and thrise seemd dim and wan,
Sith a sore evill, which this Virgin bright
Tormenteth and doth plunge in dolefull plight,
First rooting tooke ; but what thing it mote bee,
Or whence it sprong, I cannot read aright :
But this I read, that, but if remedee
Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see."

xvii.

Therewith th' Enchaunter softly gan to smyle
At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well
That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
And to her said ; " Beldame, by that ye tell
More neede of leach-crafte hath your Damozell,
Then of my skill : who helpe may have elsewhere,
In vaine seekes wonders out of magick spell."
Th' old woman vox half blanck those worles to
beare ;
And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare ;

xviii.

And to him said ; " Yf any leaches skill,
Or other learned meanes, could have redrest
This my deare daughters deepe-engraffed ill,
Certes I should be loth thee to molest :
But this sad evill, which doth her infest,
Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
And housed is within her hollow brest,
That either seemes some cursed witches deed,
Or evill spright, that in her doth such torment
breed."

xix.

The Wisard could no lenger beare her bord,
But, bursting forth in laughter, to her sayd ;
" Glauce, what needes this colourable word
To cloke the cause that hath itselfe hewrayd ?
Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd,
More hidden are then sunne in cloudy vele ;
Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,
Hath hether brought for succour to appele ;
The which the Powres to thee are pleased to
revele."

xx.

The doubtfull Mayde, seeing herselfe descryde,
Was all abasht, and her pure yvory
Into a cleare carnation souldaine dyde ;

xv. 8. — fatall end.] *Destiny.* CHURCH.
xvi. 8. — but if] *Except or unless.* TODD.
xvii. 5. — leach-crafte] *The art of healing or of
physick.* TODD.
xvii. 8. *Th' old woman vox half blanck]* *Half con-
founded and out of countenance.* UPTON.
xix. 1. — her bord,] *Her jest, her pretence ; for
what she said was not true.* TODD.

As fayre Aurora, rysing hastily,
Doth by her blushing tell that she did lye
All night in old Tithonus frozen bed,
Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly :
But her olde nourse was nought dishartened,
But vantage made of that which Merlin had aied ;

xxi.

And said ; "Sith then thou knowest all our grieffe,
(For what doest not thou knowe ?) of grace I pray,
Pitty our playnt, and yield us meet reliefe !"
With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,
And then his spirite thus gan fourth display ;
"Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore
Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee dismay
The hard beginne that meetes thee in the dore,
And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth sore :

xxii.

"For so must all things excellent begin ;
And eke enrooted deepe must be that tree,
Whose big embodied branches shall not lin
Till they to heavens hight forth stretched bee.
For from thy wombe a famous progenee
Shall spring out of the aunccient Trojan blood,
Which shall revive the sleeping memoree
Of those same antique peres, the heavens brood,
Which Greeke and Asian rivers stayned with their
blood.

xxiii.

"Renowned kings, and sacred emperours,
Thy fruitfull offspring, shall from thee descend ;
Brave captaines, and most mighty warriors,
That shall their conquests through all lands
extend,
And their decayed kingdomes shall amend :
The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,
They shall upreare, and mightily defend
Against their forren foe that commes from farre,
Till universall peace compound all civill iarre.

xxiv.

"It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye
Glauncing unwares in charmed Looking-glas,
But the streight course of heavenly destiny,
Led with Eternal Providence, that has
Guyded thy glaunce, to bring His Will to pas :
Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,
To love the prowest Knight that ever was :
Therefore submit thy wayes unto His Will,
And doe, by all dew meanes, thy destiny fulfill."

xxv.

"But read," saide Glaucé, "thou Magitian,
What meanes shall she out-seeke, or what waies
take ?
How shall she know, how shall she finde the Man ?
Or what needes her to toyle, sith fates can make
Way for themselves their purpose to pertaine ?"
Then Merlin thus ; "Indeede the fates are firme,
And may not shrinck, though all the world do
shake :
Yet ought mens good endeavours them confirme,
And guyde the heavenly causes to their constant
terme.

xxvi.

"The Man, whom heavens have ordaynd to bee
The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall :

xxi. 8. *The hard beginne*] *Beginning.* Tonn.

He wonneth in the land of Fayërce,
Yet is no Eary borne, ne sib at all
To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,
And whylome by false Faries stolne away,
Whyles yet in infant cradle he did crall ;
Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,
But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay :

xxvii.

"But sooth he is the sonne of Gorlois,
And brother unto Cador, Cornish king ;
And for his warlike feates renowned is,
From where the day out of the sea doth spring,
Untill the closure of the evening : [band,
From thence him, firmly bound with faithfull
To this his native soyle thou backe shalt bring,
Strongly to ayde his cuntrye to withstand
The powre of forreine Paynims which invade thy
land.

xxviii.

"Great ayd thereto his mighty puisaunce
And dreaded name shall give in that sad day ;
Where also prooffe of thy prow valiaunce
Thou then shalt make, t' increase thy Lover's
pray :
Long time ye both in armes shall beare great
Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call,
And his last fate him from thee take away ;
Too rathe cut off by practise criminall
Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mischief
fall.

xxix.

"With thee yet shall he leave, for memory
Of his late puisaunce, his ymage dead,
That living him in all activity
To thee shall represent : He, from the head
Of his coosen Constantius, without dread
Shall take the crowne that was his fathers right,
And therewith crowne himselfe in th' others stead :
Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might
Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

xxx.

"Like as a lyon that in drowsie cave
Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he shake ;
And, comming forth, shall spred his banner brave
Over the troubled South, that it shall make
The warlike Mertians for feare to quake : [win ;
Thrise shall he fight with them, and twise shall
But the third time shall fayre accordance make :
And, if he then with victorie can lin,
He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly
In.

xxxi.

"His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him succede
In kingdome, but not in felicity :

xxvi. 4. ——— sib] *Relation.* "Ne sib at all," i. e. *he is no way related.* CHURCH.

xxvii. 6. *From thence*] That is, From Fairy land. CHURCH.
Ibid. ——— *him, firmly bound with faithfull band,*]

That is, him bound in wedlock. CHURCH.

xxviii. 8. *Too rathe*] *Too early.* TODD.

xxix. 2. ——— *his ymage dead,*] That is, He dead shall leave thee his image : Or, His image dead is, the image of him dead. When he dies, he shall leave thee a son the image of himself. JORTIN.

xxx. 8. ——— *can lin,*] *Cease, or give over.* TODD.

xxxi. 9. ——— *his earthly In,*] So he calls death, "the common In of rest," F. Q. ii. i. 59. TODD.

Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,
And with great honour many battaills try ;
But at the last to th' importunity
Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield :
But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily
Avenge his fathers losse with spear and shield,
And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

xxxii.

" Behold the Man ! and tell me, Britomart,
If ay more goodly creature thou didst see ?
How like a gyaunt in each manly part
Beares he himselfe with portly maiestee,
That one of th' old heroës seemes to hee !
He the six Islands, comprovinciall
In auccient times unto great Britainece,
Shall to the same reduce, and to him call
Their sondry kings to do their homage severall.

xxxiii.

" All which his sonne Careticus awhile
Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppress ;
Untill a straunger king, from unknowne soyle
Arriving, him with multitude oppresse ;
Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse
Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,
Like a swift otter, fell through emptinesse,
Shall overswim the sea with many one
Of his Norweyses, to assist the Britons fone.

xxxiv.

" He in his furie all shall over-ronne,
And holy church with faithlesse handes deface,
That thy sad people, utterly fordonne,
Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace :
Was never so great waste in any place,
Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men :
For all thy citties they shall sacke and race,
And the greene grasse that groweth they shall
bren,
That even the wilde heast shall dy in starved den.

xxxv.

" Whiles thus thy Britons doe in languour pine,
Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise,
Serving th' ambitious will of Augustine,
And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise
Shall backe repulse the valiaunt Brockwel twice,
And Bangor with massâcred martyrs fill ;
But the third time shall rew his fool-hardise :
For Cadwan, pitying his peoples ill,
Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons kill.

xxxvi.

" But, after him, Cadwallin mightily
On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall wreake ;
Ne shall availe the wicked sorcery
Of false Pellite his purposes to breake,
But him shall slay, and on a gallowes bleak
Shall give th' enchaunter his unhappy hire :
Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake,
From their long vassallage gin to respire,
And on their Paynim foes avenge their rangled ire.

xxxvii.

" Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,
Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have slayne,

Offricke and Osricke, twinnes unfortunate,
Both slaine in battaile upon Layburne playne,
Together with the king of Louthiane,
Hight Adin, and the king of Orkeny,
Both ioynt partakers of their fatall payne :
But Penda, fearefull of likc desteney,
Shall yield himselfe his liegeman, and swaere fealty :

xxxviii.

" Him shall he make his fatall instrument
T' afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd :
He marching forth with fury insolent
Against the good king Oswald, who indewd
With heavenly powre, and by angels reskewd,
All holding crosses in their hands on lye,
Shall him defeate withouten blood imbrewd :
Of which that field for endless memory
Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

xxxix.

" Whereat Cadwallin wroth shall forth issew,
And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,
With which he godly Oswald shall subdew,
And crowne with martiredome his sacred head :
Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like dread,
With price of silver shall his kingdome buy ;
And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread,
Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly dye ;
But shall with gifts his lord Cadwallin pacify.

xl.

" Then shall Cadwallin die ; and then the raine
Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye ;
Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with paine
Or powre, be habile it to remedy,
When the full time, prefixt by destiny,
Shall be expird of Britons regiment :
For Heven itselfe shall their successe envy,
And them with plagues and murrins pestilent
Consume, till all their warlike puissance be spent.

xli.

" Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills
Of dying people, during eight yeares space,
Cadwallader, not yielding to his ills,
From Armoricke, where long in wretched cace
He liv'd, retourning to his native place,
Shal be by vision staide from his intent :
For th' Heavens have decreed to displace
The Britons for their sinnes dew punishment,
And to the Saxons over-give their government.

xlii.

" Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe,
Be to the Briton babe that shal be borne
To live in thraldome of his fathers foe !
Late king, now captive ; late lord, now forlorne ;
The worlds reproch ; the cruell victors scorne ;
Banisht from princely bowre to wasteful wood !
O ! who shall helpe me to lament and mourne
The royall seed, the antique Trojan blood,
Whose empire lenger here then ever any stood !"

xlili.

The Damzell was full deepe passioned
Both for his griefe, and for her peoples sake,
Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned ;

xxxii. 6. *He the six Islands, &c.*] Viz. Ireland, Iseland, Godland, the Orkneys, Norway, and Dacia. СЕРУСН.

xxxvii. 7. — their fatall payne:] That is, The fatal end of *Offricke* and *Osricke*. TODD.

And, sighing sore, at length him thus bespake ;
 " Ah ! but will Hevens fury never slake,
 Nor vengeance huge relent itselfe at last ?
 Will not long misery late mercy make,
 But shall their name for ever be defaste,
 And quite from off the earth their memory be
 raste ? "

XLIV.

" Nay but the terme," sayd he, " is limited,
 That in this thraldome Britons shall abide ;
 And the iust revolution measured
 That they as straungers shal be notifie :
 For twise fowre hundred yeares shal be supplide,
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shal bee,
 And their impórtune fates all satisfide :
 Yet, during this their most obscuritee,
 Their beames shall ofte breake forth, that men
 them faire may see.

XLV.

" For Rhodoricke, whose surname shal be Great,
 Shall of himselfe a brave ensample shew,
 That Saxon kings his friendship shall intreat ;
 And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew
 The salvage minds with skill of iust and trow :
 Then Griffyth Conan also shall upreare
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew
 Of native corage, that his foes shall feare
 Least back againe the kingdom he from them
 should beare.

XLVI.

" Ne shall the Saxons selves all peaceably
 Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly : [wonne
 For, ere two hundred yeares be full outtronne,
 There shall a Raven, far from rising sunne,
 With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly,
 And bid his faithlesse chickens overonne
 The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty
 In their avenge tread downe the victors surquedry.

XLVII.

" Yet shall a Third both these and thine subdew :
 There shall a Lion from the sea-bord wood
 Of Neustria come roring, with a crew
 Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood,
 Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood,
 That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend
 Th' usurped crowne, as if that he were wood,
 And the spoile of the countrey conquered
 Amongst his young ones shall divide with bountyhed.

XLVIII.

" Tho, when the terme is full accomplishid,
 There shall a sparke of fire, which hath longwhile
 Bene in his ashes raked up and hid,
 Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
 Of Mona, where it lurked in exile ;
 Which shall breake forth into bright burning
 flame,
 And reach into the house that beares the stile
 Of royall maiesty and sovaine name :
 So shall the Briton blood their crowne againe
 reclame.

XLIV. 8. — their most obscuritee,] Their greatest
 obscurity. Todd.

XLVII 2. — the sea-bord wood] The sea-bordering
 wood. Church.

XLIX.

" Thenceforth eternall union shall be made
 Betweene the nations different afore,
 And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade
 The warlike minds to learne her goodly lore,
 And civile armes to exercise no more :
 Then shall a Royall Virgin raine, which shall
 Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke shore,
 And the greate Castle smite so sore withall,
 That it shall make him shake, and shortly learn to
 fall :

L.

" But yet the end is not"—There Merlin stayd,
 As overcome of the spirites powre,
 Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,
 That secretly he saw, yet note discoure :
 Which suddain fitt and halfe extackick stoure
 When the two fearfull women saw, they grew
 Greatly confused in behavoure :
 At last, the fury past, to former hew
 Hee turnd againe, and chearfull locks as earst did
 shew.

LI.

Then, when themselves they well instructed had
 Of all that needed them to be inquird,
 They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad,
 With lighter hearts unto their home retir'd ;
 Where they in secret counsell close conspird,
 How to effect so hard an enterprize,
 And to possesse the purpose they desird :
 Now this, now that, twixt them they did devise,
 And diverse plots did frame to maske in strange
 disguise.

LII.

At last the nourse in her fool-hardy wit
 Conceiv'd a bold devise, and thus bespake ;
 " Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most fitt,
 That of the time doth dew advantage take :
 Ye see that good king Uther now doth make
 Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren, light
 Octa and Oza, whome hee lately brake
 Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight,
 That now all Britauiy doth burne in armes bright.

LIII.

" That therefore nought our passage may empeach,
 Let us in feigned armes ourselves disguise,
 And our weake hands (Need makes good schol-
 lers) teach
 The dreadful speare and shield to exercise :
 Ne certes, daughter, that same warlike wize,
 I weene, would you misseme ; for ye beene tall
 And large of limbe t' atchieve an hard emprize ;
 Ne ought ye want but skil, which practice small
 Will bring, and shortly make you a Mayd martiall.

LIV.

" And, sooth, it ought your corage much inflame
 To heare so often, in that royall hous,
 From whence to none inferior ye came,
 Bards tell of many women valorous,
 Which have full many feats adventurous
 Performd, in paragone of proudest men :
 The bold Bundeuca, whose victorious
 Exploits made Rome to quake ; stout Guendolen ;
 Renowned Martia ; and no doubted Emmilen ;

L. 3 — dismayd,] That is, ugly, ill-shaped. Church.

LIII. 1. — empeach,] Hinder. Todd.

LV.

“And, that which more then all the rest may sway,
Late dayes ensample, which these eies beheld:
In the last field before Menevia,
Which Uther with those forrein Pagans held,
I saw a Saxon virgin, the which field
Great Ulfin thrise upon the bloody playne;
And, had not Carados her hand withheld
From rash revenge, she had him surely slayne;
Yet Carados himselfe from her escapt with payue.”

LVI.

“Ah! read,” quoth Britomart, “how is she hight?”
“Fayre Angela,” quoth she, “men do her call,
No whit lesse fayre then terrible in fight:
She hath the leading of a martiall
And mightie people, dreaded more then all
The other Saxons, which doe, for her sake
And love, themselves of her name *Angles* call.
Therefore, faire Infant, her-ensample make
Unto thyselfe, and equall corage to thee take.”

LVII.

Her hartie wordes so deepe into the mynd
Of the young Damzell sunke, that great desire
Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,
And generous stout courage did inspyre,
That she resolv'd, unweeting to her syre,
Advent'rous knighthood on herselfe to don;
And counsell with her nourse her maides attyre
To turne into a massy habergeon;
And had her all things put in readines anon.

LVIII.

Th' old woman nought that needed did omit;
But all things did conveniently purvay.
It fortun'd (so time their turne did fit)
A hand of Britons, ryding on forray
Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray
Of Saxon goods; amongst the which was seene
A goodly armour, and full rich aray,
Which long'd to Angela, the Saxon queene,
All fretted round with gold and goodly wel bescene.

LIX.

The same, with all the other ornaments,
King Ryence caused to be hanged by
In his chiefe church, for endlesse monuments
Of his successe and gladfull victory:
Of which herselfe avising readily,
In th' evening late old Glaucè thether led
Faire Britomart, and, that same armory
Downe taking, her therein appareled
Well as she might, and with brave bauldrick gar-
nished.

LX.

Beside those armes there stood a mightie speare,
Which Bladud made by magick art of yore,
And usd the same in batteill aye to beare;
Sith which it had bene here preserv'd in store,
For his great virtues proved long afore:
For never wight so fast in sell could sit,
But him perforce unto the ground it bore:

LVII. 7. — her maides attyre

To turne &c.] That is, to change her maiden dress
for a suit of armour. CHURCH.

LVIII. 4. — forray] Foraging or pillaging, from the
verb *furray*. TODD.

Both speare she tooke and shield which hong by it;
Both speare and shield of great powre, for her pur-
pose fit.

LXI.

Thus when she had the Virgin all arayd,
Another harness which did hang thereby
About herselfe she dight, that the yong Mayd
She might in equall armes accompany,
And as her Squyre attend her carefully:
Tho to their ready steedes they clombe full light;
And through back waies, that none might them
espy,
Covered with secret cloud of silent night,
Themselves they forth convaيد, and passed forward
right.

LXII.

Ne rested they, till that to Faery Lond
They came, as Merlin them directed late:
Where, meeting with this Redcrosse Knight, she
Of diverse thinges discourses to dilate, [foud
But most of Arthegall and his estate.
At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part:
Then each to other, well affectionate,
Friendship professed with unfained hart:
The Redcrosse Knight diverst; but forth rode
Britomart.

CANTO IV.

Bold Marinell of Britomart
Is throwne on the Rich Strand:
Faire Blonnel of Arthur is
Long followed, but not fond.

1.

WHERE is the antique glory now become,
That whylome wont in wemen to appeare?
Where be the brave atchievements doen by some?
Where be the batteilles, where the shield and
speare,
And all the conquests which them high did reare,
That matter made for famous poets verse,
And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?
Beene they all dead, and laide in dolefull herse?
Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reverse?

II.

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore;
But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake!
For all too long I burne with envy sore
To heare the warlike feates which Homere spake
Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake
Of Greekish blood so ofte in Trojan plaine;
But when I reade, how stout Debora strake
Proud Sisera, and how Camill' hath slaine
The huge Orsilochus, I swell with great disdain.

III.

Yet these, and all that els had pmissaunce,
Cannot with noble Britomart compare,

LXI. 2. — Another harness] *Suit of armour*. Old Fr.
harnois. TODD.

LXII. 4. — to dilate,] That is, enlarge upon, relate
at large. UPTON.

LXII. 9. — diverst;] *Turned aside* out of the road.
Diverst is the same as *diverted*, from the Lat. *diverto*, to
turn aside. TODD.

1. 9. — reverse?] *Return*. CHURCH.

L

Aswell for glorie of great valiaunce,
As for pure chastitee and vertue rare,
That all her goodly deedes doe well declare.
Well worthie stock, from which the branches
sprong

That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare,
As thee, O Queene, the matter of my song,
Whose lignage from this Lady I derive along !

iv.

Who when, through speaches with the Redecrosse
Knight,

She learned had th' estate of Arthegall,
And in each point herselfe informd aright,
A friendly league of love perpetual
She with him bound, and conge tooke withall.
Then he forth on his iourney did proceede,
To seeke adventures which mote him befall,
And win him worship through his warlike deed,
Which alwaies of his paines he made the chiefest
meed.

v.

But Britomart kept on her former course,
Ne ever dofte her armes ; but all the way
Grew pensive through that amorous discourse,
By which the Redecrosse Knight did earst display
Her Lovers shape and cheavalrous aray :
A thousand thoughts she fashiond in her mind ;
And in her feigning fancie did pourtray
Him, such as fittest she for love could find,
Wise, warlike, personable, courteous, and kind.

vi.

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound she
fedd,
And thought so to beguile her grievous smart ;
But so her smart was much more grievous bredd,
And the deepe wound more deep engord her hart,
That nought but death her dolour mote depart.
So forth she rede, without repose or rest,
Searching all lands and each remotest part,
Following the guydance of her blinded guest,
Till that to the sea-coast at length she her address.

vii.

There she alighted from her light-foot beast,
And, sitting downe upon the rocky shore,
Badd her old Squyre unlace her lofty creast :
Tho, having vewd awhile the surges here
That gainst the craggy cliffs did loudly rore,
And in their raging surquedry disdaynd
That the fast earth affronted them so sore,
And their devouring covetize restraynd ;
Thereat she sighed deepe, and after thus com-
playnd :

viii.

"Huge sea of sorrow and tempestuous grieffe,
Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long
Far from the hoped haven of reliefe,
Why doe thy cruel billowes beat so strong,
And thy moyst mountaines each on others throng,
Threatning to swallow up my fearefull lyfe ?
O, doe thy cruell wrath and spitefull wrong

At length allay, and staint thy stormy strife,
Which in these troubled bowels raignes and rageth
ryfe !

ix.

"For els my feeble vessell, crazd and crackt
Through thy strong buffets and outrageous
blowes,
Cannot endure, but needes it must be wrackt
On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,
The whiles that Love it steres, and Fortune
rowes :
Love, my lewd pilott, hath a restlesse minde ;
And Fortune, beteswaine, no assurance knowes ;
But saile withouten starres gainst tyde and winde :
How can they other doe, sith both are bold and
blinde !

x.

"Thou god of windes, that raignest in the seas,
That raignest also in the continent,
At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,
The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,
Unto the gladsome port of her intent !
Then, when I shall myselve in safety see,
A table, for eternal monument
Of thy great grace and my great ieopardie,
Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee !"

xi.

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,
She shut up all her plaint in privy grieffe ;
(For her great courage would not let her weepe ;)
Till that old Glaucé gan with sharpe relieffe
Her to restraine, and give her good relieffe
Through hepe of those, which Merlin had her told
And fetch their being from the sacred mould
Of her immortall womb, to be in heaven enrold.

xii.

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde
Where far away one, all in armour bright,
With hasty gallop towards her did ryde :
Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight
Her helmet, to her courser mounting light :
Her former sorrow into sudden wrath
(Both ceosen passions of distroubled spright)
Converting, forth she beates the dusty path :
Love and despight attonce her corage kindled hath.

xiii.

As, when a foggy mist hath overcast
The face of heven and the cleare ayre engroste,
The world in darknes dwels ; till that at last
The watry southwinde from the seabord ceste
Upblowing doth disperse the vapour lo'ste,
And poures itselfe forth in a stormy showre ;
So the fayre Britemart, having discloste
Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,
The mist of grieffe dissolv'd did into vengeance
powre.

xiv.

Eftsoones, her goodly shield addressing fayre,
That mortall speare she in her hand did take,

vi. 5. ——— depart.] *Remove*, separate. CHURCH.
vi. 8. ——— her blinded guest.] *Love*. CHURCH.
vi. 9. ——— address.] She addressed herself, she directed her course to. CHURCH.
vii. 6. ——— surquedry.] *Pride*. TOWN.
vii. 7. ——— affronted.] *Opposed*. TOWN.

ix. 6. ——— my lewd pilott.] *My ignorant pilot*. *Lewd* is often used by Chaucer in opposition to *learned* ; as in old romances it also is to *clerk*. TONO.
xiii. 5. ——— the vapour lo'ste.] *The vapour lo'ste* is the vapour *looste*, loosed, dissolved ; as *disclo'ste* in the seventh line is *disclooste*, disclosed. CHURCH.

And unto battail did herselfe prepayre.
The Knight, approaching, steruely her bespake ;
“ Sir Knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make
By this forbidden way in my despyght,
Ne doest by others death ensample take ;
I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might,
Least afterwards it be too late to take thy flight.”

xv.

Ythridl with deepe disdaine of his proud threat,
She shortly thus ; “ Fly they, that need to fly ;
Wordes fearen babes : I meane not thee entreat
To passe ; but maugre thee will passe or dy : ”
Ne lenger stayd for th’ other to reply,
But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly
knowne.

Strongly the straunge Knight ran, and sturdily
Strooke her full on the brest, that made her
downe

Decline her head, and touch her crouper with her
crown.

xvi.

But she againe him in the shield did smite
With so fierce furie and great puissance,
That, through his three-square scoulin percing
quite

And through his mayled hauberque, hy mis-
chaunce [glaunce :

The wicked steele through his left side did
Him so transfixed she before her bore
Beyond his croupe, the length of all her lance ;
Till, sadly soucing on the sandy shore,
He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

xvii.

Like as the sacred oxe that carelesse stands
With gilden hornes and flowry girlonds crownd,
Proud of his dying honor and deare bandes,
Whiles th’ altars fume with frankincense arownd,
All suddainly with mortall stroke astownd
Doth groveling fall, and with his streaming gore
Distaines the pillours and the holy grownd,
And the faire flowres that decked him afore :
So fell proud Marinell upon the Pretious Shore.

xviii.

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,
But forward rode, and kept her ready way
Along the Strond ; which, as she over-went,
She saw bestowed all with rich aray
Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,
And all the gravell mixt with golden owre :
Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay
For gold, or perles, or pretious stones, an howre,
But them despised all ; for all was in her powre.

xix.

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,
Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare ;
His mother was the blacke-browd Cymoënt,
The daughter of great Nereus, which did beare
This warlike sonne unto an earthly peare,
The famous Dumarin ; who on a day
Finding the nymph asleepe in secret wheare,
As he by chaunce did wander that same way,
Was taken with her love, and by her closely lay.

xviii. 8. ——— *an howre,*] That is, any while. URTON.
xviii. 9. ——— *for all was in her powre.*] That is, *notwithstanding* they were all in her power. TODD.

xx.

There he this Knight of her begot, whom borne
She, of his father, Marinell did name ;
And in a rocky cave as wight forlorne
Long time she fostred up, till he became
A mighty man at armes, and mickle fame
Did get through great adventures by him donne :
For never man he suffred by that same
Rich Strond to travell, whereas he did wonne,
But that he must do battail with the Sea-nymphes
sonne.

xxi.

An hundred Knights of honorable name
He had subdew’d, and them his vassals made :
That through all Farie Lond his noble fame
Now blazed was, and feare did all invade,
That none durst passen through that perilous
glade :

And, to advance his name and glory more,
Her sea-god syre she dearly did perswade
T’ endow her sonne with threasure and rich store
Bove all the sonnes that were of earthly wombes
ybore.

xxii.

The god did graunt his daughters deare demanda,
To doen his nephew in all riches flow :
Eftsouones his heaped waves he did commaund
Out of their hollow besome forth to throw
All the huge threasure, which the sea below
Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe,
And him enriched through the overthrow
And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe
And often wayle their wealth which he from them
did keepe.

xxiii.

Shortly upon that Shore there heaped was
Exceeding riches and all pretious things,
The spoyle of all the world ; that it did pas
The wealth of th’ East, and pompe of Persian
kings :
Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owches, rings,
And all that els was pretious and deare,
The sea unto him voluntary brings ;
That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,
As was in all the Lond of Faery, or elsewhere.

xxiv.

Thereto he was a doughty dreaded Knight,
Tryde often to the seath of many deare,
That none in equall armes him matchen might :
The which his mother seeing gan to feare
Least his too haughtie hardines might reare
Some hard mishap in hazard of his life :
Forthy she oft him counsell to forbear
The bloody batteill, and to stirre up strife,
But after all his warre to rest his wearie kuife :

xxv.

And, for his more assurance, she inquir’d
One day of Proteus by his mighty spell
(For Proteus was with prophecye inspir’d)
Her deare sonnes destiny to her to tell,
And the sad end of her sweet Marinell :
Who, through foresight of his eternall skill,

xxiv. 2. *Tryde often to the seath of many deare,*] That is,
Often *dearly* tried to the hurt (scath) of many. CHURCH.
xxiv. 9. ——— *his wearie kuife :*] *Knife* is usually em-
ployed for *sword* in the old romances. TODD.

Bad her from womankind to keepe him well ;
For of a woman he should have much ill ;
A Virgin straunge and stout him should dismay or
kill.

xxvi.

Forth she gave him warning every day
The love of women not to entertaine ;
A lesson too too hard for living clay,
From love in course of nature to refraine !
Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,
And ever from fayre Ladies love did fly ;
Yet many Ladies fayre did oft complaine,
That they for love of him would algates dy :
Dy, whose list for him, he was Loves enemy.

xxvii.

But ah ! who can deceive his destiny,
Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate ?
That, when he sleepes in most security
And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,
And findeth dew effect or soone or late ;
So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme !
His mother bad him womens love to hate,
For she of womens force did feare no harme ;
So weening to have arm'd him, she did quite disarme.

xxviii.

This was that woman, this that deadly wovnd,
That Proteus prophecide should him dismay ;
The which his mother vainely did expownd
To be hart-wounding love, which should assay
To bring her sonne unto his last decay.
So tickle be the termes of mortall state
And full of subtile sophismes, which doe play
With double sences, and with false debate,
T' approve the unknownen purpose of eternall fate.

xxix.

Too trew the famous Marinell it fownd ;
Who, through late triall, on that Wealthy Strond
Inglorious now lies in sencelesse swownd,
Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond.
Which when his mother deare did understand,
And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd
Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,
Gathering sweete daffadillyes, to have made
Gay girlonds from the sun their foreheads fayr to
shade ;

xxx.

Eftsoones both flowres and girlonds far away
She flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent ;
To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,
And gamesom merth to grievous dreriment :
Shee threw herselfe downe on the continent,
Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne,
Whiles all her sisters did for her lament
With yelling outeries, and with shrieking sowne ;
And every one did teare her girlond from her
crowne.

xxxi.

Soone as she up out of her deadly fitt
Arose, she bad her charett to be brought ;
And all her sisters, that with her did sitt,
Bad eke attonce their charets to be sought :
Tho, full of bitter grieffe and pensive thought,

xxvi. 3. *A lesson too too hard*] This is an old form of
expression, to signify *exceeding*. Todd.

xxvii. 3. *That,*] Fate. Church.

She to her wagon clombe ; clombe all the rest,
And forth together went, with sorow fraught ;
The waves obedient to theyre beheast
Them yielded ready passage, and their rage
surceast.

xxxii.

Great Neptune stooed amazed at their sight,
Whiles on his broad rownd backe they softly slid,
And eke himselfe mournd at their mournful
plight,
Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet did,
For great compassion of their sorow, bid
His mighty waters to them buxome bee :
Eftsoones the roaring billowes still abid,
And all the griesly monsters of the see
Stood gapping at their gate, and wondred them to see.

xxxiii.

A teme of dolphins raunged in aray
Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymoent ;
They were all taught by Triton to obay
To the long raynes at her commaundement :
As swift as swallowes on the waves they went,
That their brode flaggy finnes no fome did reare,
Ne bubling rowndell they behinde them sent ;
The rest, of other fishes drawn weare,
Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did
sheare.

xxxiv.

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brim
Of the Rich Strond, their charets they forlore,
And let their temed fishes softly swin
Along the vargent of the fomy shore, [sore
Least they their finnes should bruze, and surbate
Their tender feete upon the stony ground :
And coming to the place, where all in gore
And cruddy blood enwallowed they fownd
The lucklesse Marinell lying in deadly swownd,

xxxv.

His mother swowned thrise, and the third time
Could scarce recovered bee out of her paine ;
Had she not bene devoide of mortall shine,
She should not then have bene relyv'd againe :
But, soone as life recovered had the raine,
Shee made so piteous mone and deare wayment,
That the hard rocks could scarce from tears
refraine :
And all her sister nymphes with one consent
Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad complement.

xxxvi.

"Deare image of myselfe," she sayd, "that is
The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne,
Is this thine high advancement ? O ! is this
Th' immortal name, with which thee yet unborn
Thy grandsire Nereus promist to adorne ?
Now lyst thou of life and honor reffe ;
Now lyst thou a lumpe of earth forlorne ;
Ne of thy late life memory is lefte ;
Ne can thy irrevocable destiny bee wefte !

xxxvii.

"Fond Proteus, father of false prophecis !
And they more fond that credit to thee give !

xxxv. 4. ——— relyv'd] *Brought to life*. Todd.

xxxv. 6. ——— wayment,] *Lamentation*. Todd.

xxxvi. 9. ——— wefte!] *Waved, avoided, removed*. Church.

Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,
That so deepe wound through these deare mem-
bers drive.

I feared love ; but they that love doe live ;
But they that dye, doe nether love nor hate :
Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgive ;
And to myselfe, and to accursed fate,
The guilt I doe ascribe : deare wisdom bought too
late !

XXXVIII.

“ O ! what avails it of immortall seed
To beene ybredd and never borne to dye ?
Farre better I it deeme to die with speed
Then waste in woe and wayfull miserye :
Who dyes, the utmost dolor doth abyge ;
But who that lives, is lefte to waile his losse :
So life is losse, and death felicity : [crosse
Sad life worse then glad death ; and greater
To see friends grave, then dead the grave selfe to
engrosse.

XXXIX.

“ But if the heavens did his days envie,
And my short blis maligne ; yet mote they well
Thus much afford me, ere that he did die,
That the dim eies of my deare Maritell
I mote have closed, and him bed farewell,
Sith other offices for mother meet
They would not graunt—
Yett I maulgre them, farewell, my sweetest Sweet !
Farewell, my sweetest sonne, sith we no more
shall meet ! ”

XL.

Thus when they all had sorowed their fill,
They softly gan to search his griesly wovnd :
And, that they might him handle more at will,
They him disarmd ; and, spredding on the grownd
Their watchet mantles frindgd with silver rownd,
They softly wipt away the gelly blood
From th' orifice ; which having well upbownd,
They pou'd in soveraine balme and nectar good,
Good both for erthly med'cine and for hevenly food.

XLI.

Tho, when the lilly-handed Liagore
(This Liagore whilome had learned skill
In leaches craft, by great Apolloes lore,
Sith her whilome upon high Pindus hill
He loved, and at last her wombe did fill
With hevenly seed, whereof wise Pæon sprong.)
Did feele his pulse, shee knew there staid still
Some litle life his feeble sprites emong ;
Which to his mother told, despeyre she from her
flong.

XLII.

Tho, up him taking in their tender hands,
They easely unto her charett beare :
Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
And strowe with flowres the lamentable beare :
Then all the rest into their coches clim,
And through the brackish waves their passage
sheare ;

xxxviii. 5. — abyge ;] *Endure, or suffer.* TODD.

xxxix. 2. — maligne ;] *Grudge, or oppose ; a verb
formed from the French feminine adjective maligne.*
TODD.

xl. 5. — watchet mantles] The word *watchet* was
formerly common for *blue*. TODD.

Upon great Neptunes necke they softly swim,
And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

XLIII.

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre
Is built of hollow billowes heaped hie,
Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy showre,
And vaulted all within like to the skye,
In which the gods doe dwell eternally :
There they him laide in easy couch well dight ;
And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply
Salves to his wounds, and medicines of might :
For Tryphon of sea-gods the soveraine leach is hight.

XLIV.

The whiles the nymphes sitt all about him rownd,
Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight ;
And ofte his mother, vewing his wide wovnd,
Cursed the hand that did so deadly smight
Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight :
But none of all those curses overtooke
The warlike Maide, th' ensample of that might ;
But fayrely well shee thryvd, and well did brooke
Her noble deedes, ne her right course for ought
forsooke.

XLV.

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew,
To bring to passe his mischievous intent,
Now that he had her singled from the crew
Of courteous Knights, the Prince and Fary gent,
Whom late in chace of Beauty excellent
Shee lefte, pursewing that same foster strong ;
Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,
And full of firy zeale, him followed long,
To reskew her from shame, and to revenge her
wrong.

XLVI.

Through thick and thin, through mountains and
through playns,
Those two great Champions did attonce pursew
The feareful Damzell with incessant payns ;
Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew
Of hunter swifte and sent of howndes trew.
At last they came unto a double way ;
Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskew,
Themselves they did dispart, each to assay,
Whether more happy were to win so goodly pray.

XLVII.

But Timias, the Princes gentle Squyre,
That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent,
And with proud envy and indignant yre
After that wicked foster fiercely went :
So beene they Three three sondry wayes ybent :
But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell ;
Whose chauce it was, that soone he did repent,
To take that way in which that Damozell
Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend of hell.

XLVIII.

At last of her far off he gained vew.
Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,
And ever as he nigher to her drew,

xlvii. 1. *But Timias, the Princes gentle Squyre,
That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent,*] But
Timias, the Squire of Prince Arthur, had given up, *before
lent, that Lady unto his Lord. It should be therefore
forelent.* UPFON.

So evermore he did increase his speed,
 And of each turning still kept wary heed :
 Alowd to her he oftentimes did call
 To doe away vaine doubt and needlesse dread :
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
 Many meeke wordes to stay and comfort her with-
 all.

XLIX.

But nothing might relent her hasty flight ;
 So deepe the deadly feare of that foule swaine
 Was earst impressed in her gentle spright :
 Like as a fearefull dove, which through the raine
 Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine,
 Having farre off espyde a tassell gent,
 Which after her his nimble winges doth straine,
 Doubleth her hast for feare to bee for-hent,
 And with her pineons cleaves the liquid firmament.

L.

With no lesse hast, and eke with no lesse dread,
 That fearefull Ladie fledd from him that ment
 To her no evill thought nor evill deed ;
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent
 Carried her forward with her first intent :
 And though, oft looking backward, well she
 Herselfe freed from that foster insolent, [vewde
 And that it was a Knight which now her sewde,
 Yet she no lesse the Knight feard then that Villein
 rude.

LI.

His uncouth shield and strange armes her dismayd,
 Whose like in Faery Lond were seldom seene ;
 That fast she from him fledd, no lesse afrajd
 Then of wilde beastes if she had chased beene :
 Yet he her followd still with corage keene
 So long, that now the golden Hesperus
 Was mounted high in top of heaven sheene,
 And warnd his other brethren ioyeous
 To light their blessed larnps in Loves eternal hous.

LII.

All suddainly dim wox the dampish ayre,
 And griesly shadowes covered heaven bright,
 That now with thousand starres was decked layre :
 Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull sight,
 And that perforce, for want of lenger light,
 He mote surceasse his suit and lose the hope
 Of his long labour ; he gan fowly wye
 His wicked fortune that had turnd aslope,
 And cursed Night that reft from him so goodly
 scope.

LIII.

Tho, when her wayes he could no more descry,
 But to and fro at disaventure strayd ;
 Like as a ship, whose lodestar suddainly
 Covered with clouds her pilott had dismayd ;

XLIX. 1. ——— relent] *Slacken or remit.* TODD.

XLIX. 4. ——— raine] *Region.* CHURCH.

XLIX. 6. ——— a tassell gent,] *Tassell* is the male of the *gosshawk*. It should be written *tercel* or *tiercel*, from the Italian, *terzuolo* ; which name it is said to have obtained, because it is a *tierce* or *third* less than the female. TODD.

XLIX. 8. ——— for-hent,] that is, *taken before she can escape.* UPTON.

l. 8. ——— which now her sewde,] Which now *pursued* her. *Fr. suivre.* TODD.

l. 1. *His uncouth shield*] For it was covered with a veil. UPTON.

l. 1. 9. ——— so goodly scope.] So fair a prospect. CHURCH.

His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,
 And from his loftie steed dismounting low
 Did let him forage : downe himselfe he layd
 Upon the grassy ground to sleepe a throw ;
 The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his
 pillow.

LIV.

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any rest ;
 Instead thereof sad sorow and disdain
 Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,
 And thousand Fancies bett his ydle brayne
 With their light wings, the sights of semblants
 Oft did he wish that Lady faire mote bee [vaine :
 His Faery Queene, far whom he did complaine ;
 Or that his Faery Queene were such as shee :
 And ever hasty Night he blamed bitterlie :

LV.

“ Night ! thou foule mother of annoyaunce sad,
 Sister of heavie Death, and nurse of Woe,
 Which wast begot in heaven, but for thy bad
 And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below,
 Where, by the grim floud of Cocytus slow,
 Thy dwelling is in Herebus black hous,
 (Black Herebus, thy husband, is the foe
 Of all the gods,) where thou ungratious
 Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horreur hideous ;

LVI.

“ What had th’ Eternal Maker need of thee
 The world in his continuall course to keepe,
 That doest all things deface, ne lettest see
 The beautie of his worke ? Indeed in sleepe
 The slouthfull body that doth love to steepe
 His lustlesse limbes, and drowne his baser miud,
 Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygian deepe
 Calles thee his goddesse, in his error blind,
 And great dame Natures handmaide chearing every
 kind.

LVII.

“ But well I wote that to an heavy hart
 Thou art the roote and nurse of bitter cares,
 Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts :
 Instead of rest thou lendest rayling teares ;
 Instead of sleepe thou sendest troublous faeres
 And dreadfull visions, in the which alive
 The dreary image of sad Death appears :
 So from the wearie spirit thou doest drive
 Desired rest, and men of happinesse deprive.

LVIII.

“ Under thy mantle black there hidden lye
 Light-shonning Theft, and traiterous Intent,
 Abhorred Bloodshed, and vile Felony,
 Shamefull Deceipt, and Daunger imminent,
 Fowle Horror, and eke hellish Dreriment :
 All these I wote in thy protection bee,
 And light doe shonne, for feare of being shent :
 For light ylike is loth’d of them and thee ;
 And all, that lewdnesse love, doe hate the light to
 see.

LIX.

“ For Day discovers all dishonest wayes,
 And sheweth each thing as it is in deed :
 The prayes of High God he faire displayes,

l. 1. 8. ——— a throw ;] A *short space*, a little while. CHURCH.

l. 1. 4. *rayling teares ;]* *Tears trickling down.* TODD.

And His large bountie rightly doth areed :
 Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed
 Which Darknesse shall subdue and heaven win :
 Truth is his daughter ; he her first did breed
 Most sacred Virgin without spot of sinne :
 Our life is day ; but death with darknesse doth
 begin.

LX.

“ O, when will Day then turne to me againe,
 And bring with him his long-expected light !
 O Titan ! hast to reare thy ioyous waine ;
 Speed thee to spread abroad thy beames bright,
 And chace away this too long lingring Night ;
 Chace her away, from whence she came, to hell :
 She, she it is, that hath me done despite :
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,
 And yield her rowme to Day, that can it governe
 well.”

LXI.

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare
 In restlesse anguish and quiet paine ;
 And earely, ere the Morrow did appeare
 His deawy head out of the ocean maine,
 He up arose, as halfe in great disdaine,
 And clombe unto his steed : So forth he went
 With heavy looke and lumpish pace, that plaine
 In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent :
 His steed eke seemd t' apply his steps to his intent.

CANTO V.

Prince Arthur hears of Florimell :
 Three fosters Timias wound ;
 Belpheoe findes him almost dead,
 And searcheth out of snownd.

I.

WONDER it is to see in diverse mindes
 How diversly Love doth his pageaunts play,
 And shewes his powre in variable kindes :
 The baser wit, whose ydle thoughts alway
 Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay,
 It stirreth up to sensual desire,
 And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day ;
 But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire,
 That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

II.

Ne suffereth it uncomely Idleness
 In his free thought to build her sluggish nest ;
 Ne suffereth it thought of ungentleness
 Ever to creepe into his noble brest ;
 But to the highest and the worthiest
 Lifteth it up that els would lowly fall :
 It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest ;
 It lettes not scarce this Prince to breath at all,
 But to his first poursuit him forward still doth call :

III.

Who long time wandred through the forest wyde
 To finde some issue thence ; till that at last
 He met a Dwarfie that seemed terrifyde
 With some late perill which he hardly past,
 Or other accident which him aghast ;
 Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,
 And whether now he traueiled so fast :

LXI. 8. — maltalent:] *Ill-will, or spleen.* TODD.

Forsore he swat, and, ronning through that same
 Thicke forest, was beseracht and both his feet nigh
 lame.

IV.

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,
 The Dwarfie him answerd ; “ Sir, ill mote I stay
 To tell the same : I lately did depart
 From Faery Court, where I have many a day
 Served a gentle Lady of great way
 And high accompt throughout all Elfin Land,
 Who lately left the same, and tooke this way :
 Her now I seeke ; and if ye understand
 Which way she fared hath, good Sir, tell out of hand.”

V.

“ What mister wight,” saide he, “ and how arayd ?”
 “ Royally clad,” quoth he, “ in cloth of gold,
 As meetest may besecme a noble mayd ;
 Her faire lockes in rich circlet he enrolde,
 A fayrer wight did never sunne behold ;
 And on a palfrey rydes more white then snow,
 Yet she herselfe is whiter manifold ;
 The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
 Is, that she is the fairest wight alive, I trow.”

VI.

“ Now certes, Swaine,” saide he, “ such one, I weene,
 Fast flying through this forest from her fo,
 A foule ill-favoured foster, I have scene ;
 Herselfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,
 But could not stay ; so fast she did foregoe,
 Carried away with wings of speedy feare.” [woe,
 “ Ah ! dearest God,” quoth he, “ that is great
 And wondrous ruth to all that shall it heare :
 But can ye read, Sir, how I may her finde, or
 where ?”

VII.

“ Perdy me lever were to weeten that,”
 Saide he, “ than ransom of the richest Knight,
 Or all the good that ever yet I gat :
 But froward fortune, and too forward night,
 Such happinesse did, maulgre, to me spight,
 And fro me reft both life and light attone.
 But, Dwarfie, aread what is that Lady bright
 That through this Forrest wandreth thus alone ;
 For of her errour straunge I have great ruth and
 mone.”

VIII.

“ That Ladie is,” quoth he, “ whereso she bee,
 The bountiest Virgin and most debonaire
 That ever living eye, I weene, did see :
 Lives none this day that may with her compare
 In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
 The goodly ornaments of beauty bright ;
 And is ycleped Florimell the fayre,

vi. 5. — stay ;] *Stop or catch.* So, in st. 38, *stayd*, i. e. stopt or caught. CHURCH.

vii. 4. — too forward night] The night coming on too fast. CHURCH.

vii. 5. — maulgre,] Mr. Upton, in his Glossary, interprets *maulgre* by the following paraphrase of this line: “ Such happinesse did *maulgre* to me spight,” that is, Did spight to me much against my will. But, by Spenser's pointing of the passage, as I have printed it, I should imagine *maulgre* to be an adverb of imprecation, *Curse on it.* TODD.

vii. 9. *For of her errour straunge &c.]* That is, For I am greatly concerned that she should wander in such a manner. *Errour, Lat. error, wandering.* CHURCH.

Faire Florimell belov'd of many a Knight,
Yet she loves none but one, that Marinell is hight ;

ix.

"A Sea-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight,
Of my deare Dame is loved dearely well ;
In other none, but him, she sets delight ;
All her delight is set on Marinell ;
But he sets nought at all by Florimell :
For Ladies love his mother long ygoe
Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell :
But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe
He is ysleine, which is the ground of all our woe.

x.

"Five daies there be since he (they say) was slaine,
And fowre since Florimell the Court forwent,
And vowed never to returne againe
Till him alive or dead she did invent.
Therefore, faire Sir, for love of knighthood gent
And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may
By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,
Or succour her, or me direct the way,
Do one or other good, I you most humbly pray :

xi.

"So may ye gaine to you full great renownme
Of all good Ladies through the worlde so wide,
And haply in her hart finde highest rowme
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide !
At least eternall meede shall you abide."
To whom the Prince ; "Dwarfe, comfort to thee
take ;
For, till thou tidings learne what her betide,
I here avow thee never to forsake :
Ill weares he armes, that nill them use for Ladies
sake."

xii.

So with the Dwarfe he back retourn'd againe,
To seeke his Lady, where he mote her finde ;
But by the way he greatly gan complaine
The want of his good Squire late left behinde,
For whom he wondrous pensive grew in minde,
For doubt of daunger which mote him betide ;
For him he loved above all mankind,
Having him trew and faithfull ever tride,
And bold, as ever Squire that waited by Knights
side :

xiii.

Who all this while full hardly was assayd
Of deadly daunger which to him betidd :
For, whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd,
After that foster fowle he fiercely ridd
To bene avenged of the shame he did
To that faire Damzell : Him he chased long [hid
Through the thicke woods wherein he would have
His shamefull head from his avengement strong,
And oft him threatned death for his outrageous
wrong.

xiv.

Nathlesse the vilain sped himselfe so well,
Whether through swiftness of his speedie beast,
Or knowledge of those woods where he did dwell,

ix. 7. *Did him, they say, forwarne*] It should be *forwarne*. So just below,

"And fowre since Florimell the court forwent!"
It should have been *forwent*, i. e. did forego. Upton.
x. 4. — *invent.*] *Find.* A Latinism, *invenia*. Todd.
xii. 6. *For doubt*] *Fear*. Todd.

That shortly he from daunger was releast,
And out of sight escaped at the least ;
Yet not escaped from the dew reward
Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast,
Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard
The heavie plague that for such leachours is prepard.

xv.

For, soone as he was vanisht out of sight,
His coward courage gan emboldned bee,
And cast t'avenge him of that fowle despight
Which he had borne of his bold enimee :
Tho to his brethren came, (for they were three
Ungratious children of one gracelesse syre,)
And unto them complayned how that he
Had used beene of that foole-hardie Squire :
So them with bitter words he stird to bloodie yre.

xvi.

Forthwith themselves with their sad instruments
Of spoyle and murder they gan arme bylve,
And with him fourth into the forrest went
To wreake the wrath, which he did earst revive
In there sterne brests, on him which late did drive
Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight :
For they had vow'd that never he alive
Out of that forest should escape their might ;
Vile rancour their rude harts had filld with such
despight.

xvii.

Within that wood there was a covert glade,
Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne,
Through which it was unfeath for wight to wade ;
And now by fortune it was overflowne :
By that same way they knew that Squire un-
knowne
Mote algates passe ; forthy themselves they set
There in await with thicke woods overgrowne,
And all the while their malice they did whet
With cruell threats his passage through the ford
to let.

xviii.

It fortun'd, as they devised had,
The gentle Squire came ryding that same way,
Unweeting of their wile and treason bad,
And through the ford to passen did assay ;
But that fierce foster, which late fled away,
Stoutly fourth stepping on the further shore,
Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,
Till he had made amends, and full restore
For all the damage which he had him doen afore.

xix.

With that, at him a quiv'ring dart he threw
With so fell force, and villemious despite,
That through his haberieon the forkehead flew,
And through the linked mayles empierced quite,
But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite :
That stroke the hardy Squire did sore displease,
But more that him he could not come to smite ;
For by no meanes the high banke he could sease,
But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine
disease.

xvii. 9. — *to let.*] *To hinder*. Church.
xviii. 8. — *restore*] Used as a substantive for *restora-
tion* or *restitution*. Church.
xix. 9. — *disease.*] *Uneasiness*. Fr. *desaise*. Todd.

xx.

And still the foster with his long hore-speare
Him kept from landing at his wished will :
Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
A cruell shaft headed with deadly ill,
And fethered with an unlucky quill ;
The wicked steele stayd not till it did light
In his left thigh, and deepely did it thrill :
Exceeding griefe that wound in him empight,
But more that with his foes he could not come to fight.

xxi.

At last, through wrath and vengeance, making way
He on the bancke arryv'd with mickle payne ;
Where the third brother him did sore assay,
And drove at him with all his might and mayne
A forest-bill, which both his hands did strayne ;
But warily he did avoide the blow,
And with his speare requited him agayne,
That both his sides were thrilled with the throw,
And a large streame of bloud out of the wound did flow.

xxii.

He, tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite
The bitter earth, and had to lett him in
Into the balefull house of endless night,
Where wicked ghosts doe waile their former sin.
Tho gan the battaile freshly to begin ;
For nathemore for that spectácle had
Did th' other two their cruell vengeance blin,
But both attonce on both sides him bestad,
And load upon him layd, his life for to have had.

xxiii.

Tho when that villayn he aviz'd, which late
Affrighted had the fairest Florimell,
Full of fiers fury and indignant hate
To him he turned, and with rigor fell
Smote him so rudely on the pannikell,
That to the ehin he clefte his head in twaine :
Downe on the ground his carcas groveling fell ;
His sinfull sowle with desperate disdain
Out of her fleshy ferme fled to the place of paine.

xxiv.

That seeing, now the only last of three
Who with that wicked shafte him wounded had,
Trembling with horror, (as that did foresee
The fearefull end of his avengement sad, [bad,])
Through which he follow should his brethren
His bootelesse bow in feeble hand upheapt,
And therewith shott an arrow at the Lad ;
Which fayntly fluttring scarce his helmet raight,
And glauncing fel to ground, but him annoyed
naught.

xxv.

With that, he would have fled into the wood ;
But Timias him lightly overhent,
Right as he entring was into the flood,
And strooke at him with force so violent,
That headlesse him into the foord he sent ;
The carcas with the streame was carried downe,
But th' head fell backward on the continent ;

xxii. 7. — blin,] *Cease, or give over.* TODD.xxiii. 5. — pannikell,] *The brain-pan, the skull, the crown of the head.* Ital. *pannicula.* Fr. *pannicule.* UPTON.xxiii. 9. — *fleshy ferme*] *Farm, here perhaps in the sense of lodging-house, Sax. feorþm, hospitium.* TODD.

So mischief fel upon the meaners crowne :
They three be dead with shame ; the Squire lives
with renouwe :

xxvi.

He lives, but takes small ioy of his renouwe ;
For of that cruell wound he bled so sore,
That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne ;
Yet still the blood forth gusht in so great store,
That he lay wallow'd all in his owne gore.
Now God thee keepe ! thou gentlest Squire alive,
Els shall thy loving Lord thee see no more ;
But both of comfort him thou shalt deprive,
And eke thyselfe of honor which thou didst atchive.

xxvii.

Providence hevenly passeth living thought,
And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way ;
For loe ! great grace or fortune thether brought
Comfort to him that comfortlesse now lay.
In those same woods ye well remember may
How that a noble hunteresse did wonne,
Shee, that base Braggadochio did affray,
And made him fast out of the forest ronne ;
Belphœbe was her name, as faire as Phœbus surme.

xxviii.

Shee on a day, as shee pursued the chace
Of some wilde beast, which with her arrowes
keene
She wounded had, the same along did trace
By tract of blood, which she had freshly seene
To have hesprinkled all the grassy greene ;
By the great persue which she there pereceav'd,
Well hoped shee the beast engor'd had beene,
And made more haste the life to have bereav'd :
But ah ! her expectation greatly was deceav'd.

xxix.

Shortly she came whereas that woefull Squire
With blood deformed lay in deadly swownd ;
In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire,
The christall humor stood congealed round ;
His locks, like faded leaves fallen to grownd,
Knotted with blood in bouches rudely ran ;
And his sweete lips, on which before that stownd
The bud of youth to blossom faire began,
Spoild of their rosy red were woxen pale and wan.

xxx.

Saw never living eie more heavy sight,
That could have made a rocke of stone to rew,
Or rive in twaine : which when that Lady bright,
Besides all hope, with melting eies did vew,
All suddainly abasht shee changed hew,
And with sterne horror backward gan to start :
But, when shee better him beheld, shee grew
Full of soft passion and unwonted smart :
The point of pity perced through her tender hart.

xxxi.

Meekely shee bowed downe, to weete if life
Yett in his frosen members did remaine ;
And, feeling by his pulses beating rife
That the weake sowle her seat did yett retaine,
Shee cast to comfort him with busy paine :

xxviii. 6. — *persue*] It seems to be a word of his own, and is softer than *pursuit.* CHURCH.xxx. 4. *Besides all hope,*] Having no hopes that he was alive. CHURCH

His double-folded necke she reard upright,
And rubd his temples and each trembling vaine ;
His mayled haberieon she did undight,
And from his head his heavy burget did light.

xxxvii.

Into the woods thenceforth in haste shee went,
To seeke for hearbes that mote him remedy ;
For shee of herbes had great intendment,
Taught of the nymphe which from her infancy
Her nourced had in trew nobility :
There, whether yt divine tobacco were,
Or panachæa, or polygony,
Shee fownd, and brought it to her patient deare,
Who al this while lay bleding out his hart-blood
neare.

xxxviii.

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles plaine
Shee powned small, and did in peeces bruze ;
And then atweene her lilly handes twaine
Into his wound the juice thereof did seruze ;
And round about, as she could well it use,
The flesh therewith shee suppled and did steepe,
T'abate all spasme and soke the swelling bruze ;
And, after having searcht the intuse deepe,
Shee with her scarf did bind the wound, from cold
to keepe.

xxxix.

By this he had sweet life recurr'd agayne,
And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies,
His watry eies drizzling like dewy rayne,
He up gan lifte toward the azure skies,
From whence descend all hopelesse remedies :
Therewith he sigh'd ; and, turning him aside,
The goodly Maide full of divinities
And gifts of heavenly grace he by him spide,
Her bow and gilden quiver lying him beside.

xl.

"Mercy ! deare Lord," said he, "what grace is this
That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight,
To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis
To comfort me in my distressed plight !
Angell, or goddesse doe I call thee right ?
What service may I doe unto thee meete,
That hast from darkenes me returned to light,
And with thy hevenly salves and med'cines sweete
Hast drest my sinfull wounds ! I kisse thy blessed
feete."

xli.

Thereat shee blushing said ; " Ah ! gentle Squire,
Nor goddesse I, nor angell ; but the mayd
And daughter of a woody nymphe, desire
No service but thy safety and ayd ;
Which if thou gaine, I shal be well apayd.
Wee mortall wights, whose lives and fortunes be
To commun accidents stil open layd,
Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee,
To succor wretched wights whom wee captived seee."

xlii.

By this her damzells, which the former chace
Had undertaken after her, arryv'd,

xxxii. 3. *For shee of herbes had great intendment.*] Ital. *intendimento*, intendment, understanding. UPTON.

xxxiii. 4. ——— seruze ;] *Squeeze*. Perhaps from *screw*. TODD.

xxxiii. 8. ——— *the intuse deepe.*] *The contusion deep*. UPTON.

As did Belphebe, in the bloody place,
And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriv'd
Of life, whom late their Ladies arow ryv'd :
Forthy the bloody tract they followd fast,
And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd ;
But two of them the rest far overpast,
And where their Lady was arrived at the last.

xxxviii.

Where when they saw that goodly Boy with blood
Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wound,
They wondred much ; and shortly understood
How him in deadly cace their Lady fownd,
And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.
Eftscones his warlike courser, which was strayd
Farre in the woodes whiles that he lay in stownd,
Shee made those damzels search ; which being
stayd,
They did him set thereon, and forth with them con-
vayd.

xxxix.

Into that forest farre they thence him led
Where was their dwelling ; in a pleasant glade
With mountaines round about environed
And mightie woodes, which did the valley shade,
And like a stately theatre it made
Spreading itselfe into a spatious plaine ;
And in the midst a little river plaide
Emongst the pumy stones, which seemd to plaine
With gentle murmure that his course they did re-
straine.

xli.

Beside the same a dainty place there lay,
Planted with myrtle trees and laurells greene,
In which the birds song many a lovely lay
Of Gods high praise, and of their sweet loves
teene,
As it an earthly paradise had bene :
In whose enclosed shadow there was pight
A faire pavilion, scarcely to be seene,
The which was al within most richly dight,
That greatest princes living it mote well delight.

xlii.

Thether they brought that wounded Squire, and
layd
In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest.
He rested him awhile ; and then the Mayd
His readie wound with better salves new drest :
Daily shee dressed him, and did the best,
His grievous hurt to guarish, that she might ;
But shortly shee his dolour hath redrest,
And his foule sore reduced to faire plight :
It shee reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

xliii.

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine,
That heales up one, and makes another wound !
Shee his hurt thigh to him reurnd againe,
But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,
Through an unwary dart which did rebownd
From her faire eyes and gracious countenance.
What bootes it him from death to be unbownd,
To be captived in endlesse durauce
Of sorrow and despeyre without aleggeance !

XL. 4. ——— *their loves sweet teene.*] *Sweet teene* is pleas-
ing uneasiness. CHURCH.

xli. 6. ——— *guarish.*] *Heal*. Fr. *guérir*. CHURCH.

xlii. 1. ——— *paine.*] *Labour*. Fr. *peine*. CHURCH.

xliii. 9. ——— *aleggeance*!] *Alleviation*. TODD.

XLIII.

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,
 So still his hart woxe sore, and health decayd:
 Madnesse to save a part, and lose the whole!
 Still whenas he beheld the heavenly Mayd,
 Whiles daily playsters to his wound she layd,
 So still his lady the more increasht,
 The whiles her matchlesse beantie him dismayd.
 Ah God! what other could he do at least,
 But love so fayre a Lady that his life releast!

XLIV.

Long while he strove in his corageous brest
 With reason dew the passion to subdew,
 And love for to dislodge out of his nest:
 Still when her excellencies he did vew,
 Her sovaine bountie and celestiall hew,
 The same to love he strongly was constraynd:
 But, when his meane estate he did revew,
 He from such hardy boldnesse was restraynd,
 And of his lucklesse lott and cruell love thus playnd:

XLV.

"Unthankfull wretch," said he, "is this the meed,
 With which her sovaine mercy thou doest quight?
 Thy life she saved by her gracious deed;
 But thou doest weene with villeanous despight
 To blot her honour and her heavenly light:
 Dye; rather dye then so disloyally
 Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light:
 Fayre death it is, to shonne more shame, to dy:
 Dye; rather dy then ever love disloyally.

XLVI.

"But if, to love, disloyalty it bee,
 Shall I then hate her that from death's dore
 Me brought? ah! farre be such reproch fro mee!
 What can I lesse doe then her love therefore,
 Sith I her dew reward cannot restore?
 Dye; rather dye, and dying doe her serve;
 Dying her serve, and living her adore;
 Thy life she gave, thy life she doth deserve:
 Dye; rather dye then ever from her service swerve.

XLVII.

"But, foolish boy, what hootes thy service hace
 To her, to whom the heavens doe serve and sew?
 Thon, a meane Squire of meeke and lowly place;
 She, heavenly borne and of celestiall hew.
 How then? of all Love taketh equall vew:
 And doth not Highest God vouchsafe to take
 The love and service of the basest crew!
 If she will not; dye meekly for her sake:
 Dye; rather dye then ever so faire love forsake?"

XLVIII.

Thus warreid he long time against his will;
 Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last
 To yield himselfe unto the mightie ill,
 Which, as a victour proud, gan ransack fast
 His inward partes, and all his entrayles wast,
 That neither blood in face nor life in hart
 It left, but both did quite drye up and blast;
 As percing levin, which the inner part
 Of every thing consumes and calcineth by art.

XLIX.

Which seeing fayre Belphebe gan to feare
 Least that his wound were inly well not heald,

XLIII. 1. ——— grow hole,] *Sound, entire.* TODD.

Or that the wicked steele empoysned were:
 Little shee weend that love he close conceald.
 Yet still he wasted, as the snow congeald.
 When the bright sunne his beams thereon doth
 Yet never he his hart to her reveald; [beat:
 But rather chose to dye for sorow great
 Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

L.

She, gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare
 To doe him ease, or doe him remedy:
 Many restoratives of vertues rare,
 And costly cordialles she did apply,
 To mitigate his stubborne malady:
 But that sweet cordiall, which can restore
 A love-sick hart, she did to him envy;
 To him, and to all th' unworthy world forelore,
 She did envy that sovaine salve in secret store.

LI.

The daintie rose, the daughter of her morne,
 More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre
 The girlond of her honour did adorne:
 Ne suffred she the middayes scorching powre,
 Ne the sharp northerne wind thereon to showre;
 But lapped up her silken leaves most chayne,
 Whenso the froward skye began to lowre;
 But, soone as calmed was the cristall ayre,
 She did it fayre dispred and let to florish fayre.

LII.

Eternall God, in his almightie powre,
 To make ensample of his heavenly grace,
 In paradize whylome did plant this Flowre;
 Whence he it fetcht out of her native place,
 And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,
 That mortall men her glory should admyre.
 In gentle Ladies breste and bounteous race
 Of woman-kind it fayrest Flowre doth spyre,
 And heareth fruit of honour and all chaste desyre.

LIII.

Fayre ympes of beantie, whose bright shiming
 beames
 Adorne the world with like to heavenly light,
 And to your willes both royalties and reames
 Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous
 might;
 With this fayre Flowre your goodly girlonds
 Of Chastity and Vertue virginnall, [dight
 That shall embellish more your beantie bright,
 And crowne your heades with heavenly coronall,
 Such as the Angels weare before God's tribunal!

LIV.

To youre faire selves a faire ensample frame
 Of this faire Virgin, this Belphebe fayre;
 To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame
 Of Chastite, none living may compayre:
 Ne poysnous Envy iustly can empayre
 The prayse of her fresh-flowing Maydenhead;
 Forthly she standeth on the highest stayre
 Of th' honorable stage of womanhead,
 That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

LII. 8. ——— spyre,] *Shoot forth.* Corn is said to *spire*, when it is in ear. CHURCH.

LIV. 9. ——— *her ensample dead.*] That is, the example of her dead. CHURCH.

LV.

In so great prayse of stedfast Chastity
 Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde,
 Tempered with Grace and goodly Modyesty,
 That seemed those two vertues strove to fynd
 The higher place in her heroick raynd :
 So striving each did other more augment,
 And both encreast the prayse of womankynde,
 And both encreast her beautie excellent :
 So all did make in her a perfect complement.

CANTO VI.

The Birth of fayre Belphebe and
 Of Amoretta is told.
 The Gardins of Adonis fraught
 With pleasures manifold.

I.

WELL may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while
 Ye wonder how this noble Damozell
 So great perfections did in her compile,
 Sith that in salvage forests she did dwell,
 So farre from Court and royall Citadell,
 The great schoolmaistresse of all Courtesy :
 Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far expell
 All civile usage and gentility,
 And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

II.

But to this faire Belphebe in her Berth
 The heavens so favorable were and free,
 Looking with myld aspéct upon the earth
 In th' horoscope of her nativitee,
 That all the gifts of grace and chastitee
 On her they poured forth of plenteous borne :
 Iove laught on Venus from his soverayne see,
 And Phoebus with faire beames did her adorne,
 And all the Graces rockt her cradle being borne.

III.

Her Berth was of the wombe of morning dew,
 And her conception of the ioyous prime ;
 And all her whole creation did her shew
 Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime
 That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.
 So was this Virgin borne, so was she bred ;
 So was she trayned up from time to time
 In all chaste vertue and true bountihed,
 Till to her dew perfection she were ripened.

IV.

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee,
 The daughter of Amphisa, who by race
 A Faerie was, yborne of high degree :
 She bore Belphebe ; she bore in like cace
 Fayre Amoretta in the second place :
 These two were twinnes, and twixt them two did
 The heritage of all celestiall grace ; [share
 That all the rest it seemed they robbed bare
 Of bounty, and of beautie, and all vertues rare.

V.

It were a goodly storie to declare
 By what straunge accident faire Chrysogone
 Conceiv'd these infants, and how them she bare

LV. 9. — *a perfect complement.*] A complete character. Lat. *complementum*. CHURCH.

In this wilde forrest wandering all alone,
 After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone :
 For not as other womens commune brood
 They were enwombed in the sacred throne
 Of her chaste bodie ; nor with commune food,
 As other womens babes, they sucked vitall blood :

VI.

But wondrously they were begot and bred
 Through influence of th' heavens fruitfull ray,
 As it in antique bookes is mentioned.
 It was upon a sommers shinie day,
 When Titan faire his beamès did display,
 In a fresh fountaine, far from all mens vew,
 She bath'd her brest the boyling heat t'allay ;
 She bath'd with roses red and violets blew,
 And all the sweetest flowers that in the forrest grew :

VII.

Till faint through yrkesome wearines adowne
 Upon the grassy ground herselfe she layd
 To sleepe, the whiles a gentle slombring swowne
 Upon her fell all naked bare displayd :
 The sunbeames bright upon her body playd,
 Being through former bathing mollifide,
 And pierst into her wombe ; where they embayd
 With so sweet sence and secret powre unspide,
 That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

VIII.

Miraculous may seeme to him that reades
 So straunge ensample of conception ;
 But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades
 Of all things living, through impression
 Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,
 Doe life conceive and quickned are by kynd :
 So, after Nilus inundation,
 Infinite shapes of creatures men doe fynd
 Informed in the mud on which the sunne hath
 shynd.

IX.

Great father he of generation
 Is rightly cald, th' authour of life and light ;
 And his faire sister for creation
 Ministreth matter fit, which, tempered right
 With heate and humour, breeds the living wight.
 So sprong these twinnes in womb of Chrysogone ;
 Yet vist she nought thereof, but sore affright
 Wondred to see her belly so upblone,
 Which still increase till she her terme had full out-
 gone.

X.

Whereof conceiving shame and foule disgrace,
 Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,
 She fled into the wilderness a space,
 Till that unweedly burden she had reard,
 And shund dishonor which as death she feard :
 Where, wearie of long travaill, downe to rest
 Herselfe she set, and comfortably cheard ;
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her overkest,
 And seized every sence with sorrow sore opprest.

XI.

It fortunéd, faire Venus having lost
 Her little sonne, the winged god of love,
 Who for some light displeasure, which him crost,
 Was from her fled as fit as ayery dove,
 And left her blisfull bowre of ioy above ;
 (So for her often he had fled away,

When she for ought him sharpely did reprove,
And wandred in the world in straunge aray,
Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might him
bewray ;)

xii.

Him for to seeke, she left her heavenly hous,
The house of goodly formes and faire aspects,
Whence all the world derives the glorious
Features of beautie, and all shapes select, [deckt ;
With which High God his workmanship hath
And searched everie way through which his wings
Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect :
She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things,
Unto the man that of him tydings to her brings.

xiii.

First she him sought in Court, where most he us'd
Whylome to haunt, but there she found him not ;
But many there she found which sore accus'd
His falshood, and with fowle infâmous blot
His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot :
Ladies and Lordes she every where mote heare
Complayning, how with his empoynsd shot
Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare,
And so had left them languishing twixt hope and
feare.

xiv.

She then the Cities sought from gate to gate,
And everie one did aske, Did he liim see ?
And everie one her answerd, that too late
He had him seene, and felt the crueltee
Of his sharpe dartes and wrot artilleere :
And every one threw forth reproches rife
Of his mischiëvous deedes, and sayd that hee
Was the disturber of all civill life,
The enemy of peace, and author of all strife.

xv.

Then in the Countrey she abroad him sought,
And in the rurall cottages inquir'd ;
Where also many plaintes to her were brought,
How he their heedelesse harts with love had fir'd,
And his false venom through their veines inspir'd ;
And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes, which sat
Keeping their fleecy flockes as they were hyr'd,
She sweetly heard complaine both how and what
Her some had to them doen ; yet she did smile
thereat.

xvi.

But, when in none of all these she him got,
She gan avize where els he mote him hyde :
At last she her bethought that she had not
Yet sought the salvage Woods and Forests wyde,
In which full many lovely Nymphes abyde ;
Monst whom might be that he did closely lye,
Or that the love of some of them him tyde :
Forthy she thether cast her course t' apply,
To search the secret haunts of Dianes company.

xvii.

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came,
Whereas she found the goddesse with her crew,
After late chace of their embrewed game,
Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew ;
Some of them washing with the liquid dew

xvii. 3. — embrewed game,] Game wet with blood.
UPTON.
xvii. 4. — in a rew ;] Row. UPTON.

From off their dainty limbs the dusty sweat
And soyle, which did deformue their lively new ;
Others lay shaded from the scorching heat ;
The rest upon her person gave attendance great.

xviii.

She, having hong upon a bough on high
Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste
Her silver buskins from her nimble thigh,
And her lanck loynes ungirt, and brests unbraste,
After her heat the breathing cold to taste ;
Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright
Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,
Now loose about her shoulders hong undight,
And were with sweet Ambrosia all besprinkled
light.

xix.

Soone as she Venus saw behinde her backe,
She was asham'd to be so loose surpriz'd ;
And woxe halfe wroth against her damzels slacke,
That had not her thereof before aviz'd,
But suffert her so carelesly disguiz'd
Be overtaken : Soone her garments loose
Upgath'ring, in her bosome she compriz'd
Well as she might, and to the goddesse rose ;
Whiles all her nymphes did like a gurlond her
enclose.

xx.

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet,
And shortly asked her what cause her brought,
Into that wildernesse for her unmeet, [fraught ;
From her sweete bowres and beds with pleasures
That suddain chaung she straung adventure
thought.
To whom halfe weeping she thus answered ;
That she her dearest sonne Cupido sought,
Who in his frowardnes from her was fled ;
That she repented sore to have him angered.

xxi.

Thereat Diana gan to smile, in scorne
Of her vaine playnt, and to her scoffing sayd ;
“ Great pity sure that ye be so forlorne
Of your gay sonne, that gives you so good ayd
To your disports ; ill mote ye bene apayd !”
But she was more enrieved, and replide ;
“ Faire sister, ill besemees it to upbrayd
A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride ;
The like that mine may be your paine another
tide.

xxii.

“ As you in woods and wanton wildernesse
Your glory sett to chace the salvage beasts ;
So my delight is all in ioyfulnesse,
In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts :
And ill becomes you, with your lofty creasts,
To scorne the ioye that Love is glad to seeke :
We both are bound to follow heavens beaests,
And tend our charges with obeisance meeke :
Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to eeke ;

xxiii.

“ And tell me if that ye my sonne have heard
To lurke amongst your nimphes in secret wize,

xviii. 4. — her lanck loynes] Her slender waist.
CHURCH.
xviii. 7. — for hindring &c.] That they might not
hinder. CHURCH.

Or keepe their cabins : much I am affeard
 Least he like one of them himselfe disguise,
 And turne his arrowes to their exercise :
 So may he long himselfe full easie hide ;
 For he is faire, and fresh in face and guize
 As any nimphe ; let not it be envide.”
 So saying every nimpf full narrowly shee eide.

xxiv.

But Phœbe therewith sore was angered,
 And sharply saide ; “ Goe, dame ; goe, seeke
 your boy,

Where you him lately lefte, in Mars his bed :
 He comes not here ; we scorne his foolish ioy,
 Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy ;
 But, if I catch him in this company,
 By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy
 The gods doe dread, he dearly shall aby :
 He clip his wanton wings that he no more shall
 flye.”

xxv.

Whom whenas Venus saw so sore displeasd,
 Shee inly sory was, and gan relent
 What shee had said : so her shee soone appeasd
 With sugred words and gentle blandishment,
 Which as a fountaine from her sweete lips went
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space
 She was well pleasd, and forth her damzells sent
 Through all the woods, to search from place to
 place

If any tract of him or tidings they mote trace.

xxvi.

To search the god of love her nimpes she sent
 Throughout the wandring forest every where :
 And after them herselfe eke with her went
 To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.
 So long they sought, till they arrived were
 In that same shady covert whereas lay
 Faire Crysgone in slombry trauce whilere ;
 Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)
 Unwares had borne two Babes as faire as springing
 day.

xxvii.

Unwares she them conceivd, unwares she bore :
 She bore withouten paine, that she conceiv'd
 Withouten pleasure ; ne her need implore
 Lucinaes aide : Which when they both perceiv'd
 They were through wonder nigh of sence berev'd,
 And gazing each on other nought bespake :
 At last they both agreed her seeming griev'd
 Out of her heavie swowne not to awake,
 But from her loving side the tender Babes to take.

xxviii.

Up they them tooke, each one a Babe uptooke,
 And with them carried to be fostered :
 Dame Phœbe to a nimphe her Babe betooke
 To be upbrought in perfect Maydenhed,
 And, of herselfe, her name Belphebe red :
 But Venus hers thence far away conveyd,
 To be upbrought in goodly womanhed ;

xxiii. 8. — *let not it be envide.*] Be it no offence, or perhaps, as we usually say, You'll pardon me. СНУСН.

xxiv. 8. — *he dearly shall aby :*] He shall suffer for it, shall pay dearly. TODD.

xxvi. 2. *Throughout the wandring forest*] That is, wandring throughout the forest. СНУСН.

xxviii. 3. — *betooke*] *Delivered.* TODD.

And, in her litle Loves stead which was strayd,
 Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her dismayd.

xxix.

Shee brought her to her ioyous Paradize
 Wher most shee wones, when she on earth does
 So faire a place as nature can devise : [dwell,
 Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,
 Or it in Gnidus bee, I wote not well ;
 But well I wote by triall, that this same
 All other pleasaunt places doth excell,
 And called is, by her lost lovers name,
 The Gardin of Adonis, far renownd by fame.

xxx.

In that same Gardin all the goodly flowres,
 Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautify
 And decks the girlonds of her paramoures,
 Are fetcht : There is the first seminary
 Of all things that are borne to live and dye,
 According to their kynds. Long woryke it were
 Here to account the endless progeny
 Of all the weeds that bud and blossome there ;
 But so much as doth need must needs be counted here.

xxxi.

It sited was in fruitfull soyle of old,
 And girt in with two walls on either side ;
 The one of yron, the other of bright gold,
 That none might thorough breake, nor overstride :
 And double gates it had which opened wide,
 By which both in and out men moten pas ;
 Th' one faire and fresh, the other old and dride :
 Old Genius the porter of them was,
 Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

xxxii.

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend
 All that to come into the world desire :
 A thousand thousand naked babes attend
 About him day and night, which doe require
 That he with fleshy weeds would them attire :
 Such as him list, such as eternal fate
 Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,
 And sendeth forth to live in mortal state,
 Till they agayn retorne backe by the hinder gate.

xxxiii.

After that they againe retourned beene,
 They in that Gardin planted bee agayne,
 And grow afresh, as they had never seeme
 Fleshly corruption nor mortall payne : [remanye,
 Some thousand yeares so doen they there
 And then of him are clad with other hew,
 Or sent into the changefull world agayne,
 Till thether they retourne where first they grew :
 So, like a wheele, around they ronne from old to
 new.

xxxiv.

Ne needs there gardiner to sett or sow,
 To plant or prune ; for of their owne accord
 All things, as they created were, doe grow,
 And yet remember well the Mighty Word
 Which first was spoken by th' Almighty Lord,
 That bad them to *increase and multiply* :
 Ne doe they need, with water of the ford

xxx. 7. *to account*] *To tell over, to number.* СНУСН

Or of the clouds, to moysten their roots dry ;
For in themselves eternall moisture they imply.

XXXV.

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,
And unouth formes, which none yet ever knew ;
And every sort is in a sondry bed
Sett by itselfe, and rancket in comely rew ;
Some fitt for reasonable sowles t' iudew ;
Some made for beasts, some made for birds to
weare ;
And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew
In endless rancks along enraunged were,
That seemd the ocean could not containe them
there.

XXXVI.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent
Into the world, it to replenish more ;
Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent,
But still remains in everlasting store
As it at first created was of yore :
For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,
In hatefull darknes and in deepe horrôre,
An huge eternall Chaos, which supplies
The substaunces of Natures fruitfull progenyes.

XXXVII.

All things from thence doe their first being fetch,
And borrow matter whereof they are made ;
Which, whenas forme and feature it does ketch,
Becomes a body, and doth then invade
The state of life out of the griesly shade.
That substaunce is eterne, and bideth so ;
Ne, when the life decayes and forme does fade,
Doth it consume and into nothing goe,
But changed is and often altdred to and froe.

XXXVIII.

The substaunce is not chaungd nor altered,
But th' only forme and outward fashion ;
For every substaunce is conditioned
To chaunge her hew, and sondry formes to don,
Meet for her temper and complexion :
For formes are variable, and decay
By course of kinde and by occasion ;
And that faire flowre of beautie fades away,
As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

XXXIX.

Great emy to it, and to' all the rest
That in the Gardin of Adonis springs,
Is wicked Time ; who with his scyth adrest
Does mow the flowering herbes and goodly things,
And all their glory to the ground downe flings,
Where they do wither and are fowly mard :
He flies about, and with his flaggy wings
Beates downe both leaves and buds without regard,
Ne ever pittly may relent his mallice hard.

XL.

Yet pittly often did the gods relent,
To see so faire things mard and spoiled quight :
And their great mother Venus did lament

xxxiv. 9. — imply.] *Wrap up*, that is, they contain in themselves eternal moisture. Lat. *imptico*. CHURCH.
xxxv. 5. — iudew ;] Lat. *inducere*, to put on, to be clothed with. CHURCH.
xxxvii. 4. — invade] *Go into*. Lat. *invado*. CHURCH.
xxxix. 9. — relent] *Soft'n*. Fr. *ralentir*. CHURCH.

The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight :
Her hart was pierst with pittly at the sight,
When walking through the Gardin them she spyde,
Yet no'te she find redresse for such despight :
For all that lives is subiect to that law :
All things decay in time, and to their end doe draw.

XLI.

But were it not that Time their troubler is,
All that in this delightfull Gardin growes
Should happy bee, and have immortall blis :
For here all plenty and all pleasure flowes ;
And sweete Love gentle fitts emongst them
throwes,
Without fell rancor or fond gealosity :
Fraenckly each paramour his leman knowes ;
Each bird his mate ; ne any does envy
Their goodly meriment and gay felicity.

XLII.

There is continuall spring, and harvest there
Continuall, both meeting at one tyme :
For both the boughes doe laughing blossoms beare,
And with fresh colours decke the wanton pryme,
And eke attonce the heavy trees they clyme,
Which seeme to labour under their fruites lode :
The whiles the ioyous birdes make their pastyme
Emongst the shady leaves, their sweet abode,
And their trew loves without suspition tell abroad.

XLIII.

Right in the midst of that Paradise
There stood a stately mount, on whose round top
A gloomy grove of mirtle trees did rise,
Whose shady boughes sharp Steele did never lop,
Nor wicked beastes their tender buds did crop,
But like a girlond compassed the light,
And from their fruitfull sydes sweet gum did drop,
That all the ground, with pretious deaw bedight,
Threw forth most dainty odours and most sweet
delight.

XLIV.

And in the thickest covert of that shade
There was a pleasaut arber, not by art
But of the trees owne inclination made, [part,
Which knitting their rancke braunches part to
With wanton yvie-twine entrayld athwart,
And eglantine and caprifole emong,
Fashiond above within their innest part,
That nether Phoebus beams could through them
throng,
Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them any wrong.

XLV.

And all about grew every sort of flowre,
To which sad lovers were transformd of yore ;
Fresh Hyacinthus, Phoebus paramoure
And dearest love ;
Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore ;
Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late,
Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore
Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate,
To whom sweet poets verse hath given endlesse date.

XLIV. 3. — of the trees owne inclination made,] That is, made by the trees bending themselves downward. Lat. *inclinatio*. CHURCH.
XLV. 5. — entrayld] *Twisted*. TODD.
XLV. 8. — Amintas wretched fate,] The wretched fate of Amintas. Amintas here perhaps means Sir Philip

XLVL

There wont fayre Venus often to enioy
 Her deare Adonis ioyous company,
 And reap sweet pleasure of the wanton boy:
 There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,
 Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,
 By her hid from the world, and from the skill
 Of Stygian gods, which doe her love eny;
 But she herselfe, whenever that she will,
 Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her fill:

XLVII.

And sooth, it seemes, they say; for he may not
 For ever dye, and ever buried bee
 In balefull night where all things are forgot;
 All be he subject to mortalitie,
 Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,
 And by succession made perpetuall,
 Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie:
 For him the father of all formes they call;
 Therefore needs mote he live, that living gives to all.

XLVIII.

There now he liveth in eternal bliss,
 Ioying his goddesse, and of her enioyd;
 Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,
 Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd:
 For that wilde bore, the which him once annoyd,
 She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,
 (That her sweet Love his malice mote avoyd),
 In a strong rocky cave, which is, they say,
 Hewen underneath that mount, that none him losen
 may.

XLIX.

There now he lives in everlasting ioy,
 With many of the gods in company
 Which thether haunt, and with the winged boy,
 Sporting himselfe in safe felicity:
 Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty
 Ransackt the world, and in the wofull harts
 Of many wretches set his triumphes hie,
 Thether resortes, and, laying his sad dartes
 Asyde, with faire Adonis playes his wanton partes.

L

And his trew Love faire Psyche with him playes,
 Fayre Psyche to him lately reconcyld,
 After long troubles and unmeet upbrayes,
 With which his mother Venus her reuyld,
 And eke herselfe her cruelly exyld:
 But now in stedfast love and happy state
 She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld,
 Pleasure, that doth both gods and men aggrate,
 Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Psyche late.

LI.

Hether great Venus brought this Infant fayre,
 The yonger daughter of Chrysgonee,
 And unto Psyche with great trust and care
 Committed her, yfostered to bee

Sidney, as Mr. Upton also conjectures; for all the poets lamented his untimely death; and, I may add, he is described by Spenser, in his Elegy on his death, as *one of those lovers who were of yore transformed to flowers*. TODD.

XLVII. 4. — All be he] Although he is. CHURCH.

XLVIII. 4. — cloyd.] A term used among farriers, when a horse is pricked with a nail in shoeing. CHURCH.

L. 3. — upbrayes,] *Upbraiding*s. UPTON.

L. 8. — aggrate,] *Delight* or *please*. TODD.

And trained up in trew feminitee:
 Who no lesse carefully her tendered
 Then her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom shee
 Made her companion, and her lessoned
 In all the lore of love and goodly womanhead.

LII.

In which when she to perfect ripenes grew,
 Of grace and beautie noble paragone,
 She brought her forth into the worldes vew,
 To he th' ensample of true love alone,
 And lodestarre of all chaste affectione
 To all fayre Ladies that doe live on grownd.
 To Faery Court she came: where many one
 Admyrd her goodly haveour, and fownd
 His feeble hart wide launched with loves cruel
 wovnd.

LIII.

But she to none of them her love did cast,
 Save to the noble Knight Sir Scudamore,
 To whom her loving hart she linked fast
 In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore;
 And for his dearest sake endured sore
 Sore trouble of an hainous enimy,
 Who her would forced have to have forelore
 Her former love and stedfast loialty;
 As ye may elsewhere reade that ruefull history.

LIV.

But well I weene ye first desire to learne
 What end unto that fearefull Damozell,
 Which fledd so fast from that same foster stearne
 Whom with his brethren Timias slew, befell:
 That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell;
 Who wandring for to seeke her lover deare,
 Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell,
 Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,
 And from Prince Arthure fled with wings of idle
 feare.

CANTO VII.

The Witches sonne loves Florimell:
 She flies; he faimes to dy,
 Satyrane saves the Squire of Dames
 From: Gyaunts tyranny.

I.

LIKE as an hynd forth singled from the heard,
 That hath escaped from a ravenous beast,
 Yet flies away of her owne feete afeard;
 And every leafe, that shaketh with the least
 Murmure of winde, her terror hath increast.
 So fledd fayre Florimell from her vaine feare,
 Long after she from perill was releast:
 Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,
 Did seeme to be the same which she escapt whileare.

II.

All that same evening she in flying spent,
 And all that night her course continewd:
 Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent

LI. 5. — feminitee:] *Womanhood*; the sex, state, dignity, weakness, or any quality or property, of a woman. CHURCH.

LII. 5. — endured sore] That is, *sadly* or *sorely* endured. *Sore* in this line is used as an adverb; in the next, as an adjective. CHURCH.

II. 3. *Ne did she &c.*] Nor did she suffer either sleep or

Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled
 Ever alike, as if her former dred
 Were hard behind, her ready to arrest :
 And her white palfrey, having conquered
 The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
 Perforce her carried where ever he thought best.

III.

So long as breath and hable puisaunce
 Did native corage unto him supply,
 His pace he freshly forward did advance,
 And carried her beyond all ieopardy ;
 But nought that wanteth rest can long aby :
 He, having through incessant travaill spent
 His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,
 Ne foot could further move : The Lady gent
 Thereat was suddain strook with great astonish-
 ment ;

IV.

And, forst t' alight, on foot mote algates fare
 A traveler unwonted to such way ;
 Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That Fortune all in equall launce doth sway,
And mortall miseries doth make her play.
 So long she travailld, till at length she came
 To an hillis side, which did to her bewray
 A litle valley subiect to the same,
 All covered with thicke woodes that quite it over-
 came.

V.

Through th' tops of the high trees she did descry
 A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light
 Reeking aloft uprolled to the sky :
 Which chearefull signe did send unto her sight
 That in the same did wonne some living wight.
 Eftsoones her steps she therunto applyd,
 And came at last in weary wretched plight
 Unto the place, to which her hope did guyde
 To finde some refuge there, and rest her wearie
 syde.

VI.

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
 A litle coittage, built of stickes and reedes
 In homely wize, and wald with sods around ;
 In which a Witch did dwell, in loathly weedes
 And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes ;
 So choosing solitarie to abide
 Far from all neighbours, that her divelish deedes
 And hellish arts from people she might hide,
 And hurt far off unknowne whomever she envide.

VII.

The Damzell there arriving entred in ;
 Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found
 Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin :
 Who, soone as she beheld that suddain stound,
 Lightly upstarted from the dustie ground,
 And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
 Stared on her awhile, as one astound,
 Ne had one word to speake for great amaze ;
 But shewd by outward signes that dread her sence
 did daze.

weariness to relent (i. e. to slacken, Fr. *ralentir*,) her flight.
 Church.

- III. 5. — aby :] *Abide*. Todd.
 IV. 4. — *in equall launce*] *Balance*. Todd.
 IV. 9. — *overcame*] *Came over it*. Upton.
 VII. 3. — *about some wicked gin*] *Contrivance, snare*,
 abbreviated from *engine* ; commonly used in Spenser's
 time. Todd.

VIII.

At last, turning her feare to foolish wrath,
 She askt, What devill had her thether brought,
 And who she was, and what unwonted path
 Had guided her, unwelcomed, unsought ?
 To which the Damzell full of doubtfull thought
 Her mildly answer'd ; " Beldame, be not wroth
 With silly Virgin, by adventure brought
 Unto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
 That crave but rowme to rest while tempest over-
 blo'th."

IX.

With that adowne out of her christall eyne
 Few tricking teares she softly forth let fall,
 That like two orient perles did purely shyne
 Upon her snowy cheeke ; and therewithall
 She sighed soft, that none so bestiall
 Nor salvage hart but ruth of her sad plight
 Would make to melt, or pitteously appall ;
 And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight
 In mischief, was much moved at so pitteous sight ;

X.

And gan recomfort her, in her rude wyse,
 With womanish compassion of her plaint,
 Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,
 And bidding her sit downe to rest her faint
 And wearie limbs awhile : She nothing quaint
 Nor 'sdeignfull of so homely fashion,
 Sith brought she was now to so hard constraint,
 Sate downe upon the dusty ground anon ;
 As glad of that small rest, as bird of tempest gon.

XI.

The gan she gather up her garments rent,
 And her loose lockes to dight in order dew
 With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament ;
 Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did wev,
 She was astonisht at her heavenly hew,
 And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,
 But or some goddesse, or of Dianas crew,
 And thought her to adore with humble spright :
 T' adore thing so divine as beauty were but right.

XII.

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
 The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
 A laesy lord, for nothing good to donne,
 But stretched forth in ydlenesse alwayes,
 Ne ever cast his mind to covet prayse,
 Or ply himselfe to any honest trade ;
 But all the day before the sunny rayes
 He us'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade :
 Such laesinesse both lewd and poore attonce him
 made.

XIII.

He, comming home at undertime, there found
 The fayrest creature that he ever saw
 Sitting beside his mother on the ground ;
 The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,
 And his base thought with terrour and with awe,
 So inly smot, that as one, which hath gaz'd

x. 5. — *She nothing quaint*] *Quaint* is here used in
 the sense of *nice*, as *coit* in old French is for *dainty*. She
 was not so nice or so disdainful as to decline submitting to
 her present situation. Todd.

xiii. 1. — *undertime*] *Underntide*, the afternoon,
 toward the evening. Upton.

On the bright sunne unwares, doth soone withdraw
His feeble eyne with too much brightnes daz'd ;
So stared he on her, and stood long while amaz'd.

xiv.

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,
What mister wight that was, and whence deriv'd,
That in so straunge disguizement there did maske,
And by what accident she there arriv'd ?
But she, as one nigh of her wits depriv'd,
With nought but ghastly lookes him answered ;
Like to a ghost, that lately is reviv'd
From Stygian shores where late it wandered :
So both at her, and each at other wondered.

xv.

But the fayre Virgin was so meeke and myld,
That she to them vouchsafed to embrace
Her goodly port, and to their senses yld
Her gentle speach applyde, that in short space
She grew familiare in that desert place. [kind
During which time the Chorle, through her so
And courtesie use, conceiv'd affection bace,
And cast to love her in his brutish mind ;
No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind.

xvi.

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,
And shortly grew into outrageous fire ;
Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,
As unto her to utter his desire ;
His caytive thought durst not so high aspire :
But with soft sighes and lovely semblances
He ween'd that his affection entire
She should aread ; many resemblances
To her he made, and many kinde remembraunce.

xvii.

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring,
Whose sides empurpled were with smyling red ;
And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing
His maistresse praises sweetly caroled :
Girldons of flowres sometimes for her faire hed
He fine would dight ; sometimes the squirrel wild
He brought to her in bands, as conquered
To be her thrall, his fellow-servant vild :
All which she of him tooke with countenance meeke
and mild.

xviii.

But, past a while, when she fit season saw
To leave that desert mansion, she cast
In secret wize herselfe thence to withdraw,
For feare of mischief, which she did forecast
Might by the witch or by her sonne compass :
Her wearie palfrey, closely as she might,
Now well recovered after long repast,
In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,
His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

xix.

And earely, ere the dawning day appear'd,
She forth issewed, and on her journey went ;

xiv. 2. *What mister wight*] What kind of creature. Fr. *métier*, Ital. *mestiere*, à Lat. *ministerium*. UPRON.

xv. 9. *No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind*] *Tind* is *excited*. Anglo-Sax. *Temðan*. TODD.

xvi. 7. ——— *his affection entire*] His *inward* affection. TODD.

She went in perill, of each noyse affeard
And of each shade that did itselfe present ;
For still she feared to be overhent
Of that vile Hag, or her uncivile Sonne ;
Who when, too late awaking, well they kent
That their fayre Guest was gone, they both begonne
To make exceeding mone as they had bene undone.

xx.

But that lewd lover did the most lament
For her depart, that ever man did heare ;
He knockt his brest with desperate intent,
And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare
His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare :
That his sad mother seeing his sore plight
Was greatly woe-begon, and gan to feare
Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,
And love to frenzy turnd ; sith love is franticke light.

xxi.

All wayes shee sought him to restore to plight,
With herbs, with charms, with counsel, and with
teares ; [might
But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell,
Asswage the fury which his entrails teares :
So strong is passion that no reason heares !
Tho, when all other helpes she saw to faile,
She turnd herselfe backe to her wicked leares ;
And by her divelish arts thought to prevaile
To bring her backe againe, or worke her ffnall bale.

xxii.

Eftsoones out of her hidden cave she cald
An hideous beast of horrible aspect,
That could the stoutest corage have appald ;
Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was spect
With thousand spots of colours quaint elect ;
Thereto so swift that it all beasts did pas :
Like never yet did living eie detect ;
But likest it to an hyena was
That feeds on wemens flesh, as others feede on gras.

xxiii.

It forth she cald, and gave it streight in charge
Through thicke and thin her to poursew apace,
Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,
Till her hee had attaind and brought in place,
Or quite devoured her beauties scornfull grace.
The monster, swift as word that from her went,
Went forth in haste, and did her footing trace
So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent
And passing speede, that shortly he her overhent.

xxiv.

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide,
No need to bid her fast away to fle ;
That ugly shape so sore her terrifide,
That it she shund no lesse then dread to die ;
And her flitt palfrey did so well apply
His nimble feet to her conceived feare,
That whilest his breath did strength to him
From perill free he her away did beare ; [supply,
But, when his force gan faile, his pace gan wex
areare.

xx. 2. ——— depart.] *Departure*. The French substantive, *depart*. TODD.

xxi. 7. ——— *to her wicked leares*] *Leares* are *lessons*. So *learned* or *learned* is *learned*. TODD.

xxii. 5. ——— *of colours quaint elect*] *Quaintly* or *oddly* chosen ; motley. UPRON.

xxv.

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dismayd
 At that same last extremity ful sore,
 And of her safety greedily grew afrayd :
 And now she gan approach to the sea shore,
 As it befell, that she could flie no more,
 But yield herselfe to spoile of greedinesse :
 Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,
 From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,
 And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sicknesse.

xxvi.

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled
 From dread of her revenging fathers hond ;
 Nor halfe so fast to save her maydenhed
 Flede fearefull Daphne on th' Ægean strond ;
 As Florimell fled from that monster yond,
 To reach the sea ere she of him were raught :
 For in the sea to drowne herselfe she fond,
 Rather then of the tyrant to be caught :
 Thereto fear gave her wings, and need her corage
 taught.

xxvii.

It fortun'd (High God did so ordaine)
 As shee arrived on the roring shore,
 In minde to leape into the mighty maine,
 A little bothe lay hoving her before,
 In which there slept a fisher old and pore,
 The whiles his nets were drying on the sand :
 Into the same shee lept, and with the ore
 Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand :
 So safety fownd at sea, which she fownd not at land.

xxviii.

The monster, ready on the pray to sease,
 Was of his forward hope deceived quight ;
 Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas,
 But, greedily long gaping at the sight,
 At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,
 And tell the idle tidings to his Dame :
 Yet, to avenge his divelish despight,
 He set upon her palfrey tired lame,
 And slew him cruelly ere any reskew came :

xxix.

And, after having him embowelled
 To fill his bellish gorge, it chaunst a Knight
 To passe that way, as forth he traveled :
 Yt was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,
 As ever man that bloody field did fight ;
 But in vain sheows, that wont yong Knights
 bewitch,
 And courtly services, tooke no delight ;
 But rather loyd to bee than seemen sich :
 For both to he and seeme to him was labor lich.

xxx.

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane
 That raungd abroad to seeke adventures wilde,

xxv. 9. *And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sicknesse.]*
 That is, she committed her safety, which was then doubtfull,
 to the care of her feet. CHURCH.

xxvi. 5. — *that monster yond.] Yond, beyond ;*
 "from the monster yond," that is, from beyond the mon-
 ster. HUGHES.

xxvii. 7. *For in the sea to drowne herselfe she fond,*
Rather then of the tyrant to be caught:] She
fond, she found in her heart ; she chose rather to drowne
herself than to be caught of that tyrant. UPRON.

As was his wont, in forest and in plaine :
 He was all armd in rugged steele unfilde,
 As in the smoky forge it was compilde,
 And in his scutchin bore a satyres hedd :
 He comming present, where the monster vilde
 Upon that milke-white palfreyes carcass fedd,
 Unto his reskew ran, and greedily him spedd.

xxxii.

There well perceivd he that it was the horse
 Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride,
 That of that feend was rent without remorse :
 Much feared he least ought did ill betide
 To that faire Maide, the flowre of womens pride ;
 For her he dearely loved, and in all
 His famons conquests highly magnifide :
 Besides, her golden girdle, which did fall
 From her in flight, he fownd, that did him sore appall.

xxxiii.

Full of sad feare and doubtfull agony
 Fiercely he flew upon that wicked feend ;
 And with huge strokes and cruell battery
 Him forst to leave his pray, for to attend
 Himselfe from deadly danger to defend :
 Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh
 He did engrave, and muchell blood did spend,
 Yet might not doe him die ; but aie more fresh
 And fierce he still appeard, the more he did him
 thresh.

xxxiiii.

He wist not how him to despoile of life,
 Ne how to win the wished victory,
 Sith him he saw still stronger grow through strife
 And himselfe weaker through infirmity :
 Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously
 Hurling his sword away he lightly lept
 Upon the beast, that with great crueltie
 Rored and raged to be underkept ;
 Yet he perforce him held, and strokes upon him hept

xxxv.

As he that strives to stop a sudden flood,
 And in strong bancks his violence enclose,
 Forceth it swell above his wouted mood,
 And largely overflow the fruitfull plaine,
 That all the cuntry seemes to be a maine,
 And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne
 The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine
 To see his whole yeares labor lost so soone,
 For which to God he made so many an idle boone.

xxxvi.

So him he held, and did through might amate :
 So long he held him, and him bett so long,
 That at the last his fiercenes gan abate,
 And meekely stoup unto the victor strong :
 Who, to avenge the implacable wrong
 Which he supposed donne to Florimell,
 Sought by all meanes his dolor to prolong,
 Sith dint of steele his carcass could not quell ;
 His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

xxxvii.

The golden ribband, which that Virgin wore
 About her sclender waste, he tooke in hand,
 And with it bownd the beast that lowd did rore
 For great despight of that unwanted band,

xxxii. 7. — *muchell blood] That is, much blood. TODD.*

Yet dared not his victor to withstand,
But trembled like a lambe fled from the pray ;
And all the way him followd on the straund,
As he had long bene learned to ohay ;
Yet never learned he such service till that day.

xxxvii.

Thus as he led the beast along the way,
He spide far off a mighty Gyautesse
Fast flying, on a courser dapled gray,
From a bold Knight that with great hardinesse
Her hard pursewd, and sought for to suppressse :
She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,
Whome she did meane to make the thrall of her
desire.

xxxviii.

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste
He lefte his captive beast at liberty,
And crost the nearest way, by which he cast
Her to encounter ere she passed by ;
But she the way shund nathemore forthy,
But forward gallopt fast ; which when he spyde,
His mighty speare he couched warily,
And at her ran ; she, having him deseryde,
Herselfe to fight address, and threw her lode aside.

xxxix.

Like a goshauke, that in foote doth beare
A trembling culver, having spide on hight
An eagle that with plummy wings doth sheare
The subtle ayre stouping with all his might,
The quarrey throwes to ground with fell despight,
And to the batteill doth herselfe prepare :
So ran the Gyautesse unto the fight ;
Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
And with blasphemous bannes High God in peeces
tare.

xl.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,
Wherewith she many had of life depriv'd ;
But, ere the stroke could seize his ayred place,
His speare amidst her sun-brode shield arriv'd ;
Yet nathemore the steele asonder riv'd,
All were the beame in bignes like a mast,
Ne her out of the stedfast saddle driv'd ;
But, glauncing on the tempered metall, brast
In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her past.

xli.

Her steed did stagger with that puisaunt strooke ;
But she no more was moved with that might
Then it had lighted on an aged oke,
Or on the marble pillour that is pight
Upon the top of mount Olympus hight,
For the brave youthly champions to assay
With burning charet wheels it nigh to smite ;
But who that smites it mars his ioyous play,
And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

xlii.

Yet, therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne regard
Her dreadfull weapon she to him address,

xxxvi. 6. — fled from the pray:] From the pray,
i. e. from some wild beast which would have made a prey
of her: *præda for prædator.* UPTON.

xxxix. 9. And with blasphemous bannes High God in
peeces tare.] *Bonnes* are curses. The phrase in *peeces tare*,
means the violence with which she uttered her rage. TODD.

Which on his helmet martelled so hard
That made him low incline his lofty crest,
And bowd his battred visour to his brest :
Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote ryde,
But reeled to and fro from east to west .
Which when his cruell enemy espyde,
She lightly unto him adioyned syde to syde ;

xl.iii.

And, on his collar laying puisaunt hand,
Out of his wavering seat him pluckt perforce,
Perforce him pluckt unable to withstand
Or helpe himselfe ; and laying thwart her horse,
In loathly wise like to a carrion corse,
She bore him fast away : which when the Knight
That her pursewed saw, with great remorse
He neare was touched in his noble spright,
And gan increase his speed as she encreast her
flight.

xliv.

Whom whenas nigh approaching she espyde,
She threw away her burden angrily ;
For she list not the batteill to abide,
But made herselfe more light away to fly :
Yet her the hardy Knight pursewd so nye
That almost in the backe he oft her strake :
But still, when him at hand she did espy,
She turnd, and semblance of faire fight did make ;
But, when he stayd, to flight againe she did her
take.

xlv.

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan wake
Out of his dreame that did him long entrance,
And, seeing none in place, he gan to make
Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce
Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce :
At length he spyde whereas that wofull Squyre,
Whom he had reskewed from captivaunce
Of his strong foe, lay tumbled in the myre,
Unable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.

xlvi.

To whom approaching, well he mote perceive
In that fowle plight a comely personage
And lovely face, made fit for to deceive
Fraile Ladies hart with loves consuming rage,
Now in the blossome of his freshest age :
He reard him up and loosd his yron bands,
And after gan inquire his parentage,
And how he fell into that Gyaunts hands,
And who that was which chaced her along the lands.

xlvii.

Then trembling yet through feare the Squire
" That Gyautesse Arganté is behight, [bespake ;
A daughter of the Titans which did make
Warre against heaven, and heaped hils on hight
To scale the skyes and put Iove from his right :
Her syre Typhoeus was ; who, mad through
merth,
And dronke with blood of men slaine by his might,
Through incest her of his owne mother Earth
Whylome begot, being but halfe twin of that berth :

xlviii.

" For at that berth another bahe she bore ;
To weet, the mightie Ollyphant, that wrought

xlii. 3. — martelled] *Hammered.* UPTON.

Great wreake to many errant Knights of yore,
And many hath to foule confusion brought.
These twines, men say, (a thing far passing
thought,) [were,
Whiles in their mothers wombe enclosed they
Ere they into the lightsom world were brought,
In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,
And in that monstrous wise did to the world appere.

XLIX.

"So liv'd they ever after in like sin,
Gainst natures law and good behavoure :
But greatest shame was to that maiden twin ;
Who, not content so fowly to devoure
Her native flesh and staine her brothers bowre,
Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,
And suffred heastes her hody to deflowre ;
So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre :
Yet all that might not slake her sensuall desyre :

L.

"But over all the countrie she did raunge,
To seeke young men to quench her flaming thrust,
And feed her fancy with delightfull change :
Whom so she fittest findes to serve her lust,
Through her maine strength, in which she most
She with her bringes into a secret ile, [doth trust,
Where in eternal bondage dye he must,
Or he the vassall of her pleasures vile,
And in all shamefull sort himselfe with her defile.

LI.

"Me seely wretch she so at vantage caught,
After she long in waite for me did lye,
And meant unto her prison to have brought,
Her lothsom pleasure there to satisfye ;
That thousand deathes me lever were to dye
Then breake the vow that to faire Columbelle
I plighte have, and yet keepe steadfastly :
As for my name, it mistreth not to tell ;
Call me the Squire of Dames ; that me heseemeth
well.

LII.

"But that hold Knight, whom ye pursuing saw
That Geauntesse, is not such as she seemd,
But a faire Virgin that in martiall law
And deedes of armes above all Dames is deemd,
And above many Knightes is eke esteemd
For her great worth ; she Palladine is hight :
She you from death, you me from dread,
redeemd :
Ne any may that monster match in fight,
But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight."

LIII.

"Her well heseemes that quest," quoth Satyrane :
"But read, thou Squire of Dames, what vow is
this,
Which thou upon thyselfe hast lately ta'ne ?"
"That shall I you recount," quoth he, "ywis,
So be ye pleas'd to pardon all amis.

L. 2. — *thrust,*] *Thirst.* Tonn.LI. 8. — *it mistreth not*] *It signifies not, it needs not ; Ital. mestiere, need, occasion.* UPRON.LII. 1. *Her well heseemes that quest.*] *Quest* is a term properly belonging to romance, importing the expedition in which the knight is engaged, and which he is obliged to perform. It is a very common word with Spenser. T. WARTON.

That gentle Lady whom I love and serve,
After long suit and wearie servicis,
Did aske me how I could her love deserve,
And how she might be sure that I would never
swerve.

LIV.

"I, glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,
Badd her commaund my life to save or spill :
Eftsoones she hadd me with incessant paine
To wander through the world ahroad at will,
And every where, where with my power or skill
I might doe service unto gentle Dames,
That I the same should faithfully fulfill ;
And at the twelve monethes end should bring
their names
And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious
games.

LV.

"So well I to faire Ladies service did,
And found such favour in their loving hartes,
That, ere the yeare his course had compassid,
Three hundred pledges for my good desartes,
And thrice three hundred thanks for my good
partes,
I with me brought and did to her present :
Which when she saw, more hent to eke my
smartes
Then to reward my trusty true intent,
She gan for me devise a grievous punishment ;

LVI.

"To weet, that I my travell should resume,
And with like labour walke the world around,
Ne ever to her presence should presume,
Till I so many other Dames had fownd,
The which, for all the suit I could propownd,
Would me refuse their pledges to afford,
But did abide for ever chaste and sownd."
"Ah ! gentle Squire," quoth he, "tell at one word,
How many fownd'st thou such to put in thy record ?"

LVII.

"Indeed, Sir Knight," said he, "one word may tell
All that I ever fownd so wisely stayd,
For only three they were disposd so well ;
And yet three yeares I now ahrode have strayd,
To find them out." "Mote I," then laughing sayd
The Knight, "inquire of thee what were those
three,
The which thy proffred curtesie denyd ?
Or ill they seemed sure avizd to hee,
Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did fashions
see."

LVIII.

"The first which then refused me," said hee,
"Certes was but a common courtisane ;
Yet flat refusd to have adoe with mee,
Because I could not give her many a jane."
(Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane.)
"The second was an holy nunne to chose,
Which would not let me he her chappellane,
Because she knew, she sayd, I would disclose
Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose.

LIX.

"The third a damzell was of low degree,
Whom I in country cottage fownd by chaunce

LVIII. 4. *Because I could not give her many a jane*
Many a JANE, i. e. "much money." T. WARTON.

Full litle weened I that chastitee
Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce ;
Yct was she fayre, and in her countenaunce
Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion :
Long thus I woo'd her with due obseruaunce,
In hope unto my pleasure to have won ;
But was as far at last, as when I first begon.

LX.

“ Safe her, I never any woman found
That chastity did for itselfe embrace,
But were for other causes firme and sound ;
Either for want of handsome time and place,
Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.
Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine
My Ladies love, in such a desperate case,
But all my dayes am like to waste in vaine,
Seeking to match the chaste with th' unchaste
Ladies traine.”

LXI.

“ Perdy,” sayd Satyrane, “ thou Sqnyre of Dames,
Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand,
To get small thanks, and therewith many
blames ;
That may amongst Alcides labours stand.”
Thence backe returning to the former land,
Where late he left the beast he overcame,
He found him not ; for he had broke his band,
And was returnd againe unto his Dame,
To tell what tydings of fayre Florimell became.

CANTO VIII.

The Witch creates a snowy La-
dy like to Florimell ;
Who wrong'd by Carle, by Proteus sav'd,
Is sought by Floridell.

I

So oft as I this history record,
My hart doth melt with meere compassion,
To thinke how causelesse of her owne accord
This gentle Damzell, whom I write upon,
Should plonged be in such affliction
Without all hope of comfort or reliefe ;
That sure I weene the hardest hart of stone
Would hardly finde to aggravate her griefe :
For misery craves rather mercy then repleefe.

II.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,
Had so enrankled her malicious hart,
That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate,
Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.
Now when the beast, which by her wicked art
Late fourth she sent, she backe returning spyde
Tyde with her golden girdele ; it a part
Of Her rich spoyles whom he had earst destroyd
She weend, and wondrous gladnes to her hart
applyde :

LX. 9. Seeking to match the chaste with th' unchaste ladies traine.] That is, seeking to make up the number 300 of each. UPRON.

I. 3. How causelesse of her own accord] How causeless, how without any just cause: Of her own accord, for she was in pursuit of Marinell. UPRON.

I. 9. ——— repleefe.] For reproof. CHURCH.

And, with it ronning hastly to her sonne,
Thought with that sight him much to have reliv'd ;
Who, thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,
His former griefe with furie fresh reviv'd [riv'd
Much more than earst, and would have algates
The hart out of his brest : for sith her dedd
He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriv'd
Quite of all hope wherewith he long had fedd
His foolish malady, and long time had misledd.

IV.

With thought whereof exceeding mad he grew,
And in his rage his mother would have slaine,
Had she not fled into a secret mew,
Where she was wont her sprites to entertaine,
The maisters of her art : there was she faine
To call them all in order to her ayde,
And them conjure, upon eternal paine,
To counsell her so carefully dismayd
How she might heale her sonne whose senses were
decayd.

V.

By their advice, and her owne wicked wit,
She there deviz'd a wondrous worke to frame,
Whose like on earth was never framed yit ;
That even Nature selfe envide the same,
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame
The thing itselfe : In hand she boldly tooke
To make another like the former Dame,
Another Florimell, in shape and looke
So lively, and so like, that many it mistooke.

VI.

The substance, whereof she the body made,
Was purest snow in massy mould congeald,
Which she had gathered in a shady glade
Of the Riphœan hills, to her reveald
By errant sprites, but from all men conceald :
The same she tempered with fine mercury
And virgin wax that never yet was seald,
And mingled them with perfect vermily ;
That like a lively sanguine it seemd to the eye.

VII.

Instead of eyes two burning lampes she set
In silver sockets, shyning like the skyes,
And a quicke moving spirit did arret
To stirre and roll them like to womens eyes :
Instead of yellow lockes she did devyse
With golden wyre to weave her curled head :
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse
As Florimells fayre heare : and, in the stead
Of life, she put a spright to rule the carcas dead ;

VIII.

A wicked spright, yfraught with fawning guyle
And fayre resemblance above all the rest,
Which with the Prince of Darkenes fell somewhyle
From heavens blis and everlasting rest :
Him needed not instruct which way were best
Himselfe to fashion likest Florimell,
Ne how to speake, ne how to use his gest ;

III. 2. ——— reliv'd:] To have reanimated him. TODD.

VII. 3. ——— arret] Appoint. Fr. arrester. TODD.

VII. 7. Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse As Florimells fayre heare] That is, was not a third part so yellow. UPRON.

For he in counterfesaunce did excell,
And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing well.

IX.

Him shaped thus she deckt in garments gay,
Which Florimell had left behind her late ;
That whoso then her saw, would surely say
It was herselfe whom it did imitate,
Or fayrer then herselfe, if ought algate
Might fayrer be. And then she forth her brought
Unto her sonne that lay in feeble state ;
Who seeing her gan streight upstart, and thought
She was the Lady selfe whom he so long had sought.

X.

Tho, fast her clipping twixt his armēs twayne,
Extremely ioyed in so happy sight,
And soone forgot his former sickely payne :
But she, the more to seeme such as she hight
Coyle rebuted his embracement light ;
Yet still, with gentle countenance, retain'd
Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight :
Him long she so with shadowes entertain'd,
As her creatresse had in charge to her ordain'd :

XI.

Till on a day, as he disposed was
To walke the woodes with that his idole faire,
Her to disport and idle time to pas
In th' open freshnes of the gentle aire,
A Knight that way there chanced to repaire ;
Yet Knight he was not, but a hoasfull swaine
That deedes of armes had ever in despaire,
Proud Braggadochio, that in vaunting vaine
His glory did repose and credit did maintaine.

XII.

He, seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight
Decked with many a costly ornament,
Much merueiled thereat, as well he might,
And thought that match a fowle disparagement :
His bloody speare estesoones he holdly bent
Against the silly Clowne, who dead through feare
Fell streight to ground in great astonishment :
" Villein," said he, " this Lady is my deare ;
Dy, if thou it gainesay : I will away her heare."

XIII.

The fearefull Chorle durst not gainesay nor dooe,
But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray ;
Who, finding litle leasure her to wooe,
On Tromparts steed her mounted without stay,
And without reskew led her quite away.
Proud man himselfe then Braggadochio deem'd,
And next to none, after that happy day,
Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd
The fairest wight on ground and most of men
esteem'd.

XIV.

But, when he saw himselfe free from poursute,
He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame
With termes of love and lewdnesse dissolute ;
For he could well his glozing speeches frame
To such vaine uses that him best became :
But she thereto would lend but light regard,
As seeming sorry that she ever came
Into his powre, that used her so hard
To reave her honor which she more then life preford.

xiv. 4. — his glozing speeches] *Gloze, glosin, to deceive, flatter, lie.* CHURCH.

XV.

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long,
There them by chaunce encountred on the way
An armed Knight upon a courser strong,
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay
Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray
That Capons courage ; yet he looked grim,
And faynd to cheare his Lady in dismay,
Who seemd for feare to quake in every lim,
And her to save from outrage meekely prayed him.

XVI.

Fiercely that Straunger forward came ; and, nigh
Approching, with bold words and bitter threat
Bad that same Boaster, as he mote on high,
To leave to him that Lady for excheat,
Or bide him batteill without further treat.
That challenge did too peremptory seeme,
And filld his senses with abashment great ;
Yet, seeing nigh him ieopardy extreme,
He it dissembled well, and light seemd to esteeme ;

XVII.

Saying, " Thou foolish Knight, that weenst with
words
To steale away that I with blowes have wonne,
And brought through points of many perilous
swords !
But if thee list to see thy courser ronne,
Or prove thyselfe ; this sad encounter shonne,
And seeke els without hazard of thy hedd."
At those prowde words that other Knight begonno
To wex exceeding wroth, and him aredd
To turne his steede about, or sure he should be dedd.

XVIII.

"Sith then," said Braggadochio, " needes thou wilt
Thy daies abridge, through proofe of puissaunce,
Turne we our steeds ; that both in equall tilt
May meete againe, and each take happy chaunce."
This said, they both a furlongs mountenance
Retird their steeds, to ronne in even race :
But Braggadochio with his bloody launce
Once having turnd, no more returnd his face,
But lefte his Love to losse, and fled himselfe apace.

XIX.

The Knight, him seeing flie, had no regard
Him to pursew, but to the Lady rode ;
And, having her from Trompart lightly reard,
Upon his courser sett the lovely lode,
And with her fled away without abode :
Well weened he, that fairest Florimell
It was with him in company he yode,
And so herselfe did alwaies to him tell ;
So made him thinke himselfe in heven that was in
hell.

xv. 3. *An armed Knight]* Sir Ferraugh. Topp.
xv. 4. — the hollow lay] *A lay or lea of land, ab Anglo-Sax. ley, terra, lea, campus :* Skinner. URTON.

xvi. 3. *Bad that same boaster, as he mote on high, To leave to him &c.]* He commanded that same boaster (as he might answer it to his peril) *in high terms,* on high, i. e. *highly.* URTON.

xvi. 4. *To leave to him that Lady for excheat,]* As an *excheat ;* as his right, who was lord of the manor, and true owner of all strayed fair ladies. URTON.

xvi. 5. *Or bide him batteill]* Or bid him battle. URTON.
xviii. 5. — a furlongs mountenance] The amount of a furlong's distance from each other. CHURCH

xx.

But Florimell herselfe was far away,
Driven to great distresse by fortune straunge,
And taught the carefull mariner to play,
Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge
The land for sea, at random there to range :
Yett there that cruell queene avengeresse,
Not satisfyde so far her to estraunge
From courtly blis and wonted happinesse,
Did heape on her new waves of weary wretchednesse.

xxi.

For, being fled into the fishers bote
For refuge from the monsters cruelty,
Long so she on the mighty maine did flote,
And with the tide drove forward carelesly ;
For th' ayre was milde and cleared was the skie,
And all his windes dan Aeolus did keepe
From stirring up their stormy enmity,
As pitying to see her waile and weepe ;
But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

xxii.

At last when droncke with drowsinesse he woke,
And saw his drover drive along the streame,
He was dismayd ; and thrise his brest he stroke,
For marveill of that accident extreame :
But when he saw that blazing beauties beame,
Which with rare light his bote did beautifye,
He marveild more, and thought he yet did dreame
Not well awakte ; or that some extasye
Assotted had his sence, or dazed was his eye.

xxiii.

But, when her well avizing hee perceiv'd
To be no vision nor fantastick sight,
Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd,
And felt in his old corage new delight
To gin awake, and stir his frozen spright :
The rudely askte her, how she thether came ?
" Ah ! " sayd she, " father, I nete read aright
What hard misfortune brought me to this same ;
Yet am I glad that here I now in safety ame.

xxiv.

" But thou, good man, sith far in sea we bee,
And the great waters gin apace to swell,
That now no more we can the mayn-land see,
Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,
Least worse on sea then us on land befell."
Theat th' old man did nought but fondly grin,
And saide, his boat the way could wisely tell :
But his deceptfull eyes did never lin
To looke on her faire face and marke her snowy
skin.

xxv.

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh
Infixt such secret sting of greedly lust,
That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,
And kindled heat, that soone in flame forth brust ;
The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.
Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand,
Where ill became him, rashly would have thrust ;
But she with angry scorne him did withstand,
And shamefully reproved for his rudenes fond.

xx. 6. ——— that cruell queene avengeresse,] That is, quean, a term of reproach. CHURCH.

xxv. 9. ——— fond. Foolish, indecent. CHURCH.

xxvi.

But he, that never good nor maners knew,
Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme ;
Hard is to teach an old horse amble trow :
The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,
Broke into open fire and rage extreme ;
And now he strength gan adde unio his will,
Forcyng to doe that did him fowle misseeme :
Beastly he threwe her downe, ne car'd to spill
Her garments gay with scales of fish, that all did
fill.

xxvii.

The silly Virgin strove him to withstand
All that she might, and him in vaine revild ;
Shée struggled strongly both with foete and hand
To save her honor from that villaine vilde,
And cride to heven, from humane help exild.
O ! ye brave Knights, that boast this Ladies love,
Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild
Of filihy wretch ! well may she you reprove
Of falsehood or of slouth, when most it may be-
hove !

xxviii.

But if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete,
Or thou, Sir Peridure, her sory state,
How soone would yee assemble many a fletee,
To fetch from sea that ye at land lost late !
Towres, citties, kingdomes, ye would ruinate
In your avengement and dispiteous rage,
Ne ought your burning fury mote abate :
But, if Sir Calidore could it presage,
No living creature could his cruelty asswage.

xxix.

But, sith that none of all her Knights is nye,
See how the heavens, of voluntary grace
And soveraine favor towards chastity,
Doe succor send to her distressed cace :
So much High God doth innocence embrace !
It fortun'd, whilest thus she stify strove,
And the wide sea impertuned long space
With shrilling shriekes, Proteus abrode did rove,
Along the fomy waves driving his finny drove.

xxx.

Proteus is shepherd of the seas of yere,
And hath the charge of Neptune's mighty heard ;
An aged sire with head all frowy hore,
And sprinkled frost upon his deawy heard :
Who when those pittifull outeries he heard
Through all the seas so ruefully resownd,
His charett swift in hast he thether stear'd,
Which with a teeme of scaly Phocas bownd
Was drawne upon the waves, that fomed him
arownd ;

xxxi.

And comming to that fishers wandring bote,
That went at will withouten card or sayle,
He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which smote
Deepe indignation and compassion frayle
Into his hart attonce : streight did he haley
The greedy villain from his hoped pray,
Of which he now did very little fayle ;

xxvi. 7. Forcyng to doe &c.] Using force and violence to do that which misbecame him. CHURCH.

xxvii. 1. The silly Virgin] Perhaps seely, that is, harmless, innocent. CHURCH.

xxx. 3. ——— all frowy hore,] All mossy hoar. TODD.

And with his staffe, that drives his heard astray,
Him bett so sore, that life and sence did much dis-
may.

xxxii.

The whiles the pitteous lady up did ryse,
Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle,
And blubbred face with teares of her faire eyes ;
Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,
To save herselfe from that outrageous spoyle :
But when she looked up, to weet what wight
Had her from so infâmous fact assoyld,
For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,
Downe in her lap she hid her face, and lowldy
shright.

xxxiii.

Herselfe not saved yet from daunger dredd
She thought, but chaung'd from one to other
Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd [feare :
From the sharpe hanke which her attached neare,
And fals to ground to seeke for succor theare,
Whereas the hungry spaniells she does spye
With greedy iawes her ready for to teare :
In such distresse and sad perplexity
Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see her by.

xxxiv.

But he endeavored with speaches milde
Her to recomfort, and encourage bold,
Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
Nor doubt himselfe ; and who he was her told :
Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
Ne to recomfort her at all prevaile ;
For her faint hart was with the frozen cold
Benumbd so inly that her wits nigh fayld,
And all her sences with abashment quite were
quayld.

xxxv.

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
And with his frory lips full softly kist,
Whiles the cold ysicles from his rough beard
Dropped adowne upon her yvory brest :
Yet he himselfe so busily adrest,
That her out of astonishment he wrought ;
And, out of that same fishers filthy nest
Removing her, into his charet brought,
And there with many gentle termes her faire be-
sought.

xxxvi.

But that old leachour, which with bold assault
That beautie durst presume to violate,
He cast to punish for his hainous fault :
Then tooke he him yet trembling sith of late
And tyde behind his charet, to agrate
The Virgin whom he had abuse so sore ;
So drag'd him through the waves in scornful state,
And after cast him up upon the shore ;
But Florimell with him unto his bowre he bore.

xxxvii.

His bowre is in the bottom of the maine,
Under a mightie rocke gainst which doe rave
The roring billowes in their proud disdaine,
That with the angry working of the wave
Therein is eaten out an hollow cave, [keene
That seemes rough masons hand with engines
Had long while laboured it to engrave :
There was his wonne ; ne living wight was seene
Save one old nymph, hight Panopè, to keepe it
cleane.

xxxviii.

Thether he brought the sory Florimell,
And entertained her the best he might,
(And Panopè her entertaind eke well)
As an immortal mote a mortall wight,
To winne her liking unto his delight :
With flattering wordes he sweetly wooed her,
And offered faire guiftes t' allure her sight ;
But she both offere and the offerer
Despysde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

xxxix.

Dayly he tempted her with this or that,
And never suffred her to he at rest :
But evermore she him refused flat,
And all his fained kindnes did detest ;
So firnely she had sealed up her brest.
Sometimes he boasted that a god he hight ;
But she a mortall creature loved best :
Then he would make himselfe a mortall wight ;
But then she said she lov'd none but a Faery
Knight.

xl.

Then like a Faery Knight himselfe he drest ;
For every shape on him he could endew :
Then like a king he was to her exprest,
And offred kingdoms unto her in vew
To be his Leman and his Lady trew :
But, when all this he nothing saw prevaile,
With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,
And with sharpe threatres her often did assayle ;
So thinking for to make her stubborne corage quayle.

xli.

To dreadfull shapes he did himselfe transforme :
Now like a gyaunt ; now like to a feend ;
Then like a centaure ; then like to a storme
Raging within the waves : Thereby he weend
Her will to win unto his wished end :
But when with feare, nor favour, nor with all
He els could doe, he saw himselfe esteemd,
Downe in a dongeon deepe he let her fall,
And threatred there to make her his eternall thrall.

xlii.

Eternall thraldome was to her more lief
Then losse of chastitie, or change of love :
Dye had she rather in tormenting grieve
Then any should of falsenesse her reprove,
Or loosenes, that she lightly did remove.
Most vertuous Virgin ! glory be thy meed,
And crowne of heavenly prayse with saintes above.
Where most sweet hymmes of this thy famous
deed [exceed :
Are still emongst them song, that far my rymes

xliii.

Fit song of angels caroled to hee !
But yet whatso my feeble Muse can frame,
Shal be t' advance thy goodly chastitce,
And to enroll thy memorable name
In th' heart of every honourable Dame,
That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
And be partakers of thy endless fame.
Yt yrkes me leave thee in this wofull state,
To tell of Satyrane where I him left of late :

xl. 2. — endew ; Put on. CHURCH.

xliii. 8. It yrkes me It vexes me to leave thee thus &c.
TODD.

XLIV.

Who having ended with that Squire of Dames
A long discourse of his adventures wayne,
The which himselfe then Ladies more defames,
And finding not th' hyena to be slayne,
With that same Squire retourned backe againe
To his first way : And, as they forward went,
They spyde a Knight fayre pricking on the playne,
As if he were on some adventure bent,
And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

XLV.

Sir Satyrane him towardes did addresse,
To weet what wighthe was, and what his quest :
And, comming nigh, eftsomes he gan to gesse
Both by the burning hart which on his brest
He bare, and by the colours in his crest,
That Paridell it was : Tho to him yode,
And, him saluting as besemed best,
Gan first inquire of tydings farre abrode ;
And afterwardes on what adventure now he rode.

XLVI.

Who thereto answering said ; " The tydings bad,
Which now in Faery Court all men doe tell,
Which turned hath great mirth to mourning sad,
Is the late ruine of prond Marinell,
And suddain parture of faire Florimell
To find him forth : and after her are gone
All the brave Knightes, that doen in armes excell,
To savegard her ywandred all alone ;
Emongst the rest my lott (unworthy) is to be one."

XLVII.

" Ah ! gentle Knight," said then Sir Satyrane,
" Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,
That hast a thanklesse service on thee ta'ne,
And offrest sacrifice unto the dead :
For dead, I surely doubt, thou maist aread
Henceforth for ever Florimell to bee ;
That all the noble Knightes of Maydenhead,
Which her ador'd, may sore repent with mee,
And all faire Ladies may for ever sory bee."

XLVIII.

Which wordes when Paridell had heard, his hew
Gan greatly chaunge, and seemd dismaid to bee ;
Then said ; " Fayre Sir, how may I weene it trew,
That ye doe tell in such uncerteintee ?
Or speake ye of report, or did ye see
Iust cause of dread, that makes ye doubt so sore ?
For perdie elles how mote it ever bee,
That ever hand should dare for to engore
Her noble blood ! The heavens such crueltie abhorre."

XLIX.

" These eyes did see that they will ever rew
T' have seene," quoth he, " whenas a monstrous
The palfrey whereon she did travell slew, [beast
And of his bowels made his bloody feast :
Which speaking token sheweth at the least
Her certain losse, if not her sure decay :
Besides, that more suspicion encreast,
I found her golden girdle cast astray,
Distaynd with durt and blood, as relique of the
pray."

L.

" Ah me ! " said Paridell, " the signes be sadd ;
And, but God turne the same to good soothsaying,

. 2. And, but] And, except, unless. CHURCH.

That Ladies safetie is sore to be dradd :
Yet will I not forsake my forward way,
Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray."
" Faire Sir," quoth he, " well may it yon succeed !
Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay ;
But to the rest, which in this quest proceed,
My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed."

LI.

" Ye noble Knightes," said then the Squire of Dames,
" Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy payne !
But sith the sunne now ginnes to slake his beames
In deawy vapours of the westerne mayne,
And lose the teme out of his weary wayne,
Mote not mislike you also to abate
Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
Both light of heven and strength of men relate :
Which if ye please, to yonder Castle turne your
gate."

LII.

That counsell pleased well ; so all yfere
Forth marched to a Castle them before ;
Where soone arriving they restrained were
Of ready entrance, which ought evermore
To errant Knightes be commune : Wondrous sore
Thereat displead they were, till that young Squire
Gan them informe the cause why that same dore
Was shut to all which lodging did desyre :
The which to let you weet will further time requyre.

CANTO IX.

Malbecco will no straunge Knightes host,
For peevish jealousy ;
Paridell trusts with Britomart ;
Both shew their auncestry.

I.

REDOUBTED Knightes, and honorable Dames,
To whom I levelle all my labours end,
Right sore I feare least with unworthy blames
This odious argument my rymes should shend,
Or ought your goodly patience offend,
Whiles of a wanton Lady I doe write,
Which with her loose incontinence doth blend
The shyning glory of your soveraine light ;
And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse
Knight.

II.

But never let th' ensample of the bad
Offend the good : for good, by paragone
Of evil, may more notably be rad ; [attone :
As white seemes fayrer macht with blacks
Ne all are shamed by the fault of one :
For lo ! in heven, whereas all goodnes is
Emongst the angels, a whole legione
Of wicked sprights did fall from bappy blis ;
What wonder then if one, of women all, did mis ?

III.

Then listen, Lordings, if ye list to weet
The cause why Satyrane and Paridell

LI. 8. — relate :] Bring back again. UPON.
I. 9. And knighthood fowle &c.] That is, And of knight
hood fowly defaced &c. CHURCH.
II. 4. — with blacks attone :] That is, together, at
once, at one. UPON.
II. 9. — did mis ?] Err. CHURCH

Mote not be enteraynd, as seemed meet,
 Into that Castle, as that Squire does tell.
 "Therein a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell,
 That has no skill of court nor courtesie,
 Ne cares what men say of him ill or well :
 For all his dayes he drownes in privitie,
 Yet has full large to live and spend at libertie.

iv.

"But all his m'nd is set on mucky pelfe,
 To hoord up heapes of evill-gotten masse,
 For which he others wrongs, and wrecks
 Yet is he linked to a lovely Lasse, [himselfe :
 Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpass ;
 The which to him botu far unequal yeares
 And also far unlike conditions has ;
 For she does ioy to play amongst her pearres,
 And to be free from hard restraynt aud gealous
 feares.

v.

"But he is old, and withered like hay,
 Unfit faire Ladies service to supply ;
 The privie guilt whereof makes him alway
 Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy
 Upon her with his other blinkted eye ;
 Ne suffreth he resort of living wight
 Approach to her, ne keep her company, [sight,
 But in close bowre her mewes from all mens
 Depriv'd of kindly ioy and naturall delight.

vi.

"Malbecco he, and Hellenore she hight ;
 Unfitly yokt together in one teeme.
 That is the cause why never any Knight
 Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme
 Such as no doubt of him he need misdeeme."
 Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smyle, and say ;
 "Extremely mad the man I surely deeme [stay
 That weenes, with watch and hard restraynt to
 A womans will which is disposd to go astray.

vii.

"In vaine he feares that which he cannot shonne :
 For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes
 Can guylen Argus, when she list misdonne ?
 It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,
 Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyes,
 That can withhold her wilfull-wandering feet ;
 But fast goodwill, with gentle courtesyes,
 And timely service to her pleasures meet,
 May her perhaps containe that else would algates
 fleet."

viii.

"Then is he not more mad," sayd Paridell,
 "That hath himselfe unto such service sold,
 In dolefull thraldome all his dayes to dwell ?

iii. 5. *Therein &c.*] This is the account given by the Squire of Dames. CHURCH.

Ibid. — a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell.] A cancred Carle is a Northern expression, and means an ill-natured old man. Tonn.

iv. 5. — her bounty] The sense is, Whose beauty is greater than her goodness. CHURCH.

v. 5. — his other blinkted eye ;] That is, his left eye. UPRON.

vi. 1. *Malbecco he.*] His name is derived from male and becco, a cuckold or wittal; becco signifies likewise a buck-goat. UPRON.

vi. 4. — but he seeme] Unless he seeme. TODD.

For sure a foole I doe him firmly hold,
 That loves his fetters, though they were of gold.
 But why doe wee devise of others ill,
 Whyles thus we suffer this same Dotard old
 To keepe us out in scorne, of his owne will,
 And rather do not ransacke all, and himselfe kill ?"

ix.

"Nay, let us first," sayd Satyrane, "entreat
 The man by gentle meanes, to let us in ;
 And afterwarde affray with cruell threat,
 Ere that we to efforce it doe begin :
 Then, if all fayle, we will by force it win,
 And eke reward the wretch for his mesprise,
 As may be worthy of his haynous sin."
 That counsell pleasd : Then Paridell did rise,
 And to the Castle-gate approcht in quiet wise :

x.

Whereat soft knocking, entrance he desyrd.
 The good man selfe, which then the porter playd,
 Him answered, that all were now retyrd
 Unto their rest, and all the keyes conveyd
 Unto their Maister who in bed was layd,
 That none him durst awake out of his dreame ;
 And therefore them of patience gently prayd.
 Then Paridell began to chaunge his theme,
 And threatned him with force and punishment
 extreme.

xi.

But all in vaine ; for nought mote him relent :
 Aud now so long before the wicked fast
 They wayted, that the night was forward spent,
 And the faire welkin fowly overcast
 Gan blownen up a bitter stormy blast,
 With showre and hayle so horrible and dred,
 That this faire many were compeld at last
 To fly for succour to a little shed,
 The which beside the gate for swyne was ordered.

xii.

It fortun'd, soone after they were gone,
 Another Knight, whom tempest thether brought,
 Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone,
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare besought ;
 But, like so as the rest, he prayd for nought ;
 For flatly he of entrance was refusd :
 Sorely therat he was displeasd, and thought
 How to avenge himselfe so sore abusd,
 And evermore the Carle of courtesie accusd.

xiii.

But, to avoyde th' intollerable stowre,
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare,
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the showre,
 He came, which full of guests he found whyleare,
 So as he was not let to enter there :
 Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth,

viii. 7. *Whyles thus we suffer &c.*] The construction is Whyles thus we suffer this same old Dotard, of his own will, (i. e. having his own will,) to keep us out in scorne, in contempt of us. CHURCH.

xi. 7. — this faire many] Company. Spenser repeatedly uses many in this sense. Tonn.

xii. 4. — late entrance deare besought ;] Earnestly, dearly, desired admittance; seeing it was so late in the night. CHURCH.

xii. 9. *And evermore the Carle of courtesie accusd.*] The sense must be, "accused him of discourtesy, of rudeness." JORTIN.

And swore that he would lodge with them yfere
Or them dislodg, all were they liefe or loth ;
And so defyde them each, and so defyde them both.

xiv.

Both were full loth to leave that needfull tent,
And both full loth in darkenesse to debate ;
Yet both full liefe him lodging to have lent,
And both full liefe his boasting to abate :
But chiefly Paridell his hart did grate
To heare him threaten so despightfully,
As if he did a dogge in kenell rate
That durst not barke ; and rather had he dy
Then, when he was defyde, in coward corner ly.

xv.

Tho, hastily remounting to his steed,
He forth issew'd ; like as a boystrous winde,
Which in th' earthes hollow caves hath long ben
And shut up fast within her prisions blind, [hid
Makes the huge element, against her kinde,
To move and tremble as it were aghast,
Untill that it an issew forth may finde ;
Then forth it breakes, and with his furious blast
Confounds both land and seas, and skyes doth over-
cast.

xvi.

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and
Together with impetuous rage and forse, [met
That with the terrour of their fierce affret
They rudely drove to ground both man and horse,
That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.
But Paridell sore brused with the blow
Could not arise, the counterchange to scorse ;
Till that young Squyre him reared from below ;
Then drew he his bright sword, and gan about him
throw.

xvii.

But Satyrane forth stepping did them stay,
And with faire treaty pacifide their yre :
Then, when they were accorded from the fray,
Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
To heape on him dew vengeance for his hire.
They beene agreed, and to the gates they goe
To burn the same with unquenchable fire,
And that uncurteous Carle, their commune foe,
To doe fowle death to die, or wrap in grievous woe.

xviii.

Malbecco seeing them resolv'd in deed
To flame the gates, and hearing them to call
For fire in earnest, ran with fearfull speed,
And, to them calling from the castle wall,
Besought them humbly him to beare withall,
As ignorant of servants bad abuse
And slacke attendaunce unto strangers call.
The Knights were willing all things to excuse,
Though nought belev'd, and entraunce late did not
refuse.

xix.

They beene ybrought into a comely bowre,
And serv'd of all things that mote needfull bee ;

xiii. 8. — all were they liefe or loth ;] That is, were they willing or unwilling, glad or sorry. UPRON.

xvi. 3. — their fierce affret] *Renconter*, hasty meeting, &c. *Affrettare*, Ital. To hasten, to be in a fret and haste. UPRON.

xvii. 7. *Could not arise, the counterchange to scorse,*] *Render il contracombio*, to be even with him, to give him like for like ; *faire un contrechange*. UPRON.

Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre,
And welcomde more for feare then charitee ;
But they dissembled what they did not see,
And welcomed themselves. Each gan unlight
Their garments wet, and weary armour free,
To dry themselves by Vulcanes flaming light,
And eke their lately bruzed parts to bring in plight.

xx.

And eke that straunger Knight amongst the rest
Was for like need enforst to disaray :
Tho, whenas vailed was her lofty crest,
Her golden locks, that were in tramells gay
Upbounden, did themselves adowne display
And rought unto her heeles ; like sunny beames,
That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
Their vapour vaded, shewe their golden gleames,
And through the azure aire shoote forth their per-
sant streames.

xxi.

Shee also dofte her heavy haberieon,
Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde ;
And her well-plighted frock, which she did won
To tucke about her short when she did ryde,
Shee low let fall, that flowd from her lanck syde
Downe to her foot with carelesse modestee.
Then of them all she plainly was espyde
To be a woman-wight, unwist to bee,
The fairest woman-wight that ever eie did see

xxii.

Like as Bellona (being late return'd
From slaughter of the giants conquered ; [burn'd
Where proud Encelade, whose wide nosethurils
With breathed flames like to a furnace redd,
Transfixid with her speare downe tumbled dedd
From top of Hemus by him heaped hye ;)
Hath loost her helmet from her lofty hedd,
And her Gorgonian shield gins to untye
From her left arme, to rest in glorious victorie.

xxiii.

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were
With great amazement of so wondrous sight ;
And each on other, and they all on her,
Stood gazing ; as if suddain great affright
Had them surprizd : At last avising right
Her goodly personage and glorious hew,
Which they so much mistooke, they tooke delight
In their first error, and yett still anew
With wonder of her beauty fed their hongry vew

xxiv.

Yet n'ote their hongry vew be satisfide,
But, seeing, still the more desir'd to see,
And ever firmly fixed did abide
In contemplation of divinitee :
But most they mervaild at her chevalree

xix. 5. *But &c.*] I should think they dissembled what they did see, or what they would not see. JORIN.

xx. 3. *Tho, whenas vailed*] It should be either *valed*, or *when avaled*, that is, pulled off, laid down. CHURCH.

xx. 8. *Their vapour vaded.*] So all the editions. Quere : "*The vapour vaded.*" That is, the vapour being dispers'd. CHURCH.

xx. 9. — *their persant streames.*] *Persant* is *piercing* ; and is so used by Chaucer, from the Fr. UPRON.

xxi. 3. — *her well-plighted frock,*] Her well-folded frock. TONB.

Ibid. — *she did won*] She used, won for wont : the last letter is dropt for the rhyme's sake. CHURCH.

And noble prowess which they had approv'd,
That much they faynd to know who she mote bee ;
Yet none of all them her thereof amov'd ;
Yet every one her likte, and every one her lov'd.

xxv.

And Paridell, though partly discontent
With his late fall and fowle indignity,
Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,
Through gracious regard of her faire eye,
And knightly worth which he too late did try,
Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight ;
Then they Malbecco prayd of courtesy,
That of his Lady they might have the sight
And company at meat, to doe them more delight.

xxvi.

But he, to shifte their curious request,
Gan causen why she could not come in place ;
Her crased helth, her late recourse to rest,
And humid evening ill for sicke folkes ease ;
But none of those excuses could take place ;
Ne would they cate, till she in presence came :
Shee came in presence with right comely grace,
And fairly them saluted, as became,
And shewd herselfe in all a gentle courteous Dame.

xxvii.

They sate to meat ; and Satyrane his chance
Was her before, and Paridell beside ;
But he himselfe sate looking still askaunce
Gainst Britomart, and ever closely eide
Sir Satyrane, that glaunces might not glide :
But his blinde eie, that sided Paridell,
All his demesnure from his sight did hide :
On her faire face so did he feede his fill,
And sent close messages of love to her at will :

xxviii.

And ever and anone, when none was ware,
With speaking lookes, that close embassage bore,
He rov'd at her, and told his secret care ;
For all that art he learned had of yore :
Ne was she ignoraunt of that lend lore,
But in his eye his meaning wisely redd,
And with the like him aunswerd evermore :
Shee sent at him one fyrie dart, whose hedd
Empoised was with privy lust and gealous dredd.

xxix.

He from that deadly throw made no defence,
But to the wound his weake heart opened wyde :
The wicked engine through false influence
Past through his eies, and secretly did glyde
Into his heart, which it did sorely gryde.
But nothing new to him was that same paine,
Ne paine at all ; for he so ofte had tryde
The powre thereof, and lov'd so oft in vaine,
That thing of course he counted, love to entertaine.

xxx.

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate
His inward griefe, by meanes to him well knowne :
Now Bacchus fruit out of the silver plate
He on the table dasht, as overthrowne,
Or of the fruitfull liquor overflowne ;
And by the dauncing bubbles did divine,

Or therein write to lett his love be showne ;
Which well she redd out of the learned line :
A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

xxxi.

And, whenso of his hand the pledge she raught,
The guilty cup she fained to mistake,
And in her lap did shed her idle draught,
Shewing desire her inward flame to slake.
By such close signes they secret way did make
Unto their wils, and one eies watch escape :
Two eies him needeth, for to watch and wake,
Who lovers will deceive. Thus was the ape,
By their faire handling, put into Malbeccoes cape.

xxxii.

Now, when of meats and drinks they had their fill
Purpose was moved by that gentle Dame
Unto those Knights adventurous, to tell
Of deeds of armes which unto them became,
And every one his Kindred and his Name.
Then Paridell, in whom a kindly pride
Of gracious speach and skill his words to frame
Abounded, being glad of so fitte tide
Him to commend to her, thus spake, of al well eide :

xxxiii.

" Troy, that art now nought but an idle name,
And in thine ashes buried low dost lie,
Though whilome far much greater then thy fame,
Before that angry Gods and cruell skie
Upon thee heapt a direfull destinie ;
What boots it boast thy glorious descent,
And fetch from heven thy great genealogie,
Sith all thy worthie prayses being blent
Their ofspring hath embaste, and later glory shent !

xxxiv.

" Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome
That warre was kindled which did Troy inflame,
And stately towres of Ihon whilome
Brought unto balefull ruine, was by name
Sir Paris far renownd through noble fame ;
Who, through great prowess and bold hardi-
nesse,
From Lacedaemon fetcht the fayrest Dame
That ever Greece did boast, or Knight possesse,
Whom Venus to him gave for meed of worthinesse ;

xxxv.

" Fayre Helene, flowre of beautie excellent,
And girdon of the mighty conquerours,
That madest many ladies deare lament
The heave losse of their brave paramours,
Which they far off beheld from Trojan toures,
And saw the fieldes of faire Seamajor strowne
With carcasses of noble warrioures
Whose fruitlesse lives were under furrow sowne,
And Xanthus sandy bankes with blood all over-
flowne !

xxxvi.

" From him my linage I derive aright,
Who long before the ten yeares siege of Troy,
Whiles yet on Ida he a shepheard hight,
On faire Oenone got a lovely boy,
Whom, for remembrance of her passed ioy,
She, of his father, Paris did name ;
Who, after Greekes did Priams realme destroy,
Gatfred the Trojan reliques sav'd from flame,
And, with them sayling thence, to th' isle of Paros
came.

xxvi. 2. — Gan causen] Began to assign reasons.
CHURCH.

xxvii. 3. But he himselfe] Malbecco. CHURCH.

XXXVII.

“That was by him calld Paros, which before
Hight Nausa; there he many yeares did raise,
And built Nausicle by the Pontick shore;
The which he dying left next in remaine
To Paridas his sonne,
From whom I Paridell by kin descend:
But, for faire ladies love and glories gaine,
My native soile have left, my dayes to spend
In seeing deeds of armes, my lives and labors end.”

XXXVIII.

Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell
Of Trojan warres and Priams citie sackt,
(The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,
She was empassiond at that piteous act,
With zelous envy of Greekes cruell fact
Against that Nation, from whose race of old
She heard that she was lineally extract:
For noble Britons sprong from Trojans bold,
And Troynovant was built of old Troyes ashes cold.

XXXIX.

Then, sighing soft awhile, at last she thus:
“O lamentable fall of famous towne,
Which raignd so many yeares victorious,
And of all Asie bore the souveraine crowne,
In one sad night consumd and thrown downe!
What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne,
And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at even-
ing late!

XL.

“Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
Hath fownd another partner of your payne:
For nothing may impresse so deare constraint
As countries cause, and commune foes disdayne.
But, if it should not grieve you backe agayne
To turne your course, I would to heare desyre
What to Aeneas fell; sith that men sayne
He was not in the cities wofull fyre
Consum'd, but did himselfe to safety retyre.”

XLI.

“Anchyses sonne begott of Venus fayre,”
Said he, “out of the flames for safeguard fled,
And with a remnant did to sea repayre;
Where he, through fatall error long was led
Full many yeares, and weetlesse wandered
From shore to shore amongst the Lybick sandes,
Ere rest he fownd: Much there he suffered,
And many perilles past in forreine landes,
To save his people sad from victours vengefull
handes:

XLII.

“At last in Latium he did arryve,
Where he with cruell warre was entertaind
Of th' inland folke which sought him backe to
Till he with old Latinus was constraind [drive,
To contract wedlock, so the fates ordaind;
Wedlocke contract in blood, and eke in blood
Accomplished; that many deare complaind:
The rivall slaine, the victour (through the flood
Escaped hardly) hardly praisd his wedlock good.

XL. 4. — *through fatall error long* Through long
wanderings at sea, appointed by destiny. CHURCH.

XLIII.

“Yet, after all, he victour did survive,
And with Latinus did the kingdom part:
But after, when both nations gan to strive
Into their names the title to convart,
His sonne Iulus did from thence depart
With all the warlike youth of Troians blood,
And in Long Alba plast his throne apart;
Where faire it florished and long time stoud,
Till Romulus, renewing it, to Rome removd.”

XLIV.

“There; there,” said Britomart, “afresh appeared
The glory of the later world to spring,
And Troy againe out of her dust was reard
To sitt in second seat of souveraine king
Of all the world, under her governing.
But a third kingdom yet is to arise
Out of the Troians scattered ofspring,
That, in all glory and great enterprise,
Both first and second Troy shall dare to equalise.

XLV.

“It Troynovant is hight, that with the waves
Of wealthy Thamis washed is along,
Upon whose stubborne neck (wherent he raves
With roving rage, and sore himselfe does throng,
That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong,)
She fastned hath her foot; which stands so hy,
That it a wonder of the world is song,
In forreine landes; and all, which passen by,
Beholding it from farre doe think it threatens the
skye.

XLVI.

“The Trojan Brute did first that citie fownd,
And Ilygate made the meare thereof by West,
And Overt-gate by North: that is the bownd
Toward the land; two rivers bownd the rest.
So huge a scope at first him seemed best,
To be the compass of his kingdomes seat:
So huge a mind could not in lesser rest,
Ne in small meares containe his glory great,
That Albion had conquered first by warlike feat.”

XLVII.

“Ah! fairest Lady Knight,” said Paridell,
“Pardon I pray my heedlesse oversight,
Who had forgot that whylome I heard tell
From aged Mnemon; for my wits beene light.
Indeed he said, if I remember right,
That of the antique Trojan stocke there grew
Another plant, that raught to wondrous hight,
And far abroad his mighty branches threw
Into the utmost angle of the world he knew.

XLVIII.

“For that same Brute, whom much he did advance
In all his speech, was Sylvius his sonne,
Whom having slain through luckles arrowes
glauce,
He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,
Or els for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne.
And with him ledd to sea an youthly trayne;
Wher wearie wandring they long time did wonne,

XLVI. 2. — *the meare thereof*; The limit or bound-
ary. Anglo-Sax. mæþle, à Gr. *πεῖρα*, *divido*. UPRON.

XLVII. 4. *From aged Mnemon*; Spenser has formed this
name from the Greek; meaning by it a remembrancer or
instructor. UPRON.

And many fortunes prov'd in th' ocean mayne,
And great adventures found, that now were long
to sayne.

XLIX.

"At last by fatall course they driven were
Into an Island spacious and brode,
The furthest North that did to them appeare:
Which, after rest, they, seeking farre abrode,
Found it the fittest soyle for their abode,
Fruitfull of all things fitt for living foode,
But wholly waste and void of peoples trode,
Save an huge nation of the geaunts broode
That fed on living flesh, and dronck mens vitall
blood.

L.

▲Whom he, through wearie wars and labours long,
Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold:
In which the great Goëmagot of strong
Corineus, and Coulin of Debon old,
Were overthrowne and laide on th' earth full cold,
Which quaked under their so hideous masse:
A famous history to hee enrold
In everlasting monuments of brasse,
That all the antique Worthies merits far did passe.

LI.

"His worke great Troynovant, his worke is eke
Faire Lincolne, both renowned far away;
That who from East to West will endlong seeke,
Cannot two fairer cities find this day,
Except Cleopolis; so heard I say
Old Mmemor: Therefore, Sir, I greet you well
Your countrey kin; and you entyrelly pray
Of pardon for the strife, which late befell
Betwixt us both unknowne." So ended Paridell.

LII.

But all the while, that he these speeches spent,
Upon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore
With vigilant regard and dew attent,
Fashioning worldes of fancies evermore
In her fraile witt, that now her quite forlore:
The whiles unwares away her wondrous eye
And greedy eares her weake hart from her bore:
Which he perceiving, ever privily,
In speaking, many false helgards at her let fly.

LIII.

So long these Knightes discoursed diversly
Of strange affaires, and noble hardiment,
Which they had past with mickle ieopardy,
That now the humid night was farforth spent,
And heavenly lampes were halfendeale ybrent:
Which th' old man seeing wel, who too long
thought
Every discourse, and every argument,
Which by the houres he measured, besought
Them go to rest. So all unto their howres were
brought.

XLIX. 7. *But wholly waste &c.*] That is, uninhabited.
CHURCH.

LII. 9. — belgards] *Beautiful looks.* Fr. *belles regards.* UPTON.

LIII. 5. — halfendeale] *Half;* a word used by Chaucer
UPTON.

CANTO X.

Paridell rapeth Hellenore;
Malbecco her pourseves;
Fynds amongst Satyres, whence with him
To turne she doth refuse.

I.

THE morrow next, so soone as Phœbus lamp
Bewrayed had the world with early light,
And fresh Aurora had the shady damp
Out of the goodly heaven amoved quight,
Faire Britomart and that same Faery Knight
Uprose, forth on their journey for to wend:
But Paridell complaynd, that his late fight
With Britomart so sore did him offend,
That ryde he could not till his hurts he did amend

II.

So fourth they far'd; but he behind them stayd,
Maulgre his host, who grudged grivously
To house a guest that would be needed obayd,
And of his owne him lefte not liberty:
Might wanting measure moveth surquedry.
Two things he feared, but the third was death;
That fiers Youngmans unruly maystery;
His Money, which he lov'd as living breath;
And his faire Wife, whom honest long he kept
uneath.

III.

But patience perforce; he must abide
What fortune and his fate on him will lay:
Fond is the feare that findes no remedie.
Yet warily he watcheth every way,
By which he feareth evill happen may;
So th' evill thinkes by watching to prevent:
Ne doth he suffer her, nor night nor day,
Out of his sight herselfe once to absent:
So doth he punish her, and eke himself torment.

IV.

But Paridell kept better watch then hee,
A fit occasion for his turne to finde.
False Love! why do men say thou canst not see
And in their foolish fancy feigne thee blinde,
That with thy charmes the sharpest sight does
binde,
And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free,
And seest every secret of the minde;
Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee:
All that is by the working of thy deitee.

V.

So perfect in that art was Paridell,
That he Malbeccoes halven eye did wyle;
His halven eye he wiled wondrous well,
And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguyle,
Both eyes and hart attonce, during the while
That he there scourined his woundes to heale;
That Cupid selfe, it seeing, close did smyle
To weet how he her love away did steale,
And bad that none their ioyous treason shoul
reveale.

VI.

The learned Lover lost no time nor tyde
That least advantage mote to him afford,
Yet bore so faire a sayle, that none espyde
His secret drift till he her layd aboard.
Whenso in open place and commune bord
He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach

He courted her; yet bayted every word,
That his ungentle hoste n'ote him appeach
Of vile ungentlenesse or hospitages breach.

VII.

But when apart (if ever her apart
He found) then his false engins fast he plyde,
And all the sleights unbosomd in his hart:
He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde,
And cast himselfe on ground her fast hesyde:
Tho, when againe he him bethought to live,
He wept, and wayld, and false lamentes beyde,
Saying, but if she mercie would him give,
That he mote algates dye, yet did his death forgive.

VIII.

And otherwhyles with amorous delights
And pleasing toyes he would her entertaime;
Now singing sweetly to surprize her sprights,
Now making layes of love and lovers paine,
Bransles, hallads, virelayes, and verses vaine;
Oft purposes, oft riddles, he devysd,
And thousands like which flow'd in his braine,
With which he fed her fancy, and entysd
To take to his new love, and leave her old despyd.

IX.

And every where he might and everie while
He did her service dewtiful, and sewd
At hand with humble pride and pleasing guile;
So closely yet, that none but she it vewd,
Who well perceived all, and all indewd,
Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,
With which he many weake harts had subdewd
Of yore, and many had ylike misled:
What wonder then if she were likewise carried?

X.

No fort so fensible, no wals so strong,
But that continuall batterry will rive,
Or daily siege, through dispurvayance long
And lacke of reskewes, will to parley drive;
And peece, that unto parley eare will give,
Will shortly yield itselfe, and will be made
The vassall of the victors will bylive:
That stratageme had oftentimes assayd
This crafty paramoure, and now it plaine display'd.

XI.

For through his traines he her intrapped hath,
That she her love and hart hath wholly sold
To him without regard of gaine, or scath,
Or care of credite, or of husband old,
Whom she hath vow'd to dub a fayre cucquid.
Nought wants but time and place, which shortly
Devizd hath, and to her Lover told. [shee
It pleased well: So well they both agree;
So readie rype to ill ill wemens counsels bee!

XII.

Darke was the evening, fit for lovers stealth.
When chaunst Malbecco busie be elsewhere,
She to his closet went, where all his wealth

vi. 9. ——— or hospitages breach.] Or breach of hospitality. I believe *hospitage* to be a word coined by Spenser. Toun.

viii. 5. Bransles,] *Bransles*, a French dance. Toun.

viii. 6. Oft purposes,] That is, *cross purposes*, questions and an-wers. Toun.

x. 5. ——— peece,] *Castle*. Toun.

Lay hid; thereof she countlesse summes did reare,
The which she meant away with her to beare;
The rest she fyr'd, for sport or for despight:
As Hellene, when she saw aloft appeare
The Troiane flames and reach to hevens hight,
Did clap her hands, and ioied at that doleful sight;

XIII.

The second Hellene, fayre Dame Hellenore,
The whiles her husband ran with sory haste
To quench the flames which she had tyn'd before,
Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste,
And ran into her Lovers armes right fast;
Where streight embraced she to him did cry
And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were past;
For lo! that Guest did beare her forcibly,
And meant to ravish her, that rather had to dy!

XIV.

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd,
And ready seeing him with her to fly,
In his disquiet mind was much dismayd:
But when againe he backward cast his eye,
And saw the wicked fire so furiously
Consume his hart, and scorch his idoles face,
He was therewith distressed diversely,
Ne wist he how to turne, nor to what place:
Was never wretched man in such a wofull cace.

XV.

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,
And left the fire; Love Money overcame:
But, when he marked how his money burnd,
He left his wife; Money did Love disclame:
Both was he loth to loose his loved dame,
And loth to leave his liefest pelfe behinde;
Yet, sith he no'te save both, he sav'd that same
Which was the dearest to his doughtill minde,
The god of his desire, the ioiy of misers blinde

XVI.

Thus whilest all things in trouhloous uprore were
And all men busie to suppress the flame,
The loving couple neede no reskew feare,
But leasure had and liberty to frame
Their purpost flight, free from all mens reclame;
And Night, the patronesse of love-stealth fayre,
Gave them safe conduct till to end they came:
So beene they gone yfere, a wanton payre
Of lovers loosely knit, where list them to repaire.

XVII.

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were,
Malbecco, seeing how his losse did lyde,
Out of the flames which he had quencht whylere,
Into huge waves of griefe and gealosye
Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye
Twixt inward doole and felonous despight:
He rav'd, he wept, he stamp't, he lowd did cry;
And all the passions, that in man may light,
Did him atonce oppresse, and vex his caytive
spright.

XVIII.

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward griefe,
And did consume his gall with anguish sore:
Still when he mused on his late mishiefe,
Then still the smart thereof increased more,

xiii. 9. ——— that rather had to dy!] *Quee* mallet mort, ironically. Urton.

And seemd more grievous then it was before :
At last when sorrow he saw booted nought,
Ne griefe might not his Love to him restore,
He gan devise how her he reskew mought ;
Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused thought.

XIX.

At last resolving, like a pilgrim pore,
To search her forth whereso she might be fond,
And hearing with him treasure in close store,
The rest he leaves in ground : So takes in hond
To seeke her endlong both by sea and lond.
Long he her sought, he sought her far and nere,
And every where that he mote understand
Of Knights and Ladies any meetings were ;
And of each one he mett he tidings did inquire.

XX.

But all in vaine ; his woman was too wise
Ever to come into his clouch againe,
And hee too simple ever to surprise
The iolly Paridell, for all his paine.
One day, as he forpassed by the plaine
With weary pace, he far away espide
A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,
Which hoved close under a forest side,
As if they lay in wait, or els themselves did hide.

XXI.

Well weened hee that those the same mote bee ;
And, as he better did their shape avize,
Him seemed more their maner did agree ;
For th' one was armed all in warlike wize,
Whom to be Paridell he did devize ;
And th' other, al yclad in garments light
Discolourd like to womansh disguise,
He did resemble to his Lady bright ;
And ever his faint hart much earned at the sight :

XXII.

And ever faine he towards them would goe,
But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,
But stood aloofe, unweeting what to doe ;
Till that prickt forth with loves extremity,
That is the father of fowle gealosity,
He closely nearer crept the truth to weet :
But, as he nigher drew, he easily
Might seeerne that it was not his sweetest Sweet,
Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet :

XXIII.

But it was scornfull Braggadochio,
That with his servant Trompart hovred there,
Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe :
Whom such whenas Malbecco spyed clere,
He turned baek, and would have fled arere ;
Till Trompart, ronning hastily, him did stay
And bad before his soveraine lord appere :
That was him loth, yet durst he not gainesay,
And comming him before low louted on the bay.

XXIV.

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
As if he could have kild him with his looke,
That to the ground him meekely made to howe,
And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,

xx. 8. [Which hoved close] That is, *hovered*. CHURCH.
xxii. 8. ——— seeerne] *Discerne*, Lat. *cernere*, *discernere*
UPTON.
xxii. 9. ——— Belamour,] *Lover*. Fr. *bel amour*. TODD.

That every member of his body quooke.
Said he, "Thou man of nought ! what doest thou
Unfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke, [here
Where I expected one with shield and spere
To prove some deeds of armes upon an equall
pere ?"

XXV.

The wretched man at his imperious speach
Was all abasht, and low prostrating said ;
"Good Sir, let not my rudenes be no breach
Unto your patience, ne be ill ypaid ;
For I unwares this way by fortune straid,
A silly pilgrim driven to distresse,
That seeke a Lady"—There he suddein staid,
And did the rest with grievous sighes suppressse,
While teares stood in his eies, few drops of bitter-
nesse.

XXVI.

"What Lady ?"—"Man," said Trompart, "take
good hart,
And tell thy griefe, if any hidden lye :
Was never better time to shew thy smart
Then now that noble succor is thee by,
That is the whole worlds commune remedy."
That chearful word his weak heart much did
ehoare,
And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply,
That bold he sayd ; "O most redoubted Pere,
Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches case to
heare."

XXVII.

Then sighing sore, "It is not long," saide hee,
"Sith I enoyd the gentlest Dame alive ;
Of whom a Knight, (no Knight at all perdee,
But shame of all that doe for honor strive,)
By treacherous deceit did me deprive ;
Through open outrage he her bore away,
And with fowle force unto his will did drive ;
Which al good Knights, that armes do bear
this day,
Are bownd for to revenge and punish if they may.

XXVIII.

"And you, most noble Lord, that can and dare
Redresse the wrong of miserable wight,
Cannot employ your most victorions speare
In better quarrell then defence of right,
And for a Lady gainst a faithlesse Knight :
So shall your glory be advanced much,
And all faire Ladies magnify your might,
And eke myselfe, albee I simple such,
Your worthy paine shall wel reward with guerdon
rich."

XXIX.

With that out of his bouget forth he drew
Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt ;
But ho on it lookt scornfully askew,
As much disdeigning to be so misdempt,
Or a war-monger to be basely nempt ;
And sayd ; "Thy offers base I greatly loth,
And eke thy words uncourtous and unknempt :
I tread in dust thee and thy money both ;
That, were it not for shame"—So turned from him
wroth.

XXX.

But Trompart, that his Maistres humor knew
In lofty looks to hide an humble minde,

xxx. 1. ——— out of his bouget] *Budget* or *pouch*. Fr.
bougette. TODD.

Was inly tickled with that golden vew,
 And in his eare him rownded close behinde :
 Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the winde,
 Waiting advantage on the pray to sease ;
 Till Trompart, lowly to the grownd inclinde,
 Besought him his great eourage to appease,
 And pardon simple man that rash did him dis-
 please.

xxxI.

Big looking like a doughty doucèpere,
 At last he thus ; "Thou clod of vilest clay,
 I pardon yield, and with thy rudenes beare ;
 But weete henceforth, that all that golden pray,
 And all that els the vaine world vaunten may,
 I loath as dounge, ne deeme my dew reward :
 Fame is my meed, and glory vertuous pay :
 But minds of mortall men are muchell mard
 And mov'd amisse with massy mucks unmeet
 regard.

xxxII.

"And more ; I graunt to thy great misery
 Gracious respect ; thy wife shall backe be sent :
 And that vile Knight, whoever that hee,
 Which hath thy Lady reft and knighthood shent,
 By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly dent
 The blood hath of so many thousands shedd,
 I sweare ere long shall dearely it repent ;
 Ne he twixt heven and earth shall hide his hedd,
 But soone he shall be fownd, and shortly doen be
 dedd."

xxxIII.

The foolish man therat woxe wondrous blith,
 As if the word so spoken were halfe donne,
 And humbly thanked him a thousand sith
 That had from death to life him newly wonne.
 Tho forth the Boaster marching brave begonne
 His stolen steed to thunder furiously,
 As if he heaven and hell would over-ronne,
 And all the world confound with cruelty ;
 That much Malbecco ioyed in his iollity.

xxxIV.

Thus long they three together traveled,
 Through many a wood and many an unfoowth way,
 To seeke his wife that was far wander'd :
 But those two sought nought but the present pray,
 To weete, the treasure which he did bewray,
 On which their eies and harts were wholly sett,
 With purpose how they might it best betray ;
 For, sith the howre that first he did them lett
 The same behold, therwith their keene desires
 were whett.

xxxV.

It fortun'd, as they together far'd,
 They spide where Paridell came pricking fast
 Upon the plaine, the which himselfe prepar'd
 To giust with that brave straunger Knight a cast,
 As on adventure by the way he past :
 Alone he rode without his paragone ;
 For, having filcht her bells, her up he cast

xxx. 4. *And in his eare him rownded close behinde.*] "Ranian, to whisper, to rowne or round in the ear," Somner. Upton.

xxxI. 1. *Big looking, like a doughty doucèpere.*] *Doucèpere*, in Chaucer, is from the French, *les douze pairs*; the twelve peers of France. T. WARREN.

xxxIII. 3. — a thousand sith] A thousand times. Todd.

To the wide world, and lett her fly alone ;
 He noude be clogd : So had he served many one.

xxxVI.

The gentle Lady, loose at randon lefte, [wide
 The greene-wood long did walke, and wander
 At wilde adventure, like a forlorne wefte ;
 Till on a day the Satyres her espide
 Straying alone withouten groomer or guide :
 Her up they tooke, and with them home her ledd,
 With them as housewife ever to abide, [bredd ;
 To milke their gotes, and make them cheese and
 And every one as commune good her handled :

xxxVII.

That shortly she Malbecco has forgott,
 And eke Sir Paridell all were he deare ;
 Who from her went to seeke another lott,
 And now by fortune was arrived here,
 Where those two guilers with Malbecco were,
 Soone as the old man saw Sir Paridell,
 He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
 Ne word he had to speake his griefto tell,
 But to him louted low, and greeted goodly well ;

xxxVIII.

And, after, asked him for Hellenore :
 "I take no keepe of her," sayd Paridell,
 "She wonneth in the Forrest there before."
 So forth he rode as his adventure fell ;
 The whiles the Boaster from his loftie sell
 Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend ;
 But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure dwell,
 But went his way ; whom when he passed kend,
 He up remounted light, and after faind to wend.

xxxIX.

"Perdy nay," said Malbecco, "shall ye not ;
 But let him passe as lightly as he came :
 For litle good of him is to be got,
 And mickle perill to bee put to shame.
 But let us goe to seeke my dearest Dame,
 Whom he hath left in yonder forest wild :
 For of her safety in great doubt I ame,
 Least salvage beastes her person have despoild :
 Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine have
 toyld !"

xL.

They all agree, and forward them address : [well,
 "Ah ! but," said crafty Trompart, "weete ye
 That yonder in that wastefull wilderness
 Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers dwell ;
 Dragons, and minotaures, and feendes of hell,
 And many wilde woodmen which robbe and rend
 All travelers ; therefore advise ye well,
 Before ye enterprise that way to wend :
 One may his journey bring too soone to evill end."

xLI.

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,
 And, with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,
 Their counsell crav'd in daunger imminent.
 Said Trompart ; "You, that are the most opprest
 With burdein of great treasure, I thinke best
 Here for to stay in safetie behynd :
 My Lord and I will search the wide forést."
 That counsell pleased not Malbeccoos mynd ;
 For he was much afraid himselfe alone to fynd.

xxxVI. 3. — wefte,] A stray, or wanderer. Todd.

XLII.

"Then is it best," said he, "that ye doe leave
Your treasure here in some security,
Either fast closed in some hollow greave,
Or buried in the ground from ieopardy,
Till we returne againe in safety:
As for us two, least doubt of us ye have,
Hence farre away we will blyndfolded ly,
Ne pryvy bee unto your treasures grave."
It pleased; so he did: Then they march forward
brave.

XLIII.

Now when amid the thickest woodes they were,
They heard a noyse of many haggipes shrill,
And shrieking hububs them approaching nere,
Which all the forest did with horror fill:
That dreadful sound the Bosters hart did thrill
With such amazment, that in hast he fledd,
Ne ever looked back for good or ill;
And after him eke fearefull Trompart spedd:
The old man could not fly, but fell to ground half
dedd:

XLIV.

Yet afterwarde, close creeping as he might,
He in a bush did hyde his fearefull hedd.
The iolly Satyres full of fresh delight
Came dauncing forth, and with them nimble ledd
Faire Helenore with girlonds all bespredd,
Whom their May-lady they had newly made:
She, proude of that new honour which they redd,
And of their lovely fellowship full glade,
Daunst lively, and her face did with a lawrell shade.

XLV.

The silly man that in the thickett lay
Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved sore;
Yet durst he not against it doe or say,
But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore,
To see th' unkindnes of his Hellenore.
All day they daunced with great lustyhedd,
And with their horned feet the greene gras wore;
The whiles their gotes upon the brouzes fedd,
Till drouping Phœbus gan to hyde his golden hedd.

XLVI.

Tho up they gan their mery pypes to trusse,
And all their goodly hearde did gather rownd;
But every Satyre first did give a busse
To Hellenore; so busses did abound.
Now gan the humid vapour shed the grownd
With perly deaw, and th' Earthes gloomy shade
Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin rownd,
That every bird and beast awarned made
To shrowd themselves, while sleep their sences did
invade.

XLVII.

Which when Malbecco saw, out of the bush
Upon his handes and feete he crept full light,
And like a gote amongst the gotes did rush;
That, through the helpe of his faire hornes on
hight,
And misty dampe of misconceyving night,
And eke through likenesse of his gotish beard,
He did the better counterfeite aright:

XLII. 3 *Either fast closed in some hollow greave—
Ne pryvy bee unto your treasures grave.*] These
worde are not the same; the former means a *groove*.

So home he marcht amongst the horned heard,
That none of all the Satyres him espyde or heard.

XLVIII.

At night, when all they went to sleepe, he vewd,
Whereas his lovely wife amongst them lay,
Embraced of a Satyre rough and rude,
Who all the night did mind his ioyous play:
Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day,
That all his hart with gealosy did swell;
But yet that nights ensample did bewray
That not for nought his wife them lovd so well,
When one so oft a night did ring his matins bell.

XLIX.

So closely as he could he to them crept,
When wearie of their sport to sleepe they fell,
And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,
He whispered in her eare, and did her tell,
That it was he which by her side did dwell;
And therefore prayd her wake to heare him
As one out of a dreame not waked well [plaine.
She turnd her, and returned backe againe:
Yet her for to awake he did the more constraîne.

L.

At last with irkesom trouble she abrayd;
And then perceiving, that it was indeed
Her old Malbecco, which did her upbrayd
With loosenesse of her love and loathly deed,
She was astonisht with exceeding dreed,
And would have wakt the Satyre by her syde;
But he her prayd, for mercy or for meed,
To save his life, ne let him be descryde,
But hearken to his lore, and all his counsell hyde.

LI.

Tho gan he her perswade to leave that lewd
And loathsom life, of God and man abhord,
And home returne, where all should be renewd
With perfect peace and bandes of fresh accord,
And she receivd againe to bed and bord,
As if no trespas ever had bene donne:
But she it all refused at one word,
And by no meanes would to his will be wonne,
But chose amongst the iolly Satyres still to wounne

LII.

He wooed her till day-spring he espyde;
But all in vaine: and then turnd to the heard,
Who butted him with hornes on every syde,
And trode downe in the durt, where his hore beard
Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard.
Early, before the heavens fairest light
Out of the ruddy East was fully reard,
The hearde out of their foldes were loosed quight^r
And he amongst the rest crept forth in sory plight^r

LIII.

So soone as he the prison-dore did pas,
He ran as fast as both his feet could beare,
And never looked who behind him was,
Ne scarcely who before: like as a beare,
That creeping close amongst the hives to reare
An hony-combe, the wakefull dogs espy,
And him assayling sore his carkas teare,
That hardly he with life away does fly,
Ne staves, till safe himselfe he seo from ieopardy.

LIV.

Ne stayd he, till he came unto the place
Where late his treasure he entombed had;

Where when ne found it not, (for Trompart bace
Had it purloyned for his Maister bad,)
With extreme fury he became quite mad,
And ran away; ran with himselfe away:
That who so straungely had him seene bestadd,
With upstart haire and staring eyes dismay,
From Limbo lake him late escaped sure would say.

LV.

High over hilles and over dales he fiedd,
As if the wind him on his winges had borne;
Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he spedd
His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne:
Griefe, and Despight, and Gealosity, and Scorne,
Did all the way him follow hard behynd;
And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne,
So shamefully forlorne of womankynd:
That, as a snake, still lurked in his wounded mynd.

LVI.

Still fled he forward, looking backward still;
Ne stayd his flight nor fearefull agony
Till that he came unto a rocky hill
Over the sea suspended dreadfully,
That living creature it would terrify
To looke adowne, or upward to the hight:
From thence he threw himselfe spiteously,
All desperate of his fore-damned spright,
That seemd no help for him was left in living sight.

LVII.

But, through long anguish and selfe-murd'ring
thought,
He was so wasted and forpined quight,
That all his substance was conseru'd to nought,
And nothing left but like an aery spright;
That on the rockes he fell so flit and light,
That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all;
But chanced on a craggy cliff to light;
Whence he with crooked clawes so long did crall,
That at the last he found a cave with entrance
small:

LVIII.

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth there
Resolv'd to build his balefull mansion
In dreary darkenes and continuall feare
Of that rocks fall, which ever and anon
Threates with huge ruine him to fall upon,
That he dare never sleepe, but that one eye
Still ope he keepses for that occasion;
Ne ever rests he in tranquillity,
The roring billowes beat his bowre so boystrously.

LIX.

Ne ever is he wont on ought to feed
But todes and frogs, his pasture poysonous,
Which in his cold complexion doe breed
A filthy blood, or humour rancorous,
Matter of doubt and dread suspitious,
That doth with curelesse care consume the hart,
Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious,
Cross-cuts the liver with internall smart,
And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternal
dart.

LV. 3. — *dismay*,] For *dismay'd*; a sacrifice to the rhyme. TODD.

LV. 9. *That*,] That thought. CHURCH.

LX.

Yet can he never dye, but dying lives,
And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,
That death and life atonce unto him gives,
And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.
There dwels he ever, miserable swaine,
Hatefull both to himselfe and every wight;
Where he, through privy griefe and horrour vaine,
Is woxen so deform'd, that he has quight
Forgot he was a man, and Gelosity is hight.

CANTO XI.

Britomart chaceeth Ollyphant;
Finds Scudamour distrust:
Assayes the House of Busyrane,
Where Loves apoyles are exprest.

I.

O HATEFULL hellish Snake! what Furie furst
Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine,
Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst,
And fostred up with bitter milke of tine;
Fowle Gealosity! that turnest love divine
To ioylesse dread, and mak'st the loving hart
With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,
And feed itselfe with selfe-consuming smart,
Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art!

II.

O let him far be banished away,
And in his stead let Love for ever dwell!
Sweete Love, that doth his golden wings embay
In blessed nectar and pure Pleasures well,
Untroubled of vile feare or bitter fell.
And ye, faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make
In th' harts of men, them governe wisely well,
And of faire Britomart ensample take,
That was as trew in love as turtle to her make.

III.

Who with Sir Satyrane, as earst ye red,
Forth ryding from Malbeccoes hostlesse hous,
Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled
From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous
And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus;
It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare
Of that Argantè vile and vitious, [whylere;
From whom the Squire of Dames was reft
This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse ought
were.

IV.

For as the sister did in feminine
And filthy lust exceede all womankind;
So he surpassed his sex masculine,
In beastly use, all that I ever finde:
Whom when as Britomart beheld behinde
The fearefull Boy so greedily purswe,
She was emmov'd in her noble minde
T' employ her puissance to his reskew,
And pricked fiercely forward where she did him vew.

II. 5. — or bitter fell.] Anglo Sax. "Felle, gall, anger, melancholinesse," Somner. UFTON.

II. 9. — as turtle to her make.] A. S. "maca, a companion, a consort, a mate." Somner. UFTON.

III. 2. — hostlesse] *Inhospitable*. CHURCH.

v.
 Ne was Sir Satyrane her far behinde,
 But with like fiercenesse did ensew the chace :
 Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone resinde
 His former suit, and from them fled apace :
 They after both, and boldly bad him bace,
 And each did strive the other to outgoe ;
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,
 For he was long, and swift as any roe,
 And now made better speed t' escape his feared foe.

vi.
 It was not Satyrane, whom he did feare,
 But Britomart the flowre of chastity ;
 For he the powre of chaste hands might not beare,
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly :
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,
 That he has gotten to a forrest neare,
 Where he is shrowded in security.
 The wood they enter, and search everie where ;
 They searched diversely ; so both divided were.

vii.
 Fayre Britomart so long him followed,
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,
 By which there lay a Knight all wallowed
 Upon the grassy ground, and by him neare
 His haberieon, his helmet, and his speare :
 A little off, his shield was rudely throwne,
 On which the Winged Boy in colours cleare
 Depeinct was, full easie to be knowne,
 And he thereby, wherever it in field was showne.

viii.
 His face upon the grownd did groveling ly,
 As if he had bene slombring in the shade ;
 That the brave Mayd would not for courtesy
 Out of his quiet slomber him abraide,
 Nor seeme too suddainly him to invade :
 Still as she stood, she heard with grievous throb
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob,
 That pittie did the Virgins hart of patience rob.

ix.
 At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes
 He sayd ; " O soverayne Lord, that sit'st on hye
 And raingst in blis emongst thy blessed saintes,
 How suffrest thou such shameful cruelty
 So long unwreaked of thine enemy !
 Or hast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed ?
 Or doth thy iustice sleepe and silent ly ?
 What booteth then the good and righteous deed,
 If goodness find no grace, nor righteousnesse no
 meed !

x.
 " If good find grace, and righteousnes reward,
 Why then is Amoret in cative band,
 Sith that more bounteous creature never far'd
 On foot upon the face of living land !
 Or if that heavenly iustice may withstand
 The wrongfull outrage of unrighteous men,
 Why then is Busirane with wicked hand
 Suffred, these seven monethes day, in secret den
 My Lady and my Love so cruelly to pen !

v. 5. — and boldly bad him bace.] Alluding to the
 known sport, called *prison-base*. UPRON.

xi.
 " My Lady and my Love is cruelly pend
 In dolefull darkenes from the vew of day,
 Whilest deadly tormentes doe her chast brest rend,
 And the sharpe steele doth rive her hart in tway,
 All for she Scudamore will not deny.
 Yet thou, vile man, vile Scudamore, art sound,
 Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay ;
 Unworthy wretch to tread upon the ground,
 For whom so faire a Lady feelles so sore a wound."

xii.
 There an huge heape of singulfes did oppresse
 His strugling soule, and swelling throbs empeach
 His foltring toung with pangs of drierinesse,
 Choking the remnant of his plaintife speach,
 As if his dayes were come to their last reach.
 Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly fit
 Threatning into his life to make a breach,
 Both with great ruth and terrour she was smit,
 Fearing least from her cage the wearie soule would
 fit.

xiii.
 Tho, stouping downe, she him moved light ;
 Who, therewith somewhat starting, up gan looke
 And seeing him behind a stranger Knight,
 Whereas no living creature he mistooke,
 With great indignaunce he that sight forsooke,
 And, downe againe himselfe disdainefully
 Abiecting, th' earth with his faire forehead strooke
 Which the bold Virgin seeing, gan apply
 Fit medicine to his griefe, and spake thus courtesly

xiv.
 " Ah ! gentle Knight, whose deepe-conceived griefe
 Well seemes t' excede the powre of patience,
 Yet, if that heavenly grace some good reliefe
 You send, submit you to High Providence ;
 And ever, in your noble hart, prepanse,
 That all the sorrow in the world is lesse
 Then vertues might and values confidence :
 For who will bide the burden of distresse,
 Must not here thinke to live ; for life is wretched
 nesse.

xv.
 " Therefore, faire Sir, doe comfort to you take,
 And freely read what wicked felon so
 Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle Make
 Perhaps this hand may help to ease your woe,
 And wreake your sorrow on your cruell foe ;
 At least it faire endeavour will apply."
 These feeling words so neare the quicke did goe,
 That up his head he reared easily ;
 And, leaning on his elbowe, these few words lett fly :

xvi.
 " What boots it plaine that cannot be redrest,
 And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse eare ;
 Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest,
 Ne worldly price, cannot redeeme my Deare
 Out of her thraldome and continuall feare !
 For he, the tyrant, which her hath in ward

xii. 1. — singulfes] Sobs or sigs. Lat. *singultus*.
 TODD.

xiv. 5. — prepence] This word *prepense* is an old
 English verb for *to consider*. TODD.

xiv. 7. — and values confidence:] *Value* is put for
valour. Spenser sometimes spells it *valew*. UPRON.

By strong enchauntments and blacke magicke
leare,
Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard,
And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her gard.

XXVII.

"There he tormenteth her most terribly,
And day and night afflicts with mortall paine,
Because to yield him love she doth deny,
Onee to me yold, not to be yold againe :
But yet by torture he would her constraîne
Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest ;
Till so she doe, she must in doole remaine,
Ne may by living meanes be thence relest :
What boots it then to plaine that cannot be
drest !"

XXVIII.

With this sad hersall of his heavy stresse
The warlike Damzell was empassiond sore,
And said ; " Sir Knight, your cause is nothing
Then is your sorrow certes, if not more ; [lesse
For nothing so much pittie doth implore
As gentle Ladyes helplesse misery :
But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,
I will, with proofe of last extremity,
Deliver her fro thence, or with her for you dy."

XXIX.

" Ah ! gentlest Knight alive," said Scudamore,
" What huge heroicke magnanimity
Dwells in thy bounteous brest ? what couldst
thou more,
If shee were thine, and thou as now am I ?
O spare thy happy daies, and them apply
To better boot ; but let me die that ought ;
More is more losse ; one is enough to dy !"
" Life is not lost," said she, " for which is bought
Endlesse renown ; that, more then death, is to be
sought."

XX.

Thus she at length persuaded him to rise,
And with her wend to see what new successe
Mote him befall upon new enterprise :
His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse,
She gathered up and did about him dresse,
And his forward steed unto him gott :
So forth they both yfere make their progrésse,
And march, not past the moutenance of a shott,
Fill they arriv'd whereas their purpose they did
plott.

XXI.

There they dismounting drew their weapons bold,
And stoutly came unto the Castle gate,
Whereas no gate they found them to withhold,
Nor ward to waite at morne and evening late ;
But in the porch, that did them sore amate,
A flaming fire ymixt with smouldry smoke
And stinking sulphure, that with griesly hate

xxviii. 1. — hersall of his heavy stresse] *Rehearsal*,
relation, of his distress. CHURCH.

xx 5. — dresse,] *Order*, dispose, Fr. *dresser*.
CHURCH.

xx. 8. — not past the moutenance of a shott.]
That is, not further than one may shoot an arrow out of a
bow. CHURCH.

xxi. 4. — ward] *The Porter*. CHURCH.

xxi. 5. — amate,] *Conquer* or *downt* ; probably from
the Spanish *matate*, to kill, in which seuse the Italian
vattare is also used. TOOD.

And dreadfull horror did all entrance choke,
Enforced them their forward footing to revoke.

XXII.

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd,
Ne in that stownd wist how herself to beare ;
For daunger vaine it were to have assayd
That cruell element, which all things feare,
Ne none can suffer to approachen neare :
And, turning backe to Scudamour, thus said ;
" What monstrous enmity provoke we heare ?
Foolhardy as th' Earthes children, the which
Batteill against the gods, so we a god invade. [made

XXIII.

" Daunger without discretion to attempt,
Inglorious, beast-like, is : therefore, Sir Knight,
Aread what course of you is safest dempt,
And how we with our foe may come to fight."
" This is," quoth he, " the dolorous despight,
Which earst to you I playnd : for neither may
This fire be quencht by any witt or might,
Ne yet by any meanes remov'd away ;
So mighty be th' enchauntments which the same
do stay.

XXIV.

" What is there ells but cease these fruitlesse paines,
And leave me to my former languishing !
Faire Amorett must dwell in wicked chaines,
And Scudamore here die with sorrowing !"
" Perdy not so," saide shee ; " for shameful
Yt were t' abandon noble chevisance, [thing
For shewe of perill, without venturing :
Rather, let try extremities of chaunce
Then enterprised praise for dread to disavaunce."

XXV.

Therewith, resolv'd to prove her utmost might,
Her ample shield she threw before her face,
And her swords point directing forward right
Assayld the flame ; the which estesoones gave
And did itselfe divide with equall space, [place,
That through she passed ; as a thunder-bolt
Perceeth the yielding ayre, and doth displace
The soring clouds into sad showres ymolt ;
So to her yold the flames, and did their force revolt.

XXVI.

Whom whenas Scudamour saw past the fire
Safe and untouched, he likewise gan assay
With greedy will and envious desire,
And bad the stubborne flames to yield him way :
But cruell Mulciber would not obey
His threatfull pride, but did the more augment
His mighty rage, and with imperious sway
Him forst, maugre his ferceenes, to relent,
And backe retire all scorcht and pitifully brent.

XXVII.

With huge impatience he inly swelt,
More for great sorrow that he could not pas
Then for the burning torment which he felt ;
That with fell woodnes he effierced was,
And wilfully him throwing on the gras

xxii. 9. — a god] *Mulciber*, the god of fire. CHURCH.

xxv. 9. — yold] *Yielded*, gave way. CHURCH.

Ibid. — revolt.] *Roll back*. Lat. *revolvere* ; or rather
according to the Italian, *rivoltare*, did change, alter,
abate their force. UPRON.

Did beat and bounse his head and brest full sore :
The whiles the Championesse now entred has
The utmost rowme, and past the foremost dore ;
The utmost rowme abounding with all precious
store :

xxxviii.

For, round about, the walls yclothed were
With goodly arras of great maiesty,
Woven with gold and silke so close and nere
That the rich metall lurked privily,
As faining to be hidd from envious eye ;
Yet here, and there, and every where, unwares
It shewd itselfe and shone unwillingly ;
Like to' a discolourd snake, whose hidden snares
Through the greene gras his long bright hurnisht
back declares.

xxxix.

And in those tapets weren fashioned
Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire feate ;
And all of love, and al of lusty-hed,
As seemed by their semblaunt, did entreat :
And eke all Cupids warres they did repeate,
And cruell battailes, which he whilome fought
Gainst all the gods to make his empire great ;
Besides the huge massâcres, which he wrought
On mighty kings and kesaris into thraldome brought.

xxx.

Therein was writt how often thondring Love
Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart,
And, leaving heavens kingdome, here did rove
In straunge disguise, to slake his scalding smart ;
Now, like a ram, faire Helle to pervart,
Now, like a bull, Europa to withdraw :
Ah, how the fearefull Ladies tender hart
Did lively seeme to tremble, when she saw
The huge seas under her t' obay her servaunts law !

xxxxi.

Soone after that, into a golden showre
Himselfe he chaung'd, faire Danaë to vew ;
And through the rooffe of her strong brasen towre
Did raine into her lap an hony dew ;
The whiles her foolish garde, that litle knew
Of such deceit, kept th' yron dore fast bard,
And watcht that none should enter nor issew ;
Vaine was the watch, and hootlesse all the ward,
Whenas the god to golden hew himselfe transfard.

xxxii.

Then was he turnd into a snowy swan,
To win faire Leda to his lovely trade :
O wondrous skill, and sweet wit of the man,
That her in daffadillies sleeping made
From scorching heat her daintie limbes to shade !
Whiles the proud bird, ruffing his fethers wyde
And hrushing his faire brest, did her invade,
She slept ; yet twixt her eielids closely spyde
How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his pryde.

xxxiii.

Then shewd it how the Thebane Semelee,
Deceivd of gealous Iuno, did require
To see him in his soverayne maiestee
Armd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire,
Whens dearely she with death bought her desire.
But faire Alcmena better match did make,
Ioying his love in likenes more entire :
Three nights in'one they say that for her sake
He then did put, her pleasures lenger to partake.

xxxiv.

Twice was he seene in soaring eagles shape,
And with wide wiuges to beat the buxome ayre :
Once, when he with Asterie did scape ;
Againe, whenas the Trojane boy so fayre
He suatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare :
Wondrous delight it was there to behould
How the rude shepherds after him did stare,
Trembling through feare least down he fallen
should,
And often to him calling to take surer hould.

xxxv.

In Satyres shape Antiopa he snatcht ;
And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd :
A shepheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht ;
And like a serpent to the Thracian mayd. [playd,
Whyles thus on earth great Love these pageaunts
The Winged Boy did thrust into his throne,
And, scoffing, thus unto his mother sayd ;
" Lo ! now the heavens obey to me alone,
And take me for their Love, whiles love to earth is
gone."

xxxvi.

And thou, faire Phœbus, in thy colours bright
Wast there enwoven, and the sad distresse
In which that Boy thee plonged, for despight
That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantounesse,
When she with Mars was meynt in ioyfulnessse :
Forthy he thriid thee with a leaden dart
To love fair Daphne, which thee loved lesse ;
Lesse she thee lov'd than was thy iust desart,
Yet was thy love her death, and her death was thy
smart.

xxxvii.

So lovedst thou the lusty Hyacinct ;
So lovedst thou the faire Coronis deare :
Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct ;
Yet both in flowres doe live, and love thee beare
The one a pounce, the other a sweete-breare :
For grieffe whereof, ye mote have lively seene
The god himselfe rending his golden heere,
And breaking quite his garlond ever greene,
With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.

xxxviii.

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne,
The sonne of Climene, he did repent ;
Who, bold to guide the chare. of the Sunne,
Himselfe in thousand peeces foudly rent,
And all the world with flashing fiër brent ;
So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame.
Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content,
Forst him eftsoones to follow other game,
And love a shepherds daughter for his dearest
dame.

xxxix.

He loved Isse for his dearest dame,
And for her sake her cattell fedd awhile,
And for her sake a cowheard vile became
The servant of Admetus, cowheard vile,
Whiles that from heaven he suffered exile.
Long were to tell his other lovely fitt ;

xxxv. 4. *And like a serpent to the Thracian mayd.*] And he was like a serpent when he appeared to, when he made love to, &c. The passage is elliptical, as many passages in Spenser are. UPTON.

xxxvii. 1. — *the lusty Hyacinct ; Lusty is lovely* CHURCH.

Now, like a lyon hunting after spoile ;
Now, like a hag ; now, like a faulcon flit :
All which in that faire arras was most lively writ.

XL.

Next unto him was Neptune pictured,
In his divine resemblance wondrous lyke :
His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed
Dropped with brackish dew ; his threeforkt pyke
He steernly shooke, and therewith fierce did
The raging billowes, that on every syde [stryke
They trembling stood, and made a long broad
dyke,
That his swift charet might have passage wyde
Which foure great hippodames did draw in teme-
wise tyde.

XLI.

His seahorses did seeme to snort amayne,
And from their nosethrilles blow the brynie
streame,
That made the sparckling waves to smoke agayne
And flame with gold ; but the white fony creame
Did shine with silver, and shoot forth his beame :
The god himselfe did pensive seeme and sad,
And hong adowne his head as he did dreame ;
For privy love his brest empierced had,
Ne ought but deare Bisaltis ay could make him glad.

XLII.

He loved eke Iphimedia deare,
And Aeolus faire daughter, Arnè hight,
For whom he turnd himselfe into a steare,
And fedd on fodder to beguile her sight.
Also, to win Deucalions daughter bright,
He turnd himselfe into a dolphin fayre ;
And, like a winged horse, he tooke his flight
To snaky-locke Medusa to repayre,
In whom he got faire Pegasus that fitteth in the
ayre.

XLIII.

Next Saturne was, (but who would ever weene
That sullein Saturne ever weend to love ?
Yet love is sullein, and Satürnlieke seeme,
As he did for Erigone it prove,)
That to a centaure did himselfe transmove.
So prov'd it eke that gratious god of wine,
When, for to compass Philliras hard love,
He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,
And into her faire bosome made his grapes decline.

XLIV.

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,
And gentle pangues, with which he maked meeke
The mightie Mars, to learne his wanton playes ;
How oft for Venus, and how often eek
For many other nymphes, he sore did shreek ;
With womanish teares, and with unwarlike
Privly moystening his horrid cheeke : [smarts,
There was he painted full of burning dartes,
And many wide woundes launched through his inner
partes.

XL. 9. — hippodames] *Sea-horses*, which the poet should rather have written *hippotames*, from the derivation of their name, ἵππος and ἄρσμος. TODD.

XLIII. 6. — gratious] By *gracious* perhaps he means *handsome*. The French, if I mistake not, use the word *gracieux* so. JORTIN.

XLV.

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)
His owne deare mother, (ah ! why should he so !)
Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,
That he might taste the sweet consuming woe,
Which he had wrought to many others moe.
But, to declare the mournfull tragedyes
And spoiles wherewith he all the ground did strow,
More eath to number with how many eyes
High heven beholdes sad lovers nightly theeveryes.

XLVI.

Kings, queenes, lords, ladies, knights, and damsels
gent,
Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort,
And mingled with the raskall rablement,
Without respect of person or of port,
To shew Dan Cupids powre and great effort :
And round about a border was entrayld
Of broken howes and arrowes shivered short ;
And a long bloody river through them rayld,
So lively, and so like, that living sence it fayld.

XLVII.

And at the upper end of that faire rowme
There was an altar built of pretious stoue
Of passing valed and of great renowne,
On which there stood an image all alone
Of massy gold, which with his owne light shone ;
And winges it had with sondry colours dight,
More sondry colours then the proud pavone
Beares in his boasted fan, or Iris bright,
When her discolourd bow she spreads through heven
bright.

XLVIII.

Blyndfold he was ; and in his cruell fist
A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,
With which he shot at randon when him list,
Some headed with sad lead, some with pure gold ;
(Ah ! man, beware how thou those dartes behold !)
A wounded dragon under him did ly,
Whose hideous tayle his left foot did enfold,
And with a shaft was shot through either eye,
That no man forth might draw, ne no man remedye.

XLIX.

And underneath his feet was written thus,
Unto the Victor of the gods this bee :
And all the people in that ample hous
Did to that image bowe their humble knee,
And oft committed fowle idolatree.
That wondrous sight faire Britomart amazd,
Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,
But ever more and more upon it gazd,
The whites the passing brightnes her fraile senccs
dazd.

L.

Tho, as she backward cast her busie eye,
To search each secrete of that goodly sted,
Over the dore thus written she did spye,
Be bold : She oft and oft it over-red,

XLVI. 4. — port,] *Port is carriage*, aspect. Fr. *port*. T. WARTON.

XLVI. 6. — entrayld] *Wrought as in knot-work*, intermingled. Ital. *intralciato*. Fr. *entrelassé*. UPTON.

XLVI. 9. — that living sence it fayld.] That is, it cheated by its perfect resemblance. So *fallere* and *decipere* are used by the Latin poets. UPTON.

Yet could not find what sence it figured :
But whatso were therein or writ or ment,
She was no whit thereby discouraged
From prosecuting of her first intent,
But forward with bold steps into the next roome went.

LI.

Much fayrer then the former was that roome,
And richlier, by many partes, arayd ;
For not with arras made in painefull loome,
But with pure gold it all was overlayd, [playd
Wrought with wilde antickes which their follies
In the rich metall, as they living were :
A thousand monstrous formes therein were made,
Such as false Love doth oft upon him weare ;
For Love in thousand monstrous formes doth oft
appeare.

LII.

And, all about, the glistening walles were hong
With warlike spoiles and with victorious prayes
Of mightie conquerours and captaines strong,
Which were whilome captived in their dayes
To cruell Love, and wrought their owne decayes :
Their swards and speres were broke, and haub-
berques rent,
And their proud girlonds of triumphant bayes
Trodren in dust with fury insolent,
To shew the Victors might and merciless intent.

LIII.

The warlike Mayd, beholding earnestly
The goodly ordinaunce of this rich place,
Did greatly wonder ; ne could satisfy
Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space :
But more she mervaild that no footings trace
Nor might appeard, but wastefull emptiness
And solemne silence over all that place :
Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to possesse
So rich purveyaunce, ne them keepe with careful-
nesse.

LIV.

And, as she lookt about, she did behold
How over that same dore was likewise writ,
Be bolde, Be bolde, and every where, *Be bold* ;
That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it
By any riddling skill or commune wit.
At last she spyde at that rowmes upper end
Another yron dore, on which was writ,
Be not too bold ; whereto though she did bend
Her earnest minde, yet wist not what it might
intend.

LV.

Thus she there wayted until eventyde,
Yet living creature none she saw appeare.
And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde
From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenes dreare ;
Yet nould she d'off her weary arnes, for feare
Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse
Her heavy eyes with natures burdein deare,
But drew herselfe aside in sickennesse,
And her welpointed wepons did about her dresse.

L. 5. — antickes] *Buffoons*, who, in the old English farces, appeared with a blacked face and a patch-work habit. Todd.

CANTO XII.

The Maske of Cupid, and th' enchaun-
ted Chamber are displayd ;
Whence Britomart redcemes laire A-
moret through charmes decayd.

I.

Tho, whenas chearelesse Night ycovered had
Fayre heaven with an universall clowd,
That every wight dismayd with darkenes sad
In silence and in sleepe themselves did shrowd,
She heard a shrilling trompet sound alowd,
Signe of nigh battaill, or got victory :
Nought therewith daunted was her courage prowd
But rather stird to cruell ennity,
Expecting ever when some foe she might desery.

II.

With that, an hideous storme of winde arose,
With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt,
And an earthquake, as if it streight would lose
The worlds foundations from his centre fixt :
A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt
Ensewd, whose noyaunce fild the fearefull sted
From the fourth howre of night untill the sixt ;
Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred.
Though much emmov'd, but stedfast still persc-
vered.

III.

All suddainly a stormy whirlwind blew
Throughout the house, that clapped every dore,
With which that yron wicket open flew,
As it with mighty levers had bene tore ;
And forth yssewd, as on the readie flore
Of some theatre, a grave personage
That in his hand a branch of laurell bore,
With comely haveonr and count'nance sage,
Yclad in costly garments fit for tragicke stage.

IV.

Proceeding to the midst he stil did stand,
As if in minde he somewhat had to say ;
And to the vulgare beckning with his hand,
In signe of silence, as to heare a play,
By lively actions he gan bewray
Some argument of matter passioned ;
Which doen, he backe retyred soft away,
And, passing by, his name discovered,
Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

V.

The noble Mayd still standing all this vewd,
And merveld at his straunge intendment :
With that a ioyous fellowship issewd
Of minstrales making goodly meriment ;
With wanton bards, and ryimers impudent ;
All which together song full chearefully
A lay of loves delight with sweet concent :
After whom marcht a iolly company,
In manner of a Maske, enranged orderly.

VI.

The whiles a most delitious harmony
In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to sound,
That the rare sweetnesse of the melody
The feeble sences wholly did confound,
And the frayle soule in deepe delight nigh drownd ;
And, when it ceast, shrill trompets lowd did bray

v. 7. — concent:] *Harmony*. Todd.

That their report did far away rebound ;
And, when they ceast, it gan againe to play,
The whiles the Maskers marched forth in trim aray.

vii.

The first was Fansy, like a lovely boy
Of rare aspect and beautie without peare,
Matchable either to that ympe of Troy,
Whom Iove did love and chose his cup to beare ;
Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare
To great Alcides, that, whenas he dyde,
He wailed womanlike with many a teare,
And every wood and every valley wyde
He filld with Hylas name ; the nymphes eke Hylas
cryde.

viii.

His garment neither was of silke nor say,
But paynted plumes in goodly order dight,
Like as the sunburnt Indians do aray
Their tawney bodies in their proudest plight :
As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine and
That by his gate might easily appeare ; [light,
For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,
And in his hand a windy fan did beare,
That in the ydle ayre he mov'd still here and there.

ix.

And him beside marcht amorous Desyre,
Who seemd of ryper yeares then th' other swayne,
Yet was that other swayne this elders syre,
And gave him being, commune to them twayne :
His garment was disguysed very vayne,
And his embrodered bonet sat awry : [strayne,
Twixt both his hands few sparks he close did
Which still he blew and kindled busily,
That soone they life conceiv'd, and forth in flames
did fly.

x.

Next after him went Doubt, who was yclad
In a discolour'd cote of straunge disguise,
That at his backe a brode capuccio had,
And sleeves dependaunt Albanesè-wyse ;
He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,
And nyceley trode, as thornes lay in his way,
Or that the flore to shrinke he did avyse ;
And on a broken reed he still did stay
His feeble steps, which shrunk when hand thereon
he lay.

xi.

With him went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged weed
Made of beares skin, that him more dreadfull
made ;
Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need
Straunge horrour to deforme his griesly shade :
A net in th' one hand, and a rusty blade
In th' other was ; this Mischiefe, that Mishap ;
With th' one his foes he threatned to invade,
With th' other he his friends ment to enwrap :
For whom he could not kill he practiz'd to entrap.

xii.

Next him was Feare, all arm'd from top to toe,
Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby,

vii. 1. — say,] Or *sey*, a thin sort of stuff CHURCH.

x. 3. — capuccio] Ital. A *capuchin*, or *capuche* ;
he hood of the cloak. TODD.

x. 4. And sleeves *dependaunt* Albanesè-wyse ;] That

is, according to the fashion of the people of Albania. TODD.

x. 7. — did avyse ;] Did *see* CHURCH.

But feard each shadow moving to or froe ;
And, his owne armes when glittering he did spy
Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,
As ashes pale of hew, and winged heeld ;
And evermore on Daunger fixt his eye,
Gainst whom he alwayes bent a brassen shield,
Which his right hand unarmed fearefully did wield.

xiii.

With him went Hope in rancke, a handsome mayd,
Of chearefull looke and lovely to behold ;
In silken samite she was light arayd,
And her fayre lockes were woven up in gold :
She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold
An holy-water-sprinkle, dipt in dewe,
With which she sprinckled favours manifold
On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe,
Great liking unto many, but true love to feowe.

xiv.

And after them Dissemblance and Suspect
Marcht in one rancke, yet an unequal paire ;
For She was gentle and of milde aspect,
Courteous to all and seeming debonaire,
Goodly adorned and exceeding faire ;
Yet was that all but paynted and purloynd,
And her bright browes were deckt with borrowed
haire ;
Her deeds were forged, and her words false coynd,
And alwayes in her hand two clewes of silke she
twynd :

xv.

But He was fowle, ill favoured, and grim,
Under his eiebrowes looking still askauncp ;
And ever, as Dissemblance laught on him,
He lowrd on Her with daungerous eye-glance,
Shewing his nature in his countenance ;
His rolling eyes did never rest in place,
But walkte each where for feare of hid mischaunce,
Holding a lattis still before his face,
Through which he stil did peep as forward he did
pace.

xvi.

Next him went Griefe and Fury matcht yfere ;
Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,
Downe hanging his dull head with heavy chere,
Yet inly being more then seeming sad :
A paire of pincers in his hand he had,
With which he pinched people to the hart,
That from thenceforth a wretched life they ladd,
In wilfull languor and consuming smart,
Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours
dart.

xvii.

But Fury was full ill appareild
In rage, that naked nigh she did appeare,
With ghastly looks and dreadfull drierihed ;
And from her backe her garments she did teare,
And from her head ofte rente her snarled heare :
In her right hand a firebrand shee did tosse
About her head, still roaming here and there ;
As a dismayed deare in chace embost,
Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way lost.

xiii. 3. — Samite] *Samy*, old French ; a half silk-
stuff, which hath a gloss like satin. CHURCH.

xvii. 5. — her snarled heare :] That is, *entangled*, as
a skain of silk. UPTON.

XVII.

After them went Displeasure and Pleasaunce,
 He looking lompish and full sullein sad,
 And hanging downe his heavy countenance ;
 She chearfull, fresh, and full of ioyauce glad,
 As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad ;
 That euill matched paire they seemd to bee :
 An angry waspe th' one in a viall had,
 Th' other in hers an hony lady-bee.
 Thus marched these six couples forth in faire degree.

XIX.

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame,
 Led of two grysie Villeins, th' one Despight,
 The other cleped Cruelty by name :
 She dolefull Lady, like a dreary spright
 Cald by strong charmes out of eteernal night,
 Had Deathes own ymage figurd in her face,
 Full of sad signes, fearfull to living sight ;
 Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace,
 And with her feeble feete did move a comely pace.

XX.

Her brest all naked, as nett yuory
 Without adorne of gold or silver bright
 Wherewith the craftesman wounts it beautify,
 Of her dew honour was despoyled quight ;
 And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight !)
 Entrenched deep with knyfe accursed keene,
 Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright,
 (The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene,
 That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowy
 cleene :

XXI.

At that wide orifice her trembling hart
 Was drawne forth, and in silver basin layd,
 Quite through transfixt with a deadly dart,
 And in her blood yet steeming fresh embayd.
 And those two Villeins (which her steps upstayd,
 When her weake feete could scarcely hersustaine,
 And fading vitall powres gan to fade,)
 Her forward still with torture did constraîne,
 And evermore encreased her consuming paine.

XXII.

Next after her, the Winged God himselfe
 Came riding on a lion ravenous,
 Taught to obay the menage of that Elfe
 That man and beast with powre impericus
 Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous :
 His blindfold eies he had awhile unbinde,
 That his proud spoile of that same dolorous
 Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kinde ;
 Which seene, he much reioycd in his cruell minde.

XXIII.

Of which ful prowd, himselfe uprearing hye
 He looked round about with sterne disdayne,
 And did suruay his goodly company ;
 And, marshalling the euill-ordered trayne,
 With that the darts which his right hand did
 straine
 Full dreadfully he shooke, that all did quake,
 And clapt on hye his colourd wing's twaine,
 That all his many it affraide did make :
 Tho, blinding him againe, his way he forth did
 take.

xx. 1. — nett] *Pure or clean*; as wine is called to this day *nett*, by the retailers of it; and is also an old poetical expression. *Fr. net.* TODD.

XXIV.

Behinde him was Reproch, Repentaunce, Shame,
 Reproch the first, Shame next, Repent behinde :
 Repentaunce feeble, sorrowfull, and lame ;
 Reproch despightfull, carelesse, and unkinde ;
 Shame most ill-favourd, bestiall, and blinde :
 Shame lowrd, Repentaunce sighd, Reproch did
 scould ; [twinde,
 Reproch sharpe stings, Repentaunce whips en-
 Shame burning brood-yrons in her hand did hold :
 All three to each unlike, yet all made in one mould.

XXV.

And after them a rude confused rout
 Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read :
 Emongst them was sterne Strife; and Anger
 Unquiet Care; and fond Unthriftyhead; [stout;
 Lewd Losse of Time; and Sorrow seeming dead;
 Inconstant Change; and false Disloyalty;
 Consuming Riotise; and guilty Dread
 Of heavenly vengeance; faint Infirmary;
 Vile Poverty; and, lastly, Death with infamy.

XXVI.

There were full many moe like Maladies,
 Whose names and natures I note readen well ;
 So many moe, as there be phantasies
 In wavering womens witt, that none can tell,
 Or paines in love, or punishments in hell :
 All which disguized marcht in masking-wise
 About the Chamber by the Damozell ;
 And then returned, having marcht thrise,
 Into the inner rowme from whence they first did rise.

XXVII.

So soone as they were in, the dore streightway
 Fast locked, driven with that stormy blast
 Which first it opened, and bore all away.
 Then the brave Maid, which all this while was plast
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,
 Issewed forth and went unto the dore
 To enter in, but found it locked fast :
 It vaine she thought with rigorous upore
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore.

XXVIII.

Where force might not avails, there sleights and art
 She cast to use, both fitt for hard emprire :
 Fortly from that same rowme not to depart
 Till morrow next shee did herselfe avize,
 When that same Maske againe should forth arise.
 The morrow next appeared with ioyous cheare,
 Calling men to their daily exercize :
 Then she, as morrow fresh, herselfe did reare
 Out of her secret stand that day for to outweare.

XXIX.

All that day she outwore in wandring
 And gazing on that Chambers ornament,
 Till that againe the second Evening
 Her covered with her sable vestiment,
 Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath blent
 Then, when the second watch was almost past,
 That brasen dore flew open, and in went
 Bold Britomart, as she had late forecast,
 Nether of ydle shoves nor of false charmes aglast

xxviii. 4. — she did herselfe avize,] She bethought herself. CHURCH.

xxx.

So soone as she was entred, rownd about
 Shee cast her eies to see what was become
 Of all those persons which she saw without ;
 But lo ! they streight were vanisht all and some ;
 Ne living wight she saw in all that roome,
 Save that same woefull Lady ; both whose hands
 Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,
 And her small waste girt rownd with yron bands
 Unto a brasen pillour, by the which she stands.

xxxii.

And, her before, the vile Enchaunter sate,
 Figuring straunge characters of his art ;
 With living blood he those characters wrate,
 Dreadfully dropping from her dyng hart,
 Seeming transfixed with a cruell dart ;
 And all perforce to make her him to love.
 Ah ! who can love the worker of her smart !
 A thousand charmes he formerly did prove ;
 Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast hart
 remove.

xxxiii.

Soon as that Virgin Knight he saw in place,
 His wicked bookes in hast he overthrew,
 Not caring his long labours to deface ;
 And, fiercely running to that Lady trew,
 A murderous knife out of his pocket drew,
 The which he thought, for villainous despight,
 In her tormented bodie to embrew :
 But the stout Damzell to him leaping light
 His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his might.

xxxiiii.

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,
 The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,
 And, turning to herselfe his fell intent,
 Unwares it strooke into her snowie chest,
 That little drops empurpled her faire brest.
 Exceeding wroth therewith the Virgin grew,
 Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest,
 And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew,
 To give him the reward for such vile outrage dew.

xxxv.

So mightily she smote him, that to ground [slaine,
 He fell halfe dead ; next stroke him should have
 Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound,
 Dearnly unto her called to abstaine
 From doing him to dy ; for else her paine
 Should be remédiesse ; sith none but hee
 Which wrought it could the same recure againe.
 Therewith she staid her hand, loth staid to bee ;
 For life she him envyde, and long'd revenge to see :

xxxvi.

And to him said ; " Thou wicked man, whose meed
 For so huge mischief and vile villany
 Is death, or if that ought doe death exceed ;
 Be sure that nought may save thee from to dy
 But if that thou this Dame do presently

xxx. 4. — all and some ;] Chaucer's expression. It means, one and all, every one. UPON.

xxxii. 4. — that Lady trew,] Anoret, who was true to Soudamour in resisting the importunate arts and solicitations of Busyrane. CHURCH.

xxxiii. 3. — to herselfe] To Britomart's. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 4. Dearnly] Earnestly. CHURCH.

xxxv. 5. But if] Unless. CHURCH.

Restore unto her health and former state ;
 This doe, and live ; els dye undoubtedly."
 He, glad of life, that lookt for death but late,
 Did yield himselfe right willing to prolong his date :

xxxvi.

And rising up gan straight to over-looke
 Those cursed leaves, his charmes back to reverse :
 Full dreadfull things out of that halefull booke
 He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,
 That horrour gan the Virgins hart to perse,
 And her faire locks up stared stiffe on end,
 Hearing him those same bloody lynes reherse ;
 And, all the while he red, she did extend
 Her sword high over him, if ought he did offend.

xxxvii.

Anon she gan perceive the house to quake,
 And all the dores to rattle round about ;
 Yet all that did not her dismayed make,
 Nor slack her threatfull hand for dangers dout,
 But still with stedfast eye and courage stont
 Abode, to weet what end would come of all :
 At last that mightie chaine, which round about
 Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall,
 And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces small.

xxxviii.

The cruell steele, which thrild her dyng hart,
 Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord ;
 And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart
 Her bleeding brest and riven bowels gor'd,
 Was closed up, as it had not benee sor'd ;
 And every part to safety full sownd,
 As she were never hurt, was soone restord :
 Tho, when she felt herselfe to be unbownd
 And perfect hole, prostrate she fell unto the ground ;

xxxix.

Before faire Britomart she fell prostrate,
 Saying ; " Ah ! noble Knight, what worthy meede
 Can wretched Lady, quitt from wofull state,
 Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed ?
 Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,
 Even immortall prayse and glory wyde,
 Which I your vassall, by your prowess freed,
 Shall through the world make to be notifyde,
 And goodly well advance that goodly well was
 tryde."

xli.

But Britomart, uprearing her from ground,
 Said ; " Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene,
 For many labours more than I have found,
 This, that in safetie now I have you seeene,
 And meane of your deliverance have benee :
 Henceforth, faire Lady, comfort to you take,
 And put away remembrance of late teene ;
 Insted thereof, know that your loving Make
 Hath no lesse griefe endured for your gentle sake."

xlii.

She much was cheard to heare him mentiond,
 Whom of all living wightes she loved best.
 Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond
 Upon th' Enchaunter which had her distrest
 So sore, and with foule outrages opprest :

xxxvii. 4. — dout,] Fear. TODD.

xxxviii. 5. — sor'd ;] That is, hurt, made sore
 CHURCH.

With that great chaine, wherewith not long ygoe
He bound that piteous Lady prisoner now relest,
Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,
And captiue with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

XLII.

Returning back, those goodly rowmes, which erst
She saw so rich and royally arayd,
Now vanisht utterly and cleane subuert
She found, and all their glory quite decayd;
That sight of such a change her much dismayd.
Thence forth descending to that perlous porch,
Those dreadfull flames she also found decayd
And quenched quite like a consumed torch,
That erst all entrens wont so cruelly to scorch.

XLIII.

More easie issew now then entrance late
She found; for now that fained-dreadfull flame,
Which chokt the porch of that enchanted gate
And passage bard to all that thither came,
Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same,
And gave her leave at pleasure forth to passe.
Th' Enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud did
frame
To have eforst the love of that faire Lasse,
Seeing his worke now wasted, deepe engrieved was.

XLIV.

But when the Victoressse arrived there
Where late she left the pensife Scudamore
With her own trusty Squire, both full of feare,
Neither of them she found where she them lore :
Thereat her noble hart was stonisht sore ;
But most faire Amoret, whose gentle spright
Now gan to feede on hope, which she before
Conceived had, to see her own deare Knight,
Being thereof beguyld, was fill with new affright.

XLV.

But he, sad man, when he had long in drede
Awaited there for Britomarts returne,
Yet saw her not, nor signe of her good speed,
His expectation to despair did turne,
Misdeeming sure that her those flames did burne ;
And therefore gan aduize with her old Squire,
Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did
mourne,
Thence to depart for further aide t' enquire :
Where let them wend at will, whilst here I doe
respire.

[When Spenser printed his first three Books of the FAERIE QUEENE, the two lovers, Sir Scudamore and Amoret, have a happy meeting: but afterwards, when he printed the fourth, fifth, and sixth Books, he reprinted likewise the three first Books; and, among other alterations of the lesser kind, he left out the five last stanzas, and made three new stanzas viz. XLIII. XLIV. XLV. *More easie issew now*, &c. By these alterations this third Book not only connects better with the fourth, but the reader is kept in that suspense which is necessary in a well-told story. The stanzas which are mentioned above, as omitted in the second edition, and printed in the first, are the following:

XLIII.

"At last she came unto the place, where late
She left Sir Scudamour in great distresse,

XLIII. 7. ——— delayd] *Removed.* CHERRY.
XLIV 4 ——— lore:] *Left or lost.* Anglo-Sax. *lofen,*
toplofen, perditus. UPTON.

"Twixt dolour and despight half desperate,
"Of his loues succour, of his owne redresse,
"And of the hardie Britomarts successe :
"There on the cold earth him now thrown she found,
"In wilfull anguish, and dead heauinesse,
"And to him cold; whose voices knowen sound
"Soone as he heard, himself he reared light from ground.

XLIV.

"There did he see, that most on earth him ioyd,
"His dearest loue, the comfort of his dayes,
"Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd,
"And wearied his life with dull delays :
"Straight he upstart from the loathed layes,
"And to her ran with hasty eagernesse,
"Like as a deare, that greedily embayes
"In the coole soile, after long thirstiuesse,
"Which he in chace endured hath, now nigh breathlesse.

XLV.

"Lightly he clipt her twixt his armēs twaine,
"And streightly did embrace her body bright,
"Her body, late the prison of sad paine,
"Now the sweet lodge of lone and dear delight :
"But the faire lady, overcome quight
"Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,
"And in sweet ravishment pourd out her spright.
"No word they spake, norCarthy thing they felt,
"But like two senceless stocks in long embracements dwelt.

XLVI.

"Had ye them seene, ye would have surely thought
"That they had been that faire Hermaphrodite,
"Which that rich Roman of white marble wrought,
"And in his costly bath causd to be site.
"So seemd those two, as growne together quite ;
"That Britomart, halfe enuying their blesse,
"Was much empassiond in her gentle sprite,
"And to her selfe oft wishd like happinesse :
"In vaine she wishd, that fate n'ould let her yet possesse

XLVII.

"Thus doe those louers with sweet counternayle,
"Each other of lones bitter fruit despoile,
"But now my teme begins to faint and fayle,
"All woxen weary of their iournall toyle ;
"Therefore I will their sweatie yokes assoyle
"At this same furrowes end, till a new day :
"And ye, fair Swayns, after your long turmoyle,
"Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure play ;
"Now cease your worke; to-morrow is an holy day."

Suppose we take a review of this THIRD BOOK; and, as from the summit of a hill, cast our eye backward on the Fairy ground, which we have travelled over in company with Britomartis, the British heroine, and representative of chaste affection. But remember, that Spenser never sets up for imitation any such character, either in men or women, as haters of matrimony: affection and love to *one*, and only to *one*, is the chaste affection, which he holds up to your view, and to your imitation. Such is Britomartis; who is in love with an unknown Hero, and yet not so unknown, but her passion is justifiable: Such is the love between Sir Scudamore and Amoret. And who can but pity the distressed Florimell, for casting her affections on one, who for a time disregards her?

What a variety of chaste females, and yet with different characters, has our poet brought together into Fairy land? Britomartis, the heroine; the persecuted Florimell; the two sisters Belphebe and Amoret; Belphebe nurtured by Diana in the perfection of maidenhood; and Amoret brought up by Venus in goodly womanhood, to be the example of true love. How miraculously, and yet speciously, is the birth, nurture, and education of Amoret described in the gardens of Adonis? our poet shows himself as good a philosopher as poet, and as well acquainted with all kind of metaphysical lore, as with the romances of Charlemagne and Arthur. And, that the beauty of chaste affection may the better be seen by its opposite, we

have introduced the wanton wife of old Malbecco, and the not very chaste Malecasta. To these may be added those characters, which though out of Nature's ordinary ways, yet are highly proper for a Fairy poem, as the giant and giantess, the three fosters, and the Satyrs; all fit emblems of Lust.

If it be objected to the above remark, that Belphebe is a character set up for admiraſion; and that she envied all the unworthy world, C. v. st. 51.

“That dainty rose the daughter of her morn”—

I answer, that every reader of Spenser knows whom Belphebe, in every circumstance of the allegory, represents; and if she envied all the world, it was because no one in the world was yet found worthy of her: Have patience; our poet has found a magnificent hero worthy of Gloriana, or Belphebe, or this his Fairy Queen, (for these names figure to us the same person,) and GLORY will be allied to MAGNIFICENCE, completed in all the Virtues.

As Homer often mentions his chief hero Achilles, to show that he has this unrelenting hero's resentment still in view; so likewise does Spenser keep still in view the magnificent Prince Arthur, who is in pursuit of Gloriana. There are many historical allusions in this Book: the poet himself hints as much in many places: See the Introduction, st. iv. and v. That *gracious servaunt* there mentioned, is his honoured friend *Timias*: we see the fatal effects of the wound which *Lust* inflicted on him in C. v. st. 20. Queen Elizabeth we may see “in mirrours more than one;” even in Britomartis, though covertly; in Belphebe more apparently. The whole third Canto relates to the English history: Queen Elizabeth is as elegantly complimented by Spenser, as Augustus Cæsar was by Virgil, or Cardinal Hippolito by Ariosto: and though Britomartis is shown her progeny by narration only, yet the poetry is so animated, as to vie with the sixth *Æneid*, or to rival the third Canto of Ariosto; where the heroes themselves, or their idols and images, pass in review. How nervous are the verses, where the son of Arthegal and Britomartis is described? *Like as a lion*, &c. Merlin, rapt in vision, paints as present, though absent, the heroic Malgo: 'Tis all as finely imagined, as expressed: *Behold the Man*, &c. The pathos is very remarkable, where he describes the Britons harassed and conquered by the Saxons,

“Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe”—

This is truly Spenserian both passion and expression.* Presently after, how poetically and prophetically are kingdoms represented by their arms and ensigns! The restoration of the British blood, and the glories of Queen Elizabeth's reign, must in an historical view close the narration. But how finely has the poet contrived to make

Merlin break off? *But yet the end is not!* Intimating there shall be no end of the British glory. I take it for granted that Spenser intended these historical facts as so many openings and hints to the reader, that his poem “a continued allegory” should sometimes be considered in an historical, as well as in a moral, view.

But let us see how this third Book differs from the two former; for in difference, opposition, and contrast, as well as in agreement, we must look for what is beautiful. And here first appears a Woman-Knight, armed with an enchanted spear, like another Pallas,

————— “which in her wrath o'ertrowes
“Heroes and hosts of men.”

There is likewise a most material difference from the two former Books in this respect, namely, that the two several Knights of Holiness and of Temperance succeed in their adventures; but, in this Book, Sir Scudamore, who at the Court of the Fairy Queen undertook to deliver Amoret from the cruel enchanter Busirane, is forced to give over his attempt; when unexpectedly he is assisted by this emblem of Chastity, Britomartis; who releases the fair captive from her cruel tormentor: and thus LOVE is no longer under the cruel vassalage of LUST.

We have in this Book many of the heathen deities introduced as Fairy beings: Cymoente or Cymodoce the Nereid; (for by both these names she is called;) Proteus, Diana, Venus, and Cupid. But this is not peculiar to this Book alone: nor the introducing of characters, which have power to controul the laws of Nature. We have heard of Merlin before, but here we visit him in his own Cave. The Witch is a new character; for Duesaa and Acrasia are Witches of another mould: go and see her pelting habitation, C. vii. st. 6, 7. One would think the poet was painting some poor hovel of a pitiful Irish wretch, whom the rude vulgar stigmatized for a witch on account of her poverty and frowardness. The enchanted House of Busirane is a new piece of machinery, and exceeds, in beauty of description, all the fictions of romance-writers that I ever yet could meet with. The story of Busirane is just hinted in the sixth Canto, to raise the expectation of the reader, and to keep up that kind of suspense which is so agreeable to Spenser's perpetual method and manner. We have seen Braggadochio and Trompart before, which are comick characters, or characters of humour; such likewise are the Squire of Dames, and Malbecco.

The various adventures are remarkably adapted to the Moral. Notwithstanding the distresses of all these faithful lovers, yet by constancy and perseverance they obtain their desired ends: but not altogether in this Book; for the constant Florimell is still left in doleful durance; Amoret is delivered from the cruel Enchanter, but finds not her lover; Britomartis is still in pursuit of Arthegal: And the suspense is kept up, that this Book might connect with the following, and that the various parts might be so judiciously joined as to make *one* Poem.

[UPON.]

* I think this expression improper in the mouth of Merlin: for it is Scriptural. TODD.

THE FOURTH BOOK OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAYNING

THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIENDSHIP.

I.

The rugged forehead, that with grave foresight
Welds kingdomes causes and affaires of state,
My looser rimes, I wote, doth sharply wite
For praising love as I have done of late,
And magnifying lovers deare debate ;
By which fraile youth is oft to follie led,
Through false allurement of that pleasing haite,
That better were in vertues disciplined,
Then with vaine poemes weeds to have their fancies
fed.

II.

Such ones ill iudge of love, that cannot love,
Ne in their frozen hearts feele kindly flame :
Forthy they ought not thing unknowne reprove,
Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame
For fault of few that have abusd the same :
For it of honor and all vertue is [fame,
The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres of
That crowne true lovers with immortall blis,
The meed of them that love, and do not live amisse.

III.

Which whoso list looke backe to former ages,
And call to count the things that then were donne,
Shall find that all the workes of those wise sages,
And brave exploits which great heroës wonne,
In love were either ended or begunne :
Witness the Father of Philosophie,
Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne,
Of love full manie lessons did apply,
The which these Stoicke censours cannot well deny.

IV.

To such therefore I do not sing at all ;
But to that sacred Saint my soveraigne Queene,
In whose chaste brest all bountie naturall
And treasures of true love enlocked beene,
Bove all her sexe that ever yet was seene ;
To her I sing of love, that loveth best,
And best is lov'd of all alive I weene ;
To her this song most fitly is addressd,
The Queene of love, and Prince of peace from
heaven blest.

V.

Which that she may the better deigne to heare,
Do thou, dread Infant, Venus dearing dove,
From her high spirit chase imperious feare,

v. 3. — *imperious feare,*] By *fear* he means an
awful majesty raising fear in those who approach her.
JORTIN.

And use of awfull maiestie remove :
Insted thereof with drops of melting love,
Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee gotten
From thy sweete-smyling Mother from above,
Sprinkle her heart, and haughtie courage soften.
That she may hearken to love, and reade this lesson
often.

CANTO I.

Fayre Britomart saves Amoret :
Duessa discord breeds
Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour :
Their fight and warlike deeds.

I.

Of lovers sad calamities of old
Full many piteous stories doe remaine,
But none more piteous ever was ytolde
Then that of Amorets hart-binding chaine,
And this of Florimels unworthie paine :
The deare compassion of whose bitter fit
My softened heart so sorely doth constraine,
That I with tears full oft doe pittie it,
And oftentimes doe wish it never had bene writ.

II.

For, from the time that Scudamour her bought
In perilous fight, she never joyed day ;
A perilous fight ! when he with force her brought
From twentie Knights that did him all assay ;
Yet fairely well he did them all dismay,
And with great glorie both the Shield of Love
And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away ;
Whom having wedded, as did him behove,
A new unknowen mischiefe did from him remove.

III.

For that same vile Enchauntour Busyran,
The very selfe same day that she was wedded,
Amidst the bridale feast, whilst every man
Surcharg'd with wine were heedlesse and ill-
hedded,
All bent to mirth before the Bride was bedded,
Brought in that Mask of Love which late was
shoven ;
And there the Ladie ill of friends bestedded,
By way of sport, as oft in Maskes is knownen,
Conveyed quite away to living wight unknowen.

IV.

Seven moneths he so her kept in bitter smart,
 Because his sinfull lust she would not serve,
 Untill such time as noble Britomart
 Released her, that else was like to sterve
 Through cruell knife that her deare heart did
 And now she is with her upon the way [kerve :
 Marching in lovely wise, that could deserve
 No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay
 To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

V.

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell
 The diverse usage, and demeanure daint,
 That each to other made, as oft befell :
 For Amoret right fearefull was and faint
 Lest she with blame her honor should attain,
 That everie word did tremble as she spake,
 And everie looke was coy and wondrous quaint,
 And everie limbe that touched her did quake ;
 Yet could she not but courteous countenance to her
 make.

VI.

For well she wist, as true it was indeed,
 That her live's lord and patrone of her health
 Right well deserved, as his dnefull meed,
 Her love, her service, and her utmost wealth :
 All is his justly that all freely deal'th.
 Nathlesse her honor dearer then her life
 She sought to save, as thing reserv'd from stealth ;
 Die had she lever with Enchanters knife
 Then to be false in love, profest a virgine wife.

VII.

Thereto her feare was made so much the greater
 Through fine abusion of that Briton Mayd ;
 Who, for to hide her fained sex the better
 And maske her wounded mind, both did and sayd
 Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,
 That well she wist not what by them to gesse :
 For otherwhiles to her she purpos made
 Of love, and otherwhiles of lustfulness,
 That much she feard his mind would grow to some
 excesse.

VIII.

His will she feard ; for him she surely thought
 To be a man, such as indeed he seemed ;
 And much the more, by that he lately wrought,
 When her from deadly thraldome he redeemed,
 For which no service she too much esteemed ;
 Yet dread of shame and doubt of fowle dishonor
 Made her not yeeld so much as due she deemed.
 Yet Britomart attended duly on her,
 As well became a Knight, and did to her all honor.

IX.

It so befell one evening that they came
 Unto a Castell, lodged there to bee,
 Where many a Knight, and many a lovely Dame,
 Was then assembled deeds of armes to see :
 Amongst all which was none more faire then shee,
 That many of them mov'd to eye her sore.
 The custome of that place was such, that hee,
 Which had no Love nor Lenman there in store,
 Should either winne him one, or lye without the
 dore.

v. 7. ——— quaint.] *Nice or shy* TODD.

viii. 6. ——— doubt] *Fear*. Often thus used by Spenser.
 TODD

X.

Amongst the rest there was a iolly Knight,
 Who, being asked for his Love, avow'd
 That fairest Amoret was his by right,
 And offred that to iustifie aloud.
 The warlike Virgine, seeing his so proud
 And boastfull challenge, wexed inlie wroth,
 But for the present did her anger shrowd ;
 And sayd, her Love to lose she was full loth,
 But either he should neither of them have, or both.

XI.

So fourth they went, and both together giusted ;
 But that same younker soone was overthrowne,
 And made repent that he had rashly lusted
 For thing unlawfull that was not his owne :
 Yet since he seemed valiant, though unknowne,
 She, that no lesse was courteous then stout,
 Cast how to salve, that both the custome showne
 Were kept, and yet that Knight not locked out ;
 That seem'd full hard t' accord two things so far
 in dout.

XII.

The seneschall was cal'd to deceme the right ;
 Whom she requir'd, that first fayre Amoret
 Might be to her allow'd, as to a Knight
 That did her win and free from challenge set :
 Which straight to her was yeelded without let ;
 Then, since that strange Knights Love from him
 was quitted,
 She claim'd that to herselfe, as Ladies det,
 He as a Knight might iustly be admitted ;
 So none should be out shut, sith all of Loves were
 fitted.

XIII.

With that, her glistering helmet she unlaced ;
 Which doft, her golden lockes, that were upbound
 Still in a knot, unto her heeles downe traced,
 And like a silken veile in compasse round.
 About her backe and all her bodie wound :
 Like as the shining skie in summers night,
 What time the dayes with scorching heat abound,
 Is crested all with lines of frie light,
 That it prodigious seemes in common peoples sight.

XIV.

Such when those Knights and Ladies all about
 Beheld her, all were with amazement smit,
 And every one gan grow in secret dont
 Of this and that, according to each wit :
 Some thought that some enchantment faygned it,
 Some, that Bellona in that warlike wise
 To them appear'd, with shield and armour fit ;
 Some, that it was a maske of strange disguise ;
 So diversely each one did sundrie doubts devise.

XV.

But that young Knight, which through her gentle
 Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd, [deed

xi. 7. *Cast how to salve.*] Cast in her mind how to save
 appearances. UPTON.

xi 9. ——— *so far in dout.*] So difficult. СРУЧЕН.

xii. 1. *The seneschall.*] *The household-steward*, the master
 of the ceremonies. Fr. "Le grand *seneschal* de France,"
 synonymous with our "Lord high *steward* of the king's
 household." TODD.

xiii. 6 *Like as the shining skie &c.*] Spenser here gives
 a description of what we call Aurora Borealis. JORDAN.

xiii. 8. ——— *crested*] *Tufted*, plumed, from the Lat.
crystalus ; in allusion to the hairy beams which these
 meteors fling out. UPTON.

Ten thousand thanks did yeeld her for her meed,
 And, doubly overcommen, her ador'd :
 So did they all their former strife accord ;
 And eke fayre Amoret, now freed from feare,
 More franke affection did to her afford ;
 And to her bed, which she was wont forbear,
 Now freely drew, and found right safe assurance
 there :

xvi.

Where all that night they of their loves did treat,
 And hard adventures, twixt themselves alone,
 That each the other gan with passion great
 And grieffull pittie privately bemone.
 The morow next, so soone as Titan shone,
 They both uprose and to their waies them dight :
 Long wandred they, yet never met with none
 That to their willes could them direct aright,
 Or to them tydings tell that mote their harts delight.

xvii.

Lo thus they rode, till at the last they spide
 Two armed Knights that toward them did pace,
 And ech of them had ryding by his side
 A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space ;
 But Ladies none they were, albee in face
 And outward shew faire semblance they did beare ;
 For under maske of beantie and good grace
 Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were,
 That mote to none but to the warie wise appear.

xviii.

The one of them the false Duessa hight,
 That now had chang'd her former wonted hew ;
 For she could d'on so manie shapes in sight,
 As ever could cameleon colours new ;
 So could she forge all colours, save the trew :
 The other no whit better was then shee,
 But that, such as she was, she plaine did shew ;
 Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might bee,
 And dayly more offensive unto each degree :

xix.

Her name was Atè, mother of debate
 And all dissention which doth dayly grow
 Amongst fraile men, that many a publike state
 And many a private oft doth overthrow.
 Her false Duessa, who full well did know
 To be most fit to trouble noble Knights
 Which hunt for honor, raised from below
 Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,
 Where she in darknes wastes her cursed daies and
 nights.

xx.

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is ;
 There, whereas all the plagues and harmes abound
 Which punish wicked men that walke amisse :
 It is a darksome delve farre under ground,
 With thornes and barren brakes environd round,
 That none the same may easily out win ;
 Yet many waies to enter may be found,
 But none to issue forth when one is in :
 For discord harder is to end then to begin.

xxi.

And all within, the riven walls were hung
 With ragged monuments of times forepast,
 All which the sad effects of discord sung :
 There were rent robes and broken scepters plast ;

xx. 6. — out win ;] *Wins* the way out. Todd.

Altars defyld, and holy things defast ;
 Disshivered speares, and shields ytorne in twaine ;
 Great cities ransackt, and strong castles rast ;
 Nations captived, and huge armies slaine :
 Of all which ruines there some relicks did remaine.

xxii.

There was the signe of antique Babylon ;
 Of fatall Thebes ; of Rome that raigned long ;
 Of sacred Salem ; and sad Ilion,
 For memorie of which on high there hong
 The Golden Apple, cause of all their wrong,
 For which the three faire goddesses did strive :
 There also was the name of Nimrod strong ;
 Of Alexander, and his princes five
 Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had got
 alive :

xxiii.

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,
 The which amongst the Lapithees befell ;
 And of the bloodie feast, which sent away
 So many Centaures drunken soules to hell,
 That under great Alcides furie fell :
 And of the dreadfull discord, which did drive
 The noble Argonauts to outrage fell,
 That each of life sought others to deprive,
 All mindlesse of the Golden Fleece, which made
 them strive.

xxiv.

And eke of private persons many moe,
 That were too long a worke to count them all ;
 Some, of sworne friends that did their faith
 forge ;
 Some, of borne brethren prov'd unnaturall ;
 Some, of deare lovers foes perpetuall :
 Witnesse their broken bandes there to be seene,
 Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled all ;
 The monuments whereof there byding beene,
 As plaine as at the first when they were fresh and
 greene.

xxv.

Such was her House within ; but all without,
 The harren ground was full of wicked weedes,
 Which she herselfe had sown all about,
 Now grown great, at first of little seedes,
 The seedes of evill wordes and factious deedes ;
 Which, when to ripenesse due they grown arre,
 Bring forth an infinite increase that breedes
 Tumultuous trouble, and contentious iarre,
 The which most often end in bloudshed and in warre.

xxvi.

And those same cursed seedes doe also serve
 To her for bread, and yeeld her living food :
 For life it is to her, when others sterve
 Through mischievous debate and deadly feod,
 That she may sucke their life and drinke their
 blood, [fed :
 With which she from her childhood had bene
 For she at first was borne of hellish brood,
 And by infernall Furies nourished ;
 That by her monstrous shape might easily be red.

xxvii.

Her face most fowle and filthy was to see,
 With squinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,
 And loathly mouth, unmeete a mouth to bee,
 That thought but gall and venom comprehended,
 And wicked wordes that God and man offendel :

Her lying tongue was in two parts divided,
And both the parts did speake, and both con-
tended;

And as her tongue so was her hart disceided,
That never thought one thing, but doubly stil was
guided.

xxviii.

Als as she double spake, so heard she double,
With matchlesse eares deformed and distort,
Fild with false rumors and seditious trouble,
Bred in assemblies of the vulgar sort,
That still are led with every light report:
And as her eares, so eke her feet were odde,
And much unlike; th' one long, the other short,
And both misplast; that, when th' one forward
The other haeke retired and contrarie trode. [yode,

xxix.

Likewise unequal were her handes twaine;
That one did reach, the other pusht away;
That one did make, the other mard againe,
And sought to bring all things unto decay;
Whereby great riches, gathered manie a day,
She in short space did often bring to nought,
And their possessions often did dismay:
For all her studie was and all her thought
How she might overthrow the things that Concord
wrought.

xxx.

So much her malice did her might surpas,
That even th' Almighty selfe she did maligne,
Because to man so mercifull he was,
And unto all his creatures so benigne,
Sith she herselfe was of his grace indigne:
For all this worlds faire workmanship she tride
Unto his last confusion to bring,
And that great golden chaine quite to divide,
With which it blessed Concord hath together tide.

xxxi.

Such was that Hag, which with Duessa roade;
And, serving her in her malicious use
To hurt good Knights, was, as it were, her baude
To sell her borrowed beautie to abuse: [huice,
For though, like withered tree that wanteth
She old and crooked were, yet now of late
As fresh and fragrant as the floure-deluce
She was become, by change of her estate,
And made full goodly ioyance to her new-found
mate:

xxxii.

Her mate, he was a iollie youthfull Knight
That bore great sway in armes and chivalrie,
And was indeede a man of mielde might;
His name was Blandamour, that did describe
His fickle mind full of inconstancie:
And now himselfe he fitted had right well
With two companions of like qualitie,
Faithlesse Duessa, and false Paridell,
That whether were more false, full hard it is to tell.

xxxiii.

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew
From farre episde the famous Britomart,

xxvii. 3. ——— disceided,] *Cleft in two.* Lat. *discindo.*
CHURCH.

xxviii. 2. ——— *matchlesse*] That is, not paired or
alike. CHURCH.

xxx. 5. ——— *indigne*:] *Unworthy, undeserving.* Lat.
indignus. CHURCH.

Like Knight adventurous in outward vew,
With his faire paragon, his conquests part,
Approching nigh; eftsoomes his wanton hart
Was tickled with delight, and iesting sayd;
“Lo! there, Sir Paridel, for your desart,
Good lucke presents you with yond lovely Mayd,
For pitie that ye want a fellow for your ayd.”

xxxiv.

By that the lovely paire drew nigh to hound:
Whom whenas Paridel more plaine beheld,
Albee in heart he like affection fond,
Yet mindfull how he late by one was fel [weld,
That did those armes and that same scutebion
He had small lust to buy his Love so deare,
But answered; “Sir, him wise I never held,
That, having once escaped perill neare,
Would afterwards afresh the sleeping evill reare.

xxxv.

“This Knight too late his manhood and his might
I did assay, that me right dearely cost;
Ne list I for revenge provoke new fight,
Ne for light Ladies love, that soone is lost.”
The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be crost,
“Take then to you this Dame of mine,” quoth
“And I, without your perill or your cost, [hee,
Will challenge yond same other for my fee.”
So forth he fiercely prickt, that one him searce could
see.

xxxvi.

The warlike Britonesse her soone address,
And with such uncoutch welcome did receive
Her fayned paramour, her forced guest,
That, being forst his saddle soone to leave,
Himselfe he did of his new Love deceave;
And made himselfe th' ensample of his follie.
Which done, she passed forth, not taking leave,
And left him now as sad as whilome iollie,
Well warn'd to beware with whom he dar'd to
dallie.

xxxvii.

Which when his other companie beheld,
They to his succour ran with readie ayd;
And, finding him unable once to weld,
They reared him on horse-baeke and upstaid,
Till on his way they had him forth conveyd:
And all the way, with wondrous griefe of mynd
And shame, he shewd himselfe to be dismayd
More for the Love which he had left behynd,
Then that which he had to Sir Paridel resynd.

xxxviii.

Nathlesse he forth did march, well as he might,
And made good semblance to his companie,
Dissembling his disease and evill plight;
Till that ere long they chaunced to espie
Two other Knights, that towards them did ply
With speedie course, as bent to charge them new.
Whom whenas Blandamour approaching nie
Perceiv'd to he such as they seemd in vew,
He was full wo, and gan his former griefe renew.

xxxix.

For th' one of them he perfectly describe
To be Sir Scudamour, (hy that he bore
The god of Love with wings displayed wide),
Whom mortally he hated evermore,
Both for his worth, that all men did adore,

And eke because his Love he wonne by right :
Which when he thought, it grieved him full sore,
That, through the bruises of his former fight,
He now unable was to wreake his old despight.

XL.

Forthy he thus to Paridel bespake ;
" Faire Sir, of friendship let me now you pray,
That as I late adventured for your sake,
The hurts whereof me now from battell stay,
Ye will me now with like good turme repay,
And iustifie my cause on yonder Knight."
" Ah ! Sir," said Paridel, " do not dismay
Yourselfe for this ; myselfe will for you fight,
As ye have done for me : The left hand rubs the
right."

XLI.

With that he put his spurrus unto his steed,
With speare in rest, and toward him did fare,
Like shaft out of a bow preventing speed,
But Scudamour was shortly well aware
Of his approach, and gan himselfe prepare
Him to receive with entertainment meete.
So furiously they met, that either bare
The other downe under their horses feete,
That what of them became themselves did scarcely
weete.

XLII.

As when two billowes in the Irish soundes,
Forcibly driven with contrarie tydes,
Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes
With roaring rage ; and dashing on all sides,
That filleth all the sea with fome, dividyes
The doubtfull current into divers wayes :
So fell those two in spight of both their prydes ;
But Scudamour himselfe did soone uprayse,
And, mounting light, his foe for lying long upbrayes :

XLIII.

Who, rolled on an heape, lay still in sround
All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle ;
Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground
Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle :
Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle,
With busie care they strove him to awake,
And doft his helmet, and undid his mayle :
So much they did, that at the last they brake
His slomber, yet so mazed that he nothing spake.

XLIV.

Which whenas Blandamour beheld, he said ;
" False faitour Scudamour, that hast by slight
And foule advantage this good Knight dismayd,
A Knight much better then thyselfe behight,
Well falles it thee that I am not in plight
This day, to wreake the damage by thee donne !
Such is thy wont, that still when any Knight
Is weakned, then thou doest him overronne :
So hast thou to thyselfe false honour often wonne."

XLV.

[He little answer'd, but in manly heart
His mightie indignation did forbear ;
Which was not yet so secret, but some part
Thereof did in his frowning face appeare :

Like as a gloomie cloud, the which doth beare
An hideous storme, is by the northerne blast
Quite overblowne, yet doth not passe so cleare
But that it all the skie doth overcast
With darknes dred, and threatens all the world to
wast.

XLVI.

" Ah ! gentle Knight," then false Duessa sayd,
" Why do ye strive for Ladies love so sore,
Whose chiefe desire is love and friendly aid
Mougst gentle Knights to nourish evermore !
Ne be ye wroth, Sir Scudamour, therefore,
That she your Love list love another Knight,
Ne do yourselfe dislike a whit the more ;
For love is free, and led with selfe-delight,
Ne will enforced be with maisterdome or might."

XLVII.

So false Duessa : but vile Atè thus ;
" Both foolish Knights, I can but laugh at both,
That strive and storme with sturre outrageous
For her, that each of you alike doth loth,
And loves another, with whom now she go'th
In lovely wise, and sleepes, and sports, and playes ;
Whilst both you here with many a cursed oth
Swear she is yours, and sturre up bloudie frayes,
To win a willow hough, whilst other weares the
hayes."

XLVIII.

" Vile Hag," said Scudamour, " why dost thou lye,
And falsly seekst a virtuous wight to shame ?"
" Fond Knight," said she, " the thing that with
this eye
I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same ?"
" Then tell," quoth Blandamour, " and feare no
blame ;
Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre whoso it heares."
" I saw," quoth she, " a straunger Knight, whose
name
I wote not well, but in his shield he beares
(That well I wote) the heads of many broken
speares ;

XLIX.

" I saw him have your Amoret at will ;
I saw him kisse ; I saw him her embrace ;
I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill ;
All, manie nights ; and manie by in place
That present were to testifie the case."
Which whenas Scudamour did heare, his heart
Was thrild with inward grieve : As when in chace
The Parthian strikes a stag with shivering dart,
The beast astonisht stands in midst of his smart ;

So stood Sir Scudamour when this he heard,
Ne word he had to speake for great dismay,
But lookt on Glaucè grim, who woxe afeard
Of outrage for the words which she heard say,
Albee untrue she wist them by assay.
But Blandamour, whenas he did espie
His change of cheere that anguish did bewray,
He woxe full blithe, as he had got thereby,
And gan thereat to triumph without victorie.

LI.

" Lo ! recreant," said he, " the fruitlesse end
Of thy vaine boast, and spoile of love misgotten,

XLVI. 1. *Ah ! gentle Knight,*] This is addressed to Blandamour. CHURCH.

XL. 3. — preventing] *Coming before.* Lat. *prevenio.* CHURCH.

XLV. 4. — behight ;] *Reckoned, esteemed.* CHURCH.

Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost
shend,
And all true lovers with dishonor blotten :
All things not rooted well will soone be rotten."
"Fy, fy, false Knight," then false Duessa cryde,
"Unworthy life, that love with guile hast gotten ;
Be thou, whereever thou do go or ryde,
Loathed of Ladies all, and of all Knights defyde !"

LII.

But Scudamour, for passing great despight,
Staid not to answer ; scarcely did refraine
But that in all those Knights and Ladies sight
He for revenge had guiltlesse Glaucé slaine :
But, being past, he thus began amaine ; [Knight,
"False traitour Squire, false Squire of falsest
Why doth mine hand from thine avenge abstaine,
Whose lord hath done my love this foule despight !
Why do I not it wreake on thee now in my might !

LIII.

"Discourteous, disloyall Britomart,
Untrue to God, and unto man uniuist !
What vengeance due can equal thy desart,
That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust
Defild the pledge committed to thy trust !
Let ugly shame and endlesse infamy
Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust !
Yet thou, false Squire, his fault shall deare aby,
And with thy punishment his penance shalt supply."

LIV.

The aged dame him seeing so enraged
Was dead with feare ; nathlesse as neede required
His flaming furie sought to have assuaged
With sober words, that sufferance desired
Till time the tryall of her truth expyred ;
And evermore sought Britomart to cleare :
But he the more with furious rage was fyred,
And thrise his hand to kill her did upreare,
And thrise he drew it backe : so did at last for-
beare.

CANTO II.

Blandamour winnes false Florimell ;
Paridell for her strives.
They are accorded: Agonè
Doth lengthen her Sonnes lives.

I.

FIREBRAND of hell first tynd in Phlegeton
By thousand Furies, and from thence outthrown
Into this world to worke confusion
And set it all on fire by force unknowen,
Is wicked Discord ; whose small sparkes once
blowen
None but a god or godlike man can slake : [growen
Such as was Orpheus, that, when strife was
Amongst those famous ympes of Greece, did take
His silver harpe in hand and shortly friends them
make :

LIII. 1. *Discourteous, disloyall*] *Disloyall* is used as the Italian poets use *Disfide*, unfaithful, perfidious, &c. UPTON.

LIV. 5. *Till time the tryall of her truth expyred* ;] That is, all time should bring forth or discover the innocence and sincerity of Britomart. CHURCH.

II.

Or such as that celestiall Psalmist was,
That, when the wicked feend his lord tormented,
With heavenly notes, that did all other pas,
The outrage of his furious fit relented.
Such musicke is wise words with time concented,
To moderate stiffe mindes disposd to strive :
Such as that prudent Romane well invented ;
What time his people into partes did rive,
Them reconcyld againe, and to their homes did drive.

III.

Such us'd wise Glaucé to that wrathfull Knight,
To calme the tempest of his troubled thought :
Yet Blandamour, with termes of foule despight,
And Paridell her scorn'd, and set at nought,
As old and crooked and not good for ought.
Both they unwise, and warelesse of the evill
That by themselves unto themselves is wrought,
Through that false Witch, and that foule aged
Drevill ;
The one a feend, the other an incarnate devill.

IV.

With whom as they thus rode accompanide,
They were encountred of a lustie Knight
That had a goodly Ladie by his side,
To whom he made great dalliance and delight :
It was to weet the bold Sir Ferraugh high,
He that from Braggadochio whilome rft
The snowy Florimell, whose beautie bright
Made him seeme happie for so glorious theft ;
Yct was it in due triall but a wandring weft.

V.

Which whenas Blandamour, whose fancie light
Was alwaies flitting as the wavering wind
After each Beautie that appeared in sight,
Beheld ; eftscones it prickt his wanton mind
With sting of lust that reasons eye did blind,
That to Sir Paridell these words he sent ;
"Sir Knight, why ride ye dumpish thus behind,
Since so good fortune doth to you present
So fayre a spoyle, to make you ioyous meriment !"

VI.

But Paridell, that had too late a tryall
Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine,
List not to hearken, but made this faire denyall ;
"Last turne was mine, well proved to my paine ;
This now be yours ; God send you better gaine !"
Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in scorne,
Fiercely forth prickt his steed as in disdaine
Against that Knight, ere he him well could torne ;
By meanes whereof he hath him lightly overborne.

VII.

Who, with the sudden stroke astonisht sore,
Upon the ground awhile in slomber lay ;
The whiles his Love away the other bore,
And, shewing her, did Paridell upbray ;
"Lo ! sluggish Knight, the victors happie pray !
So fortune friends the hold." Whom Paridell
Seeing so faire indeede, as he did say,

II. 2. — his lord] King Saul, 1 Sam. xvi. 23. CHURCH.
II. 3. — pas,] *Exceed or excell.* TODD.
II. 7. — that prudent Romane &c.] *Agrippa Menes* JORTIN.
III. 8. — Drevill ;] *A driveller, a fool.* UPTON.
VII. 6. — friends] *Befriends.* CHURCH.

His hart with secret envie gan to swell,
And inly grudge at him that he had sped so well.

viii.

Nathlesse proud man himselfe the other deemed,
Having so peerlesse paragon ygot :
For sure the fayrest Florimell him seemed
To him was fallen for his happie lot,
Whose like alive on earth he weened not :
Therefore he her did court, did serve, did wooe,
With humblest suit that he imagine mot,
And all things did devise, and all things dooe,
That might her love prepare, and liking win there-
toot.

ix.

She, in regard thereof, him recompenset
With golden words and goodly countenance,
And such fond favours sparingly dispenset :
Sometimes him blessing with a light eye-glance,
And eoy looks tempring with loose dalliance ;
Sometimes estranging him in sterner wise ;
That, having cast him in a foolish trance,
He seemed brought to hed in Paradise,
And prov'd himselfe most foole in what he seem'd
most wise.

x.

So great a mistresse of her art she was,
And perfectly practiz'd in womans craft,
That though therein himselfe he thought to pas,
And by his false allurements wylie draft
Had thousand women of their love heraft,
Yet now he was surpriz'd : for that false Spright,
Which that same Witch had in this forme engraft,
Was so expert in every subtile slight,
That it could overreach the wisest earthly wight.

xi.

Yet he to her did dayly service more,
And dayly more deceived was thereby ;
Yet Paridell him envied therefore,
As seeming plast in sole felicity :
So blind is lust false colours to desery.
But Atè soone discovering his desire,
And finding now fit opportunity
To stirre up strife twixt love and spight and ire,
Did privily put coles unto his secret fire.

xii.

By sundry meanes thereto she prickt him forth ;
Now with remembrance of those spightfull
speaches,
Now with opinion of his owne more worth,
Now with recounting of like former breaches
Made in their friendship, as that Hag him teaches :
And ever, when his passion is allayd,
She it revives, and new occasion reaches :
That, on a time as they together way'd,
He made him open challenge, and thus boldly sayd ;

xiii.

Too boastfull Blandamour ! too long I beare
The open wrongs thou doest me day by day :
Well know'st thou, when we friendship first did
swear,
The covenant was, that every spoyle or pray
Should equally be shard betwixt us tway :
Where is my part then of this Ladie bright,
Whom to thyselfe thou takest quite away ?

Render therefore therein to me my right,
Or answer for thy wrong as shall fall out in fight."

xiv.

Exceeding wroth therat was Blandamour,
And gan this bitter answer to him make ;
" Too foolish Paridell ! that fayrest floure
Wouldst gather faime, and yet no paines wouldst
But not so casie will I her forsake ; [take :
This hand her womne, this hand shall her defend."
With that they gan their shivering speares to
shake,
And deadly points at eithers breast to hend,
Forgetfull each to have bene ever others frend.

xv.

Their frie steedes with so untamed forse
Did heare them both to fell avenges end,
That both their speares with pitilesse remorse
Through shield and mayle and haberion did wend,
And in their flesh a griesly passage rend,
That with the furie of their owne affret
Each other horse and man to ground did send ;
Where, lying still awhile, both did forget
The perilous present stownd in which their lives
were set.

xvi.

As when two warlike brigandines at sea,
With murderous weapons arm'd to cruell fight,
Do meete together on the watry lea,
They stemme eeh other with so fell despight,
That with the shooke of their owne heedlesse might
Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh asonder ;
They which from shore behold the dreadful sight
Of flashing fire, and heare the ordnance thonder,
Do greatly stand amaz'd at such unwonted wonder.

xvii.

At length they both upstart in amaze,
As men awaked rashly out of dreme,
And round about themselves a while did gaze ;
Till seeing her, that Florimell did seme,
In doubt to whom she victorie should deeme,
Therewith their dulled sprights they edgd anew,
And, drawing both their swords with rage extreme,
Like two mad mastiffes each on other flew,
And shields did share, and mailles did rash, and
helmes did hev.

xviii.

So furiously each other did assayle,
As if their soules they would attonce have rent
Out of their brests, that streames of bloud did rayle
Adowne, as if their springs of life were spent ;
That all the ground with purple bloud was sprent,
And all their armours staynd with bloudie gore ;
Yet scarcely once to breath would they relent,
So mortall was their malice and so sore
Become, of fayned friendship which they vow'd
afore.

xix.

And that which is for Ladies most besitting,
To stint all strife, and foster friendly peace,
Was from those Dames so farre and so unfitting,
As that, instead of praying them sureease,
They did much more their cruelty increase ;
Bidding them fight for honour of their love,
And rather die then Ladies cause release : [move,
With which vaine termes so much they did them
That both resolv'd the last extremities to prove

XX.
There they, I weene, would fight untill this day,
Had not a Squire, even he the Squire of Dames,
By great adventure travelled that way ;
Who seeing both bent to so bloudy games,
And both of old well knowing by their names,
Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their debate :
And first laide on those Ladies thousand blames,
That did not seeke t'appease their deadly hate,
But gazed on their harmes, not pitying their estate :

XXI.
And then those Knights he humbly did beseech
To stay their hands, till he awhile had spoken :
Who lookt a little up at that his speech,
Yet would not let their battell so be broken,
Both greedie fiens on other to be wroken.
Yet he to them so earnestly did call,
And them coniu'r'd by some well known token,
That they at last their wrothfull hands let fall,
Content to heare him speake, and glad to rest withall.

XXII.
First he desir'd their cause of strife to seee :
They said, it was for love of Florimell. [bee,
"Ah ! gentle Knights," quoth he, "how may that
And she so farre astray, as none can tell ?"
"Fond Squire," full auyry then sayd Paridell,
"Seest not the Ladie there before thy face ?"
He looked backe, and, her avising well,
Weend, as he said, by that her outward grace
That fayrest Florimell was present there in place.

XXIII.
Glad man was he to see that ioyous sight,
For none alive but ioy'd in Florimell,
And lowly to her lowting thus behight ;
"Fayrest of faire, that fairenesse doest excell,
This happie day I have to greeete you well,
In which you safe I see, whom thousand late
Misdoubted lost through mischief that befell ;
Long may you live in health and happie state !"
She hile answer'd him, but lightly did aggrate.

XXIV.
Then, turning to those Knights, he gan anew ;
"And you, Sir Blandamour, and Paridell,
That for this Ladie present in your vew
Have rays'd this cruell warre and outrage fell,
Certes, me seemes, bene not advised well ;
But rather ought in friendship for her sake
To ioyne your force, their forces to repell
That seeke perforce her from you both to take,
And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph to make."

XXV.
Thereat Sir Blandamour, with countenance sterne
All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake ;
"Aread, thou Squire, that I the man may learne,
That dare fro me thinke Florimell to take !"
"Not one," quoth he, "but many doe partake
Herein ; as thus : It lately so befell,
That Satyran a Girdle did uptake
Well knowne to appertaine to Florimell,
Which for her sake he wore, as him besemed well.

xxii. 7. — avising] Avising is looking upon. Fr. Aviser, to regard with circumspection. Todd.

xxiii. 3. — behight ;] Spoke, or addressed her. Upton.

XXVI.
"But, whenas she herselfe was lost and gone,
Full many Knights, that loved her like deare,
Thereat did greatly grudge, that he alone
That lost faire Ladies ornament should weare,
And gan therefore close spight to him to beare ;
Which he to slun, and stop vile evies sting,
Hath lately caus'd to be proclaim'd each where
A solemne feast, with publike turneyng,
To which all Knights with them their Ladies are
to bring :

XXVII.
"And of them all she, that is fayrest found,
Shall have that golden Girdle for reward ;
And of those Knights, who is most stout on ground,
Shall to that fairest Ladie be prefard.
Since therefore she herselfe is now your ward,
To you that ornament of hers pertaines,
Against all those that challenge it, to gard,
And save her honour with your ventrous paines ;
That shall you win more glory than ye here find
gaines."

XXVIII.
When they the reason of his words had hard,
They gan abate the rancour of their rage,
And with their honours and their loves regard
The furious flames of malice to asswage.
Tho each to other did his faith engage,
Like faithfull friends thenceforth to ioyne in one
With all their force, and battell strong to wage
Gainst all those Knights, as their professed fone,
That challeng'd ought in Florimell, save they alone.

XXIX.
So, well accorded, forth they rode together
In friendly sort, that lasted but a while ;
And of all old dislikes they made faire weather :
Yet all was forg'd and spread with golden foyle,
That under it hidde hate and hollow guyle.
Ne certes can that friendship long endure,
However gay and goodly be the style,
That doth ill cause or evill end enure :
For vertue is the hand that bindeth harts most sure.

XXX.
Thus as they marched all in close disguise
Of fayned love, they chaunst to overtake
Two Knights that lincked rode in lovely wise,
As if they secret counsels did partake ;
And each not farre behinde him had his Make,
To weete, two Ladies of most goodly hew,
That twixt themselves did gentle purpose make,
Unmindfull both of that discordfull crew,
The which with speedie pace did after them pursue.

XXXI.
Who, as they now approached nigh at hand,
Deeming them doubtlie as they did appeare,
They sent that Squire afore, to understand
What mote they be : who, viewing them more
neare,
Returned readie newes, that those same weare
Two of the prowtest Knights in Faery Lond ;
And those two Ladies their two lovers deare ;
Couragious Cambell, and stout Triamond,
With Canacee and Cambine linckt in lovely bond.

xxix. 8. — enure :] Practise or use. Todd.

xxxii.
 Whylome, as antique stories tellen us,
 Those two were foes the felonest on ground,
 And battell made the dreeddest dangerous
 That ever shrilling trumpet did resound ;
 Though now their acts be no where to be found,
 As that renowned Poet them compyled
 With warlike numbers and heroicke sound,
 Dan Chaucer, Well of English undefyled,
 On Fames eternall beadroll worthie to be fyled.

xxxiii.
 But wicked Time that all good thoughts doth waste,
 And workes of noblest wits to nought out-weare,
 That famous monument hath quite defaste,
 And robd the world of treasure endlesse deare,
 The which mote have enriched all us heare.
 O cursed Eld, the canker-worme of writs !
 How may these rimes, so rude as doth appeare,
 Hope to endure, sith workes of heavenly wits
 Are quite devourd, and brought to nought by little
 bits !

xxxiv.
 Then pardon, O most sacred happie Spirit,
 That I thy labours lost may thus revive,
 And steale from thee the meede of thy due merit,
 That none durst ever whilst thou wast alive,
 And, being dead, in vaine yet many strive :
 Ne dare I like ; but, through infusion sweete
 Of thine owne spirit which doth in me survive,
 I follow here the footing of thy feete,
 That with thy meaning so I may the rather meete.

xxxv.
 Cambelloes sister was fayre Canacee,
 That was the learnedst Ladie in her dayes,
 Well scene in everie science that mote bee,
 And every secret worke of Nature's wayes ;
 In wittie riddles ; and in wise soothsayes ;
 In power of herbes ; and tunes of beasts and
 burds ;
 And, that augmented all her other prayse,
 She modest was in all her deedes and words,
 And wondrous, chast of life, yet lov'd of Knights
 and Lords.

xxxvi.
 Full many Lords and many Knights her loved,
 Yet she to none of them her liking lent,
 Ne ever was with fond affection mov'd,
 But rul'd her thoughts with goodly government,
 For dread of blame and honours blemishment ;
 And eke unto her lookes a law she made,
 That none of them once out of order went,
 But, like to warie centonels well stayd,
 Still watcht on every side, of secret foes afrawd.

xxxvii.
 So much the more as she refus'd to love,
 So much the more she loved was and sought,
 That oftentimes unquiet strife did move
 Amongst her lovers, and great quarrels wrought ;
 That oft for her in bloudie armes they fought.
 Which whenas Cambell, that was stout and wise,
 Perceiv'd would breede great mischiefe, he be-
 How to prevent the perill that mote rise, [thought
 And turne both him and her to honour in this wise.

xxxviii. 4. ——— *treasure*] The old mode of spelling
treasure. TODD.

xxxviii.
 One day, when all that troupe of warlike woers
 Assembled were, to weet whose she should bee,
 All mightie men and dreadfull derring doers,
 (The harder it to make them well agree,)
 Amongst them all this end he did decree ;
 That, of them all which love to her did make,
 They by consent should chose the stoutest three
 That with himselfe should combat for her sake,
 And of them all the victour should his Sister take.

xxxix.
 Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was bold,
 And courage full of haughtie hardiment,
 Approved oft in perils manifold,
 Which he atchiev'd to his great ornament :
 But yet his Sisters skill unto him lent
 Most confidence and hope of happie speed,
 Conceived by a Ring which she him sent,
 That, amongst the manie vertues which we reed,
 Had power to staunch all wounds that mortally did
 bleed.

xl.
 Well was that Rings great vertue knowne to all ;
 That dread thereof, and his redoubted might,
 Did all that youthly rout so much appall,
 That none of them durst undertake the fight :
 More wise they weend to make of love delight
 Then life to hazard for faire Ladies looke ;
 And yet uncertaine by such outward sight,
 Though for her sake they all that perill tooke,
 Whether she would them love, or in her liking
 brooke.

xli.
 Amongst those Knights there were three Brethren
 Three bolder brethren never were yborne, [bold,
 Borne of one mother in one happie mold,
 Borne at one burden in one happie morne ;
 Thrise happie mother, and thrise happie morne
 That bore three such, three such not to be fond
 Her name was Agape, whose children werne
 All three as one ; the first hight Priamond,
 The second Dyamond, the youngest Triamond.

xlii.
 Stout Priamond, but not so strong to strike ;
 Strong Diamond, but not so stout a Knight ;
 But Triamond was stout and strong alike :
 On horsebacke used Triamond to fight,
 And Priamond on foote had more delight ;
 But horse and foote knew Diamond to wield :
 With curtaxe used Diamond to smite,
 And Triamond to handle speare and shield,
 But speare and curtaxe both usd Priamond in field

xliii.
 These three did love each other dearely well,
 And with so firme affection were allyde,
 As if but one soule in them all did dwell,
 Which did her powre into three parts divyde ;
 Like three faire branches budding farre and wide
 That from one roote deriv'd their vitall sap :
 And, like that roote that doth her life divide,
 Their mother was ; and had full blessed hap
 These three so noble babes to bring forth at one
 clap.

xxxviii. 3. ——— *derring doers*,] *Daring* and *bold doers*
 UFTON.

xliii. 9. ——— *at one clap*.] That is, at once. Lat. *unctu*.
 CHURCH.

XLIV.

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill
Of secret things, and all the powres of nature,
Which she by art could use unto her will,
And to her service bind each living creature,
Through secret understanding of their feature.
Thereto she was right faire, whenso her face
She list discover, and of goodly stature ;
But she, as Feyes are wont, in privie place
Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests wyld to
space.

XLV.

There on a day a noble youthly Knight,
Seeking adventures in the salvage wood,
Did by great fortune get of her the sight,
As she sate carelesse by a cristall flood
Combing her golden lockes, as seemd her good ;
And unawares upon her laying hold,
That strove in vaine him long to have withstood,
Oppressed her, and there (as it is told)
Got these three lovely babes, that prov'd three
champions bold :

XLVI.

Which she with her long fostred in that wood,
Till that to ripenesse of mans state they grew :
Then, shewing forth signes of their fathers blood,
They loved armes, and knighthood did ensue,
Seeking adventures where they anie knew.
Which when their mother saw, she gan to dout
Their safetie ; leas by searching daungers new,
And rash provoking perils all about,
Their dayes mote be abridged through their corage
stout.

XLVII.

Therefore desirous th' end of all their dayes
To know, and them t' enlarge with long extent,
By wondrous skill and many hidden wayes
To the Three Fatal Sisters House she went.
Farre under ground from tract of living went,
Downe in the bottome of the deepe Abyesse,
Where Demogorgon in dull darknesse pent
Farre from the view of gods and heavens bliss
The hideous Chaos keeps, their dreadfull dwelling
is.

XLVIII.

There she them found all sitting round about
The direfull Distaffe standing in the mid,
And with unwearied fingers drawing out
The lines of life, from living knowledge hid.
Sad Clotho held the rocke, the whiles the thrid
By griesly Lachesis was spun with paine,
That cruell Atropos eftsoones undid,
With cursed knife cutting the twist in twaine :
Most wretched men, whose dayes depend on thrids
so vaine !

XLIX.

She, them saluting there, by them sate still
Beholding how the thrids of life they span :

XLIV. 5. ——— feature.] *Fashion, make.* CHURCH.
XLIV. 9. ——— to space.] *To walk, or roam about.* Lat.
epitior. TODD.

XLVII. 5. ——— from tract of living went,] *Of the way
or path of any living creature.* UPSON.

XLVII. 9. *The hideous Chaos keeps,*] *That is, presides
over Chaos.* CHURCH.

And when at last she had beheld her fill,
Trembling in heart, and looking pale and wan,
Her cause of coming she to tell began.
To whom fierce Atropos ; “ Bold Fay, that durst
Come see the secret of the life of man,
Well worthie thou to be of Iove accurst,
And eke thy childrens thrids to be asunder burst !”

L.

Whereat she sore affrayd yet her hesought
To grant her boone, and rigour to abate,
That she might see her childrens thrids forth
brought,
And know the measure of their utmost date
To them ordained by eternall Fate :
Which Clotho granting shewed her the same.
That when she saw, it did her much amate
To see their thrids so thin, as spiders frame,
And eke so short, that seemd their ends out shortly
came.

LI.

She then began them humbly to intreate
To draw them longer out, and better twine,
That so their lives might be prolonged late :
But Lachesis thereat gan to repine.
And said ; “ Fond dame ! that deem'st of things
divine
As of humane, that they may al'red bee,
And chaung'd at pleasure for those impes of
thine :
Not so ; for what the Fates do once decree,
Not all the gods can change, nor Iove himself can
free !”

LII.

“ Then since,” quoth she, “ the terme of each
mans life
For nought may lessened nor enlarged bee ;
Grant this ; that when ye shred with fatal knife
His line, which is the eldest of the three,
Which is of them the shortest, as I see,
Eftsoones his life may passe into the next ;
And, when the next shall likewise ended bee,
That both their lives may likewise be annex
Unto the third, that his may be so trehly wext.”

LIII.

They granted it ; and then that carefull Fay
Departed thence with full contented mynd ;
And, coming home, in warlike fresh aray
Them found all three according to their kynd ;
But unto them what destinie was assynd,
Or how their lives were eekt, she did not tell ;
But evermore, when she fit time could fynd,
She warned them to tend their safeties well,
And love each other deare, whatever them befell.

LIV.

So did they surely during all their dayes,
And never discord did amongst them fall ;
Which much augmented all their other praise :
And now, t' increase affection naturall,
In love of Canacee they ioyned all :
Upon which ground this same great Battell grew
(Great matter growing of beginning small,)
The which, for length, I will not here pursue,
But rather will reserve it for a Canto new.

CANTO III.

The Battell twixt three Brethren with
Cambell for Canacee:
Cambina with true friendships bond
Both their long strife agree.

I.

O! WHY doe wretched men so much desire
To draw their dayes unto the utmost date,
And doe not rather wish them soone expire;
Knowing the miserie of their estate,
And thousand perills which them still awate,
Tossing them like a boate amid the mayne,
That every houre they knocke at Death's gate!
And he that happie seemes and leas't in payne,
Yet is as nigh his end as he that most doth playue.

II.

Therefore this Fay I hold but fond and vaine,
The which, in seeking for her children three
Long life, thereby did more prolong their paine:
Yet whilst they lived none did ever see
More happie creatures then they seem'd to bee;
Nor more ennobled for their courtesie,
That made them dearely lov'd of each degree;
Ne more renowned for their chevalrie,
That made them dreaded much of all men ferre
and nie.

III.

These three that hardie chalenge tooke in hand,
For Canacee with Cambell for to fight:
The day was set, that all might understand,
And pledges pawnd the same to keepe aright:
That day, (the dreddest day that living wight
Did ever see upon this world to shine,)
So soone as heavens window shewed light,
These warlike Champions, all in armour shine,
Assembled were in field the chalenge to define.

IV.

The field with listes was all about enclos'd,
To barre the prease of people farre away;
And at th' one side sixe iudges were dispos'd,
To view and deceme the deedes of armes that day;
And on the other side in fresh aray
Fayre Canacee upon a stately stage
Was set, to see the fortune of that fray
And to be seene, as his most worthy wage
That could her purchase with his live's adventur'd
gage.

V.

Then entred Cambell first into the list,
With stately steps and fearelesse countenance,
As if the conquest his he surely wist.
Soone after did the Brethren three advance
In brave aray and goodly amenance,
With scutchins gilt and banners broad display;
And, marching thrise in warlike ordinance,
Thrise lowted lowly to the noble Mayd;
The whiles shrill trumpets and loud clarions sweetly
playd.

VI.

Which doen, the doughty Challenger came forth,
All arm'd to point, his chalenge to abet:

III. 8. ——— in armour shine,] Armour-shine must be
read as a compound word, in like mauner as sun-shine.

LODD,

VI. 9. ——— to define.] To decide. Lat. *definio*. CHURCH.

Gainst whom Sir Priamond, with equall worth
And equall armes, himselfe did forward set.
A trompet blew; they both together met
With dreadfull force and furious intent,
Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret,
As if that life to losse they had forelent,
And cared not to spare that should be shortly spent.

VII.

Right practicke was Sir Priamond in fight,
And thoroughly skild in use of shield and speare;
Ne lesse approved was Cambelloes might,
Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare;
That hard it was to weene which harder were.
Full many mightie strokes on either side
Were sent, that seemed death in them to beare;
But they were both so watchfull and well eyde,
That they avoyded were, and vainely by did slyde.

VIII.

Yet one, of many, was so strongly bent
By Priamond, that with unluckie glauce
Through Cambels shoulder it unwarely went,
That forced him his shield to disadvantage:
Much was he grieved with that gracelesse chaunce,
Yet from the wound no drop of bloud there fell,
But wondrous paine that did the more enhance
His haughtie courage to avengement fell:
Smart daunts not mighty harts, but makes them
more to swell.

IX.

With that, his poynted speare he fierce aventred
With doubled force close underneath his shield,
That through the mayles into his thigh it entred,
And, there arresting, readie way did yield
For bloud to gush forth on the grassie field;
That he for paine himselfe n'ot right upreare,
But to and fro in great amazement reel'd;
Like an old oke, whose pith and sap is seare,
At puffe of every storme doth stagger here and
theare.

X.

Whom so dismayd when Cambell had espide,
Agaïne he drove at him with double might,
That nought mote stay the steele, till in his side
The mortall point most cruelly empight;
Where fast infix'd, whilst he sought by slight
It forth to wrest, the staffe asunder brake,
And left the head behinde: with which despight
He all enrag'd his shivering speare did shake,
And charging him afresh thus felly him bespake;

XI.

“Lo! faitour, there thy meede unto thee take,
The meede of thy mischalance and abet:
Not for thine owne, but for thy Sisters sake,
Have I thus long thy life unto thee let:
But to forbeare doth not forgive the det.”
The wicked weapon heard his wrathfull vow;
And, passing forth with furious affret,
Pierst through his bever quite into his brow,
That with the force it backward forced him to bow.

VI. 7. ——— affret.] *Rencounter*. UPRON.

VI. 8. ——— forlent.] It seems to signify, given before-hand. CHURCH.

IX. 6. ——— n'ot] The old orthography for *ne wot* or *ne wote*, that is, *knew not*; and often so printed in Chaucer. TORD.

xii.

Therewith asunder in the midst it brast,
 And in his hand nought but the troncheon left ;
 The other halfe behind yet sticking fast
 Out of his head-peece Cambell fiercely reft,
 And with such furie backe at him it heft,
 That, making way unto his dearest life,
 His weasand-pipe it through his gorget cleft :
 Thence streames of purple bloud issuing rife
 Let forth his wearie ghost, and made an eud of
 strife.

xiii.

His wearie ghost assayld from fleshy band
 Did not, as others wont, directly fly
 Unto her rest in Plutoes griesly land ;
 Ne into ayre did vanish presently ;
 Ne chaunged was into a starre in sky ;
 But through traduction was eftsoones derived,
 Like as his mother prayd The Destinie,
 Into his other Brethren that survived,
 In whom he liv'd anew, of former life deprived.

xiv.

Whom when on ground his Brother next beheld,
 Though sad and sorrie for so heavy sight,
 Yet leave unto his sorrow did not yeeld ;
 But rather stir'd to vengeance and despight,
 Through secret feeling of his generous spright,
 Rusht fiercely forth, the battell to renew,
 As in reversion of his Brothers right ;
 And challenging the Virgin as his dew.
 His foe was soone address : the trompets freshly
 blew.

xv.

With that they both together fiercely met,
 As if that each ment other to devoure ;
 And with their axes both so sorely bet,
 That nether plate nor mayle, whereas their powre
 They felt, could once sustaine the hideous stowre,
 But rived were, like rotten wood, asunder ;
 Whilseth through their rifts the ruddie bloud did
 showre,
 And fire did flash, like lightning after thunder,
 That filld the lookers on atonce with ruth and
 wonder.

xvi.

As when two tygers prickt with hungers rage
 Have by good fortune found some beasts fresh
 spoyle,
 On which they weene their famine to asswage,
 And gaine a feastfull guerdon of their toyle ;
 Both falling out doe stirre up strifefull broyle,
 And cruell battell twixt themselves doe make,
 Whiles neither lets the other touch the soyle,
 But either sdeigns with other to partake :
 So cruelly those Knights strove for that Ladies sake.

xvii.

Full many strokes, that mortally were ment,
 The whiles were interchaunged twixt them two ;
 Yet they were all with so good wariment
 Or warded, or avoyded and let goe,
 That still the Life stood fearelesse of her Foe ;
 Till Diamond, disdeigning long delay

xiv. 1. ——— his Brother next.] That is, his second
 Brother, Diamond. CHURCH.

xvi. 7. ——— the soyle.] The soil, amongst hunters, is
 the mire in which the beast wallows. Here it means the
 prey. CHURCH.

Of doubtfull fortune wavering to and fro,
 Resolv'd to end it one or other way ;
 And heav'd his murderous axe at him with mighty
 sway.

xviii.

The dreadfull stroke, in case it had arrived
 Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment,)
 The soule had sure out of his body rived,
 And stinted all the strife incontinent ;
 But Cambels fate that fortune did prevent :
 For, seeing it at hand, he swarv'd asyde,
 And so gave way unto his fell intent ;
 Who, missing of the marke which he had eyde,
 Was with the force nigh feld whilst his right foot
 did syde.

xix.

As when a vulture greedie of his pray,
 Through hunger long that hart to him doth lend,
 Strikes at an heron with all his bodies sway,
 That from his force seemes nought may it defend ;
 The warie fowle, that spies him toward bend
 His dreadfull souse, avoydes it, shunning light,
 And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend ;
 That with the weight of his owne weeldlesse might
 He falleth nigh to ground, and scarce recovereth
 flight.

xx.

Which faire adventure when Cambello spide,
 Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recover
 From daungers dread to ward his naked side,
 He can let drive at him with all his power,
 And with his axe him smote in evill hower,
 That from his shoulders quite his head he reft :
 The heedlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that stower,
 Stood still awhile, and his fast footing kept ;
 Till, feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly slept.

xxi.

They, which that piteous spectacle beheld,
 Were much amaz'd the heedlesse tronke to see
 Stand up so long and weapon vaine to weld,
 Unweeting of the Fates divine decree
 For lifes succession in those Brethren three.
 For notwithstanding that one soule was reft,
 Yet had the bodie not dismembred bee,
 It would have lived, and revived eft ;
 But, finding no fit seat, the liflesse corse it left.

xxii.

It left ; but that same soule, which therein dwelt,
 Streight entring into Triamond him filld
 With double life and grieffe ; which when he felt,
 As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild
 With point of steele that close his hartbloud spild,
 He lightly lept out of his place of rest,
 And, rushing forth into the empie field,
 Against Cambello fiercely him address ;
 Who, him affronting soone, to fight was readie prest.

xxiii.

Well mote ye wonder how that noble Knight,
 After he had so often wounded beene,

xx. 4. ——— can] *Began*. CHURCH.

xxi. 8. ——— eft:] *Again*, often so used by Chaucer.
 TODD.

xxii. 8. ——— address:] *Directed* himself. CHURCH.

xxiii. 9. *Who, him affronting soone, to fight was readie
 prest.*] *Affronting* him, i. e. *opposing* himself to him :
 was readie *prest*, was readie *prepared*. URTON.

Could stand on foot now to renew the fight :
 But had ye then him forth advancing seene,
 Some newborne might ye would him surely weene ;
 So fresh he seemed and so fierce in sight ;
 Like as a snake, whom wearie winters teene
 Hath worne to nought now feeling sommers might
 Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth him dight.

xxiv.

All was, through vertue of the Ring he wore ;
 The which not onely did not from him let
 One drop of bloud to fall, but did restore
 His weakned powers, and dulled spirits whet,
 Through working of the stone therein yset.
 Else how could one of equall might with most,
 Against so many no lesse mightie met,
 Once thinke to match three such on equal cost,
 Three such as able were to match a puissant host ?

xxv.

Yet nought thereof was Triamond adredde,
 Ne desperate of gloriou victorie ;
 But sharply him assayld, and sore bestedde
 With heapes of strokes, which he at him let flie
 As thicke as hayle forth poured from the skie :
 He stroke, he soust, he foynd, he hewd, he lasht,
 And did his yron brond so fast applie,
 That from the same the fierie sparkles flasht,
 As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke are dasht.

xxvi.

Much was Cambello daunted with his blowes ;
 So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent,
 That he was forst from daunger of the throwes
 Baeke to retire, and somewhat to relent,
 Till th' heat of his fierce furie he had spent :
 Which when for want of breath gan to abate,
 He then afresh with new encouragement
 Did him assayle, and mightily amate,
 As fast, as forward erst, now backward to retrate.

xxvii.

Like as the tide, that comes fro th' ocean mayne,
 Flowes up the Shenan with contrarie forse,
 And, over-ruling him in his owne rayne,
 Drives backe the current of his kindly course,
 And makes it seeme to have some other source ;
 But when the flood is spent, then backe againe,
 His borrowed waters forst to re-disbourse,
 He sends the sea his owne with double gaine,
 And tribute eke withall, as to his souveraine.

xxviii.

Thus did the hattell varie to and fro,
 With diverse fortune doubtfull to be deemed :
 Now this the better had, now had his fo ;
 Then he halfe vanquisht, then the other seemed ;
 Yet victors both themselves alwayes esteemed :
 And all the while the disentrayled blood
 Adowne their sides like litle rivers stremed,
 That with the wasting of his vitall flood
 Sir Triamond at last full faint and feeble stood.

xxv. 2. ——— *Ne desperate*] Neither despaired he.
 CHURCH.

xxvii. 3. ——— *rayne*] *Empire*. CHURCH.

xxviii. 7. ——— *re-disbourse*] *Repay*. Fr. *desbourser*.
 TODD.

xxviii. 6. ——— *disentrayled*] *Drawn along floatingly*,
 trailing down ; a compound word ; from *dis*, i. e. *diversis*
partibus ; *en* ; and *traile*. UPTON

xxix.

But Cambell still more strong and greater grew,
 Ne felt his blood to wast, ne powres emperisht,
 Through that Rings vertue, that with vigour new,
 Still whenas he enfeebled was, him elerisht,
 And all his wounds and all his hruses guarisht :
 Like as a withered tree, through husbands toyle,
 Is often seene full freshly to have flourishd,
 And fruitfull apples to have borne awhile,
 As fresh as when it first was planted in the soyle.

xxx.

Through which advantage, in his strength he rose
 And smote the other with so wondrous might,
 That through the seame which did his hanberk
 close
 Into his throate and life it pierced quight,
 That downe he fell as dead in all mens sight :
 Yet dead he was not ; yet he sure did die,
 As all men do that lose the living spirit :
 So did one soule out of his bodie flie
 Unto her native home from mortall miserie.

xxxii.

But nathelesse whilst all the lookers-on
 Him dead behight, as he to all appeard,
 All unawares he started np anon,
 As one that had out of a dreame bene reard,
 And fresh assayld his foe ; who halfe afear'd
 Of th' uncouth sight, as he some ghost had seene,
 Stood still amaz'd, holding his idle swear'd ;
 Till, having often by him stricken beene,
 He forced was to strike and save himselfe from
 teene.

xxxiii.

Yet from thenceforth more warily he fougth,
 As one in feare the Stygian gods t' offend,
 Ne followd on so fast, but rather songht
 Himselfe to save, and daunger to defend,
 Then life and labour both in vaine to spend.
 Which Triamond perceiving, weened sure
 He gan to faint toward the battels end,
 And that he should not long on foote endure ;
 A signe which did to him the victorie assure.

xxxiiii.

Whereof full blith eftsoones his mightie hand
 He heav'd on high, in mind with that same blow
 To make an end of all that did withstand :
 Which Cambell seeing came was nothing slow
 Himselfe to save from that so deadly throw ;
 And at that instant reaching forth his swear'd
 Close underneath his shield, that scarce did show,
 Stroke him, as he his hand to strike upreard,
 In th' arm-pit full, that through both sides the
 wound appeard.

xxxv.

Yet still that direfull stroke kept on his way,
 And, falling heavie on Cambelloes erest,
 Strooke him so hugely that in swowne he lay,
 And in his head an hideous wound imprest :
 And sure, had it not happily found rest
 Upon the brim of his brode-plated shield,
 It would have cleft his braine downe to his brest :
 So both at once fell dead upon the field,
 And each to other seemd the victorie to yield.

xxxii. 4. ——— *to defend*] *To keep off*. UPTON.

xxxv.

Which whenas all the lookers-on beheld,
They weened sure the warre was at an end ;
And iudges rose ; and marshals of the field
Broke up the listes, their armes away to rend ;
And Canacee gan wayle her dearest frend.
All suddenly they both upstart light,
The one out of the swownd which him did blend,
The other breathing now another spright ;
And fiercely each assaying gau afresh to fight.

xxxvi.

Long while they then continued in that wize,
As if but then the battell had begonne :
Strokes, wounds, wards, weapons, all they did
despize ;
Ne either ear'd to ward, or perill-shonne,
Desirous both to have the battell donne ;
Ne either cared life to save or spill, [wonne ;
Ne which of them did winne, ne which were
So wearie both of fighting had their fill,
That life itselfe seemd loathsome, and long safetie
ill.

xxxvii.

Whilst thus the ease in doubtfull ballance hong,
Unsure to whether side it would incline,
And all mens eyes and hearts, which there among
Stood gazing, filled were with rufull tine
And secret feare, to see their fatal fine ;
All suddenly they heard a troublous noyes,
That seemd some perilous tumult to desine,
Confus'd with womens cries and shouts of boyes,
Such as the troubled theatres ofttimes annoyes.

xxxviii.

Thereat the Champions both stood still a space,
To weeten what that sudden clamour ment :
Lo ! where they spyde with speedie whirling pace
One in a charet of straunge furniment
Towards them driving like a storme out sent.
The charet decked was in wondrous wize
With gold and many a gorgeous ornament,
After the Persian monarks antique guise,
Such as the maker selfe could best by art devize.

xxxix.

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell)
Of two grim lyons, taken from the wood
In which their powre all others did exeell,
Now made forget their former cruell mood,
T^e obey their riders hest, as seemed good :
And therein sate a Lady passing faire
And bright, that seemed borne of angels brood ;
And, with her beautie, bountie did compare,
Whether of them in her should have the greater
share.

xl.

Thereto she learned was in magicke leare,
And all the artes that subtile wits discover,
Having therein bene trained many a yeare,
And well instructed by the Fay her mother,
That in the same she farre exceld all other :
Who, understanding by her mightie art

xxxviii. 4. ——— furniment] *Furnishing*, furniture.
Ital. fornimento. Upton.

xxxix. 8. *And, with &c.*] That is, her goodness vied with
her beauty. *Church.*
xl. 1 ——— leare.] *Art or learning. Todd.*

Of th' evill plight in which her dearest Brother
Now stood, came forth in hast to take his part,
And pacifie the strife which causd so deadly smart,

xli.

And, as she passed through th' unruly preece
Of people thronging thicke her to behold,
Her angrie teame breaking their bonds of peace
Great heapes of them, like sheepe in narrow fold,
For hast did over-runne in dust enrould ;
That, thorough rude confusion of the rout,
Some fearing shriekt, some being harmed hould,
Some laught for sport, some did for wonder shout,
And some, that would seeme wise, their wonder
turnd to dout.

xlii.

In her right hand a rod of peace shee bore,
About the which two serpents weren wound,
Entrayled mutually in lovely lore,
And by the tailes together firmly bound,
And both were with one olive garland crown'd ;
(Like to the rod which Maias sonne doth wield,
Wherewith the hellish fiends he doth confound ;
And in her other hand a cup shee hild,
The which was with Nepenthe to the brim filld.

xliii.

Nepenthe is a drinck of soverayne grace,
Devizd by the gods for to asswage
Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chase
Which stirs up anguish and contentious rage :
Instead thereof sweet peace and quiet age
It doth establish in the troubled mynd.
Few men, but such as sober are and sage,
Are by the gods to drinck thereof assynd ;
But such as drinck, eternall happinesse do fynd.

xliv.

Such famous men, such worthies of the earth,
As love will have advanced to the skie, [berth,
And there made gods, though borne of mortall
For their high merits and great dignitie,
Are wont, before they may to heaven flie,
To drinke hereof ; whereby all cares forepast
Are washt away quite from their memorie :
So did those olde heroës hereof taste,
Before that they in blisse amongst the gods were
plaste.

xlv.

Much more of price and of more gracious powre
Is this, then that same water of Ardenne,
The which Rinaldo drunck in happie howrs,
Described by that famous Tuscané penne :
For that had might to change the hearts of men
Fro love to hate, a change of evill choise :
But this doth hatred make in love to brenne,
And heavy heart with comfort doth rejoyce.
Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld his
voice !

xlvi.

At last arriving by the list's side
Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile,
Which straight flew ope and gave her way to ride.
Eftsoones out of her coeh she gan availe,
And pacing fairely forth did bid all haile

xlvi. 4. ——— availe.] *Descend*, come down. *Church.*
xlvi. 5. ——— all haile] This is the Saxon form of salu-
tation, originally written *at-hael*, which is synonymous

First to her Brother whom she loved deare,
That so to see him made her heart to quail ;
And next to Cambell, whose sad ruefull cheare
Made her to change her hew, and hidden love
t' appeare.

XLVII.

They lightly her requit, (for small delight
They had as then her long to entertaine,)
And eft them turned both againe to fight :
Which when she saw, downe on the bloody plaine
Herselfe she threw, and teares gan shed amaine ;
Amongst her teares immixing prayers meeke,
And with her prayers reasons, to restraine
From bloody strife ; and, blessed peace to seeke,
By all that unto them was deare did them beseeke.

XLVIII.

But whenas all might nought with them prevaile,
She smote them lightly with her powrefull wand:
Then suddenly, as if their hearts did faile,
Their wrathfull blades downe fell out of their hand,
And they, like men astonisht, still did stand.
Thus whilst their minds were doubtfully dis-
traught,
And mighty spirites bound with mightier band,
Her golden cup to them for drinke she raught,
Whereof, full glad for thirst, ech drunk an hart
draught:

XLIX.

Of which so soone as they once tasted had,
Wonder it is that sudden change to see:
Instead of strokes, each other kissed glad,
And lovely haulst, from feare of treason free,
And plighted hands, for ever friends to be.
When all men saw this sudden change of things,
So mortall foes so friendly to agree,
For passing ioy, which so great marvaile brings,
They all gan shout aloud, that all the heaven rings.

L.

All which when gentle Canacee beheld,
In hast she from her lofty chaire descended,
To weet what sudden tidings was befel:
Where when she saw that cruell war so ended,
And deadly foes so faithfully affrended,
In lovely wise she gan that Lady greet,
Which had so great dismay so well amended ;
And, entertaining her with curt'sies meet,
Profest to her true friendship and affection sweet.

LI.

Thus when they all accorded goodly were,
The trumpets sounded, and they all arose,
Thence to depart with glee and gladsome chere.
Those warlike Champions both together chose
Homeward to march, themselves there to repose:
And wise Cambina, taking by her side
Faire Canacee as fresh as morning rose,
Unto her coch remounting, home did ride,
Admir'd of all the people and much glorifide.

LII.

Where making ioyous feast their daies they spent
In perfect love, devoide of hatefull strife,

with the Latin *salve*, and with our old expression *God save you*. The word *haile* in Saxon is *health* or *welfare*. Todd.

XLIX. 4. *And lovely haulst,*] *Embraced, bung lovingly on each other's neck.* Church.

L. 3. ——— affrended,] *Made friends.* Upton.

Allidè with bands of mutuall couplement ;
For Triamond had Canacee to wife,
With whom he ledd a long and happy life ;
And Cambel tooke Cambina to his fere,
The which as life were each to other liefe.
So all alike did love, and loved were,
That since their days such lovers were not found
elswere.

CANTO IV.

Satyrene makes a Turneyment
For love of Florinell ;
Britomart winnes the prize from all,
And Artegal doth quell.

I.

It often fals, (as here it earst befell,)
That mortall foes doe turne to faithfull frends,
And friends profest are chaunged to foemen fell:
The cause of both of both their minds depends
And th' end of both likewise of both their ends:
For enmitie, that of no ill proceeds
But of occasion, with th' occasion ends ;
And friendship, which a faint affection breeds
Without regard of good, dyes like ill-grounded seeds.

II.

That well (me seemes) appears by that of late
Twixt Cambell and Sir Triamond befell ;
As als by this ; that now a new debate
Stürd up twixt Blandamour and Paridell,
The which by course befalls me here to tell :
Who, having those two other Knights espide
Marching afore, as ye remember well, [descride,
Sent forth their Squire to have them doth
And eke those masked Ladies riding them beside.

III.

Who backe returning told, as he had seene, [name ;
That they were doughtie Knights of dreaded
And those two Ladies their two loves unseene ;
And therefore wisht them without blot or blame
To let them passe at will, for dread of shame.
But Blandamour full of vain-glorious spirit,
And rather stürd by his discordfull Dame,
Upon them gladly would have prov'd his might,
But that he yet was sore of his late lucklesse fight.

IV.

Yet nigh approaching he them fowle bespake,
Disgracing them, himselfe thereby to grace,
As was his wont ; so weening way to make
To Ladies love, wherso he came in place,
And with lewd termes their lovers to deface.
Whose sharpe provokement them incenst so sore,
That both were bent t' avenge his usage base,
And gan their shields addresse themselves afore :
For evill deedes may better then bad words be bore.

V.

But faire Cambina with perswasions myld
Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode,
That for the present they were reconcyld,
And gan to treat of deedes of armes abrode,

n. 3. *As als*] *Also.* The Saxon *als* for *also* is frequent in Chaucer. Todd.

ii. 9. ——— *those masked Ladies*] *Canacee and Cambina.* They are called *unseene*, because masked, in st. 3. Todd

And strange adventures, all the way they rode :
Amongst the which they told, as then hefell,
Of that great Turney which was blazed brode,
For that rich Girdle of faire Florimell,
The prize of her which did in beautie most excell.

vi.

To which folke-mote they all with one consent,
Sith each of them his Ladie had him by,
Whose beautie each of them thought excellent,
Agreed to travell, and their fortunes try.
So as they passed forth, they did espy
One in bright armes with ready speare in rest,
That toward them his course seem'd to apply ;
Gainst whom Sir Paridell himselfe address,
Him weening, ere he nigh approcht, to have repress.

vii.

Which th' other seeing gan his course relent,
And vaunted speare eftsoones to disadvantage,
As if he naught but peace and pleasure ment,
Now false into their fellowship by chance ;
Whereat they shewed curteous countenance.
So as he rode with them accompanide,
His roving eie did on the Lady glance
Which Blandamour had riding by his side :
Whom sure he weend that he somewhere tofore had
eidc.

viii.

It was to weete that snowy Florimell,
Which Ferran late from Braggadochio wonne ;
Whom he now seeing, her remembered well,
How having reft her from the Witches sonne,
He soone her lost : Wherefore he now begunne
To challenge her anew, as his owne prize,
Whom formerly he had in battell wonne,
And proffer made by force her to reprize :
Which scornfull offer Blandamour gan soone
despize ;

ix.

And said ; " Sir Knight, sith ye this Lady clame,
Whom he that hath were loth to lose so light,
(For so to lose a Lady were great shame,)
Yee shall her winne, as I have done, in fight :
And lo ! shee shall be placed here in sight
Together with this Hag beside her set,
That whose winnes her may he have by right ;
But he shall have the Hag that is ybet,
And with her alwaies ride, till he another get."

x.

That offer pleased all the company :
So Florimell with Atè forth was brought,
At which they all gan laugh full merrily :
But Braggadochio said, he never thought
For such an Hagg, that seemed worse then
His person to emperill so in fight : [nought,
But if to match that Lady they had sought
Another like, that were like faire and bright,
His life he then would spend to iustifie his right.

vi. 1. — folke-mote] *Meeting of people*: Sommer.
CHURCH.

vii. 9. — tofore] *Before*. To-foꝛt, *ante*. Lye's Sax.
Dict. TODD.

x. 2. *So Florimell*] That is, the false Florimell.
CHURCH.

x. 6. — emperill] *Endanger*. URRON.

xi.

At which his vaine excuse they all gan smile,
As scorning his unmanly cowardize :
And Florimell him fowly gan revile,
That for her sake refus'd to enterprize
The battell, offred in so knightly wize ;
Aud Atè eke provokt him privily
With love of her, and shame of such mesprize.
But naught he car'd for friend or enemy ;
For in base mind nor friendship dwels nor enmity.

xii.

But Cambell thus did shut up all in iest ;
" Brave Knights and Ladies, certes ye doe wrong
To stirre up strife, when most us needeth rest,
That we may us reserve both fresh and strong
Against the Turneiment which is not long,
When whose list to fight may fight his fill :
Till then your challenges ye may prolong ;
And then it shall be tried, if ye will,
Whether shall have the Hag, or hold the Lady
still."

xiii.

They all agreed ; so, turning all to game
And pleasaunt bord, they past forth on their way ;
And all that while, wherso they rode or came,
That masked Mock-Knight was their sport and
Till that at length upon th' appointed day [play.
Unto the place of Turneyment they came ;
Where they before them found in fresh aray
Manie a brave Knight and manie a daintie Dame
Assembled for to get the honour of that game.

xiv.

There this faire crew arriving did divide
Themselves asunder : Blandamour with those
Of his on th' one, the rest on th' other side.
But boastfull Braggadochio rather chose,
For glorie vaine, their fellowship to lose,
That men on him the more might gaze alone.
The rest themselves in troupes did else dispose,
Like as it seemed best to every one ;
The Knights in couples marcht with Ladies linckt
atone.

xv.

Then first of all forth came Sir Satyrane,
Bearing that precious relicke in an arke
Of gold, that bad eyes might it not prophane ;
Which drawing softly forth out of the darke,
He open shewd, that all men it mote marke ;
A gorgeous Girdle, curiously embost [marke ;
With pearle and precious stone, worth many a
Yet did the workmanship farre passe the cost :
It was the same which lately Florimel had lost.

xvi.

The same aloft he hung in open vew,
To be the prize of beautie and of might ;
The which, eftsoones discovered, to it drew
The eyes of all, allur'd with close delight,
And hearts quite robbed with so glorious sight,
That all men threw out voves and wishes vaine.
Thrise happie Ladie, and thrise happie Knight,
Them seemd that could so goodly riches gaue,
So worthie of the perill, worthy of the paine.

xiii. 2. — bord,] *Jest*. TODD.

xv. 6. — embost] *Embost* has various significations
in Spenser. Here it means *ornamented*, raised as in re-
lievo. TODD.

xvii.

Then tooke the bold Sir Satyrane in hand
 An huge great speare, such as he wont to wield,
 And, vauncing forth from all the other band
 Of Knights, address his maiden-headed shield,
 Shewing himselfe all ready for the field ;
 Gainst whom there singled from the other side
 A Painim Knight that well in armes was skil'd,
 And had in many a battell oft bene tride,
 Hight Bruncheval the bold, who fierly forth did ride.

xviii.

So furiously they both together met,
 That neither could the others force sustaine :
 As two fierce buls, that strive the rule to get
 Of all the heard, meete with so hideous maine,
 That both rebutted tumble on the plaine ;
 So these two Champions to the ground were feld ;
 Where in a maze they both did long remaine,
 And in their hands their idle troncheons held,
 Which neither able were to wag, or once to weld.

xix.

Which when the noble Ferramont espide,
 He pricked forth in ayd of Satyrane ;
 And him against Sir Blandamour did ride
 With all the strength and stiffnesse that he can :
 But the more strong and stiffely that he ran,
 So much more sorely to the ground he fell,
 That on an heape were tumbled horse and man :
 Unto whose rescue forth rode Paridell ;
 But him likewise with that same speare he eke did
 quell.

xx.

Which Braggadocchio seeing had no will
 To hasten greatly to his parties ayd,
 Albee his turne were next ; but stood there still,
 As one that seemed doubtfull or dismayd :
 But Triamond, halfe wroth to see him staid,
 Sternly stept forth and rought away his speare,
 With which so sore he Ferramont assaid,
 That horse and man to ground he quite did beare,
 That neither could in hast themselves again upreare.

xxi.

Which to avenge Sir Devon him did dight,
 But with no better fortune then the rest ;
 For him likewise he quickly downe did smight :
 And after him Sir Douglas him address ;
 And after him Sir Palimord forth prest ;
 But none of them against his strokes could stand ;
 But, all the more, the more his praise increst :
 For either they were left upon the land,
 Or went away sore wounded of his haplesse hand.

xxii.

And now by this Sir Satyrane abraid
 Out of the swowne, in which too long he lay ;
 And looking round about, like one dismayd,
 Whenas he saw the merclesse affray
 Which doughty Triamond had wrought that day
 Unto the noble Knights of Maidenhead,
 His mighty heart did almost rend in tway

xvii. 3. — vauncing] That is, advancing. CHURCH.

xxi. 7. — all the more,] That is, the more they were.

CHURCH.

xxii. 1. — abraid] *Awaked.* Anglo-Sax. *abpedian,* *bpedian,* *educere,* *expergefacere.* UPRON.

For very gall, that rather wholly dead
 Himselfe he wisht have bene then in so bad a stead,

xxiii.

Eftsoones he gan to gather up around
 His weapons which lay scattered all abrode,
 And, as it fell, his steed he ready found ;
 On whom remounting fiercely forth he rode,
 Like sparke of fire that from the anvile glode,
 There where he saw the valiant Triamond
 Chasing, and laying on them heavy lode,
 That none his force were able to withstond ;
 So dreadfull were his strokes, so deadly was his hond.

xxiv.

With that, at him his beamlike speare he aimed,
 And therto all his power and might applide :
 The wicked steele for mischiefe first ordained,
 And having now Misfortune got for guide,
 Staid not till it arrived in his side,
 And therein made a very griesly wound,
 That streames of blood his armour all bedide.
 Much was he daunted with that direfull stownd,
 That scarce he him upheld from falling in a sound.

xxv.

Yet, as he might, himselfe he soft withdrew
 Out of the field, that none perceiv'd it plaine :
 Then gan the Part of Chalersers anew
 To range the field, and victorlike to raine,
 That none against them battell durst maintaine.
 By that the gloomy evening on them fell,
 That forced them from fighting to refraine,
 And trumpets sound to cease did them compell :
 So Satyrane that day was iudg'd to beare the bell.

xxvi.

The morrow next the Turney gan anew ;
 And with the first the hardy Satyrane
 Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew :
 On th' other side full many a warlike swaine
 Assembled were, that glorious prize to gaine.
 But mongst them all was not Sir Triamond ;
 Unable he new battell to darraigne,
 Through grievance of his late received wound,
 That doubly did him grieve when so himselfe he
 found.

xxvii.

Which Cambell seeing, though he could not salve,
 Ne done undoe, yet, for to salve his name
 And purchase honour in his friends behalve,
 This goodly counterfesauce he did frame :
 The shield and armes, well knowne to be the same
 Which Triamond had worne, unwares to wight
 And to his friend unwist, for doubt of blame
 If he misdid, he on himselfe did dight,
 That none could him discerne; and so went forth
 to fight.

xxviii.

There Satyrane lord of the field he fonn'd,
 Triumpping in great ioy and iolity ;
 Gainst whom none able was to stand on ground ;
 That much he gan his glorie to envý,
 And cast t' avenge his friends indignity :

xxiii. 5. — glode,] May not *glode* be the preter-
 imperfect tense of *glide*? T. WARTON.xxv. 3. — the Part] *The Party.* CHURCH.xxvii. 4. — counterfesauce] *Counterfeiting.* Ital
contrafacimento. UPRON.

A mightie speare eftsouones at him-he bent ;
Who, seeing him come on so furiously,
Met him mid-way with equall hardiment,
That forcibly to ground they both together went.

xxxix.

They up againe themselves can lightly reare,
And to their tryed swords themselves betake ;
With which they wrought such wondrous marvels
there,

That all the rest it did amazed make,
Ne any dar'd their perill to partake ;
Now cuffing close, now chacing to and fro,
Now hurtling round advantage for to take :
As two wild boares together grappling go,
Chaufing and foming choler each against his fo.

xxx.

So as they court, and turneyd hers and theare,
It chaunst Sir Satyrane his steed at last,
Whether through foundring or through sodein
To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast ; [feare,
Which vantage Cambell did pursue so fast,
That, ere himselfe he had recovered well,
So sore he sowst him on the compast creast,
That forced him to leave his loftic sell,
And rudely tumbling downe under his horse-feete
fell.

xxxix.

Lightly Cambello leapt downe from his steed
For to have rent his shield and armes away,
That whylome wont to be the victors meed ;
When all unwares he felt an hideous way
Of many swords that lode on him did lay :
An hundred Knights had him enclosed round,
To rescue Satyrane out of his pray ;
All which at once huge strokes on him did pound,
In hope to take him prisoner, where he stood on
ground.

xxxix.

He with their multitude was nought dismayd,
But with stout courage turnd upon them all,
And with his brond-iron round about him layd ;
Of which he dealt large almes, as did befall ;
Like as a lion, that by chaunce doth fall
Into the hunters toile, doth rage and rore,
In royall heart disdainning to be thrall :
But all in vaine : for what might one do more ?
They have him taken captive, though it grieve him
sore.

xxxix.

Whereof when newes to Triamond was brought
Thereas he lay, his wound he soone forgot,
And starting up streight for his armour sought :
In vaine he sought ; for there he found it not ;
Cambello it away before had got :
Cambelloes armes therefore he on him threw,
And lightly issewd forth to take his lot.
There he in troupe found all that warlike crew
Leading his friend away, full sorie to his vew.

xxxix.

Into the thickest of that knightly preasse
He thrust, and smote downe all that was betweene,

Caried with fervent zeale ; ne did he ceasse,
Till that he came where he had Cambell seene
Like captive thral two other Knights atweene :
There he amongst them cruell havocke makes,
That they, which lead him, soone enforced beene
To let him loose to save their proper stakes ;
Who, being freed, from one a weapon fiercely takes :

xxxv.

With that he drives at them with dreadfull might,
Both in remembrance of his friends late harme,
And in revengement of his owne despight :
So both together give a new allarme,
As if but now the battell wexed warme.
As when two greedy wolves doe breake by force
Into an heard, farre from the husband farme,
They spoile and ravine without all remorse :
So did these two through all the field their foe
enforce.

xxxvi.

Fiercely they followd on their bolde emprise,
Till trumpets sound did warne them all to rest
Then all with one consent did yeeld the prize
To Triamond and Cambell as the best :
But Triamond to Cambell it relest,
And Cambell it to Triamond transferd ;
Each labouring t' advance the others gest,
And make his praise before his owne preferd :
So that the doome was to another day differd.

xxxvii.

The last day came ; when all those Knightes againe
Assembled were their deedes of armes to shew.
Full many deedes that day were shewed plaine :
But Satyrane, have all the other crew,
His wondrous worth declard in all mens vew ;
For from the first he to the last endured :
And though some while Fortune from him with
Yet evermore his honour he recured, [draw,
And with unwearied powre his party still assured.

xxxviii.

Ne was there Knight that ever thought of armes,
But that his utmost prowess there made knowne :
That, by their many wounds and carelesse harmes,
Byshivered speares and swords all under strowne,
By scattered shields, was easie to be strowne.
There might ye see loose steeds at random ronne,
Whose lucklesse riders late were overthrowen ;
And Squiers make hast to helpe their Lords for-
donne :
But still the Knights of Maidenhead the better
wonne.

xxxix.

Till that there entred on the other side [reed,
A stranger Knight, from whence no man could
In quent disguise, full hard to be descride :
For all his armour was like salvage weed
With woody mosse bedight, and all his steed
With oaken leaves attrapt, that seemed fit
For salvage wight, and thereto well agreed
His word, which on his ragged shield was writ,
Salvagesse sans finesse, shewing secret wit.

xxxix. 6. ——— attrapt,] *Adorned*, atrapped. UPRON.
xxxix. 8. *His word*,] That is, his motto. CHURCH.
xxxix. 9. *Salvagesse sans finesse*,] That is, Wildness
without art. *Finesse* must here be pronounced as three
syllables, according to the manner of the French, in their
poetry. CHURCH.

xxxix. 6. ——— cuffing] *Scuffling*. Topp.
xxx. 3. *Whether through foundring*] That is, through
skittishness tripping and falling. URTON.
xxx. 7. ——— the compast creast,] That is, the round
part of his helmet. CHURCH.

XL.

He, at his first incomming, charg'd his spere
At him that first appeared in his sight ;
That was to weete the stout Sir Sangliere,
Who well was knowen to be a valiant Knight,
Approved oft in many a perulous fight :
Him at the first encounter downe he smote,
And over-bore beyond his crouper quight ;
And after him another Knight, that hote
Sir Brianon, so sore, that none him life behote.

XLI.

Then, ere his hand he reard, he overthrew
Seven Knights one after other as they came :
And, when his speare was brust, his sword he
drew,
The instrument of wrath, and with the same
Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game,
Hewing and slashing shields and helmets bright,
And beating downe whatever nigh him came,
That every one gan shun his dreadfull sight
No lesse then death itselfe, in daungerous affright.

XLII.

Such wondred all men what or whence he came,
That did amongst the troupes so tyrannize ;
And each of other gan inquire his name :
But, when they could not learne it by no wize,
Most answerable to his wyld disguise
It seemed, him to terme the Salvage Knight :
But certes his right name was otherwise,
Though knowne to few that Arthegall he hight,
The doughtiest Knight that liv'd that day, and most
of might.

XLIII.

Thus was Sir Satyrane with all his band
By his sole manhood and atchievement stout
Dismay'd, that none of them in field durst stand,
But beaten were and chased all about.
So he continued all that day throughout,
Till evening that the sunne gan downward bend :
Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout
A stranger Knight, that did his glorie shend :
So nought may be esteemed happie till the end !

XLIV.

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull speare
At Arthegall, in midst of his pryde,
And therewith smote him on his umbriere
So sore, that tomling backe he downe did slyde
Over his horses taile above a stryde ;
Whence litle lust he had to rise againe.
Which Cambell seeing, much the same envyde,
And ran at him with all his might and maine ;
But shortly was likewise seene lying on the plaine.

XLV.

Whereat full inly wroth was Triamond,
And cast t' avenge the shame doen to his freend :
But by his friend himselfe eke soone he fond
In no lesse neede of helpe then him he weend.
All which when Blandamour from end to end
Beheld, he woxe therewith displeas'd sore,
And thought in mind it shortly to amend :
His speare he fentred, and at him it bore ;
But with no better fortune then the rest afore.

XLIV. 1. He at his entrance &c.] Spoken of Britomart
in her assumed character. UPSON.

XLV. 8. His speare he fentred,] Made his spear ready.
Old Fr. *feutrer*. TONN.

XLVI.

Full many others at him likewise ran ;
But all of them likewise dismounted were :
Ne certes wonder ; for no powre of man
Could bide the force of that enchanted speare,
The which this famous Britomart did beare ;
With which she wondrous deeds of arms achieved,
And overthrew whatever came her neare,
That all those stranger Knights full sore agrieved,
And that late weaker band of Chalers relieved.

XLVII.

Like as in sommers day when raging heat
Doth burne the earth and boyled rivers drie,
That all brute beasts forst to refrain from meat
Doe hunt for shade where shrowded they may lie,
And, missing it, faine from themselves to fie ;
All travellers tormented are with paine :
A watry clond doth overcast the skie,
And poureth forth a sudden shoure of raine,
That all the wretched world recomforteth againe :

XLVIII.

So did the warlike Britomart restore
The prize to Knights of Maydenhead that day,
Which else was like to have bene lost, and bor
The prayse of provesse from them all away.
Then shrilling trompets loudly gan to bray,
And bad them leave their labours and long toyle
To ioyous feast and other gentle play, [spoyle
Where beauties prize should win that pretiou
Where I with sound of trompe will also rest awhile

CANTO V.

The Ladies for the Girdle strive
Of famous Florimell :
Scudamour, comming to Cares House,
Doth sleepe from him expect.

I.

It hath bene through all ages ever seene,
That with the praise of armes and chevalrie
The prize of beautie still hath ioyned bene ;
And that for reasons speciall privtee ;
For either doth on other much relie :
For He me seemes most fit the Faire to serve,
That can her best defend from villenie ;
And She most fit his service doth deserve,
That fairest is, and from her faith will never swerve

II.

So fitly now here commeth next in place,
After the prooffe of Prowesse ended well,
The controverse of Beauties soveraine grace ;
In which, to her that doth the most excell,
Shall fall the Girdle of faire Florimell :
That many wish to win for glorie vaine,
And not for vertuous use, which some doe tell
That glorious Belt did in itselfe containe,
Which Ladies ought to love, and seeke for to ob
taine.

XLVII. 5. — faine] Desire. CHURCH.

ARG. 4. — from him] That is, from himselfe
T. WARTON.

II. 3. — controverse] Debate or contention. TONN.

II. 6. That] That Girdle. CHURCH. P

iii.

That Girdle gave the vertue of chast love
 And wivehood true to all that did it beare ;
 But whosoever contrarie doth prove,
 Might not the same about her middle weare,
 But it would loose, or else asunder teare.
 Whilome it was (as Faeries wont report)
 Dame Venus girdle, by her 'steemed deare
 What time she usd to live in wively sort,
 But layd aside whenso she usd her looser sport.

iv.

Her husband Vulcan whylome for her sake,
 When first he loved her with heart entire,
 This pretious ornament, they say, did make,
 And wrought in Lemnos with unquenched fire :
 And afterwards did for her loves first hire
 Give it to her, for ever to remaine,
 Therewith to bind lascivious desire,
 And loose affections straightly to restraine ;
 Which vertue it for ever after did retainne.

v.

The same one day, when she herselfe disposd
 To visite her beloved paramoure,
 The god of Warre, she from her middle loosd,
 And left behind her in her secret bowre
 On Acidalian mount, where many an howre
 She with the pleasant Graces wont to play.
 There Florimell in her first ages flowre
 Was fostered by those Graces, (as they say,)
 And brought with her from thence that goodly Belt
 away.

vi.

That goodly Belt was Cestus hight by name,
 And as her life by her esteemed deare :
 No wonder then, if that to winne the same
 So many Ladies sought, as shall appeare ;
 For pearelesse she was thought that did it beare.
 And now by this their feast all being ended,
 The iudges, which thereto selected were,
 Into the Martian field adowne descended
 To deeme this doubtfull case, for which they all
 contended.

vii.

But first was question made, which of those Knights
 That lately turneyd had the waver wonne :
 There was it iudged, by those worthise wights,
 That Satyrane the first day best had donne :
 For he last ended, having first begonne.
 The second was to Triamond behight,
 For that he sav'd the victour from fordonne :
 For Cambell victour was, in all mens sight,
 Till by mishap he in his foemens hand did light.

viii.

The third dayes prize unto that stranger Knight,
 Whom all men term'd Knight of the Hebene
 To Britomart was given by good right ; [Speare,
 For that with puissant stroke she downe did beare
 The Salvage Knight that victour was whileare,
 And all the rest which had the best afore,
 And, to the last, unconquer'd did appeare ;
 For last is deemed best : To her therefore
 The fayrest Ladie was adjudgd for Paramore.

ix.

But thereat greatly grudged Arthegall,
 And much repynd, that both of victors meede

vii. 6. — behight,] *Adjudged.* CHURCH.

And eke of honour she did him forestall ;
 Yet mote he not withstand what was decreede ;
 But inly thought of that despightfull deede
 Fit time t' awaite avenged for to bee.
 This being ended thus, and all agreed,
 Then next ensew'd the paragon to see
 Of beauties praise, and yeld the Fayrest her due
 fee.

x.

Then first Cambello brought into their view
 His faire Cambina covered with a veale ;
 Which, being once withdrawne, most perfect hew
 And passing beantie did eftsoones reveale,
 That able was weake hartes away to steale.
 Next did Sir Triamond unto their sight
 The face of his deare Canacee unheale ; [bright,
 Whose beauties beame eftsoones did shine so
 That daz'd the eyes of all, as with exceeding light.

xi.

And after her did Paridell produce
 His false Dnessa, that she might be seene ;
 Who with her forged beantie did seduce
 The hearts of some that fairest her did weene ;
 As diverse wits affected divers beene.
 Then did Sir Ferramont unto them shew
 His Lucida, that was full faire and shoene :
 And after these an hundred Ladies moe
 Appear'd in place, the which each other did outgoe.

xii.

All which whoso dare thinke for to enchace,
 Him needeth sure a golden pen I weene
 To tell the feature of each goodly face.
 For, since the day that they created beene,
 So many heavenly faces were not seene
 Assembled in one place : ne he that thought
 For Chian folke to pourtraict Beauties queene,
 By view of all the fairest to him brought,
 So many faire did see, as here he might have sought.

xiii.

At last, the most redoubted Britonesse
 Her lovely Amoret did open shew ;
 Whose face, discovered, plainly did expresse
 The heavenly pourtraict of bright angels hew.
 Well weened all, which her that time did vew,
 That she should surely beare the bell away ;
 Till Blandamour, who thought he had the trew
 And very Florimell, did her display :
 The sight of whom once seene did all the rest
 dismay.

xiv.

For all afore that seemed fayre and bright,
 Now base and contemptible did appeare,
 Compar'd to her that shone as Phebes light
 Amongst the lesser starres in evening cleare.
 All that her saw with wonder ravish't weare,
 And weend no mortal creature she should bee,
 But some celestial shape that flesh did beare :
 Yet all were glad there Florimell to see ;
 Yet thought that Florimell was not so faire as shee.

xv.

As guilefull goldsmith that by secret skill
 With golden foyle doth finely over-spredd

x. 7. — unheale ;] *Uncover, expose to view.* Thus
 here is to *hide* or *conceal*. Anglo-Sax. *helan*, to *helle*, *hyll*,
 CELARE. TODD.

Some baser metall, which commend he will
 Unto the vulgar for good gold insted,
 He much more goodly glosse thereon doth shed
 To hide his falshood, then if it were trew :
 So hard this Idole was to be ared,
 That Florimell herselfe in all mens vew
 She seem'd to passe : So forged things do fairest
 shew.

xvi.

Then was that golden Belt by doome of all
 Graunted to her, as to the Fayrest Dame.
 Which being brought, about her middle small
 They thought to gird, as best it her became ;
 But by no meanes they could it thereto frame :
 For, ever as they fastned it, it loos'd
 And fell away, as feeling secret blame.
 Full oft about her wast she it enclos'd ;
 And it as oft was from about her wast disclos'd :

xvii.

That all men wondred at the uncouth sight,
 And each one thought, as to their fancies came :
 But she herselfe did thinke it doen for spight,
 And touched was with secret wrath and shame
 Therewith, as thing deviz'd her to defame.
 Then many other Ladies likewise tride
 About their tender loynes to knit the same ;
 But it would not on none of them abide,
 But when they thought it fast, eftsometimes it was
 untide.

xviii.

Which when that scornfull Squire of Dames did
 He lowly gan to laugh, and thus to iest ; [vew,
 " Alas for pittie that so faire a crew,
 As like cannot be seene from east to west,
 Cannot find one this Girdle to invest !
 Fie on the man that did it first invent,
 To shame us all with this, *Ungirt unblest !*
 Let never Ladie to his love assent,
 That hath this day so many so unmanly shent."

xix.

Thereat all Knights gan laugh, and Ladies lowre :
 Till that at last the gentle Amoret
 Likewise assayd to prove that Girdles powre ;
 And, having it about her middle set,
 Did find it fit withouten breach or let ;
 Whereat the rest gan greatly to envie :
 But Florimell exceedingly did fret,
 And, snatching from her hand halfe angrily
 The Belt againe, about her hodie gan it tie :

xx.

Yet nathemore would it her bodie fit ;
 Yet nathelasse to her, as her dew right,
 It yielded was by them that iudged it ;
 And she herselfe adiudged to the Knight
 That bore the hebene speare, as wonne in fight.
 But Britomart would not thereto assent,
 Ne her owne Amoret forgoe so light [ment
 For that strange Dame, whose beauties wonder-
 She lesse esteem'd then th' others vertuous govern-
 ment.

xvi. 9. — disclos'd :] *Disengaged, untied.* See the last line of the next stanza. CHURCH.

xviii. 5. — to invest !] *To put on* as part of the dress, or, in the poet's own words, "about the middle small to gird," st. 16. TODD.

xix 7. — Florimell] That is, the false Florimell. CHURCH.

xxi.

Whom when the rest did see her to refuse,
 They were full glad, in hope themselves to get
 Yet at her choice they all did greatly muse. [her :
 But, after that, the iudges did arret her
 Unto the second best that lov'd her better ;
 That was the Salvage Knight : but he was gone
 In great displeasure, that he could not get her.
 Then was she iudged Triamond his one ;
 But Triamond lov'd Canacee and other none.

xxii.

Tho unto Satyran she was adiudged,
 Who was right glad to gaine so goodly meed :
 But Blandamour thereat full greatly grudged,
 And lide prays'd his labours evill speed,
 That for to winne the saddle lost the steed,
 Ne lesse thereat did Paridell complaine,
 And thought t' appeale, from that which was
 To single combat with Sir Satyrane : [decreed,
 Thereto him Atc stird, new discord to maintaine.

xxiii.

And eke, with these, full many other Knights
 She through her wicked working did incense
 Her to demaund and chalenge as their rights,
 Deserved for their perils recompense.
 Amongst the rest, with boastfull vaine pretense
 Stept Braggadochio forth, and as his thrall
 Her claym'd, by him in battell wonne long sens :
 Whereto herselfe he did to wimesse call ;
 Who, being askt, accordingly confessed all.

xxiv.

Thereat exceeding wroth was Satyran ;
 And wroth with Satyran was Blandamour ;
 And wroth with Blandamour was Erivan ;
 And at them both Sir Paridell did loure.
 So all together stird up strifull stoure,
 And readie were new battell to darraigne :
 Each one profest to be her paramoure,
 And vow'd with speare and shield it to maintaine ;
 Ne iudges powre, ne reasons rule, mote them
 restraine.

xxv.

Which troublous stirre when Satyrane aviz'd,
 He gan to cast how to appease the same,
 And, to accord them all, this meanes deviz'd :
 First in the midst to set that fayrest Dame,
 To whom each one his chalenge should disclame,
 And he himselfe his right would eke release :
 Then, looke to whom she voluntarie came,
 He should without disturbance her possesse :
Sweete is the love that comes alone with willingness.

xxvi.

They all agreed ; and then that snowy Mayd
 Was in the midstest plast among them all :
 All on her gazing wisht, and vovd, and prayd,
 And to the queene of Beautie close did call,
 That she unto their portion might befall.
 Then when she long had lookt upon each one,
 As though she wished to have pleas'd them all,
 At last to Braggadochio selfe alone
 She came of her accord, in spight of all his fone.

xxi. 8. — his one :] "His one" is "his only." UPTON
 xxv. 9. — alone] That is, without compulsion. So
 in the next stanza, "Alone she came," &c. CHURCH.
 xxvi. 4. *And to the queene of Beautie close did call,*
 That is, *secretly*. Prayed in secret to VENUS. UPTON.

xxvii.

Which when they all beheld, they chaft, and rag'd,
And woxe nigh mad for very hart's despight,
That from revenge their willes they scarce as-
swag'd :

Some thought from him her to have reft by might ;
Some proffer made with him for her to fight :
But he nought car'd for all that they could say ;
For he their words as wind esteemed light :
Yet not fit place he thought it there to stay,
But secretly from thence that night her bore away.

xxviii.

They which remaynd, so soone as they perceiv'd
That she was gone, departed thence with speed,
And follow'd them, in mind her to have reav'd
From wight unworthie of so noble heed.
In which poursuit how each one did succede,
Shall else be told in order, as it fell.
But now of Britomart it here doth neede
The hard adventures and strange haps to tell ;
Since with the rest she went not after Florimell.

xxix.

For soone as she them saw to discord set,
Her list no longer in that place abide ;
But, taking with her lovely Amoret,
Upon her first adventure forth did ride,
To seeke her lov'd, making blind Love her guide.
Unluckie Mayd, to seeke her enemye !
Unluckie Mayd, to seeke him farre and wide,
Whom, when he was unto herselfe most nie,
She through his late disguizement could him not
descrie !

xxx.

So much the more her griefe, the more her toyle :
Yet neither toyle nor griefe she once did spare,
In seeking him that should her paine assoyle ;
Whereto great comfort in her sad misfare
Was Amoret, companion of her care :
Who likewise sought her lover long miswent,
The gentle Scudamour, whose heart whileare
That stryfull Hag with jealous discontent
Had filld, that he to fell reveng was fully bent ;

xxxi.

Bent to revenge on blamelesse Britomart
The crime which cursed Atè kindled earst,
The which like thornes did pricke his gealous hart,
And through his soule like poysned arrow perst,
That by no reason it might be reverst,
For ought that Glauce could or doe or say :
For, aye the more that she the same reherst,
The more it ganld and griev'd him night and day,
That nought but dire revenge his anger mote defray.

xxxii.

So as they travelled, the dropping Night
Covered with cloudie storme and bitter showre,
That dreadfull seem'd to every living wight,
Upon them fell, before her timely howre ;
That forced them to seeke some covert bowre,
Where they might hide their heads in quiet rest,
And shrowd their persons from that stormie
stowre.

xxix. 5. To seeke her lov'd,] Her beloved Arthegal.
UPTON.

xxx. 6. — miswent,] Wandered, gone astray. TODD.

xxx. 8. That stryfull Hag] Ат. СЛУИИИ.

Not farre away, not meete for any guest,
They spide a little cottage, like some poore mans
nest.

xxxiii.

Under a steepe hilles side it placed was,
There where the mouldred earth had cav'd the
And fast beside a little brooke did pas [banke ;
Of muddie water, that like puddle stanke,
By which few crooked fallowes grew in ranke :
Whereto approaching nigh, they heard the sound
Of many yron hammers beating ranke,
And answering their wearie turnes around,
That seemed some blacksmith dwelt in that desert
ground.

xxxiv.

There entring in, they found the goodman selfe
Full busily unto his worke ybent ;
Who was to weete a wretched wearis elfe,
With hollow eyes and rawbone cheekes forspent,
As if he had in prison long bene pent :
Full blacke and griesly did his face appeare,
Besmeard with smoke that nigh his eye-sight blent ;
With rugged beard, and hoarie shagged heare,
The which he never wont to combe, or comely sheare.

xxxv.

Rude was his garment, and to rags all rent,
Ne better had he, ne for better cared :
With blistred hands amongst the cinders brent,
And fingers filthie with long nayles unpared,
Right fit to rend the food on which he fared.
His name was Care ; a Blacksmith by his trade,
That neither day nor night from working spared,
But to small purpose yron wedges made ;
Those be Unquiet Thoughts that careful minds
invade.

xxxvi.

In which his worke he had sixe servants prest,
About the anvile standing evermore
With huge great hammers, that did never rest
From heaping stroakes which theereon soused sore :
All sixe strong groomes, but one then other more ;
For by degrees they all were disagreed ;
So likewise did the hammers which they bore
Like belles in greatnesse orderly succeed,
That he, which was the last, the first did farre
exceede.

xxxvii.

He like a monstrous gyant seem'd in sight,
Farre passing Bronteus or Pyracmon great,
The which in Lipari doe day and night
Frame thunderbolts for Ioves avengefull threate.
So dreadfully he did the anvile beat,
That seem'd to dust he shortly would it drive :
So huge his hammer, and so fierce his heat,
That seem'd a rocke of diamond it could rive
And rend asunder quite, if he thereto list strive.

xxxviii.

Sir Scudamour there entring much admired
The manner of their worke and wearie paine ;

xxxix. 9. — nest.] In familiar language used for
house. Lat. nidus. TODD.

xxxix. 2. — cav'd] Made hollow. Lat. cavare. СЛУИИИ.

xxxiii. 7. — ranke,] Fiercely. СЛУИИИ.

xxxiv. 1. — the goodman selfe] The master of the
house. A phrase, it may be observed, often used in our
Translation of the Bible. TODD.

And, having long beheld, at last enquired
The cause and end thereof; but all in vaine;
For they for nought would from their worke
refraine,
Ne let his speeches come unto their eare.
And eke the breathfull bellows blew amaine,
Like to the northren winde, that none could heare;
Those Pensifenesse did move; and Sighes the bel-
lows weare.

xxxix.

Which when that Warriour saw, he said no more,
But in his armour layd him downe to rest:
To rest he layd him downe upon the flore,
(Whylome for ventrous Knights the bedding best,)
And thought his wearie limbs to have redrest.
And that old aged Dame, his faithfull Squire,
Her feeble ioyns layd eke adowne to rest;
That needed much her weake age to desire,
After so long a travell which them both did tire.

xl.

There lay Sir Scudamour long while expecting
When gentle sleepe his heavie eyes would close;
Oft chaunging sides, and oft new place electing,
Where better seem'd he mote himselfe repose;
And oft in wrath he thence againe uprose;
And oft in wrath he layd him downe againe.
But, wheresoeere he did himselfe dispose,
He by no meanes could wished ease obtaine:
So every place seem'd painefull, and ech changing
vaine.

xli.

And evermore, when he to sleepe did thinke,
The hammers sound his senses did molest;
And evermore, when he began to winke,
The bellows noyse disturb'd his quiet rest,
Ne suffred sleepe to settle in his brest.
And all the night the dogs did barke and howle
About the house, at sent of stranger guest:
And now the crowing cocke, and now the owle
Lowde shriking, him afflicted to the very sowle.

xlii.

And, if by fortune any litle nap
Upon his heavie eye-lids chaunst to fall,
Eftsoones one of those villeins him did rap
Upon his head-peece with his yron mall;
That he was soone awaked therewithall,
And lightly started up as one affrayd,
Or as if one him suddenly did call:
So oftentimes he out of sleepe abrayd,
And then lay musing long on that him ill apayd.

xliii.

So long he muzed, and so long he lay,
That at the last his wearie sprite opprest
With fleshly weaknesse, which no creature may
Long time resist, gave place to kindly rest,
That all his senses did full soone arrest:
Yet, in his soundest sleepe, his daily feare
His ydle braine gan busily molest,
And made him dreame those two disloyall were:
The things, that day most minds, at night doe most
appeare.

xliv.

With that the wicked Carle, the Maister smith,
A paire of red-whot yron tongs did take

xlii. 9. ——— ill apayd.] *Dissatisfied or disturbed him.*
FODD.

Out of the burning cinders, and therewith
Under his side him nipt; that, forst to wake,
He felt his hart for very paine to quake,
And started up avenged for to be
On him the which his quiet slomber brake:
Yet, looking round about him, none could see;
Yet did the smart remaine, though he himselfe did
flee.

xlv.

In such disquiet and hart-fretting payne
He all that night, that too long night, did passe.
And now the day out of the ocean mayne
Began to peepe above this earthly masse,
With pearly dew sprinkling the morning grasse:
Then up he rose like heavie lump of lead,
That in his face, as in a looking glasse,
The signes of anguish one mote plainly read,
And ghesse the man to be dismayd with gealous
dread.

xlvi.

Unto his lofty steede he clombe anone,
And forth upon his former voiage fared,
And with him eke that aged Squire attone;
Who, whatsoever perill was prepared,
Both equal paines and equal perill shared:
The end whereof and daungerous event
Shall for another Cauticle be spared:
But here my wearie teeme, nigh over-spent,
Shall breath itselfe awhile after so long a went.

CANTO VI.

Both Scudamour and Arthegall
Doe fight with Britomart:
He sees her face; doth fall in love,
And soone from her depart.

i.

WHAT equal torment to the griefe of mind
And pynning anguish hid in gentle hart,
That inly feeds itselfe with thoughts unkind,
And nourisheth her owne consuming smart!
What medicine can any leaches art
Yeeld such a sore, that doth her grievance hide,
And will to none her maladie impart!
Such was the wound that Scudamour did gride;
For which Dan Phebus selfe cannot a salve provide.

ii.

Who having left that restless House of Care,
The next day, as he on his way did ride,
Full of melancholie and sad misfare
Through misconcept, all unawares espide
An armed Knight under a Forrest side
Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede;
Who, soone as them approaching he descrie,
Gan towards them to pricke with eger speede,
That seem'd he was full bent to some mischiçuous
deede.

iii.

Which Scudamour perceiving forth isseed
To have rencountred him in equal race;
Bnt, soone as th' other nigh approaching veded

xlvi. 9. ——— after so long a went.] That is, after hav-
ing gone forward and backward, as in ploughing, so many
times. CHURCH.

ARG. 3. He] Arthegall. CHURCH.

The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase
And voide his course ; at which so suddain case
He wondred much : but th' other thus can say ;
" Ah ! gentle Scudamour, unto your grace
I me submit, and you of pardon pray,
That almost had against you trespassed this day."

IV.

Whereto thus Scudamour ; " Small harme it were
For any Knight upon a ventrous Knight
Without displeasance for to prove his spere.
But reade you, Sir, sith ye my name have hight,
What is your owne, that I mote you requite."
" Certes," sayd he, " ye mote as now excuse
Me from discovering you my name aright:
For time yet serves that I the same refuse ;
But call ye me the Salvage Knight, as others use."

V.

" Then this, Sir Salvage Knight," quoth he,
" areede ;
Or doe you here within this forrest wonne,
That seemeth well to answer to your weede,
Or have ye it for some occasion dome ?
That rather seemes, sith known armes ye
shonne."
" This other day," sayd he, " a stranger Knight
Shame and dishonour hath unto me donne ;
On whom I waite to wreake that foule despight,
Whenever he this way shall passe by day or night."

VI.

" Shame be his meede," quoth he, " that meaneth
shame !
But what is he by whom ye shamed were ?"
" A stranger Knight," sayd he, " unknowne by
name,
But knowne by fame, and by an hebene speare
With which he all that met him downe did beare.
He, in an open turney lately held,
Fro me the honour of that game did reare ;
And having me, all wearie earst, downe feld,
The fayrest Ladie reft, and ever since withheld."

VII.

When Scudamour heard mention of that speare,
He wist right well that it was Britomart,
The which from him his fairest Love did beare.
Tho gan he swell in every inner part
For fell despight, and gnaw his gealous hart,
That thus he sharply sayd ; " Now by my head,
Yet is not this the first unknighly part, [read,
Which that same Knight, whom by his lance I
Hoth doen to noble Knights, that many makes him
dread :

VIII.

" For lately he my Love hath fro me reft,
And eke defiled with foule villanie
The sacred pledge which in his faith was left,
In shame of knighthood and fidelitie ;

III. 5. *And voide his course ;*] That is, and turn his horse aside. CHURCH.

III. 6. — can say ;] That is, began to say. UPON.

V. 4. — donne ?] Put on. A common expression in the West of England. UPON.

VI. 1. *Shame be his meede, quoth he, that meaneth shame !*] The motto of the Knights of Maidenhead : " Honi soit qui mal y pense." UPON.

VI. 7. — did reare ;] Reare is here used in the sense of obtain or achieve. TODD.

The which ere long full deare he shall abie :
And if to that avenge by you decreed
This hand may helpe, or succour ought supplie,
It shall not fayle whenso ye shall it need."
So both to wreake their wrathes on Britomart
agreed.

IX.

Whiles thus they communed, lo ! farre away
A Knight soft ryding towards them they spyde,
Attyr'd in forraine armes and straunge aray:
Whom when they nigh approcht, they plaine
descryde
To be the same for whom they did abyde.
Sayd then Sir Scudamour, " Sir Salvage Knight,
Let me this crave, sith first I was defyde,
That first I may that wrong to him requite:
And, if I hap to fayle, you shall recure my right."

X.

Which being yeilded, he his threatfull speare
Gan fewriter, and against her fiercely ran.
Who soone as she him saw approching neare
With so fell rage, herselfe she lightly gan
To dight, to welcome him well as she can ;
But entertaind him in so rude a wise,
That to the ground she smote both horse and man ;
Whence neither greatly hasted to arise,
But on their common harmes together did devise.

XI.

But Artegall, beholding his mischaunce,
New matter added to his former fire ;
And, eft aventring his steele-headed lance,
Against her rode, full of despiteous ire,
That nought but spoyle and vengeance did require:
But to himselfe his felonous intent
Returning disappointed his desire,
Whiles unawares his saddle he forwent,
And found himselfe on ground in great amazement.

XII.

Lightly he started up out of that stound,
And snatching forth his direfull deadly blade
Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound
Thrust to an hynd within some covert glade,
Whom without peril he cannot invade:
With such fell greedines he her assayled,
That though she mounted were, yet he her made
To give him ground, (so much his force prevayled,)
And shun his mightie strokes, gainst which no
armes avayled.

XIII.

So, as they coursed here and there, it chaunst
That, in her wheeling round, behind her crest
So sorely he her strooke, that thence it glaunst
Adowne her hacke, the which it fairly blest
From foule mischance ; ne did it ever rest,
Till on her horses hinder parts it fell ;
Where byting deepe so deadly it imprest,

IX. 9. — you shall recure my right.] You shall recover or regain my right. TODD.

XI. 3. — aventring] Pushing forward his spear : apparently adopted, as Mr. Upton has observed, from the Italian *avventare*, to dart. TODD.

XI. 6. *But &c.*] But his mischievous design, recoiling upon himself, disappointed &c. CHURCH.

XII. 3. — that thence it glaunst] That is, the weapon glaunst : an ellipsis. T. WARTON.

XIII. 4. — it fairly blest] Preserved. TODD.

That quite it chynd his backe behind the sell,
And to alight on foote her algates did compell:

XIV.

Like as the lightning-brond from riven skie,
Throwne out by angry love in his vengeance,
With dreadfull force fallcs on some steepe hie ;
Which battring downe, it on the church doth
And teares it all with terrible mischance. [glance,
Yet she no whit dismayd her steed forsooke ;
And, casting from her that enchanted lance,
Unto her sword and shield her soone betooke ;
And therewithall at him right furiously she strooke.

XV.

So furiously she strooke in her first heat,
Whiles with long fight on foot he breathlesse was,
That she him forced backward to retreat,
And yeld unto her weapon way to pas :
Whose raging rigour neither steele nor bras
Could stay, but to the tender flesh it went,
And pour'd the purple bloud forth on the gras ;
That all his mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent,
Shew'd all his bodie bare unto the cruell dent.

XVI.

At length, whenas he saw her hastie heat
Abate, and panting breath begin to fayle, [great,
He through long sufferance growing now more
Rose in his strength, and gan her fresh assayle,
Heaping linge strokes as thicke as showre of hayle,
And lashing dreadfully at every part,
As if he thought her soule to disentrayle.
Ah ! cruell hand, and thrise more cruell hart,
That worst such wrecche on Her to whom thou
dearest art !

XVII.

What yron courage ever could endure
To worke such outrage on so faire a creature !
And in his madnesse thinke with hands impure
To spoyle so goodly workmanship of nature,
The Maker selfe resembling in her feature !
Certes some hellish furie or some feend [ture,
This mischiefe framd, for their first loves defea-
To bath their hands in bloud of dearest freend,
Thereby to make their loves beginning their lives
end.

XVIII.

Thus long they trac'd and traverst to and fro,
Sometimes pursewing, and sometimes pursued,
Still as advantage they espyde thereto :
But toward th' end Sir Arthevall renewed
His strength still more, but she still more de-
crewed.
At last his lucklesse hand he heav'd on hie,
Having his forces all in one accrewed,
And therewith stroke at her so hideouslie,
That seemed nought but death mote be her destinie.

XIX.

The wicked stroke upon her helmet chaunst,
And with the force, which in itselfe it bore,

xix. 8. — it chynd] *Divided into parts.* TODD.

xvi. 7. — to disentrayle.] *To draw or drag forth.* UPTON.

xvii. 1. *What yron courage] What iron heart.* UPTON.

xviii. 5. — decrewd.] *Decreased.* Lat. *decreasco.* Fr. *decroitre, decru.* UPTON.

xviii. 7. — accrewed.] *Increased, united.* Lat. *acresco.* Fr. *acru.* UPTON.

Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth glaunst
Adowne in vaine, ne harm'd her any more.
With that, her angels face, unseene afore,
Like to the ruddie morne appeard in sight,
Deawed with silver drops through sweating sore ;
But somewhat redder then beseem'd aright,
Through toylesome heate and labour of her weary
fight :

XX.

And round about the same her yellow heare,
Having through stirring loosd their wonted band,
Like to a golden border did appeare,
Framed in goldsmithes forge with cunning hand :
Yet goldsmithes cunning could not understand
To frame such subtil wire, so shinie cleare ;
For it did glister like the golden sand,
The which Pactolus with his waters shere
Throwes forth upon the rivage round about him nere.

XXI.

And as his hand he up againe did reare,
Thinking to worke on her his utmost wracke,
His powrelesse arme benumbd with secret feare
From his revengefull purpose shronke abacke,
And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke
Fell downe to ground, as if the steele had sence
And felt some ruth, or sence his hand did lacke,
Or both of them did thinke obedience
To doe to so divine a Beauties excellence.

XXII.

And he himselfe, long gazing thereupon,
At last fell humbly downe upon his knee,
And of his wonder made religion,
Weening some heavenly goddesse he did see,
Or else unweeting what it else might bee ;
And pardon her besought his error frayle,
That had done outrage in so high degrec :
Whilst trembling horrour did his sense assayle,
And made ech member quake, and manly hart to
quayle.

XXIII.

Nathelesse she, full of wrath for that late stroke,
All that long while upheld her wrathfull hand,
With fell intent on him to bene ywroke ;
And, looking sterne, still over him did stand,
Threatning to strike unless he would withstand ;
And bad him rise, or surely he should die.
But, die or live, for nought he would upstand ;
But her of pardon prayd more earnestlie,
Or wreake on him her will for so great iniurie.

XXIV.

Which whenas Scudamour, who now abrayd,
Beheld, whereas he stood not farre aside,
He was therewith right wondrously dismayd ;
And drawing nigh, whenas he plaïne descride
That peerelesse paterne of dame Natures pride
And heavenly image of perfection,
He blest himselfe as one sore terrifide ;
And, turning feare to faint devotion,
Did worship her as some celestial vision.

XXV.

But Glancè, seeing all that chaunced there,
Well weeting how their errorr to assoyle,

xx. 8. — his waters shere] *Clear.* TODD.

xx. 9. — the rivage] *The shore.* Fr. CHURCH.

xxii. 3. *And of his wonder &c.]* That is, and turned his
wonder into devotion. S. e. st. 24. CHURCH.

Full glad of so good end, to them drew nere,
 And her salewd with seemely bel-accoyle,
 Ioyous to see her safe after long toyle :
 Then her besought, as she to her was deare,
 To graunt unto those warriours truce awhyle ;
 Which yeelded, they their bevers up did reare,
 And shew'd themselves to her such as indeed they
 were.

xxvi.

When Britomart with sharpe avizefull eye
 Beheld the lovely face of Artegall
 Tempred with sternesse and stout maiestie,
 She gan eftsouones it to her mind to call
 To be the same which, in her fathers hall,
 Long since in that enchanted glasse she saw :
 Therewith her wrathfull courage gan appall,
 And haughtie spirits meekely to adaw,
 That her enhanced hand she downe can soft with-
 draw.

xxvii.

Yet she it forst to have againe upheld,
 As fayning choler which was turn'd to cold :
 But ever, when his visage she beheld,
 Her hand fell downe, and would no longer hold
 The wrathfull weapon gainst his countenance bold :
 But, when in vaine to fight she oft assayd,
 She arm'd her tongue, and thought at him to
 scold :
 Nathlesse her tongue not to her will obayd,
 But brought forth speeches myld when she would
 have missayd.

xxviii.

But Sendamour now woxen inly glad
 That all his gealous feare he false had found,
 And how that Hag his Love abused had
 With breach of faith and loyaltie unsound,
 The which long time his grieved hart did wound,
 He thus bespake ; " Certes, Sir Artegall,
 I ioy to see you lout so low on ground,
 And now become to live a Ladies thrall,
 That whylome in your minde wont to despise them all.

xxix.

Soone as she heard the name of Artegall,
 Her hart did leape, and all her heart-strings
 tremble,
 For sudden ioy and secret feare withall ;
 And all her vital powres, with motion nimble
 To succour it, themselves gan there assemble ;
 That by the swift recourse of flushing blood
 Right plaine appeard, though she it would dis-
 semble,
 And fayned still her former angry mood,
 Thinking to hide the depth by troubling of the
 flood.

xxv. 4. — salewd.] Fr. *Saluted*. TODD.
 Ibid. — bel-accoyle.] *Kind salutation and reception*.

UPRON.
 xxvi. 1. — with sharpe avizefull eye.] With *circum-
 spect eye*. TODD.

xxvi. 5. — hall,] Here used for *closet* or *chamber*.
 CHURCH.

xxvi. 8. — to adaw,] *To daunt*, as in F. Q. III. vii.
 13. UPRON.

xxvi. 9. — enhanced] *Raised, lifted up*. UPRON.
 xxvii. 9. — when she would have missayd,] When she
 would have spoken otherwise, or, the contrary. CHURCH.

xxx.

When Glancè thus gan wisely all upknit ;
 " Ye gentle Knights, whom fortune here hath
 To be spectators of this uncoouth fit, [brought
 Which secret fate hath in this Ladie wrought
 Against the course of kind, ne mervaile nought ;
 Ne thenceforth feare the thing that hethertoo
 Hath troubled both your mindes with idle thought,
 Fearing least she your Loves away should woo ;
 Feared in vaine, sith meanes ye see there wants
 theretoo.

xxxi.

" And you, Sir Artegall, the Salvage Knight,
 Henceforth may not disdaine that womans hand
 Hath conquered you anew in second fight :
 For whylome they have conquered sea, and land,
 And heaven itselfe, that nought may them with-
 Ne henceforth he rebellious unto love, [stand :
 That is the crowne of Knighthood and the hand
 Of noble mindes derived from above,
 Which, being knit with vertue, never will remove.

xxxii.

" And you, faire Ladie Knight, my dearest Dame,
 Relent the rigour of your wrathfull will,
 Whose fire were better turn'd to other flame ;
 And, wiping out remembrance of all ill,
 Graunt him your grace ; but so that he fulfill
 The penance which ye shall to him impart :
 For lovers heaven must passe by sorrowes hell."
 Thereat full inly blushed Britomart ;
 But Artegall close-smyling ioy'd in secret hart.

xxxiii.

Yet durst he not make love so suddenly,
 Ne thinke th' affection of her hart to draw
 From one to other so quite contrary :
 Besides her modest countenance he saw
 So goodly grave, and full of princely aw,
 That it his ranging fancie did refraine,
 And loser thoughts to lawfull bounds withdraw ;
 Whereby the passion grew more fierce and faine,
 Like to a stubborne steede whom strong hand
 would restraine.

xxxiv.

But Sendamour, whose hart twixt doubtfull feare
 And feeble hope hung all this while suspence,
 Desiring of hiis Amoret to heare
 Some gladfull newes and sure intelligence,
 Her thus bespake ; " But, Sir, without offence
 Mote I request your tydings of my Love,
 My Amoret, sith you her freed fro thence
 Where she, captived long, great woes did prove ;
 That where ye left I may her seeke, as doth behove."

xxxv.

To whom thus Britomart ; " Certes, Sir Knight,
 What is of her become, or whether reft,
 I cannot unto you aread aright.
 For from that time I from enchaunters theft
 Her freed, in which ye her all hopelesse left,
 I her preserv'd from perill and from feare,
 And evermore from villenie her kept :
 Ne ever was there wight to me more deare
 Then she, ne unto whom I more true love did beare"

xxxv. 5. — But, Sir,] Addressing Britomart in her
 assumed character of an Errant Knight. UPRON.

xxxvi.

"Till on a day, as through a desert wyld
We travelled, both wearie of the way
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld;
Where fearelesse I to sleepe me downe did lay:
But, whenas I did out of sleepe abray,
I found her not where I her left whyleare,
But thought she wandred was, or gone astray:
I cal'd her loud, I sought her farre and neare;
But no where could her find, nor tydings of her
heare."

xxxvii.

When Scudamour those heavie tydings heard,
His hart was thrild with point of deadly feare,
Ne in his face or blond or life appeared;
But senselesse stood, like to a mazed steare
That yet of mortal stroke the stound doth beare:
Till Glaucè thus; "Faire Sir, be nought dismayd
With needlesse dread, till certaintie ye heare;
For yetshe may be safe though somewhat strayd:
Its best to hope the best, though of the worst
affrayd."

xxxviii.

Nathesle he hardly of her chearefull speech
Did comfort take, or in his troubled sight
Shew'd change of better cheare; so sore a breach
That sudden newes had made into his spright;
Till Britomart him fairely thus behight;
"Great cause of sorrow certes, Sir, ye have;
But comfort take; for, by this heavens light,
I vow ye dead or living not to leave,
Til I her find, and wreake on him that did her
reave."

xxxix.

Therewith he rested, and well pleased was.
So, peace being confirm'd amongst them all,
They tooke their steeds, and forward thence did
pas
Unto some resting place, which mote befall;
All being guided by Sir Artegall:
Where goodly solace was unto them made,
And dayly feasting both in bowre and hall,
Untill that they their wounds well healed had,
And wearie limmes recur'd after late usage bad.

xl.

In all which time Sir Artegall made way
Unto the love of noble Britomart,
And with meeke service and much suit did lay
Continual siege unto her gentle hart;
Which, being whylome launcht with loving darty,
More eath was new impression to receive;
However she her paynd with womanish art
To hide her wound, that none might it perceive:
Vaine is the art that seekes itselfe for to deceive.

xli.

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought her,
With faire entreatie and sweet blandishment,
That at the length unto a bay he brought her,
So as she to his speeches was content
To lend an eare, and softly to relent. [pour'd
At last, through many voves which forth he
And many othes, she yeelded her consent

xxxvi. 5. — abray.] *awake*. TODD.xxxvii. 4. *But senselesse stood*.] That is, he senseless
esto: d: an ellipsis. T. WARTON.xxxviii. 5. — behight:] *Promised*. TODD.

To be his Love, and take him for her Lord,
Till they with marriage meet might finish thia
accord.

xlii.

Tho, when they had long time there taken rest,
Sir Artegall, who all this while was bound
Upon an hard adventure yet in quest,
Fit time for him thence to depart it found,
To follow that which he did long propound;
And unto her his congee came to take:
But her therewith full sore displeas he found,
And loth to leave her late betrothed Make;
Her dearest Love full loth so shortly to forsake.

xliii.

Yet he with strong perswasions her asswaged,
And wonne her will to suffer him depart;
For which his faith with her he fast engaged,
And thousand voves from bottoome of his hart,
That, all so soone as he by wit or art
Could that atchieve whereto he did aspire,
He unto her would speedily revert:
No longer space thereto he did desire,
But till the horned moone three courses did expire

xliv.

With which she for the present was appeased,
And yeelded leave, however malcontent
She inly were and in her miud displeasd,
So, early on the morrow next, he went
Forth on his way to which he was yent;
Ne wight him to attend, or way to guide,
As whylome was the custome ancient [ride,
Mongst Knights when on adventures they did
Save that she algates him a while accompanide.

xlv.

And by the way she sundry purpose found
Of this or that, the time for to delay,
And of the perils whereto he was bound,
The feare whereof seem'd much her to affray:
But all she did was but to weare out day.
Full oftentimes she leave of him did take;
And eft againe deviz'd somewhat to say,
Which she forgot, whereby excuse to make:
So loth she was his companie for to forsake.

xlvi.

At last when all her speeches she had spent,
And new occasion fayld her more to find,
She left him to his fortunes government,
And backe returned with right heavie mind
To Scudamour, whom she had left behind;
With whom she went to seeke faire Amoret,
Her second care, though in another kind:
For vertues onely sake, which doth beget
True love and faithfull friendship, she by her did
set.

xlvii.

Backe to that desert Forrest they retyred,
Where sorie Britomart had lost her late:
There they her sought, and every where inquired
Where they might tydings get of her estate;

xliii. 7. — revert:] *Return*. Lat. *revertio*. JORTIN.xlv. 1. — *sundry purpose*] Various discourse.
CHURCH.xlvii. 9. — *she by her did set*.] She did set by, or
esteem, her, (viz. Amoret,) only for the sake of *virtus*,
which begets true love. UFTON.

Yet found they none. But, by what haplesse fate
Or hard misfortune she was thence conuayd,
And stolne away from her beloved mate,
Were long to tell; therefore I here will stay
Untill another tyde, that I it finish may.

CANTO VII.

Amoret rapt by greedie Lust
Helphcebe saves from dread:
The Squire her loves; and, being blam'd,
His daies in dole doth lead.

i.

GREAT god of Love, that with thy cruell darts
Doest conquer greatest conquerors on ground,
And setst thy kingdome in the captiue harts
Of Kings and Keasars to thy service bound;
What glorie or what guerdon hast thou found
In feeble Ladies tyranning so sore,
And adding anguish to the bitter wound
With which their lives thou lanchest long afore,
By heaping stormes of trouble on them daily more!

ii.

So whylome didst thou to faire Florimell;
And so and so to noble Britomart:
So doest thou now to her of whom I tell,
The lovely Amoret, whose gentle hart
Thou martyrrest with sorow and with smart,
In salvage Forrests and in deserts wide
With beares and tygers taking heaui part,
Withouten comfort and withouten guide;
That pittie is to heare the perils which she tride.

iii.

So soone as she with that brave Britonesse
Had left that Turneyment for beauties prise,
They travel'd long; that now for wearinesse,
Both of the way and warlike exercise,
Both through a forest ryding did devise
T' slight, and rest their wearie limbs a while.
There heaui sleepe the eye-lids did surprise
Of Britomart after long tedious toyle,
That did her passed paines in quiet rest assoyle.

iv.

The whiles faire Amoret, of nought affeard,
Walkt through the wood, for pleasure or for need,
When suddenly behind her backe she heard
One rushing forth out of the thickest weed,
That, ere she backe could turne to taken heed,
Had unawares her snatched up from ground:
Feebly she shriekt, but so feebly indeed
That Britomart heard not the shrilling sound,
There where through weary travel she lay sleeping
sound.

v.

It was to weet a wilde and salvage man;
Yet was no man, but onely like in shape,
And eke in stature higher by a span;
All overgrowne with haire, that could awhape

And hardy hart; and his wide mouth did gape
With huge great teeth, like to a tusked bore:
For he liv'd all on ravin and on rape
Of men and beasts; and fed on fleshy gore,
The signe whereof yet stain'd his bloody lips afore.

vi.

His neather lip was not like man nor beast,
But like a wide deepe poke downe hanging low,
In which he wont the reliekes of his feast
And cruell spoyle, which he had spard, to stow:
And over it his huge great nose did grow,
Full dreadfully empurpled all with blood; [glow,
And downe both sides two wide long eares did
And rought downe to his waste when up he stood,
More great then th' eares of elephants by Indus
food.

vii.

His wast was with a wreath of yvie greene
Engirt about, ne other garment wore;
For all his haire was like a garment seene;
And in his hand a fall young oake he bore,
Whose knottie snags were sharpened all afore,
And death'd in fire for Steele to be in sted.
But whence he was, or of what wombe ybore,
Of beasts, or of the earth, I have not red;
But certes was with milke of wolves and tygres fed.

viii.

This ugly creature in his armes her snatcht,
And through the Forrest bore her quite away
With briers and bushes all to rent and scratcht
Ne care he had, ne pittie of the pray, [day:
Which many a Knight had sought so many a
He stayed not, but in his armes her bearing
Ran, till he came to th' end of all his way,
Unto his cave farre from all peoples hearing,
And there he threw her in, nought feeling, ne nought
fearing.

ix.

For she (deare Ladie) all the way was dead,
Whilst he in armes her bore; but, when she felt
Herselfe downe soust, she waked out of dread
Streight into grieft, that her deare hart nightswelt,
And eft gan into tender teares to melt.
Then when she lookt about, and nothing found
But darknesse and dread horrour where she dwelt,
She almost fell againe into a swound;
Ne wist whether above she were or under ground.

x.

With that she heard some one close by her side
Sighing and sobbing sore, as if the paine
Her tender hart in peeces would divide:
Which she long listning, softly askt againe
What mister wight it was that so did plaine?
To whom thus answer'd was; "Ah! wretched
wight,
That seekes to know anothers grieft in vaine,
Unweeting of thine owne like haplesse plight:
Selfe to forget to mind another is ore-sight!"

vii. 6. And death'd in fire] And bathed, i. e. warmed in the fire, and thence hardened. UPRON.

viii. 3. — all to rent] The word *to* is often used in composition with verbs by our old writers; and generally with the word *all* prefixed: and thus *all to-rent* signifies altogether or entirely rent. TOOD.

ix. 4. — swelt,] Swooned. TOND

i. 6. — tyranning] Acting the part of a tyrant. GR. *tyrannia*. TOOD.

ii. 5. — martyrrest] Dost torment, as the French use *martyrer*. TOOD.

iii. 9. — assoyle.] Liberate or set free TOOD.

v. 4. — awhape] Terrify. UPRON.

xi.

"Aye me!" said she, "where am I, or with whom?
Among the living, or among the dead?
What shall of me unhappy Maid become?
Shall death be th' end, or ought else worse, ahead."
"Unhappy Mayd," then answer'd she, "whose
dread

Untride is lesse then when thou shalt it try:
Death is to him, that wretched life doth lead,
Both grace and gaine; but he in hell doth lie,
That lives a loathed life, and wishing cannot die.

xii.

"This dismall day hath thee a caytive made,
And vassall to the vilest wretch alive;
Whose cursed usage and ungodly trade
The heavens abhorre, and into darknesse drive:
For on the spoile of women he doth live,
Whose bodies chaste, whenever in his powre
He may them catch unable to gainestrive,
He with his shamefull lust doth first deflowre,
And afterwarde themselves doth cruelly devour.

xiii.

"Now twenty daies, by which the sonnes of men
Divide their works, have past through heven
sheene,
Since I was brought into this dolefull den;
During which space these sory eies have seen
Seaven women by him slaine and eaten elene:
And now no more for him but I alone,
And this old woman, here remaining beene,
Till thou cam'st hither to augment our mone;
And of us three to-morrow he will sure eate one."

xiv.

"Ah! dreadfull tidings which thou doest declare,"
Quoth she, "of all that ever hath bene knowne!
Full many great calamities and rare
This feeble brest endured hath, but none
Equal to this, wherever I have gone.
But what are you, whom like unlucky lot
Hath linckt with me in the same chaine attone?"
"To tell," quoth she, "that which ye see, needs not;
A wofull wretched maid, of God and man forgot!

xv.

"But what I was, it irkes me to reherse;
Daughter unto a Lord of high degree;
That ioyd in happy pease, till Fates perverse
With guilefull Love did secretly agree
To overthrow my state and dignitie.
It was my lot to love a gentle swaine,
Yet was he but a Squire of low degree;
Yet was he meet, unless mine eye did faine,
By any Ladies side for leman to have laue.

xvi.

"But, for his meannesse and disparagement,
My sire, who me too dearly well did love,
Unto my choise by no meanes would assent,
But often did my folly fowle reprove:
Yet nothing could my fixed mind remove,
But, whether will'd or nilled friend or foe,
I me resolv'd the utmost end to prove;
And, rather then my love abandon so,
Both sire and friends and all for ever to forgo.

xvii.

"Thenceforth I sought by secret meanes to worke
Time to my will, and from his wrathfull sight

To hide th' intent which in my heart did lurke,
Till I thereto had all things ready dight.
So on a day, unweeting unto wight,
I with that Squire agreeede away to flit,
And in a privy place, betwixt us hight,
Within a grove appointed him to meete;
To which I boldly came upon my feeble feete.

xviii.

"But ah! unhappy houre me thither brought:
For in that place where I him thought to find,
There was I found, contrary to my thought,
Of this accursed Carle of hellish kind,
The shame of men, and plague of womankind;
Who trussing me, as eagle doth his pray,
Me hether brought with him as swift as wind,
Where yet untouched till this present day,
I rest his wretched thrall, the sad Æmylia."

xix.

"Ah! sad Æmylia," then sayd Amoret,
"Thy ruefull plight I pittie as mine owne!
But ready to me, by what devise or wit
Hast thou in all this time from him unknowne
Thine honour sav'd, though into thralldome
throwne!" [here
"Through helpe," quoth she, "of this old woman
I have so done, as she to me hath showne:
For, ever when he hurnt in lustfull fire,
She in my stead supplide his bestiall desire."

xx.

Thus of their evils as they did discourse,
And each did other much bewaile and mone;
Loe! where the Villaine selfe, their sorrowes
source,
Came to the cave; and rolling thence the stone,
Which wont to stop the mouth thereof that none
Might issue forth, came rudely rushing in,
And, spreading over all the flore alone,
Gan dight himselfe unto his wonted sinne;
Which ended, then his bloody basket should beginne.

xxi.

Which whenas fearefull Amoret perceivd,
She staid not th' utmost end thereof to try,
But, like a ghastly gelt whose wits are reaved,
Ran forth in hast with hideous outcry,
For horrour of his shamefull villany:
But after her full lightly he uprose,
And her pursu'd as fast as she did flie:
Full fast she flies, and farre afore him goes,
Ne feels the thorns and thickets prick her tender
toes.

xxii.

Nor hedge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor dale she staires,
But over-leapes them all, like robucke light,
And through the thickest makes her nighest waies;
And evermore, when with regardfull sight
She looking backe espies that grievously wight
Approching nigh, she gins to mend her pace,
And makes her feare a spur to hast her flight;
More swift than Myrrh' or Daphne in her race,
Or any of the Thracian Nymphes in salvage chace.

xxi. 3. ——— gelt] *Gelding*. TODD.

xxii. 1. ——— she staires,] So all the editions. Either we must read "her staires," i. e. stops her, or the sense must be supplied thus: "She stays not for hedge," &c. CHURCH.

xxiii.

Long so she fled, and so he follow'd long ;
 Ne living aide for her on earth appears,
 But if the heavens helpe to redresse her wrong,
 Moved with pity of her plenteous teares.
 It fortunod Belphebe with her peares
 The woody Nimphs, and with that lovely Boy,
 Was hunting then the libbards and the beares
 In these wild woods, as was her wonted ioy,
 To banish sloth that oft doth noble mindes annoy.

xxiv.

It so befell, as oft it fals in chace,
 That each of them from other sundred were ;
 And that same gentle Squire arriv'd in place
 Where this same cursed Caytive did appeare
 Pursuing that faire Lady full of feare :
 And now he her quite overtaken had ;
 And now he her away with him did beare
 Under his arme, as seeming wondrous glad,
 That by his grenning laughter mote farre off be rad.

xxv.

Which dreary sight the gentle Squire espying
 Doth hast to crosse him by the nearest way,
 Led with that wofull Ladies piteous crying,
 And him assailes with all the might he may ;
 Yet will not he the lovely spoile downe lay,
 But with his craggy club in his right hand
 Defends himselfe, and saves his gotten pray :
 Yet had it bene right hard him to withstand,
 But that he was full light and nimble on the land.

xxvi.

Thereto the Villaine used craft in fight :
 For, ever when the Squire his iavelin shooke,
 He held the Lady forth before him right,
 And with her body, as a buckler, broke
 The puissance of his intended stroke :
 And if it chaunst, (as needs it must in fight,)
 Whilset he on him was greedy to be wroke,
 That any little blow on her did light,
 Then would he laugh aloud, and gather great
 delight.

xxvii.

Which subtil sleight did him encumber much,
 And made him oft, when he would strike, for-
 beare ;
 For hardly could he come the Carle to touch,
 But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare :
 Yet he his hand so carefully did beare,
 That at the last he did himselfe attaine,
 And therein left the pike-head of his speare :
 A streame of coleblacke blond thence gusht amaine,
 That all her silken garments did with blond be-
 staine.

xxviii.

With that he threw her rudely on the flore,
 And, laying both his hands upon his glave,
 With dreadfull strokes let drive at him so sore,
 That forst him fle abacke, himselfe to save :
 Yet he therewith so felly still did rave, [upreare,
 That scarce the Squire his hand could once

xxiii. 3. But if] *Unless.* TODD.xxv. 9. — he] *The Squire.* CHURCH.xxvii. 1. — him] *The Squire.* CHURCH.xxvii. 6. — himselfe] *The Carle.* CHURCH.xxviii. 2. — glave.] Properly a *sword*, but here means a *club*. See st. 25. CHURCH.

But, for advantage, ground unto him gave,
 Tracing and traversing, now here, now there ;
 For bootlesse thing it was to think such blowes to
 beare.

xxix.

Whilset thus in battell they embusied were,
 Belphebe, ranging in her Forrest wide,
 The hideous noise of their huge strokes did heare,
 And drew thereto, making her eare her guide :
 Whom when that Theefe approaching nigh espide
 With bow in hand and arrowes ready bent,
 He by his former combate would not bide,
 But fled away with ghastly dreriment,
 Well knowing her to be his deathes sole instrument.

xxx.

Whom seeing fle, she speedily poursewed
 With winged feete, as nimble as the winde,
 And ever in her bow she ready shewed
 The arrow to his deadly marke desynde :
 As when Latonaes daughter, cruell kynde,
 In vengeance of her mothers great disgrace,
 With fell despight her cruell arrowes tynde
 Gainst wofull Niobes unhappy race,
 That all the gods did mone her miserable case.

xxxi.

So well she sped her and so far she ventred,
 That, ore unto his hellish den he raught,
 Even as he ready was there to have entred,
 She sent an arrow forth with mighty draught,
 That in the very dore him overcaught,
 And, in his nape arriving, through it thrild
 His greedy throte, therewith in two distraught,
 That all his vital spirites thereby spild,
 And all his hairy brest with gory blood was filld.

xxxii.

Whom when on ground she groveling saw to rowle,
 She ran in hast his life to have bereft ;
 But, ere she could him reach, the sinfull sowle
 Having his carrion corse quite sencelesse left
 Was fled to hell, surcharg'd with spoile and theft :
 Yet over him she there long gazing stood,
 And oft admir'd his monstrous shape, and oft
 His mighty limbs, whilset all with filthy blood
 The place there over-flowne seemd like a sodaine
 flood.

xxxiii.

Thenceforth she past into his dreadfull den, [found,
 Where nought but darkesome drerincesse she
 Ne creature saw, but hearkned now and then
 Some litle whispering, and soft-groing sound.
 With that she askt, what ghosts there under
 Lay hid in horrour of eternall night ; [ground
 And bad them, if so be they were not bound,
 To come and shew themselves before the light.
 Now freed from feare and danger of that disnall
 Wight.

xxxiv.

Then forth the sad Æmylia issewed,
 Yet trembling every ioynt through former feare ;
 And after her the bag, there with her mewed,
 A foule and lothsome creature, did appeare ;
 A leman fit for such a lover deare :

xxxix. 6. — ready bent.] *Ready bent* agrees with
bow ; by a figure called *Synchysis*, which Spenser often
 uses. UPTON.

That mov'd Belphebe her no lesse to hate,
Then for to rue the others heavy cheare ;
Of whom she gan enquire of her estate ;
Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate.

xxxv.

Thence she them brought toward the place where
She left the gentle Squire with Amoret : [late
There she him found by that new lovely Mate,
Who lay the whiles in swoune, full sadly set,
From her faire eyes wiping the deawy wet
Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,
And handling soft the hurts which she did get :
For of that Carle she sorely bruz'd had benee,
Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to be
scene.

xxxvi.

Which when she saw with sodaine glauncing eye,
Her noble heart, with sight thereof, was filld
With deepe disdain and great indignity, [thrild
That in her wrath she thought them both have
With that selfe arrow which the Carle had killd :
Yetheld her wrathfull hand from vengeance sore :
But drawing nigh, ere he her well beheld,
"Is this the faith?" she said—and said no more,
But turnd her face, and fled away for evermore.

xxxvii.

He, seeing her depart, arose up light,
Right sore agrieved at her sharpe reproofe,
And follow'd fast : but, when he came in sight,
He durst not nigh approach, but kept aloofe,
For dread of her displeasure's utmost proofe :
And evermore, when he did grace entreat,
And framed speeches fit for his behoofe,
Her mortall arrowes she at him did threat,
And forst him backe with fowle dishonor to retreat.

xxxviii.

At last, when long he follow'd had in vaine,
Yet found no ease of grieffe nor hope of grace,
Unto those woods he turned backe againe,
Full of sad anguish and in heavy case :
And, finding there fit solitary place
For wofull wight, chose out a gloomy glade,
Where hardly eye mote see bright heavens face
For mossy trees, which covered all with shade
And sad melancholy ; there he his cabin made.

xxxix.

His wonted warlike weapons all he broke
And threw away, with vow to use no more,
Ne thenceforth ever strike in battell stroke,
Ne ever word to speake to woman more ;
But in that wilderness, of men forlore
And of the wicked world forgotten quight,
His hard mishap in dolor to deplore,
And wast his wretched daies in wofull plight :
So on himselfe to wreake his follies owne despight.

xl.

And eke his garment, to be thereto meet,
He wilfully did cut and shape anew ; [sweet
And his faire lockes, that wont with ointment
To be embanm'd, and sweat out dainty dew,
He let to grow and griesly to concrew,

xxxv. 6. — stild,] *Dropped.* Lat. *stillo.* Todd.
xxxv. 9. Als] *Aiso.* Sax. Todd.

xl 5. — to concrew,] *Grow together.* Lat. *concreasco.*
UPTON.

Uncomb'd, uncurl'd, and carelesly unshed ;
That in short time his face they overgrew,
And over all his shoulders did dispred,
That who he whilome was unneath was to be red.

xli.

There he continued in this carefull plight,
Wretchedly wearing out his youthly yeares,
Through wilfull penury consumed quight,
That like a pined ghost he soone appears :
For other food then that wilde forrest beares,
Ne other drinke there did he ever tast
Then running water tempered with his teares,
The more his weakened body so to wast :
That out of all mens knowledge he was werne at
last.

xlii.

For on a day, by fortune as it fell, [way,
His own deare Lord Prince Arthure came that
Seeking adventures where he mote heare tell ;
And, as he through the wandring wood did stray,
Having espide his cabin far away,
He to it drew, to weet who there did wonne ;
Weening therein some holy hermit lay,
That did resort of sinfull people shonne ;
Or else some woodman shrowded there from scorching
sunne.

xliii.

Arriving there he found this wretched man
Spending his daies in dolour and despaire,
And, through long fasting, woxen pale and wan,
All over-grown with rude and rugged haire ;
That albeit his owne dear Squire he were,
Yet he him knew not, ne aviz'd at all ;
But like strange wight, whom he had seene no
Saluting him, gan into speech to fall, [where,
And pittie much his plight, that liv'd like outcast
thrall.

xliv.

But to his speach he answered no whit,
But stood still mute, as if he had benee dum,
Ne signe of sence did shew, ne common wit,
As one with grieffe and anguise over-cum ;
And unto every thing did answer mumm :
And ever, when the Prince unto him spake,
He louted lowly, as did him becumm,
And humble homage did unto him make ;
Midst sorrow shewing ioyous semblance for his sake.

xlv.

At which his uncouth guise and usage quaint
The Prince did wonder much, yet could not
ghesse
The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint ;
Yet weend, by secret signes of manlinesse
Which close appeard in that rude brutishnesse,
That he whilome some gentle swaine had benee,
Traind up in feats of armes and knightlinesse ;
Which he observ'd, by that he him had seene
To weld his naked sword and try the edges keene

xlvi.

And eke by that he saw on every tree
How he the name of One engraven had

xl. 6. — and carelesly unshed ;] That is, *shed*, or
scattered round his shoulders and face. UPTON.

xlv. 1. — usage quaint] *Odd behaviour.* CHURCH.

xlv. 3. — constraint ;] *Uneasiness.* CHURCH.

Which likly was his liefest Love to be,
 From whom he now so sorely was bestad ;
 Which was by him BELPHEBE rightly rad :
 Yet who was that Belphebe he ne wist ;
 Yet saw he often how he wexed glad
 When he it heard, and how the ground he kist
 Wherein it written was, and how himselfe he blist.

XLVII.

Tho, when he long had marked his demeanor,
 And saw that all he said and did was vaine,
 Ne ought mote make him change his wonted tenor,
 Ne ought mote cease to mitigate his paine ;
 He left him there in languor to remaine,
 Till time for him should remedy provide,
 And him restore to former grace againe :
 Which, for it is too long here to abide,
 I will deferre the end untill another tide.

CANTO VIII.

The gentle Squire recovers grace:
 Sclander her guests doth steine:
 Corliambo chaseth Placidus,
 And is by Arthure slaine.

I.

WELL said the Wiseman, now prov'd true by this
 Which to this gentle Squire did happen late,
 That the displeasure of the mighty is
 Then death itselfe more dread and desperate ;
 For naught the same may calme, ne mitigate,
 Till time the tempest doe thereof delay
 With sufferance soft, which rigour can ahave,
 And have the sterne remembrance wypt away
 Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein infixd lay.

II.

Like as it fell to this unhappy Boy,
 Whose tender heart the faire Belphebe had
 With one sterne looke so daunted, that no ioy
 In all his life, which afterwards he lad,
 He ever tasted ; but with penance sad
 And pensive sorrow pind and wore away, [glad ;
 Ne ever laught, ne once shew'd countenance
 But alwaies wept and wailed night and day,
 As blasted bloosme through heat doth languish and
 decay :

III.

Till on a day, as in his wonted wise
 His doole he made, there chaunst a turle dove
 To come, where he his dolours did devise,
 That likewise late had lost her dearest love,
 Which losse her made like passion also prove :
 Who, seeing his sad plight, her tender heart
 With deare compassion deeply did emmove,
 That she gan mone his undeserved smart,
 And with her dolefull accent beare with him a part.

IV.

Shee sitting by him, as on ground he lay,
 Her mourefull notes full piteously did frame,
 And thereof made a lamentable lay,
 So sensibly compyl'd that in the same

i. 6. ——— [delay] Remove. put away. CHURCH.

ii. 4. ——— he lad.] Mr. Warton has noticed that *lad* or *late* for *let* often occurs in Chaucer. TODD.

iii. 2. *His dole*] *Complaint*. TODD.

Him seemed off he heard his owne right name.
 With that he forth would poure so plenteous teares,
 And beat his breast unworthy of such blame,
 And knocke his head, and rend his rugged heares,
 That could have perst the hearts of tigras and of
 beares.

V.

Thns, long this gentle bird to him did use
 Withouten dread of perill to repair
 Unto his wonne, and with her mournefull muse
 Him to recomfort in his greatest care,
 That much did ease his mourning and misfare :
 And every day, for guerdon of her song,
 He part of his small feast to her would share ;
 That, at the last, of all his woe and wrong
 Companion she became, and so continued long.

VI.

Upon a day, as she him sate beside,
 By chance he certaine miniments forth drew,
 Which yet with him as relickes did abide
 Of all the bounty which Belphebe threw
 On him, whilst goodly grace she did him shew ;
 Amongst the rest a iewell rich he found,
 That was a ruby of right perfect hew,
 Shap'd like a heart yet bleeding of the wound,
 And with a litle golden chaine about it bound.

VII.

The same he tooke, and with a riband new,
 In which his Ladies colours were, did bind
 About the turtles necke, that with the new
 Did greatly solace his engrieved mind.
 All unawares the bird, when she did find
 Herselfe so deekt, her nimble wings displaid,
 And flew away as lightly as the wind :
 Which sodaine accident him much dismayd ;
 And, looking after long, did marke which way she
 straid.

VIII.

But whenas long he looked had in vaine,
 Yet saw her forward still to make her flight,
 His weary eie return'd to him againe,
 Full of discomfort and disquiet plight,
 That both his inell he had lost so light,
 And eke his deare companion of his care.
 But that sweet bird departing flew forthright,
 Through the wide region of the wastfull aire,
 Untill she came where wonned his Belphebe faire.

IX.

There found she her (as then it did betide)
 Sitting in covert shade of arbors sweet,
 After late wearie toile which she had tride
 In salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her meet.
 There she, alighting, fell before her feet,
 And gan to her her mournfull plaint to make,
 As was her wont, thinking to let her weat
 The great tormenting grieft that for her sake
 Her gentle Squire through her displeasure did per-
 take.

X.

She, her beholding with attentive eye,
 At length did marke about her purple brest
 That precious iuell, which she formerly [drest :
 Had knowne right well with colour'd ribbands
 Therewith she rose in bast, and her address

vi. 2. ——— miniments] *Toys, trifles*. UPTON.

With ready hand it to have reft away :
But the swift bird obeyd not her behest,
But swarv'd aside, and there againe did stay ;
She follow'd her, and thought againe it to assay.

xI.

And ever, when she nigh approacht, the dove
Would flit a litle forward, and then stay
Till she drew neare, and then againe remove :
So tempting her still to pursue the pray,
And still from her escaping soft away :
Till that at length into that forrest wide
She drew her far, and led with slow delay :
In th' end she her unto that place did guide,
Whereas that wofull man in languor did abide.

xII.

Eftsoones she flew unto his fearelesse hand,
And there a piteous ditty new devis'd,
As if she would have made him understand
His sorrowes cause, to be of her despis'd : [guiz'd,
Whom when she saw in wretched weeds dis-
With heary glib deform'd, and meiger face,
Like ghost late risen from his grave agryz'd,
She knew him not, but pittied much his case,
And wisht it were in her to doe him any grace.

xIII.

He, her beholding, at her feet downe fell
And kist the ground on which her sole did tread,
And washt the same with water which did well
From his moist eies, and like two streames pro-
ceed ;

Yet spake no word, whereby she might aread
What mister wight he was, or what he ment ;
But, as one daunted with her presence dread,
Onely few ruefull looks unto her sent,
As messengers of his true meaning and intent.

xIV.

Yet nathemore his meaning she ared,
But wondred much at his so selcouth case ;
And by his persons secret seemlyhed
Well weend that he had beene some man of place,
Before misfortune did his hew deface ;
That, being mov'd with ruth, she thus bespake :
" Ah ! wofull man, what Heavens hard disgrace,
Or wrath of cruell wight on thee ywrake,
Or selfe-disliked life, doth thee thus wretched make !

xV.

" If Heaven ; then none may it redresse or blame,
Sith to His powre we all are subiect borne !
If wrathfull wight ; then fowle rebuke and shame
Be theirs that have so cruell thee forlorne !
But, if through inward griefe or wilfull scorne
Of life, it be ; then better doe advise :
For he, whose daies in wilfull woe are worne,
The grace of his Creator doth despise,
That will not use his gifts for thanklesse nigardise."

xII. 6. — glib] *Glib* is the *mustachio*, or hair upon the upper lip. CHURCH.

xIV. 1. *Yet nathemore &c.*] That is, *Yet not the more* understood she his meaning. CHURCH.

xIV. 2. — *at his so selcouth case ;*] So *uncommon* case. From *seld*, *seldom*; and *couſ*, *known*. UPTON.

xIV. 3. — *seemlyhed*] *Seemly*, i. e. decent, respectable appearance. TODD.

xV. 6. — *doe advise*] *Consider*. CHURCH.

xV. 9. — *nigardise*] *Niggardliness*. CHURCH.

xVI.

When so he heard her say, eftsoones he brake
His sodaine silence which he long had pent,
And, sighing inly deepe, her thus bespake ;
" Then have they all themselves against me bent !
For Heaven, first author of my languishment,
Envying my too great felicity,
Did closely with a cruell One consent
To cloud my daies in dolefull misery,
And make me loath this life, still longing for to die.

xVII.

" Ne any but yourself, O dearest Dred,
Hath done this wrong, to wreake on worthless
Your high displeasure, through misdeeming bred :
That, when your pleasure is to deeme aright,
Ye may redresse, and me restore to light !"
Which sory words her mightie hart did mate
With mild regard to see his ruefull plight,
That her inburning wrath she gan abate,
And him receiv'd againe to former favours state.

xVIII.

In which he long time afterwards did lead
An happie life with grace and good accord,
Fearlesse of fortunes change or envies dread,
And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare Lord
The noble Prince, who never heard one word
Of tydings, what did unto him betide,
Or what good fortune did to him afford ;
But through the endlesse world did wander wide,
Him seeking evermore, yet no where him descride :

xIX.

Till on a day, as through that wood he rode,
He chaunst to come where those two Ladies late,
Zemylia and *Amoret*, abode,
Both in full sad and sorrowfull estate ;
The one right feeble through the evill rate
Of food, which in her duresse she had found ;
The other almost dead and desperate
Through her late hurts, and through that hap-
lesse wound
With which the Squire, in her defence, her sore
astound.

xx.

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to rew
The evill case in which those Ladies lay ;
But most was moved at the piteous vew
Of *Amoret*, so neare unto decay,
That her great danger did him much dismay.
Eftsoones that pretious liquor forth he drew,
Which he in store about him kept alway,
And with few drops thereof did softly dew
Her wounds, that unto strength restor'd her soon
anew.

xxI.

Tho, when they both recovered were right well,
He gan of them inquire, what evill guide
Them thether brought, and how their harme
befell :
To whom they told all that did them betide,
And how from thralldome vile they were untide
Of that same wicked Carle, by Virgins hond ;
Whose blouddie corse they shew'd him there
beside,

xVII. 6. — *did mate*] *Did distress*, *did render sor-
rowful*. TODD.

xIX. 8. — *duresse*] *Confinement*. CHURCH.

And eke his cave in which they both were bond:
At which he wondred much when all those signes
he fond.

xxii.

And evermore he greatly did desire
To know, what Virgin did them thence unbind ;
And oft of them did earnestly inquire,
Where was her won, and how he mote her find.
But, whenas nought according to his mind
He could out-learne, he them from ground did
(No service lothsome to a gentle kind,) [reare,
And on his warlike beast them both did beare,
Himself by them on foot to succour them from
feare.

xxiii.

So when that forrest they had passed well,
A litle cotage farre away they spide,
To which they drew ere night upon them fell ;
Aud, entring in, found none therein abide,
But one old woman sitting there beside
Upon the ground in ragged rude atyre,
With filthy lockes about her scattered wide,
Gnawing her nayles for felnesse and for yre,
And there out sucking venime to her parts entyre.

xxiv.

A foule and loathly creature sure in sight,
And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse:
For she was stuf with rancour and despight
Up to the throat, that oft with bitterness
It forth would breake and gush in great excesse,
Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall
Gainst all that truth or vertue doe professe ;
Whom she with leasings lowly did miscall
And wickedly backbite : Her name men Schlaunder
call.

xxv.

Her nature is, all goodnesse to abuse,
And causelesse crimes continually to frame,
With which she guiltlesse persons may accuse,
And steale away the crowne of their good name :
Ne ever Knight so bold, ne ever Dame
So chaste and loyall liv'd, but she would strive
With forged cause them falsely to defame ;
Ne ever thing so well was doen alive,
But she with blame would blot, and of due praise
deprive.

xxvi.

Her words were not, as common words are ment,
T' expresse the meaning of the inward mind,
But noysome breath, and poysonous spirit sent
From inward parts, with cancred malice lind,
And breathed forth with blast of bitter wind ;
Which passing through the eares would pierce
the hart,
And wound the soule itselfe with grieffe unkind:
For, like the stings of aspes that kill with smart,
Ier spightfull words did pricke and wound the
inner part.

xxvii.

Such was that Hag, unmeet to host such guests,
Whom greatest Princes Court would welcome
fayne:

But neede, that answers not to all requests,
Bad them not looke for better entertayne ;

xxiii. 9. — her parts entyre.] Her inner parts
CHURCH.

xxvii. 4. — entertayne:] Entertainment. CHURCH.

And eke that age despysed nicenesse vaine,
Enur'd to hardnesse and to homely fare,
Which them to warlike discipline did trayne,
And manly limbs endur'd with litle care
Against all hard mishaps and fortunelesse misfare.

xxviii.

Then all that evening, welcommed with cold
And chearelesse hunger, they together spent ;
Yet found no fault, but that the Hag did scold
And rayle at them with grudgefull discontent,
For lodging there without her owne consent:
Yet they endured all with patience milde,
And unto rest themselves all onely lent,
Regardlesse of that queane so base and vilde
To be unjusly blamd and bitterly revilde.

xxix.

Here well I weene, whenas these rimes be red
With misregard, that some rash-witted wight,
Whose looser thought will lightly be misled,
These gentle Ladies will misdeeme too light
For thus conversing with this noble Knight ;
Sith now of dayes such temperance is rare
And hard to finde, that heat of youthfull spright
For ought will from his greedie pleasure spare:
More hard for hungry steed t' abstaine from pleas-
sant lare.

xxx.

But antique Age, yet in the infancie
Of time, did live then, like an innocout,
In simple truth and blamelesse chastitie ;
Ne then of guile had made experiment ;
But, voide of vile and treacherous intent,
Held Vertue, for itselfe, in soveraine awe:
Then loyall Love had royall regiment,
And each unto his lust did make a lawe,
From all forbidden things his liking to withdraw.

xxxi.

The lyon there did with the lambe consort,
And eke the dove sate by the falcons side ;
Ne each of other feared fraud or tort,
But did in safe securitie abide,
Withouten perill of the stronger pride:
But when the world woxe old, it woxe warre old,
(Whereof it hight,) and, having shortly tride
The traines of wit, in wickednesse woxe bold,
And dared of all sinnes the secrets to unfold.

xxxii.

Then Beautie, which was made to represent
The great Creatours owne resemblance bright,
Unto abuse of lawlesse lust was lent,
And made the baite of bestial delight: [sight ;
Then faire grew foule, and foule grew faire in
And that, which wont to vauquish God and man,

xxvii. 8. And manly limbs endur'd &c.] To endure is to sustain, continue, &c. To avoid therefore ambiguity perhaps Spenser wrote *indur'd*, i. e. hardened, Ital. *indurato*, Lat. *induratus*. UPTON.

xxix. 9. — lare.] A place where cattle usually rest, under some shelter; here to be understood for *pasture*. CHURCH.

xxxi. 5. — the stronger pride.] The pride of the stronger creature. CHURCH.

xxxi. 6. But when the world woxe old, it woxe warre old.] That is, *warre being old*; war or warre is *warre*. CHURCH.

xxxi. 6. And that, which wont &c.] I apprehend, he means Innocence. CHURCH.

Was made the vassall of the victors might ;
Then did her glorious flowre wax dead and wan,
Despisd and troden downe of all that over-ran :

XXXIII.

And now it is so utterly decayd,
That any bud thereof doth scarce remaine,
But if few plants, preserv'd through heavenly ayd,
In Princes Court doe hap to sprout againe,
Dew'd with her drops of bountie souveraine,
Which from that goodly glorious Flowre proceed,
Sprung of the auncient stocke of Princes straine,
Now th' onely remnant of that Royall Breed,
Whose noble kind at first was sure of heavenly
seed.—

XXXIV.

Tho, soone as day discovered heavens face
To sinfull men with darknes overdight,
This gentle crew gan from their eye-lids chace
The drowzie humour of the dampish night,
And did themselves unto their iourney dight.
So forth they yode, and forward sofly paced,
That them to view had bene an uncouth sight ;
How all the way the Prince on footpace traced,
The Ladies both on horse together fast embraced.

XXXV.

Soone as they thence departed were afore,
That shamefull Hag, the slaunder of her sexe,
Them follow'd fast, and them reviled sore,
Him calling theefe, them whores ; that much
did vexe
His noble hart : thereto she did annexe
False crimes and facts, such as they never ment,
That those two Ladies much asham'd did waxe :
The more did she pursue her lewd intent,
And ray'd and rag'd, till she had all her poison
spent.

XXXVI.

At last, when they were passed out of sight,
Yet she did not her sightfull speach forbear,
But after them did barke, and still backbite,
Though there were none her hatefull words to
Like as a curre doth felly bite and teare [heare :
The stone, which passed straunger at him threw ;
So she, them seeing past the reach of eare,
Against the stones and trees did rayle anew,
Till she had dull the sting, which in her tongs end
grew.

XXXVII.

They passing forth kept on their readie way,
With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde,
Both for great feeblesse which did oft assay
Faïre Amoret, that scarcely sie could ryde,
And eke through heavie armes which sore annoyd
The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare ;
Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to guyde,
And all the way from trotting hard to spare ;
So was his toyle the more, the more that was his
care.

XXXII. 8. — her glorious flowre] That is, Chastity.
CHURCH.

XXXIII. 3. But if] Unless. CHURCH.

XXXIII. 6. — that goodly glorious Flowre] Gloriana.

CHURCH.

XXXIII. 7. — straine.] Properly used for a breed of
horses. Here it signifies race, lineage. CHURCH.

XXXIV. 2. — overdight,] Covered over. CHURCH.

XXXVIII.

At length they spide where towards them with speed
A Squire came galloping, as he would flie,
Bearing a litle Dwarfie before his steed,
That all the way full loud for aide did crie,
That seem'd his shrikes would rend the brasen
Whom after did a mighty man pursew, [skie :
Ryding upon a dromedare on hie,
Of stature huge, and horrible of hew,
That would have maz'd a man his dreadfull face to
vew :

XXXIX.

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie beames,
More sharpe then points of needles, did proceede,
Shooting forth farre away two flaming streames,
Full of sad powre, that poysnous bale did breede
To all that on him lookt without good head,
And secretly his enemies did slay :
Like as the basiliske, of serpents seede,
From powrefull eyes close venom doth convey
Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre away.

XL.

He all the way did rage at that same Squire,
And after him full many threatnings threw,
With curses vaine in his avengefull ire :
But none of them (so fast away he flew)
Him overtooke before he came in vew :
Where when he saw the Prince in armour bright,
He cald to him aloud his case to rew,
And rescue him, through succour of his might,
From that his cruell foe that him pursewd in sight.

XLI.

Eftsoones the Prince tooke downe those Ladies
twaine
From loftie steede, and mounting in their stead
Came to that Squire yet trembling every vaine ;
Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread :
Who as he gan the same to him read,
Loe ! hard behind his backe his foe was prest,
With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head,
That unto death had doen him unredrest,
Had not the noble Prince his readie stroke repress :

XLII.

Who, thrusting boldly twixt him and the blow,
The burden of the deadly brunt did beare
Upon his shield, which lightly he did throw
Over his head, before the harme came neare :
Nathlesse it fell with so despituous dreare
And heavie sway, that hard unto his crowne
The shield it drove, and did the covering reare :
Therewith both Squire and Dwarfie did tomble
downe
Unto the earth, and lay long while in senselesse
swowne.

XLIII.

Whereat the Prince, full wrath, his strong right
In full avengement heaved up on hie, [hand
And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand
So sore, that to his saddle-bow thereby
He bowed low, and so a while did lie :
And sure, had not his massie yron mace
Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily,
It would have cleft him to the girthing place :
Yet, as it was, it did astonish him long space.

XLII. 6. — prest,] Ready. CHURCH.

XLIV.

But, when he to himselfe returnd againe,
 All full of rage he gan to curse and swear,
 And vow by Mahoune that he should be slaine.
 With that his murderous mace he up did reare,
 That seemed nought the souse thereof could beare,
 And therewith smote at him with all his might :
 But, ere that it to him approched neare,
 The royall Child with readie quick foresight
 Did shun the prooffe thereof and it avoyded light.

XLV.

But, ere his hand he could recure againe
 To ward his bodie from the balefull stound,
 He smote at him with all his might and maine
 So furiously that, ere he wist, he found
 His head before him tombling on the ground ;
 The whiles his babbling tongue did yet blasphemous
 And curse his god that did him so confound ;
 The whiles his life ran fourth in bloudie streame,
 His soule descended downe into the Stygian reame.

XLVI.

Which when that Squire beheld, he woxe full glad
 To see his foe breath out his spright in vaine :
 But that same Dwarfie right sorie seem'd and sad,
 And howld aloud to see his Lord there slaine,
 And rent his haire and scratcht his face for paine.
 Then gan the Prince at leasure to inquire
 Of all the accident there hapned plaine,
 And what he was whose eyes did flame with fire :
 All which was thus to him declared by that Squire.

XLVII.

"This mightie man," quoth he, "whom you have
 slaine,
 Of an huge Geanntesse whylome was bred ;
 And by his strength rule to himselfe did gaine
 Of many nations into thraldome led,
 And mightie kingdomes of his force adred ;
 Whom yet he conquer'd not by bloudie fight,
 Ne hostes of men with banners brode dispreed,
 But by the powre of his infectious sight,
 With which he killed all that came within his might.

XLVIII.

"Ne was he ever vanquished afore,
 But ever vanquisht all with whom he fought ;
 Ne was there man so strong, but he downe bore ;
 Ne woman yet so faire, but he her brought
 Unto his bay, and captived her thought :
 For most of strength and beautie his desire
 Was spoyle to make, and wast them unto nought,
 By casting secret flakes of lustfull fire
 From his false eyes into their harts and parts entire.

XLIX.

"Therefore Corflambo was he cald aright,
 Though namelesse there his bodie now doth lie ;
 Yet hath he left one daughter that is hight
 The faire Pæana ; who seemes outwardly
 So faire as ever yet saw living eie ;
 And, were her vertue like her beautie bright,
 She were as faire as any under skie :
 But ah ! she given is to vaine delight,
 And eke too loose of life, and eke of love too light.

XLV. 1. — recure] Recover. Todd.

XLV. 9. — reame.] Gall royaume, realme; a letter omitted. Upton.

L.

"So, as it fell, there was a gentle Squire
 That lov'd a Ladie of high parentage ;
 But, for his meane degree might not aspire
 To match so high, her friends with counsell sage
 Dissuaded her from such a disparage :
 But she, whose hart to love was wholly lent,
 Out of his hands could not redeeme her gage,
 But, firmly following her first intent,
 Resolv'd with him to wend, gainst all her friends
 consent.

LI.

"So twixt themselves they pointed time and place :
 To which when he according did repaire,
 An hard mishap and disaventurous case
 Him chaunst ; instead of his Æmylia faire,
 This Gyants sonne, that lies there on the laire
 An headlesse heape, him unawares there caught ;
 And all dismayd through mercilesse despair
 Him wretched thrall unto his dongeon brought,
 Where he remaines of all unsuccess'd and unsought.

LII.

"This Gyants daughter came upon a day
 Unto the prison, in her ioyous glee,
 To view the thrals which there in bondage lay :
 Amongst the rest she chanced there, to see
 This lovely swaine, the Squire of low degree ;
 To whom she did her liking lightly cast,
 And wooed him her paramour to bee :
 From day to day she woo'd and prayd him fast,
 And for his love him promist libertie at last.

LIII.

"He, though affide unto a former Love,
 To whom his faith he firmly ment to hold,
 Yet seeing not how thence he mote remove,
 But by that means which fortune did unfold,
 Her grannted love, but with affection cold,
 To win her grace his libertie to get :
 Yet she him still detaines in captive hold,
 Fearing, least if she should him freely set,
 He would her shortly leave, and former love forget.

LIV.

"Yet so much favour she to him hath hight
 Above the rest, that he sometimes may space
 And walke about her gardens of delight,
 Having a keeper still with him in place ;
 Which keeper is this Dwarfie, her dearling base,
 To whom the keyes of every prison dore
 By her committed be, of speciall grace,
 And at his will may whom he list restore,
 And, whom he list, reserve to be afflicted more.

LV.

"Whereof when tydings came unto mine eare,
 Full inly sorie, for the fervent zeale
 Which I to him as to my soule did beare,
 I thether went ; where I did long conceale
 Myselfe, till that the Dwarfie did me reveale,
 And told his Dame her Squire of low degree
 Did secretly out of her prison steale ;
 For me he did mistake that Squire to bee ;
 For never two so like did living creature see.

L. 5. — disparage:] Disparagement, a word used by Chaucer. Upton.

LI. 7. — through mercilesse despair] Through despair that had no hopes of mercy. Church.

LVII.

"Then was I taken and before her brought;
Who, through the likeness of my outward hew,
Being likewise beguiled in her thought,
Gan blame me much for being so untrew
To seeke by flight her fellowship t'eschew,
That lov'd me deare, as dearest thing alive.
Thence she commaunded me to prison new:
Whereof I glad did not gaine-say nor strive,
But suffred that same Dwarfe me to her dongeon
drive.

LVIII.

"There did I finde mine onely faithfull frend
In heavy plight and sad perplexitie:
Whereof I sorie, yet myselfe did bend
Him to recomfort with my companie;
But him the more agreeev'd I found thereby:
For all his ioy, he said, in that distresse
Was mine and his Æmylia libertie.
Æmylia well he lov'd, as I mote ghesse;
Yet greater love to me then her he did professe.

LXIII.

"But I with better reason bim aviz'd, [thought
And shew'd him how, through error and mis-
Of our like persons eath to be disguiz'd,
Or his exchange or freedom might be wrought.
Whereto full loth was he, ne would for ought
Consent that I, who stood all fearelesse free,
Should wilfully he into thraldome brought,
Till fortune did perforce it so decree:
Yet, over-ruld at last, he did to me agree.

LIX.

"The morrow next, about the wanted howre,
The Dwarfe cald at the doore of Amyas
To come forthwith unto his Ladies bowre:
Instead of whom forth came I Placidas,
And undiscerned forth with him did pas.
There with great ioyance and with gladsome glee
Of faire Pæana I received was,
And oft imbrast, as if that I were hee,
And with kind words accoyd, vowing great love to
mee.

LX.

"Which I, that was not bent to former love
As was my friend that had her long refus'd,
Did well accept, as well it did behove,
And to the present neede it wisely usd.
My former hardnesse first I faire excusd;
And, after, promist large amends to make.
With such smooth termes her error I abusd
To my friends good more then for mine owne sake,
For whose sole libertie I love and life did stake.

LXI.

"Thenceforth I found more favour at her hand;
That to her Dwarfe, which had me in his charge,
She bad to lighten my too heave band,
And graunt more scope to me to walke at large.
So on a day, as by the flowrie marge
Of a fresh streame I with that Elfe did play,
Finding no meanes how I might us enlarge,
But if that Dwarfe I could with me convay,
I lightly snatcht him up and with me bore away.

LVII. 1. — onely] That is, greatest. CHURCH.

LIX. 9. — accoyd.] *Caresed, made much of.* TOND.LXI. 5. — marge] *Brink.* Lat. *margo.* CHURCH.

LXII.

"Thereat he shriekt aloud, that with his cry
The Tyrant selfe came forth with yelling bray,
And me pursew'd; but nathemore would I
Forgoe the purchase of my gotten pray,
But have perforce him hether brought away."
Thus as they talked, loe! where nigh at hand
Those Ladies two, yet doubtful through dismay,
In presence came, desirous t' understand
Tydings of all which there had hapned on the land.

LXIII.

Where soone as sad Æmylia did espie
Her captive lovers friend, young Placidas;
All mindlesse of her wanted modestie
She to him ran, and, him with streight embras
Enfolding, said; "And lives yet Amyas?"
"He lives," quoth he, "and his Æmylia loves."
"Then lesse," said she, "by all the woe I pas,
With which my weaker patience fortune proves:
But what mishap thus long him fro myselfe
removes?"

LXIV.

Then gan he all this storie to renew,
And tell the course of his captivitic;
That her deare hart full deeply made to rev
And sigh full sore, to heare the miserie
In which so long he mercilesse did lie.
Then, after many teares and sorrowes spent,
She deare besought the Prince of remedie:
Who thereto did with readie will consent,
And well perform'd; as shall appeare by his event.

CANTO IX.

The Squire of low degree, releast,
Pæana takes to wife:
Britomart fletes with many Knights;
Prince Arthur stints their strife.

I.

HARD is the doubt, and difficult to deeme,
When all three kinds of love together meet
And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme,
Whether shall weigh the balance downe; to weet,
The deare affection unto kindred sweet,
Or raging fire of love to womankind,
Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet.
But of them all the band of vertuous mind,
Me seemes, the gentle hart should most assured
bind.

II.

For naturall affection soone doth cesse,
And quenched is with Cupids greater flame;
But faithfull friendship doth them both suppress,
And them with maystring discipline doth tame,
Through thoughts aspyring to eternall fame.
For as the soule doth rule the earthly masse,
And all the service of the bodie frame;

LXIII. 7. *Then lesse, said she, by all the woe I pas.*] Then less I regard all the woe, &c. UPRON.

LXIV. 1. *to renew.*] *To tell from the beginning, in the Lat. sense.* TOND.

ARG. 2. *Pæana takes to wife.*] It should be Æmylia: For Amyas, the Squire of low degree, is married to Æmylia; and the trusty Squire. Placidas, is married to Pæana. et. 15. CHURCH.

So love of soule doth love of bodie passe,
No lesse then perfect gold surmounts the meanest
brasse.

iii.

All which who list by tryall to assay,
Shall in this storie find approved plaine; [say
In which these Squires true friendship more did
Then either care of parents could refraine,
Or love of fairest ladie could constraine.
For though Pæana were as faire as morne,
Yet did this trustie Squire with proud disdain
For his friends sake her offred favours scorne,
And she herselfe her syre of whom she was yborne.

iv.

Now, after that Prince Arthur graunted had
To yeeld strong succour to that gentle Swayne,
Who now long time had lyen in prison sad;
He gan advise how best he mote darrayne
That enterprize, for greatest glories gayne.
That headlesse Tyrants tronke he reard from
ground,
And, having ympt the head to it agayne,
Upon his usuall beast it firmly bound,
And made it so to ride as it alive was found.

v.

Then did he take that chaced Squire, and layd
Before the ryder, as he captive were; [ayd,
And made his Dwarf, though with unwilling
To guide the beast that did his Maister beare,
Till to his Castle they approached neare:
Whom when the watch, that kept continuall ward,
Saw coming home, all voide of doubtfull feare
He, running downe, the gate to him unbard;
Whom straight the Prince ensuing in together
far'd.

vi.

There did he find in her delitious boure
The faire Pæana playing on a rote,
Complaining of her cruell paramoure,
And singing all her sorrow to the note,
As she had learned readily by rote;
That with the sweetnesse of her rare delight
The Prince half rapt began on her to dote;
Till, better him bethinking of the right,
He her unwares attach, and captive held by might.

vii.

Whence being forth produc'd, when she perceived
Her owne deare Sire, she cald to him for aide:
But when of him no aunswere she received,
But saw him sencelesse by the Squire upstaide,
She weened well that then she was betraide:
Then gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waille,
And that same Squire of treason to upbraide:
But all in vaine; her plaints might not prevail;
Ne none there was to reskue her, ne none to baile.

viii.

Then tooke he that same Dwarf, and him compeld
To open unto him the prison dore,

iii. 3. — these Squires] Amyas and Placidus. Todd.

iv. 7. — ympt] A term in Faulconry. "To *imp* a feather in a hawk's wing, is to add a new piece to an old broken stump." Kersey. Church.

v. 1. 2. — playing on a rote.] The *rote* is supposed to have been the ancient *palterium*. Tono.

vi. 7. The Prince half rapt] In a rapture. Ital. *rapito* UPRON.

And forth to bring those thralhs which there he
held.

Thence forth were brought to him above a score
Of Knights and Squires to him unknowne afore:
All which he did from bitter bondage free,
And unto former liberty restore.
Amongst the rest that Squire of low degree
Came forth full weake and wan, not like himselfe to
bee.

ix.

Whom soone as faire Æmylia beheld
And Placidus, they both unto him ran,
And him embracing fast betwixt them held,
Striving to comfort him all that they can,
And kissing oft his visage pale and wan:
That faire Pæana, them beholding both,
Gan both envý, and bitterly to ban;
Through iealous passion weeping inly wroth,
To see the sight perforce that both her eyes were
loth.

x.

But when awhile they had together beene,
And diversly conferred of their case,
She, though full oft she both of them had seene
Asunder, yet not ever in one place,
Began to doubt, when she them saw embrace,
Which was the captive Squire she lov'd so deare,
Deceived through great likeness of their face:
For they so like in person did appeare,
That she unweath discerned whether whether weare.

xi.

And eke the Prince whenas he them avized,
Their like resemblance much admired there,
And mazed how Nature had so well disguised
Her worke, and counterfet herselfe so nere,
As if that by one patterne seene somewhere
She had them made a paragone to be;
Or whether it through skill or errour were.
Thus gazing long at them much wondrous he;
So did the other Knights and Squires which him
did see.

xii.

Then gan they ransacke that same Castle strong,
In which he found great store of hoarded threasure,
The which that Tyrant gathered had by wrong
And tortions powre, without respect or measure.
Upon all which the Briton Prince made seasure,
And afterwards continu'd there a while
To rest himselfe, and solace in soft pleasure
Those weaker Ladies after weary toile;
To whom he did divide part of his purchast spoile.

xiii.

And, for more ioy, that captive Lady faire,
The faire Pæana, he enlarged free,
And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire
To feast and frolicke; nathemore would she
Shew gladsome countenance nor pleasant glee;
But grieved was for losse both of her sire,
And eke of lordship with both land and fee;
But most she touched with griefe entire
For losse of her new Love, the hope of her desire.

viii. 9. — not like himselfe to bee.] Not like ever to be himself again. UPRON.

ix. 7. — to ban:] To curse, or exclaim against. Todd.

x. 9. — whether whether] A Latinism. UPRON.

xi. 2. — he] I think it should be *they* or *was*. Church.

xiv.
But her the Prince, through his well-wonted grace,
To better termes of myldnesse did entreat
From that fowle rudenesse which did her deface ;
And that same bitter cor'sive, which did eat
Her tender heart and made refraine from meat,
He with good thewes and speaches well applyde
Did mollife, and calme her raging heat :
For though she were most faire, and goodly dyde,
Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and pride.

xv.
And, for to shut up all in friendly love,
Sith love was first the ground of all her griefe,
That trusty Squire he wisely well did move
Not to despise that Dame which lov'd him liefe,
Till he had made of her some better priefe ;
But to accept her to his wedded wife ;
Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe
Of all her land and lordship during life :
He yielded, and her tooke ; so stinted all their strife.

xvi.
From that day forth in peace and ioyous blis
They liv'd together long without debate ;
Ne private iarre, ne spite of enemies,
Could shake the safe assurance of their state :
And she, whom Nature did so faire create
That she mote match the fairest of her daies,
Yet with lewd loves and lust intemperate
Had it defaste, thenceforth reformd her waies,
That all men much admird her change, and spake
her praise.

xvii.
Thus when the Prince had perfectly compylde
These paires of friends in peace and settled rest ;
Himselfe, whose minde did travell as with chylde
Of his old love conceav'd in secret brest,
Resolved to pursue his former guest ;
And, taking leave of all, with him did beare
Faire Amoret, whom fortune by bequest
Had left in his protection whileare,
Exchanged out of one into another feare.

xviii.
Feare of her safety did her not constraîne ;
For well she wist now in a mighty hond
Her person, late in perill, did remaine,
Who able was all daungers to withstond ;
But now in feare of shame she more did stond,
Seeing herselfe all soly succourlesse,
Left in the victors powre, like vassall hond ;
Whose will her weakenesse could no way repress,
In case his burning lust should breake into excesse.

xix.
But cause of feare sure had she none at all
Of him, who goodly learned had of yore
The course of loose affection to forstall,
And lawlesse lust to rule with reasons lore ;
That, all the while he by his side her bore,
She was as safe as in a sanctuary.
Thus many miles they two together wore,
To seeke their Loves dispersed diversly ;
Yet neither shewed to other their hearts privy.

xiv. 4. — cor'sive,] Put for *corrosive*, which word indeed was formerly accented on the first syllable. Todd.
xvii. 5. — guest ;] So all the editions. Mr. Church and Mr. Upton have both observed that it should be *quest*, i. e. *adventure* ; a word frequently used by Spenser. Todd.

xx.
At length they came whereas a troupe of Knights
They saw together skirmishing, as seemed :
Sixe they were all, all full of fell despight,
But foure of them the hattell best besemed,
That which of them was best mote not be deemed.
These foure were they from whom false Florimel
By Braggadochio lately was redeemed ;
To weet, sterne Druon, and lewd Claribell,
Love-lavish Blandamour, and lustfull Paridell.

xxi.
Druons delight was all in single life,
And unto Ladies love would lend no leasure
The more was Claribell enraged rife
With fervent flames, and loved out of measure :
So eke lov'd Blandamour, but yet at pleasure
Would change his liking, and new Lemans prove :
But Paridell of love did make no threasure,
But lusted after all that him did move :
So diversly these foure disposed were to love.

xxii.
But those two other, which beside them stoode,
Were Britomart and gentle Scudamour ;
Who all the while beheld their wrathfull moode,
And wondred at their impacable stoure,
Whose like they never saw till that same houre :
So dreadfull strokes each did at other drive,
And laid on load with all their might and powre,
As if that every dint the ghost would rive
Out of their wretched corses, and their lives deprive.

xxiii.
As when Dan Æolus, in great displeasure
For losse of his deare Love by Neptune hent,
Sends forth the winds out of his hidden threasure
Upon the sea to wreake his full intent ;
They, breaking forth with rude unrulment
From all foure parts of heaven, doe rage full sore,
And tesse the deepes, and teare the firmament,
And all the world confound with wide upore ;
As if instead thereof they Chaos would restore.

xxiv.
Cause of their discord and so fell debate
Was for the love of that same snowy Maid,
Whome they had lost in Turneyment of late ;
And, seeking long to weet which way she straid,
Met here together ; where, through lewd upbraide
Of Atè and Duessa, they fell out ;
And each one taking part in others aide
This cruell conflict raised thereabout,
Whose dangerous successe depended yet in doubt :

xxv.
For sometimes Paridell and Blandamour
The better had, and het the others hacke ;
Eftsoones the others did the field recoure,
And on their foes did worke full cruell wracke :
Yet neither would their fiend-like fury slacke,
But evermore their malice did augment ;
Till that uneth they forced were, for lacke
Of breath, their raging rigour to relent,
And rest themselves for to recover spirits spent.

xxvi.
There gan they change their sides, and new parts
For Paridell did take to Druons side, [take ;

xxii. 4. — impacable] That would not be pacified
church.

For old despight which now forth newly brake
Gainst Blandamour whom alwaies he envide ;
And Blandamour to Claribell relide :
So all afresh gan former fight renew.
As when two barkes, this caried with the tide,
That with the wind, contrary courses sew,
If wind and tide doe change, their courses change
anew.

xxvii.

Thenceforth they much more furiously gan fare,
As if but then the battell had begonne ;
Ne helmets bright ne hawberks strong did spare,
That through the cliffs the vermeil bloud out
sponne,
And all adowne their riven sides did ronue.
Such mortall malice wonder was to see
In friends profest, and so great outrage donne :
But sooth is said, and tride in each degree,
Faint friends when they fall out most cruell fomen bee.

xxviii.

Thus they long while continued in fight ;
Till Seudamour and that same Briton Maide
By fortune in that place did chance to light :
Whom soone as they with wrathfull eie bewraide,
They gan remember of the fowle upbraide,
The which that Britonnesse had to them donne
In that late Turney for the snowy Maide ;
Where she had them both shamefully fordonne,
And eke the famous prize of beauty from them
wonne.

xxix.

Eftsoones all burning with a fresh desire
Of fell revenge, in their malicious mood
They from themselves gan turne their furious ire,
And cruell blades yet steeming with whot bloud
Against those two let drive, as they were wood :
Who wondring much at that so sodaine fit,
Yet nought dismayd, them stoutly well withstood ;
Ne yeilded foote, ne once abacke did flit,
But, being doubly smitten, likewise doubly smit.

xxx.

The warlike Dame was on her part assaid
Of Claribell and Blandamour attone ;
And Paridell and Druon fiercely laid
At Seudamour, both his professed fone :
Foure charged two, and two surecharged one ;
Yet did those two themselves so bravely beare,
That th' other litle gained by the lone,
But with their owne repayed duely weare,
And usury withall : such gaine was gotten deare.

xxxii.

Full oftentimes did Britomart assay
To speake to them, and some emparlance move ;
But they for nought their cruell hands would stay,
Ne lend an eare to ought that might behove.
As when an eager mastiffe once doth prove
The tast of bloud of some engored beast,
No words may rate, nor rigour him remove
From greedy hold of that his blouddy feast :
So, litle did they hearken to her sweet behest.

xxxiii.

Whom when the Briton Princee afarre beheld
With ods of so unequal match opprest,

xxvi. 5. — relide:] *Joined himself.* Fr. se relioit.
CHURCH.

His mightie heart with indignation sweld,
And inward grudge fild his heroieke brest :
Eftsoones himselfe he to their aide address,
And thrusting fierce into the thickest preace
Divided them, however loth to rest ;
And would them faine from battell to sureeasse,
With gentle words perswading them to friendly
peace :

xxxiii.

But they so farre from peace or patience were,
That all at once at him gan fiercely flie,
And lay on load, as they him downe would beare :
Like to a storme which hovers under skie,
Long here and there and round about doth stie,
At length breakes downe in raine, and haile, and
sleet,
First from one coast, till nought thereof be drie ;
And then another, till that likewise fleet ;
And so from side to side till all the world it weat.

xxxiv.

But now their forces greatly were decayd,
The Princee yet being fresh untoucht afore ;
Who them with speaches milde gan first disswade
From such foule outrage, and them long forbore :
Till, seeing them through suffrance hartned more,
Himselfe he bent their furies to abate,
And layd at them so sharpely and so sore,
That shortly them compelled to retrate,
And being brought in daunger to relent too late.

xxxv.

But now his courage being thoroughly fired,
He ment to make them know their follies prise,
Had not those two him instantly desired
T' asswage his wrath, and pardon their mesprise :
At whose request he gan himselfe advise
To stay his hand, and of a truce to treat
In milder tearmes, as list them to devise ;
Mongst which the cause of their so cruell heat
He did them aske ; who all that passed gan repeat ;

xxxvi.

And told at large how that same Errant Knight,
To weat, faire Britomart, them late had foyled
In open turney, and by wrongfull fight
Both of their publicke praise had them despoyled,
And also of their private Loves beguyled ;
Of two full hard to read the harder theft.
But she that wrongfull challenge soone assoyled,
And shew'd that she had not that Lady left,
(As they suppos'd,) but her had to her liking left.

xxxvii.

To whom the Princee thus goodly well replied ;
" Certes, Sir Knight, ye seemen much to blame
To rip up wrong that battell once hath tried ;
Wherein the honor both of Armes ye shame,
And eke the love of Ladies foule defame ;
To whom the world this franchise ever yeilded,
That of their Loves choise they might freedom
clame, [shielded :
And in that right should by all Knights be
Gainst which, me seemes, this war ye wrongfully
have wielded."

xxxiii. 5. — stie,] *Ascend.* TODD.

xxxiii. 8. — fleet;] *Float.* CHURCH.

xxxiii. 9. — weel.] *For weel.* CHURCH.

xxxv. 3. — instantly] *Earnestly.* TODD.

xxxviii.

"And yet," quoth she, "a greater wrong remains:
For I thereby my former Love have lost;
Whom seeking ever since with endlesse paines
Hath me much sorrow and much travell cost:
Aye me, to see that gentle Maide so tost!"
But Scudamour then sighing deepe thus saide;
"Certes her losse ought me to sorrow most,
Whose right she is, wherever she be straide,
Through many perils wonne, and many fortunes
waide :

xxxix.

"For from the first that I her love profest,
Unto this houre, this present lucklesse howre,
I never ioyed happinesse nor rest;
But thus turmoild from one to other stowre
I wast my life, and doe my daies devowre
In wretched anguise and incessant woe,
Passing the measure of my feeble powre;
That, living thus a wretch and loving so,
I neither can my love ne yet my life forgo."

xl.

Then good Sir Claribell him thus bespake;
"Now were it not, Sir Scudamour, to you
Dislikefull paine so sad a taske to take,
Mote we entreat yon, sith this gentle crew
Is now so well accorded all anew,
That, as we ride together on our way,
Ye will recout to us in order dew
All that adventure which ye did assay
For that faire Ladies love: Past perils well apay."

xli.

So gan the rest him likewise to require:
But Britomart did him impörtune hard
To take on him that paine; whose great desire
He glad to satisfie, himselfe prepar'd
To tell through what misfortune he had far'd
In that atchievement, as to him befell,
And all those daungers unto them declar'd;
Which sith they cannot in this Canto well
Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

CANTO X.

Scudamour doth his conquest tell
Of vertuous Amoret:
Great Venus Temple is describ'd;
And Lovers life forth set.

i.

"TRUE he it said, whatever man it sayd,
That love with gall and hony doth abound:
But if the one be with the other wayd,
For every dram of hony, therein found,
A pound of gall doth over it redound:
That I too true by triall have approved;
For since the day that first with deadly wound
My heart was launcht, and learned to have loved,
I never ioyed howre, but still with care was moved.

ii.

"And yet such grace is given them from above,
That all the cares and evill which they meet

i. 1. *True he it said, &c.*] Not the poet, as usual, but Sir Scudamour here speaks. CHURCH.
ii. 1. *— is given them*] The poet means, is given to lovers. CHURCH.

May nought at all their settled mindes remove,
But seeme gainst common sence to them most
As hosting in their martyrdome unmeet. [sweet;
So all that ever yet I have endured
I count as naught, and tread downe under feet,
Since of my Love at length I rest assured,
That to disloyalty she will not be allured.

iii.

"Long were to tell the travell and long toile,
Through which this Shield of Love I late have
wonne,
And purchased this peerelesse Beauties spoile,
That harder may be ended, then begonne:
But since ye so desire, your will be donne:
Then hearken, ye gentle Knights and Ladies free,
My hard mishaps that ye may learne to shonne;
For though sweet love to conquer glorions bee,
Yet is the paine thereof much greater then the fee.

iv.

"What time the fame of this renowned prise
Flew first abroad, and all mens eares possesset;
I, having armes then taken, gan advise
To winne me honour by some noble gest,
And purchase me some place amongst the best.
I boldly thought, (so young mens thoughts are
bold,)
That this same brave emprize for me did rest,
And that both Shield and She whom I behold
Might be my lucky lot; sith all by lot we hold.

v.

"So on that hard adventure forth I went,
And to the place of perill shortly came:
That was a Temple faire and aunient,
Which of great mother Venus bare the name,
And farre renowned through exceeding fame;
Much more then that which was in Paphos built,
Or that in Cyprus, both long since this same,
Though all the pillours of the one were guilt,
And all the others pavement were with yvory spilt:

vi.

"And it was seated in an Island strong,
Abounding all with delices most rare,
And wall'd by nature gainst invaders wrong,
That none mote have accesse, nor inward fare,
But by one way that passage did prepare.
It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize
With curious corbes and pendants graven faire,
And arched all with porches did arise
On stately pillours fram'd after the Doricke guize:

vii.

"And for defence thereof on th' other end
There reared was a Castle faire and strong,
That warded all which in or out did wend,
And flanked both the bridges sides along,
Gainst all that would it faine to force or wrong:
And therein wonned twenty valiant Knights;
All twenty tride in warres experience long;

iv. 8. — and She whom I behold] My Amoret, whom I have now in my eye. UPRON.
v. 9. — spilt:] *Intakt*. Spill is a *splinter*. CHURCH.
vi. 2. — *delices*] Delights, dainties, pleasant fantasies, &c. Fr. *Délices*. TODD.
vi. 7. — *corbes*] Ornaments in building. Fr. *cor beau*, a corbel in architecture. UPRON.

Whose office was against all manner wights
By all meanes to maintaine that Castels ancient
rights.

VIII.

"Before that Castle was an open plaine,
And in the midst thereof a pillar placed ;
On which this Shield, of many sought in vaine,
THE SHIELD OF LOVE, whose guerdon me hath
graced,
Was hangd on high with golden ribbands laced ;
And in the marble stone was written this,
With golden letters goodly well enchaced ;
Blessed the man that well can use this blis :
Whose ever be the Shield, faire Amoret be his.

IX.

"Which when I red, my heart did inly earne,
And pant with hope of that adventures hap :
Ne stayed further newes thereof to learne,
But with my speare upon the Shield did rap,
That all the Castle ringed with the clap.
Streight forth issewd a Knight all arm'd to prooffe,
And bravely mounted to his most mishap :
Who, staying nought to question from aloofe,
Ran fierce at me, that fire glaunst from his horses
hoofe.

X.

"Whom boldly I encountred (as I could)
And by good fortune shortly him unseated.
Eftsoones outsprung two more of equall mould ;
But I them both with equall hap defeated :
So all the twenty I likewise entreated,
And left them groning there upon the plaine.
Then, preacing to the pillow, I repeated
The read thereof for guerdon of my paine,
And, taking downe the Shield, with me did it re-
taine.

XI.

"So forth without impediment I past,
Till to the bridges utter gate I came ;
The which I found sure lockt and chained fast.
I knockt, but no man answered me by name ;
I cald, but no man answered to my clame :
Yet I perséver'd still to knocke and call ;
Till at the last I spide within the same
Where one stood peeping through a crevis small,
To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry therewithall.

XII.

"That was to weete the porter of the place,
Unto whose trust the charge thereof was lent :
His name was Doubt, that had a double face,
Th' one forward looking, th' other hawkeward
Therein resembling Ianus auncient [bent,
Which bath in charge the ingate of the yeare :
And evermore his eyes about him went,
As if some proved perill he did feare,
Or did misdoubt some ill whose cause did not
appare.

XIII.

"On th' one side he, on th' other sate Delay,
Behinde the gate, that none her might espy ;
Whose manner was, all passengers to stay
And entertaine with her occasions sly ;

Through which some lost great hope unheedily,
Which never they recover might againe ;
And others, quite excluded forth, did ly
Long languishing there in unpittied paine,
And seeking often entraunce afterwards in vaine.

XIV.

"Me whenas he had privily espide
Bearing the Shield which I had conquerd late,
He kend it streight, and to me opened wide :
So in I past, and streight he closd the gate.
But being in, Delay in close awaite
Caught hold on me, and thought my steps to stay,
Feigning full many a fond excuse to prate,
And time to steale, the threasure of mans day,
Whose smallest minute lost no riches render may.

XV.

"But by no meanes my way I would forslow
For ought that ever she could doe or say ;
But from my lofty steede dismounting low
Past forth on foote, beholding all the way
Tho goodly workes, and stones of rich assay,
Cast into sundry shapes by wondrous skill,
That like on earth no where I reckon may ;
And underneath, the river rolling still
With murmure soft, that seem'd to serve the work-
mans will.

XVI.

"Thence forth I passed to the second gate,
The Gate of Good Desert, whose goodly pride
And costly frame were long here to relate :
The same to all stooode alwaies open wide ;
But in the porch did evermore abide
An hideous Giant, dreadfull to behold,
That stopt the entraunce with his spacious stride,
And with the terrour of his countenance bold
Full many did affray, that else faine enter would :

XVII.

"His name was Daunger, dreaded over all ;
Who day and night did watch and duely ward
From fearefull eowards entrance to forstall
And faint-heart-fooles, whom shew of perill hard
Could terrifie from fortunes faire adward :
For oftentimes faint hearts, at first espiall
Of his grim face, were from approaching seard :
Unworthy they of grace, whom one deniall
Excludes from fairest hope withouten further triall.

XVIII.

"Yet many doughty wariours, often tride
In greater perils to be stout and bold,
Durst not the sternnesse of his looke abide :
But, soone as they his countenance did behold,
Began to faint, and feele their corage cold.
Again, some other, that in hard assaies
Were eowards knowne, and litle count did hold,
Either through gifts, or guile, or such like waies,
Crept in by stouping low, or stealing of the kaies.

XIX.

"But I, though meanest man of many moe,
Yet much disdainng unto him to lout,
Or creepe betwene his legs, so in to goe,
Resolv'd him to assault with manhood stout,
And either beat him in or drive him out.
Eftsoones, advauncing that enhaunted Shield,

x. 8. *The read thereof*] The inscription. ЧУРЧН.

xi. 5. — clame:] *Call.* So in st. 30. he uses *clamed*
for *called*. ЧУРЧН.

xiv. l. — he] *Doubt.* ЧУРЧН.

With all my might I gan to lay about : [wield
Which when he saw, the glaive which he did
He gan forthwith t'availe, and way unto me yield.

xx.

"So, as I entred, I did backward looke,
For feare of harme that might lie hidden there ;
And loe ! his hindparts, whereof heed I tooke,
Much more deformed, fearfull, ugly were,
Then all his former parts did earst appere :
For Hatred, Murther, Treason, and Despight,
With many moe lay in ambushment there,
Awaiting to entrap the warelesse wight
Which did not them prevent with vigilant fore-
sight.

xxi.

"Thus having past all perill, I was come
Within the compasse of that Islands space ;
The which did seeme, unto my simple doome,
The onely pleasant and delightfull place
That ever troden was of footings trace :
For all that Nature by her mother-wit [base,
Could frame in earth, and forme of substance
Was there ; and all that Nature did omit,
Art, playing second Natures part, supplied it.

xxii.

"No tree, that is of count, in greenewood growes,
From lowest iuniper to ceder tall ;
No flowre in field, that daintie odour throwes,
And deckes his branch with blossomes over all,
But there was planted, or grew naturall :
Nor sense of man so coy and curious nice,
But there mote find to please itselfe withall ;
Nor hart could wish for any quaint device,
But there it present was, and did fraile sense entice.

xxiii.

"In such luxurious plentie of all pleasure,
It seem'd a second paradise I ghesse,
So lavishly enrich with Natures treasure,
That if the happie soules, which doe possesse
Th' Elysian fields and live in lasting blesse,
Should happen this with living eye to see,
They soone would loath their lesser happinesse,
And wish to life return'd againe to bee,
That in this ioyous place they mote have ioyance
free.

xxiv.

"Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny ray ;
Faire lawnds, to take the sunne in season dew ;
Sweet springs, in which a thousand nymphs did
play ;
Soft-rombling brookes, that gentle slomber drew ;
High-reared mounts, the lands about to view ;
Low-looking dales, disloignd from common gaze ;
Delightfull bowres, to solace lovers trew ;
False labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze ;
All which by Nature made did Nature selfe amaze.

xxv.

"And all without were walkes and alleyes dight
With divers trees enrang'd in even rankes ;
And here and there were pleasant arbors pight,

xi. 9. — t'availe.] To lower : i. e. to drop his sword.
TODD.

xxiii. 2. — I ghesse.] That is, I think. TODD.

xxiv. 6. — disloignd] Remote. From *dis* and *eioigné*,
as Mr. Upton observes. TODD.

And shadie seates, and sundry flowering bankes,
To sit and rest the walkers wearie shankes :
And therein thousand payres of lovers walkt,
Praying their god, and yeelding him great
thankes,

Ne ever ought but of their true loves talkt,
Ne ever for rebuke or blame of any baltk.

xxvi.

"All these together by themselves did sport
Their spotlesse pleasures and sweet loves content.
But, farre away from these, another sort
Of lovers linkt in true harts consent ;
Which loved not as these for like intent,
But on chaste vertue grounded their desire,
Farre from all fraud or fayned blandishment ;
Which, in their spirits kindling zealous fire,
Brave thoughts and noble deedes did evermore
aspire.

xxvii.

"Such were great Hercules, and Hyllus deare ;
Trew Ionathan, and David trustie tryde ;
Stout Theseus, and Piritious his feare ;
Pylades, and Orestes by his syde ;
Mylnd Titus, and Gesippus without pryde ;
Damon, and Pythias, whom death could not sever.
All these, and all that ever had bene tyde
In bands of friendship, there did live for ever ;
Whose lives although decay'd, yet loves decayed
never.

xxviii.

"Which whenas I, that never tasted blis
Nor happy howre, beheld with gazefull eye,
I thought there was none other heaven then this ;
And gan their endlesse happinesse envye,
That being free from feare and gealosye
Might frankly there their loves desire possesse ;
Whilst I, through pains and perlous ieopardie,
Was forst to seeke my lifes deare patronesse :
Much dearer be the things which come through
hard distresse.

xxix.

"Yet all those sights, and all that else I saw,
Might not my steps withhold but that forthright
Unto that purposd place I did me draw,
Whereas my Love was lodged day and night,
The Temple of great Venus, that is hight
The queene of Beautie, and of Love the mother,
There worshipped of every living wight ;
Whose goodly workmanship farre past all other
That ever were on earth, all were they set together.

xxx.

"Not that same famous temple of Diáne,
Whose hight all Ephesus did oversee,
And which all Asia sought with vowes prophane,
One of the Worlds Seven Wonders sayd to bee,
Might match with this by many a decree :
Nor that, which that Wise King of Iurie framed
With endlesse cost to be th' Almightyes See ;
Nor all, that else through all the world is named
To all the heathen gods, might like to this be
clamed.

xxv. 9. — of any baltk.] Nor ever were disappointed
by any on account of rebuke or blame. UPTON.

xxvii. 3. — feare:] Companion. TODD.

xxx. 7. — See:] Seat, habitation. We still use it
when we say, A bishop's see. UPTON.

xxxI.

"I, much admyring that so goodly frame,
Unto the porch approcht, which open stood ;
But therein sate an amiable Dame,
'That seem'd to be of very sober mood,
And in her semblant shew'd great womanhood :
Strange was her tyre ; for on her head a crowne
She wore, much like unto a Danisk hood, [gowne
Poudred with pearle and stone ; and all her
Euwoven was with gold, that raught full low adowne.

xxxII.

"On either side of her two young men stood,
Both strongly arm'd, as fearing one another ;
Yet were they brethern both of halfe the blood,
Begotten by two fathers of one mother,
Though of contrarie natures each to other :
The one of them hight Love, the other Hate ;
Hate was the elder, Love the younger brother ;
Yet was the younger stronger in his state
Then th' elder, and him maystred still in all debate.

xxxIII.

"Nathlesse that Dame so well them tempered both,
That she them forced hand to ioyne in hand,
Albe that Hatred was thereto full loth,
And turn'd his face away, as he did stand,
Unwilling to behold that lovely band :
Yet she was of such grace and vertuous might,
That her commandment he could not withstand,
But bit his lip for felonous despight,
And gasht his yron tuskes at that displeasing sight.

xxxIV.

"Concord she cleeped was in common reed,
Mother of blessed Peace and Friendship trew ;
They both her twins, both borne of heavenly seed,
And she herselfe likewise divinely grew ;
The which right well her workes divine did shew :
For strength and wealth and happinesse she lends,
And strife and warre and anger does subdew ;
Of little much, of foes she maketh friends,
And to afflicted minds sweet rest and quiet sends.

xxxV.

"By her the heaven is in his course contained,
And all the world in state unmoved stands,
As their Almighty Maker first ordained,
And bound them with inviolable bands ;
Else would the waters overflow the lands,
And fire devoure the ayre, and hell them quight ;
But that she holds them with her blessed hands.
She is the nurse of pleasure and delight,
And unto Venus grace the gate doth open right.

xxxVI.

"By her I entring half dismayed was ;
But she in gentle wise me entertayned,
And twixt herselfe and Love did let me pas ;
But Hatred would my entrance have restrayned,
And with his club me threatned to have brayned,
Had not the Ladie with her powrefull speach

xxxI. 7. — a Danisk hood,] A Danish hood. TODD.

xxxV. 6. — and hell them quight ;] I suppose he means, "Else the waters would overflow the lands, and fire devour the air, and hell would entirely devour both water and lands : " But this is a most confused construction : Unless hell, hele, [Anglo-Sax.] is to cover. T. WARTON.

xxxVI. 5. — brayned,] To have dashed out the brains. TODD.

Him from his wicked will uneach refrayned ;
And th' other eke his malice did empeach
Till I was throughly past the perill of his reach.

xxxVII.

"Into the inmost temple thus I came,
Which fuming all with frankensence I found
And odours rising from the altars flame.
Upon an hundred marble pillars round
The roof up high was reared from the ground,
All deckt with crownes, and chaynes, and girlaunds
gay,
And thousand pretious gifts worth many a pound,
The which sad Lovers for their vovues did pay ;
And all the ground was strow'd with flowres as
fresh as May.

xxxVIII.

"An hundred altars round about were set,
All flaming with their sacrifices fire,
That with the steme thereof the Temple swet,
Which rould in clouds to heaven did aspire,
And in them bore true Lovers vovues entire :
And eke an hundred brasen caudrons bright,
To bath in ioy and amorous desire,
Every of which was to a Damzell hight ;
For all the Priests were Damzels in soft linnen dight.

xxxIX.

"Right in the midst the goddesse selfe did stand
Upon an altar of some costly masse,
Whose substance was uneach to understand :
For neither pretious stone, nor durefull brasse,
Nor shining gold, nor mouldring clay it was ;
But much more rare and pretious to esteeme,
Pure in aspect, and like to christall glasse ;
Yet glasse was not, if one did rightly deeme ;
But, being faire and brickle, likest glasse did seeme.

XL.

"But it in shape and beantie did excell
All other idoles which the heath'en adore,
Farre passing that, which by surpassing skill
Phidias did make in Paphos isle of yore, [Iore,
With which that wretched Greeke, that life for-
Did fall in love : yet this much fairer shined,
But covered with a slender veile afore ;
And both her feete and legs together twyned
Were with a snake, whose head and tail were fast
combyned.

XLI.

"The cause why she was covered with a veile
Was hard to know, for that her priests the same
From peoples knowledge labour'd to conceale :
But sooth it was not sure for womanish shame,
Nor any blemish, which the worke mote blame ;
But for (they say) she hath both kinds in one,
Both male and female, both under one name :
She syre and mother is herselfe alone,
Begets and eke conceives, ne needeth other none.

XLII.

And all about her necke and shoulders flew
A flocke of litle Loves, and Sports, and Ioyes,
With nimble wings of gold and purple hew ;
Whose shapcs seem'd not like to terrestriall
boyes,

xxxVI. 8. And th' other] That is, Love. CHURCH.

xxxVIII. 8. — hight;] Committed. TOOD.

But like to angels playing heavenly toys ;
The whilst their eldest brother was away,
Cupid their eldest brother : He enioyes
The wide kingdome of Love with lordly sway,
And to his law compels all creatures to obey.

XLIII.

“ And all about her altar scattered lay
Great sorts of Lovers piteously complayning,
Some of their losse, some of their loves delay,
Some of their pride, some paragons disdayning,
Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently fayning,
As every one had cause of good or ill. [straying,
Amongst the rest some one, through Love's con-
Tortmented sore, could not containe it still,
But thus brake forth, that all the Temple it did
fill ;

XLIV.

“ Great Venus ! queene of Beantie and of Grace,
‘ The ioy of gods and men, that under skie
‘ Doest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy place ;
‘ That with thy smyling looke doest pacifie
‘ The raging seas, and makst the stormes to flie ;
‘ Thee, goddesse, thee the winds, the clouds doe
feare ;
‘ And, when thou spredst thy mantle forth on hie,
‘ The waters play, and pleasant lands appeare,
‘ And heavens laugh, and al the world shews ioy-
ous cheare :

XLV.

“ Then doth the dædale earth throw forth to thee
‘ Out of her fruitful lap aboundant flowres ;
‘ And then all living wights, soone as they see
‘ The Spring breake forth out of his lusty bowres,
‘ They all doe learne to play the paramours :
‘ First doe the merry birds, thy pretty pages,
‘ Privily pricked with thy lustful powres,
‘ Chirpe loud to thee out of their leavy cages,
‘ And thee their mother call to coole their kindly
rages.

XLVI.

“ Then doe the salvage beasts begin to play
‘ Their pleasant friskes, and loath their wanted
food :
‘ The Lyons rore ; the tygers loudly bray ;
‘ The raging buls rebellow through the wood,
‘ And breaking forth dare tempt the deepest flood
‘ To come where thou doest draw them with desire :
‘ So all things else, that nourish vitall blood,
‘ Soone as with fury thou doest them inspire,
‘ In generation seeke to quench their inward fire.

XLVII.

“ So all the world by thee at first was made,
‘ And dayly yet thou doest the same repayre :
‘ Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad,
‘ Ne ought on earth that lovely is and fayre,
‘ But thou the same for pleasure didst repayre :
‘ Thou art the root of all that ioyous is :
‘ Great god of men and women, queene of th'ayre,
‘ Mother of laughter, and wel-spring of blisse,
‘ O graunt that of my Love at last I may not misse !’

XLVIII.

“ So did he say : but I with murmur soft,
That none might heare the sorrow of my hart,

XLIII. 4. — some paragons disdayning,] That is, some complaining of the disdain of their paragons, their equals. CHURCH.

Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft,
Besought her to graunt ease unto my smart,
And to my wound her gracious help impart.
Whilst thus I spake, behold ! with happy eye
I spyde where at the Idoles feet apart
A bevie of fayre Damzels close did lye,
Wayting whenas the antheme should be sung on hye

XLIX.

“ The first of them did seeme of ryper yeares
And graver countenance than all the rest ;
Yet all the rest were eke her equall peares,
Yet unto her obeyed all the best :
Her name was Womanhood ; that she exprest
By her sad semblant and demaure wyse :
For stedfast still her eyes gazed rest,
Ne rov'd at randon, after fixers guyse,
Whose luring baytes oftymes doe heedlesse harts
entyse.

L.

“ And next to her sate goodly Shamefastnesse,
Ne ever durst her eyes from ground upreare,
Ne ever once did looke up from her desse,
As if some blame of evill she did feare,
That in her cheekes made roses oft appeare :
And her against sweet Cherefulness was placed,
Whose eyes, like twinkling stars in evening cleare,
Were deckt with smyles that all sad humors
chaced,
And darted forth delights the which her goodly
graced.

LI.

“ And next to her sate sober Modestie,
Holding her hand upon her gentle hart ;
And her against sate comely Curtesie,
That unto every person knew her part ;
And her before was seated overthwart
Soft Silence, and submisise Obedience,
Both linckt together never to dispart ;
Both gifts of God not gotten but from thence ;
Both girlonds of his Saints against their foes offence

LII.

“ Thus sate they all around in seemely rate :
And in the midst of them a goodly Mayd
(Even in the lap of Womanhood) there sate,
The which was all in lilly white arayd,
With silver streames amongst the linnen stray'd ;
Like to the Morne, when first her shyning face
Hath to the gloomy world itself bewray'd :
That same was fayrest Amoret in place,
Shyning with beauties light and heavenly vertues
grace.

LIII.

“ Whome soone as I beheld, my hart gan throb
And wade in doubt what best were to be donne :
For sacrilege me seem'd the church to rob ;
And folly seem'd to leave the thing undonne,
Which with so strong attempt I had begonne.
Tho, shaking off all doubt and shamefast feare,
Which Ladies love I heard had never wonne
Mongst men of worth, I to her stepped neare,
And by the lilly hand her labour'd up to reare.

XLIX. 6. By her sad semblant] Grave countenance. See st. 31. CHURCH.

LI. 9. — girlonds] So all the editions. QUARE, *gardians*, as Spenser would have spelt it. CHURCH.

LII. 1. — in seemely rate:] *Itate* here signifies *manner* Lat. *ratio*. CHURCH.

LIV.

'Thereat that formost Matrone me did blame,
And sharpe rebuke for being over-bold ;
Saying it was to Knight unseemely shame,
Upon a récluse Virgin to lay hold,
That unto Venus services was sold.
To whom I thus ; Nay, but it fitteth best
For Cupids man with Venus mayd to hold ;
For ill your goddesses services are drest
By Virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest.

LV.

"With that my Shield I forth to her did show,
Which all that while I closely had conceald ;
On which when Cupid with his killing bow
And cruell shafts emblazond she beheld,
At sight thereof she was with terror queld,
And said ne mere : but I, which all that while
The pledge of faith her hand engaged held,
(Like warie hynd within the weedie soyle,)
For no intreatie would forgoe so glorious spoyle.

LVI.

"And evermore upon the goddesses face
Mine eye was fixt, for feare of her offence :
Whom when I saw with amiable grace
To laugh on me, and favour my pretence,
I was emboldned with more confidence ;
And, nought for nicenesse nor for envy sparing,
In presence of them all forth led her thence,
All looking on, and like astonisht staring,
Yet to lay hand on her not one of all them daring.

LVII.

"She often prayd, and often me besought,
Sometime with tender teares to let her goe,
Sometime with witching smyles : but yet, for
That ever she to me could say or doe, [nought
Could she her wished freedome fro me woove ;
But forth I led her through the Temple gate,
By which I hardly past with much adoe :
But that same Ladie, which me friended late
In entrance, did me also friend in my retrate.

LVIII.

"No lesse did Daunger threaten me with dread,
Whenas he saw me, maugre all his powre,
That glorious spoyle of Beautie with me lead,
Then Cerberus, when Orpheus did recoure
His Lemman from the Stygian princes boure.
But evermore my Shield did me defend
Against the storme of every dreadfull stourc :
Thus safely with my Love I thence did wend."
So ended he his Tale ; where I this Canto end.

CANTO XI.

Marinells former wound is healed ;
He comes to Proteus hall,
Where Thames doth the Medway wedd,
And feasts the sea-gods all.

I.

But ah ! for pittie that I have thus long
Left a fayre Ladie languishing in payne !

LIV. 1. — that formost Matrone] Womanhood.
CHURCH.

LV. 5. At sight thereof she was with terror queld.] That
is with religious awe. UPTON.

LVI. 8. But that same Ladie.] That is, Concord. CHURCH.

Now well away ! that I have doen such wrong,
To let faire Florimell in bands remayne,
In bauds of love, and in sad thraldomes chayne ;
From which unlesse some heavenly powre her
By miracle, not yet appearing playne, [fres
She lenger yet is like captiv'd to bee ;
That even to thinke thereof it inly pitties mee.

II.

Here neede you to remember, how erewhile
Unlovely Proteus, missing to his mind
That Virgins love to win by wit or wile,
Her threw into a dougeon deepe and blind,
And there in chaynes her cruelly did bind,
In hope thereby her to his bent to draw :
Fer, whenas neither gifts nor graces kind
Her constant mind could move at all he saw,
He thought her to compell by crueltie and awe.

III.

Deepe in the bottome of an huge great recke
The dougeon was, in which her bound he left,
That neither yron barres, nor brasen locke,
Did neede to gard from force or secret theft
Of all her lovers which would her have left :
For wall'd it was with waves, which rag'd and
ror'd
As they the cliffe in peeces would have cleft ;
Besides, ten thousand monsters foule abhor'd
Did waite about it, gaping grisly, all begor'd.

IV.

And in the midst thereof did Horror dwell,
And Darkenesse dredd that never viewed day,
Like to the balefull house of lowest hell,
In which old Styx her aged bones alway
(Old Styx the grandame of the gods) doth lay.
There did this lucklesse Mayd seven months
Ne ever evening saw, ne mornings ray, [abide,
Ne ever from the day the night describe,
But thought it all one night, that did no houres
divide.

V.

And all this was for love of Marinell,
Who her despyed (ah ! who would her despyse!)
And wemens love did from his hart expell,
And all those ieyes that weake mankind entyse.
Nathlesse his pride full dearly he did pryse ;
For of a womans hand it was ywroke,
That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,
Ne can be cured of that cruell stroke
Which Britomart him gave, when he did her pro-
voke.

VI.

Yet farre and neare the Nymph his mother sought,
And many salves did to his sore applie ;
And many herbes did use : But whenas nought
She saw could ease his rankling maladie ;
At last to Tryphon she for helpe did hie,
(This Tryphon is the sea-gods surgeon hight,)
Whom she besought to find some remedie :
And for his paines a whistle him behight,
That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare delight.

III. 9. — begor'd.] Smear'd with gore. ЧУРЧ.

V. 5. — full dearly he did pryse:] He paid dearly
for, he payd the price of. Pryse instead of price, for the
rhyme's sake. CHURCH.

VI. 8. — behight,] Promised. TODD.

vii.
So well that leach did hearken to her request,
And did so well employ his careful paine,
That in short space his hurts he had redrest,
And him restor'd to healthfull state againe :
In which he long time after did remaine
There with the Nymph his mother, like her thrall ;
Who sore against his will did him retaine,
For feare of perill which to him mote fall
Through his too ventrous prowesse proved over all.

viii.
It fortun'd then, a solemne Feast was there
To all the sea-gods and their fruitfull seede,
In honour of the Spousalls which then were
Betwixt the Medway and the Thames agreed.
Long had the Thames (as we in records reed)
Before that day her wooed to his bed ;
But the proud Nymph would for no worldly meed,
Nor no entreatie, to his love be led ;
Till now at last relenting she to him was wed.

ix.
So both agreed that this their Bridale Feast
Should for the gods in Proteus house be made ;
To which they all repayr'd, both most and least,
As well which in the mightie ocean trade,
As that in rivers swim, or brookes doe wade :
All which, not if an hundred tongues to tell,
And hundred mouthes, and voice of brasse I had,
And endlesse memorie that mote excell,
In order as they came could I recount them well.

x.
Helpe therefore, O thou sacred Impe of Iove,
The nursling of dame Memorie his Deare,
To whom those rolles, layd up in heaven above,
And records of antiquitie appeare,
To which no wit of man may comen neare ;
Helpe me to tell the names of all those Floods
And all those Nymphes, which then assembled
To that great Banquet of the watry gods, [were
And all their sundry kinds, and all their hid abodes.

xi.
First came great Neptune, with his three-fork mace,
That rules the seas and makes them rise or fall ;
His dewy lockes did drop with brine apace
Under his diademe imperiall :
And by his side his Queene with coronall,
Faire Amphitrite, most divinely faire,
Whose yvorie shoulders weren covered all,
As with a robe, with her owne silver haire,
And deckt with pearles which th' Indian seas for
her repaire.

xii.
These marched farre afore the other crew :
And all the way before them, as they went,
Triton his trompet shrill before them blew,
For goodly triumph and great iollyment,
That made the rockes to roare as they were rent.
And after them the royall issue came,
Which of them sprung by lineall descent :
First the sea-gods, which to themselves doe claime
The powre to rule the billowes, and the waves to tame :

xiii.
Phoreys, the father of that fatall brood,
By whom those old heroës wonne such fame ;

ix. 3. — both most and least.] That is, from the greatest to the least. CHURCH.

And Glauco, that wise southsayer understood ;
And tragicke Inoes sonne, the which became
A god of seas through his mad mothers blame,
Now hight Palemon, and is saylers trend ;
Great Brontes ; and Astræus, that did shame
Himselfe with incest of his kin unkend ;
And huge Orion, that doth tempests still portend ;

xiv.
The rich Cteatus ; and Eurytus long,
Nelens and Pelias, lovely brethren both ;
Mightie Chrysaor ; and Caicus strong ;
Euryplus, that calmes the waters wroth ;
And faire Euphœmus, that upon them go'th,
As on the ground, without dismay or dread ;
Fierce Eryx ; and Alebius, that know'th
The waters depth, and doth their hottome tread ;
And sad Asopus, comely with his hoarie lead.

xv.
There also some most famous Founders were
Of puissant nations, which the world possest,
Yet sonnes of Neptune, now assembled here :
Ancient Ogyges, even th' auncestest ;
And Inachus renowmd above the rest ;
Phœnix ; and Aon ; and Pelasgus old ;
Great Belus ; Phœax ; and Agenor best ;
And mightie Albion, father of the bold
And warlike people which the Britaine Islands hold :

xvi.
For Albion the sonne of Neptune was ;
Who, for the prooffe of his great puissance,
Out of his Albion did on dry-foot pas
Into old Gall, that now is cleeped France,
To fight with Hercules, that did advance
To vanquish all the world with matchlesse might ;
And there his mortall part by great mischance
Was slaine ; but that which is th' immortal
spright
Lives still, and to this Feast with Neptunes seed
was dight.

xvii.
But what do I their names seeke to reherse,
Which all the world have with their issue fill'd ?
How can they all in this so narrow verse
Contayned be, and in small compasse hild ?
Let them record them that are better skild,
And know the monuments of passed age :
Onely what needeth shall be here fulkild,
T' expresse some part of that great equipage
Which from great Neptune do derive their parent-
age.

xviii.
Next came the aged Ocean and his Dame
Old Tethys, th' oldest two of all the rest ;
For all the rest of those two parents came,
Which afterward both sea and land possest ;
Of all which Nereus, th' eldest and the best,
Did first proceed ; then which none more upright,
Ne more sincere in word and deed profest ;
Most voide of guile, most free from fowle despight,
Doing himselfe and teaching others to doe right :

xix.
There to he was expert in prophecies,
And could the ledde of the gods unfold ;

xvi. 3. *Out of his Albion did on dry-foot pas*] Brittain was said originally to have been joined to Gaul. UPRON.

xix. 2. — the ledde of the gods] The language of dialect. UPRON.

Through which, when Paris brought his famous
prize,
The faire Tindarid Lasse, he him foretold
That her all Greece with many a champion bold
Should fetch againe, and finally destroy
Proud Priams towne: So wise is Nereus old,
And so well skild; nathlesse he takes great ioy
ft-times amongst the wanton nymphs to sport and
toy.

XX.

And after him the famous Rivers came,
Which doe the earth enrich and beautifie:
The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth frame;
Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from the
skie;
Faire Ister, flowing from the mountaines hie;
Divine Scamander, purpled yet with blood
Of Greeks and Troians, which therein did die;
Pactolus glistring with his golden flood;
And Tygris fierce, whose streames of none may be
withstood;

XXI.

Great Ganges; and immortal Eúphrates;
Deepe Indus; and Mæander intricate;
Slow Peneus; and tempestuous Phasides;
Swift Rhene; and Alpheus still immaculate;
Ooraxes, feared for great Cyrus fate;
Tybris, renowned for the Romaines fame;
Rich Oranochy, though but knowne late;
And that huge River, which doth beare his name
Of warlike Amazons which doe possesse the same.

XXII.

Ioy on those warlike Women, which so long
Can from all Men so rich a kingdome hold!
And shame on you, O Men, which boast your
strong [bold,
And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard and
Yet quail in conquest of that Land of Gold!
But this to you, O Britons, most pertaines,
To whom the right hereof itselfe hath sold;
The which, for sparing litle cost or paines,
Loose so immortall glory, and so endlesse gaines.

XXIII.

Then was there heard a most celestiall sound
Of dainty musicke, which did next ensue
Before the Sponse; that was Arion crownd;
Who, playing on his harpe, unto him drew
The eares and hearts of all that goodly crew;
That even yet the dolphin, which him bore
Through the Ægæan seas from pirates vew,
Stood still by him astonisht at his lore,
And all the raging seas for ioy forgot to rore.

XXIV.

So went he playing on the watery plaine:
Soone after whom the lovely Bridegrome came,
The noble Thames, with all his goodly traine.
But him before there went, as best became,
His ancient parents, namely th'ancient Thame;
But much more aged was his wife then he,
The Ouze, whom men doe Isis rightly name;
Full weake and crooked creature seemed shee,
And almost blind through eld, that scarce her way
could see.

XXV.

Therefore on either side she was sustained [hight
Of two smal grooms, which by their names were

The Churne and Charwell, two small streames,
which pained

Themselves her footing to direct aright,
Which fayled oft through faint and feeble plight:
But Thame was stronger, and of better stay;
Yet seem'd full aged by his outward sight,
With head all hoary, and his beard all gray,
Deawed with silver drops that trickled downe alway:

XXVI.

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe afore
With bowed backe, by reason of the lode
And auncient heavy burden which he bore
Of that faire City, wherein make ahode
So many learned impes, that shoote abroad,
And with their branches spred all Britany,
No lesse then do her elder Sisters broode.
Ioy to you Both, ye double Nourserie
Of Arts! but, Oxford, thine doth Thame most
glorify.

XXVII.

But he their Sonne, full fresh and jolly was,
All decked in a robe of watchet hew,
On which the waves, glittering like christall glas,
So cunningly enwoven were, that few
Could weenen whether they were false or trew:
And on his head like to a coronet
He wore, that seemed strange to common vew,
In which were many towres and castels set,
That it encompass round as with a golden fret.

XXVIII.

Like as the Mother of the gods, they say,
In her great iron charret wents to ride,
When to loves pallace she doth take her way,
Old Cybelè, arayd with pompous pride,
Wearing a diademe embattild wide
With hundred turrets, like a turribant.
With such an one was Thamis beautifide;
That was to weet the famous Troynovant,
In which her kingdomes throne is chieffy resident.

XXIX.

And round about him many a pretty Page
Attended duely, ready to obay;
All little Rivers which owe vassallage
To him, as to their Lord, and tribute pay:
The chaulky Kenet; and the Thetis gray;
The morish Cole; and the soft-sliding Brcane;
The wanton Lee, that oft doth loose his way;
And the still Darent, in whose waters cleane
Ten thousand fishes pay and decke his pleasant
streame.

XXX.

Then came his neighbour Flouds which nigh him
dwell,
And water all the English soile throughout;
They all on him this day attended well,
And with meet service waited him about
Ne none disdained low to him to lout:
No not the stately Severne grudg'd at all,
Ne storming Humber, though he looked stout;
But both him honor'd as their principall,
And let their swelling waters low before him fall.

xxvii. 1. — *he their Sonne*] Thames or Thamis.
Church.

xxviii. 9. — *re-iant*] *Resident*, lodged, placed.
Lat-Barb. *resantio*, residence. URTON.

XXXI.

There was the speedy Tamar, which divides
The Cornish and the Devonish confines ;
Through both whose borders swiftly downe it
glides, [clines :
And, meeting Plim, to Plimmonth thence de-
And Dart, nigh chockt with sands of tinny mines :
But Avon marched in more stately path,
Pronde of his adamants with which he shines
And glisters faire, as als of wondrous Bath,
And Bristow faire, which on his waves he builded
hath.

XXXII.

And there came Stoure with terrible aspéct,
Bearing his sixe deformed heads on hye,
That doth his course through Blandford plains
direct,
And washeth Winborne meades in season drye.
Next him went Wyhbourne with passage slye,
That of his wylnesse his name doth take,
And of himselfe doth name the shire thereby :
And Mole, that like a nousing mole doth make
his way still under ground till Thames he overtake.

XXXIII.

Then came the Rother, decked all with woods
Like a wood-god, and flowing fast to Rhy ;
And Sture, that parteth with his pleasant floods
The Easterne Saxons from the Southerne ny,
And Clare and Harwitch both doth beautify :
Him follow'd Yar, soft washing Norwich wall,
And with him brought a present ioyfully
Of his owne fish unto their Festivall,
Whose like none else could shew, the which they
ruffins call.

XXXIV.

Next these the plenteous Ouse came far from land,
By many a city and by many a towne,
And many rivers taking under-hand
Into his waters, as he passeth downe, [Rowe,)
(The Cle, the Were, the Guant, the Sture, the
Thence doth by Huntingdon and Cambridge flit,
My mother Cambridge, whom as with a crowne
He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it
With many a gentle Muse and many a learned Wit.

XXXV.

And after him the fatall Welland went,
That if old sawes prove true (which God forbid !)
Shall drowne all Holland with his excrement,
And shall see Stamford, though now homely hid,
Then shine in learning more then ever did
Cambridge or Oxford, Englands goodly beames.
And next to him the Nene downe softly slid ;
And hounteous Trent, that in himselfe ensembles
Both thirty sorts of fish and thirty sundry streames.

XXXVI.

Next these came Tyne, along whose stony bancke
That Romaine monarch built a brasen wall,
Which mote the feebled Britons strongly flancke
Against the Picts that swarmed over all,

xxxv. 1. *And after him the fatal Welland went.*] *Fatal*,
i. e. appointed by the Fates to some end or purpose.
UPTON.

xxxv. 8. — ensembles] Mr. Upton interprets this
word, from no just grounds, *fattens*. The word perhaps
was uponed from the old French verb *ensemencer*, to fur-
nish with seed. TODD.

Which yet thereof Gualsever they doe call :
And Twede, the limit betwixt Logris land
And Albany : And Eden, though but small,
Yet often staine'd with blond of many a band
Of Scots and English both, that tynd on his strand.

XXXVII.

Then came those sixe sad Brethren, like forlorne,
That whilome were, as antique fathers tell,
Sixe valiant Knights of one faire nympe yborne,
Which did in noble deedes of armes excell,
And woned there where now Yorke people dwell ;
Still Ure, swift Werfe, and Oze the most of might,
High Swale, unquiet Nide, and troublous Skell ;
All whom a Scythian king, that Humber hight,
Slew cruelly, and in the river drowned quite :

XXXVIII.

But past not long, ere Brutus warlicke sonne
Loocrinus them aveng'd, and the same date,
Which the proud Humber unto them had donne,
By equall dome repayd on his owne pate ;
For in the selfe same river, where he late
Had drenched them, he drowned him againe ;
And nam'd the river of his wretched fate ;
Whose had condition yet it doth retaine,
Oft tossed with his stormes which therein still
remaine.

XXXIX.

These after came the stony shallow Lone,
That to old Loncaster his name doth lend ;
And following Dee, which Britons long ygone
Did call divine, that doth by Chester tend ;
And Conway, which out of his streame doth send
Plenty of pearles to decke his dames withall ;
And Lindus, that his pikes doth most commend,
Of which the auncient Lincolne men doe call :
All these together marched toward Proteus hall.

XL.

Ne thence the Irishe Rivers absent were :
Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee,
And ioyne in neighbourhood of kingdome nere,
Why should they not likewise in love agree,
And ioy likewise this solemne day to see ?
They saw it all, and present were in place ;
Though I them all, according their degree,
Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race,
Nor read the salvage countries thorough which they
pace.

XLI.

There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea ;
The sandy Slane ; the stony Anbrian ;
The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea ;
The pleasant Boyne ; the fishy fruitfull Ban ;
Swift Anwiduff, which of the English man
Is call'd Blacke-water ; and the Liffar deep ;
Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran ;
Strong Allo tomling from Slewlogher steep ;
And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught to
weep.

XLII.

And there the three renowned Brethren were,
Which that great gyant Blomius begot

xxxvi. 6. — betwixt Logris land
And Albany.] That is, betwixt England and
Scotland. ЧУКЧ.

xxxvi. 9. — that tynd on his strand.] *Tynd*,
i. e. that were killed. Isl. tyna, tynde, *perdidit*. UPTON

Of the faire nimph Rhetisa wandring there :
 One day, as she to shunne the season whot
 Under Slewoome in shady grove was got,
 This gyant found her and by force deflowr'd ;
 Whereof conceiving, she in time forth brought
 These three faire sons, which being thenceforth
 powrd

In three great rivers ran, and many countreis scowrd.

XLIII.

The first the gentle Shure that, making way
 By sweet Clonmell, adornes rich Waterford ;
 The next, the stubborne Newre whose waters gray
 By faire Kilkenny and Rossepointe boord ;
 The third, the goodly Barow which doth hoord
 Great leaps of salmons in his deepe bosome :
 All which, long sundred, doe at last accord
 To ioyne in one, ere to the sea they come ;
 So, flowing all from one, all one at last become.

XLIV.

There also was the wide embayed Mayre ;
 The pleasaunt Bandon crownd with many a wood ;
 The spreading Lee that, like an island fayre,
 Encloseth Corke with his divided flood ;
 And balefull Onre late staind with English blood :
 With many more whose names no tongue can tell.
 All which that day in order seemly good
 Did on the Thames attend, and waited well
 To doe their dueful service, as to them befell.

XLV.

Then came the Bride, the lovely Medua came,
 Clad in a vesture of unknowen geare
 And uncoth fashion, yet her well became,
 That seem'd like silver sprinckled here and theare
 With glittering spangs that did like starres ap-
 And wavy'd upon, like water chamelot, [peare,
 To hide the metall, which yet every where
 Bewrayd itselke, to let men plainly wot
 It was no mortall worke, that seem'd and yet was not.

XLVI.

Her goodly lockes adowne her backe did flow
 Unto her waste, with flowres bescattered,
 The which ambrosiall odours forth did throw
 To all about, and all her shoulders spread
 As a new spring ; and likewise on her head
 A chapelet of sundry flowers she wore,
 From under which the deawy humour shed
 Did tricle downe her haire, like to the hore
 Congealed little drops which doe the morne adore.

XLVII.

On her two pretty Handmaides did attend,
 One cald the Theise, the other cald the Crane ;
 Which on her waited things amisse to mend,
 And both behind upheld her spreading traine ;
 Under the which her feet appeared plaine,
 Her silver feet, faire washt against this day ;
 And her before there paced Pages twaine,
 Both clad in colours like and like array,
 The Doune and eke the Frith, both which prepard
 her way.

XLVII. 4. By *faire Kilkenny and Rossepointe boord* ;] *Boord by, i. e. run sportingly by.* UPTON.

XLV. 6. — *chamelot.*] The stuff which we now call *camblet* ; originally made, according to Dr. Johnson, by a mixture of silk and camel's hair, but now made with wool and silk. TODD.

XLVI. 9. — *adore.*] For *adorn.* CHURCH.

XLVIII.

And after these the Sea-nymphs marched all,
 All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene haire,
 Whom of their sire Nereides men call,
 All which the Oceans daughter to him bare,
 The gray-eyde Doris ; all which fifty are ;
 All which she there on her attending had :
 Swift Proto ; milde Eucratè ; Thetis faire ;
 Soft Spio ; sweete Endorè ; Sao sad ;
 Light Doto ; wanton Glauçè ; and Galenè glad ;

XLIX.

White-hand Eunice ; proud Dynamenè ;
 Ioyous Thalia ; goodly Amphitrite ;
 Lovely Pasithee ; kinde Eulimene ;
 Light-foote Cymotboè ; and sweete Melitè ;
 Fairest Pherusa ; Phao lilly white ;
 Wondred Agavè ; Poris ; and Nescea ;
 With Erato that doth in love delite ;
 And Panopæ ; and wise Protomedæa ;
 And snowy-neckd Doris ; and milke-white Galathæa

L.

Speedy Hippothoè ; and chaste Actea ;
 Large Lisianassa ; and Pronæa sage ;
 Euagorè ; and light Pontoporea ;
 And, she that with her least word can asswage
 The surging seas when they do sorest rage,
 Cymodocè ; and stout Autonoe ;
 And Neso ; and Eionè well in age ;
 And seeming still to smile Glaucomomè ;
 And, she that hight of many heastes, Polynomè ;

LI.

Fresh Alimeda deckt with girlond greene ;
 Hyponeo with salt-bedewed wrests ;
 Laomedia like the christall sheeme ;
 Liagorè much praised for wise behests ;
 And Psmathè for her brode snowy brests ;
 Cymo ; Enpompe ; and Themistè iust ;
 And, she that vertue loves and vice detests,
 Euarna ; and Menippe true in trust ;
 And Nemertea learned well to rule her lust.

LII.

All these the Daughters of old Nerens were,
 Which have the sea in charge to them assinde,
 To rule his tides, and surges to upreare,
 To bring forth stormes, or fast them to upbinde,
 And sailers save from wreckes of wrathfull winde.
 And yet besides, three thousand more there were
 Of th' Oceans seede, but Ioves and Phœbus kinde ;
 The which in floods and fountaines doe appere,
 And all mankind do nourish with their waters
 clere.

LIII.

The which, more eath it were for mortall wight
 To tell the sands, or count the starres on hie,
 Or ought more hard, then thinke to reckon right.
 But well I wote that these, which I descry,
 Were present at this great Solemnity :
 And there, amongst the rest, the Mother was

XLVIII. 4. *All which &c.*] That is, all which Nereides the gray-eyde Doris, the daughter of Oceanus, bare to bim. CHURCH.

LI. 9. — *lust.* Will. CHURCH.

LII. 7. — *but Ioves and Phæbus kinde.*] Perhaps, "both Ioves and Phæbus kinde." that is, of the kindred both of Jupiter and Apollo. UPTON.

Of luckelesse Marinell, Cymodocè ;
Which, for my Muse herselfe now tyred has,
Unto an other Canto I will overpas.

CANTO XII.

Marin, for love of Florinell,
In languor wastes his life:
The Nymph, his mother, getteth her
And gives to him for wife.

I.

O WHAT an endlesse worke have I in hand,
To count the Seas abundant progeny,
Whose fruitfull seede farre passeth those in land,
And also those which worne in th' azure sky !
For much more eath to tell the starres on hy,
Albe they endlesse seeme in estimation,
Then to recount the Seas posterity :
So fertile be the flouds in generation,
So huge their numbers, and so numberlesse their
nation.

II.

Therefore the antique wisards well invented
That Venns of the fomy sea was bred ;
For that the seas by her are most augmented.
Witness th' exceeding fry which there are fed,
And wondrous sholes which may of none be red.
Then blame me not if I have err'd in cout
Of gods, of nymphs, of rivers, yet unred : [monnt,
For though their numbers do much more sur-
Yet all those same were there which erst I did
recount.

III.

All those were there, and many other more,
Whose names and nations were too long to tell,
That Protens house they fild even to the dore ;
Yet were they all in order, as befell,
According their degrees disposed well.
Amongst the rest was faire Cymodocè,
The Mother of unlucky Marinell,
Who thither with her came, to learne and see
The manner of the gods when they at banquet be.

IV.

But for he was halfe mortall, being bred
Of mortal sire, though of immortal wombe,
He might not with immortal food be fed,
Ne with th' eternall gods to banquet come ;
But walkt abrode, and round about did roome
To view the building of that uncouth place,
That seem'd unlike unto his earthly home :
Where, as he to and fro by chance did trace,
There unto him betid a disadventrous case.

V.

Under the hanging of an hideous clieffe
He heard the lamentable voice of one,
That piteously complaind her careful grieffe,
Which never she before disclosd to none,
But to herselfe her sorrow did bemoane :
So feelingly her case she did complaine,
That ruth it moved in the rocky stone,
And made it seeme to feele her grievous paine,
And oft to grone with billowes beating from the
maine :

rv. 1. *But for*] But *whereas* or *because*, an old form of speaking. TODD.

v. 3. ——— *complaind her careful grieffe,*] Doluit suos dolores. UPRON.

VI.

" Though vaine I see my sorrowes to unfold
And count my cares, when none is nigh to heare ;
Yet, hoping griefe may lessen being told,
I will them tell though unto no man neare :
For Heaven, that unto all lends equall eare,
Is farre from hearing of my heavy plight ;
And lowest hell, to which I lie most neare,
Cares not what evils hap to wretched wight ;
And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life delight.

VII.

" Yet loe ! the seas I see by often beating [weares ;
Doe pearce the rockes ; and hardest marble
But his hard rocky hart for no entreating [heares,
Will yeeld, but, when my piteous plaints he
Is hardened more with my abundant teares :
Yet though he never list to me relect,
But let me waste in woe my wretched yeares,
Yet will I never of my love repent,
But ioi that for his sake I suffer prisonment.

VIII.

" And when my weary ghost, with griefe out-worne,
By timely death shall winne her wished rest,
Let then this plaint unto his eares be borne,
That blame it is, to him that armes protest,
To let her die whom he might have redrest !"
There did she pause, inforced to give place
Unto the passion that her heart opprest ;
And, after she had wept and wail'd a space,
She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched case :

IX.

" Ye gods of seas, if any gods at all
Have care of right or ruth of wretches wrong,
By one or other way me woefull thrall
Deliver hence out of this dungeon strong,
In which I daily dying am too long :
And if ye deeme me death for loving one
That loves not me, then doe it not prolong,
But let me die and end my daies atone,
And let him live unlov'd, or love himselfe alone.

X.

" But if that life ye unto me decree,
Then let mee live, as Lovers ought to do,
And of my lifes deare Love beloved be :
And, if he should through pride your doome
Do you by duresse him compell thereto, [undo,
And in this prison put him here with me ;
One prison fittest is to hold us two :
So had I rather to be thrall then free ;
Such thralldome or such freedome let it surely be.

XI.

" But O vaine judgment, and conditions vaine,
The which the prisoner points unto the free !
The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his paine,
He where he list goes loose, and laughs at me :
So ever loose, so ever happy be !
But whereso loose or happy that thou art,
Know, Marinell, that all this is for thee !"
With that she wept and wail'd, as if her hart
Would quite have burst through great abundance
of her smart.

vii. 9. ——— *prisonment.*] This was the usual word, as Mr. Warton has remarked, in former times for *imprisonment*. TODD.

xi. 3. ——— *deeme his paine.*] That is, *adjudge* his punishment. TODD.

xii.

All which complaint when Marinell had heard,
 And understood the cause of all her care
 To come of him for using her so hard ;
 His stubborne heart, that never felt misfare,
 Was toucht with soft remorse and pittie rare ;
 That even for grief of minde he oft did grone,
 And inly wish that in his powre it weare
 Her to redresse : but since he meanes found none,
 He could no more but her great misery bemone.

xiii.

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender ruth
 Was toucht, and mighty courage mollifide,
 Dame Venus soune that tameneth stubborne youth
 With iron bit, and maketh him abide
 Till like a victor on his backe he ride,
 Into his mouth his maystring bridle threw,
 That made him stoupe, till he did him bestride :
 Then gan he make him tread his steps anew,
 And learne to love by learning Lovers paines to
 rew.

xiv.

Now gan he in his grieved minde devise,
 How from that dungeon he might her enlarge :
 Some while he thought, by faire and humble wise
 To Proteus selfe to sue for her discharge :
 But then he fear'd his Mothers former charge
 Gainst womens love, long given him in vaine :
 Then gan he thinke, perforce with sword and
 targe
 Her forth to fetch, and Proteus to constraîne :
 But soone he gan such folly to forthinke againe.

xv.

Then did he cast to steale her thence away,
 And with him heare where none of her might
 know.
 But all in vaine : for why? he found no way
 To enter in, or issue forth below ;
 For all about that rocke the sea did flow.
 And though unto his will she given were,
 Yet, without ship or bote her thence to row,
 He wist not how her thence away to bere ;
 And daunger well he wist long to continue there.

xvi.

At last, whenas no meanes he could invent,
 Backe to himselfe he gan returne the blame,
 That was the author of her punishment ;
 And with vile curses and reprochfull shame
 To damne himselfe by every evil name,
 And deeme unworthy of love or life,
 That had despise so chaste and faire a Dame,
 Which him had sought through trouble and long
 strife ;
 Yet had refusde a god that her had sought to wife.

xvii.

In this sad plight he walked here and there,
 And romed round about the rocke in vaine,
 As he had lost himselfe he wist not where ;
 Oft listening if he mote her heare againe ;
 And still bemoaning her unworthy paine :
 Like as an hynde whose calfe is false unwares
 Into some pit, where she him heares complaine,
 An hundred times about the pit side fares,
 Right sorrowfully mourning her bereaved cares.

xvi. 5. To damne himselfe] Not to curse but to condemn himself &c. CHURCH.

xviii.

And now by this the Feast was throughly ended,
 And every one gan homeward to resort :
 Which seeing, Marinell was sore offended
 That his departure thence should be so short,
 And leave his Love in that sea-walled fort :
 Yet durst he not his Mother disobay ;
 But, her attending in full seemly sort,
 Did march amongst the many all the way ;
 And all the way did inly mourne, like one astray.

xix.

Being returned to his Mothers bowre,
 In solitary silence far from wight
 He gan record the lamentable stowre,
 In which his wretched Love lay day and night,
 For his deare sake, that ill deserv'd that plight :
 The thought whereof empierst his hart so deepe,
 That of no worldly thing he tooke delight ;
 Ne dayly food did take, ne nightly sleepe,
 But pyn'd, and mourn'd, and languisht, and alone
 did weepe ;

xx.

That in short space his wonted chearefull hew
 Gan fade, and lively spirits deaded quight:
 His cheeke-bones raw, and eie-pits hollow grew,
 And brawney armes had lost their knownen might,
 That nothing like himselfe he seem'd in sight.
 Ere long so weake of limbe, and sicke of love
 He woxe, that lenger he note stand upright,
 But to his hed was brought, and layd above,
 Like ruefull ghost, unable once to stir or move.

xxi.

Which when his Mother saw, she in her mind
 Was troubled sore, ne wist well what to weene ;
 Ne could by search nor any meanes out find
 The secret cause and nature of his teene,
 Whereby she might apply some medicine ;
 But weeping day and night did him attend,
 And mourn'd to see her losse before her eyne,
 Which griev'd her more that she it could not
 mend:
 To see an hellesse evill double grieffe doth lend.

xxii.

Nought could she read the root of his disease,
 Ne weene what mister maladie it is,
 Whereby to seeke some means it to appease.
 Most did she thinke, but most she thought amis,
 That that same former fatal wound of his
 Whyleare by Tryphon was not thoroughly healed,
 But closely rankled under th' orifis:
 Least did she thinke, that which he most concealed,
 That love it was, which in his hart lay unrevealed.

xxiii.

Therefore to Tryphon she againe doth hast,
 And him doth chyd as false and fraudulent,
 That fayld the trust, which she in him had plast,
 To cure her Sonne, as he his faith had lent ;
 Who now was false into new languishment
 Of his old hurt, which was not thoroughly cured.
 So backe he came unto her patient ;
 Where searching every part, her well assured
 That it was no old sore which his new paine
 procured ;

xx. 3. His cheeke-bones raw,—grew.] That is, his cheeks grew raw-boned. I think he here uses raw for bare, i. e. bare of flesh. CHURCH.

XXIV.

But that it was some other maladie,
Or grief unknowne, which he could not discern:
So left he her withouten remedie.
Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and earne,
And inly troubled was, the truth to learne.
Unto himselfe she came, and him besought,
Now with faire speeches, now with threatnings
sterne,
If ought lay hidden in his grieved thought,
It to reveale: who still her answered, there was
nought.

XXV.

Nathlesse she rested not so satisfide ;
But leaving watry gods, as booting nought,
Unto the shinie heaven in haste she hide,
And thence Apollo king of leaches brought.
Apollo came ; who, soone as he had sought
Through his disease, did by and by out find
That he did languish of some inward thought,
The which afflicted his engrieved mind ;
Which love he red to be, that leads each living kind.

XXVI.

Which when he had unto his Mother told,
She gan threaten to fret and greatly grieve :
And, commaing to her Sonne, gan first to scold
And chyde at him that made her misbelieve :
But afterwards she gan him soft to shrieve,
And woove with fair intreatie, to disclose
Which of the nymphes his heart so sore did mieve:
For sure she weend it was some one of those,
Which he had lately seene, that for his Love he
chose.

XXVII.

Now lesse she feared that same fatal read,
That warned him of womens love beware :
Which being ment of mortal creatures sead,
For love of nymphes she thought she need not
care,
But promist him, whatever wight she weare,
That she her love to him would shortly game:
So he her told : but soone as she did heare
That Florimell it was which wrought his paine,
She gan afresh to chafe, and grieve in every vaine.

XXVIII.

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie,
In which his life unluckily was layd,
It was no time to scan the prophecie,
Whether old Proteus true or false had sayd,
That his decay should happen by a Mayd ;
(It's late, in death, of daunger to advize ;
Or love forbid him, that is life denyd ;)
But rather gan in troubled mind devize
How she that Ladies libertie might enterprize.

XXIX.

To Proteus selfe to sew she thought it vaine,
Who was the root and worker of her woe ;
Nor unto any meaner to complaine ;
But unto great King Neptune selfe did goe,
And, on her knee before him falling lowe,
Made humble suit unto his Maiestie
To graunt to her her Sonnes life, which his foe,

xxvi. 5. ——— to shrieve,] To treat him as one at con-
fession. CHURCH.

xxvi. 7. ——— mieve:] For move. CHURCH.

A cruell Tyrant, had presumpteouslie
By wicked doome condemn'd a wretched death to
die.

XXX.

To whom god Neptune, softly smyling, thus ;
“ Daughter, me seemes of double wrong ye plaine,
Gainst one that hath both wronged you and us :
For death t' adward I ween'd did appertaine
To none but to the seas sole Sovereaine:
Read therefore who it is which this hath wrought,
And for what cause ; the truth discover plaine :
For never wight so evill did or thought,
But would some rightfull cause pretend, though
rightly nought.”

XXXI.

To whom she answer'd ; “ Then it is by name
Proteus, that hath ordayn'd my Sonne to die ;
For that a Waift, the which by fortune came
Upon your seas, he claym'd as proprietie :
And yet nor his, nor his in equitie,
But yours the Waift by high prerogative :
Therefore I humbly crave your Majestie
It to replevie, and my Sonne reprove :
So shall you by one gift save all us three alive.”

XXXII.

He graunted it : and streight his warrant made,
Under the Sea-god's seale autenticall,
Commaunding Proteus straight t'enlarge the
Which wandering on his seas imperiall [Mayd
He lately tooke, and sithence kept as thrall,
Which she receiving with meete thankfulnessse,
Departed straight to Proteus therewithall :
Who, reading it with inward loathfulnessse,
Was grieved to restore the pledge he did possessse.

XXXIII.

Yet durst he not the warrant to withstand,
But unto her delivered Florimell.
Whom she receiving by the lilly hand,
Admyr'd her beautie much, as she mote well,
For she all living creatures did excell
And was right joyous that she gotten had
So faire a wife for her Sonne Marinell.
So home with her she streight the Virgin lad,
And shewed her to him then being sore bestad.

XXXIV.

Who soone as he beheld that Angels face
Adorn'd with all divine perfection,
His cheared heart eftsometimes away gan chace
Sad Death, revived with her sweet inspection,
And feeble spirit inly felt refection ;
As withered weed through cruell winters tine,
That feels the warmth of sunny beames reflection,
Liftes up his head that did before decline,
And gins to spread his leafe before the faire sun-
shine.

XXXV.

Right so himselfe did Marinell upreare,
When he in place his dearest Love did spy ;
And though his limbs could not his bodie bear,
Ne former strength returne so suddenly,
Yet chearefull signes he shewed outwardly.
Ne lesse was She in secret hart affected,

xxxii. 8. It to replevie, &c.] That is, to order my Sor
to be restored. CHURCH.

But that she masked it with modestie,
For feare she should of lightnesse be detected :
Which to another place I leave to be perfected.

[NOTWITHSTANDING the action of the Fairy Queen is simple and uniform : (for, what is the action of this poem, but the Briton Prince, seeking Gloriana, whom he saw in a vision ? and what is the completion of the action, but his finding whom he sought ?) yet the several subservient characters, plots, intrigues, tales, combats, tilts, and tournaments, with the like apparatus of Romances, make the story in all its circumstances very extensive and complicated ; resembling some ancient and magnificent pile of Gothick architecture, which the eye cannot comprehend in one full view. Therefore, to avoid confusion, 'tis requisite that the poet should ever and anon (in the vulgar phrase) wind up his bottoms ; his underplots and intrigues should be unravelled from probable consequences ; and, what belongs to the main action and more essential parts of the poem, should, as in a well-conducted drama, be reserved for the last act. In this respect our poet proceeds with great art and conduct ; he clears the way for you, whilst you are getting nearer, in order that you might have a complete and just view of his poetical building. And in this fourth Book many are the distresses, and many the intrigues, which are happily solved. Thus lovers and friends find at length their fidelity rewarded. But 'tis to be remember'd that love and friendship can subsist only among the good and honest ; not among the faithless and disloyal ; not among the Paridels and Blandamoures ; but among the Scudamores, the Triamonds, and Cambels. 'Tis with these that the young hero (whom Spenser often shows you, as Homer introduces his Achilles, lest you should think him forgotten, though not mentioned for several Cantos) ; 'tis, I say, in company with these lovers and friends, that the Briton Prince is to learn what true love and friendship are ; that, being perfected in all virtues, he may attain the glory of being worthy of the Fairy Queen.

This fourth Book differs very remarkably from all the other Books : here no new Knight comes from the Court of

the Fairy Queen upon any new adventure or quest : but the poet gives a solution of former distresses and plots ; exhibits the amiableness of friendship and love ; and, by way of contrast, the deformities of discord and lust.

As no writer equals Spenser in the art of imaging, or bringing objects in their full and fairest view before your eyes ; (for you do not read his descriptions, you see them ;) so, in all this kind of painting, he claims your attention and admiration. Such for instance in this Book, is the dwelling of Ate, C. i. st. 20. The house of the three fatal sisters, C. ii. st. 47. The machinery and interposition of Cambina, C. iii. st. 33. The cottage of old Care, the blacksmith, C. v. st. 33. Greedy lust, in the character of a savage, C. vii. st. 5. Infectious lust, in the character of a giant, whose eyes dart contagious fire, C. viii. st. 38. The whole story, which Scudamour tells of his gaining of Amoret (in C. x.) is all wonderful, and full of poetical machinery ; and the episode of the marriage of the Thames and Medway is so finely wrought into the poem, as to seem necessary for the solution of the distresses of Florimel, that at length she might be made happy with her long-look'd for Marinell. Uron.

A few words more may be said of the beautiful allegory of Scudamour's courtship to Amoret ; an allegory, to use the words of The Tatler, "so natural, that it explains itself : in which the persons are very artfully described, and disposed in proper places. The posts assigned to Doubt, Delay, and Danger, are admirable. The Gate of Good Desert has something noble and instructive in it. But, above all, I am most pleased with the beautiful groupe of figures in the corner of the Temple. Among these Womanhood is drawn like what the philosophers call an Universal Nature, and is attended with beautiful representatives of all those virtues that are the ornaments of the Female Sex, considered in its natural perfection and innocence."

The reader will also look back with pleasure to the well-imagined and well-described circumstances of Care himself as well as of his abode. Nor are the gallant deeds of Britomart, the contention for Florimel's Girdle, and the overthrow of Corflambo by Prince Arthur, to be enumerated without acknowledgement to Spenser's happy talents of invention and exhibition.

TODD.]

THE FIFTH BOOK OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAYNING

THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL OR OF JUSTICE.

I.

So oft as I with state of present time
The image of the antique world compare,
Whenas mans age was in his freshest prime,
And the first blossom of faire vertue bare ; [are,
Such oddes I finde twixt those, and these which
As that, through long continuance of his course,
Me seemes the world is runne quite out of square
From the first point of his appointed course ;
And being once amisse growes daily wourse and
wourse :

II.

For from the golden age, that first was named,
It's now at earst become a stonie one ; [framed
And men themselves, the which at first were
Of earthly mould, and form'd of flesh and bone,
Are now transformed into hardest stone ;
Such as behind their backs (so backward bred)
Werc throwne by Pyrrha and Deucalione :

II. 2. — at earst] That is, at length. CHURCH. MR
Upton, however, interprets *at earst* AS FORMERLY. TODD.

And if then those may any worse be red,
They into that ere long will be degenerated.

III.

Let none then blame me, if, in discipline
Of vertue and of civill uses lore,
I do not forme them to the common line
Of present dayes which are corrupted sore ;
But to the antique use which was of yore,
When good was onely for itselfe desyred,
And all men sought their owne, and none no more ;
When Justice was not for most meed outlyred,
But simple Truth did rayne, and was of all admyred.

IV.

For that which all men then did Vertue call,
Is now cald Vice ; and that which Vice was hight,
Is now hight Vertue, and so us'd of all : [Right ;
Right now is Wrong, and Wrong that was is
As all things else in time are chaunged quight :
Ne wonder ; for the heavens revolution
Is wandred farre from where it first was pight,
And so doe make contrarie constitution
Of all this lower world toward his dissolution.

V.

For whoso list into the heavens looke,
And search the courses of the rowling spheares,
Shall find that from the point where they first
tooke
Their setting forth, in these few thousand yeares
They all are wandred much ; that plaine ap-
peares :
For that same golden fleecy ram, which bore
Phrixus and Helle from their stepdames feares,
Hath now forgot where he was plast of yore,
And shouldred hath the bull which fayre Europa
bore :

VI.

And eke the bull hath with his how-bent horne
So hardly butted those two twinnes of Iove,
That they have crusht the crab, and quite him
Into the great Nemeæan lions grove. [borne
So now all range, and doe at randon rove
Out of their proper places farre away,
And all this world with them amisse doe move,
And all his creatures from their course astray ;
Till they arrive at their last ruinous decay.

VII.

Ne is that same great glorious lampe of light,
That doth enlumine all these lesscr fyres,
In better case, ne keeps his course more right,
But is miscaried with the other spheres :
For since the terme of fourteen hundred yeres,
That learned Ptolomæe his hight did take,
He is declyned from that marke of theirs
Nigh thirtie minutes to the southerne lake ;
That makes me feare in time he will us quite forsake.

VIII.

And if to those Ægyptian wisards old
(Which in star-reading were wont have hest insight)
Faith may be given, it is by them told [hight,
That since the time they first tooke the sunnes

Foure times his place he shifted hath in sight,
And twice hath risen where he now doth west,
And wested twice where he ought rise aright.
But most is Mars amisse of all the rest ;
And next to him old Saturne, that was wont be best.

IX.

For during Saturnes ancient raigne it's sayd
That all the world with goodnesse did abound ;
All loved vertue, no man was affrayd
Of force, ne fraud in wight was to be found ;
No warre was knowne, no dreadful trompets
sound ;
Peace univrsal rayn'd mongst men and beasts :
And all things freely grew out of the ground :
Justice sate high ador'd with solemne feasts,
And to all people did divide her dred behests :

X.

Most sacred Vertue she of all the rest,
Resembling God in his imperiall might ;
Whose soveraine powre is herein most exprest,
That both to good and bad he dealeth right,
And all his workes with iustice hath bedight.
That powre he also doth to princes lend,
And makes them like himselfe in glorious sight
To sit in his own seate, his cause to end,
And rule his people right, as he doth recommend.

XI.

Dread soverayne goddess, that doest highest sit
In seate of iudgement in th' Almightyes stead,
And with magnificke might and wondrous wit
Doest to thy people righteous doome aread,
That furlthest nations files with awfull dread,
Pardon the boldnesse of thy hastest thrall,
That dare discourse of so divine a read,
As thy great iustice prayseed over all ;
The instrument whereof loe here thy Artegall.

CANTO I.

Artegall trayn'd in Iustice lore
Ireneas quest pursued ;
He doth avenge on Sanglier
His Ladies bloud embrewed.

I.

THOUGH vertue then were held in highest price,
In those old times of which I doe intreat,
Yet then likewise the wicked seede of vice
Began to spring ; which shortly grew full great,
And with their houghes the gentle plants did beat :
But evermore some of the vertuous race
Rose up, inspired with heroicke heat,
That cropt the branches of the sient base,
And with strong hand their fruitfull rancknes did
deface.

II.

Such first was Bacchus, that with furious might
All th' east before untam'd did over-ronne,
And wrong repressed, and establish right,
Which lawlesse men had formerly fordonne :
There Iustice first her princely rule begonne.
Next Hercules his like ensample shewed,
Who all the west with equall conquest wonne,
And monstrous tyrants with his club subdued ;
The club of Iustice dread with kingly powre endewed.

ii. 9. — degenerated.] This is Spenser's own word, which Mr. Upton thus illustrates: "From *genders* comes *degendered*: So from *degender* *DEGENERED*, *degeneratus*."
TORD.

ARG. 3. — Sanglier] Perhaps *Shan Oneal*. TORD.

iii.
And such was he of whom I have to tell,
The Champion of true Justice, Artegall :
Whom (as ye lately mote remember well)
An hard adventure, which did then befall,
Into redoubted perill forth did call ;
That was, to succour a distressed Dame
Whom a strong Tyrant did uniously thrall,
And from the heritage, which she did clame,
Did with strong hand withhold ; Grantorto was his
name.

iv.
Wherefore the Lady, which Irena hight,
Did to the Faerie Queene her way addresse,
To whom complainyng her afflicted plight,
She her besought of gracious redresse :
That soveraine queene, that mightie emperesse,
Whose glorie is to aide all suppliants pore,
And of weake princes to be patronesse,
Chose Artegall to right her to restore ;
For that to her heseem'd best skild in righteous lore.

v.
For Artegall in iustice was upbrought
Even from the cradle of his infancie,
And all the depth of rightfull doome was taught
By faire Astræa, with great industrie,
Whilst here on earth she lived mortallie :
For, till the world from his perfection fell
Into all filth and foule iniquitie,
Astræa here mongst earthly men did dwell,
And in the rules of iustice them instructed well.

vi.
Whiles through the world she walked in this sort,
Upon a day she found this gentle childe
Amongst his peres playing his childish sport ;
Whom seeing fit, and with no crime defilde,
She did allure with gifts and speaches milde
To wend with her : so thence him farre she brought
Into a cave from companie exile,
In which she nursled him, till yeares he raught ;
And all the discipline of iustice there him taught.

vii.
There she him taught to weigh both right and wrong
In equall ballance with due recompence,
And equitie to measure out along
According to the line of conscience,
Whenso it needs with rigour to dispence :
Of all the which, for want there of mankind,
She caused him to make experience
Upon wyld beasts, which she in woods did find,
With wrongfull powre oppressing others of their
kind.

viii.
Thus she him trayned, and thus she him taught
In all the skill of deeming wrong and right,
Untill the ripenesse of mans yeares he raught ;
That even wilde beasts did feare his awfull sight,
And men admyr'd his over-ruling might ;
Ne any liv'd on ground that durst withstand
His dreadfull heast, much lesse him match in fight,
Or hide the horror of his wreakfull hand,
Whenso he list in wrath lift up his steely brand :

iii. 9. — Grantorto] Ital. *gran torto*, great injury
and wrong. UPRON.

ix.
Which steely brand, to make him dreaded more,
She gave unto him, gotten by her slight
And earnest search, where it was kept in store
In Ioves eternall house, unwist of wight,
Since he himselfe it us'd in that great fight
Against the Titans, that whylome rebelled
Gainst highest heaven ; Chrysaor it was hight ;
Chrysaor, that all other swords excelled,
Well prov'd in that same day when Iove those gyants
quelled :

x.
For of most perfect metall it was made,
Tempred with adamant amongst the same,
And garnisht all with gold upon the blade
In goodly wise, whereof it tooke his name,
And was of no lesse vertue then of fame :
For there no substance was so firme and hard,
But it would pierce or cleave wherso it came ;
Ne any armour could his dint out-ward ;
But wheresoever it did light, it throughly shard.

xi.
Now when the world with sinne gan to abound,
Astræa loathing lenger here to space
Mongst wicked men, in whom no truth she found,
Return'd to heaven, whence she deriv'd her race ;
Where she hath now an everlasting place [see
Mongst those twelve signes, which nightly we do
The heavens bright-shining baudricke to enchace ;
And is the Virgin, sixt in her degree,
And next herselfe her righteous ballance hanging bee.

xii.
But when she parted hence she left her groome,
An Yron Man, which did on her attend
Always to execute her stedfast doome,
And willed him with Artegall to wend,
And doe whatever thing he did intend :
His name was Talus, made of yron mould,
Immoveable, resistlesse, without end ;
Who in his hand an yron flae did hould,
With which he threst out falshood, and did truth
unfould.

xiii.
He now went with him in this new inquest,
Him for to aide, if aide he chaunst to neede,
Against that cruell Tyrant, which opprest
The faire Irena with his foule misdeede,
And kept the crowne in which she should succeed :
And now together on their way they bin,
Whenas they saw a Squire in squallid weed
Lamenting sore his sorrowfull sad tye
With many hitted teares shed from his blubbred
eyne.

xiv.
To whom as they approached, they espide
A sorie sight as ever seene with eye,
And headlesse Ladie lying him beside
In her owne blood all wallow'd wifely,
That her gay clothes did in discolour die.
Much was he moved at that ruefull sight ;

ix. 8. — Chrysaor,] This sword is called *Chrysaor*,
because garnisht all with gold. UPRON.

xi. 7. *The heavens bright-shining baudricke*] So he ele-
gantly calls the Zodiacke : *Baudrick* is a belt, formed from
the base latinity *baldringum*, *baltus*. UPRON.

And flam'd with zeale of vengeance inwardly
He askt who had that Dame so foully dight,
Or whether his owne hand, or whether other wight ?

xv.

"Ah ! woe is me, and well away," quoth hee
Bursting forth teares like springs out of a banke,
"That ever I this dismall day did see !
Full farre was I from thinking such a pranke ;
Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke,
If I should graunt that I have doen the same,
That I mote drinke the cup whereof she dranke ;
But that I should die guiltie of the blame,
The which another did who now is fled with shame."

xvi.

"Who was it then," said Artegal, "that wrought ?
And why ? doe it declare unto me trew."
"A Knight," said he, "if Knight he may be thought,
That did his hand in Ladies bloud embrew,
And for no cause, but as I shall you shew.
This day as I in solace sate herchy
With a fayre Love whose losse I now do rew,
There came this Knight, having in companie
This lucklesse Ladie which now here doth head-
lesse lie.

xvii.

"He, whether mine seem'd fayrer in his eye,
Or that he waxed weary of his owne,
Would change with me ; but did it denye,
So did the Ladies both, as may be knowne :
But he, whose spirit was with pride upblowne,
Would not so rest contented with his right ;
But, having from his courser her downe throwne,
Fro me reft mine away by lawlesse might,
And on his steed her set to beare her out of sight.

xviii.

"Which when his Ladie saw, she follow'd fast,
And on him catching hold gan loud to crie
Not so to leave her nor away to cast,
But rather of his hand besought to die :
With that his sword he drew all wrathfully,
And at one stroke cropt off her head with scorne,
In that same place whereas it now doth lie.
So he my Love away with him hath borne,
And left me here both his and mine owne Love to
morne."

xix.

"Aread," said he, "which way then did he make ?
And by what markes may he be knowne againe ?"
"To hope," quoth he, "him soone to overtake,
That hence so long departed, is but vaine :
But yet he pricked over yonder plaine,
And as I marked bore upon his shield,
By which it's easie him to know againe,
A broken sword within a bloodie field ;
Expressing well his nature which the same did wield."

xx.

No sooner sayd, but streight he after sent
His yron Page, who him pursew'd so light,

xiv. 7. — flam'd] *Being inflamed.* CHURCH.

xv. 4. — such a pranke:] *Prank* is, in general, used
as a word of levity. Nevertheless, it appears in Cotgrave's
Dictionary that the word was also formerly employed in
the serious signification of *great injury or mischief*, and is
accordingly translated *malefice*. TODD.

As that it seem'd above the ground he went :
For he was swift as swallow in her flight,
And strong as lyon in his lordly might.
It was not long before he overtooke
Sir Sanglier, (so cleped was that Knight),
Whom at the first he gessed by his looke,
And by the other markes which of his shield he tooke.

xxi.

He had him stay and backe with him retire ;
Who, full of scorne to be commaunded so,
The Lady to alight did eft require,
Whilest he reformed that uncivill fo ;
And streight at him with all his force did go :
Who mov'd no more therewith, then when a rocke
Is lightly stricken with some stones throw ;
But to him leaping lent him such a knocke,
That on the ground he layd him like a sencelesse
blocke.

xxii.

But, ere he could himselfe recure againe,
Him in his iron paw he seized had ;
That when he wak't out of his warelesse paine,
He found himselfe unwist so ill bestad,
That him he could not wag ; thence he him lad,
Bound like a beast appointed to the stall .
The sight whereof the Lady sore adrad,
And fam'd to fly for feare of being thrall ;
But he her quickly stayd, and forst to wend withall.

xxiii.

When to the place they came where Artegal
By that same careful Squire did then abide,
He gently gan him to demand of all
That did betwixt him and that Squire betide :
Who with sterne countenance and indignant pride
Did aunswere, that of all he guiltlesse stood,
And his accuser thereupon stood ;
For neither he did shed that Ladies bloud,
Nor tooke away his Love, but his owne proper good.

xxiv.

Well did the Squire perceive himselfe too weake
To aunswere his defiance in the field,
And rather chose his challenge off to breake
Then to approve his right with speare and shield,
And rather guilty chose himselfe to yield.
But Artegal by signes perceiving plaine
That he it was not which that Lady kild,
But that strange Knight, the fairer Love to gaine,
Did castabout by sleight the truth thereout to straine.

xxv.

And sayd ; "Now sure this doubtfull causes right
Can hardly but by sacrament be tride,
Or else by ordele, or by bloody fight ;
That ill perhaps mote fall to either side :
But if ye please that I your cause decide,
Perhaps I may all further quarrell end,
So ye will swear my judgement to abide."
Thereto they both did franckly condescend,
And to his doome with listfull eares did both attend

xxvi.

"Sith then," said he, "ye both the dead deny,
And both the living Lady claime your right,

xxii. 3. — his warelesse paine,] His pain of which
he was not aware. CHURCH.

xxv. 2. Can hardly but by sacrament be tride,] *Sacra-*
ment is the oath of purgation. T. WARTON.

Let both the dead and living equally
Devided be betwixt you here in sight,
And each of either take his share aright.
But looke, who does dissent from this my read,
He for a twelve moneths day shall in despight
Beare for his penance that same Ladies head;
To wnesse to the world that she by him is dead."

xxvii.

Well pleased with that doome was Sangliere,
And offred streight the Lady to be slaine: [dere,
But that same Squire to whom she was more
Whenas he saw she should be cut in twaine,
Did yield she rather should with him remaine
Alive then to himselfe be shared dead;
And rather then his Love should suffer paine,
He chose with shame to beare that Ladies head:
True love despiseth shame when life is cold in
dread.

xxviii.

Whom when so willing Artegall perceaved; [deeme
"Not so, thou Squire," he said, "but thine I
The living Lady, which from thee he reaved:
For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme.
And you, Sir Knight, that love so light esteeme,
As that ye would for little leave the same,
Take here your owne that doth you best beseeume,
And with it beare the burden of defame;
Your owne dead Ladies head, to tell abroad your
shame."

xxix.

But Sangliere disdaind much his doome,
And sternly gan repine at his beheast;
Ne would for ought obey, as did become,
To beare that Ladies head before his breast:
Untill that Talus had his pride represt,
And forced him, maulgrè, it up to reare.
Who when he saw it bootelesse to resist,
He tooke it up, and thence with him did beare;
As rated spaniell takes his hurden up for feare.

xxx.

Much did that Squire Sir Artegall adore
For his great iustice held in high regard;
And as his Squire him offred evermore
To serve, for want of other meete reward,
And wend with him on his adventure hard:
But he thereto would by no meanes consent;
But leaving him forth on his journey far'd:
Ne wight with him but onely Talus went;
They two enough t' encounter a whole regiment.

CANTO II.

Artegall honores of Florinell;
Does with the Pagan fight;
Him slaine; drownes Lady Munera;
Does race her Castle quight.

I.

NOUGHT is more honourable to a Knight,
Ne better doth beseeume brave Chevalry,
Then to defend the feeble in their right,
And wrong redresse in such as wend awry:
Whilome those great herôes got thereby

xxix. 6. — maulgrè.] Whether he would or not.
CHURCH.

Their greatest glory for their rightfull deedes,
And place deserved with the gods on hy:
Herein the noblesse of this Knight exceedes,
Who now to perils great for iustice sake proceedes.

II.

To which as he now was upon the way,
He chaunst to meet a Dwarfie in hasty course;
Whom he requir'd his forward hast to stay,
Till he of tidings mote with him discourse.
Loth was the Dwarfie, yet did he stay perforce,
And gan of sundry newes his store to tell,
As to his memory they had recourse;
But chiefly of the fairest Florimell,
How she was found againe, and spouse to Marinell

III.

For this was Dony, Florimells owne Dwarfie,
Whom having lost (as ye have heard whyleare)
And finding in the way the scattred scarfe,
The fortune of her life long time did feare:
But of her health when Artegall did heare,
And safe returne, he was full iuly glad,
And askt him where and when her brideale cheare
Should be solèmniz'd; for, if time he had,
He would be there, and honor to her spousall ad.

IV.

"Within three daies," quoth he, "as I do heare,
It will be at the Castle of the strond;
What time, if naught me let, I will be there
To do her service so as I am bound.
But in my way a little here beyond
A cursed cruell Sarazin doth wonne,
That keepes a bridges passage by strong hond,
And many errant Knights hath there fordonne
That makes all men for feare that passage for to
shonne."

V.

"What mister wight," quoth he, "and how farhence
Is he, that doth to travellers such harmes?"
"He is," said he, "a man of great defence;
Expert in battell and in deedes of armes;
And more emboldned by the wicked charmes,
With which his Daughter doth him still support;
Having great lordships got and goodly farmes
Through strong oppression of his powre extort;
By which he still them holds, and keepes with strong
effort.

VI.

"And dayly he his wrongs increaseth more;
For never wight he lets to passe that way,
Over his bridge, albee he rich or poore,
But he him makes his passage-penny pay:
Else he doth hold him backe or beat away.
Thereto he hath a Groome of evill guize,
Whose scalp is bare, that bondage doth bewray,
Which pils and pils the poore in piteous wize;
But he himselfe upon the rich doth tyrannize.

II. 7. — had recourse:] That is, did recur. CHURCH.

V. 8. Through &c.] That is, extorted through, &c. CHURCH.

VI. 8. — albee he &c.] That is, whether he be &c. CHURCH.

VI. 7. Whose scalp is bare, that bondage doth bewray,] The Germans and Franks, with most of the northern nations, thought wearing the hair long, a sign of freedom: the contrary bewrayed bondage. URTON.

VI. 8. Which pils and pils the poore &c.] The words

vii.

"His name is hight Pollenté, rightly so,
For that he is so puissant and strong,
That with his powre he all doth over-go,
And makes them subiect to his mighty wrong ;
And some by sleight he eke doth underfong :
For on a bridge he custometh to fight,
Which is but narrow, but exceeding long ;
And in the same are many trap-fals pight,
Through which the rider downe doth fall through
oversight.

viii.

"And underneath the same a river flowes,
That is both swift and dangerous deepe withall ;
Into the which whomso he overthrowes,
All destitute of helpe doth headlong fall ;
But he himselfe through practise usuall
Leapes forth into the foud, and there assaies
His foe confused through his sodaine fall,
That horse and man he equally dismaies,
And either both them drownes, or trayterously
slaies.

ix.

"Then doth he take the spoile of them at will,
And to his Daughter brings, that dwells thereby :
Who all that comes doth take, and therewith fill
The coffers of her wicked treasury ;
Which she with wrongs hath heaped up so hy
That many princes she in wealth exceeds,
And purchast all the cuntry lying ny
With the revenue of her plenteous meedes :
Her name is Munera, agreeing with her deedes.

x.

"Thereto she is full faire, and rich attired,
With golden hands and silver feete beside,
That many lords have her to wife desired ;
But she them all despiseth for great pride."
"Now by my life," said he, "and God to guide,
None other way will I this day betake,
But by that bridge whereas he doth abide :
Therefore me thither lead." No more he spake,
But thitherward forthright his ready way did make.

xi.

Unto the place he came within a while,
Where on the bridge he ready armed saw
The Sarazin, awayting for some spoile :
Who as they to the passage gan to draw,
A Villaine to them came with scull all raw,
That passage-money did of them require,
According to the custome of their law : [hire ;"
To whom he annswerd wroth, "Loe there thy
And with that word him strooke, that streight he
did expire.

xii.

Which when the Pagan saw he wexed wroth,
And streight himselfe unto the fight addrest ;
Ne was Sir Artegall behinde : so both
Together ran with ready speares in rest.

Right in the midst, whereas they brest to brest
Should meete, a trap was letten downe to fall
Into the foud : streight leapt the Carle unblest
Well weening that his foe was falne withall :
But he was well aware, and leapt before his fall.

xiii.

There being both together in the foud,
They each at other tyrannously flew ;
Ne ought the water cooled their whot blond,
But rather in them kindled choler new :
But there the Paynim, who that use well knew
To fight in water, great advantage had,
That oftentimes him nigh he overthrew :
And eke the courser whereuppon he rad
Could swim like to a fish whiles he his backe bestrad.

xiv.

Which oddes whenas Sir Artegall espide,
He saw no way but close with him in hast ;
And to him driving strongly downe the tide
Uppon his iron collar griped fast,
That with the straint his wesand nigh he brast.
There they together strove and struggled long,
Either the other from his steed to cast ;
Ne ever Artegall his griple strong
For any thinge wold slacke, but still upon him
hong.

xv.

As when a dolphin and a sele are met
In the wide champain of the ocean plaine,
With cruell chanfe their courages they whet,
The maysterdome of each by force to gaine,
And dreadfull battaile twixt them do darraine ;
They snnf, they snort, they bounce, they rage,
they rore,
That all the sea, disturbed with their traine,
Doth frie with fome above the surges hore :
Such was betwixt these two the troublesome nprore.

xvi.

So Artegall at length him first forsake
His horses backe for dread of being drownd,
And to his handy swimming him betake.
Eftsoones himselfe he from his hold unbownd,
And then no ods at all in him he fownd ;
For Artegall in swimming skilfull was,
And durst the depth of any water sownd.
So ought each Knight, that use of perill has,
In swimming be expert, through waters force to pas.

xvii.

Then very donbtfull was the warres event,
Uncertaine whether had the better side :
For both were skild in that experiment,
And both in armes well traird and thoroughly
But Artegall was better breath'd beside, [tride.
And towards th' end grew greater in his might,
That his faint foe no longer could abide
His pnisance, ne beare himselfe upright ;
But from the water to the land betooke his flight.

xviii.

But Artegall pursewd him still so neare
With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand,
That, as his head he gan a litle reare
Above the brincke to tread upon the land,

xvii. 3. ——— in that experiment.] That is, in swimming
Church.

pill and *poll* appear to have been synonymous. See Barret's
Dict. 1580, in v. "To pill or poll, to take by extortion."
Todd.

vii. 5. ——— underfong :] *Underfong* is used by Chaucer
in the sense of *undertake*. Spenser's meaning is that
Pollenté (in the Latin sense of *capto*) doth lie in wait,
doth attempt to take, or entrap, them. Todd.

xi. 4. [Who] So all the editions. Perhaps, *Tho. Chaucer*.

He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand
It hit the earth for very fell despite,
And gnashed with his teeth, as if he had
High God, whose goodnesse he despaired quight,
Or curst the hand which did that vengeance on him
dight.

xix.

His corps was carried downe along the lee,
Whose waters with his filthy bloud it stayned :
But his blasphemous head, that all might see,
He pitcht upon a pole on high ordayned ;
Where many years it afterwards remayned,
To be a mirrour to all mighty men,
In whose right hands great power is containyd,
That none of them the feeble over-ren,
But alwaies doe their powre within iust compasse
pen.

xx.

That done, unto the Castle he did wend,
In which the Paynims Daughter did abide,
Guarded of many which did her defend :
Of whom he entrance sought, but was denide,
And with reprochfull blasphemy defide,
Beaten with stones downe from the battilment,
That he was forced to withdraw aside ;
And bad his servant Talus to invent
Which way he enter might without endangerment.

xxi.

Eftsouones his Page drew to the Castle gate,
And with his iron flae at it let flie,
That all the war-ers it did sore amate,
The which ere-while spake so reprochfully,
And made them stoupe, that looked earst so hie.
Yet still he bet and bounst uppon the dore,
And thundred strokes thereon so hideouslie,
That all the pece he shaked from the flore,
And filled all the house with feare and great uppre.

xxii.

With noise whereof the Lady forth appeared
Uppon the Castle wall ; and, when she saw
The dangerous state in which she stood, she feared
The sad effect of her neare overthrow ;
And gan intreat that Iron Man below
To cease his outrage, and him faire besought ;
Sith neither force of stones which they did throw,
Nor powr of charms, which she against him
wrought,
Might otherwise prevaile, or make him cease for
ougt.

xxiii.

But, whenas yet she saw him to proceede
Unmov'd with praiers or with piteous thought,
She ment him to corrupt with goodly meede ;
And caude great sakes with endlesse riches
Unto the battilment to be upbrought, [fraught
And powred forth over the Castle wall, [bought,
That she might win some time, though dearly
Whilst he to gathering of the gold did fall ;
But he was nothing mov'd nor tempted there-
withall :

xxiv.

But still continu'd his assault the more,
And layd on load with his huge yron flae,

xix. 1. — the lee.] Or, as he elsewhere says, "the
watry lee," i. e. the stream, F. Q. iv. ii. 16. CHURCH.
xxi. 8. — the pece] Castle. TODD.

That at the length he has yrent the dore,
And made way for his Maister to assaile :
Who being entred, nought did then availle
For wight against his powre themselves to reare :
Each one did flie ; their hearts began to faile ;
And hid themselves in corners here and there ;
And eke their Dame halfe dead did hide herself for
feare.

xxv.

Long they her sought, yet no where could they finde
That sure they ween'd she was escapt away : [her,
But Talus, that could like a lime-hound winde her,
And all things secrete wisely could hewray,
At length found out whereas she hidden lay
Under an heape of gold : thence he her drew
By the faire lockes, and fowly did array
Withouten pitty of her goodly hew,
That Artegal himselfe her seemlesse plight did rew.

xxvi.

Yet for no pitty would he change the course
Of iustice, which in Talus hand did lye ;
Who rudely hayld her forth without remorse,
Still holding up her suppliant hands on lye,
And kneeling at his feete submissively :
But he her suppliant hands, those hands of gold,
And eke her feete, those feete of silver trye,
Which sought unrighteousnesse, and iustice sold,
Chopt off, and nayld on high, that all might them
behold.

xxvii.

Herselfe then tooke he by the selender waist
In vaine loud crying, and into the flood
Over the Castle wall adowne her cast,
And there her drowned in the dirty mud :
But the streame washt away her guilty blood.
Thereafter all that mucky peffe he tooke,
The spoile of peoples evil gotten good, [erooke,
The which her sire had serapt' by hooke and
And burning all to ashes powr'd it down the brooke.

xxviii.

And lastly all that Castle quite he raced,
Even from the sole of his foundation,
And all the hewen stones thereof defaced,
That there mote be no hope of reparation,
Nor memory thereof to any nation.
All which when Talus throughly had perfourmed,
Sir Artegal undid the evil fashion,
And wicket customes of that bridge reformed :
Which done, unto his former iourney he returned.

xxix.

In which they measur'd nickle weary way,
Till that at length nigh to the sea they drew ;
By which as they did travell on a day,
They saw before them, far as they could vew,
Full many people gathered in a crew ;
Whose great assembly they did much admire ;
For never there the like resort they knew.
So towards them they coasted, to enquire
What thing so many nations met did there desire.

xxv. 3. — a lime-hound] That is, a limer or large
dog used in hunting the wild boar : Kersey. CHURCH.

xxv. 9. — seemlesse] Unseemly. CHURCH.

xxvi. 7. — of silver trye.] Trye for tryed, refined.
The last letter is dropt, as usual, for the sake of the rhyme.
CHURCH

xxx.

They they beheld a mighty Gyant stand
 Upon a rocke, and holding forth on hie
 An huge great paire of ballance in his hand,
 With which he boasted in his surquedrie
 That all the world he would weigh equallie,
 If ought he had the same to counterpoys :
 For want whereof he weighed vanity,
 And filld his ballaunce full of idle toys :
 Yet was admired much of fooles, women, and boys.

xxxii.

He sayd that he would all the earth uptake
 And all the sea, divided each from either :
 So would he of the fire one ballaunce make,
 And onc of th' ayre, without or wind or wether :
 Then would he ballaunce heaven and hell together,
 And all that did within them all containe ;
 Of all whose weight he would not misse a fether :
 And looke what surplus did of each remaine,
 He would to his owne part restore the same againe.

xxxiii.

For why, he sayd, they all unequall were,
 And had encroched upon others share ;
 Like as the sea (which plaine he shewed there)
 Had worne the earth ; so did the fire the aire ;
 So all the rest did others parts empare :
 And so were realmes and nations run awry.
 All which he undertooke for to repaire,
 In sort as they were formed aunciently ;
 And all things would reduce unto equality.

xxxiiii.

Therefore the vulgar did about him flocke,
 And cluster thicke unto his leasings vaine ;
 Like foolish flies about an hony-crocke ;
 In hope by him great benefite to gaine,
 And uncontrolled freedome to obtaine.
 All which when Artegal did see and heare,
 How he misled the simple peoples traine,
 In seignifull wize he drew unto him neare,
 And thus unto him spake, without regard or feare ;

xxxv.

"Thou, that presum'st to weigh the world anew,
 And all things to an equall to restore,
 Instead of right me seemes great wrong dost
 And far above thy forces pitch to score : [shew,
 For, ere thou limit what is lesse or more
 In every thing, thou oughtest first to know
 What was the poysse of every part of yore :
 And looke then, how much it doth overflow
 Or faile thereof, so much is more then iust to trow.

xxxvi.

"For at the first they all created were
 In goodly measure by their Makers might ;
 And weighed out in ballaunces so nere,
 That not a dram was missing of their right :
 The earth was in the middle centre pight,
 In which it doth immoveable abide,
 Hemd in with waters like a wall in sight,
 And they with aire, that not a drop can slide :
 Al which the heavens containe, and in their courses
 guide.

xxx. 4. — in his surquedrie] In his pride or presumption. TODD.

xxxiv. 9. — to trow.] To trow is the same as to wil, videlicet. UPTON.

xxxvii.

"Such heavenly justice doth among them raine,
 That every one doe know their certaine bound ;
 In which they doe these many yeares remaine,
 And amongst them al no change hath yet beene
 found :
 But if thou now shouldst weigh them new in pound,
 We are not sure they would so long remaine :
 All change is perillous, and all chaunce unsound.
 Therefore leave off to weigh them all againe,
 Till we may be assur'd they shall their course
 retaine."

xxxviii.

"Thou foolishhe elfe," said then the Gyant wroth,
 "Seest not how badly all things present bee,
 And each estate quite out of order goth ?
 The sea itselfe doest thou not plainly see
 Eneroch upon the land there under thee ?
 And th' earth itselfe how daily its increast
 By all that dying to it turned be ?
 Were it not good that wrong were then surceast,
 And from the most that some were given to the
 least ?

xxxix.

"Therefore I will throw downe these mountains hie,
 And make them leuell with the lowly plaine,
 These towring rocks, which reach unto the skie,
 I will thrust downe into the deepest maine,
 And, as they were, them equalize againe.
 Tyrants, that make men subject to their law,
 I will suppress, that they no more may raine ;
 And lordings curbe that commonns over-aw ;
 And all the wealth of rich men to the poore will
 draw."

xl.

"Of things unseene how caust thou deeme aright,"
 Then answered the righteous Artegal, [sight ?
 "Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things in
 What though the sea with waves continuall
 Doe eate the earth, it is no more at all ;
 Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought :
 For whatsoever from one place doth fall
 Is with the tide unto another brought :
 For there is nothing lost, that may be found if
 sought.

xli.

"Likewise the earth is not augmented more
 By all that dying into it doe fade ;
 For of the earth they formed were of yore :
 However gay their blossome or their blade
 Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade.
 What wrong then is it if that when they die
 They turne to that whereof they first were made ?
 All in the powre of their great Maker lie :
 All creatures must obey the voice of the Most Hie.

xlii.

"They live, they die, like as He doth ordaine,
 Ne ever any asketh reason why.
 The hills doe not the lowly dales disdain ;
 The dales doe not the lofty hills envy.
 He maketh kings to sit in sovereignty ;
 He maketh subjects to their powre obey ;

xxxvi. 5. — new in pound.] New in pound is new in the balance, Lat. *pondo*. CHURCH.

xxxix. 9. For &c.] That is, For nothing can properly be said to be lost, which may be found if sought for. CHURCH

He pulleth downe, He setteth up on hy ;
He gives to this, from that He takes away :
For all we have is His : what He list doe, He may.

XLII.

"Whatever thing is done, by Him is donne,
Ne any may His mighty will withstand ;
Ne any may His souveraine power shonne,
Ne loose that He hath bound with stedfast band :
In vaine therefore doest thou now take in hand
To call to count, or weigh His workes anew,
Whose counsels depth thou canst not understand ;
Sith of things subiect to thy daily vew
Thou doest not know the causes nor their courses
dew.

XLIII.

"For take thy ballaunce, if thou be so wise, [blow ;
And weigh the winde that under heaven doth
Or weigh the light that in the east doth rise ;
Or weigh the thought that from mans mind doth
flow :
But if the weight of these thou canst not show,
Weigh but one word which from thy lips doth
fall :
For how canst thou those greater secrets know,
That doest not know the least thing of them all ?
Ill can he rule the great that cannot reach the
small."

XLIV.

Therewith the Gyant much abashed sayd
That he of little things made reckoning light ;
Yet the least word that ever could be layd
Within his ballaunce he could way aright. [weight,
"Which is," sayd he, "more heavy then in
The right or wrong, the false or else the trew ?"
He answered that he would try it streight :
So he the words into his ballaunce threw ;
But streight the winged words out of his hallaunce
flew.

XLV.

Wroth wext he then, and sayd that words were light,
Ne would within his ballaunce well abide :
But he could iustly weigh the wrong or right.
"Well then," sayd Artegal, "let it be tride :
First in one ballaunce set the true aside."
He did so first, and then the false he layd
In th' other scale ; but still it downe did slide,
And by no meane could in the weight be stayd :
For by no meanes the false will with the truth be
wayd.

XLVI.

"Now take the right likewise," sayd Artegal,
"And counterpeise the same with so much
So first the right he put into one scale ; [wrong."
And then the Gyant strove with puissaunce strong
To fill the other scale with so much wrong :
But all the wrongs that he therein could lay
Might not it peise ; yet did he labour long,
And swat, and chauf'd, and proved every way :
Yet all the wrongs could not a litle right downe
way.

XLIV. 5. — sayd he,] Arthegall. CHURCH.

XLV. 8. — in the weight] So all the editions. I think
it should be *scale*, unless he uses *weight* here as he does
pound in st. 36 for *balance*. CHURCH.

XLVI. 9. — downe way.] *Weight* down. as Mr. Church
has observed. And see st. 49. TODD.

XLVII.

Which when he saw, he greatly grew in rage,
And almost would his balances have broken :
But Artegal him fairely gan asswage,
And said, "Be not upon thy balance wroken ;
For they do nought but right or wrong betoken ;
But in the mind the doome of right must bee :
And so likewise of words, the which he spoken,
The eare must be the ballance, to decrees
And iudge, whether with truth or falshood they
agree.

XLVIII.

"But set the truth and set the right aside,
For they with wrong or falshood will not fare,
And put two wrongs together to be tride,
Or else two falses, of each equal share,
And then together doe them both compare :
For truth is one, and right is ever one."
So did he ; and then plaine it did appeare,
Whether of them the greater were atone :
But right sat in the midst of the beame alone,

XLIX.

But he the right from thence did thrust away ;
For it was not the right which he did seeke :
But rather strove extremities to way,
Th' one to diminish, th' other for to eeke :
For of the meane he greatly did misleake.
Whom when so lewdly minded Talus found,
Approching nigh unto him cheeke by cheeke
He shouldered him from off the higher ground,
And down the rock him throwing in the sea him
dround.

L.

Like as a ship, whom cruell tempest drives
Upon a rocke with horrible dismay,
Her shattered ribs in thousand peeces rives,
And spoyling all her geares and goodly ray
Does make herselfe misfortunes piteous pray.
So downe the cliffe the wretched Gyant tumbled ;
His batted ballances in peeces lay,
His timbered bones all broken rudely rumbled :
So was the high-aspyring with huge ruine lumbled.

LI.

That when the people, which had there about
Long wayted, saw his sudden desolation,
They gan to gather in tumultuous rout,
And mutining to stirre up civill faction
For certaine losse of so great expectation :
For well they hoped to have got great good,
And wondrous riches by his innovation :
Therefore resolving to revenge his blood
They rose in armes, and all in battell order stood.

LII.

Which lawlesse multitude him comming to
In warlike wise when Artegal did vew,
He much was troubled, ne wist what to do :
For loth he was his noble hands t'embrew
In the base blood of such a rascall crew ;
And otherwise, if that he should retire,
He fear'd least they with shame would him pur-
sew :

XLIX. 5. For &c.] That is, For he did dislike, he ob-
served, no meane or medium. CHURCH.

L. 4. — and goodly ray] *Array*, i. e. ornament, fur-
niture. UPTON.

Therefore he Talus to them sent t'inquire
The cause of their array, and truce for to desire.

LIII.

But soone as they him nigh approaching spide,
They gan with all their weapons him assay,
And rudely stroke at him on every side;
Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought dismay:
But when at them he with his flaile gan lay,
He like a swarn of flyes them overtrew:
Ne any of them durst come in his way,
But here and there before his presence flew,
And hid themselves in holes and bushes from his
vew.

LIV.

As when a falcon hath with nimble flight
Flowne at a flush of ducks foreby the brooke,
The trembling foule dismayd with dreadfull sight
Of death, the which them almost overtooke,
Doe hide themselves from her astonying looke
Amongst the flags and covert round about.
When Talus saw they all the field forsooke,
And none appear'd of all that raskall rout,
To Artegall he turn'd and went with him through-
out.

CANTO III.

The Spousals of faire Florimell,
Where turney many Knights;
There Braggadochio is uncas'd
In all the Ladies sights.

I.

AFTER long stormes and tempests over-blowne
The sunne at length his ioyous face doth cleare:
So whenas fortune all her spight hath showne,
Some blissfull houres at last must needs appeare;
Else should afflicted wights oft-times despeire.
So comes it now to Florimell by tourne,
After long sorrowes suffered whyleare,
In which captiv'd she many moneths did mourne,
To tast of ioy, and to wont pleasures to retourne:

II.

Who being freed from Proteus cruell band
By Marinell was unto him affide,
And by him brought againe to Facrie Land;
Where he her spous'd, and made his ioyous
bride.
The time and place was blazed farre and wide,
And solemne feastes and giusts ordain'd therefore:
To which they did resort from every side
Of Lords and Ladies infinite great store;
Ne any Knight was absent that brave courage bore.

III.

To tell the glorie of the feast that day,
The goodly service, the devicefull sights,
The bridegromes state, the brides most rich aray,
The pride of Ladies, and the worth of Knights,
The royall banquets, and the rare delights,
Were worke fit for an herald, not for me:

LIV. 2. — foreby the brooke,] That is, near to the brook or by the brook. Todd.

III. 2. The goodly service, the devicefull sights,] By devicefull sights, Spenser means, sights full of devices, that is, masques, triumphs, and other spectacles, usually exhibited in his time, with great cost and splendour, at the nuptials of noble personages. T. WARTON.

But for so much as to my lot here lights,
That with this present treatise doth agree,
True vertue to advauce, shall here recounted bee.

IV.

When all men had with full satietie
Of meates and drinkes their appetites suffiz'd,
To deedes of armes and prooffe of chevalrie
They gan themselves addresse, full rich aguiz'd,
As each one had his furnitures deviz'd.
And first of all issu'd Sir Marinell,
And with him sixe Knights more, which enter-
To challenge all in right of Florimell, [priz'd
And to maintaine that she all others did excell.

V.

The first of them was hight Sir Orimont,
A noble Knight, and tride in hard assayes:
The second had to name Sir Bellisont,
But second unto none in prowesse prayse:
The third was Brunell, famous in his dayes:
The fourth Ecastor, of exceeding might:
The fift Armeddan, skild in lovely layes:
The sixt was Lansack, a redoubted knight:
All sixe well seene in armes, and prov'd in many a
fight.

VI.

And them against came all that list to giust,
From every coast and countrie under sunne:
None was debar'd, but all had leave that lust.
The trumpets sound; then all together ronne.
Full many deeds of armes that day were donne;
And many Knights unhorst, and many wounded,
As fortune fell; yet little lost or wonne:
But all that day the greatest prayse redounded
To Marinell, whose name the heralds loud re-
sounded.

VII.

The second day, so soone as morrow light
Appear'd in heaven, into the field they came,
And there all day continew'd cruell fight,
With divers fortune fit for such a game,
In which all strove with perill to winne fame;
Yet whether side was victor note be ghest:
But at the last the trumpets did proclame
That Marinell that day deserved best.
So they disparted were, and all men went to rest.

VIII.

The third day came, that should due tryall end
Of all the rest; and then this warlike crew
Together met, of all to make an end.
There Marinell great deeds of armes did shew;
And through the thickest like a lyon flew,
Rashing off helmes, and rying plates asonder;
That every one his daunger did eschew:
So terribly his dreadfull strokes did thonder,
That all men stood amaz'd, and at his might did
wonder.

IX.

But what on earth can alwayes happie stand?
The greater prowesse greater perils find.
So farre he past amongst his enemies band,
That they have him enclosed so behind,
As by no meanes he can himselfe outwind:
And now perforce they have him prisoner taken
And now they doe with captive bands him bind

VI. 3. — but all had leave that lust.] That chose. The word *lust* is often used in this sense by Spenser, as it is also by Chaucer. Todd.

And now they lead him hence, of all forsaken,
Unless some succour had in time him overtaken.

x.

It fortun'd, whylest they were thus ill beset,
Sir Artegall into the tilt-yard came,
With Braggadochio, whom he lately met
Upon the way with that his Snowy Dame :
Where when he understood by common fame,
What evil hap to Marinell betid,
He much was mov'd at so unworthie shame, [rid,
And streight that Boaster prayd, with whom he
To change his shield with him, to be the better hid.

xi.

So forth he went, and soone them overbent,
Where they were leading Marinell away ;
Whom he assayld with dreadlesse hardiment,
And forst the burden of their prize to stay.
They were an hundred Knights of that array ;
Of which th' one halfe upon himselfe did set,
The other stayd behind to gard the pray :
But he ere long the former fiftie bet ;
And from the other fiftie soone the prisoner fet.

xii.

So backe he brought Sir Marinell againe ;
Whom having quickly arm'd againe anew,
They both together ioyned might and maine,
To set afresh on all the other crew :
Whom with sore havoocke soone they overthrew,
And chased quite out of the field, that none
Against them durst his head to perill shew.
So were they left lords of the field alone ;
So Marinell by him was rescu'd from his fone.

xiii.

Which when he had perform'd, then backe againe
To Braggadochio did his shield restore :
Who all this while behind him did remaine,
Keeping there close with him in pretious store
That his false Ladie, as ye heard afore.
Then did the trompets sound, and iudges rose,
And all these Knights, which that day armour
Came to the open hall to listen whose [bore,
The honour of the prize should be adiudg'd by those.

xiv.

And thether also came in open sight
Fayre Florimell into the common hall,
To greet his guerdon unto every Knight,
And best to him to whom the best should fall.
Then for that stranger Knight they loud did call,
To whom that day they should the girlond yield ;
Who came not forth : but for Sir Artegall
Came Braggadochio, and did shew his shield,
Which bore the sunne brode blazed in a golden field.

xv.

The sight whereof did all with gladnesse fill :
So unto him they did addeeme the prise
Of all that triumph. Then the trompets shrill
Don Braggadochios name resounded thrise :
So courage lent a cloke to cowardise :
And then to him came fayrest Florimell,
And goodly gan to greete his brave emprise,
And thousand thanks him yeeld, that had so well
Approv'd that day that she all others did excell.

xiii. 2 To Braggadochio did &c.] An ellipsis : To Braggadochio he did &c. T. WARTON.

xvi.

To whom the Boaster, that all Knights did blot,
With proud disdain'did scornfull answers make,
That what he did that day, he did it not
For her, but for his owne deare Ladies sake,
Whom on his perill he did undertake
Both her and eke all others to excell :
And further did uncomely speaches crake.
Much did his words the gentle Ladie quell,
And turn'd aside for shame to heare what he did tell.

xvii.

Then forth he brought his snowy Florimele,
Whom Trompart had in keeping there beside,
Covered from peoples gazement with a vele :
Whom when discovered they had throughly eide,
With great amazement they were stupefide ;
And said, that surely Florimell it was,
Or if it were not Florimell so tride,
That Florimell herselfe she then did pas.
So feeble skill of perfect things the vulgar has.

xviii.

Which whenas Marinell beheld likewise,
He was therewith exceedingly dismayd ;
Ne wist he what to thinke, or to devise :
But, like as one whom feends had made affrayd,
He long astonisht stood, ne ought he sayd,
Ne ought he did, but with fast fixed eies
He gazed still upon that Snowy Mayd ;
Whom ever as he did the more avayd ;
The more to be true Florimell he did surmize.

xix.

As when two sunnes appeare in th' azure skye,
Mounted in Phœbus charet fierie bright,
Both darting forth faire beames to each mans eye,
And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming light ;
All that behold so strange prodigious sight,
Not knowing natures worke, nor what to weene,
Are rapt with wonder and with rare affright.
So stood Sir Marinell when he had seene
The semblant of this false by his faire beauties
queene.

xx.

All which when Artegall, who all this while
Stood in the preasse close covered, well had vewed,
And saw that Boasters pride and gracelesse gulle,
He could no longer beare, but forth issewed,
And unto all himselfe there open shewed,
And to the Boaster said ; " Thou losell base,
That hast with borrowed plumes thyselfe endewed,
And others worth with leasings doest deface,
When they are all restor'd thou shalt rest in disgrace.

xxi.

" That shield, which thou doest beare, was it indeed
Which this dayes honour sav'd to Marinell :
But not that arme, nor thou the man I reed,
Which didst that service unto Florimell :
For prooffe shew forth thy sword, and let it tell
What strokes, what dreadfull stoure, it sturd this
day :
Or shew the wounds which unto thee befell ;
Or shew the sweat with which thou diddest sway
So sharpe a battell, that so many did dismay.

xxii.

" But this the sword which wrought those cruell
stounds,
And this the arme the which that shield did beare.

And these the signs," (so shewed forth his wounds,)
 "By which that glorie gotten doth appeare.
 As for this Ladie, which he sheweth here,
 Is not (I wager) Florimell at all ;
 But some fayre franion, fit for such a fere,
 That by misfortune in his hand did fall."
 For prooffe whereof he bad them Florimell forth
 call.

xxiii.

So forth the noble Ladie was ybrought,
 Adorn'd with honor and all comely grace :
 Whereto her bashfull shamefastnesse ywrought
 A great increase in her faire blushing face ;
 As roses did with lillies interlace :
 For of those words, the which that Boaster threw,
 She inly yet conceived great disgrace :
 Whom whenas all the people such did vew,
 They shouted loud, and signes of gladnesse all did
 shew.

xxiv.

Then did he set her by that snowy one,
 Like the true saint beside the image set ;
 Of both their beauties to make paragone
 And triall, whether should the honor get.
 Streightway, so soone as both together met,
 Th' Enchaunted Damzell vanish into nought :
 Her snowy substance melted as with heat,
 Ne of that goodly hew remayned ought,
 But th' emptie Girdle which about her wast was
 wrought.

xxv.

As when the daughter of Thaumantes faire
 Hath in a watry cloud displayed wide
 Her goodly bow, which paints the liquid ayre ;
 That all men wonder at her colours pride ;
 All suddenly, ere one can looke aside,
 The glorious picture vanisheth away,
 Ne any token doth thereof abide :
 So did this Ladies goodly forme decay,
 And into nothing goe, ere one could it bewray.

xxvi.

Which whenas all that present were beheld,
 They stricken were with great astonishment,
 And their faint harts with senselesse horreur
 quelld,
 To see the thing, that seem'd so excellent,
 So stolen from their fancies wonderment ;
 That what of it became none understood :
 And Braggadochio selfe with dreriment
 So daunted was in his despeyring mood,
 That like a lifelesse corse immoveable he stood.

xxvii.

But Artegall that golden Belt uptooke,
 The which of all her spoyle was onely left ;
 Which was not hers, as many it mistooke,
 But Florimells owne Girdle, from her reft
 While she was flying, like a weary weft,
 From that foule monster which did her compell
 To perils great ; which he unbuckling eft
 Presented to the Fayrest Florimell ;
 Who round about her tender wast it fitted well.

xxviii.

Full many Ladies often had assayd
 About their middles that faire Belt to knit ;
 And many a one suppos'd to be a Mayd :
 Yet it to none of all their loynes would fit,

Till Florimell about her fastued it.
 Such power it had, that to no womans wast
 By any skill or labour it would sit,
 Unless that she were continent and chast ;
 But it would lose or breake, that many had disgrast

xxix.

Whilst thus they husied were bout Florimell,
 And boastfull Braggadochio to defame,
 Sir Guyon, as by fortune then befell,
 Forth from the thickest prasse of people came,
 His owne good steed, which he had stolne, to clame ;
 And, th' one hand seizing on his golden bit,
 With th' other drew his sword ; for with the same
 He meant the Thiefe there deadly to have smit :
 And, had he not bene held, he nought had fayld of it.

xxx.

Thereof great hurly burly moved was
 Throughout the hall for that same warlike horse:
 For Braggadochio would not let him pas ;
 And Guyon would him algates have perforce,
 Or it approve upon his carrion corse.
 Which troublous sturre when Artegall perceived,
 He nigh them drew to stay th' Avengers forse ;
 And gan inquire how was that steed bereaved,
 Whether by might extort, or else by slight de-
 ceaved.

xxxi.

Who all that piteous storie, which befell
 About that wofull Couple which were slaine,
 And their young Bloodie Babe to him gan tell ;
 With whom whiles he did in the wood remaine
 His horse purloyned was by subtile traine ;
 For which he challenged the Thiefe to fight :
 But he for nought could him thereto constraine ;
 For as the death he hated such despight,
 And rather had to lose than trie in armes his right.

xxxii.

Which Artegall well hearing, (though no more
 By law of armes there neede ones right to tric,
 As was the wont of warlike Knights of yore,
 Then that his foe should him the field denie,)
 Yet further right by tokens to descrie,
 He askt, what privie tokens he did beare.
 "If that," said Guyon, "may you satisfie,
 Within his mouth a blacke spot doth appeare,
 Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke it there."

xxxiii.

Whereof to make due tryall one did take
 The horse in hand within his mouth to looke:
 But with his heeles so sorely he him strake,
 That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke,
 That never wound from that day forth he spoke.
 Another, that would seeme to have more wit,
 Him by the bright embroidered bedstall tooke :
 But by the shoulder him so sore he bit,
 That he him maymed quite, and all his shoulder
 split.

xxxiv.

Ne he his mouth would open unto wight,
 Untill that Guyon selfe unto him spake,
 And called Brigadore, (so was he hight,)

xxxiv. 3. And called Brigadore] Brigadore is the name of the knight's horse, as *Brigliadoro* also is the name of Orlando's horse; from *briglia d'oro*, a golden bridle.
 T. WARTON.

Whose voice so soone as he did undertake,
 Estoones he stood as still as any stake,
 And suffred all his secret marke to see ;
 And, whenas he him nam'd, for joy he brake
 His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull glee,
 And friskt, and flong aloft, and louted low on knee.

xxxv.

Therely Sir Arteggall did plaine areed,
 That unto him the horse belong'd ; and sayd,
 "Lo there, Sir Guyon, take to you the steed,
 As he with golden saddle is arayd ;
 And let that Losell, plainly now displayd,
 Hence farc on foot, till he an horse have gayned."
 But the proud Boaster gan his doome upbrayd,
 And him revil'd, and rated, and disdayned,
 That iudgment so uniuert against him had ordayned.

xxxvi.

Much was the Knight excenst with his lewd word,
 To have revenged that his villeny ;
 And thrice did lay his hand upon his sword,
 To have him slaue, or dearely doen aby :
 But Guyon did his cholere pacify,
 Saying, "Sir Knight, it would dishonour bee
 To you that are our iudge of equity,
 To wreake your wrath on such a carle as hee :
 It's punishment enough that all his shame doe see."

xxxvii.

So did he mitigate Sir Arteggall ;
 But Talus by the backe the boaster hent,
 And drawing him out of the open hall
 Upon him did inflict this punishment :
 First he his beard did shave, and fowly shent ;
 Then from him reft his shield, and it renverst,
 And blotted out his armes with falshood blent ;
 And himselfe baffuld, and his armes unherst ;
 And broke his sword in twaine, and all his armour
 sperst.

xxxviii.

The whiles his guilefull Groome was fled away ;
 But vaine it was to thinke from him to fie :
 Who overtaking him did disaray,
 And all his face deform'd with infamie,
 And out of court him scourged openly.
 So ought all faytours, that true knight hood shame,
 And armes dishonour with base villanie,
 From all brave Knights be banisht with defame :
 For oft their lewdnes blotteth good deserts with
 blame.

xxxix.

Now when these Counterfeits were thus unceased
 Out of the foreside of their forgerie,

xxxiv. 4. — undertake,] For hear or understand.
 ЧИУАСИ.

xxxvi. 1. — lewd word,] *Impudent language.* See
 st. 38. ЧИУАСИ.

xxxvii. 6. — renverst ;] *Reversed.* УПТОН.

xxxvii. 8. — baffuld,] *Baffled* here means treated
 with the greatest ignominy imaginable. The word *baffouer*,
 in old French, is also used for *to disgrace.* ТОНД.

Ibid. — unherst ;] Took them from the *herse* or
 temporary monument where they were banged. УПТОН.

xxxvii. 9. — and all his armour sperst,] Dispersed
 all his armour. ТОНД.

xxxviii. 1. — his guilefull Groome] That is, Trom-
 part. Perhaps the poet might intend the epithet *guilefull*
 for the etymology of the name *Trompart.* Fr. *Tromper.*
 ЧИУАСИ.

xxxviii. 9. — lewdnes] *Impudence.* See st. 36,
 ЧИУАСИ.

And in the sight of all men cleane disgraced,
 All gan to iest and gibe full merilite
 At the remembrance of their knaverie :
 Ladies can laugh at Ladies, Knights at Knights,
 To thinke with how great vaunt of braverie
 He them abused through his subtilt slights,
 And what a glorious shew he made in all their sights.

xl.

There leave we them in pleasure and repast,
 Spending their ioyous dayes and gladfull nights,
 And taking usurie of time forepast,
 With all deare delices and rare delights,
 Fit for such Ladies and such lovely Knights :
 And turne we here to this faire furrowes end
 Our wearie yokes, to gather fresher sprights,
 That, whenas time to Arteggall shall tend,
 We on his first adventure may him forward send.

CANTO IV.

Arteggall dealeth right betwixt
 Two brethren that doe strife;
 Saves Terpine from the gallow tree,
 And doth from death reprieve.

i.

Whoso upon himselfe will take the skill
 True iustice unto people to divide,
 Had need have mightie hands for to fulfill
 That which he doth with righteous doome decide
 And for to maister wrong and puissant pride :
 For vaine it is to deeme of things aright,
 And makes wrong doers iustice to deride,
 Unless it be perform'd with dreadlesse might :
 For Powre is the right hand of Iustice truly hight

ii.

Therefore whylome to Knights of great emprise
 The charge of Iustice given was in trust,
 That they might execute her iudgements wise,
 And with their might beat downe licentious iust
 Which proudly did impugne her sentence iust :
 Whereof no braver president this day
 Remaines on earth, preserv'd from yron rust
 Of rude oblivion and long times decay,
 Then this of Arteggall, which here we have to say.

iii.

Who having lately left that lovely payre,
 Enlincked fast in wedlockes loyall bond,
 Bold Marinell with Florimell the fayre,
 With whom great feast and goodly glee he fond,
 Departed from the Castle of the strong
 To follow his adventures first intent,
 Which long agoe he taken had in hond :
 Ne wight with him for his assistance went,
 But that great Yron Groome, his gard and govern-
 ment.

iv.

With whom, as he did passe by the sea-shore,
 He chaunst to come whereas two comely Squires,
 Both brethren whom one wombe together bore,
 But stirred up with different desires,

i. 2. — divide,] *Distribute,* as in the Introduction st.
 9. ТОНД.

i. 7. *And makes*] *And it makes,* &c. unless it be per-
 formed, &c. УПТОН.

ii. 5. — impugne] *Oppose or resist.* ТОНД.

Together strove, and kindled wrathfull fires :
 And them beside two seemely Damzels stood,
 By all meanes seeking to asswage their ires,
 Now with faire words ; but words did little good ;
 Now with sharpe threats ; but threats the more
 increast their mood.

v.

And there before them stood a coffer strong
 Fast bound on every side with iron bands,
 But seeming to have suffred mickle wrong,
 Either by being wreckt upon the sands,
 Or being carried farre from forraine lands.
 Seem'd that for it these Squires at ods did fall,
 And bent against themselves their cruell hands ;
 But evermore those Damzels did forestall
 Their furious encounter, and their fiercenesse pall.

vi.

But firmly fixt they were with dint of sword
 And battailes doubtful prooffe their rights to try ;
 Ne other end their lury would afford,
 But what to them fortune would instify :
 So stood they both in readinesse thereby
 To ioyne the combate with cruell intent :
 When Artegall arriving happily
 Did stay awhile their greedy bickerment,
 Till he had questioned the cause of their dissent.

vii.

To whom the elder did this aunswere frame ;
 "Then weete ye, Sir, that we two bretlren be,
 To whom our sire, Milesio by name,
 Did equally bequeath his lands in fee,
 Two islands, which ye there before you see
 Not farre in sea ; of which the one appeares
 But like a little mount of small degree ;
 Yet was as great and wide ere many years,
 As that same other isle, that greater bredth now
 beares.

viii.

"But tract of time, that all things doth decay,
 And this devouring sea, that nought doth spare,
 The most part of my land hath washt away,
 And throwne it up unto my brothers share ;
 So his increased, but mine did empaire.
 Before which time I lov'd, as was my lot,
 That further Mayd, hight Philtera the faire,
 With whom a goodly doure I should have got,
 And should have ioynd bene to her in wedlocks
 knot.

ix.

"Then did my younger brother Amidas
 Love that same other Damzell, Lucy bright,
 To whom but little dowre allotted was :
 Her vertue was the dowre that did delight :
 What better dowre can a to Dame be hight ?
 But now, when Philtra saw my lands decay
 And former livel'od fayle, she left me knight,
 And to my brother did elope straightway :
 Who, taking her from me, his owne Love left
 astray.

x.

"She, seeing then herselfe forsaken so,
 Through dolorous despaire which she conceived,
 Into the sea herselfe did headlong throw,

vi. 3. — bickerment.] *Contention, strife.* UPRON.

vii. 5. — empaire.] *Grow worse.* CHURCH.

Thinking to have her griefe by death bereaved ;
 But see how much her purpose was deceived !
 Whilst thus, amidst the billowes beating of her,
 Twixt life and death long to and fro she weaved,
 She chaunst unwares to light upon this coffer,
 Which to her in that daunger hope of life did offer.

xi.

"The wretched Mayd, that earst desir'd to die,
 Whenas the paine of death she tasted had,
 And but halfe seene his ugly visnomie,
 Gan to repent that she had beene so mad
 For any death to chaunge life, though most bad :
 And catching hold of this sea-beaten chest,
 (The lucky pylot of her passage sad,)
 After long tossing in the seas distrest,
 Her weary barke at last upon nine isle did rest.

xii.

"Where I by chaunce then wandering on the shore
 Did her espy, and through my good endeavour
 From dreadful mouth of death, which threatned
 sore
 Her to have swallow'd up, did helpe to save her.
 She then in reconpence of that great favour,
 Which I on her bestowed, bestowed on me
 The portion of that good which fortune gave her,
 Together with herselfe in dowry five ;
 Both goodly portions, but of both the better she.

xiii.

"Yet in this coffer which she with her brought
 Great treasure sithence we did finde contained ;
 Which as our owne we tooke, and so it thought :
 But this same other Damzell since hath fained
 That to herselfe that treasure appertained ;
 And that she did transport the same by sea,
 To bring it to her husband new ordained,
 But suffred cruell shipwracke by the way :
 But, whether it be so or no, I cannot say.

xiv.

"But, whether it indeede be so or no,
 This doe I say, that whatso good or ill
 Or God or Fortune unto me did throw,
 (Not wronging any other by my will,)
 I hold mine owne, and so will hold it still.
 And though my land he first did winne away,
 And then my Love, (though now it little skill,)
 Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray ;
 But I will it defend whilst ever that I may."

xv.

So having sayd, the younger did ensew ;
 "Full true it is whatso about our land
 My brother here declared hath to you :
 But not for it this ods twixt us doth stand,
 But for this treasure throwne upon his strand ;
 Which well I prove, as shall appeare by triall,
 To be this Maides with whom I fastned hand,
 Known by good markes and perfect good espial :
 Therefore it ought be rendred her without denial."

x. 7. — weaved,] *For waded, that is, floated.* CHURCH.

xiv. 6. *And though my land he first did winne away, And then my Love, (though now it little skill.) Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray.]* Though he did first get my land and then my Love, (though now it little skill,) though now it skilleth little, i. e. little signifies ; yet he shall not likewise prey upon, make a prey of, my good luck. UPRON.

xvi.

When they thus ended had, the Knight began ;
 " Certes your strife were easie to accord,
 Would ye remit it to some righteous man."
 " Unto yourselfe," said they, " we give our word,
 To bide that judgement ye shall us afford."
 " Then for assurance to my doome to stand,
 Under my foote let each lay downe his sword ;
 And then you shall my sentence understand."
 So each of them layd downe his sword out of his
 hand.

xvii.

Then Artegall thus to the younger sayd ;
 " Now tell me, Amidas, if that ye may,
 Your brothers land the which the sea hath layd
 Unto your part, and pluckt from his away,
 By what good right doe you withhold this day ?"
 " What other right," quoth he, " should you
 esteeme,
 But that the sea it to my share did lay ?"
 " Your right is good," sayd he, " and so I deeme,
 That what the sea unto you sent your own should
 seeme."

xviii.

Then turning to the elder thus he sayd ;
 " Now, Bracidas, let this likewise be showne ;
 Your brothers threasure, which from him is
 strayd,
 Being the dowry of his wife well knowne,
 By what right doe you claime to be your owne ?"
 " What other right," quoth he, " should you es-
 teeme,
 But that the sea hath it unto me throwne ?"
 " Your right is good," sayd he, " and so I deeme,
 That what the sea unto you sent your own should
 seeme.

xix.

" For equall right in equall things doth stand :
 For what the mighty sea hath once possessd,
 And plucked quite from all possessors hand,
 Whether by rage of waves that never rest,
 Or else by wracke that wretches hath distrest,
 He may dispose by his imperiall might,
 As thing at randon left, to whom he list.
 So, Amidas, the land was yours first hight ;
 And so the threasure yours is, Bracidas, by right."

xx.

When he his sentence thus pronounced had,
 Both Amidas and Philtra were displeasd :
 But Bracidas and Lucy were right glad,
 And on the threasure by that judgement seasd.
 So was their discord by this doome appeasd,
 And each one had his right. Then Artegall,
 Whenas their sharpe contention he had ceased,
 Departed on his way, as did befall,
 To follow his old quest, the which him forth did call.

xxi.

So, as he travelled upon the way,
 He chaunst to come, where happily he spide
 A rout of many people farre away ;
 To whom his course he hastily applide,
 To weete the cause of their assemblance wide :
 To whom when he approached neare in sight,
 (An uncouth sight,) he plainly then descride
 To be a troupe of Women, warlike dight,
 With weapons in their hands, as ready for to fight :

xxii.

And in the midst of them he saw a Knight,
 With both his hands behinde him pinnoed hard,
 And round about his necke an halter tight,
 And ready for the gallow tree prepard :
 His face was covered, and his head was bar'd,
 That who he was unceath was to descry ;
 And with full heavy heart with them he far'd,
 Griev'd to the soule, and groning inwardly,
 That he of Womens hands so base a death should dy

xxiii.

But they, like tyrants mercellesse, the more
 Reioyced at his miserable case,
 And him reviled, and reproched sore
 With bitter taunts and termes of vile disgrace.
 Now whenas Artegall, arriv'd in place,
 Did aske what cause brought that man to decay,
 They round about him gan to swarm apace,
 Meaning on him their cruell hands to lay,
 And to have wrought unawares some villanous assay.

xxiv.

But he was soone aware of their ill minde,
 And drawing backe deceived their intent :
 Yet, though himselfe did shame on womankind
 His mighty hand to shend, he Talus sent
 To wrecke on them their follies hardyment :
 Who with few sowces of his yron flae
 Dispersed all their troupe incontinent,
 And sent them home to tell a piteous tale
 Of their vaine prowesse turned to their proper bale:

xxv.

But that same wretched man, ordaynd to die,
 They left behind them, glad to be so quit :
 Him Talus tooke out of perplexitie,
 And horror of fowle death for Knight unfit,
 Who more than losse of life ydreaded it ;
 And, him restoring unto living light,
 So brought unto his Lord, where he did sit
 Beholding all that womanish weake fight ;
 Whom soone as he beheld he knew, and thus behight;

xxvi.

" Sir Turpine, haplesse man, what make you here ?
 Or have you lost yourselfe and your discretion,
 That ever in this wretched case ye were ?
 Or have ye yeilded you to proude oppression
 Of womens powre, that boast of mens subiection ?
 Or else what other deadly dismall day
 Is false on you by heavens hard direction,
 That ye were runne so fondly farre astray
 As for to lead yourselfe unto your owne decay !"

xxvii.

Much was the man confounded in his mind,
 Partly with shame, and partly with dismay,
 That all astonisht he himselfe did find,
 And little had for his excuse to say,
 But onely thus ; " Most haplesse well ye may
 Me iustly terme, that to this shame am brought,
 And made the scorne of knightthood this same
 day : [wrought !
 But who can scape what his owne fate hath
 The worke of heavens will surpasseth humaine
 thought."

xxiv. 3. ——— *did shame*] That is, was ashamed. CHURCH.

xxviii.
 "Right true : but faulty men use oftentimes
 To attribute their folly unto fate,
 And lay on heaven the guilt of their owne crimes.
 But tell, Sir Terpin, ne let you amate
 Your misery, how fell ye in this state?"
 "Then sith ye needs," quoth he, "will know my
 shame,
 And all the ill which chaunst to me of late,
 I shortly will to you rehearse the same,
 In hope ye will not turne misfortune to my blame.

xxix.
 Being desirous (as all Knights are woont)
 Through hard adventures doodes of armes to try,
 And after fame and honour for to hunt,
 I heard report that farre abrode did fly,
 That a proud Amazon did late defy
 All the brave Knights that hold of Maidenhead,
 And unto them wrought all the villany
 That she could forge in her malicious head,
 Which some hath put to shame, and many done be
 dead.

xxx.
 The cause, they say, of this her cruell hate,
 Is for the sake of Belodant the bold,
 To whom she bore most fervent love of late,
 And wooed him by all the waies she could :
 But, when she saw at last that he ne would
 For ought or nought be wonne unto her will,
 She turn'd her love to hatred manifold,
 And for his sake vow'd to doe all the ill
 Which she could doe to Knights ; which now she
 doth fulfill.

xxxi.
 For all those Knights, the which by force or guile
 She doth subdne, she fowly doth entreate :
 First, she doth them of warlike armes despoile,
 And cloth in womens weedes ; and then with
 threat
 Doth them compell to worke, to earne their meat,
 To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring ;
 Ne doth she give them other thing to eat
 But bread and water or like feeble thing ;
 Them to disable from revenge adventuring.

xxxii.
 But if through stont disdain of manly mind
 Any her proud observance will withstand,
 Upon that gibbet, which is there behind,
 She causeth them be hang'd up out of hand ;
 In which condition I right now did stand :
 For, being overcome by her in fight,
 And put to that base service of her band,
 I rather chose to die in lives despight,
 Then lead that shamefull life, unworthy of a
 Knight."

xxxiii.
 "How hight that Amazon," sayd Artegeall,
 "And where and how far hence does she abide?"
 "Her name," quoth he, "they Radigund doe call,
 A princess of great powre and greater pride,
 And queene of Amazons, in armes well tride

xxviii. 1. *Right true.*] This is spoken by Artegeall.
 CHURCH.

xxix. 9. — and many done be dead.] That is, and
 caused many to be dead. Anglo-Sax, *don, to cause.* UPTON.

And sundry battels, which she hath atchieved
 With great successe, that her hath glorified,
 And made her famous, more then is believed ;
 Ne would I it have wecn'd had I not late it priev'd,"

xxxiv.
 "Now sure," said he, "and by the faith that I
 To Maydenhead and noble Knighthood owe,
 I will not rest till I her might doe trie, [show.
 And venge the shame that she to Knights doth
 Therefore, Sir Terpin, from you lightly throw
 This squalid weede, the patterne of dispaire,
 And wend with me, that ye may see and know
 How fortune will your ruin'd name repaire
 And Knights of Maidenhead, whose praise she
 would empaire."

xxxv.
 With that, like one that hopelesse was repriv'd
 From death's dore at which he lately lay,
 Those yron fetters wherewith he was gyv'd,
 The badges of reproch, he threw away,
 And nimble did him dight to guide the way
 Unto the dwelling of that Amazone :
 Which was from thence not past a mile or tway ;
 A goodly city and a mighty one,
 The which, of her owne name, she called Radegone.

xxxvi.
 Where they arriving by the watchmen were
 Descried streight ; who all the city warn'd
 How that three warlike persons did appeare,
 Of which the one him seem'd a Knight all armed,
 And th' other two well likely to have harmed.
 Eftscones the people all to harnesse ran,
 And like a sort of bees in clusters swarmed :
 Ere long their queene herselfe, halfe like a man,
 Came forth into the rout, and them t'array began.

xxxvii.
 And now the Knights, being arrived neare,
 Did beat upon the gates to enter in ;
 And at the porter, skorning them so few,
 Threw many threats, if they the towne did win,
 To teare his flesh in peeces for his sin :
 Which whenas Radigund there coming heard,
 Her heart for rage did grate, and teeth did grin :
 She bad that streight the gates should be unbar'd,
 And to them way to make with weapons well pre-
 par'd.

xxxviii.
 Soone as the gates were open to them set,
 They pressed forward, entrance to have made :
 But in the middle way they were ymet
 With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which them
 And better had advise, ere they assaid [staid,
 Unknownen perill of bold Womens pride.
 Then all that rout upon them rudely laid,
 And heaped strokes so fast on every side,
 And arrowes hail'd so thicke, that they could not
 abide.

xxxiii. 9. — priev'd.] *Provd.* TODD.
 xxxvii. 1. *And now the Knights, being arrived neare.*] The rhyme requires an alteration either in the first or the third line. All the editions read *neare* and *few*. Perhaps the poet gave *new* instead of *neare* : "being arrived *new*," i. e. being newly arrived, or, as soon as they were arrived.
 CHURCH.

xxxvii. 7. — and teeth did grin:] For *grind*, be-
 cause of the rhyme. UPTON. s 2

XXXIX.

But Radigund herselfe, when she espide
 Sir Terpin from her direfull doome acquit
 So cruell doale amongst her Maides divide,
 T' avenge that shame they did on him commit,
 All sodainely enflam'd with furious fit
 Like a fell lionesse at him she flew,
 And on his head-piece him so fiercely smit,
 That to the ground him quite she overthrew,
 Dismayd so with the stroke that he no colours knew.

XL.

Soone as she saw him on the ground to grovell,
 She lightly to him leapt; and, in his necke
 Her proud foote setting, at his head did leuell,
 Weening at once her wrath on him to wreake,
 And his contempt, that did her judgment breake:
 As when a beare hath seiz'd her cruell claws
 Uppon the carkasse of some beast too weake,
 Proudly stands over, and awhile doth pause
 To heare the piteous beast pleading her plaintiffe
 cause.

XLI.

Whom whenas Artegall in that distresse
 By chance beheld, he left the bloody slaughter,
 In which he swam, and ranne to his redresse:
 There her assaying fiercely fresh he ranght her
 Such an huge stroke, that it of sence distraught
 And, had she not it warded warily, [her;
 It had depriv'd her mother of a daughter:
 Nathlesse for all the powre she did apply
 It made her stagger oft, and stare with ghastly eye.

XLII.

like to an eagle, in his kingly pride
 Soring through his wide empire of the aire,
 To weather his brode sailes, by chance hath spide
 A goshanke, which hath seized for her share
 Uppon some fowle, that should her feast prepare;
 With dreadfull force he flies at her bylive,
 That with his souce, which none endure dare,
 Her from the quarry he away doth drive,
 And from her griping pounce the greedy prey doth
 rive.

XLIII.

But, soone as she her sence recover'd had,
 She fiercely towards him herselfe gan dight,
 Through vengeful wrath and sdeignfull pride half
 For never had she suffred such despight: [mad;
 But, ere she could ioyne hand with him to fight,
 Her warlike Maides about her flockt so fast,
 That they parted them, maugre their night,
 And with their troupes did far asunder cast:
 But mongst the rest the fight did untill evening last.

XLIV.

And every while that mighty Yron Man
 With his strange weapon, never wont in warre,
 Them sorely vext, and courst, and over-ran,
 And broke their bowes, and did their shooting
 That none of all the many once did darre [marre,
 Him to assault, nor once approach him nie;
 But like a sort of sheepe dispersed farre,

XL. 6. — seiz'd] *Fixed.* CHURCH.XLII. 3. — his brode sailes,] *Sailes* are often used by our author for *wings*; and after him by Milton.

T. WARTON.

XLIV. 2. — wont] *Used.* CHURCH.

For dread of their devouringemie,
 Through all the fields and vallies did before him flie.

XLV.

But whenas daies faire shinie beame, yclouded
 With fearefull shadowes of deformed night,
 Warn'd man and beast in quiet rest be shrowded,
 Bold Radigund with sound of trumpe on hight,
 Causd all her people to surcease from fight;
 And, gathering them unto her citties gate,
 Made them all enter in before her sight;
 And all the wounded, and the weake in state,
 To be conveyed in, ere she would once retrate.

XLVI.

When thus the field was voided all away,
 And all things quieted; the Elfin Knight,
 Weary of toile and travell of that day,
 Causd his pavilion to be richly pight
 Before the city-gate in open sight;
 Where he himselfe did rest in safety
 Together with Sir Terpin all that night:
 But Talus usde, in times of ieopardy,
 To keepe a nightly watch for dread of treachery.

XLVII.

But Radigund, full of heart-gnawing grieffe
 For the rebuke which she sustain'd that day,
 Could take no rest, ne would receive relieffe;
 But tossed in her troublous minde what way
 She mote revenge that blot which on her lay.
 There she resolv'd herselfe in single fight
 To try her fortune, and his force assay,
 Rather than see her people spoiled quight,
 As she had seene that day, a disadventerous sight.

XLVIII.

She called forth to her a trusty Mayd,
 Whom she thought fittest for that businesse;
 Her name was Clarin, and thus to her sayd;
 "Goe, Damzell, quickly, doe thyselfe addressse
 To doe the message which I shall expresse:
 Goe thou unto that stranger Faery Knight,
 Who yesterday drove us to such distresse;
 Tell, that to morrow I with him will fight,
 And try in equal field whether hath greater might

XLIX.

"But these conditions doe to him proponnd;
 That, if I vanquishe him, he shall obay
 My law, and ever to my lore be bound;
 And so will I, if me he vanquish may;
 Whatever he shall like to doe or say:
 Goe streight, and take with thee to witnessse it
 Sixe of thy fellowes of the best array,
 And beare with you both wine and iuncates fit,
 And bid him eate: henceforth he oft shall hungry
 sit."

L.

The Damzell streight obayd; and, putting all
 In readinesse, forth to the town-gate went;
 Where, sounding loud a trumpet from the wall,
 Unto those warlike Knights she warning sent.
 Then Talus forth issuing from the tent
 Unto the wall his way did fearelesse take,
 To weeten what that trumpets sounding ment:

XLV. 4. — on hight,] *Aloud.* TODD.

Where that same Damzell lowdly him bespake,
And shew'd that with his Lord she would empar-
launce make.

L.

So he them streight conducted to his Lord;
Who, as he could, them goodly well did greet,
Till they had told their message word by word:
Which he accepting, well as he could weete,
Them fairely entertaynd with curt'sies meete,
And gave them gifts and things of deare delight:
Sobacke againe they homeward turn'd their fecte;
But Artegall himselfe to rest did dight,
That he mote fresher be against the next daies fight.

CANTO V.

Artegal fights with Radigund,
And is subdued by guile:
He is by her imprisoned,
But wrought by Clarins wile.

I.

So soone as Day forth dawning from the east
Nights humid curtaine from the heavens withdrew,
And earely calling forth both man and beast
Commaunded them their daily workes renew;
These noble Warriors, mindefull to pursue
The last daies purpose of their vowed fight,
Themselves thereto preparede in order dew;
The Knight, as best was seeming for a Knight,
And th' Amazon, as best it likt herselfe to dight.

II.

All in a Camis light of purple silke
Woven uppon with silver, subtly wrought,
And quilted uppon sattin white as milke;
Trayled with ribbands diversly distraught,
Like as the workeman had their courses taught;
Which was short tucked for light motion
Up to her ham; but, when she list, it raught
Downe to her lowest heele, and thereuppon
She wore for her defence a mayled habergeon.

III.

And on her legs she painted buskins wore,
Basted with bends of gold on every side,
And mailles betweene, and laced close afore;
Uppon her thigh her cemitare was tide
With an embrodered belt of mickell pride;
And on her shoulder hung her shield, bedeckt
Uppon the bosse with stones that shined wide,
As the faire moone in her most full aspect;
That to the moone it mote be like in each respect

IV.

So forth she came out of the city-gate
With stately port and proud magnificence,
Guarded with many Damzels that did waite
Uppon her person for her sure defence, [hence
Playing on shaumes and trumpets, that from
Their sound did reach unto the heavens high:
So forth into the field she marched thence,
Where was a rich pavilion ready pight
Her to receive, till time they should begin the fight.

L. 9 ——— emparlaunce] Parley: but the word is
oftener used as a law-expression. Toob.

Ll. 2. ——— as he could.] That is, as he well knew how.

CHURCH.

V.

Then forth came Artegall out of his tent,
All arm'd to point, and first the lists did enter:
Soone after eke came she with full intent
And countenance fierce, as having fully bent her
That battels utmost triall to adventer.
The lists were closed fast, to barre the rout
From rudely pressing on the middle center;
Which in great heapes them circled all about,
Wayting how fortune would resolve that dangerous
dout.

VI.

The trumpets sounded, and the field began;
With bitter strokes it both began and ended.
She at the first encounter on him rau
With furious rage, as if she had intended
Out of his breast the very heart have rended:
But he, that had like tempests often tride,
From that first flaw himselfe right well defended
The more she rag'd, the more he did abide;
She hewd, she foyn'd, she lasht, she laid on every side

VII.

Yet still her blowes he bore, and her forbore,
Weening at last to win advantage new;
Yet still her crueltie increased more,
And, though powre faild, her courage did accrew;
Which sayling, he gan fiercely her pursue:
Like as a smith that to his cunning feat
The stubborn metall seeketh to subdew,
Soone as he feesles it mollifide with heat,
With his great yron sledge doth strongly on it heat

VIII.

So did Sir Artegall uppon her lay,
As if she had an yron anvile beene,
That flakes of fire, bright as the sunny ray,
Out of her steely armes were flashing scene,
That all on fire ye would her surely weene:
But with her shield so well herselfe she warde
From the dread danger of his weapon keene,
That all that while her life she safely garded;
But he that helpe from her against her will dis-
carded:

IX.

For with his trenchant blade at the next blow
Halfe of her shield he shared quite away,
That halfe her side itselfe did naked show,
And thenceforth unto daunger opened way.
Much was she moved with the mightie sway
Of that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she grew
And like a greedie beare unto her pray
With her sharpe cemitare at him she flew,
That glancing downe his thigh the purple blood
forth drew.

X.

Thereat she gan to triumph with great boast,
And to upbrayd that chance which him misfell,
As if the prize she gotten had almost,
With spightfull speaches, fitting with her well;
That his great hart gan inwardly to swell
With indignation at her vaunting vaine,
And at her strooke with puissance fearefull fell;
Yet with her shield she warded it againe,
That shattered all to pieces round about the plaine.

XI.

Having her thus disarmed of her shield,
Uppon her helmet he again her strooke,

That downe she fell upon the grassie field
 In senselesse swoone, as if her life forsooke,
 And pang of death her spirit overtooke :
 Whom when he saw before his foote prostrated,
 He to her lept with deadly dreadfull looke,
 And her sun-shynie helmet soone unlaced,
 Thinking at once both head and helmet to have
 raced.

xii.

But, whenas he discovered had her face,
 He saw, his senses straunge astonishment,
 A miracle of natures goodly grace
 In her faire visage voide of ornament,
 But bath'd in bloud and sweat together ment ;
 Which, in the rudeness of that evill plight,
 Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent :
 Like as the moone, in foggie winters night,
 Doth seeme to be herselfe, though darkned be her
 light.

xiii.

At sight thereof his cruell minded hart
 Empierced was with pittifull regard,
 That his sharpe sword he threw from him apart,
 Cursing his hand that had that visage mard :
 No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard,
 But ruth of beautie will it mollifie.
 By this, upstarting from her swoone she star'd
 A while about her with confused eye ;
 Like one that from his dreame is waked suddenlye.

xiv.

Soone as the Knight she there by her did spy
 Standing with emptie hands all weaponlesse,
 With fresh assault upon him she did fly,
 And gan renew her former cruenesse :
 And though he still retyr'd, yet nath'lesse
 With huge redoubled strokes she on him layd ;
 And more increast her outrage mercilesse,
 The more that he with meeke intreatie prayd
 Her wrathful hand from greedy vengeance to have
 stayd.

xv.

Like as a puttocke having spyde in sight
 A gentle faulcon sitting on an hill,
 Whose other wing, now made nmceete for flight,
 Was lately broken by some fortune ill ;
 The foolish kyte, led with licentions will,
 Doth beat upon the gentle bird in vaine,
 With many idle stoups her troubling still :
 Even so did Radigund with bootlesse paine
 Annoy this noble Knight, and sorely him constraene.

xvi.

Nought could he do but shun the dred despight
 Of her fierce wrath, and backward still retyre ;
 And with his single shield, well as he might,
 Beare off the burden of her raging yre ;
 And evermore he gently did desyre
 To stay her strokes, and he himselfe would yield :
 Yet nould she hearke, ne let him once respyre,
 Till he to her delivered had his shield,
 And to her mercie him submitted in plaine field.

xvii.

So was he overcome, not overcome ;
 But to her yeelded of his owne accord ;
 Yet was he iustly damned by the doome

xii. 5. — ment;] *Mingled.* TODD.

xvii. 3. — damned] *Condemned.* CHURCH.

Of his owne mouth, that spake so warelesse word,
 To be her thrall and service her afford :
 For though that he first victorie obtayned,
 Yet after, by abandoning his sword,
 He wilfull lost that he before attained :
 No fayrer conquest then that with goodwill is gayned.

xviii.

Tho with her sword on him she flatting strooke,
 In signe of true subiection to her powre,
 And as her vassall him to thralldome tooke :
 But Terpine, borne to' a more unhappy howre,
 As he on whom the lucklesse starres did lowre,
 She causd to be attacht and forthwith led
 Unto the crooke, t' abide the balefull stowre
 From which he lately had through reskew fled
 Where he full shamefully was hangd by the hed.

xix.

But, when they thought on Talus hands to lay,
 He with his yron flaile amongst them thondred,
 That they were fayne to let him scape away,
 Glad from his companie to be so sondred ;
 Whose presence all their troups so much encom-
 bred, [slay,
 That th' heapes of those which he did wound and
 Besides the rest dismayd, might not be nombred :
 Yet all that while he would not once assay
 To reskew his owne Lord, but thought it iust t' obay.

xx.

Then tooke the Amazon this noble Knight,
 Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame,
 And causd him to be disarmed quight
 Of all the ornaments of knightly name,
 With which whylonie he gotten had great fame :
 Instead whereof she made him to be dight
 In womans weedes, that is to manhood shame,
 And put before his lap an apron white,
 instead of curiets and bases fit for fight.

xxi.

So being clad she brought him from the field,
 In which he had bene trayned many a day,
 Into a long large chamber, which was sield
 With monuments of many Knights decay
 By her subdewed in victorious fray :
 Amongst the which she causd his warlike armes
 Be hang'd on high, that mote his shame bewray ;
 And broke his sword for feare of further harmes
 With which he wont to stirre up battailous alarmes.

xxii.

There entred in he round about him saw
 Many brave Knights whose names right well he
 knew.
 There bound t' obay that Amazons proud law,
 Spinning and carding all in comely rew,
 That his bigge hart loth'd so uncomely vew :
 But they were first, through penurie and pyne,
 To doe those workes to them appointed dew :
 For nought was given them to snp or dyne,
 But what their hands could earne by twisting linnen
 twyne.

xxiii.

Amongst them all she placed him most low,
 And in his hand a distaffe to him gave,

xviii. 7. — the crooke] *Gibbet.* From the Lat. *crux*,
 as Mr. Church interprets it. TODD.

That he thereon should spin both flax and tow ;
 A sordid office for a mind so brave :
 So hard it is to be a Womans slave !
 Yet he it tooke in his owne selves despight,
 And thereto did himselfe right well behave
 Her to obey, sith he his faith had plight
 Her vassall to become, if she him wonne in fight.

XXIV.

Who had him scene, imagine mote thereby
 That whylome hath of Hercules bene told,
 How for Iolas sake he did apply
 His mightie hands the distaffe vile to hold
 For his huge club, which had subdew'd of old
 So many monsters which the world annoyed ;
 His Lyons skin chaungd to a pall of gold,
 In which, forgetting warres, he onely ioyed
 In combats of sweet love, and with his mistresse toyed.

XXV.

Such is the crueltie of womenkynd,
 When they have shaken off the shamefast band,
 With which wise nature did them strongly bynd
 T' obey the heasts of mans well-ruling hand,
 That then all rule and reason they withstand
 To purchase a licentious libertie :
 But vertuous women wisely understand,
 That they were borne to base humilitie,
 Unless the heavens them lift to lawfull sovraintie.

XXVI.

Thus there long while continu'd Artegal,
 Serving proud Radigund with true subiection :
 However it his noble heart did gall
 T' obey a Womans tyrannous direction,
 That might have had of life or death election :
 But, having chosen, now he might not change.
 During which time the warlike Amazon,
 Whose wandring fancie after lust did raunge,
 Gan cast a secret liking to this Captive straunge.

XXVII.

Which long concealing in her covert brest,
 She chaw'd the cud of lovers carefull plight ;
 Yet could it not so thoroughly digest,
 Being fast fixed in her wounded spright,
 But it tormented her both day and night.
 Yet would she not thereto yeeld free accord
 To serve the lowly vassall of her might,
 And of her servant make her soverayne lord :
 So great her pride that she such basenesse much
 abhord.

XXVIII.

So much the greater still her anguish grew,
 Through stubbornne handling of her love-sicke
 hart ;
 And still the more she strove it to subdew,
 The more she still augmented her owne smart,
 And wyder made the wound of th' hidden dart.
 At last, when long she struggled had in vaine,
 She gan to stoupe, and her proud mind convert
 To meeke obeysance of Loves mightie raine,
 And him entreat for grace that had procur'd her
 paine.

XXIV. 5. *For*] That is, instead of. CHURCH.XXV. 8. ——— *base humilitie,*] That is, subjection.
*Base, low. Fr. bas. CHURCH.*XXVIII. 8. ——— *raine,*] That is, *reign.* CHURCH.

XXIX.

Unto herselfe in secret she did call
 Her nearest handmayd, whom she most did trust,
 And to her said ; “ Clarinda, whom of all
 I trust alive, sith I thee fostred first ;
 Now is the time that I untimely must
 Thereof make tryall, in my greatest need !
 It is so hapned that the heavens uniuist,
 Spighting my happie freedome, have agreed
 To thrall my looser life, or my last hale to breed.”

XXX.

With that she turn'd her head, as halfe abashed,
 To hide the blush which in her visage rose
 And through her eyes like sudden lightning
 flashed,
 Decking her cheeke with a vermilion rose :
 But soon she did her countenance compose,
 And, to her turning, thus began againe ; [close,
 “ This griefes deepe wound I would to thee dis-
 Thereto compelled through hart-murdring paine ;
 But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth still
 restraine.”

XXXI.

“ Ah ! my deare Dread,” said then the fearefull
 Mayd, [hold,
 Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart with-
 That many hath with dread of death dismayd,
 And dare even Deathes most dreadfull face
 behold ?
 Say on, my soverayne Ladie, and be bold :
 Doth not your handmayds life at your foot lie ?”
 Therewith much comforted she gan unfold
 The cause of her conceived maladie ;
 As one that would confesse, yet faine would it denie.

XXXII.

“ Clarin,” said she, “ thou seest yond Fayry Knight,
 Whom not my valour, but his owne brave mind
 Subiected hath to my unequal might !
 What right is it, that he should thraldome find
 For lending life to me a wretch unkind,
 That for such good him recompence with ill !
 Therefore I cast how I may him unbind,
 And by his freedome get his free goodwill ;
 Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still :

XXXIII.

“ Bound unto me ; but not with such hard bands
 Of strong compulsion and streight violence,
 As now in miserable state he stands ;
 But with sweet love and sure benevolence,
 Voide of malicious mind or foule offence :
 To which if thou canst win him any way
 Without discoverie of my thoughts pretence,
 Both goodly meede of him it purchase may.
 And eke with gratefull service me right well apay

XXXIV.

“ Which that thou mayst the better bring to pass,
 Loe ! here this ring, which shall thy warrant bee
 And token true to old Eumenias,
 From time to time, when thou it best shalt see,
 That in and out thou mayst have passage free.
 Goe now, Clarinda ; well thy wits advise,
 And all thy forces gather unto thee,

XXIX. 9 *To thrall my looser life,*] That is, To deprive
me of my liberty. CHURCH.

Armies of lovely lookes, and speeches wise,
With which thou canst even love himselfe to love
entise."

xxxv.

The trustie Mayd, conceiving her intent,
Did with sure promise of her good endeavour
Give her great comfort and some harts content :
So from her parting she thenceforth did labour,
By all the meanes she might, to curry favour
With th' Elfin Knight, her Ladies best beloved :
With daily shew of courteous kind behaviour,
Even at the marke-white of his hart she roved,
And with wide-glancing words one day she thus
him proved :

xxxvi.

Unhappie Knight, upon whose hopelesse state
Fortune, envying good, hath felly frowned,
And cruell heavens have heapt an heavy fate ;
I rew that thus thy better dayes are drowned
In sad despaire, and all thy senses swounded
In stupid sorow, sith thy iuster merit
Might else have with felicitie bene crowned :
Looke up at last, and wake thy dulled spirit
To thinke how this long death thou mightest dis-
inherit !"

xxxvii.

Much did he marvell at her unecouth speach,
Whose hidden drift he could not well perceive ;
And gan to doubt least she him sought t' appeach
Of treason, or some guilefull traine did weave,
Through which she might his wretched life be-
reave : [her ;
Both which to barre he with this answere met
" Faire Damzell, that with ruth, as I perceive,
Of my mishaps art mov'd to wish me better,
For such your kind regard I can but rest your
dettor.

xxxviii.

" Yet weete ye well, that to a courage great
It is no lesse besecming well to heare
The storme of fortunes frowne or heavens threat,
Then in the sunshine of her countenance cleare
Timely to ioy and carrie comely chere :
For though this cloud have now me overcast,
Yet doe I not of better times despayre ;
And though (unlike) they should for ever last,
Yet in my truthes assurance I rest fixed fast."

xxxix.

But what so stonie minde," she then replyde,
" But if in his owne powre occasion lay,
Would to his hope a window open wyde,
And to his fortunes helpe make readie way ?"
" Unworthy sure," quoth he, " of better day,
That will not take the offer of good hope,
And eke pursew, if he attaine it may."
Which speaches she applying to the scope
Of her intent, this further purpose to him shope :

xl.

" Then why doest not, thou ill-advized man,
Make meanes to win thy libertie forlorne,

xxxv. 8. *Even at the marke-white of his heart she roved.*] That is, she shot with a *roving* arrow at the white mark (*alba meta*) of his heart. *Rovers* are a species of arrows mentioned by Ascham in his *Toxophilus*. UPTON.

xxxix. 9. ——— *this further purpose to him shope:*] That is, further framed [*shaped*] her discourse thus. CHURCH.

And try if thou by faire entreatie can
Move Radiguud ? who though she still have worne
Her dayes in warre, yet (weet thou) was not borne
Of beares and tygres, nor so salvage mynded
As that, albe all love of men she scorne,
She yet forgets that she of men was kynded :
And sooth oft scene that proudest harts base love
hath blynded."

xli.

" Certes, Clarinda, not of cancred will,"
Sayd he, " nor obstinate disdainefull mind,
I have forbore this duetie to fulfill :
For well I may this weene, by that I fynd,
That she a Queene, and come of princely kynd
Both worthie is for to be sewd unto,
Chiefely by him whose life her law doth bynd,
And eke of powre her owne doome to undo,
And als' of princely grace to be inclyn'd thereto.

xlii.

" But want of meanes hath bene mine onely let
From seeking favour where it doth abound ;
Which if I might by your good office get,
I to your selfe should rest for ever bound,
And ready to deserve what grace I found."
She feeling him thus bite upon the bayt,
Yet doubting least his hold was but unsound
And not well fastened, would not strike him strayt,
But drew him on with hope, fit leasme to awayt.

xliii.

But foolish Mayd, whyles heedlesse of the hooke
She thus oft-times was beating off and on,
Through slipperie footing fell into the brooke,
And there was caught to her confusion :
For, seeking thus to salve the Amazon,
She wounded was with her deceipts owne dart,
And gan thenceforth to cast affection,
Conceived close in her beguiled hart,
To Artegal, through pittie of his causelesse smart.

xliv.

Yet durst she not disclose her fancies wound,
Ne to himselfe, for doubt of being sdayned,
Ne yet to any other wight on ground,
For feare her mistresse shold have knowledge
But to herselfe it secretly retayned [gayned ;
Within the closet of her covert brest :
The more thereby her tender hart was payned :
Yet to awayt fit time she weened best,
And fairely did dissemble her sad thoughts unrest.

xlv.

One day her Ladie, calling her apart,
Gan to demand of her some tydings good,
Touching her loves successe, her lingring smart :
Therewith she gan at first to change her mood,
As one adaw'd, and halfe confused stood ;
But quickly she it overpast, so soone
As she her face had wypt to fresh her blood :
Tho gan she tell her all that she had donne,
And all the wayes she sought his love for to have
wonne :

xlvi.

But sayd, that he was obstinate and sterne,
Scorning her offers and conditions vaine ;

xliv. 2. ——— sdayned,] For *disdained*. So, in st. 51 *sdayne* for *disdaine*. CHURCH.

xlv. 7. ——— to fresh her blood:] To refresh her blood
TODD.

Ne would be taught with any termes to lerne
 So fond a lesson as to love againe:
 Die rather would he in penurious paine,
 And his abridged dayes in delour wast,
 Then his Foes love or liking entertaine:
 His resolution was, both first and last,
His bodie was her thrall, his hart was freely plast.

XLVII.

Which when the cruell Amazon perceived,
 She gan to storme, and rage, and rend her gall,
 For very fell despight, which she conceived,
 To be so scorned of a base-borne thrall,
 Whose life did lie in her least eye-lids fall;
 Of which she vow'd with many a cursed threat,
 That she therefore would him ere long forstall.
 Nathlesse, when calmed was her furions heat,
 She chang'd that threatfull mood, and mildly gan
 entreat:

XLVIII.

"What now is left, Clarinda? what remains,
 That we may compass this our enterprize?
 Great shame to lose so long employed paines,
 And greater shame t' abide so great misprize,
 With which he dares our offers thus despize:
 Yet that his guilt the greater may appeare,
 And more my gracious mercie by this wize,
 I will awhile with his first folly beare,
 Till thou have tride againe, and tempted him more
 neare.

XLIX.

"Say and do all that may thereto prevaile;
 Leave nought unpromist that may him perswade,
 Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great availe,
 With which the gods themselves are mylder
 made:
 Thereto adde art, even womens witty trade,
 The art of mightie words that men can charme;
 With which in case thou canst him not invade,
 Let him feele hardnesse of thy heavy arme:
 Who will not stoupe with good shall be made
 stoupe with harme.

L.

"Some of his diet doe from him withdraw;
 For I him find to be too prondly fed:
 Give him more labour, and with streighter law,
 That he with worke may be forwearied:
 Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed,
 That may pull downe the courage of his pride;
 And lay upon him, for his greater dread,
 Cold yron chaines with which let him be tide;
 And let, whatever he desires, be him decide.

LI.

"When thou hast all this doen, then bring me newes
 Of his demeane; thenceforth not like a lover,
 But like a rebell stont, I will him use:
 For I resolve this sieg not to give over,
 Till I the conquest of my will recover."
 So she departed full of grieft and sdaine,
 Which inly did to great impatiencie move her:
 But the false Mayden shortly turn'd againe
 Unto the prison, where her hart did thrall remaine.

LII.

There all her subtile nets she did unfold,
 And all the engins of her wit display;
 In which she meant him warelesse to enfold,

And of his innocence to make her pray.
 So cunningly she wrought her crafts assay,
 That both her Ladie, and herselfe withall,
 And eke the Knight attonce she did betray;
 But most the Knight, whom she with guilefull call
 Did cast for to allure, into her trap to fall.

LIII.

As a had nurse, which, fayning to receive
 In her owne mouth the food ment for her chyld,
 Withholdes it to herselfe, and doeth deceive
 The infant, so for want of nourture spoyld;
 Even so Clarinda her owne Dame beguyld,
 And turn'd the trust, which was in her affyde,
 To feeding of her private fire, which boyl'd
 Her inward brest, and in her entrayles fryde,
 The more that she it sought to cover and to hyde

LIV.

For, comming to this Knight, she purpose fayned,
 How earnest suit she earst for him had made
 Unto her Queene, his freedome to have gayned;
 But by no meanes could her thereto perswade,
 But that instead thereof she sternely bade
 His miserie to be augmented more,
 And many yron bands on him to lade;
 All which nathlesse she for his love forbore:
 So praying him t' accept her service evermore.

LV.

And, more then that, she promist that she would,
 In case she might fude favour in his eye,
 Devize how to enlarge him out of hould.
 The Fayrie, glad to gaine his libertie,
 Can yeeld great thanks for such her curtesie;
 And with faire words, fit for the time and place,
 To feede the humour of her maladic,
 Promist, if she would free him from that case,
 He wold by all good means he might deserve such
 grace.

LVI.

So daily he faire semblant did her shew,
 Yet never meant he in his noble mind
 To his owne absent Love to be untrew:
 Ne ever did deceitfull Clarin find
 In her false hart his bondage to unbind;
 But rather how she mote him faster tye.
 Therefore unto her Mistresse most unkind
 She daily told her love he did defye;
 And him she told her Dame his freedome did denye.

LVII.

Yet thus much friendship she to him did show,
 That his scarce diet somewhat was amended,
 And his worke lessened, that his love mote grow:
 Yet to her Dame him still she discommended,
 That she with him mote be the more offended.
 Thus he long while in thardome there remain'd,
 Of both beloved well, but little friendied;
 Untill his owne true Love his freedome gayned:
 Which in another Canto will he best contain'd.

LII. 8. — *guilefull call*] Alluding to the manner of calling birds. CHURCH.

LIV. 1. — *she purpose fayned*] She entertained him with a feigned story. CHURCH.

LV. 5. *Can yeeld &c.*] *Knew how to yield &c.* TODD.

CANTO VI.

Talus brings newes to Britomart
Of Artegalls mishap;
She goes to seeke him; Dolon meetes,
Who seekes her to entrap.

I.

SOME men, I wote, will deeme in Artegal
Great weaknesse, and report of him much ill,
For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall
To th' insolent command of Womens will;
That all his former praise doth fowly spill:
But he the man, that say or doe so dare,
Be well adviz'd that he stand stedfast still;
For never yet was wight so well aware,
But he at first or last was trapt in Womens snare.

II.

Yet in the streightnesse of that captive state
This gentle Knight himselfe so well behaved,
That notwithstanding all the subtil bait,
With which those Amazons his love still craved,
To his owne Love his loialtie he saved:
Whose character in th' adamantin mould
Of his true hart so firmly was engraved,
That no new Loves impression ever could
Bereave it thence: such blot his honour blemish
should.

III.

Yet his owne Love, the noble Britomart,
Scarse so conceived in her iealous thought,
What time sad tydings of his balefull smart
In Womans bondage Talus to her brought;
Brought in untimely houre, ere it was sought:
For, after that the utmost date assynde
For his returne she waited had for nought,
She gan to cast in her misdoubtfull mynde
A thousand feares, that love-sicke fancies faine to
fynde.

IV.

Sometime she feared least some hard mishap
Had him misfalne in his adventurous quest;
Sometime least his false foe did him entrap
In traytrous traine, or had unwares opprest;
But most she did her troubled mynd molest,
And secretly afflict with iealous feare,
Least some new Love had him from her possesst;
Yet loth she was, since she no ill did heare,
To thinke of him so ill; yet could she not forbear.

V.

One while she blam'd herselfe; another whyle
She him condemn'd as trustlesse and untrew:
And then, her griefe with error to beguyle,
She fayn'd to count the time againe anew,
As if before she had not counted trew:
For dayes, but houres; for moneths that passed
were, [few:
She told but weeks, to make them seeme more
Yet, when she reckned them still drawing neare,
Each hour did seeme a moneth, and every moneth
a yeare.

VI.

But, whenas yet she saw him not returne,
She thought to send some one to seeke him out;
But none she found so fit to serve that turne,

II. 6. ——— character] *Figure, image. Lat. character.*
CHURCH.

As her owne selfe, to ease herselfe of dout.
Now she deviz'd, amongst the warlike rout
Of errant Knights, to seeke her errant Knight;
And then againe resolv'd to hunt him out
Amongst loose Ladies lapped in delight:
And then both Knights envid, and Ladies eke did
spight.

VII.

One day whenas she long had sought for ease
In every place, and every place thought best,
Yet found no place that could her liking please,
She to a window came, that opened west,
Towards which coast her Love his way address:
There looking forth shee in her heart did find
Many vain fancies working her unrest;
And sent her winged thoughts more swift then
wind
To beare unto her Love the message of her mind.

VIII.

There as she looked long, at last she spide
One comming towards her with hasty speede;
Well weend she then, ere him she plaine descride,
That it was one sent from her Love indeede:
Who when he nigh approacht, she mote arede
That it was Talus, Artegal his Groomme:
Whereat her hart was filld with hope and drede;
Ne would she stay till he in place could come,
But ran to meete him forth to know his tidings somme.

IX.

Even in the dore him meeting, she begun;
"And where is he thy Lord, and how far hence?
Declare at once: and hath he lost or won?"
The Yron Man, albe he wanted sence
And sorrowes feeling, yet, with conscience
Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake,
And stood still mute, as one in great suspence;
As if that by his silence he would make
Her rather reade his meaning then himselfe it spake.

X.

Till she againe thus sayd; "Talus, be bold,
And tell whatever it be, good or bad, [hold."
That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth
To whom he thus at length; "The tidings sad,
That I would hide, will needs I see be rad.
My Lord (your Love) by hard mishap doth lie
In wretched bondage, wofully bestad."
"Ay me," quoth she, "what wicked destime!
And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy?"

XI.

"Not by that Tyrant, his intended foe;
But by a Tyrannesse," he then replide,
"That him captived hath in haplesse woe."
"Cease thou, bad newes-man; badly doest thou
hide
Thy Maisters shame, in harlots bondage tide;
The rest my selfe too readily can spell."
With that in rage she turn'd from him aside,
Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell;
And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

VIII. 9. *But ran to meete him forth to know his tidings
somme.] But ran forth to meet him in order to know the
sum and substance of his tidings. UPRON.*

XI. 1. *Not by that tyrant.] Grantorto. UPRON.*

XI. 9. *And to her chamber &c.] That is, And went to
her chamber, as to a solitary cell, in which she meant to
shut herself up from the world. CHURCH.*

XII.

There she began to make her moanefull plaint
Against her Knight for being so untrew ;
And him to touch with falshoods fowle attain't,
That all his other honour overthrew.
Oft did she blame herselfe, and often rewe,
For yeelding to a straungers love so light,
Whose life and manners straunge she never knew ;
And evermore she did him sharpely twight
Forbreach of faith to her, which he had firmly plight.

XIII.

And then she in her wrathfull will did cast
How to revenge that blot of honour blent,
To fight with him, and goodly die her last :
And then againe she did herselfe torment,
Inflicting on herselfe his punishment.
Awhile she walkt, and chaunt ; awhile she threw
Herselfe upon her bod, and did lament :
Yet did she not lament with loude alew,
As women wont, but with deepe sighes and singulfs
few.

XIV.

Like as a wayward childe, whose soulder sleepe
Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright,
With froward will doth set himselfe to weepe,
Ne can be stild for all his nurses might, [spight ;
But kieke, and squals, and shrieks for fell de-
Now scratching her, and her loose locks misusing,
Now seeking darkenesse, and now seeking light,
Then craving sucke, and then the sucke refusing:
Such was this Ladies fit in her Loves fond accusing.

XV.

But when she had with such unquiet fits
Herself there close afflicted long in vaine,
Yet found no easement in her troubled wits,
She unto Talus forth return'd againe,
By place of place seeking to ease her paine ;
And gan enquire of him with mylder mood
The certaine cause of Artegals detainee,
And what he did, and in what state he stood,
And whether he did woo, or whether he were woo'd.

XVI.

" Ah wellaway ! " sayd then the Yron Man,
" That he is not the while in state to woo ;
But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and wan,
Not by strong hand compelled thereunto,
But his owne doome, that none can now undoo."
" Sayd I not then," quoth she, " ere-while aright,
That this is thinge compacte betwix you two
Me to deceive of faith unto me plight,
Since that he was not forst, nor overcome in fight ? "

XVII.

With that he gan at large to her dilate
The whole discourse of his captivance sad,
In sort as ye have heard the same of late :
All which when she with hard endurance had
Heard to the end, she was right sore bestad,
With sodaine stounds of wrath and grief attone ;
Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made ;
But streight herselfe did dight, and armor don,
And mounting to her steede had Talus guide her on.

xii. 8. — twight] *Twilt*, upbraids. URTON.

xiii. 8. — with loude alew,] *Hwelling*, lamentation. GR. *ἀλαλῆ*. URTON.

xiii. 9. — singulfs] *Sols*. Lat. *singullus*. TODD.

xvii. 8. — don,] *Do on*, i. e. put on. URTON.

XVIII.

So forth she rode upon her ready way,
To seeke her Knight, as Talus her did guide :
Sadly she rode, and never word did say
Nor good nor bad, ne ever lookt aside,
But still right downe ; and in her thought did
The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent [hide
To fierce avengement of that womans pride,
Which had her Lord in her base prison pent,
And so great honour with so fowle reproch had blent.

XIX.

So as she thus melancholicke did ride,
Chawing the cud of grieffe and inward paine,
She chaunst to meete toward the even-tide
A Knight, that softly paced on the plaine,
As if himselfe to solace he were faine :
Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rather bent
To peace then needlesse trouble to constraine ;
As well by view of that his vestiment,
As by his modest semblant, that no evill ment.

XX.

He comming neare gan gently her salute
With courteous words, in the most comely wise ;
Who though desirous rather to rest mute,
Then termes to entertaime of common guize,
Yet rather then she kindnesse would despize,
She would herselfe displease, so him requite.
Then gan she the other further to devize
Of things abrode, as next to hand did light,
And many things demaund, to which she answer'd
light :

XXI.

For little lust had she to talke of ought,
Or ought to heare that mote delightfull bee ;
Her minde was whole possessed of one thought,
That gave none other place. Which when as hee
By outward signes (as well he might) did see,
He list no longer to use lothfull speach,
But her besought to take it well in gree,
Sith shady dampe had dimd the heavens reach,
To lodge with him that night, unles good cause
empeach.

XXII.

The Championesse, now seeing night at dore,
Was glad to yeeld unto his good request ;
And with him went without gaine-saying more.
Not farre away, but little wide by west,
His dwelling was, to which he him address ;
Where soone arriving they received were
In seemly wise, as them besemed best ;
For he their Host them goodly well did cheare,
And talk't of pleasant things the night away t
weare.

XXIII.

Thus passing th' evening well, till time of rest,
Then Britomart unto a bowre was brought ;
Where grooms awayted her to have undrest :
But she ne would undressed be for ought,
Ne doffe her armes, though he her much besought
For she had vow'd, she sayd, not to forgo

xx. 9. *And &c.*] That is, and to ask many questions ; to which she returned slight answers. CURCH.

xxi. 1. *For little lust had she &c.*] She had little inclination. TODD.

xxi. 7. — in gree,] In liking. TODD.

Those warlike wocdes, till she revenge had wrought
Of a late wrong uppon a mortall foe ;
Which she would sure performe betide her wele or
wo.

xxiv.

Which when their Host perceiv'd, right discontent
In minde he grew, for feare least by that art
He should his purpose misse, which close he ment :
Yet taking leave of her he did depart :
There all that night remained Britomart,
Restlesse, recomfortlesse, with heart deepe-
grieved,
Not suffering the least twincckling sleepe to start
Into her eye, which th' heart mote have relieved ;
But if the least appear'd, her eyes she streight
retrieved.

xxv.

"Ye guilty eyes," said she, "the which with guyle
My heart at first betrayd, will ye betray
My life now too, for which a little while
Ye will not watch ? false watches, wellaway !
I wote when ye did watch both night and day
Unto your losse ; and now needes will ye sleepe ?
Now ye have made my heart to wake alway,
Now will ye sleepe ? ah ! wake, and rather weepe
To thinke of your nights want, that should yee
waking keepe."

xxvi.

Thus did she watch, and weare the weary night
In wayfull plaints, that none was to appease ;
Now walking soft, now sitting still upright,
As sundry change her seemed best to ease.
Ne lesse did Talus suffer sleepe to seaze
His eye-lids sad, but watcht continually,
Lying without her dore in great disease ;
Like to a spaniell wayting carefully
Least any should betray his Lady treacherously.

xxvii.

What time the native belman of the night,
The bird that warned Peter of his fall,
First rings his silver bell t' each sleepy wight,
That should their mindes up to devotion call,
She heard a wondrous noise below the hall :
All sodainly the bed, where she should lie,
By a false trap was let adowne to fall
Into a lower roome, and by and by
The loft was raysd againe, that no man could it spie.

xxviii.

With sight whereof she was dismayd right sore,
Perceiving well the treason which was ment :
Yet stirr'd not at all for doubt of more,
But kept her place with courage confident,
Wayting what would ensue of that event.
It was not long before she heard the sound
Of armed men comming with close intent
Towards her chamber ; at which dreadful stound
She quickly caught her sword, and shield about her
bound.

xxiii. 9. — wele or wo.] Prosperity or misfortune.
TODD.

xxiv. 9. — retrieved.] *Reproved*, as *mieve* for *move*,
and *prive* for *prove*. already noticed. TODD.

xxv. 5. I wote when &c.] I knew the time when &c. ЧУРЧЕН.

xxvi. 7. — disease:] *Uneasiness*. Fr. *desaise*. ТОРО.

xxvii. 1. — native:] He means *natural*. ЧУРЧЕН.

xxvii. 5. — hall:] Spenser here uses *hall* for cham-

ber. ЧУРЧЕН.

xxix.

With that there came unto her chamber dore
Two Knights all armed ready for to fight ;
And after them full many other more,
A raskall rout, with weapons rudely dight :
Whom soone as Talus spide by glims of night,
He started up, there where on ground he lay,
And in his hand his thresher ready keight :
They, seeing that, let drive at him streightway,
And round about him preace in riotous aray.

xxx.

But, soone as he began to lay about
With his rude yron flaile, they gan to flie,
Both armed Knights and eke unarmed rout :
Yet Talus after them apace did plie,
Wherever in the darke he could them spie ;
That here and there like scattered sheep they lay.
Then, backe returning where his Dame did lie,
He to her told the story of that fray,
And all that treason there intended did bewray.

xxxi.

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and inly burn-
To be avenged for so fowle a deede, [ing
Yet being forst t' abide the daies returning,
She there remain'd ; but with right wary heede,
Least any more such practise should proceede.
Now mote ye know (that which to Britomart
Unknown was) whence all this did proceede ;
And for what cause so great mischievous smart
Was ment to her that never evill ment in hart.

xxxii.

The goodman of this house was Dolon hight ;
A man of subtil wit and wicked minde,
That whilome in his youth had bene a Knight,
And armes had borne, but little good could finde,
And much lesse honour by that warlike kinde
Of life : for he was nothing valorous,
But with slie shifts and wiles did underminde
All noble Knights, which were adventurous,
And many brought to shame by treason treacherous.

xxxiii.

He had three sonnes, all three like fathers sonnes,
Like treacherous, like full of fraud and guile,
Of all that on this earthly compasse woggles :
The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile
By Artegall, through his owne guilty wile ;
His name was Guizor ; whose untimely fate
For to avenge, full many treasons vile
His father Dolon had deviz'd of late
With these his wicked sons, and shewd his cankred
hate.

xxxiv.

For sure he weend that this his present guest
Was Artegall, by many tokens plaine ;
But chiefly by that Yron Page he ghest,
Which still was wont with Artegall remaine ;
And therefore ment him surely to have slaine :
But by Gods grace, and her good heedinesse,
She was preserved from their traytrons traine.
Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnesse,
Ne suffred slothfull sleepe her eyelids to oppresse.

xxxix. 7. — keight:] *Caught*. UPTON.

xxxiii. 1. — all three like fathers sonnes.] That is,
three sons all like their father. ЧУРЧЕН.

xxxv.

The morrow next, so soone as dawning houre
 Discovered had the light to living eye,
 She forth yssew'd out her loathed howre,
 With full intent t' avenge that villany
 On that vilde man and all his family: [wond,
 And, comming down to seeke them where they
 Nor sire, nor sonnes, nor any could she spie;
 Each rowne she sought, but them all empty fond:
 They all were fled for feare; but whether, nether
 koud.

xxxvi.

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay,
 But tooke her steede; and thereon mounting light
 Gan her addresse unto her former way.
 She had not rid the moutenance of a fight,
 But that she saw there present in her sight
 Those two false brethren on that perillous bridge,
 On which Pollente with Artegall did fight.
 Streight was the passage, like a ploughed ridge,
 That, if two met, the one mote needs fall o'er the
 lidge.

xxxvii.

There they did thinke themselves on her to wreake:
 Who as she nigh unto them drew, the one
 These vile reproches gan unto her speake;
 "Thou recreant false traytor, that with lone
 Of arms hast knighthood stolne, yet Knight art
 none,
 No more shall now the darkenesse of the night
 Defend thee from the vengeange of thy fone;
 But with thy bloud thou shalt appease the spright
 Of Gnazor by thee slaine and murdered by thy slight."

xxxviii.

Strange were the words in Britomartis eare;
 Yet stayd she not for them, but forward fared,
 Till to the perillous bridge she came; and there
 Talus desir'd that he might have prepared
 The way to her, and those two losels scared:
 But she thereat was wroth, that for despight
 The glauncing sparkles through her bever glared,
 And from her eies did flash out fiery light,
 Like coles that through a silver censer sparkle
 bright.

xxxix.

She stayd not to advise which way to take;
 But, putting spurres unto her fiery beast,
 Thorough the midst of them she way did make.
 The one of them, which most her wrath increast,
 Upon her speare she bore before her breast,
 Till to the bridges further end she past;
 Where falling downe his challenge he releast:
 The other over side the bridge she cast
 into the river, where he drunke his deadly last.

xl.

As when the flashing levin haps to light
 Upon two stubborne oakes, which stand so neare
 That way betwixt them none appeares in sight;
 The engin, fiercely flying forth, doth teare
 Th' one from the earth, and through the aire doth
 The other it with force doth overthrow [beare;

xxxv. 9. ——— *whether.*] *Whether is whither*, and is generally so spelt by our old writers. Todd.

xxxvii. 2. *Who*] So all the editions. Perhaps the poet gave *Tho. Church*.

xxxviii. 9. ——— *slight.*] *Art. Todd*.

Upon one side, and from his rootes doth reare:
 So did the Championesse those two there strow,
 And to their sire their carcasses left to bestow.

CANTO VII.

Britomart comes to Isis Church,
 Where shee strange visions sees:
 She fights with Itadigund, her slaine,
 And Artegall thencee frees.

I.

NOUGHT is on earth more sacred or divine,
 That gods and men doe equally adore,
 Then this same Vertue that doth right define:
 For th' hevns themselves, whence mortal men
 implore
 Right in their wrongs, are ru'd by righteous lore
 Of highest Iove, who doth true iustice deale
 To his inferiour gods, and evermore
 Therewith contames his heavenly common-weale:
 The skill whereof to princes hearts he doth reveale.

II.

Well therefore did the antique world invent
 That Iustice was a god of soveraine grace,
 And altars unto him and temples lent,
 And heavenly honours in the highest place;
 Calling him great Osyris, of the race
 Of th' old Ægyptian kings that whylome were;
 With fayned colours shading a true case;
 For that Osyris, whilest he lived here,
 The instest man alive and truest did appeare.

III.

His wife was Isis; whom they likewise made
 A goddessse of great powre and soverainty,
 And in her person cunningly did shade
 That part of Iustice which is Equity,
 Whereof I have to treat here presently:
 Unto whose Temple whenas Britomart
 Arrived, shee with great humility
 Did enter in, ne would that night depart;
 But Talus mote not be admitted to her part.

IV.

There she received was in goodly wise
 Of many priests, which duely did attend
 Upon the rites and daily sacrifice,
 All clad in linnen robes with silver hermd;
 And on their heads with long locks comely kemd
 They wore rich mitres shaped like the moone,
 To shew that Isis doth the moone portend;
 Like as Osyris signifies the sunne:
 For that they both like race in equall iustice runne.

V.

The Championesse them greeting, as she could,
 Was thence by them into the Temple led;
 Whose goodly building when she did behould
 Borne upon stately pillours, all disprede
 With shiming gold, and arched over hed,
 She wondred at the workmans passing skill,
 Whose like before she never saw nor red;
 And thereupon long while stood gazing still,
 But thought that she thereon could never gaze her
 fill.

v. 1. ——— *as she could.*] *As she well knew how.* Church

vi.

Thenceforth unto the Idoll they her brought ;
 The which was framed all of silver fine,
 So well as could with cunning hand be wrought,
 And clothed all in garments made of line,
 Hemd all about with fringe of silver twine :
 Upon her head she wore a crowne of gold ;
 To shew that she had powre in things divine :
 And at her feete a crocodile was rold,
 That with her wreathed taile her middle did enfold.

vii.

One foote was set upon the crocodile,
 And on the ground the other fast did stand ;
 So meaning to suppress hoth forged guile
 And open force : and in her other hand
 She stretched forth a long white scelder wand.
 Such was the goddesse : whom when Britomart
 Had long beheld, herselfe upon the land
 She did prostrate, and with right humble hart
 Unto herselfe her silent prayers did impart.

viii.

To which the Idoll as it were inclining
 Her wand did move with amiable locke,
 By outward shew her inward sence desining :
 Who well perceiving how her wand she shooke,
 It as a token of good fortune tooke.
 By this the day with dampe was overcast,
 And ioyous light the house of Iove forsooke :
 Which when she saw, her helmet she unlaste,
 And by the altars side herselfe to slumber plaste.

ix.

For other beds the priests there used none,
 But on their mothor Earths deare lap did lie,
 And bake their sides upon the cold hard stone,
 T' enure themselves to sufferance thereby,
 And proud rebellious flesh to mortify :
 For, by the vow of their religion,
 They tied were to stedfast chastity
 And continence of life ; that, all forgon,
 They mote the better tend to their devotion.

x.

Therefore they mote not taste of fleshly food,
 Ne feed on ought the which doth bloud containe,
 Ne drinke of wine ; for wine they say is blood,
 Even the blond of gyants, which were slaine
 By thundring Iove in the Phlegrean plaine :
 For which the Earth (as they the story tell)
 Wroth with the gods, which to perpetuall paine
 Had damn'd her sonnes which gainst them did
 rebell,
 With inward griefe and malice did against them
 swell :

xi.

And of their vitall bloud, the which was shed
 Into her pregnant bosome, forth she brought
 The fruitfull vine ; whose liquor blonddy red,
 Having the mindes of men with fury fraught,
 Mote in them stirre up old rebellious thought
 To make new warre against the gods againe :
 Such is the powre of that same fruit, that nought
 The fell contagion may thereof restraine,
 Ne within reasons rule her madding mood containe.

VIII. 3. — desining :] So spelt for the sake of the rhyme. Spenser here uses the word in the Latin sense, *signifying*, from *designo*, as Mr. Church has observed.
 TOPS.

xii.

There did the warlike Maide herselfe repose,
 Under the wings of Isis all that night ;
 And with sweete rest her heavy eyes did close,
 After that long daies toile and weary plight :
 Where whilest her eardly parts with soft delight
 Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie,
 There did appeare unto her heavenly spright
 A wondrous vision, which did close imple
 The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

xiii.

Her seem'd, as she was doing sacrifice
 To Isis, deckt with mitre on her hed
 And linnen stole after those priestes guize,
 All sodainely she saw transfigured
 Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red,
 And moone-like mitre to a crowne of gold ;
 That even she herselfe much wondered
 At such a change, and ioyed to behold
 Herselfe adorn'd with gems and iewels manifold.

xiv.

And, in the midst of her felicity,
 An hideous tempest seemed from below
 To rise through all the Temple sodainely,
 That from the altar all about did blow
 The holy fire, and all the embers strow
 Upon the ground ; which, kindled privily,
 Into outragions flames unwares did grow,
 That all the Temple put in ieopardy
 Of flaming, and herselfe in great perplexity.

xv.

With that the crocodile, which sleeping lay
 Under the Idols feete in fearelesse bowre,
 Seem'd to awake in horrible dismay,
 As being troubled with that stormy stowre ;
 And gaping greedy wide did straight devoure
 Both flames and tempest ; with which growen
 great, [powre,
 And swolne with pride of his owne peerlesse
 He gan to threaten her likewise to eat ;
 But that the goddesse with her rod him backe did beat.

xvi.

Tho, turning all his pride to humblesse meeke,
 Himselfe before her feete he lowly threw,
 And gan for grace and love of her to seeke :
 Which she accepting, he so neare her drew
 That of his game she soone enwombd grew,
 And forth did bring a lion of great might,
 That shortly did all other beasts subdew :
 With that she waked full of fearefull fright,
 And doubtfully dismayd through that so uncouth
 sight.

xvii.

So therenpon long while she musing lay,
 With thousand thoughts feeding her fantasie ;
 Untill she spide the lampe of lightsome day
 Up-lifted in the porch of heaven high :
 Then up she rose fraught with melancholy,
 And forth into the lower parts did pas,
 Whereas the priestes she found full busily
 About their holy things for morrow mas ;
 Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted was :

xviii.

But, by the change of her unchearefull looke,
 They might perceive she was not well in plight,

XII. 8. — imple] *Wap up*. Church.

Or that some pensiveness to heart she tooke :
Therefore thus one of them, who seem'd in sight
To be the greatest and the gravest wight,
To her bespake ; " Sir Knight, it seems to me
That, thorough evill rest of this last night,
Or ill apayd or much dismayd ye be ;
That by your change of cheare is easie for to see."

XX.

" Certes," said she, " sith ye so well have spide
The troublous passion of my pensive mind,
I will not seeke the same from you to hide ;
But will my eares unfolde, in hope to find
Your aide to guide me out of errorr blind."
" Say on," quoth he, " the secret of your hart :
For, by the holy vow which me doth bind,
I am adur'd best counsell to impart
To all that shall require my comfort in their smart."

XXI.

Then gan she to declare the whole discourse
Of all that vision which to her appeard,
As well as to her minde it had recourse.
All which when he unto the end had heard,
Like to a weake faint-hearted man he fared
Through great astonishment of that strange sight ;
And, with long looks up-standing stiffly, stared
Like one adawed with some dreadfull spright :
So filld with heavenly fury thus he her behight ;

XXII.

" Magnificke Virgin, that in quaint disguise
Of British armes doest maske thy royall blood,
So to pursue a perillous emprize ;
How couldst thou weene, through that disguized
To hide thy state from being understood ? [hood,
Can from th' immortall gods ought hidden bee ?
They doe thy linage, and thy lordly brood,
They doe thy Sire lamenting sore for thee,
They doe thy Love forlorne in womens thraldome
see.

XXIII.

" The end whereof, and all the long event,
They do to thee in this same dreame discover :
For that same crocodile doth represent
The righteous Knight that is thy faithfull lover,
Like to Osyris in all iust endeavor :
For that same crocodile Osyris is,
That under Isis feete doth sleepe for ever ;
To shew that clemence oft, in things amis,
Restraines those sterne behests and cruell doomes
of his.

XXIV.

" That Knight shall all the troublous stormes asswage
And raging flames, that many foes shall reare
To hinder thee from the iust heritage
Of thy Sires crowne, and from thy Countrey deare :
Then shalt thou take him to thy loved fere,
And ioyne in equall portion of thy realme :
And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare,
That lion-like shall shew his powre extreame.
So bless thee God, and give thee ioyance of thy
dreame !"

XXV.

All which when she unto the end had heard,
She much was eased in her troublous thought,
And on those priests bestowed rich reward ;
And royall gifts of gold and silver wrought
She for a present to their goddesse brought.
Then taking leave of them she forward went
To seeke her Love, where he was to be sought ;
Ne rested till she came without relent
Unto the land of Amazons, as she was bent.

XXVI.

Whereof when newes to Radigund was brought,
Not with amaze, as women wonted bee,
She was confused in her troublous thought ;
But filld with courage and with ioyous glee,
As glad to heare of armes, the which now sho
Had long surceast, she bad to open hold,
That she the face of her new foe might see :
But when they of that Yron Man had told,
Which late her folke had slaine, she bad them forth
to hold.

XXVII.

So there without the gate, as seemed best,
She caused her pavilion be pight ;
In which stout Britomart herselfe did rest,
Whiles Talus watched at the dore all night.
All night likewise they of the towne in fright
Uppon their wall good watch and ward did keepe.
The morrow next, so soone as dawning light
Bad doe away the dampe of drouzie sleepe,
The warlike Amazon out of her bowre did peepe ;

XXVIII.

And caused streight a trumpet loud to shrill,
To warne her foe to battell soone be prest :
Who, long before awoke, (for she full ill
Could sleepe all night, that in unquiet brest
Did closely harbour such a iecalous guest,
Was to the battell whilome ready dight,
Eftsoones that Warriouresse with haughty crest
Did forth issue all ready for the fight ;
On th' other side her Foe appeared soome in sight.

XXIX.

But, ere they reared hand, the Amazone
Began the streight conditions to propound,
With which she used still to tye her fone,
To serve her so, as she the rest had bound :
Which when the other heard, she sternly frownd
For high disdaine of such indignity,
And would no longer treat, but bad them sound :
For her no other termes should ever tie
Then what prescribed were by Lawes of Chevalrie.

XXX.

The trumpets sound, and they together run
With greedy rage, and with their faulclius smot ;
Ne either sought the others strokes to shun,
But through great fury both their skill forgot,
And practicke use in armes ; ne spared not
Their dainty parts, which nature had created
So faire and tender without staine or spot
For other uses then they them translated ;
Which they now hacket and hewed as if such use they
hated.

XXIV. 8. — without relent] Without stopping. Iodd.
XXV. 9. — she bad them forth to hold.] That is, to
march forth. Upton.

XXVII. 1. — to shrill,] To sound. Church.

XX. 8. — adawed] Overawed, terrified. Torr.
XXI. 1. — in quaint disguise] That is, in strange
disguise. T. Warton.
XXII. 6. — clemence] The French word for clemency.
Iodd.

xxx.

As when a tygre and a lionesse
 Are met at spoyling of some hungry pray,
 Both challenge it with equal greedinesse ;
 But first the tygre claws thereon did lay ;
 And therefore loth to loose her right away
 Doth in defence thereof fall stoutly stand :
 To which the lion strongly doth gainesay,
 That she to hunt the beast first tooke in hond ;
 And therefore ought it have wherever she it fond.

xxxii.

Full fiercely layde the Amazon about,
 And dealt her blowes unmercifully sore ;
 Which Britomart withstood with courage stout,
 And them repaide againe with double more.
 So long they fought, that all the grassie flore
 Was fild with blond which from their sides did
 flow,
 And gushed through their armes, that all in gore
 They trode, and on the ground their lives did
 strow,
 Like fruitles seede, of which untimely death should
 grow.

xxxiii.

At last proud Radigund with fell despight,
 Having by chauce espide advantage neare,
 Let drive at her with all her dreadfull might,
 And thus upbrayding said ; " This token beare
 Unto the man whom thou doest love so deare ;
 And tell him for his sake thy life thou gavest."
 Which spitefull words she sore engriev'd to heare
 Thus answer'd ; " Lewdly thou my love de-
 pravest,
 Who shortly must repent that now so vainely
 bravest."

xxxiiii.

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell passage found,
 That glauncing on her shoulder-plate it bit
 Unto the bone, and made a griesly wound,
 That she her shield through raging smart of it
 Could scarce uphold ; yet soone she it requit :
 For, having force increast through furious paine,
 She her so rudely on the helmet smit
 That it empierced to the very braine,
 And her proud person low prostrated on the plaine.

xxxv.

Where being layd, the wrothfull Britonesse
 Stayd not till she came to herselfe againe ;
 But in revenge both of her Loves distresse
 And her late vile reproch though vaunted vaine,
 And also of her wound which sore did paine,
 She with one stroke both head and helmet cleft :
 Which dreadfull sight when all her warlike traine
 There present saw, each one of sence bereft
 Fledd fast into the towne, and her sole victor left.

xxxvi.

But yet so fast they could not home retrate,
 But that swift Talus did the foremost win ;
 And, pressing through the preace unto the gate,
 Palmell with them atonce did enter in :
 There then a piteous slaughter did begin ;
 For all that ever came within his reach
 He with his yron flaele did thresh so thin,

That he no worke at all left for the leach ;
 Like to an hideous storme, which nothing may em-
 peach.

xxxvii.

And now by this the noble Conquerresse
 Herselfe came in, her glory to partake ;
 Where though revengefull vow she did professe,
 Yet, when she saw the heapes which he did make
 Of slaughtered carkasses, her heart did quake
 For very ruth, which did it almost rive,
 That she his fury willed him to slake :
 For else he sure had left not one alive ;
 But all, in his revenge, of spirite would deprive.

xxxviii.

Tho, when she had his execution sayd,
 She for that yron prison did enquire,
 In which her wretched Love was captive layd :
 Which breaking open with indignaunt ire,
 She entred into all the partes entire :
 Where when she saw that lothly uncouth sight
 Of men disguiz'd in womanishe attire,
 Her heart gan grudge for very deepe despight
 Of so unmanly maske in misery midght.

xxxix.

At last whenas to her owne Love she came,
 Whom like disguise no lesse deformed had,
 At sight thereof abasht with secrete shame
 She turnd her head aside, as nothing glad
 To have beheld a spectacle so bad ;
 And then too well believ'd that which tofore
 Iealous suspect as true untruely drad :
 Which vaine conceipt now nourishing no more,
 She sought with ruth to salve his sad misfortunes
 sore.

xxxix.

Not so great wonder and astonishment
 Did the most chast Penelope possesse,
 To see her Lord, that was reported drent
 And dead long since in dolorous distresse,
 Come home to her in piteous wretchednesse,
 After long travell of full twenty yeares ;
 That she knew not his favours likelinessse,
 For many scarres and many hoary heares ;
 But stood long staring on him mongst uncertaine
 feares.

xl.

" Ah ! my deare Lord, what sight is this," quoth
 she,
 " What May-game hath misfortune made of you ?
 Where is that dreadfull manly looke ? where be
 Those mighty palmes, the which ye wont t'embrew
 In blood of kings, and great hoastes to subdew ?
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change have
 wrought,
 As to have robde you of that manly hew ?
 Could so great courage stouped have to ought ?
 Then farewell, fleshly force ; I see thy pride is
 nought !"

xli.

Thenceforth she straight into a bowre him brought,
 And causd him thuse uncomely weedes undight ;

xxxv. 9. — empeach.] *Hinder*. Todd.xxxvii. 5. — the partes entire :] Lat. *Partes interiores*,
 the inner parts of the prison. Church.xxxix. 3. — drent,] *Drenched* or *drowned*. U'rr.xxxix. 8. For] *Because of*. Church.

And in their steede for other rayment sought,
Whereof there was great store, and armors bright,
Which had bene reft from many a noble Knight;
Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had,
Whilset fortune favoured her successe in fight :
In which whenas she him anew had clad,
She was reviv'd, and ioyd much in his semblance
glad.

XLII.

So there awhile they afterwards remained,
Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale :
During which space she there as Princess rained ;
And changing all that forme of common-weale
The liberty of Women did repeale,
Which they had long usurpt ; and, them restoring
To mens subiection, did true iustice deale :
That all they, as a goddesse her adoring,
Her wisdomed did admire, and hearkned to her
loring.

XLIII.

For all those Knights, which long in captive shade
Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome free ;
And Magistrates of all that City made,
And gave to them great living and large fee :
And, that they should for ever faithfull bee,
Made them swear fealty to Artegall :
Who when himselfe now well recur'd did see,
He purposd to proceed, whatso befell,
Upon his first adventure which him forth did call.

XLIV.

Full sad and sorrowfull was Britomart
For his departure, her new cause of griefe ;
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,
Consisted much in that adventures priefe :
The care whereof, and hope of his successe,
Gave unto her great comfort and reliefe ;
That womanish complaints she did repress,
And tempred for the time her present heavinesse.

XLV.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,
Till through his want her woe did more increase :
Then, hoping that the change of aire and place
Would change her paine and sorrow somewhat
She parted thence, her anguish to appease. [ease,
Meane while her noble Lord Sir Artegall
Went on his way ; ne ever howre did cease,
Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall :
That for another Canto will more fitly fall.

CANTO VIII.

Prince Arthur and Sir Artegal
Free Samient from feare :
They slay the Soudan; drive his wife
Adicia to despair.

I.

NOUGHT under heaven so strongly doth allure
The sense of man, and all his minde possesse,
As Beauties lovely baite, that doth procure

XLII. 9. ——— loring.] *Instruction*, a diminutive of
lore. UPTON.

XLV. 2. ——— his want] The want of his company.
CHURCH.

XLV. 8. ——— that Lady thrall:] That captive Lady,
Irena. CHURCH.

Great warriors oft their rigour to repress,
And mighty hands forget their mannesse ;
Drawne with the powre of an heart-robbing eye,
And wrapt in fetters of a golden tresse,
That can with melting pleasaunce mollifye
Their hardned hearts enur'd to bloud and cruelty.

II.

So whylome leard that mighty Iewish swaine,
Each of whose lockes did match a man in might,
To lay his spoiles before his Lemans traine :
So also did that great Oetean Knight
For his Loves sake his lions skin undight ;
And so did warlike Antony neglect
The worlds whole rule for Cleopatras sight.
Such wondrous powre hath wemens faire aspect
To captive men, and make them all the world reiect.

III.

Yet could it not sterne Artegal retaine,
Nor hold from suite of his avowed quest,
Which he had undertane to Gloriane ;
But left his Love (albe her strong request)
Faire Britomart in languor and unrest,
And rode himselfe upon his first intent :
Ne day nor night did ever idly rest ;
Ne wight but onely Talus with him went,
The true guide of his way and vertuous government.

IV.

So travelling, he chaunst far off to heed
A Damzell flying on a palfrey fast
Before two Knights that after her did speed
With all their powre, and her full fiercely chast
In hope to have her overhent at last :
Yet fled she fast, and both them farre outwent,
Carried with wings of feare, like fowle aghast,
With locks all loose, and rayment all to rent ;
And ever as she rode her eye was backward bent.

V.

Soone after these he saw another Knight,
That after those two former rode apace
With speare in rest, and prickt with all his might :
So ran they all, as they had bene at bace,
They being chased that did others chace.
At length he saw the hindmost overtake
One of those two, and force him turne his face ;
However loth he were his way to slake,
Yet mote he algates now abide, and answere make.

VI.

But th' other still pursu'd the fearefull Mayd ;
Who still from him as fast away did flie,
Ne once for ought her speedy passage staid,
Till that at length she did before her spie
Sir Artegall, to whom she streight did hie
With gladfull hast, in hope of him to get
Succour against her greedy enemy :

II. 1. ——— that mighty Iewish swaine,] Sampson.
CHURCH.

II. 4. ——— that great Oetean Knight] Hercules, so
called from *Oeta*, a hill in Thessaly, whereon he burnt
himself. CHURCH.

IV. 8. ——— all to] *Altogether* rent, torn all to pieces.
CHURCH.

V. 4. *So ran they all, as they had bene at bace.] Base,*
or *Prison-base*, is a country sport where the chasers are
chased, as explained in the second line. UPTON.

Who seeing her approach gan forward set
To save her from her feare, and him from force to
let.

vii.

But he, like hound full greedy of his pray,
Being impatient of impediment,
Continu'd still his course, and by the way
Thought with his speare him quight have over-
So both together, ylike felly bent, [went.
Like fiercely met: but Artegal was stronger,
And better skild in tilt and tournament,
And bore him quite out of his saddle, longer
Then two speares length: so mischiefe overmatcht
the wronger :

viii.

And in his fall misfortune him mistooke ;
For on his head unhappily he pight,
That his owne waight his necke asunder broke,
And left there dead. Meane while the other
Defeated had the other faytour quight, [Knight
And all his bowels in his body brast :
Whom leaving there in that dispiteous plight,
He ran still on, thinking to follow fast
His other fellow Pagan which before him past.

ix.

Instead of whom finding there ready prest
Sir Artegal, without discretion
He at him ran with ready speare in rest :
Who, seeing him come still so fiercely on,
Against him made againe : so both anon
Together met, and strongly either strooke
And broke their speares; yet neither has forgon
His horses backe, yet to and fro long shooke
And totted, like two towres which through a tem-
pest quooke.

x.

But, when againe they had recovered sence,
They drew their swords, in mind to make amends
For what their speares had fayld of their pretence:
Which when the Damzell, who those deadly ends
Of both her foes had seene, and now her frends
For her beginning a more fearefull fray ;
She to them runnes in hast, and her haire rends,
Crying to them their cruell hands to stay,
Untill they both do heare what she to them will
say.

xi.

They stayd their hands; when she thus gan to
speake ; [wise
" Ah ! gentle Knights, what meane ye thus un-
Upon yourselves anothers wrong to wreaque ?
I am the wrong'd, whom ye did enterprise
Both to redresse, and both redrest likewise :
Witness the Paynims both, whom ye may see
There dead on ground : what doe ye then devise
Of more revenge ? if more, then I am shee
Which was the roote of all ; end your revenge on
mee."

xii.

Whom when they heard so say, they lookt about
To weete if it were true as she had told ; [doubt,
Where when they saw their foes dead out of
Eftsoones they gan their wrothfull hands to hold,
And ventailes reare each other to behold.

Tho, whenas Artegal did Arthure vew,
So faire a creature and so wondrous bold,
He much admired both his heart and hew,
And toucht with intire affection nigh him drew ;

xiii.

Saying, " Sir Knight, of pardon I you pray,
That all unweeting have you wrong'd thus sore,
Suffring my hand against my heart to stray :
Which if ye please forgive, I will therefore
Yield for amends myselfe yours evermore,
Or whatso penaunce shall by you be red."
To whom the Prince ; " Certes me needeth more
To crave the same ; whom error so misled,
As that I did mistake the living for the ded.

xiv.

" But, sith ye please that both our blames shall die,
Amends may for the trespasse soone be made,
Since neither is endamadg'd much thereby."
So can they both themselves full eath perswade
To faire accordaunce, and both faults to shade,
Either embracing other lovingly,
And swearing faith to either on his blade,
Never thenceforth to nourish enmity,
But either others cause to maintaine mutually.

xv.

Then Artegal gan of the Prince enquire,
What were those Knights which there on ground
were layd,
And had receiv'd their follies worthy hire,
And for what cause they chased so that Mayd.
" Certes I wote not well," the Prince then sayd,
" But by adventure found them faring so,
As by the way unweeting I strayd,
And lo ! the Damzell selfe, whence all did grow,
Of whom we may at will the whole occasion
know."

xvi.

Then they that Damzell called to them nie,
And asked her, what were those two her fone,
From whom she earst so fast away did flie ;
And what was she herselfe so woe-begone,
And for what cause pursu'd of them atone.
To whom she thus ; " Then wote ye well, that I
Doe serve a Queene that not far hence doth wone,
A Princesse of great powre and maiestie,
Famous through all the world, and honour'd far and
nie.

xvii.

" Her name Mercilla most men use to call ;
That is a Mayden Queene of high renowne,
For her great bounty knowne over all [crownne
And soveraine grace, with which her royall
She doth support, and strongly beateth downe
The mallice of her foes, which her envy
And at her happinesse do fret and frowne ;
Yet she herselfe the more doth magnify,
And even to her foes her mercies multiply.

xviii.

" Mongst many which maligne her happy state,
There is a mighty man, which wounes here by,

xiii. 9 *As that I did mistake the living for the ded.*
Prince Arthur wrongly thought the living Arthegall
instead of the person there dead, to be the Lady's foe
ΠΕΡΟΣ.

viii. 1. — mistooke ; I think it should be *o'erbooke*.
UPON.

That with most fell despight and deadly hate
 Seekes to subvert her crowne and dignity,
 And all his powre doth thereunto apply :
 And her good Knights, (of which so brave a band
 Serves her as any Princesse under sky,)
 He either spoiles, if they against him stand,
 Or to his part allures, and bribeth under hand.

xix.

"Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill,
 Which he unto her people does each day ;
 But that he seekes by trayterous traines to spill
 Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay :
 That, O ye Heavens, defend ! and turne away
 From her unto the miscreant himselfe ;
 That neither hath religion nor fay,
 But makes his God of his ungodly pelfe,
 And Idoles serves : so let his Idols serve the Elfe !

xx.

"To all which cruell tyranny, they say,
 He is provokt, and stird up day and night
 By his bad wife that light Adicia ;
 Who counsels him, through confidence of might,
 To breake all bonds of law and rules of right :
 For she herselfe professeth mortall foe
 To Iustice, and against her still doth fight,
 Working, to all that love her, deadly woe,
 And making all her Knights and people to doe so.

xxi.

"Which my liege Lady seeing, thought it best
 With that his wife in friendly wise to deale,
 For stint of strife and establistment of rest
 Both to herselfe and to her common-weale,
 And all forepast displeasures to repeale.
 So me in message unto her she sent,
 To treat with her, by way of enterdeale,
 Of finall peace and faire attonement
 Which might concluded be by mutuall consent.

xxii.

"All times have wont safe passage to afford
 To Messengers that come for causes iust :
 But this proude Dame, disdayning all accord,
 Not onely into bitter termes forth brust,
 Reviling me and rayling as she lust,
 But lastly, to make prooffe of utmost shame,
 Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust,
 Miscalling me by many a bitter name,
 That never did her ill, ne once deserved blame.

xxiii.

"And lastly, that no shame might wanting be,
 When I was gone, soone after me she sent
 These two false Knights, whom there ye lying see,
 To be by them dishonoured and shent :
 But, thank be God, and your good hardiment !
 They have the price of their owne folly payd."
 So said this Damzell, that hight Samient ;
 And to those Knights for their so noble ayd
 Herselfe most gratefull shew'd, and heaped thanks
 repayd.

xxiv.

But they now having throughly heard and seene
 All those great wrongs, the which that Mayd
 complained
 To have bene done against her Lady Queene
 By that proud Dame, which her so much disdained,
 Were moved much thereat, and twixt them fained
 With all their force to worke avengement strong
 Upon the Souldan selfe, which it mayntained,
 And on his Lady, th' author of that wrong,
 And upon all those Knights that did to her belong.

xxv.

But, thinking best by counterfet disguise
 To their desaigne to make the easier way,
 They did this complot twixt themselves devise :
 First, that Sir Artegall should him array
 Like one of those two Knights which dead there
 And then that Damzell, the sad Samient, [lay ;
 Should as his purchast prize with him convey
 Unto the Souldans court, her to present
 Unto his scornfull Lady that for her had sent.

xxvi.

So as they had deviz'd, Sir Artegall
 Him clad in th' armour of a Pagan Knight,
 And taking with him, as his vanquisht thrall,
 That Damzell, led her to the Souldans right :
 Where soone as his proud wife of her had sight,
 Forth of her window as she looking lay,
 She weened straight it was her Paynim Knighth,
 Which brought that Damzell as his purchast pray ;
 And sent to him a Page that mote direct his way :

xxvii.

Who, bringing them to their appointed place,
 Offred his service to disarme the Knight ;
 But he refusing him to let unlace,
 For doubt to be discovered by his sight,
 Kept himselfe still in his straunge armour dight :
 Soone after whom the Prince arrived there,
 And, sending to the Souldan in despight
 A bold defyanee, did of him requere
 That Damsell whom he held as wrongfull prisonere.

xxviii.

Wherewith the Souldan all with furie fraught,
 Swearing and banning most blasphemously,
 Commaunded straight his armour to be brought ;
 And, mounting straight upon a charret hie,
 (With yron wheelles and hookes arm'd dreadfully,
 And drawne of cruell steedes which he had fed
 With flesh of men, whom through fell tyranny
 He slaughtred had, and ere they were halfe ded
 Their bodies to his bestes for provender did spred ;)

xxix.

So forth he came all in a cote of plate
 Burnisht with bloudie rust ; whiles on the Greene
 The Briton Prince him readie did awayte
 In glistening armes right goodly well besene,
 That shone as bright as doth the heaven sheene ;
 And by his stirrup Talus did attend,

xxiv. 5. — fained] *Desired*. CHURCH.xxv. 3. — complot] *Fr. complot, a plot, combina'ion, or contrivance*. URTON.xxvi. 4. *right* :] That is, directly. CHURCH.xxvii. 3. *But he refusing him to let unlace,*] That is, to let him unlace his helmet. URTON.xix. 5. — defend !] *Forbid, keep off*. CHURCH.xix. 7. — fay,] *Faith, truth*. *Fr. foy, fay*. SPAN. fe. URTON.xxi. 7. — enterdeale] *Mediation; the dealing or transaction between two parties*. URTON.

Plying his Pages part, as he had beene
Before directed by his Lord ; to th' end
He should his flaine to final execution bend.

xxx.

Thus goe they both together to their geare
With like fierce minds, but meanings different :
For the proud Souldan, with presumptuous cheare
And countenance sublime and insolent,
Sought onely slaughter and avengement ;
But the brave Prince for honour and for right,
Gainst tortious powre and lawlesse regiment,
In the behalfe of wronged weake did fight :
More in his causes truth he trusted then in might.

xxxii.

Like to the Thracian tyrant, who they say
Unto his horses gave his guests for meat,
Till he himselfe was made their greedie pray,
And torne in peeces by Alcides great ;
So thought the Souldan, in his follies threat,
Either the Prince in peeces to have torne
With his sharpe wheelles in his first rages heat,
Or under his fierce horses feet have borne,
And trampled downe in dust his thoughts disdaind
scorne.

xxxiii.

But the bold Child that perill well espying,
If he too rashly to his charret drew,
Gave way unto his horses speedie flying,
And their resistlesse rigour did eschew :
Yet, as he passed by, the Pagan threw
A shivering dart with so impetuous force,
That, had he not it shunn'd with heedfull vew,
It had himselfe transfixed or his horse,
Or made them both one masse withouten more
remorse.

xxxiiii.

Oft drew the Prince unto his charret nigh,
In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare ;
But he was mounted in his seat so high,
And his wing-footed coursers him did beare
So fast away, that, ere his readie speare
He could advance, he farre was gone and past :
Yet still he him did follow every where,
And followed was of him likewise full fast,
So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did last.

xxxv.

Again the Pagan threw another dart,
Of which he had with him abundant store
On every side of his embatteld cart,
And of all other weapons lesse or more,
Which warlike uses had devis'd of yore :
The wicked shaft, gyuded through th' ayrie wyde
By some bad spirit that it to mischiefe bore,
Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde,
And made a griesly wound in his enrivn side.

xxxvi.

Much was he grieved with that haplesse throe,
That opened had the welspring of his blood ;
But much the more that to his hateful foe

xxx. 4. *And countenance sublime*] *Haughty*, in which sense both the Spanish and French writers sometimes employ *sublime*. Todd.

xxxiv. 6. — *ayrie wyde*] "*Ayrie wyde*" seems to be used for "*ayrie void*." T. WARTON.

He mote not come to wreake his wrathfull mood :
That made him rave, like to a lyon wood,
Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand
Cannot come neare him in the covert wood,
Where he with boughes hath built his shady stand,
And fenst himselfe about with many a flaming brand.

xxxvii.

Still when he sought t' approach unto him ny
His charret wheelles about him whirled round,
And made him backe againe as fast to fly ;
And eke his steedes, like to an hungry hound
That hunting after game hath carrion found,
So cruelly did him purswe and chace,
That his good steed, all were he much renownd
For noble courage and for hardie race,
Durst not endure their sight, but fled from place
to place.

xxxviii.

Thus long they trast and traverst to and fro,
Seeking by every way to make some breach ;
Yet could the Prince not nigh unto him goe,
That one sure stroke he might unto him reach,
Whereby his strengthes assay he might him teach :
At last, from his victorious shield he drew
The vaile, which did his powrefull light empeach ;
And comming full before his horses vew,
As they upon him prest, it plaine to them did shew.

xxxviiii.

Like lightning flash that hath the gazer burned,
So did the sight thereof their sense dismay,
That backe againe upon themselves they turned
And with their ryder ranne perforce away :
Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay
With raynes or wonted rule, as well he knew :
Nought feared they what he could do or say,
But th' onely feare that was before their vew ;
From which like mazed deere dismayfully they flew.

xxxix.

Fast did they fly as them there feete could beare
High over hilles, and lowly over dales,
As they were follow'd of their former feare :
In vaine the Pagan bannes, and swears, and rayles,
And baecte with both his hands unto him hayles
The resty raynes, regarded now no more :
He to them calles and speakes, yet nought avayles ;
They heare him not, they have forgot his lore ;
But go which way they list ; their guide they have
forlore.

xli.

As when the frie-mouthed steedes, which drew
The Sunnes bright wayne to Phaëtons decay,
Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew
With ugly craples crawling in their way,
The dreadful sight did them so sore affray,
That their well-knownen courses they forwent ;
And, leading th' ever burning lampe astray,
This lower world nigh all to ashes Brent,
And left their scorched path yet in the firmament.

xli.

Such was the furie of these head-strong steeds,
Soone as the Infants sunlike shield they saw,
That all obedience both to words and deeds
They quite forgot, and scorn'd all former law :

Through woods, and rocks, and mountaines they
did draw
The yron charet, and the wheeles did teare,
And tost the Paynim without feare or awe ;
Fron side to side they tost him here and there,
Crying to them in vaine that nould his crying heare.

XLII.

Yet still the Prince pursew'd him close behind,
Of making offer him to smite, but fonn'd
No easie meanes according to his miud :
At last they have all overthrowne to ground
Quite topside turvey, and the Pagan hound
Amongst the yron hookes and grapples keene
Torne all to rags, and rent with many a wound ;
That no whole peece of him was to be seene,
But scattered all about, and strow'd upon the
Greene.

XLIII.

Like as the cursed sonne of Theseus,
That following his chace in devy morne,
To fly his stepdames love outrageous,
Of his owne steedes was all to peeces torne,
And his faire limbs left in the woods forlorne ;
That for his sake Diana did lament, [mourne :
And all the woody nymphes did wayle and
So was this Souldain rapt and all to rent,
That of his shape appear'd no litle monument.

XLIV.

Onely his shield and armour, which there lay,
Though nothing whole, but all to brusd and
broken,
He up did take, and with him brought away,
That mote remaine for an eternall token
To all, mongst whom this storie should be spoken,
How worthily, by Heavens high decree,
Iustice that day of wrong herselfe had wroken ;
That all men, which that spectacle did see,
By like ensample mote for ever warned bee.

XLV.

So on a tree, before the Tyrants dore,
He caused them be hung in all mens sight,
To be a moniment for evermore.
Which when his Ladie from the Castles hight
Beheld, it much appald her troubled spright :
Yet not, as women wont, in dolefull fit
She was dismayd, or faynted through affright,
But gathered unto her her troubled wit,
And gan eftsoones devise to be aveng'd for it.

XLVI.

Streight downe she ranne, like an enraged cow
That is herobbed of her youngling dere,
With knife in hand, and fatally did vow
To wreake her on that mayden messengere,
Whom she had caused be kept as prisoner
By Artegal, misween'd for her owne Knight,
That brought her backe: and, comming present
there,
She at her ran with all her force and might,
All flaming with revenge and furious despight.

XLVII.

Like raging Ino, when with knife in hand
She threw her husbands murdred infant out ;
Or fell Medea, when on Colchicke strand

XLIV. 2. — all to brusd] i. e. entirely, as in the pre-
ceding stanza and many other places Todd.

Her brothers bones she scattered all about ;
Or as that madding mother, mongst the rout
Of Bacchus priests, her owne deare flesh did
Yet neither Ino, nor Medea stout, [teare :
Nor all the Mœnades so furious were,
As this bold woman when she saw that Damzell
there.

XLVIII.

But Artegal being thereof aware
Did stay her cruell hand ere she her raught ;
And, as she did herselfe to strike prepare,
Out of her fist the wicked weapon caught :
With that, like one enfelon'd or distraught,
She forth did rome whether her rage her bore,
With franticke passion and with furie fraught ;
And, breaking forth out at a posterne dore,
Unto the wilde wood ranne, her dolours to deplore :

XLIX.

As a mad bytch, whenas the franticke fit
Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath,
Doth runne at randon, and with furious bit
Snatching at every thing doth wreake her wrath
On man and beast that commeth in her path.
There they doe say that she transformed was
Into a tigre, and that tygres seath
In crueltie and outrage she did pas,
To prove her surname true, that she imposed has.

L.

Then Artegal, himselfe discovering plaine,
Did issue forth gainst all that warlike rout
Of Knights and armed men, which did maintaine
That Ladies part and to the Souldan lout :
All which he did assault with courage stout,
All were they nigh an hundred Knights of name,
And like wyld goates them chaced all about,
F'lyng from place to place with cowheard shame ;
So that with fuall force them all he overcame.

LI.

Then caused he the gates be opened wyde ;
And there the Prince, as victour of that day,
With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde,
Presenting him with all the rich array
And roiall pompe, which there long hidden lay,
Purchast through lawlesse powre and tortious
wrong
Of that proud Souldan, whom he earst did slay.
So both, for rest, there having stayd not long,
Marcht with that Mayd; fit matter for another Song.

CANTO IX.

Arthur and Artegal catch Gayle,
Whom Talus doth dismay :
They to Mercillaes Pallace come,
And see her rich array.

I.

WHAT tygre, or what other salvage wight,
Is so exceeding furious and fell
As Wrong, when it hath arm'd itselfe with might ?

XLVIII. 5. — enfelon'd] *Become fierce.* Old French.
enfelonni. CHURCH.

L. 4. — and to the Souldan lout :] And did bow down
and do homage to the Souldan. UPTON.

L. 9. — with finall force] That is, finally. CHURCH.

L. 6. *Purchast* &c.] That is, gotten through the oppres-
sive power of that proud Souldan, &c. CHURCH.

Not fit mongst men that doe with reason mell,
But mongst wyld beasts, and salvage woods, to
dwell ;

Where still the stronger doth the weake deuoure,
And they that most in boldnesse doe excell
Are dreaded most, and feared for their powre ;
Fit for Adicia there to build her wicked bowre.

ii.

There let her wonne, farre from resort of men,
Where righteous Artegall her late exyled ;
There let her ever keepe her damned den,
Where none may be with her lewd parts defyled,
Nor none but beasts may be of her despoyled :
And turne we to the noble Prince, where late
We did him leave, after that he had foyled
The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull fate
Had utterly subverted his unrighteous state.

iii.

Where having with Sir Artegall a space
Well solast in that Souldans late delight,
They both, resolving now to leave the place,
Both it and all the wealth therein behight
Unto that Damzell in her Ladies right,
And so would have departed on their way :
But she them woo'd, by all the meanes she might,
And earnestly besought to wend that day
With her, to see her Ladie thence not farre away.

iv.

By whose entreatie both they overcommen
Agree to goe with her ; and by the way,
As often falles, of sundry things did commen ;
Mongst which that Damzell did to them bewray
A strange adventure which not farre thence lay ;
To weet, a wicked Villaine, bold and stout,
Which wonned in a rocke not farre away,
That robbed all the countrie thereabout,
And brought the pillage home, whence none could
get it out.

v.

Thereto both his owne wylie wit, she sayd,
And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place,
Both unassaylable, gave him great ayde :
For he so crafty was to forge and face,
So light of hand, and nymble of his pace,
So smooth of tongue, and subtile in his tale,
That could deceive one looking in his face :
Therefore by name Malengin they him call,
Well knownen by his feates, and famous over all.

vi.

Through these his slights he many doth confound :
And eke the rocke, in which he wents to dwell,
Is wondrous strong and hewn farre under ground,
A dreadfull depth, how deepe no man can tell ;
But some doe say it goeth downe to hell :
And, all within, it full of wyndings is
And hidden wayes, that scarce an honnd by smell
Can follow out those false footsteps of his,
Ne none can backe returne that once are gone amis.

vii.

Which when those Knights had heard, their hearts
gan earne
To understand that Villeins dwelling place,

And greatly it desir'd of her to learne,
And by which way they towards it should trace.
" Were not," sayd she, " that it should let your
Towards my Ladies presence by you ment, [pace
I would you guye directly to the place."
" Then let not that," said they, " stay your intent ;
For neither will one foot, till we that Carle have hent."

viii.

So forth they past, till they approched ny
Unto the rocke where was the Villains won :
Which when the Damzell neare at hand did spy,
She warn'd the Knights thereof : who thereupon
Gan to advize what best were to be done.
So both agreed to send that Mayd afore,
Where she might sit nigh to the den alone,
Wayling, and raying pittifull upore,
As if she did some great calamitie deplore.

ix.

With noyse whereof whenas the caytive Carle
Should issue forth, in hope to find some spoyle,
They in awayt would closely him ensnarle,
Ere to his den he backward could recoyle ;
And so would hope him easily to foyle.
The Damzell straight went, as she was directed,
Unto the rocke ; and there, upon the soyle
Having herselfe in wretched wize abiected,
Gan weepe and wayle as if great griefe had her
affected.

x.

The cry whereof entring the hollow cave
Eftsoones brought forth the Villaine, as they ment,
With hope of her some wishfull boot to have
Full dreadfull wight he was as ever went
Upon the earth, with hollow eyes deepe pent,
And long curld locks that downe his shoulders
And on his backe an uncouth vestiment [shagged,
Made of straunge stuffe, but all to worne and
ragged,
And underneath his breech was all to torne and
iagged.

xi.

And in his hand a huge long staffe he held,
Whose top was arm'd with many an yron hooke,
Fit to catch hold of all that he could weld,
Or in the compasse of his clouches tooke ;
And ever round about he cast his looke :
Als at his backe a great wyde net he bore,
With which he seldom fished at the brooke,
But usd to fish for fooles on the dry shore,
Of which he in faire weather wont to take great
store.

xii.

Him when the Damzell saw fast by her side,
So ugly creature, she was nigh dismayd ;
And uow for helpe aloud in earnest cride :
But, when the Villaine saw her so affrayd,
He gan with guilefull words her to perswade
To banish feare ; and with Sardonian smyle
Laughing on her, his false intent to shade,
Gan forth to lay his bayte her to beguyle,
That from herself unwares he might her steale
the whyle.

xiii.

Like as the fouler on his guilefull pype
Charmes to the birds full many a pleasant lay,

iii. 4. — behight] Committed, or entrusted. TODD.
iv. 3. — commen:] Commune. UPRON.
v. 8. — Malengin] Ill Intent. TODD.

ix. 3. — ensnarle,] Entangle. UPRON.
x. 3. — boot] Booty. TODD.

That they the whiles may take lesse heedie keepe
How he his nets doth for their ruine lay :
So did the Villaine to her prate and play,
And many pleasant trickes before her show,
To turne her eyes from his intent away :
For he in slights and iugling feates did flow,
And of legiêrdemayne the mysteries did know.

xiv.

To which whilest she lent her intentive mind,
He suddenly his net upon her threw,
That oversprad her like a puffe of wind ;
And snatching her soone up, ere well she knew,
Ran with her fast away unto his mew,
Crying for helpe aloud : but whenas ny
He came unto his cave, and there did vew
The armed Knights stopping his passage by,
He threw his burden downe and fast away did fly.

xv.

But Artegeall him after did pursew ;
The whiles the Prince there kept the entrance
Up to the rocke he ran, and thereon flew [still :
Like a wyld gote, leaping from bill to hill,
And dauncing on the craggy cliffes at will ;
That deadly daunger seem'd in all mens sight
To tempt such steps, where footing was so ill :
Ne ought awayled for the armed Knight
To thinke to follow him that was so swift and light.

xvi.

Which when he saw, his Yron Man he sent
To follow him ; for he was swift in chace :
He him pursewed wherever that he went ;
Both over rockes, and hilles, and every place
Whereso he fled, he followd him apace :
So that he shortly forst him to forsake
The hight, and downe descend unto the base :
There he him courst afresh, and soone did make
To leave his proper forme, and other shape to take.

xvii.

Into a foxe himselfe he first did tourne ;
But he him hunted like a foxe full fast :
Then to a bush himselfe he did transforme ;
But he the bush did beat, till that at last
Into a bird it chaung'd, and from him past,
Flying from tree to tree, from wand to wand :
But he then stones at it so long did cast,
That like a stone it fell upon the land ;
But he then tooke it up, and held fast in his hand.

xviii.

So he it brought with him unto the Knights,
And to his Lord Sir Artegeall it lent,
Warning him hold it fast for feare of slights :
Who whilest in hand it gryping hard he hent,
Into a hedgehogge all unwares it went,
And prickt him so that he away it threw :
Then gan it runne away incontinent,
Being returned to his former hew ;
But Talus soone him overtooke, and backward drew.

xix.

But, whenas he would to a snake againe
Have turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle
Gan drive at him with so huge might and maine,

xiii. 9. — legiêrdemayne] *Slight of hand.* French.
TODD.

That all his bones as small as sandy graylo
He broke, and did his bowels disenrayle,
Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was past ;
So did decept the selfe-deceiver fayle :
There they him left a carrion outcast
For beasts and foules to feede upon for their repast.

xx.

Thence forth they passed with that gentle Mayd
To see her Ladie, as they did agree :
To which when she approched, thus she sayd ;
“ Loe now, right noble Knights, arriv'd ye bee
Nigh to the place which ye desir'd to see :
There shall ye see my soverayne Lady Queene,
Most sacred wight, most debonayre and free,
That ever yet upon this earth was scene,
Or that with diademe hath ever crowned beene.”

xxi.

The gentle Knights reioyced much to heare
The prayses of that Prince so manifold ;
And, passing litle further, commen were
Where they a stately Pallace did behold
Of pompous show, much more then she had told,
With many towres and tarras mounted hie,
And all their tops bright glistening with gold,
That seemed to out-shine the dimmed skye,
And with their brightnesse daz'd the straunge be-
holders eye.

xxii.

There they alighting, by that Damzell were
Directed in, and shewed all the sight ;
Whose porch, that most magnificke did appeare,
Stood open wyde to all men day and night
Yet warded well by one of mickle might
That sate thereby, with gyant-like resemblance,
To keepe out guyle, and malice, and despight,
That under shew oft-times of fayned semblance
Are wont in princes courts to worke great scath
and hindrance :

xxiii.

His name was Awe ; by whom they passing in
Went up the hall, that was a large wyde roome,
All full of people making troublous din
And wondrous noyse, as if that there were some
Which unto them was dealing righteous doome :
By whom they passing through the thickest
presse,
The Marshall of the hall to them did come,
Hisnamehight Order ; who, commaunding peace,
Them gyuded through the throng, that did their
clamors ceasse.

xxiv.

They ceast their clamors upon them to gaze ;
Whom seeing all in armour bright as day,
Strange there to see, it did them much amaze,
And with unwonted terror halfe affray :
For never saw they there the like array ;
Ne ever was the name of warre there spoken,
But ioyous peace and quietnesse alway
Dealing iust iudgments, that mote not be broken
For any brybes, or threats of any to be wroken.

xix. 7. — the selfe-deceiver] That is, the deceiver
himself. CHURCH.

xxi. 4. — a stately pallace] The palace of Queen
Elizabeth. UPTON.

xxi. 9. — the straunge beholders eye.] The eyes of
strangers that behold it. CHURCH.

xxv.

There, as they entred at the seriene, they saw
 Someone, whose tongue was for his trespasse vyle
 Nayd to a post, adindged so by law ;
 For that therewith he falsly did revyle [guyle,
 And foule blaspheme that Queene for forged
 Both with bold speaches which he blazed had,
 And with lewd poems which he did compyle ;
 For the bold title of a poet bad
 He on himselfe had ta'en, and rayling rymes had
 sprad.

xxvi.

Thus there he stood, whylest high over his head
 There written was the purport of his sin,
 In cyphers strange, that few could rightly read,
Bon Font ; but *Bon*, that once had written bin,
 Was raced out, and *Mal* was now put in :
 So now *Malfont* was plainly to be red ;
 Eyther for th' evill which he did therein,
 Or that he likened was to a welhed
 Of evill words, and wicked sclaunder by him shed.

xxvii.

They, passing by, were gnyded by degree
 Unto the presence of that gracious Queene ;
 Who sate on high, that she might all men see
 And might of all men royally be scene,
 Upon a throne of gold full bright and sheene,
 Adorned all with gemmes of endlesse price,
 As either might for wealth have gotten beene,
 Or could be fram'd by workmans rare device ;
 And all embost with lyons and with flourdelice.

xxviii.

All over her a cloth of state was spred,
 Not of rich tisew, nor of cloth of gold,
 Nor of ought else that may be richest red,
 But like a cloud, as likest may be told,
 That her brode-spreading wings did wyde unfold ;
 Whose skirts were bordred with bright sunny
 beames,
 Glistring like gold amongst the plights enrold,
 And here and there shooting forth silver streames,
 Mongst which crept litle angels through the glitter-
 ing gleames.

xxix.

Seemed those litle angels did uphold
 The cloth of state, and on their purpled wings
 Did beare the pendants through their numblesse
 bold ;
 Besides, a thousand more of such as sings
 Hymns to high God, and carols heavenly things,
 Encompassed the throne on which she sate ;
 She, angel-like, the heyre of ancient Kings
 And mightie conquerors, in royall state ;
 Whylest Kings and Kesars at her feet did them
 prostrate.

xxx.

Thus she did sit in soverayne maiestie,
 Holding a scepter in her royall hand,
 The sacred pledge of peace and clemencie,
 With which High God had blest her happie land,
 Mangre so many foes which did withstand :
 Bnt at her feet her sword was likewise layde,

xxv. 1. — the seriene] The *screen*, or *entrance into the hall*, was a familiar term in Spenser's age. It is still to be seen before the halls of ancient houses. T. WARTON.

Whose long rest rusted the bright steely brand ;
 Yet whenas foes enforst, or friends sought ayde,
 She could it sternly draw, that all the world dis-
 mayde.

xxxi.

And round about before her feet there sate
 A bevie of faire Virgins clad in white,
 That goodly seem'd i' adorne her royall state ;
 All lovely daughters of high Love, that high
 Litae, by him begot in loves delight
 Upon the righteous Themis ; those they say
 Upon Ioves iudgment-seat wayt day and night ;
 And, when in wrath he threatens the worlds decay,
 They doe his anger calme and cruell vengeance
 stay.

xxxii.

They also doe, by his divine permissioun,
 Upon the thrones of mortall Princes tend,
 And often treat for pardon and remission
 To suppliants, through frailtye which offend :
 Those did upon Mercillaes throne attend,
 Iust Dice, wise Ennomie, myld Eirene ;
 And them amongst, her glorie to commend,
 Sate goodly Temperance in garments clene,
 And sacred Reverence yborne of heavenly strene.

xxxiii.

Thus did she sit in royall rich estate,
 Admir'd of many, honoured of all ;
 Whylest underneath her feete, there as she sate,
 An huge great lyon lay, (that mote appall
 An hardie courage,) like captived thrall
 With a strong yron chaine and coller bound,
 That once he could not move, nor quich at all ;
 Yet did he murmur with rebellious sound,
 And softly royne, when salvage choler gan redound.

xxxiv.

So sitting high in dreaded soverayntie,
 Those two strange Knights were to her presence
 Who, bowing low before her Maiestie, [brought ;
 Did to her myld obeysance, as they ought,
 And meekest boone that they imagine mought :
 To whom she eke inclyning her withall,
 As a faire stoupe of her high-soaring thought,
 A chearefull countenance on them let fall,
 Yet tempred with some maiestie imperiall.

xxxv.

As the bright sunne, what time his fierie teme
 Towards the westerne brim begins to draw,
 Gins to abate the brightnesse of his beme,
 And fervour of his flames somewhat adaw ;
 So did this mightie Ladie, when she saw
 Those two strange Knights such homage to her
 Bate somewhat of that maiestie and awe [make,
 That whylome wont to doe so many quake,
 And with more myld aspect those two to entertake.

xxxii. 9. — strene.] *Descent*, race. CHURCH.
 xxxiii. 7. — quich] *Str.* Anglo-Sax. *cucien*, to
 quicken. UPTON.
 xxxiii. 9. — royne,] *Groul.* Fr. *rogonner*. UPTON.
 xxxv. 2. — brim] *Brim* is often used for *margin* or
 bank of a stream by our author, and the old poets. T.
 WARTON.

xxxv. 4. — adaw:] Spenser repeatedly uses this
 word in the sense of *daunt* or *overawe* ; and here he might
 intend it, in the kindred sense of *keep in subjection*. T. W.
 xxxv. 9. — entertake.] *Entertain*, receive. CHURCH.

xxxvi.

Now at that instant, as occasion fell,
When these two stranger Knights arriv'd in
She was about affaires of common-wele, [place,
Dealing of iustice with indifferent grace,
And hearing pleas of people mean and base :
Mongst which, as then, there was for to be heard
The Tryall of a great and weightie case,
Which on both sides was then debating hard :
But, at the sight of these, those were awhile debar'd.

xxxvii.

But, after all her princely entertayne,
To th' hearing of that former cause in hand
Herselfe eftsouones she gan convert againe ;
Which that those Knights likewise mote under-
And witnesseth forth aright in forrain land, [stand,
Taking them up unto her stately throne, [scand
Where they mote heare the matter throughly
On either part, she placed th' one on th' one,
Th' other on th' other side, and neare them one.

xxxviii.

Then was there brought, as Prisoner to the barre,
A Ladie of great countenance and place,
But that she it with foule abuse did marre ;
Yet did appeare rare beautie in her face,
But blotted with condition vile and base,
That all her other honour did obscure,
And titles of nobilitie deface :
Yet, in that wretched semblant, she did sure
The peoples great compassion unto her allure.

xxxix.

Then up arose a person of deepe reach,
And rare in-sight, hard matters to revele ;
That well could charme his tongue, and time his
To all assayes ; his name was called Zele : [speach
He gan that Ladie strongly to appele
Of many haynous crymes by her enured ;
And with sharp reasons rang her such a pele,
That those, whom she to pitie had allured,
He now t' abhorre and loath her person had pro-
cured.

xl.

First gan he tell how this, that seem'd so faire
And royally aray'd, Duessa hight ;
That false Duessa, which had wrought great care
And mickle mischief unto many a Knight
By her beguyled and confounded quight :
But not for those she now in question came,
Though also those mote question'd be aright,
But for vylde treasons and outrageous shame,
Which she against the dred Mercilla oft did frame.

xli.

For she whylome (as ye mote yet right well
Remember) had her counsels false conspyred
With faithlesse Blandamour and Paridell,
(Both two her paramours, both by her hyred,
And both with hope of shadowes vaine inspyred),
And with them practis'd, how for to deprive

xxxvi. 4. — with indifferent grace,] With impartial
favour. CHURCH.

xxxvii. 1. — entertayne,] Entertainment. CHURCH.

xxxix. 5. — appele, Accuse. TOUD.

xxxix. 6. — enured ;] Committed, used. T. WARTON.

xl. 2. — Duessa hight,] Was called Duessa.
CHURCH.

Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred,
That she might it unto herselfe deryve,
And tryumph in their blood whom she to death
did dryve.

xliv.

But through high heavens grace, which favour not
The wicked driftes of kingdomes tide clymes !
Gainst loiall Princes, all this cursed plot
Ere prooffe it tooke discovered was betymes,
And th' actours won the mcede meet for their
crymes :

Such be the meede of all that by such meane
Unto the type of kingdomes tide clymes !
But false Duessa, now untitled Queene,
Was brought to her sad doome, as here was to be
seene.

xlv.

Strongly did Zele her haynous fact enforce,
And many other crimes of foule defame
Against her brought, to banish all remorse,
And aggravate the horror of her blame :
And with him, to make part against her, came
Many grave persons that against her pled.
First was a sage old syre, that had to name
The Kingdomes Care, with a white silver hed,
That many high regards and reasons gainst her red.

xlvi.

Then gan Authority her to oppose
With peremptorie powre, that made all mute ;
And then the Law of Nations gainst her rose,
And reasons brought, that no man could refute ;
Next gan Religion gainst her to impute
High Gods behest, and powre of holy lawes ;
Then gan the peoples cry and commons sute
Importune care of their owne publicke cause ;
And lastly Iustice charged her with breach of lawes.

xlvii.

But then, for her, on the contrarie part,
Rose many advocates for her to plead :
First there came Pittie with full tender hart,
And with her ioyn'd Regard of Womanhead ;
And then came Daunger threatning hidden dread
And high alliance unto forren powre ;
Then came Nobilitie of birth, that bread [stowre ;
Great ruth through her misfortunes tragicke
Aud lastly Griefe did plead, and many teares forth
powre.

xlviii.

With the neare touch whereof in tender hart
The Briton Prince was sore passionate,
And woxe inclined much unto her part,
Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate,
And wretched ruine of so high estate ;
That for great ruth his courage gan relent :
Which whenas Zele perceived to abate,
He gan his earnest fervour to augment,
And many fearefull obiects to them to present.

xlix.

He gan t' efforce the evidence anew,
And new accusements to produce in place :
He brought forth that old Hag of hellish hew,
The cursed Atè, brought her face to face,
Who privie was and partie in the case :
She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay,

xliv. 8. Importune] Earnestly solicit. CHURCH.

Did her appeach; and, to her more disgrace,
The plot of all her practise did display,
And all her traynes and all her treasons forth did
lay.

XLVIII.

Then brought he forth with griesly grim aspect
Abhorred Murder, who with bloudie knyfe
Yet dropping fresh in hand did her detect,
And there with guiltie bloudshed charged ryfe:
Then brought he forth Seditiō, breeding stryfe
In troublous wits and mutinous upore:
Then brought he forth Incontinence of lyfe,
Even foule Adulterie her face before,
And lewd Impietie, that her accused sore.

XLIX.

All which whenas the Prince had heard and seene,
His former fancies ruth he gan repent,
And from her partie eftsometimes was drawn cleene:
But Artegall, with constant firme intent
For zeale of Iustice, was against her bent:
So was she guiltie deemed of them all.
Then Zele began to urge her punishment,
And to their Queene for iudgement loudly call,
Unto Mercilla myld, for Iustice gainst the thrall.

L.

But she, whose princely breast was touched neare
With piteous ruth of her so wretched plight,
Though plaine she saw, by all that she did heare,
That she of death was guiltie found by right,
Yet would not let iust vengeance on her light;
But rather let, instead thereof, to fall
Few perling drops from her laire lampes of light;
The which she covering with her purple pall
Would have the passion hid, and up arose withall.

CANTO X.

Prince Arthur takes the enterprize,
F r Belgee for to fight:
Gerioncos Seneschall
He stayes in Belges right.

I.

SOME clarkes doe doubt in their devicefull art
Whether this heavenly thing whereof I treat,
To weeten Mercie, be of Justice part,
Or drawne forth from her by divine extreate:
This well I wote, that sure she is as great,
And meriteth to have as high a place,
Sith in th' Almightyes everlasting seat
She first was bred, and borne of heavenly race;
From thence pour'd down on men by influence of
grace.

II.

For if that Vertue be of so great might
Which from iust verdict will for nothing start,
But, to preserve inviolated right,
Oft spilles the principall to save the part;
So much more then is that of powre and art
That seekes to save the subiect of her skill,
Yet never doth from doome of right depart;

XLVII. 7. — appeach;] *Impeach*, accuse, censure.
Fr. *empucher*. URTON.

1. 4. *Or drawne forth from her by divine extreate:*] By
divine extraction; as derived from Justice originally, and
a part of her. URTON.

As it is greater prayse to save then spill,
And better to reforme then to cut off the ill.

III.

Who then can thee, Mercilla, throughly prayse,
That herein doest all earthly Princes pas?
What heavenly Muse shall thy great honour rayse
Up to the skies, whence first deriv'd it was,
And now on earth itselfe enlarged has,
From th' utmost brinke of the Armericke shore,
Unto the margent of the Molucas?
Those nations farre thy Justice doe adore;
But thine owne people do thy Mercy prayse much
more.

IV.

Much more it prayed was of those two Knights,
The noble Prince and righteous Artegall,
When they had seene and heard her doome arights
Against Duessa, damned by them all;
But by her tempred without grieffe or gall,
Till strong constraint did her thereto enforce:
And yet even then ruing her wilfull fall
With more then needfull naturall remorse,
And yeelding the last honour to her wretched corse.

V.

During all which, those Knights continu'd there
Both doing and receiving curtisies
Of that great Ladie, who with goodly chere
Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities,
Approving dayly to their noble eyes
Royall examples of her mercies rare
And wortheie paterns of her clemencies;
Which till this day amongst many living are,
Who them to their posterities doe still declare.

VI.

Amongst the rest, which in that space befell,
There came two Springals of full tender yeares,
Farre thence from forrein land where they did
dwell,
To seeke for succour of her and her Peares,
With humble prayers and intreatfull teares;
Sent by their Mother who, a Widow, was
Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares
By a strong Tyrant, who invaded has
Her land, and slaine her children rucfully, alas!

VII.

Her name was Belgè; who in former age
A Ladie of great worth and wealth had bene,
And Mother of a frutefull heritage, [scenee
Even seventene goodly Sonnes; which who had
In their first flowre, before this fatal teene
Them overtooke and their faire blossomes blasted,
More happie Mother would her surely weene
Then famous Niobe, before she tasted
Latonaes childrens wrath that all her issue wasted.

VIII.

But this fell Tyrant, through his tortious powre,
Had left her now but five of all that brood:

iv. 3. — *her doome arights*] That is, the sentence
which she rightly pronounced. CHUNCH.

iv. 4. — *damned*] *Condemned*. CHUNCH.

vi. 2. — *Springals*] *Young men*. URTON.

vi. 7. *Wrapt*] *Entangled*, encumbered. Lat. *implicare*,
intricare. CHUNCH.

vi. 8 *By a strong Tyrant,*] Philip king of Spain. URTON.

vi. 4. *Even seventene goodly sonnes;*] The seventeen
provinces of the Netherlands. URTON.

For twelve of them he did by times deuoure,
 And to his Idols sacrifice their blood,
 Whylest he of none was stopped nor withstood :
 For soothly he was one of matchlesse might,
 Of horrible aspect and dreadfull mood,
 And had three bodies in one wast empight,
 And th' armes and legs of three to succour him in
 fight.

IX.

And sooth they say that he was borne and bred
 Of Gyants race, the sonne of Geryon ;
 He that whylome in Spaine so sore was dred
 For his huge powre and great oppression,
 Which brought that land to his subiection,
 Through his three bodies powre in one com-
 And eke all strangers, in that region [byn'd ;
 Arryving, to his kyne for food assynd ;
 The fayrest kyne alive, but of the fiercest kynd :

X.

For they were all, they say, of purple hew,
 Kept by a cowheard, hight Eurytion,
 A cruell carle, the which all strangers slew,
 Ne day nor night did sleepe t' attend them on,
 But walkt about them ever and anone
 With his two-headed dogge that Orthrus hight ;
 Orthus begotten by great Typhaon
 And foule Echidna in the house of Night :
 But Hercules them all did overcome in fight.

XI.

His sonne was this Geryoneo hight ;
 Who, after that his monstrous father fell
 Under Alcides club, streight tooke his flight
 From that sad land, where he his syre did quell,
 And came to this, where Belge then did dwell
 And flourish in all wealth and happinesse,
 Being then new made Widow, as befell,
 After her noble Husbands late decesse ;
 Which gave beginning to her woe and wretchednesse.

XII.

Then this bold Tyrant, of her widowed
 Taking advantage and her yet fresh woes,
 Himselfe and service to her offered,
 Her to defend against all forrein foes
 That should their powre against her right oppose :
 Whereof she glad, now needing strong defence,
 Him entertayn'd and did her Champion chose ;
 Which long he usd with carefull diligence,
 The better to confirme her fearlesse confidence.

XIII.

By meanes whereof she did at last commit
 All to his hands, and gave him souveraine powre
 To doe whatever he thought good or fit :
 Which having got, he gan forth from that howre
 To stirre up strife and many a tragicke stowre ;
 Giving her dearest children one by one
 Unto a dreadfull Monster to deuoure,
 And setting up an Idole of his owne,
 The image of his monstrous parent Geryone.

xi. 1. — *this*] This Tyrant. See st. 8. CHURCH.xi. 7. *Brony then new made Widow*] *New*, that is, *newly*, lately. CHURCH.xi. 8. — *decesse* ;] *Deccesse*, Lat. *decessus*. TODD.xiii. 7. *Unto a dreadfull Monster*] Meaning the papistical religion inforced by persecution ; particularly the Inquisition, which the Duke of Alva set up in the Netherlands. UPTON.

xiv.

So tyrannizing and oppressing all,
 The woefull Widow had no meanes now left,
 But unto grations great Mercilla call
 For ayde against that cruell Tyrants theft,
 Ere all her children he from her had left :
 Therefore these two, her eldest Sonnes, she sent
 To seeke for succour of this Ladies gift :
 To whom their sute they humbly did present
 In th' hearing of full many Knights and Ladies gent.

xv.

Amongst the which then fortun'd to bee
 The noble Briton Prince with his brave peare ;
 Who when he none of all those Knights did see
 Hastily bent that enterprise to heare,
 Nor undertake the same for cowheard feare,
 He stepped forth with courage hold and great,
 Admyr'd of all the rest in presence there,
 And humbly gan that mightie Queene entreat
 To graunt him that adventure for his former feat.

xvi.

She gladly graunted it : then he straightway
 Himselfe unto his journey gan prepare,
 And all his armour readie dight that day,
 That nought the morrow next mote stay his fare.
 The morrow next appear'd with purple hayre
 Yet dropping fresh out of the Indian fount,
 And bringing light into the heavens fayre,
 When he was readie to his steede to mount
 Unto his way, which now was all his care and count.

xvii.

Then taking humble leave of that great Queene,
 Who gave him roiall giftes and riches rare,
 As tokens of her thankefull mind beseeue,
 And leaving Artegal to his owne care,
 Upon his voyage forth he gan to fare
 With those two gentle Youthes, which him did
 And all his way before him still prepare : [guide
 Ne after him did Artegal abide,
 But on his first adventure forward forth did ride.

xviii.

It was not long till that the Prince arrived
 Within the land where dwelt that Ladie sad ;
 Whereof that Tyrant had her now deprived,
 And into moores and marshes banisht had,
 Out of the pleasant soyle and citties glad,
 In which she wont to harbour happily :
 But now his ernely so sore she drad,
 That to those femes for fastnesse she did fly,
 And there herselfe did hyde from his hard tyranny.

xix.

There he her found in sorrow and dismay,
 All solitarie without living wight ;
 For all her other children, through affray,
 Had hid themselves, or taken further fight :
 And eke herselfe through sudden strange affright,
 When one in armes she saw, began to fly ;
 But, when her owne two Sonnes she had in sight,

xv. 5. — *cowheard*] That is, *coward*, according to the old orthography. TODD.xv. 9. — *for his former feat.*] That is, for his first adventure ; as the first favour he had asked. CHURCH.xviii. 8. — *fastnesse*] *Fastness* is a *strong hold*, of a place not to be come at for bogs, bushes, &c. CHURCH.

She gan take hart and looke up ioyfully ;
For well she wist this Knight came succour to supply.

xx.

And, running unto them with greedy ioyes,
Fell straight about their neckes as they did kneele,
And bursting forth in teares ; " Ah ! my sweet
boyes,"
Sayd she, " yet now I gin new life to feele ;
And feeble spirits, that gan faint and reele,
Now rise againe at this your ioyous sight.
Alreadie seemes that fortunes headlong wheele
Begins to turne, and sunne to shine more bright
Then it was wont, through comfort of this noble
Knight."

xxi.

Then turning unto him ; " And you, Sir Knight,"
Said she, " that taken have this toylesome paine
For wretched woman, miserable wight,
May you in heaven immortal guerdon gaine
For so great travell as you doe sustaine !
For other meede may hope for none of mee,
To whom nought else but bare life doth remaine ;
And that so wretched one, as ye do see
Is liker lingring death then loathed life to bee."

xxii.

Much was he moved with her piteous plight ;
And low dismantling from his loftie steede
Gan to recomfort her all that he might,
Seeking to drive away deepe-rooted dreede
With hope of helpe in that her greatest neede.
So thence he wished her with him to wend
Unto some place where they mote rest and feede,
And she take comfort which God now did send :
Good hart in evils doth the evils much amend.

xxiii.

" Ay me ! " said she, " and whither shall I goe ?
Are not all places full of forraine powres ?
My pallaces possessed of my foe,
My cities sackt, and their sky-threatening towres
Raced and made smoothfields now full of flowres ?
Onely these marishes and myrie bogs, [bowres,
In which the fearefull ewfies do build their
Yield me an hostry mongst the croking frogs,
And harbour here in safety from those ravenous
dogs."

xxiv.

" Nathlesse," said he, " deare Ladie, with me goe ;
Some place shall us receive and harbour yield ;
If not, we will it force, maugre your foe,
And purchase it to us with speare and shield :
And if all fayle, yet farewell open field !
The Earth to all her creatures lodging lends."
With such his chearefull speeches he doth wield
Her mind so well, that to his will she bends ;
And, bynding up her locks and weeds, forth with
him wends.

xxi. 6. *For other meede &c.* The construction is, For none may hope for other meede of me. CHURCH.

xxiii. 7. ——— fearefull ewfies] *Everts or efts ; fearefull, that occasion fear.* CHURCH.

xxiii. 8. ——— an hostry] *Lodging.* In Chaucer we have *hosteltrie for an inn or lodging-house.* TODD.

xxiv. 5. ——— yet farewell open field!] I believe that Spenser wrote *well fare*, that is well befall or happen. UPTON.

xxv.

They came unto a Citie farre up land,
The which whylome that Ladies owne had bene ;
But now by force extort out of her hand
By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene
Her stately towres and buildings sumy sheene,
Shut up her haven, mard her marchants trade,
Robbed her people that full rich had bene,
And in her necke a Castle huge had made,
The which did her commaund without needing per-
swade.

xxvi.

That Castle was the strength of all that State,
Untill that State by strength was pulled downe ;
And that same Citie, so now ruinate,
Had bene the keye of all that Kingdomes crowne ;
Both goodly Castle, and both goodly Towne,
Till that th' offended heavens list to lowre
Upon their blisse, and balefull fortune frowne.
When those gainst states and kingdomes do
coniure,
Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine to recure !

xxvii.

But he had brought it now in servile bond,
And made it beare the yoke of Inquisition,
Straying long time in vaine it to withstand ;
Yet glad at last to make most base submission,
And life enjoy for any composition :
So now he hath new lawes and orders new
Imposd on it with many a hard condition,
And forced it, the honour that is dew,
To God, to doe unto his Idole most untrew.

xxviii.

To him he hath before this Castle Greene
Built a faire chappell, and an altar framed
Of costly ivory full rich besene,
On which that cursed Idole, farre proclaimed,
He hath set up, and him his god hath named ;
Offering to him in sinful sacrifice
The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse framed,
And powring forth their blood in brutishe wize,
That any yron eyes, to see, it would agrize.

xxix.

And, for more horror and more crueltie,
Under that cursed Idols altar-stone
An hideous Monster doth in darknesse lie,
Whose dreadfull shape was never seene of none
That lives on earth ; but unto those alone
The which unto him sacrificed bee :
Those he devoures, they say, both flesh and bone
What else they have is all the Tyrants fee :
So that no whit of them remaying one may see.

xxx.

There eke he placed a strong garrison,
And set a Seneschall of dreaded might,

xxv. 3. ——— extort] *For extorted.* CHURCH.
xxv. 9. ——— without needing persuade.] Without the necessity of persuasion ; by force and violence. UPTON.

xxvi. 3. ——— ruinate,] *Brought to ruin, overthrown Ital. ruinare, ruinato.* UPTON.

xxvi. 8. ——— coniure,] *Conspire.* Lat. *conjura* CHURCH.

xxviii. 1. ——— this Castle Greene,] The green court before this Castle. CHURCH.

xxx. 2. ——— a Seneschall of dreaded might,] Meaning the Regent of the Netherlands, set up by Philip, King of Spain. The cruellest of all was the Duke of Alva. UPTON

That by his powre oppressed every one,
And vanquished all venturous Knights in fight;
To whom he wout shew all the shame he might,
After that them in battell he had wonne:
To which when now they gan approach in sight,
The Ladie counsell'd him the place to shonne,
Whereas so many Knights had fouly bene fordonne.

xxxI.

Her fearefull speaches nought he did regard;
But, ryding straight under the Castle wall,
Called aloud unto the watchfull Ward
Which there did wayte, willing them forth to call
Into the field their Tyrants Seneschall:
To whom when tydings thereof came, he straight
Cals for his armes, and arming him withall
Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his might,
And gan with courage fierce addresse him to the
fight.

xxxII.

They both encounter in the middle plaine,
And their sharpe speares doe both together smite
Amid their shields with so huge might and maine,
That seem'd their soules they would have ryven
quight
Out of their breasts with furious despight:
Yet could the Seneschals no entrance find
Into the Princes shield where it empight,
(So pure the metall was and well refynd,)
But shivered all about, and scattered in the wynd:

xxxIII.

Not so the Princes; but with restlesse force
Into his shield it readie passage found,
Both through his habericion and eke his corse;
Which tumbling downe upon the senselesse ground
Gave leave unto his ghost from thraldome bound
To wander in the griesly shades of night:
There did the Prince him leave in deadly wound,
And thence unto the Castle marched right,
To see if entrance there as yet obtaine he might.

xxxIV.

But, as he higher drew, three Knights he spyde,
All arm'd to point issuing forth apace,
Which towards him with all their powre did ryde,
And meeting him right in the middle race
Did all their speares attonce on him enchace.
As three great culverings for batterie bent,
And leveld all against one certaine place,
Doe all attonce their thunders rage forthrent,
That makes the wals to stagger with astonishment:

xxxV.

So all attonce they on the Prince did thunder;
Who from his saddle swarved nought asyde,
Ne to their force gave way, that was great wonder;

xxxII. 4. — ryven] *Torn, plucked.* CHURCH.xxxIII. 1. — restlesse] Here used either for *unceasing* or *restless.* CHURCH.xxxIII. 4. — upon the senselesse ground] It should rather be "tumbling *senselesse* downe." We have the same metaphorical form again, F. Q. vi. vii. 26."But as he lay upon the *humbled* grass:"Where *humbled* should be made to agree with *he* rather than with *grass.* T. WARTON.xxxIV. 6. — culverings] *Culverins, Fr. coulevrine,* a piece of ordnance so called. CHURCH.xxxV. 2. — swarved] *Moved out of his place.* Belg. *suerven* vagari, errare. UPRON.

But like a bulwarke firmly did abyde,
Rebutting him, which in the midst did ryde,
With so huge rigour, that his mortall speare
Past through his shield and pierst through either
syde;
That downe he fell uppon his mother deare,
And powred forth his wretched life in deadly dreare.

xxxVI.

Whom when his other fellowes saw, they fled
As fast as feete could carry them away;
And after them the Prince as swiftly sped,
To be aveng'd of their unknighly play.
There, whilst they entring th' one did th' other
The hindmost in the gate he overhent, [stay,
And, as he pressed in, him there did slay:
His carkasse tumbling on the threshold sent
His groning soule unto her place of punishment.

xxxVII.

The other which was entred laboured fast
To sperre the gate; but that same lumpe of clay,
Whose grudging ghost was thereout fled and past,
Right in the midst of the threshold lay,
That it the posterne did from closing stay:
The whiles the Priuce hard preased in betweene,
And entranee wonne; straight th' other fled away,
And ran into the hall, where he did weene
Himselfe to save; but he there slew him at the
skreene.

xxxVIII.

Then all the rest which in that Castle were,
Seeing that sad ensample them before,
Durst not abide, but fled away for feare,
And them conveyd out at a posterne dore.
Long sought the Prince; but, when he found
no more
T' oppose against his powre, he forth issued
Unto that Lady, where he her had lore, [vewed,
And her gau cheare with what she there had
And, what she had not seene within, unto her
shewed:

xxxIX.

Who with right humble thanks him goodly greeting
For so great provesse as he there had proved,
Much greater then was ever in her weeting,
With great admiraunce inwardly was moved,
And honourd him with all that her behoved.
Thenceforth into that Castle he her led
With her two Sommes right deare of her beloved;
Where all that night themselves they cherished,
And from her balefull minde all care he banished.

CANTO XI.

Prince Arthure overcomes the great
Gerionce in fight:
Doth slay the Monster, and restore
Belgè unto her right.

I.

It often fals, in course of common life,
That right long time is overborne of wrong
Through avarice, or powre, or guile, or strife,
That weakens her, and makes her party strong:

xxxVII. 2. — sperre] *Fasten, shut, &c.* TODD.xxxVIII. 7. — love.] *Lol, lost.* UPRON.

But Justice, though her dome she doe prolong,
Yet at the last she will her owne cause right :
As by sad Belgè seemes ; whose wrongs though
She suffred, yet at length she did requight [long
And sent redresse thereof by this brave Briton
Knight.

ii.

Whereof when newes was to that Tyrant brought,
How that the Lady Belgè now had found
A Champion, that had with his Champion fought,
And laid his Seneschall low on the ground,
And eke himselve did threaten to confound ;
He gan to burne in rage, and friese in feare,
Doubting sad end of principle unsound :
Yet, sith he heard but one that did appeare,
He did himselve encourage and take better cheare.

iii.

Nathelesse himselve he armed all in hast,
And forth he far'd with all his many bad,
Ne stayed step, till that he came at last
Unto the Castle which they conquerd had :
There with huge terror, to be more ydrad,
He sternely marcht before the Castle gate,
And, with bold vannts and ydle threatning, bad
Deliver him his owne, ere yet too late,
To which they had no right, nor any wrongefull
state.

iv.

The Prince staid not his aunswere to devise,
But opening streight the sparre forth to him came,
Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize ;
And asked him, if that he were the same,
Who all that wrong unto that wofull Dame
So long had done, and from her native land
Exiled her, that all the world spake shame.
He boldly aunswerd him, He there did stand
That would his doings instifie with his owne hand.

v.

With that so furiously at him he flew,
As if he would have over-run him streight ;
And with his huge great yron axe gan hew
So hideously upon his armour bright,
As he to peeces would have chopt it quight ;
That the bold Prince was forced foote to give
To his first rage, and yeeld to his despight ;
The whilest at him so dreadfully he drive,
That seem'd a marblerocke asunder could have rive.

vi.

Thereto a great advantage eke he has
Through his three double hands thrise mltiplyde ;
Besides the double strength which in them was :
For stil, when fit occasion did betyde,
He could his weapon shift from side to syde,
From hand to hand ; and with such nimblesse
Could wield about, that, ere it were espide, [sly

ii. 7. *Doubting sad end of principle unsound :*] *Fearing sad end of bat beginning.* Lat. *principium.* CHURCH.

iii. 2. — his many bad,] His wicked company. CHURCH.

v. 8. — so dreadfully he drive,] Mr. Upton says that Spenser here uses *drive* for *drives* ; but I rather agree with Mr. Church who interprets it *drive* or *drave*. TODD.

v. 9. *That seem'd a marblerocke asunder could have rive.*] *Rive* is used for *riven*. And this line, as Mr. Warton has observed, undoubtedly presents examples of ellipsis, as if it before seem'd, and of *he before could* ; to which I may add as if before a marble &c. TODD.

The wicked stroke did wound his enemy
Behinde, beside, before, as he it list apply.

vii.

Which uncouth use whenas the Prince perceived,
He gan to watch the wielding of his hand,
Least by such slight he were unwares deceived ;
And ever, ere he saw the stroke to land,
He would it meete and warily withstand.
One time when he his weapon fayned to shift,
As he was wont, and chang'd from hand to hand,
He met him with a counter-stroke so swift,
That quite smit off his arme as he it up did lift.

viii.

Therewith all fraught with fury and disdain
He brayd aloud for very fell despight ;
And sodainely, t'avenge himselve againe
Gan into one assemble all the might
Of all his hands, and heaved them on hight,
Thinking to pay him with that one for all :
But the sad steele seizd not, where it was hight,
Uppon the Childe, but somewhat short did fall,
And lighting on his horses head him quite did mall.

ix.

Downe streight to ground fell his astonisht steed,
And eke to th' earth his burden with him bare ;
But he himselve full lightly from him freed,
And gan himselve to fight on foote prepare :
Whereof whenas the Gyant was aware,
He wox right blyth, as he had got thereby,
And laught so loud, that all his teeth wide bare
One might have seeme enraung'd disorderly,
Like to a rancke of piles that pitched are awry.

x.

Eftsoones againe his axe he rought on hie,
Ere he were throughly buckled to his gear,
And can let drive at him so dreadfullie,
That had he chaunced not his shield to reare,
Ere that huge stroke arrivd on him neare,
He had him surely cloven quite in twaine :
But th' adamantine shield which he did beare
So well was tempred, that for all his maine
It would no passage yeeld unto his purpose vaine.

xi.

Yet was the stroke so forcibly applide,
That made him stagger with uncertaine sway,
As if he would have tottered to one side :
Wherewith full wroth he fiercely gan assay
That curt'sie with like kindeesse to repay,
And smote at him with so importune might,
That two more of his armes did fall away,
Like fruitlesse braunches, which the hatchets slight
Hath pruned from the native tree and crop'd
quight.

xii.

With that all mad and furious he grew,
Like a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,
And erst, and band, and blasphemies forth threwe
Against his gods, and fire to them did threat,
And hell unto himselve with horrour great :

viii. 9. — mall.] *Maul.* CHURCH.

x. 2. — buckled to his gear,] Prepared, made ready. TODD.

xi. 9. — native] *Natural.* CHURCH.

xii. 3. — band.] *Did curse.* UPTON.

Thenceforth he car'd no more which way he strooke,
Nor where it light; but gan to chaufe and sweat,
And gnasht his teeth, and his head at him shooke,
And sternely him beheld with grim and ghastly looke.

xiii.

Nought fear'd the Childe his looks, ne yet his
But only wexed now the more aware [threats];
To save himselfe from those his furious heats,
And watch advantage how to worke his care,
The which good fortune to him offred faire:
For as he in his rage him overstrooke,
He, ere he could his weapon backe repaire,
His side all bare and naked overtooke,
And with his mortal steel quite through the body strooke.

xiv.

Through all three bodies he him strooke atonce,
That all the three atonce fell on the plaine,
Else should he thrise have needed for the nonce
Them to have stricken, and thrise to have slaine.
So now all three one sencelesse lump remaine,
Enwallow'd in his owne blaekie bloody gore,
And byting th' earth for very deaths disdain;e
Who, with a cloud of night him covering, bore
Downe to the House of Dole, his daies there to deplere.

xv.

Which when the Lady from the Castle saw,
Where she with her two Sonnes did looking stand,
She towards him in hast herselfe did draw
To greet him the good fortune of his hand:
And all the people both of towne and land,
Which there stood gazing from the Cities wall
Upon these Warriours, greedy t' understand
To whether should the victory befall,
Now when they saw it false, they eke him greeted all.

xvi.

But Belgè with her Sonnes prostrated low
Before his fecte, in all that peoples sight,
Mongst ioyes mixing some teares, mongst wele some wo,

Him thus bespake; "O most redoubted Knight,
The which hast me, of all most wretched wight,
That earst was dead, restor'd to life againe,
And these weake impes replanted by thy might;
What guerdon can I give thee for thy paine,
But ev'n that which thou savedst thine still to remaine!"

xvii.

He tooke her up forby the lilly hand,
And her recomforted the best he might,
Saying; "Deare Lady, deedes ought not to scand
By th' authors manhood, nor the doers might,
But by their truth and by the causes right:
That same is it which fought for you this day.
What other meed then need me to requight,
But that which yeeldeth vertues meed alway?
That is, the vertue selfe, which her reward doth pay."

xiii. 6. — him overstrooke,] Struck beyond him. CHURCH.

xiv. 3. — for the nonce] For the occasion. TODD.
xvi. 7. And these weake impes replanted &c.] The word *impes* is here employed, in pointed reference to its original, for children. Anglo-Sax. *impan*, to engraft. TODD.

xviii.

She humbly thank him for that wondrous grace,
And further sayd; "Ah! Sir, but mote ye please,
Sith ye thus farre have tendred my poore case,
As from my chiefest foe me to release,
That your victorious arme will not yet cease,
Till ye have rooted all the relickes out
Of that vilde race, and established my peace."
"What is there else," sayd he "left of their rout?"

Declare it boldly, Dame, and doe not stand in dont."

xix.

"Then wote yon, Sir, that in this Chureh hereby
There stands an Idole of great note and name,
The which this Gyant reared first on hie,
And of his owne vaine faucies thought did frame:
To whom, for endlesse horrour of his shame,
He offred up for daily sacrifice
My children and my people, burnt in flame
With all the tortures that he could devise,
The more t' aggrate his god with such his blouddy guise.

xx.

"And underneath this Idoll there doth lie
An hideous Monster, that doth it defend,
And feedes on all the earkasses that die
In sacrifice unto that cursed Feend:
Whose ngly shape none ever saw, nor kend,
That ever seap'd: for of a man they say
It has the voice, that speaches forth doth send,
Even blasphemous words, which she doth bray
Out of her poysnous entrails fraught with dire decay."

xxi.

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart gan
For great desire that Monster to assay; [earne
And prayd the place of her abode to learne:
Which being shew'd, he gan himselfe streightway
Thereto addresse, and his bright shield display.
So to the Chureh he came, where it was told
The Monster underneath the altar lay;
There he that Idoll saw of massy gold
Most richly made, but there no monster did behold.

xxii.

Upon the Image with his naked blade
Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke;
And, the third time, out of an hidden shade
There forth issewd from under th' altars smooke
A dreadfull Feend with fowle deformed looke,
That stretcht itselfe as it had long lyen still;
And her long taile and fethers strongly shooke,
That all the Temple did with terror fill;
Yet him nought terrifide that feared nothing ill.

xxiii.

An huge great Beast it was, when it in length
Was stretched forth that nigh fill all the place,
And seem'd to be of infinite great strength;
Horrible, hideous, and of helish race,
Borne of the brooding of Echidna base,

xviii. 7. — vilde] *Vile*. The old spelling was *vilde*, and repeatedly occurs in our ancient writers. TODD.

xviii. 9. — in dont.] In fear. CHURCH.

xix. 9. — aggrate] Please. TODD.

xxi. 5. — and his bright shield display.] He displays the brightness of Truth against superstitious illusions. UPTON.

Or other like infernall Furies kinde :
For of a mayd she had the outward face,
To hide the horrour which did lurke behinde,
The better to beguile whom she so fond did finde.

XXIV.

Thereto the body of a dog she had,
Full of fell ravin and fierce greedinesse ;
A lions clawes, with powre and rigour clad,
To rend and teare whatso she can oppresse ;
A dragons taile, whose sting without redresse
Full deadly wounds whereso it is empight ;
And eagles wings, for scope and speediuesse,
That nothing may escape her reaching might,
Whereto she ever list to make her hardy flight.

XXV.

Much like in foulnesse and deformity
Unto that Monster, whom the Theban Knight,
The Father of that fatall progeny,
Made kill herselfe for very hearts despight
That he had red her riddle, which no wight
Could ever loose, but suffred deadly doole :
So also did this Monster use like slight
To many a one which came unto her schoole,
Whom she did put to death deceived like a foole.

XXVI.

She comming forth, whenas she first beheld
The armed Prince with shield so blazing bright
Her ready to assaile, was greatly queld,
And much dismayd with that dismayfull sight,
That backe she would have turnd for great
affright :
But he gan her with courage fierce assay,
That first her turne againe in her despight
To save herselfe, least that he did her slay ;
And sure he had herslaime, had she not turnd her way.

XXVII.

Tho, when she saw that she was forst to fight,
She flew at him like to a hellish feend,
And on his shield tooke hold with all her might,
As if that it she would in peeces rend,
Or reave out of the hand that did it hend :
Strongly he strove out of her greedy gripe
To loose his shield, and long while did contend ;
But, when he could not quite it, with one stripe
Her lions clawes he from her feete away did wipe.

XXVIII.

With that aloude she gan to bray and yell,
And fowle blasphemous speeches forth did cast,
And bitter curses, horrible to tell ;
That even the Temple, wherein she was plast,
Did quake to heare, and nigh asunder brast ;
Tho with her huge long taile she at him strooke,
That made him stagger and stand halfe aghast
With trembling ioynts, as he for terrour shooke ;
Who nought was terrifide but greater courage tooke.

XXIX.

As when the mast of some well-timbred hulke
Is with the blast of some outrageous storme
Blowne downe, it shakes the bottome of the bulke,
And makes her ribs to cracke as they were torne ;

xxxii. 9. — fond] Foolish. CHURCH.
xxv. 2. — that Monster.] The Sphinx. CHURCH.
xxv. 6. Could ever loose.] Solve, explain. CHURCH.

Whilest still she stands as stonisht and forlorne ;
So was he stound with stroke of her huge taile ;
But, ere that it she backe againe had borne,
He with his sword it strooke, that without faile
He ioynted it, and mard the swinging of her flaile.

XXX.

Then gan she cry much louder then afore,
That all the people, there without, it heard,
And Belgè seife was therewith stonied sore
As if the onely sound thereof she feard.
But then the Feend herselfe more fiercely reard
Upon her wide great wings, and strongly flew
With all her body at his head and beard,
That had he not foreseene with heedfull vew,
And thrown his shield atween, she had him done
to rew :

XXXI.

But, as she prest on him with heavy sway,
Under her wombe his fatall sword he thrust,
And for her entrailes made an open way
To issue forth ; the which, once being burst,
Like to a great mill-damb forth fiercely gusht,
And powred out of her infernall sinke
Most ugly filth ; and poyson therewith rusht,
That him nigh choked with the deadly stinke :
Such loathly matter were small lust to speake or
thinke.

XXXII.

Then downe to ground fell that deformed Masse,
Breathing out clouds of sulphure fowle and blacke,
In which a puddle of contagion was,
More loathd then Lerna, or then Stygian lake,
That any man would nigh awhaped make :
Whom when he saw on ground, he was full glad,
And streight went forth his gladnesse to partake
With Belgè, who watcht all this while full sad,
Wayting what end would be of that same daunger
drad.

XXXIII.

Whom when she saw so ioyously come forth,
She gan reioyce and shew triumphant chere,
Lauding and praying his renowned worth
By all the names that honorable were.
Then in he brought her, and her shewed there
The present of his paines, that Monsters spoyle,
And eke that Idoll deem'd so costly dere ;
Whom he did all to peeces breake, and foyle
In filthy durt, and left so in the loathely soyle.

XXXIV.

Then all the people which beheld that day
Gan shout aloud, that unto heaven it rong ;
And all the damzels of that towne in ray
Came dauncing forth, and ioyous carrols song ;
So him they led through all their streetes along
Crowned with girlands of immortal baies ;
And all the vulgar did about them throng
To see the Man, whose everlasting praise
They all were bound to all posterities to raise.

xxx. 4. — the onely sound] That is, as if she feard
only the sound thereof. UPTON.

xxxii. 5. — awhaped] Terrified. UPTON.

xxxiii. 7. And eke that Idoll] Meaning the Popish
religion was destroyed, and the Protestant established.
UPTON.

xxxiii. 8. — foyle] Trample. Fr. fouler. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 3. — in ray] Array, order and rank. UPTON.

xxxv.

There he with Belgè did awhile remaine
 Making great feast and ioyous merriment,
 Untill he had her settled in her raine
 With safe assurance and establishment.
 Then to his first emprize his mind he lent,
 Full loath to Belgè and to all the rest ;
 Of whom yet taking leave thenceforth he went,
 And to his former journey bim address ;
 On which long way he rede, ne ever day did rest.

xxxvi.

But turne we now to noble Artegal ;
 Who, hav'ng left Mercilla, streightway went
 On his first quest, the which him forth did call,
 To weete, to worke Irenæes franchisement,
 And eke Grantortoes worthy punishment.
 So forth he fared, as his manner was,
 With onely Talas wayting diligent,
 Through many perils ; and much way did pas,
 Till nigh unto the place at length approcht he has.

xxxvii.

There as he traveld by the way, he met
 An aged wight wayfaring all alone,
 Who through his yeares long since aside had set
 The use of armes, and battell quite forgone :
 To whom as he approcht, he knew anone
 That it was he which whilome did attend
 On faire Irene in her affliction,
 When first to Faery Court he saw her wend,
 Unto his Sovereaine Queene her suite for to commend.

xxxviii.

Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan ;
 " Haile, good Sir Sergis, truest Knight alive,
 Well tride in all thy Ladies troubles than
 When her that Tyrant did of crowne deprive ;
 What new occasion doth thee hither drive,
 Whiles she alone is left, and thou here found ?
 Or is she thrall, or doth she not survive ?"
 To whom he thus ; " She liveth sure and sound ;
 But by that Tyrant is in wretched thraldome bound :

xxxix.

" For she presuming on th' appointed tyde,
 In which ye promet, as ye were a Knight,
 To meete her at the Salvage Ilands syde,
 And then and there for trial of her right
 With her unrighteous enemy to fight,
 Did thither come ; where she, afraid of nought,
 By guilefull treason and by subtil slight
 Surprized was, and to Grantorto brought,
 Who her imprisond hath, and her life often sought.

xl.

" And now he hath to her prefixt a day,
 By which if that no Champion doe appeare,
 Which will her cause in battailous array
 Against him iustifie, and prove her cleare
 Of all those crimes that he gainst her doth reare,
 She death shall sure aby." Those tidings sad
 Did much abash Sir Artegal to heare,
 And grieved sore, that through his fault she had
 Fallen into that Tyrants hand and usage bad.

xli.

Then thus replide ; " Now sure and by my life,
 Too much am I to blame for that faire Maide,

xxxviii. 3. — than] For then. CHURCH.

That have her drawne to all this troublous strife
 Through promise to afford her timely aide,
 Which by default I have not yet defraide :
 But wittnesse unto me, ye heavens ! that know
 How cleare I am from blame of this upbraide :
 For ye into like thraldome me did throw,
 And kept from complishing the faith which I did owe.

xlii.

" But now aread, Sir Sergis, how long space
 Hath he her lent a Champion to provide,"
 " Ten daies," quoth he, " he graunted hath of
 For that he weeneth well before that tide [grace,
 None can have tidings to assist her side :
 For all the shores, which to the sea accoste,
 He day and night doth ward both farre and wide,
 That none can there arrive without an hoste :
 So her he deemes already but a damned ghoste."

xliii.

" Now turne againe," Sir Artegal then sayd ;
 " For, if I live till those ten daies have end,
 Assure yourselfe, Sir Knight, she shall have ayd,
 Though I this dearest life for her doe spend."
 So backward he attone with him did wend.
 Tho, as they rode together on their way,
 A rout of people they before them kend,
 Flocking together in confusd array ;
 As if that there were some tumultuous affray.

xliv.

To which as they approcht the cause to know,
 They saw a Knight in dangerous distresse
 Of a rude rout him chasing to and fro,
 That sought with lawlesse powre him to oppresse,
 And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse :
 And farre away, amid their rakehell bands,
 They spide a Lady left all succourlesse,
 Crying, and holding up her wretched hands
 To him for aide, who long in vaine their rage with-
 stands.

xlv.

Yet still he strives, ne any peril spares,
 To reskne her from their rude violence ;
 And like a lion wood amongst them fares,
 Dealing his dreadfull blowes with large dispence,
 Gainst which the pallid death findes no defence :
 But all in vaine ; their numbers are so great,
 That naught may boot to banishe them from thence ;
 For, soone as he their outrage backe doth beat,
 They turne afresh, and oft renew their former threat.

xlvi.

And now they doe so sharply him assay,
 That they his shield in peeces battred have,
 And forced him to throw it quite away,
 Fro dangers dread his doubtfull life to save ;
 Albe that it most safety to him gave,
 And much did magnifie his noble name .
 For, from the day that he thus did it leave,

xli. 9. — complishing] Accomplishing, fulfilling.
 TODD.

xliv. 2. *They saw a Knight* &c. The Knight is, Henry of Navarre. The *rude rout*, his rebellious subjects. The *Lady*, France, or the Genius of France, hight Flourdelis, st. 49. UPTON.

xlvi. 3. *And forced him* &c.] That is, to renounce his Protestant faith. UPTON.

U

Amongst all Knights he blotted was with blame,
And counted but a recreant Knight with endles
shame.

XLVII.

Whom when they thus distressed did behold,
They drew unto his aide; but that rude rout
Them also gan assaile with outrage bold,
And forced them, but however strong and stout
They were, as well approv'd in many a doubt,
Backe to recule; untill that Yron Man
With his huge flaile began to lay about;
From whose sterne presence they diffused ran,
Like scatted chaffe, the which the wind away
doth fan.

XLVIII.

So when that Knight from perill cleare was freed,
He drawing neare began to greeete them faire,
And yeeld great thanks for their so goodly deed,
In saving him from daungerous despaire
Of those which sought his life for to empaire:
Of whom Sir Arteggall gan then enquire
The whole occasion of his late misfare,
And who he was, and what those Villaines were,
The which with mortall malice him pursu'd so nere.

XLIX.

To whom he thus; "My name is Burbon hight,
Well knowne, and far renowned heretofore,
Untill late mischief did uppon me light,
That all my former praise hath blemish sore:
And that faire Lady, which in that uprore
Ye with those caytives saw, Flourdelsis hight,
Is mine owne Love, though me she have forlore;
Whether withheld from me by wrongfull might,
Or with her owne good will, I cannot read aright.

L.

"But sure to me her faith she first did plight
To be my Love, and take me for her Lord;
Till that a Tyrant, which Grandtorto hight,
With golden giftes and many a guilefull word
Entyce her to him for to accord.
O, who may not with giftes and words be tempted!
Sith which she hath me ever since abhord,
And to my foe hath guilefully consented:
Ay me, that ever guyle in wemen was invented!

LI.

"And now he hath this troupe of Villains sent
By open force to fetch her quite away:
Gainst whom myselfe I long in vaine have bent
To rescue her, and daily meanes assay,
Yet rescue her thence by no meanes I may;
For they doe me with multitude oppresse,
And with unequal might doe overlay,
That oft I driven am to great distresse,
And forced to forgoe th' attempt remedillesse."

LII.

"But why have ye," said Arteggall, "forborne
Your owne good shield in daungerous dismay?"

XLVII. 2. *They drew unto his aide.*] Alluding to the assistance given to Henry IV. by Queen Elizabeth. UPRON.

XLVII. 5. — in many a doubt.] *Difficulty.* CHURCH.

XLVII. 6. — recule;] *Retire.* TODD.

XLVII. 8. — diffused] *Dispersed, or disordered.* TODD.

XLVIII. 5. — empaire;] *Hurt.* TODD.

L. 3. — Grandtorto] *The King of Spain.* UPRON.

L. 9. — invented.] *Met with, found, &c.* UPRON.

That is the greatest shame and foulest scorne,
Which unto any Knight behappen may,
To loose the badge that should his deedes display."
To whom Sir Burbon, blushing halfe for shame;
"That shall I unto you," quoth he, "bewray;
Least ye therefore mote happily me blame,
And deeme it doen of will, that through inforcement
came.

LIII.

"True is that I at first was dubbed Knight
By a good Knight, the Knight of the Red-crosse;
Who, when he gave me armes in field to fight,
Gave me a shield, in which he did endosse
His deare Redeemers Badge upon the bosse:
The same long while I bore, and therewithall
Fought many battels without wound or losse;
Therewith Grandtorto selfe I did appall,
And made him oftentimes in field before me fall.

LIV.

"But for that many did that shield envie,
And cruell enemies increased more;
To stint all strife and troublous enmitie,
That bloudie scutchin being batted sore
I layd aside, and have of late forebore;
Hoping thereby to have my Love obtayned;
Yet can I not my Love have nathemore;
For she by force is still fro me detayned,
And with corruptfull byrbes is to untruth mis
trayned."

LV.

To whom thus Arteggall; "Certes, Sir Knight,
Hard is the case the which ye doe complaine;
Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may light
That it to such a streight mote you constraine)
As to abandon that which doth containe
Your honours stile, that is, your warlike shield.
All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all paine
Then losse of fame in disaventrous field:
Dye, rather then doe ought that mote dishonour
yield!"

LVI.

"Not so," quoth he; "for yet, when time doth serve
My former shield I may resume againe:
To temporize is not from truth to swerve,
Ne for advantage terme to enteraine,
Whenas necessitie doth it constraime."
"Fie on such forgerie," said Arteggall,
"Under one hood to shadow faces twaine:
Knights ought be true, and truth is one in all:
Of all things, to dissemble, foully may befall!"

LVII.

"Yet let me you of courtesie request,"
Said Burbon, "to assist me now at need
Against these Pesants which have me opprest,
And forced me to so infamous deed,
That yet my Love may from their hands be freed."
Sir Arteggall, albe he earst did wyte

LIII. 1. — dubbed] The phrase *dubbed* is derived from the *stroke*, with a sword or otherwise, which was always a principal ceremony at the creation of a Knight. *At dubban*, Island, signifies to *strike*. TYRWHITT.

LIII. 4. — endosse] *Engrave, or write on the back.* FR. ENDOSSE. TODD

LIV. 1. — But for] *But because.* TODD.

LVI. 6, 7. — albe he earst did wyte

His wavering mind.] That is, though he lately reproved the inconstancy of Burbon. CHURCH.

His wavering mind, yet to his aide agreed,
And buckling him eftsoones unto the fight
Did set upon those troupes with all his powre and
might.

LVIII.

Who flocking round about them, as a swarme
Of flies upon a birchen bough doth cluster,
Did them assault with terrible allarme,
And over all the fields themselves did muster,
With bills and gayves making a dreadfull luster ;
That first at first those Knights backe to retire :
As when the wrathfull Boreas doth bluster,
Nought may abide the tempest of his yre,
Both man and beast doefly, and succour doe inquire.

LIX.

But, whenas overblown was that brunt,
Those Knights began afresh them to assayle,
And all about the fields like squirrels hunt ;
But chiefly Talus with his yron flayle,
Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote avayle,
Made cruell havocke of the baser crew,
And chased them both over hill and dale :
The raskall manie soone they overthrew ;
But the two Knights themselves their Captains did
subdew.

LX.

At last they came whereas that Ladie bode,
Whom now her keepers had forsaken quight
To save themselves, and scattered were abroad :
Her halfe dismayd they found in doubtfull plight,
As neither glad nor sorie for their sight ;
Yet wondrous faire she was, and richly clad
In roiall robes, and many iewels dight ;
But that those Villens through their usage had
Them fouly rent, and shamefully defaced had.

LXI.

But Burbon, streight dismounting from his steed,
Unto her ran with greedie great desyre,
And catching her fast by her ragged weed
Would have embraced her with hart entyre :
But she, backstarting, with disdainefull yre
Bad him avaunt, ne would unto his lore
Allured be for prayer nor for meed :
Whom when those Knightsso forward and forlore
Beheld, they her rebuked and upbrayded sore.

LXII.

Sayd Arte gall ; " What foule disgrace is this
To so faire Ladie, as ye seeme in sight,
To blot your beautie, that unblemisht is,
With so foule blame as breach of faith once plight,
Or change of love for any worlds delight ?
Is ought on earth so pretious or deare
As praye and honour ? or is ought so bright
And beautifull as glories beames appeare,
Whose goodly light then Phoebus lanipe doth shine
more cleare ?

LXIII.

" Why then will ye, fond Dame, attempted bee
Unto a strangers love, so lightly placed,
For giftes of gold or any worldly glee,
To leave the Love that ye before embraced,
And let your fame with falshood be defaced ?
Fie on the pelfe for which good name is sold,
And honour with indignitie debased !

LXIII. 1. — attempted] For tempted. CHURCH.

Dearer is love then life, and fame then gold ;
But dearer then them both your faith once plighted
hold."

LXIV.

Much was the Ladie in her gentle mind
Abasht at his rebuke, that bit her neare ;
Ne ought to answere thereunto did find :
But, hanging down her head with heave cheare,
Stood long amaz'd as she amated wear ;
Which Burbon seeing, her againe assayd ;
And, clasping twixt his armes, her up did reare
Upon his steede, whiles she no whit gainesayd :
So bore her quite away nor well nor ill payd.

LXV.

Nathlesse the Yron Man did still pursew
That raskall many with unpittied spoyle ;
Ne ceased not, till all their scattred crew
Into the sea he drove quite from that soyle,
The which they troubled had with great tur-
bur Arte gall, seeing his cruell deed, [moyle ;
Commanded him from slaughter to recoyle,
And to his voyage gan againe proceed ;
For that the terme, approching fast, required speed.

CANTO XII.

Arte gall doth Sir Burbon aide,
And blames for changing shield ;
He with the great Grantorto fights,
And slaueth him in field.

I.

O SACRED hunger of ambitious mindes,
And impotent desire of men to raine !
Whom neither dread of God, that devils bindes,
Nor lawes of men, that common-weales containe,
Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes restraine,
Can keepe from outrage and from doing wrong,
Where they may hope a kingdome to obtaine :
No faith so firme, no trust can be so strong,
No love so lasting then, that may endure long.

II.

Witnesse may Burbon be ; whom all the bands,
Which may a Knight assure, had surely bound,
Untill the love of lordship and of lands
Made him become most faithless and unsound :
And witnesse be Gerioneo found,
Who for like cause faire Belge did oppresse,
And right and wrong most cruelly confound :
And so be now Grantorto, who no lesse
Then all the rest burst out to all outrageousnesse.

III.

Gainst whom Sir Arte gall long having since
Taken in hand th' exploit, (being theretoo
Appointed by that mightie Faerie Prince,
Great Gloriane, that Tyrant to furdoo,)
Through other great adventures hethertoo

ARG. 1. Arte gall doth Sir Burbon aide,
And blames for changing shield :] These lines
should have been part of the Argument of the preceding
Canto ; to this they have no relation. CHURCH.
1. 2. And impotent desire &c.] That is, ungovernable,
violent : Impotens regnandi cupidio. URTON.
1. 4. — containe,] Hold together, keep within bounds.
CHURCH.

Had it forslackt : but now time drawing ny,
To him assynd her high behest to doo,
To the sea-shore he gan his way apply
To weete if shipping readie he mote there descry.

iv.

Tho, when they came to the sea-coast, they found
A ship all readie, as good fortune fell,
To put to sea, with whom they did compound
To passe them over where them list to tell :
The winde and weather served them so well,
That in one day they with the coast did fall ;
Whereas they readie found, them to repell,
Great hostes of men in order martiall,
Which them forbad to land, and footing did forstall.

v.

But nathemore would they from land refraine :
But, whenas nigh unto the shore they drew
That foot of man might sound the hottome plaine,
Tals into the sea did forth issew [threw ;
Though darts from shore and stoncs they at him
And wading through the waves with stedfast sway,
Maugre the might of all those troupes in vew,
Did win the shore ; whence he them chast away
And made to fly like doves, whom th' eagle doth
affray.

vi.

The whyles Sir Artegal with that old Knight
Did forth descend, there being none them neare,
And forward marched to a towne in sight.
By this came tydings to the Tyrants care,
By those which earst did fly away for feare,
Of their arrival : wherewith troubled sore
He all his forces streight to him did reare,
And, forth issuing with his scouts afore,
Meant them to have incountred ere they left the
shore :

vii.

But ere he marched farre he with them met,
And fiercely charged them with all his force ;
But Tals sternely did upon them set,
And brusht and batted them without remorse,
That on the ground he left full many a corse ;
Ne any able was him to withstand,
But he them overthrew both man and horse,
That they lay scattred over all the land,
As thicke as doth the seede after the sowers hand :

viii.

Till Artegal him seeing so to rage
Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did make :
To which all harkning did awhile asswage
Their forces furie, and their terror slake ;
Till he an herauld cald, and to him spake,
Willing him wend unto the Tyrant streight,
And tell him that not for such slaughters sake
He hether came, but for to trie the right
Of fayre Irenas cause with him in single fight :

ix.

And willed him for to reclayme with speed
His scattred people, ere they all were slaine ;

iv. 6. — they with the coast did fall ;] A sea-phrase.
They arrived upon the coast whither they were bound.
CHURCH.

ix. 1. — to reclayme] A term in falconry. A partridge is said to reclaim when she calls back her young ones. CHURCH.

And time and place convenient to areed,
In which they two the combat might darraine.
Which message when Grantorto heard, full fayne
And glad he was the slaughter so to stay ;
And pointed for the combat twixt them twayne
The morrow next, he gave him longer day :
So sounded the retraite, and drew his folke away.

x.

That night Sir Artegal did cause his tent
There to be pitched on the open plaine ;
For he had given streight commaundment
That none should dare him once to entertaine :
Which none durst breake, though many would
right fayne
For faire Irena whom they loved deare :
But yet old Sergis did so well him paine,
That from close friends, that dar'd not to appeare,
He all things did purway which for them needfull
weare.

xi.

The morrow next that was the dismal day
Appointed for Irenas death before,
So soone as it did to the world display
His chearefull face, and light to men restore,
The heavy Mayd, to whom none tydings bore
Of Artegal's arrivall her to free,
Lookt up with eyes full sad and hart full sore,
Weening her lifes last howre then neare to bee ;
Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare nor see.

xii.

Then up she rose, and on herselfe did dight
Most squalid garments, fit for such a day ;
And with dull countenance and with dolefull spright
She forth was brought in sorrowfull dismay
For to receive the doome of her decay :
But comming to the place, and finding there
Sir Artegal in battaious array
Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart cheare,
And new life to her lent in midst of deadly feare.

xiii.

Like as a tender rose in open plaine,
That with untimely drought nigh withered was,
And hung the head, soone as few drops of raine
Thereon distill and deaw her daintie face,
Gins to look up, and with fresh wanted grace
Disprends the glorie of her leav's gay ;
Such was Irenas countenance, such her case,
When Artegal she saw in that array,
There wayting for the Tyrant till it was farre day :

xiv.

Who came at length with prond presumptuous gate
Into the field, as if he fearelesse were,
All armed in a cote of yron plate
Of great defence to ward the deadly feare,
And on his head a steele-cap he did weare
Of colour rustie-browne, but snre and strong ;
And in his hand an huge polaxe did beare,
Whose steale was yron-studded, but not long,
With which he wont to fight, to iustifie his
wrong :

xv.

Of stature huge and hideous he was,
Like to a giant for his monstrous height,

x. 3. — he] Grantorto CHURCH.

And did in strength most sorts of men surpas,
 Ne ever any found his match in might ;
 Thereto he had great skill in single fight :
 His face was ugly and his countenance sterne,
 That could have frayd one with the very sight,
 And gaped like a gulfe when he did gerne ;
 That whether man or monster one could scarce
 discerne.

xvi.

Soone as he did within the listes appeare,
 With dreadfull looke he Artegal beheld,
 As if he would have daunted him with feare ;
 And, grinning griesly, did against him weld
 His deadly weapon which in hand he held :
 But th' Elfin Swayne, that oft had seene like sight,
 Was with his ghastly count'nance nothing queld ;
 But gan him streight to buckle to the fight,
 And cast his shield about to be in readie plight.

xvii.

The trompets sound ; and they together goe
 With dreadfull terror and with fell intent ;
 And their huge strokes full daungerously bestow,
 To doe most dammage whereas most they ment :
 But with such force and furie violent
 The Tyrant thundred his thicke blowes so fast,
 That through the yron walles their way they rent,
 And even to the vitall parts they past,
 Ne ought could them endure, but all they cleft or
 brast.

xviii.

Which cruell outrage whenas Artegal
 Did well avize, thenceforth with warie heed
 He shund his strokes, where-ever they did fall,
 And way did give unto their gracelesse speed :
 As when a skilfull marriner doth reed
 A storme approaching that doth perill threat,
 He will not bide the daunger of such read,
 But strikes his sayles, and vereth his mainsheat,
 And lends unto it leave the emptie ayre to beat.

xix.

So did the Faerie Knight himselfe abeare,
 And stouped of his head from shame to shield :
 No shame to stoupe, ones head more high to
 And, much to gaine, a litle for to yield : [reare ;
 So stoutest Knights doen oftentimes in field.
 But still the Tyrant sternely at him layd,
 And did his yron axe so nimbly wield,
 That many wounds into his flesh it made,
 And with his burdenous blowes him sore did over-
 lade.

xx.

Yet whenas fit advantage he did spy,
 The whiles the cursed Felon high did reare
 His cruell hand to smite him mortally,
 Under his stroke he to him stepping neare
 Right in the flanke him strooke with deadly
 dreare,
 That the gore-bloud thence gushing grievously
 Did underneath him like a pond appeare,
 And all his armour did with purple dye :
 Thereat he brayed loud, and yelled dreadfully.

xv. 8. — gerne ;] *Gerne* signifies to *yawn*, from the
 Anglo Sax *Ƿeonian*. *Toou*.

xix 1. — abeare,] *Beare*, *deemean*, *behave*. Anglo-
 Sax. *abeþan*. *Upton*

xxi.

Yet the huge stroke, which he before intended,
 Kept on his course, as he did it direct,
 And with such monstrous poise adowne descended,
 That seemed nought could him from death protect :
 But he it well did ward with wise respect,
 And twixt him and the blow his shield did cast,
 Which thereon seizing tooke no great effect ;
 But, byting deepe, therein did sticke so fast
 That by no meanes it backe againe he forth could
 wrast.

xxii.

Long while he tug'd and strove to get it out,
 And all his powre applyed thereunto,
 That he therewith the Knight drew all about :
 Natlesse, for all that ever he could doe,
 His axe he could not from his shield undoe.
 Which Artegal perceiving, strooke no more,
 But loosing soone his shield did it forgoe ;
 And, whiles he combred was therewith so sore,
 He gan at him let drive more fiercely then afore.

xxiii.

So well he him pursew'd, that at the last
 He stroke him with Chrysaor on the hed,
 That with the souse thereof full sore aghast
 He staggered to and fro in doubtfull sted :
 Againe, whiles he him saw so ill hested,
 He did him smite with all his might and maine,
 That, falling, on his mother earth he fed :
 Whom when he saw prostrated on the plaine,
 He lightly reft his head to ease him of his paine.

xxiv.

Which when the people round about him saw,
 They shouted all for ioy of his successe,
 Glad to be quit from that proud Tyrants awe,
 Which with strong powre did them long time
 oppresse ;
 And, running all with greedie ioyfulness
 To faire Irena, at her feet did fall,
 And her adored with due humblenesse
 As their true Liege and Princesse naturall ;
 And eke her Champions glorie sounded over all :

xxv.

Who, streight her leading with meete maiestie
 Unto the pallace where their kings did rayne,
 Did her therein establish peaceable,
 And to her kingdomes seat restore agayne ;
 And all such persons, as did late maintayne
 That Tyrants part with close or open ayde,
 He sorely punished with heauey payne ;
 That in short space, whiles there with her he stayd,
 Not one was left that durst her once have disobayd.

xxvi.

During which time that he did her remayne,
 His studie was true iustice how to deale,
 And day and night employ'd his busie paine
 How to reforme that ragged common-weale :
 And that same Yron Man, which could reveale
 All hidden crimes, through all that Realme he
 sent
 To search out those that usd to rob and steale,

xxiii. 7. *That, falling, on his mother earth he fed:]*
 The construction is, that, falling, he fed on, he bit, his
 mother earth. *Upton*.

Or did rebell gainst lawfull government ;
 On whom he did inflict most grievous punishment.

xxvii.

But, ere he coule reforme it thoroughly,
 He through occasion called was away
 To Faerie Court, that of necessity
 His course of Justice he was forst to stay,
 And Talus to revoke from the right way,
 In which he was that Realmes for to redresse :
 But Envies cloud still dimmeth Vertues ray !
 So, having freed Irena from distresse,
 He tooke his leave of her there left in heavinesse.

xxviii.

Tho, as he backe returned from that Land,
 And there arriv'd againe whence forth he set,
 He had not passed farre upon the strand,
 Whenas two old ill-favour'd hags he met,
 By the way-side being together set,
 Two griesly Creatures ; and, to that their faces
 Most foule and filthie were, their garments yet,
 Being all rag'd and tatter'd, their disgraces
 Did much the more augment, and made most ugly
 cases.

xxix.

The one of them, that elder did appeare,
 With her dull eyes did seeme to looke askew,
 That her mis-shape much helpt ; and her foule
 heare
 Hung loose and loathsomely ; thereto her hew
 Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew [red ;
 And all her bones might through her cheekes be
 Her lips were, like raw leather, pale and blew :
 And as she spake, therewith she slavered ;
 Yet spake she seldom ; but thought more, the lesse
 she sed :

xxx.

Her hands were foule and durtie, never washt
 In all her life, with long nayles over-raught,
 Like puttocks clawes ; with th' one of which she
 scratcht
 Her cursed head, although it itched naught ;
 The other held a snake with venime fraught,
 On which she fed and gnawed hungrily,
 As if that long she had not eaten ought ;
 That round about her iawes one might descry
 The bloudie gore and poysen dropping loathsomely.

xxxi.

Her name was Envie, known well thereby ;
 Whose nature is to grieve and grudge at all
 That ever she sees doen prays-worthyly ;
 Whose sight to her is greatest crosse may fall,
 And vexeth so, that makes her eat her gall :
 For, when she wanteth other thing to eat,
 She feedes on her owne maw unnaturall,
 And of her owne foule entrayles makes her meat ;
 Meat fit for such a Monsters monsterous dyeat :

xxxii.

And if she hapt of any good to heare,
 That had to any happily betid,
 Then would she inly fret, and grieve, and teare
 Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid :

xxviii. 6. *Two griesly Creatures ;*] These were Envy
 and Detraction. UPON.

xxxix. 5. — arew] *In a row, together.* UPON.

But if she heard of ill that any did,
 Or harme that any had, then would she make
 Great cheare, like one unto a banquet bid ;
 And in anothers losse great pleasure take,
 As she had got thereby and gayned a great stake.

xxxiii.

The other nothing better was then shee ;
 Agreeing in bad will and canered kynd,
 But in bad maner they did disagree :
 For whatso Envie good or bad did fynd
 She did conceale, and murder her owne mynd ;
 But this, whatever evill she conceived,
 Did spred abroad and throw in th' open wynd :
 Yet this in all her words might be perceived,
 That all she sought was mens good name to have
 bereaved.

xxxiv.

For, whatsoever good by any sayd [vent
 Or doen she heard, she would streightwayes in-
 How to deprave or slaundersously upbrayd,
 Or to misconstrne of a mans intent,
 And turne to ill the thing that well was ment :
 Therefore she used often to resort
 To common haunts, and companies frequent,
 To hearken what any one did good report,
 To blot the same with blame, or wrest in wicked
 sort :

xxxv.

And if that any ill she heard of any, [telling,
 She would it eeke, and make much worse by
 And take great ioy to publish it to many ;
 That every matter worse was for her me'lling :
 Her name was hight Detraction, and her dwelling
 Was neare to Envie, even her neighbour next ;
 A wicked Hag, and Envy selfe excelleng
 In mischiefe ; for herselfe she onely vext ;
 But this same both herselfe and others eke per-
 plect.

xxxvi.

Her face was ugly, and her mouth distort,
 Foming with poysen round about her gils,
 In which her cursed tongue full sharpe and short
 Appear'd like aspis sting, that closely kilis,
 Or cruely does wound whomso she wils :
 A distaffe in her other hand she had,
 Upon the which she litle spinnes, but spils ;
 And faynes to weave false tales and leasings bad,
 To throw amongst the good, which others had dis-
 prad.

xxxvii.

These two now had themselves combynd in one,
 And linckt together gainst Sir Artegall ;
 For whom they wayted as his mortall fone,
 How they might make him into mischiefe fall,
 For freeing from their snares Irena thrall :
 Besides, unto themselves they gotten had
 A Monster, which the Blatant Beast men call,
 A dreadfull Feend of gods and men ydrad,
 Whom they by slights allur'd and to their purpose
 lad.

xxxiii. 5. — and murder her owne mynd ;] The
 sense is : Envy did conceal whatsoever good or had she
 found, and in consequence did murder, did destroy the
 peace of, her own mind. TODD.

xxxv. 8. — she] *Envy.* CHURCH.

xxxvi. 6. *A distaffe in her other hand she had.*] That
 is, in her left hand. UPON.

xxxix. 5. — faynes] *Tells delight.* CHURCH.

xxxviii.

Such were these Hags, and so unhandsome drest :
Who when they nigh approaching had espyde
Sir Artegeall return'd from his late quest,
They both arose, and at him loudly cryde,
As it had bene two shepheards curres had scryde
A ravenous wolfe amongst the scattered flockes :
And Envie first, as she that first him eyde,
Towardes him runs, and with rude flaring lockes
About her eares does beat her brest and forehead
knockes.

xxxix.

Then from her mouth the gobbet she does take,
The which whileare she was so greedily
Devouring, even that halfe-gnawen snake,
And at him throws it most despitfully :
The cursed serpent, though she hungrily
Earst chawd thereon, yet was not all so dead,
But that some life remayned secretly ;
And, as he past afore withouten dread,
Bit him behind, that long the marke was to be
read.

xli.

Then th' other comming neare gan him revile,
And foully rayle, with all she could invent ;
Saying that he had, with unmanly guile
And foule abuson, both his honour blent,
And that bright sword, the sword of Iustice lent,
Had stayned with reprochfull crueltie
In guiltlesse blood of many an innocent :
As for Grandtorto, him with treacherie
And traynes having surpriz'd he foully did to die.

xlii.

Thereto the Blatant Beast, by them set on,
At him began aloud to barke and bay
With bitter rage and fell contention ;
That all the woods and rockes nigh to that way
Began to quake and tremble with dismay ;
And all the aire rebellowed againe ;
So dreadfully his hundred tongues did bray :
And evermore those Hags themselves did paine
To sharpen him, and their owne cursed tongs did
straine.

xliii.

And, still among, most bitter wordes they spake,
Most shamefull, most unrighteous, most untrew,
That they the mildest man alive would make
Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeance dew
To her, that so false scaunders at him threw :
And more, to make them pierce and wound more
deepe,
She with the sting which in her vile tongue grew
Did sharpen them, and in fresh poyson steepe :
Yet he past on, and seem'd of them to take no
keepe.

xliiii.

But Talus, hearing her so lewdly rail
And speake so ill of him that well deserved,
Would her have chastiz'd with his yron flail,
If her Sir Artegeall had not preserved,
And him forbidden, who his heast observed :
So much the more at him still did she scold,

xxxviii. 5. — scryde] *Descried*, spied out. CHURCH.

xl. 1. — th' other] *Detraction*. CHURCH.

xli. 8. — themselves did paine] *That is, took great pains*. Fr. *se peiner*. CHURCH.

And stones did cast ; yet he for nought would
swerve
From his right course, but still the way did hold
To Faerie Court ; where what him fell shall else
be told.

[LET us, as usual, take a review of this Fifth Book, which treats, in the form of an allegory, of the most comprehensive of all human virtues.

Herodotus informs us, that the Persian kings celebrated with the highest magnificence their birth-day ; when they granted to every one his boon. Nor with less magnificence the Fairy Queen kept her annual feast, on twelve several days, and granted to every just petitioner the requested boon. On one of these days a disconsolate queen, named Irena, attended by Sir Sergis, made her entry according to the custom established ; and, complaining that an oppressive Tyrant kept by violence her crown from her, prayed that some Knight might be assigned to perform that adventure : her boon was granted, and Sir Artbegall was the Knight assigned. This hero we have been long acquainted with ; and have seen him in Fairy Land, seeking adventures, and perfecting himself in many a chivalrous emprise. But we must suppose that he was not to proceed on his grand quest, till joined by his faithful Talus ; a man of iron mold, without any degree of passion or affection ; but the properest person imaginable to put in act the righteous decrees of Artegeall, or, in one word, to be an executioner. Thus is Justice (imagined in Artegeall) armed with Power (imagined in Talus) ; and, thus accoutred, he relieves the oppressed, distributes right, and redresses injured kingdoms and nations.

Though Artegeall appears in a fuller view in this Book, than hitherto, yet our chief hero, who is to be perfected in justice, that he might in the end obtain true glory, is not forgotten. If Homer dwells on the exploits of Diomed, or shows you at large Agamemnon, or describes the success of Hector ; yet ever and anon you are put in mind of Achilles ; and you plainly perceive the fatal effects of that pernicious wrath, which brought so many woes on Greece. Hence the unity of the Poem is preserved. Why will you not consider Spenser's Poem in the same view, only built on a more extensive plan ?

The Briton Prince becomes acquainted with Artbegall by a rencounter, which often happens among knights-errant : as soon as they are reconciled (for the really great and good never disagree) they go in quest of adventures ; and afterwards visit Mercilla at her royal palace. And here the Briton Prince undertakes the relief of Belge from an oppressive Tyrant : Meantime Artbegall goes to reinstate Irena in her pristine dignity.

The historical allusions in this Book are so very apparent, that the most superficial readers of Spenser never could mistake them, because he mentions the very names. But I wonder that they stopped here, and did not pursue the hint, which the poet had given them. *Introduction*, B. ii. st. 4.

"Of Faery lond yet if he more inquire,
"By certain signes here set in sundry place
"He may it find ; ne let him then admire,
"But yield his sense to be too blunt and hase,
"That note without an bound fine footing trace."

Let us trace this fine footing, and take care we do not overrun our game, or start more game than we are able to catch. Sir Bourbon, is Henry of Navarre ; who was kept from his crown, because a protestant ; and hence in *dangerous mistress of a rude rout*. The Lady Flourdelis is the Genius of France. Bourbon in the encounter with the *rude rout*, i. e. his rebellious subjects, flings away his shield, (*the shield of faith*, Ephes. vi. 16, *his religion*), and thus becomes a recreant Knight : C. xii. st. 2.

—— "the love of lordships and of lands
"Made him become most *faithless* and *unsound*."

Notwithstanding, the Genius of France is forced to take him. See C. xi. st. 64.

"So bore her quite away, nor well nor ill apaid."

Let us trace out the episode of Belge. *There come two Springalls* (viz. the Marquis of Hauree and Adolph. Metkerk,) *farre thence from forreine land* (from the Netherlands) *where they did dwell, to seeke for succour of her* (Queen Elizabeth) *and her peeres*. The Briton Prince, in whom I think imaged the Earl of Leicester, undertakes to deliver Belge from the cruelties of Geryoneo, i. e. the King of Spain. Moreilla is plainly Queen Elizabeth; the Lady brought to the bar, Mary Queen of Scots; the *sage old sire that had to name the kingdom's care with a white silver head*, means the Lord Treasurer Burleigh: Spenser, by some former poems, had brought himself into *this mighty mon's displeasure*, F. Q. vi. xii. 41. He now seems glad to curry favour; and methinks goes a little out of his way in making himself a party-man by abusing the memory of this unhappy Queen. But this is foreign to my design; let us return to our history. The two paramours of Duessa, the Queen of Scots, are Blandamour and Paridell, i. e. the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland. Blandamour is the Earl of Northumberland, because the poet calls him, *The hotspur youth*, F. Q. v. i. 35. This was the well-known name given to the young Percy in the reign of King Henry IV. And is not this speaking out, as plain as the nature of this kind of poetry admits? Paridell is the Earl of Northumberland: Arthegall, I am thoroughly persuaded, is Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Deputy of Ireland, our poet's patron. His military and vigorous executions against the rebels in Ireland, brought upon him a load of envy and detraction, when he came back to England; and this is very plainly hinted at in the close of the 12th Canto. Compare Camden, sub ann. 1580, and Lloyd's *State Worthies*, in the life of Arthur Grey Baron of Wilton. These circumstances are a strong proof that Ireland, agreeably to this kind of prosopopœia, is shadowed out to us by Irena. With this hint given, read and apply the following verses. C. xii. st. 40.

"And that bright sword, the sword of Justice lent,
"Had stained with reproachful crueltye
"In guiltlesse blood of many an innocent."

The sword of Justice, i. e. according to the fable, the sword of gold given him by Astrea; according to the moral, the sword he received as Lord Deputy of Ireland, and the ensign of his command. But I have still farther proofs: for what is Irena, but Ierna, a kingdom or state that stands in need of succour, as much as Belge? See likewise how the situation of the island is pointed out, C. vi. st. 7. Arthegall was going towards Ireland, which lay West of England. See likewise C. xii. st. 3. And he calls it *a ragged common-weale*; as certainly it was, distracted with civil wars, and torn in pieces with perpetual rebellions, fomented by the King of Spain and the Pope.

Old Sir Sergis, I take to be Walsingham. The King of Spain is imaged in the son of Geryon, in the Soldan, and in Grantorto. The Seneschal seems to be the Duke of Alva.

Will it appear too refining, if we suppose that the Sarazin Pollente, with his trap-falls, and *his groome of evil guise*, hence named Guizor, alludes to Charles the 1st King of France, who by sleights did underfong the Protestants, and thus perfidiously massacred them? If this is

allowed, who can help applying the name of Guizor to the head of the Popish league, and chief persecutor, the Duke of Guise? And, to carry on still this allusion, what is all that plot laid in the dead of night, by the same sort of miscreants, to murder the British Virgin (C. vi. st. 27.) but a type of that plot laid against the chief of the British, as well as other Protestant noblemen, "that being thus brought into the net," as Camden relates, "both they, and with them the evangelical religion, might with one stroke, if not have their throats cut, yet at least receive a mortal wound." a plot, which though not fully accomplished, yet ended in a massacre, and was begun at midnight, at a certain signal given, on the eve of St. Bartholomew, anno 1572.

What shall we say of the tilts and tourneys at the spousal of fair Florimell? Had the poet his eye on those tiltings, performed at a vast expence, by the Earl of Arundel, Lord Windsor, Sir Philip Sidney, and Sir Fulk Greville, who challenged all comers; and which were intended to entertain the French nobility and the ambassadors, who came to treat of Anjou's marriage with the Queen? Methinks also I sometimes see a faint resemblance between Braggadochio and the Duke of Anjou, and their huffon servants, Trompart and Simier.

In the fifth Canto Arthegall is imprisoned by an Amazonian dame, called by a French name Radigund; for Radegonda was a famous Queen of France. Now as Spenser carries two faces under one hood, and means more always than in plain words he tells you; why, I say, does he, who writes in a "continued allegory," give you this episode, if there is not more meant than what the dull reader contains? The story, I think, is partly moral, but chiefly historical, and alludes to Arthegall's father being taken prisoner in France; who almost ruined his patrimony to pay his ransom. See Camden, and Lloyd's life of Arthur Grey, Baron of Wilton. 'Tis not at all foreign to the nature of this Poem to mix family histories, and unite them in one person.

In the ninth Canto we read of a wicked villian which *wonned in a rocke*, and pilfered the country ill around: he is named Malengin, from his mischievous disposition. Is not this robber a type of those rebels, who had taken their refuge in Glandilough, "beset round about with craggy rocks," as Camden relates, "and a steep downfall, and with trees and thickets of wood, the paths and cross-ways whereof are scarce known to the dwellers thereabouts?" This villian is destroyed without mercy or remorse, as the rebels were with their accomplices, *crying in vain for help, when help was past*, C. ix. st. 19. But if the reader has a mind to see how far types and symbols may be carried, I refer him to my own note on C. viii. st. 45. And, upon a review of what is here offered relating to historical allusions, if the reader thinks my arguments too flimsy and extended beyond their due limits, and should laugh

"To see their thrids so thin, as spyders frame,

"And eke so short, that seem'd their ends out shortly came;"

I would desire him to consider what latitude of interpretation all typical and symbolical writings admit; and that this Poem is full of historical allusions, as the poet hints in many places.

UPTON.]

THE SIXTH BOOK OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE;

CONTAINING

THE LEGEND OF SIR CALIDORE, OR OF COURTESIE.

I.
 THE waies, through which my wearie steps I guyde
 In this delightfull land of Faëry,
 Are so exceeding spacious and wyde,
 And sprinckled with such sweet variety
 Of all that pleasant is to eare or eye,
 That I, nigh ravisht with rare thoughts delight,
 My tedious travell doe forget thereby;
 And, when I gin to feele decay of might,
 It strength to me supplies and chears my dulled
 spright.

II.
 Such secret comfort and such heavenly pleasures,
 Ye sacred Imps, that on Parnasso dwell, [sures
 And there the keeping have of Learnings threa-
 Which doe all worldly riches farre excell,
 Into the mindes of mortall men doe well,
 And goodly fury into them infuse;
 Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me well
 In these strange waies where never foote did use,
 Ne none can find but who was taught them by the
 Muse:

III.
 Revele to me the sacred nourserie
 Of Vertue, which with you doth there remaine,
 Where it in silver bowre does hidden ly
 From view of men and wicked worlds disdainie:
 Since it at first was by the Gods with paine
 Planted in earth, being deriv'd at furst
 From heavenly seedes of bounty sovaine,
 And by them long with carefull labour nurst,
 Till it to ripenesse grew, and forth to honour burst.

IV.
 Amongst them all growes not a fayrer flowre
 Then is the bloosme of comely Courtesie;
 Which though it on a lowly stalke doe bowre,
 Yet brancheth forth in brave nobilitie,
 And spreads itselfe through all civilitie:
 Of which though present age doe plenteous seeme,
 Yet, being matcht with plaine antiquitie,
 Ye will them all but fayned shoves esteeme,
 Which carry colours faire that feeble eies misdeeme:

V.
 But, in the triall of true Courtesie,
 Its now so farre from that which then it was,

II. 5. — *doe well.*] That is, cause to flow. CHURCH.
 III. 5. — *with paine*] With difficulty. FR. *peine*.
 UPTON.
 IV. 9. — *that feeble eies misdeeme.*] Judge wrongly
 of. UPTON.

That it indeed is nought but forgerie,
 Fashion'd to please the eies of them that pas,
 Which see not perfect things but in a glas:
 Yet is that glasse so gay that it cau blynd
 The wisest sight, to thinke gold that is bras:
 But Vertues seat is deepe within the mynd,
 And not in outward shows but inward thoughts de-
 fynd.

VI.
 But where shall I in all antiquity
 So faire a patterne finde, where may be seene
 The goodly praise of princely Curtesie,
 As in Yourselfe, O sovaine Lady Queene?
 In whose pure minde, as in a mirrour sheene,
 It shoves, and with her brightnesse doth inflame
 The eyes of all which thereon fixed beene;
 But meriteth indeede an higher name:
 Yet so, from low to high, uplifted is your Name.

VII.
 Then pardon me, most dreaded Sovaine,
 That from Yourselfe I doe this Vertue bring,
 And to Yourselfe doe it returne againe:
 So from the ocean all rivers spring,
 And tribute hacke repay as to their king:
 Right so from you all goodly vertues well
 Into the rest which round about you ring,
 Faire Lords and Ladies which about you dwell,
 And doe adorne your Court where Courtesies excell.

CANTO I.

Calidore saves from Malefort
 A Damzell used vylde:
 Doth vanquish Crudor; and doth make
 Briana wexe more mylde.

I.
 Or Court, it seemes, men Courtesie doe call,
 For that it there most useth to abound;
 And well besemeth that in Princes hall
 That Vertue should be plentifully found,

v. 5. *Which see not perfect things*] *Not perfect things*,
 i. e. not perfectly, darkly. UPTON.
 v. 6. — *gay*] *Glaring*. CHURCH.
 vi. 8. *But &c.*] *By name*, in the eighth line, is meant
appellation; in the last line it signifies *character*. CHURCH.
 vii. 6. — *well*] *Flow*. UPTON.
 vii. 7. — *which round about you ring.*] That is,
 which *entirely* you. Alluding to the *Ring* at Court. CHURCH

Which of all goodly manners is the ground,
And roote of civill conversation :
Right so in Faery Court it did redound,
Where courteous Knights and Ladies most did won
Of all on earth, and made a matchlesse paragon.

II.

Butmongst them all was none more courteous Knight
Then Calidore, belovèd over all :
In whom it seemes that gentlenesse of spright
And manners mylde were planted naturall ;
To which he adding comely guize withall
And gracious speach, did steale mens hearts away :
Nathlesse thereto he was full stout and tall,
And well approv'd in batelious affray,
That him did much renouwe, and far his fame
display.

III.

Ne was there Knight ne was there Lady found
In Faery Court, but him did deare embrace
For his faire usage and conditions sound,
The which in all mens liking gayned place,
And with the greatest purchast greatest grace ;
Which he could wisely use, and well apply,
To please the best, and th' evill to embase :
For he loathd leasing and base flattery,
And loved simple truth and stedfast honesty.

IV.

And now he was in travell on his way,
Uppon an hard adventure sore bestad,
Whenas by chaunce he met uppou a day
With Artegall, returning yet halfe sad
From his late conquest which he gotten had :
Who whenas each of other had a sight,
They knew themselves, and both their persons rad :
When Calidore thus first ; " Haile, noblest Knight
Of all this day on ground that breatheen living spright !

V.

" Now tell, if please you, of the good successe
Which ye have had in your late euterprize."
To whom Sir Artegall gan to expresse
His whole exploite and valorous emprize,
In order as it did to him arize.
" Now, happy man," said then Sir Calidore,
" Which have, so goodly as ye can devise,
Atchiev'd so hard a quest, as few before ;
That shall you most renowned make for evermore.

VI.

" But where ye ended have, now I begin
To tread an endless trace ; withouten gujde
Or good direction how to enter in,
Or how to issue forth in waies untryde,
In perils strange, in labours long and wide ;
In which although good fortune me befall,
Yet shall it not by none be testifyde."
" What is that quest," quoth then Sir Artegall,
" That you into such perils presently doth call ?"

VII.

" The Blattant Beast," quoth he, " I doe pursew,
And through the world incessantly doe chase,
Till I him overtake, or else subdew :
Yet know I not or how or in what place

III. 3. *For his &c.]* That is, for his genteel behaviour
and good qualities. CHURCH.

IV. 7. *They knew themselves,]* They knew each other.
Fr. *Its se connoissient.* CHURCH.

To find him out, yet still I forward trace."
" What is that Blattant Beast then," he replide !
" It is a Monster bred of hellishe race,"
Then answered he, " which often hath annoyd
Good Knights and Ladies true, and many else des-
troyd.

VIII.

" Of Cerberus whilome he was begot
And fell Chimæra, in her darokesome den,
Through fowle commixture of his filthy blot ;
Where he was fostred long in Stygian fen,
Till he to perfect ripenesse grew ; and then
Into this wicked world he forth was sent
To be the plague and scourge of wretched men :
Whom with vile tongue and venomous intent
He sore doth wound, and bite, and cruely torment."

IX.

" Then, since the Salvage Island I did leave,"
Sayd Artegall, " I such a Beast did see,
The which did seeme a thousand tongucs to have,
That all in spight and malice did agree,
With which he hayd and loudly barked at mee,
As if that he attonce would me devoure :
But I, that knew myselfe from perill free,
Did nought regard his malice nor his powre ;
But he the more his wicked poyson forth did poure."

X.

" That surely is that Beast," saide Calidore,
" Which I pursue, of whom I am right glad
To heare these tidings which of none afore
Through all my weary travell I have had :
Yet now some hope your words unto me add."
" Now God you speed," quoth then Sir Artegall,
" And keepe your body from the daunger drad ;
For ye have much adoe to deale withall !"
So both tooke goodly leave, and parted severall.

XI.

Sir Calidore thence travelled not long,
Whenas by chaunce a comely Squire he found,
That thorough some more mighty enemies wound
Both hand and foote unto a tree was bound ;
Who, seeing him from farre, with piteous sound
Of his shrill cries him called to his aide :
To whom approaching, in that painefull stound
When he him saw, for no demaunds he staide,
But first him losde, and afterwards thus to him said ;

XII.

" Unhappy Squire, what hard mishap thee brought
Into this bay of perill and disgrace ? [wrought,
What cruell hand thy wretched thraldome
And thee captvyed in this shamefull place ?"
To whom he answered thus ; " My haplesse case
Is not occasion through my misdesert,
But through misfortune, which did me abase
Unto this shame, and my young hope subvert,
Ere that I in her guilefull traines was well expert.

XIII.

" Not farre from hence, uppou yond rocky hill,
Hard by a streight there stands a Castle strong,
Which doth observe a custome lewd and ill,
And it hath long mayntaind with mighty wrong :
For may no Knight nor Lady passe along
That way, (and yet they needs must passe that way,

X. 9. ——— severall.] *Severally,* asunder. CHURCH.

By reason of the streight, and rocks among,
But they that Ladies lockes doe shave away,
And that Knights beard, for toll which they for
passage pay."

xiv.

"A shamefull use as ever I did heare,"
Sayd Calidore, "and to be overthrowne.
But by what meanes did they at first it reare,
And for what cause? tell if thou have it knowne."
Sayd then that Squire; "The Lady, which doth
This Castle, is by name Briana hight; [owne
Then which a prouder Lady liveth none:
She long time hath deare lov'd a doughty Knight,
And sought to win his love by all the meanes she
might.

xv.

"His name is Crudor; who, through high disdain
And proud despight of his selfe-pleasing mynd,
Refused hath to yeeld her love againe,
Untill a mantle she for him doe fynd
With beards of Knights and lockes of Ladies lynd:
Which to provide, she hath this Castle dight,
And therein hath a Seneschall assynd,
Cald Maleffort, a man of mickle might,
Who executeth her wicked will with worse despight.

xvi.

"He, this same day as I that way did come
With a faire Damzell my beloved deare,
In execution of her lawlesse doome
Did set upon us flying both for feare;
For little bootes against him hand to reare:
Me first he tooke unable to withstond,
And whiles he her pursued every where,
Till his returne unto this tree he bond;
Ne wote I surely whether he her yet have fond."

xvii.

Thus whiles they spake they heard a ruefull shriek
Of one loud crying, which they streightway ghest
That it was she the which for helpe did seeke.
Tho, looking up unto the cry to lest, [blest
They saw that Carle from farre with hand un-
Hayling that Mayden by the yellow heare,
That all her garments from her snowy brest,
And from her head her lockes he nigh did teare,
Ne would he spare for pittie, nor refrain for feare.

xviii.

Which haynous sight when Calidore beheld,
Eftsoones he loods that Squire, and so him left
With hearts dismay and inward dolour queld,
For to pursue that Villaine, which had reft
That piteous spoile by so iniurious theft:
Whom overtaking, loude to him he cryde;
"Leave, faytor, quickly that misgotten weft
To him that hath it better justifyde,
And turne thee soone to him of whom thou art
defyde."

xix.

Who, hearkning to that voice, himselfe upreard,
And, seeing him so fiercely towards make,
Against him stoutly ran, as nought afeard,

But rather more enrag'd for those words sake;
And with sterne count'naunce thus unto him
"Art thou the Caytive that defyest me, [spake
And for this Mayd, whose party thou doest take,
Wilt give thy beard, though it but little bee?
Yet shall it not her lockes for ramsome fro me
free."

xx.

With that he fiercely at him flew, and layd
On hideous strokes with most importune might,
That oft he made him stagger as unstayd,
And oft recoile to shunne his sharpe despight:
But Calidore, that was well skild in fight,
Him long forbore, and still his spirite spar'd,
Lying in waite how him he damage might:
But when he felt him shrinke, and come to ward,
He greater grew, and gan to drive at him more
hard.

xxi.

Like as a water-streame, whose swelling sours
Shall drive a mill, within strong bancks is pent,
And long restrayned of his ready course;
So soone as passage is unto him leut,
Breakes forth, and makes his way more violent;
Such was the fury of Sir Calidore:
When once he felt his foe-man to relent,
He fiercely him pursu'd, and pressed sore;
Who as he still decayd, so he encreased more.

xxii.

The heavy burden of whose dreadfull might
Whenas the Carle no longer could sustaine,
His heart gan faint, and streight he tooke his
flight
Toward the Castle, where, if need constraine,
His hope of refuge used to remaine:
Whom Calidore perceiving fast to fle,
He him pursu'd and chased through the plaine,
That he for dread of death gan loude to crie
Unto the Ward to open to him hastilie.

xxiii.

They, from the wall him seeing so aghast,
The gate soone opened to receive him in;
But Calidore did follow him so fast,
That even in the porch he him did win,
And cleft his head asunder to his chin:
The carkasse tumbling downe within the dore
Did choke the entrance with a lumps of sin,
That it could not be shut; whilest Calidore
Did enter in, and slew the Porter on the flore.

xxiv.

With that the rest the which the Castle kept
About him flockt, and hard at him did lay;
But he them all from him full lightly swept,
As doth a steare, in heat of sommers day,
With his long taile the bryzes brush away.
Thence passing forth into the hall he came,
Where of the Lady selfe in sad dismay
He was ymett, who with uncomely shame
Gan him salute, and fowle upbrayd with fault
blame:

xx. 4. — recoile] *Retreat.* TODD.

xxiii. 4. — win.] *Overtake.* CHURCH. I should rather interpret it, *overcome* or *obtained the advantage over* him. TODD.

xxiii. 9. — *on the flore.*] *On the spot.* CHURCH.

xxiv. 5. — *the bryzes*] *The breeze* or *gad flies* Anglo-Sax. *bryza.* URRON.

xvii. 4. — *to lest.*] *Listen.* CHURCH.

xviii. 7. — *that misgotten weft*] *Wanderer.* FR. *gnaive.* TODD.

xviii. 8. *To him that hath &c.*] *That is, to him that hath a better title to it.* CHURCH.

xxv.
 "False traytor Knight," said she, "no Knight at all,

But scorne of armes ! that hast with guilty hand
 Murdered my men, and slaine my Seneschall ;
 Now comest thou to rob my house unmand,
 And spoile my selfe, that cannot thee withstand ?
 Yet doubt thou not, but that some better Knight
 Then thou, that shall thy treason understand,
 Will it avenge, and pay thee with thy right :
 And if none do, yet shame shall thee with shame
 requight."

xxvi.
 Much was the Knight abashed at that word ;
 Yet answer'd thus ; " Not unto me the shame,
 But to the shamefull doer it afford.
 Bloud is no blemish ; for it is no blame
 To punish those that doe deserve the same ;
 But they that breake bands of civillie,
 And wicked customes make, those doe defame
 Both noble armes and gentle curtesie ;
 No greater shame to man then inhumanitie.

xxvii.
 " Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame, forgoe
 This evill manner which ye here maintaine,
 And doe instead thereof mild curt'sie shewe
 To all that passe : That shall you glory gaine
 More then his love, which thus ye seeke t'
 obtaine."

Wherewith all full of wrath she thus replyde ;
 " Vile recreant ! know that I doe much disdaine
 Thy courteous lore, that doest my Love deride,
 Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee be
 defyde."

xxviii.
 " To take defiance at a Ladies word,"
 Quoth he, " I hold it no indignity ;
 But were he here, that would it with his sword
 Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby."
 " Cowherd," quoth she, " were not that thou
 wouldst fly
 Ere he doe come, he should be soone in place."
 " If I doe so," said he, " then liberty
 I leave to you for aye me to disgrace
 With all those shames, that erst ye spake me to
 deface."

xxix.
 With that a Dwarfe she cald to her in hast,
 And taking from her band a ring of Gould
 (A privy token which betwene them past)
 Bad him to flie with all the speed he could
 To Crudor ; and desire him that he would
 Vouchsafe to reskue her against a Knight, [hould,
 Who through strong powre had now herself in
 Having late slaine her Seneschall in fight,
 And all her people murdered with outragious might :

xxx.
 The Dwarfe his way did hast, and went all night :
 But Calidore did with her there abyde
 The comming of that so much threatned Knight ;
 Where that discourteous Dame with scornfull
 And fowle entreaty him indignifyde, [pryde
 That yron heart it hardly could sustaine :
 Yet he, that could his wrath full wicely guyde,

xxx. 5. — indignifyde.] *Treated disdainfully, unworthily; from indigne. Todd.*

Did well endure her womanish disdaine,
 And did himselfe from fraile impatience refraine.

xxxii.
 The morrow next, before the lampe of light
 Above the earth upreard his flaming head,
 The Dwarfe, which bore that message to her
 Knight,
 Brought answers backe, that ere he tasted bread
 He would her succour, and alive or dead
 Her foe deliver up into her hand :
 Therefore he w'd her doe away all dread ;
 And, that of him she mote assured stand,
 He sent to her his basenet as a faithfull band.

xxxiii.
 Thereof full blyth the Lady streight became,
 And gan t' augment her bitternesse much more :
 Yet no whit more appalled for the same,
 Ne ought dismayed was Sir Calidore ;
 But rather did more chearefull seeme therefore :
 And, having soone his armes about him dight,
 Did issue forth to meete his foe afore ;
 Where long he stayed not, whenas a Knight
 He spide come pricking on with all his powre and
 might.

xxxiiii.
 Well weend he streight that he should be the same
 Which tooke in hand her quarrell to maintaine ;
 Ne stayd to aske if it were he by name,
 But coucht his speare, and ran at him amaine.
 They bene ymett in middet of the plaine
 With so fell fury and dispiteous forse,
 That neither could the others stroke sustaine,
 But rudely rowld to ground both man and horse,
 Neither of other taking pittie nor remorse.

xxxv.
 But Calidore uprose againe full light,
 Whiles yet his foe lay fast in sencelesse sound ;
 Yet would he not him hurt although he might :
 For shame he weend a sleeping wight to wound.
 But when Briana saw that drery stound,
 There where she stood upon the Castle wall,
 She deem'd him sure to have bene dead on ground ;
 And made such piteous mourning therewithall,
 That from the battlements she ready seem'd to fall.

xxxvi.
 Nathlesse at length himselfe he did upreare
 In lustlesse wise ; as if against his will,
 Ere he had slept his fill, he wakened were,
 And gan to stretch his limbs ; which feeling ill
 Of his late fall, awhile he rested still :
 But, when he saw his foe before in vew,
 He shooke off luskishnesse ; and, courage chill
 Kindling afresh, gan battell to renew,
 To prove if better foote then horsebacke would
 ensew.

xxxvii.
 There then began a fearefull cruell fray
 Betwixt them two for maystery of might :
 For both were wondrous practicke in that play,
 And passing well expert in single fight,

xxxii. 9. — basenet] *Basnyt*, helmet or headpiece: from the French *bassinet*. CHURCH.

xxxv. 7. — luskishnesse,] *Sluggishness*, inactivity. Todd.

And both inflam'd with furious despight ;
Which as it still encreast, so still increast
Their cruell strokes and terrible affright ;
Ne once for ruth their rigour they releast,
Ne once to breath awhile their angers tempest ceast.

xxxvii.

Thus long they trac'd and trauest to and fro,
And tryde all waies hew each mote entrance make
Into the life of his malignant fee ; [brake,
They hew'd their helmes, and plates asunder
As they had potshares bene ; for nought mote
slake

Their greedy vengeaunces but goary blood ;
That at the last like to a purple lake
Of bloudy gore congeal'd about them stood,
Which from their riuen sides forth gushed like a
flood.

xxxviii.

At length it chaunst that both their hands on hie
At once did heave with all their powre and might,
Thinking the utmost of their force to trie,
And prove the finall fortune of the fight ;
But Calidore, that was more quicke of sight
And nimbler-handed then his enemy,
Prevented him before his stroke could light,
And on the helmet smote him formerlie,
That made him stoupe to ground with mecke
humilitie :

xxxix.

And, ere he could recover foote againe,
He following that faire advantage fast
His stroke redoubled with such might and maine,
That him upon the ground he groveling cast ;
And leaping to him light would have unlast
His helme, to make unto his vengeance way :
Who, seeing in what daunger he was plast,
Cryde out ; " Ah mercie, Sir ! doe me not slay,
But save my life, which lot before your foot doth
lay."

xli.

With that his mortall hand awhile he stayd ;
And, having somewhat calm'd his wrathfull heat
With goodly patience, thus he to him sayd ;
" And is the boast of that proud Ladies threat,
That menaced me from the field to beat,
Now brought to this ? By this now may ye learne
Strangers no more so rudely to entreat ;
But put away proud loeke and usage sterne,
The which shal nought to you but foule dishonor
yearne.

xlii.

" For nothing is more blamfull to a Knight,
That court'sie doth as well as armes professe,
However strong and fortunate in fight,
Then the reproch of pride and crueltie :
In vain he seeketh others to suppress,
Who hath not leard himselfe first to subdew :
All flesh is frayle and full of ficklenesse,
Subject to fortunes chance, still chaunging new ;
What haps to day to me to morrow may to you.

xxxvii. 5. — potshares] This is the old spelling of
potshard. TODD.

xxxviii. 8 — formerlie.] Formerlie is first : that
is, Calidore first smote him. CHURCH.

xxxix 5. — would have unlast] Unlaced. TODD.

xxxix. 9. — lot] That is, Fortune. CHURCH.

xl. 9. — yearne.] For earne, gain, procure. CHURCH.

xliii.

" Who will not mercie unto others shew,
How can he mercie ever hope to have ?
To pay each with his owne is right and dew :
Yet since ye mercie now doe need to crave,
I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to save,
With these conditions which I will propound :
First, that ye better shall yourselfe behave
Unto all errant Knights, whereso on ground ;
Next, that ye Ladies ayde in every stead and
stound."

xliv.

The wretched man, that all this while iud dwell
In dread of death, his heasts did gladly heare,
And promist to performe his precept well,
And whatsoever else he would require.
So, suffering him to rise, he made him sweare
By his owne sword, and by the crosse thereon,
To take Briana for his loving fere
Withouten dowre or composition ;
But to release his former foule condition.

xlv.

All which accepting, and with faithfull oth
Bynding himselfe most firmly to obey,
He up arose, however life or loth,
And swore to him true fealtie for aye.
Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay,
The sad Briana which all this beheld ;
Who coming forth yet full of late affray
Sir Calidore upheard, and to her teld
All this accord to which he Crudor had compeld.

xlvi.

Whereof she new more glad then sory earst,
All overcome with infinite affect
For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst
Her stubberne hart with inward deepe effect,
Before his feet herselfe she did proiect ;
And him adoring as her lives deare Lord,
With all due thanks and dutifull respect,
Herselfe acknowledg'd bound for that accord,
By which he had to her both life and love restord.

xlvii.

So all returning to the Castle glad,
Most joyfully she them did entertaine ;
Where goodly glee and feast to them she made,
To shew her thankefull mind and meaning faire,
By all the meanes she mote it best explaine :
And, after all, unto Sir Calidore
She freely gave that Castle for his paine,
And herselfe bound to him for evermore ;
So wondrously now chaung'd from that she was
afere.

xlviii.

But Calidore himselfe would not retaine
Nor land nor fee for hyre of his good deede,
But gave them streight unto that Squire againe,
Whom from her Seneschall he lately freed,
And to his Damzell, as their rightful meed
For recompence of all their former wrong :
There he remaind with them right well agreed,
Till of his wounds he waxed hole and strong ;
And then to his first quest he passed forth along.

xlv. 2. — affect] Affection. CHURCH.

xlv. 5. — proiect ;] Throw. CHURCH.

xlvii. 4. — and meaning faire.] That is, Joy
CHURCH.

CANTO II.

Calidore sees young Tristram slay
A proud discourteous Knight:
He makes him Squire, and of him learns
His state and present plight.

I.

WHAT vertue is so fitting for a Knight,
Or for a Ladie whom a Knight should love,
As Curtesie; to beare themselves aright
To all of each degree as doth behove?
For whether they be placed high above
Or low beneath, yet ought they well to know
Their good; that none them rightly may reprove
Of rudenesse for not yielding what they owe:
Great skill it is such duties timely to bestow.

II.

Thereto great helpe Dame Nature selfe doth lend:
For some so goodly gracious are by kind,
That every action doth them much commend,
And in the eyes of men great liking find;
Which others that have greater skill in mind,
Though they enforce themselves, cannot attaine:
For everie thing, to which one is inclin'd,
Doth best become and greatest grace doth gaine:
Yet praise likewise deserve good thewes enforst
with paine.

III.

That well in courteous Calidore appeares;
Whose every act and deed, that he did say,
Was like enchantment, that through both the eares
And both the eyes did steale the hart away.
He now againe is on his former way
To follow his first quest, whenas he spyde
A tall young man, from thence not farre away,
Fighting on foot, as well he him deseryde,
Against an armed Knight that did on horsebacke
ryde.

IV.

And them beside a Ladie faire he saw
Standing alone on foote in foule array;
To whom himselfe he hastily did draw
To weet the cause of so uncomely fray,
And to depart them, if so be he may:
But, ere he came in place, that Youth had kild
That armed Knight, that low on ground he lay;
Which when he saw, his hart was inly child
With great amazement, and his thought with wonder
fild.

V.

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to be
A goodly youth of amiable grace,
Yet but a slender slip, that scarce did see
Yet seventene yeares, but tall and faire of face,
That sure he deem'd him borne of noble race:
All in a woodmans iacket he was clad
Of Lincolne greene, belayd with silver lace;

i. 6. ——— yet ought they well to know

Their good;] That is, they ought to know
how to behave themselves. CHURCH.

ii. 9. ——— good thewes enforst with paine.] Morals and
manners acquired by practice and habit. UPRON.

iii. 1. *That*] Namely, that some so goodly &c. CHURCH.

iv. 5. *And to depart them.*] That is, to part or separate
them. CHURCH.

v. 7. ——— belayd] That is, laid over or decorated.
TODD.

And on his head an hood with aglets sprad,
And by his side his hunters horne he hanging had.

VI.

Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne,
Pinckt upon gold, and paled part per part,
As then the guize was for each gentle swayne:
In his right hand he held a trembling dart,
Whose fellow he before had sent apart;
And in his left he held a sharpe bore-speare,
With which he went to launch the salvage hart
Of many a lyon and of many a beare,
That first unto his hand in chase did happen neare.

VII.

Whom Calidore awhile well having vewed,
At length bespake; "What meanes this, gentle
Swaine!
Why hath thy hand too bold itselfe embrewed
In blood of Knight, the which by thee is slaine,
By thee no Knight; which armes impugne th
plaine!"
"Certes," said he, "loth were I to have broken
The Law of Armes; yet breake it should againe,
Rather then let mysefve of wight be stroken,
So long as these two armes were able to be broken.

VIII.

"For not I him, as this his Ladie here
May witness well, did offer first to wrong,
Ne surely thus unarm'd I likely were;
But he me first through pride and puissance strong
Assayd, not knowing what to armes doth long."
"Perdie great blame," then said Sir Calidore,
"For armed Knight a wight unarm'd to wrong:
But then aread, thou gentle Chylde, wherefore
Betwixt you two began this strife and sterne upore."

IX.

"That shall I sooth," said he, "to you declare.
I, whose unryper yeares are yet unfit
For thing of weight or worke of greater care,
Doe spend my dayes and bend my carelesse wit
To salvage chace, where I thereon may hit
In all this Forrest and wyld wooddie raine:
Where, as this day I was enraunging it,
I chaunst to meete this Knight who there lyes
slaine,
Together with this Ladie, passing on the plaine.

X.

"The Knight, as ye did see, on horsebacke was,
And this his Ladie, that him ill became,
On her faire feet by his horse-side did pas
Through thicke and thin, unfit for any Dame:
Yet not content, more to increase his shame,
Whenso she lagged, as she needs mote so,
He with his speare (that was to him great blame)
Would thumpe her forward and inforce to goe,
Weeping to him in vaine and making piteous woe.

v. 8. ——— with aglets sprad,] Fr. *alguillette*, a point
or tag of a lace. TODD.

vi. 1. *Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne.*] Mr.
Tyrwhitt points out the Fr. *Cordouan* as the original of
this word, which means Spanish leather, so called from
Corduba. TODD.

viii. 5. ——— not knowing &c.] Ignorant of what belongs
to the Law of Arms. CHURCH.

ix. 6. ——— raine:] *Region*. TODD.

xi.

"Which when I saw, as they me passed by,
 Much was I moved in indignant mind,
 And gan to blame him for such cruelty
 Towards a Ladie, whom with usage kind
 He rather should have taken up behind.
 Wherewith he wroth and full of proud disdain
 Tooke in foule scorne that I such fault did find,
 And me in lieu thereof revild againe,
 Threatning to chastize me, as doth t'a chylde pertaine.

xii.

"Which I no lesse disdainyng, backe returned
 His scornefull taunts unto his teeth againe,
 That he streightway with haughtie choler burned,
 And with his speare strooke me one stroke or
 twaine ;
 Which I, euforst to beare though to my paine,
 Cast to requite ; and with a slender dart,
 Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine,
 Strooke him, as seemeth, underneath the hart,
 That through the wound his spirit shortly did de-
 part."

xiii.

Much did Sir Calidore admyre his speach
 Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke
 That through the mayles had made so strong a
 breach

Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke
 His wrath on him that first occasion broke :
 Yet rested not, but further gan inquire
 Of that same Ladie, whether what he spoke
 Were soothly so, and that th' unrighteous ire
 Of her owne Knight had given him his owne due hire.

xiv.

Of all which whenas she could nought deny,
 But cleard that stripling of th' imputed blame ;
 Sayd then Sir Calidore ; "Neither will I
 Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite clame:
 For, what he spake, for you he spake it, Dame ;
 And what he did, he did himselfe to save :
 Against both which that Knight wrought knight-
 lesse shame :

For Knights and all men this by nature have,
 Towards all womenkind them kindly to behave.

xv.

"But, sith that he is gone irrevocable,
 Please it you, Ladie, to us to aread
 What cause could make him so dishonourable
 To drive you so on foot, unfit to tread
 And lackey by him, gainst all womanhead."
 "Certes, Sir Knight," sayd she, "full loth I were
 To raise a lyving blame against the dead :
 But, since it me concernes myselfe to clere,
 I will the truth discover as it chaunst whylere.

xvi.

"This day, as he and I together roade
 Upon our way to which we weren bent,
 We chaunst to come foreby a covert glade
 Within a wood, whereas a Ladie gent

xiv. 4. — but rather doe quite clame:] *Release* him, and *quit* him. *Quit claim* is releasing an action that one person has against another, and likewise a quitting any claim or tite to lands. UPON.

xiv. 7. — knightlesse] *Unknightly*. CHURCH.

Sate with a Knight in ioyous iolliment
 Of their franke loves, free from all gealous spyes :
 Faire was the Ladie sure, that mote content
 An hart not carried with too curious eyes,
 And unto him did shew all lovely courtesyes.

xvii.

"Whom when my Knight did see so lovely faire,
 He inly gan her lover to envy,
 And wish that he part of his spoyle might share:
 Whereto whenas my presence he did spy
 To be a let, he bad me by and by
 For to alight : but, whenas I was loth
 My Loves owne part to leave so suddenly,
 He with strong hand down from his steed me
 throw'th,
 And with presumptuous powre against that Knight
 streight go'th.

xviii.

"Unarm'd all was the Knight, as then more meete
 For Ladies service and for loves delight,
 Then fearing any foeman there to meete :
 Whereof he taking oddes, streight bids him dight
 Himselfe to yeeld his Love or else to fight :
 Whereat the other starting up dismayd,
 Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might,
 To leave his Love he should be ill apayd,
 In which he had good right gaynst all that it gaine-
 sayd.

xix.

"Yet since he was not presently in plight
 Her to defend, or his to iustifie,
 He him requested, as he was a Knight,
 To lend him day his better right to trie,
 Or stay till he his armes, which were thereby,
 Might lightly fetch : but he was fierce and whot,
 Ne time would give, nor any termes aby,
 But at him flew, and with his speare him smot ;
 From which to thinke to save himselfe it booted not.

xx.

"Meane while his Ladie, which this outrage saw,
 Whilest they together for the quarry strove,
 Into the covert did herselfe withdraw,
 And closely hid herselfe within the grove.
 My Knight hers soone, as seemes, to daunger drove
 And left sore wounded : but, when her he mist,
 He woxe halfe mad ; and in that rage gan rove
 And range through all the wood, whereso he wist
 She hidden was, and sought her so long as him list.

xxi.

"But, whenas her he by no meanes could find,
 After long search and chauff he turned backe
 Unto the place where me he left behind :
 There gan he me to curse and ban, for lacke
 Of that faire bootie, and with bitter wracke
 To wreake on me the guilt of his owne wrong :
 Of all which I yet glad to beare the packe
 Strove to appease him, and perswaded long ;
 But still his passion grew more violent and strong.

xxii.

"Then, as it were t' avenge his wrath on mee,
 When forward we should fare, he flat refused

xvii. 5. — let.] *Hindrance*. CHURCH.

xx. 2. — the quarry] *The game, or prey*. CHURCH.

To take me up (as this young man did see)
Upon his steed, for no iust cause accused,
But forst to trot on foot, and foule misused,
Pouncing me with the butt-end of his speare,
In vaine complaying to be so abused ;
For he regarded neither playnt nor teare,
But more enforst my paine, the more my plaints to
heare.

xxiii.

So passed we, till this young man us met ;
And being moov'd with pittie of my plight
Spake, as was meete, for ease of my regret :
Whereof befell what now is in your sight."
" Now sure," then said Sir Calidore, " and right
Me seemes, that him befell by his owne fault :
Whoever thinks through confidence of might,
Or through support of count'nance proud and
hault,
To wrong the weaker, oft falles in his owne assault."

xxiv.

Then turning backe unto that gentle Boy,
Which had himselfe so stoutly well acquit ;
Seeing his face so lovely sterne and coy,
And hearing th' answeres of his pregnant wit,
He prayd it much, and much admyred it ;
That sure he weend him born of noble blood,
With whom those graces did so goodly fit :
And, when he long had him beholding stood,
He burst into these wordes, as to him seemed good ;

xxv.

" Faire gentle Swayne, and yet as stout as fayre,
That in these woods amongst the nymphs dost
wonne,
Which daily may to thy sweete lookes repayre,
As they are wont unto Latonaes sonne
After his chace on woodie Cynthus donne ;
Well may I certes such an one thee reed,
As hy thy worth thou worthily hast wonne,
Or surely borne of some heroicke sead,
That in thy face appears and grations goodly-
head.

xxvi.

" But, should it not displease thee it to tell,
(Unless thou in these woods thyselfe conceale
For love amongst the woodie gods to dwell,)
I would thyselfe require thee to reveale ;
For deare affection and unfayned zeale
Which to thy noble personage I beare,
And wish thee grow in worship and great weale :
For, since the day that armes I first did reare,
I never saw in any greater hope appeare."

xxvii.

To whom then thus the noble Youth ; " May be,
Sir Knight, that, by discovering my estate,
Harme may arise unweeting unto me ;
Nathelasse, sith ye so courteous seemed late,
To you I will not feare it to relate.
Then wote ye that I am a Briton borne,
Somme of a king, (however thorough fate
Or fortune I my cuntry have forlorne,
And lost the crowne which should my head by
right adorne,)

xxviii.

" And Tristram is my name ; the onely heire
Of good king Meliograss which did rayne

In Cornewale, till that he through lives despeire
Untimely dyde, before I did attaine
Ripe yeares of reason, my right to maintaine :
After whose death his brother, seeing mee
An infant, weake a kingdome to sustaine,
Upon him tooke the roiall high degree,
And sent me, where him list, instructed for to bee.

xxix.

" The widow queene my mother, which then hight
Faire Emiline, conceiving then great feare
Of my fraile safetie, resting in the might
Of him that did the kingly scepter beare,
Whose jealous dread induring not a peare
Is wont to cut off all that doubt may breed ;
Thought best away me to remove somewhere
Into some forrein land, whereas no need
Of dreaded daunger might his doubtfull humor
feed.

xxx.

" So, taking counsell of a wise man red,
She was by him adviz'd to send me quight
Out of the cuntry wherein I was bred,
The which the fertile Lionesse is hight,
Into the Land of Faerie, where no wight
Should weet of me, nor worke me any wrong :
To whose wiew she hearkning sent me streight
Into this Land, where I have wond thus long
Since I was ten yeares old, now grown to stature
strong.

xxxi.

" All which my daies I have not lewdly spent,
Nor spilt the blossome of my tender yeares
In ydlenesse ; but, as was convenient,
Have trayned bene with many noble feres
In gentle thewes and such like seemly leres :
Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies been
To hunt the salvage chace, amongst my peres,
Of all that raungeth in the forrest greene,
Of which none is to me unknowne that ev'r was
seene.

xxxii.

" Ne is there hauke which mantleth her on perch,
Whether high towring or acosting low,
But I the measure of her flight doe search,
And all her pray and all her diet know :
Such be our ioyes which in these forrests grow :
Onely the use of armes, which most I ioy,
And fittest most for noble Swayne to know,
I have not tasted yet ; yet past a Boy,
And being now high time these strong ioynts to
employ.

xxxiii.

" Therefore, good Sir, sith now occasion fit
Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome may,
Let me this crave, unworthy though of it,
That ye will make me Squire without delay,
That from henceforth in batteilous array
I may beare armes, and learne to use them right ;
The rather, since that fortune hath this day
Given to me the spoile of this dead Knight,
These goodly gilden armes which I have won in
fight."

xxx. 1. — a wise man red,] One who was esteemed
wise. CHURCH.

xxxi. 1. — lewdly] Foolishly. CHURCH.

xxxiv.

All which when well Sir Calidore had heard,
 Him much more now, then earst, he gan admire
 For the rare hope which in his yeares appear'd,
 And thus replide ; " Faire Chyld, the high desire
 To love of armes, which in you doth aspire,
 I may not certes without blame denie ;
 But rather wish that some more noble hire
 (Though none more noble then is Chevalrie)
 I had, you to reward with greater dignitie."

xxxv.

There him he causd to kneele, and made to sweare
 Faith to his Knight, and truth to Ladies all,
 And never to be recreant for feare
 Of perill, or of ought that might befall :
 So he him dubbed, and his Squire did call.
 Full glad and ioyous then young Tristram grew ;
 Like as a flowre, whose silken leav's small
 Long shut up in the bud from heavens vew,
 At length breaks forth, and brode displays his
 smyling hew.

xxxvi.

Thus when they long had treated to and fro,
 And Calidore betooke him to depart,
 Chyld Tristram prayd that he with him might goe
 On his adventure, vowing not to start,
 But wayt on him in every place and part :
 Whereat Sir Calidore did much delight,
 And greatly ioy'd at his so noble hart,
 In hope he sure would prove a doughtie Knight :
 Yet for the time this answer he to him behight ;

xxxvii.

' Glad would I surely be, thou courteous Squire,
 To have thy presence in my present quest,
 That mote thy kindled courage set on fire,
 And flame forth honour in thy noble brest :
 But I am bound by vow, which I profest
 To my dread Sovereaine, when I it assayd,
 That in atchievement of her high behest
 I should no creature ioyne unto mine ayde ;
 Forthy I may not graunt that ye so greatly prayde.

xxxviii.

' But since this Ladie is all desolate,
 And needeth safegard now upon her way,
 Ye may doe well in this her needfull state
 To succour her from daunger of dismay,
 That thankfull guerdon may to you repay."
 The noble Ympe, of such new service fayne,
 It gladly did accept, as he did say :
 So taking courtesie leave they parted twayne ;
 And Calidore forth passed to his former payne.

xxxix.

But Tristram, then despoyling that dead Knight
 Of all those goodly implements of prayse,
 Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire sight
 Of the bright mettall shyning like sunne rayes ;
 Handling and turning them a thousand wayes :
 And, after having them upon him dight,
 He tooke that Ladie, and her up did rayse
 Upon the steed of her owne late dead Knight :
 So with her marched forth, as she did him behight.

xl.

There to their fortune leave we them awhile,
 And turne we backe to good Sir Calidore ;

xxxviii. 9. — payne.] *Labour.* CHURCH.

Who, ere he thence had traveild many a mile,
 Came to the place whereas ye heard afore
 This Knight, whom Tristram slew, and wounded
 Another Knight in his despiteous pryde ; [sore
 There he that Knight found lying on the flore
 With many wounds full perillous and wyde,
 That all his garments and the grasse in vermeill
 dyde :

xli.

And there beside him sate upon the ground
 His wofull Ladie, piteously complayning
 With loud laments that most unluckie stound,
 And her sad selfe with carefull hand constraying
 To wype his wounds, and ease their bitter payning :
 Which sorie sight when Calidore did vew,
 With heavie eyne from teares uneath refraying,
 His mightie hart their mournfull case can rew,
 And for their better comfort to them nigher drew.

xlii.

Then, speaking to the Ladie, thus he said ;
 " Ye dolefull Dame, let not your grieve empeach
 To tell what cruell hand hath thus arayd
 This Knight unarm'd with so unknighly breach
 Of armes, that, if I yet him nigh may reach,
 I may avenge him of so foule despight."
 The Ladie, hearing his so courteous speach,
 Gan reare her eyes as to the chearefull light,
 And from hersory hart few heavie words forth sigh't :

xliii.

In which she shew'd, how that discourteous Knight,
 Whom Tristram slew, them in that shadow found
 Ioying together in unblam'd delight ;
 And him unarm'd, as now he lay on ground,
 Charg'd with his speare, and mortally did wound,
 Withouten cause, but onely her to reave
 From him, to whom she was for ever bound :
 Yet, when she fled into that covert greave,
 He, her not finding, both them thus nigh dead did
 leave.

xliv.

When Calidore this ruefull storie had
 Well understood, he gan of her demand,
 What manner wight he was, and how yelad,
 Which had this outrage wrought with wicked
 hand.
 She then, like as she best could understand,
 Him thus describ'd, to be of stature large,
 Clad all in gilden armes, with azure band
 Quartred athwart, and bearing in his targe
 A Ladie on rough waves row'd in a sommer barge.

xlv.

Then gan Sir Calidore to ghesse streightway,
 By many signes which she described had,
 That this was he whom Tristram earst did slay,
 And to her said ; " Dame, be no longer sad ;
 For he, that hath your Knight so ill bestad,
 Is now himselfe in much more wretched plight ;
 These eyes him saw upon the cold earth sprad,

xlii. 3. — arayd] *To array or aray,* is to order, apparel, dress, &c. *Arayd* here means, What cruel hand hath put this unarmed Knight in such a condition or array. UFTON.

xliii. 3. — in unblam'd delight ;] In unproved pleasure. TODD.

xliii. 8. — greave,] For grove. HUGHES.

The meede of his desert for that despight,
Which to yourselfe he wrought and to your loved
Knight.

XLVI.

"Therefore, faire Lady, lay aside this griefe,
Which ye have gathered to your gentle hart
For that displeasure; and thinke what reliefe
Were best devise for this your Lovers smart;
And how ye may him hence, and to what part,
Convey to be recur'd." She thank't him deare,
Both for that newes he did to her impart,
And for the courteous care which he did beare
Both to her Love and to herselfe in that sad dreare.

XLVII.

Yet could she not devise by any wit,
How thence she might convey him to some place;
For him to trouble she it thought unfit,
That was a stranger to her wretched case;
And him to beare, she thought it thing too base.
Which whenas he perceiv'd he thus bespake;
"Faire Lady, let it not you seeme disgrace
To beare this burthen on your dainty backe:
Myselfe will beare a part, coportion of your packe."

XLVIII.

So off he did his shield, and downward layd
Upon the ground, like to an hollow beare;
And powring balme, which he had long purwayd,
Into his wounds, him up thereon did reare,
And twixt them both with parted paines did beare,
Twixt life and death, not knowing what was donne:
Thence they him carried to a Castle neare,
In which a worthy auncient Knight did wonne:
Where what ensn'd shall in next Canto be begonne.

CANTO III.

Calidore brings Priscilla home;
Pursues the Bittant Beast:
Saves Sérena, whilst Calpeine
By Turpine is oppress.

I.

TRUE is, that whilome that good Poet sayd,
The gentle minde by gentle deeds is knowne:
For a man by nothing is so well hewrayd
As by his manners; in which plaine is showne
Of what degree and what race he is growne:
For seldome seene a trotting stalion get
An ambling colt, that is his proper owne:
So seldome seene that one in basenesse set
Doth noble courage shew with courteous manners met.

II.

But evermore contrary hath bene tryde,
That gentle blood will gentle manners breed;
As well may be in Calidore descripyde,
By late ensample of that courteous deed
Done to that wounded Knight in his great need,
Whom on his backe he bore, till he him brought
Unto the Castle where they had decreed:
There of the Knight, the which that Castle ought,
To make abode that night he greatly was besought.

XLVII. 9. — coportion] *Equal share.* TODD.

XLVIII. 2. — beare;] *Bier.* CHURCH.

XLVIII. 6. *Twixt life &c.*] That is, the wounded Knight not
being sensible of any thing that was done to him. CHURCH.

L. 8. — ought,] *Owmed,* was the owner of. CHURCH.

III.

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares,
That in his youth had bene of mickle might,
And borne great sway in armes amongst his
peares;
But now weake age had dimd his candlelight:
Yet was he courteous still to every wight,
And loved all that did to armes incline;
And was the Father of that wounded Knight,
Whom Calidore thus carried on his chine;
And Aldus was his name; and his sonnes, Aladine.

IV.

Who when he saw his sonne so ill bedight
With bleeding wounds, brought home upon a beare
By a faire Lady and a stranger Knight,
Was inly touched with compassion deare,
And deare affection of so dolefull dreare,
That he these words burst forth; "Ah! sory
Is this the hope that to my hoary beare [Boy!
Thou brings? aie me! is this the timely ioy,
Which I expected long, now turnd to sad annoy?"

V.

"Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope;
So tickle is the state of earthly things;
That, ere they come unto their ayemd scope,
They fall too short of our fraile reckonings,
And bring us bale and bitter sorrowings,
Instead of comfort which we should embrace:
This is the state of Keasars and of Kings!
Let none therefore, that is in meaner place,
Too greatly grieve at any his unlucky case!"

VI.

So well and wisely did that good old Knight
Temper his griefe, and turned it to cheare, [night,
To cheare his guests whom he had stayd that
And make their welcome to them well appeare:
That to Sir Calidore was easie geare;
But that faire Lady would be cheard for nought,
But sigh'd and sorrow'd for her Lover deare,
And inly did afflict her pensive thought
With thinking to what case her name should now
be brought:

VII.

For she was daughter to a noble Lord
Which dwelt thereby, who sought her to affy
To a great Pere; but she did disaccord,
Ne could her liking to his love apply,
But lov'd this fresh young Knight who dwelt her
The lusty Aladine, though meaner borne [ny,
And of lesse livelood and hability,
Yet full of valour the which did adorne
His meanesse much, and make her th' others riches
scorne.

VIII.

So, having both found fit occasion,
They met together in that luckelesse glade;
Where that proud Knight in his presumption
The gentle Aladine did earst invade,

IV. 5. — dreare,] *Horror.* Used for *misfortune*,
F. Q. iv. viii. 42, and for *force*, F. Q. v. xii. 20. CHURCH.

For *sorrow*, F. Q. v. x. 35, and for *misfortune*, F. Q.
vi. ii. 46. TODD.

V. 2. So tickle] *Uncertain.* TODD.

VII. 6. *The lusty Aladine,*] *The lovely or handsome*
Aladine. TODD.

Being unarm'd and set in secret shade,
Whereof she now bethinking, gan t' advise
How great a hazard she at earst had made
Of her good fame; and further gan devise
How she the blame might salve with coloured disguise.

ix.

But Calidore with all good courtesie
Fain'd her to frolicke, and to put away
The pensive fit of her melancholie;
And that old Knight by all meanes did assay
To make them both as merry as he may.
So they the evening past till time of rest;
When Calidore in seemly good array
Unto his bowre was brought, and there undrest
Did sleepe all night through weary travell of his quest.

x.

But faire Priscilla (so that Lady hight)
Would to no bed, nor take no kindly sleepe,
But by her wounded Love did watch all night,
And all the night for bitter anguish weepe,
And with her teares his wounds did wash and steepe. [him,
So well she washt them, and so well she wacht
That of the deadly swound, in which full deepe
He drenched was, she at the length dispatch him,
And drove away the stound which mortally attach
him.

xi.

The morrow next, when day gan to uplooke,
He also gan uplooke with dreary eye,
Like one that out of deadly dreame awooke:
Where when he saw his faire Priscilla by,
He deeply sigh'd, and groaned inwardly,
To thinke of this ill state in which she stood;
To which she for his sake had weetingly [blood:
Now brought herselfe, and blam'd her noble
For first, next after life, he tendered her good.

xii.

Which she perceiving did with plenteous teares
His care more then her owne compassionate,
Forgetfull of her owne to minde his feares:
So both conspiring gan to intimate
Each others griefe with zeale affectionate,
And twixt them twaine with equall care to cast
How to save whole her hazardd estate;
For which the onely helpe now left them last
Seem'd to be Calidore: all other helpes were past.

xiii.

Him they did deeme, as sure to them he seemed,
A courteous Knight and full of faithfull trust;
Therefore to him their cause they best esteemed
Whole to commit, and to his dealing iust.
Earely, so soone as Titans beames forth burst
Through the thicke elouds, in which they steeped
All night in darknesse, duld with yron rust, [lay
Calidore rising up as fresh as day
Gan freshly him addresse unto his former way.

viii. 7. — at earst] *Lately.* CHURCH.ix. 2. *Fain'd her to frolicke.*] Desired her to be cheerful. CHURCH.xi. 8. — blam'd] *Had brought a reproach upon.* CHURCH.xii. 4. — to intimate] *Mutually to partake of.* Lat. *intimas*, an intimate acquaintance, or bosom-friend. CHURCH.

xiv.

But first him seemed fit that wounded Knight
To visite, after this nights perillous passe;
And to salute him if he were in plight,
And eke that Lady his faire lovely lasse.
There he him found much better then he was;
And moved speach to him of things of course,
The anguish of his paine to over-passe:
Mongst which he namely did to him discourse
Of former daies mishap, his sorrowes wicked source

xv.

Of which occasion Aldine taking hold
Gan breake to him the fortunes of his love,
And all his disadvantages to unfold;
That Calidore it dearly deepe did move:
In th' end, his kyndly courtesie to prove,
He him by all the bands of love besonght,
And as it mote a faithfull friend behove,
To safe-conduct his Love, and not for ought
To leave, till to her fathers house he had her brought.

xvi.

Sir Calidore his faith thereto did plight
It to performe: so after little stay,
That she herselfe had to the journey dight,
He passed forth with her in faire array,
Fearlesse who ought did thinke or ought did say,
Sith his own thought he knew most cleare from
So, as they past together on their way, [wite:
He can devise this counter-cast of slight,
To give faire colour to that Ladies cause in sight.

xvii.

Streight to the carkasse of that Knight he went,
(The cause of all this evil, who was slaine
The day before by iust avengement
Of noble Tristram,) where it did remaine;
There he the necke thereof did cut in twaine,
And tooke with him the head, the signe of shame
So forth he passed thorough that daies paine,
Till to that Ladies fathers house he came;
Most pensive man, through feare what of his childe
became.

xviii.

There he arriving boldly did present
The fearefull Lady to her father deare,
Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent
Of blame, as he did on his knighthood sweare,
Since first he saw her, and did free from feare
Of a discourteous Knight, who her had reft
And by outrageous force away did beare:
Witnessed thereof he shew'd his head there left,
And wretched life forlorne for vengeance of his self

xix.

Most ioyfull man her sire was, her to see,
And heare th' adventure of her late mischaunce
And thousand thanks to Calidore for fee
Of his large paines in her deliveraunce
Did yeld; y' lesse the Lady did advance.
Thus having her restored trustly,
As he had vow'd, some small continuance.

xiv. 8. — namely] *Particularly.* Lat. *nominalim.* CHURCH.xvi. 6. — wite:] *Blame.* CHURCH.xvii. 4. — *did on his knighthood sweare.*] This is an oath which we likewise frequently meet with in romance as well as that of swearing by the sword. T. WARTON.

He there did make, and then most carefully
Unto his first exploite he did himselfe apply.

xx.

So, as he was pursuing of his quest,
He chaunst to come whereas a iolly Knight
In covert shade himselfe did safely rest,
To solace with his Lady in delight :
His warlike armes he had from him undight ;
For that him selfe he thought from daunger free,
And far from envious eyes that mote him spight :
And eke the Lady was full faire to see,
And courteous withall, becomming her degree.

xxi.

To whom Sir Calidore approaching nye,
Ere they were well aware of living wight,
Them much abasht, but more himselfe thereby,
That he so rudely did upon them light,
And troubled had their quiet loves delight :
Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault,
Himselfe thereof he labour'd to acquite,
And pardon crav'd for his so rash default,
That he gainst courtesie so fowly did default.

xxii.

With which his gentle words and goodly wit
Hesooner allayd that Knights conceiv'd displeasure,
That he besought him downe by him to sit,
That they mote treat of things abroad at leasure,
And of adventures, which had in his measure
Of so long waies to him befallen late.
So downe he sate, and with delightfull pleasure
His long adventures gan to him relate,
Which he endured had through daungerous debate:

xxiii.

Of which whilest they discoursed both together,
The faire Serena (so his Lady hight)
Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether
And plesance of the place, the which was dight
With divers flowres distinct with rare delight,
Wandred about the fields, as liking led
Her wavering lust after her wandring sight,
To make a garland to adorne her hed,
Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden dred.

xxiv.

All sodainely out of the forrest nere
The Blatant Beast forth rushing unaware
Caught her thus loosely wandring here and there,
And in his wide great mouth away her bare
Crying aloud to shew her sad misfare
Unto the Knights, and calling oft for ayde ;
Who with the horrour of her haplesse care
Hastily starting up, like men dismayde,
Ran after fast to reskue the distressed Mayde.

xxv.

The Beast, with their pursuit incited more,
Into the wood was bearing her apace
For to have spoyled her ; when Calidore,
Who was more light of foote and swift in chace,
Him overtooke in midst of his race ;

xx. 2. ——— iolly] *Handsome.* TODD.xxi. 9. ——— default.] *Offend.* CHURCH.xxii. 9. ——— *through daungerous debate:]* That is,
with much danger and unensiness. CHURCH.xxiii. 7. ——— *lust]* *Will.* CHURCH.

And, fiercely charging him with all his might,
First to forgoe his pray there in the place,
And to betake himselfe to fearefull flight ;
For he durst not abide with Calidore to fight.

xxvi.

Who nathlesse, when he the Lady saw
There left on ground, though in full evill plight,
Yet knowing that her Knight now neare did draw,
Staide not to succour her in that affright,
But follow'd fast the Monster in his flight:
Through woods and hills he follow'd him so fast,
That he would let him breath nor gather spright,
But forst him gape and gaspe, with dread aghast,
As if his lungs and lites were nigh asunder brast.

xxvii.

And now by this Sir Calepine, so hight,
Came to the place where he his Lady found
In dolorous dismay and deadly plight,
All in gore bloud there tumbled on the ground,
Having both sides through grypt with griesly
wound:
His weapons soone from him he threw away,
And stouping downe to her in drery swoond
Uprear'd her from the ground whereon she lay,
And in his tender armes her forced up to stay.

xxviii.

So well he did his busie paines apply,
That the faint spright he did revoke againe
To her fraile mansion of mortality :
Then up he tooke her twixt his armès twaine,
And setting on his steede her did sustaine
With careful hands, soft footing her beside ;
Till to some place of rest they mote attaine,
Where she in safe assurance mote abide,
Till she recured were of those her woundès wide.

xxix.

Now whenas Phoebus with his fiery waine
Unto his inne began to draw apace ;
Tho, waxing weary of that toylesome paine,
In travelling on foote so long a space,
Not wont on foote with heavy armes to trace ;
Downe in a dale forby a rivers syde
He chaunst to spie a faire and stately place,
To which he meant his weary steps to guyde,
In hope there for his Love some succour to provide.

xxx.

But, comming to the rivers side, he found,
That hardly passable on foote it was ;
Therefore there still he stood as in a stound,
Ne wist which way he through the foord mote passe:
Thus whilest he was in this distressed case,
Devising what to doe, he nigh espyde
An armed Knight approaching to the place
With a faire Lady linc'd by his syde,
The which themselves perpard through the foord
to ride.

xxxi.

Whom Calepine saluting, as became,
Besought of courtesie, in that his neede,
For safe conducting of his sickely Dame

xxix. 2. ——— *his inne]* Mr. Warton has remarked, that
inne for *habitation, seat, or recess,* is much used by Spenser ;
and that, in the poet's age, this word had not acquired the
vulgar idea which it bears in modern language. TODD.

Through that same perillous foerd with better
To take him up behinde upon his steed: [heede,
To whom that other did this taunt retorne ;
"Perdy, then peasant Knight mightst rightly
Me then to be full base and evill borne, [reed
If I would beare behinde a burden of such scerne.

xxxii.

"But, as thou hast thy steed ferlerne with shame,
So fare on foote till thou another gayne,
And let thy Lady likewise doe the same,
Or beare her on thy backe with pleasing payne,
And prove thy manhood on the hillowes vayne."
With which rude speach his Lady much displeas'd
Did him reprove, yet could him not restrayne,
And would on her owne palfrey him have eas'd
For pity of his Dame whom she saw so diseas'd.

xxxiii.

Sir Calepine her thanckt ; yet, inly wroth
Against her Knight, her gentleness refused,
And carelesly into the river go'th,
As in despite to be so fewle abus'd
Of a rude Churle, whom often he accus'd
Of fewle discourtesie, unfit for Knight ;
And, strongly wading through the waves unused,
With speare in th' ene hand stayd himselte upright,
With th' other staide his Lady up with stedy might.

xxxiv.

And all the while that same discourteous Knight
Steed on the further bancke beholding him ;
At whose calamity, for mere despite,
He laught, and mockt to see him like to swim.
But whenas Calepine came to the brim,
And saw his carriage past that perill well,
Looking at that same Carle with count'nance grim,
His heart with vengeance inwardly did swell,
And ferth at last did breake in speeches sharpe and fell:

xxxv.

"Unknightly Knight, the blemish of that name,
And blot of all that armes upon them take,
Which is the badge of honour and of fame,
Loe ! I defie thee ; and here challenge make,
That thou fer ever dee these armes jersake,
And be fer ever held a recreant Knight,
Unless thou dare, for thy deare Ladies sake
And for thine owne defence, on feete alight
To iustifie thy fault gainst me in equall fight."

xxxvi.

The Dastard, that did here himselfe defyde,
Seem'd not to weigh his threatfull werds at all,
But laught them out, as if his greater pryde
Did scorne the challenge of so base a thrall ;
Or had no courage, or else had no gall.
So much the mere was Calepine offended,
That him to no revenge he ferth could call,
But both his challenge and himselfe contemned,
Ne cared as a coward so to be condemned.

xxxii. 7. — thou peasant Knight] The word *peasant* appears to have been formerly used to express the most sovereign contempt of a person. Todd.

xxxii. 9. — diseas'd.] Fr. *desaisée*, ill at ease. Todd.
xxxvi. 2. Seem'd not to weigh &c.] That is, thought his words were of no weight, no consequence. Church.

xxxvii.

But he, nought weighing what he sayd or did,
Turned his steede about another way,
And with his Lady to the Castle rid,
Where was his won ; ne did the other stay,
But after went directly as he may,
Fer his sicke charge some harbour there to seeke
Where he arriving with the fall of day
Drew to the gate, and there with prayers meeke
And myld entreaty lodging did for her beseeke.

xxxviii.

But the rude Porter that no manners had
Did shut the gate against him in his face,
And entraunce beldly unto him forbad :
Nath'lesse the Knight, new in so needy case,
Gan him entreat even with submission base,
And humbly praid to let them in that night :
Who to him answer'd, that there was no place
Of ledging fit for any errant Knight,
Unless that with his Lord he formerly did fight.

xxxix.

"Full leth am I," quoth he, "as new at earst
When day is spent, and rest us needeth most,
And that this Lady, both whose sides are pearst
With wounds, is ready to forge the ghest ;
Ne would I gladly combate with mine host,
That should to me such curtesie afford,
Unless that I were thereunte enforst :
But yet aread to me, how hight thy Lord,
That doth thus strongly ward the Castle of the Ford."

xl.

"His name," quoth he, "if that thou list to learne,
Is hight Sir Turpine, one of mickle might
And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne
In all assaies to every Errant Knight,
Because of one that wrought him fowle despite."
"Ill seemes," said he, "if he so valiaunt be,
That he should be so sterne to stranger wight :
Fer seldome yet did living creature see
That curtesie and manhood ever disagree.

xli.

"But ge thy waies to him, and fre me say
That here is at his gate an Errant Knight,
That house-reme craves ; yet would he loth t' assay
The proefe of battell new in doubtful night,
Or curtesie with rudenesse to requite :
Yet, if he needes will fight, crave leave till merne,
And tell withall the lamentable plight
In which this Lady languisheth ferlerne,
That pity craves, as he of woman was yberne."

xlii.

The Groom went streightway in, and to his Lord
Declar'd the message which that Knight did
Who, sitting with his Lady then at bord, [move ;
Net onely did not his demand approve,
But both himselfe revild and eke his Love ;
Albe his Lady, that Blandina hight,
Him of ungente usage did reprove,

xxxvii. 1. But he] *The Knight.* Church.

Ibid. — he sayd &c.] *Calepine said &c.* Church.

xxxviii. 9. — formerly] *First of all.* Church.

xxxix. 1. — as now at earst

When day is spent,] That is, as day is just now spent. Church.

And earnestly entreated that they might
Finde favour to be lodged there for that same night.

XLIII.

Yet would he not perswaded be for ought,
Ne from his currish will awhit reclame.
Which answere when the Groome returning
To Calepine, his heart did inly flame [brought
With wrathfull fury for so foule a shame,
That he could not thereof avenged be :
But most for pittie of his dearest Dame,
Whom now in deadly daunger he did see ;
Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure her
glee.

XLIV.

But all in vaine ; for why? no remedy
He saw the present mischief to redresse,
But th' utmost end perforce for to aby,
Which that nights fortune would for him adresse.
So downe he tooke his Lady in distresse,
And layd her underneath a bush to sleepe,
Cover'd with cold, and wrapt in wretchednesse ;
Whiles he himselfe all night did nought but weepe,
And wary watch about her for her safegard keepe.

XLV.

The morrow next, so soone as ioyous day
Did shew itselfe in sunny beames bedight,
Serena full of dolorous dismay,
Twixt darkenesse dread and hope of living light,
Upreat'd her head to see that chearefull sight.
Then Calepine, however inly wroth,
And greedy to avenge that vile despight,
Yet for the feeble Ladies sake, full loth
To make there lenger stay, forth on his journey
go'th.

XLVI.

He go'th on foote all armed by her side,
Upstaying still herselfe upon her steede,
Being unhable else alone to ride ; [bleede :
So sore her sides, so much her wounds did
Till that at length, in his extreamest neede,
He chaunst far off an armed Knight to spy
Pursuing him apace with greedy speede ;
Whom well he wist to be some enemy,
That meant to make advauntage of his misery.

XLVII.

Wherefore he stayd, till that he nearer drew,
To weet what issue would thereof betyde :
Tho, whenas he approached nigh in vew,
By certaine signes he plainly him descryde
To be the man that with such scornfull pryde
Had him abuse and shamed yesterday ;
Therefore, misdoubting least he should misguyde
His former malice to some new assay,
He cast to keepe himselfe so safely as he may.

XLVIII.

By this the other came in place likewise,
And couching close his speare and all his powre,
As bent to some malicious enterprise,
He bad him stand t' abide the bitter stoure
Of his sore vengeance, or to make avoure

XLVIII. 2. — and all his powre,] Perhaps, "with all his powre," i. e. with all his strength. CHURCH.

XLVIII. 5. — make avoure] To make avoure, is a law term ; to make an acknowledgment, vindication, or confession, of his wrongful proceedings. Fr. *avouer*, to confess or acknowledge one's self in the wrong. UPON.

Of the lewd words and deedes which he had done :
With that ran at him, as he would devour
His life attonce ; who nought could do but shun
The perill of his pride, or else be over-run.

XLIX.

Yet he him still pursew'd from place to place,
With full intent him cruely to kill,
And like a wilde goate round about did chace
Flying the fury of his bloudy will :
But his best succour and refuge was still
Behind his Ladies back ; who to him cryde,
And called oft with prayers loud and shrill,
As ever he to Lady was affyde,
To spare her Knight, and rest with reason pacifyde :

L.

But he the more thereby enraged was,
And with more eager felnesse him pursew'd ;
So that at length, after long weary chace,
Having by chaunce a close advantage vew'd,
He over-raught him, having long eschew'd
His violence in vaine ; and with his spere
Strooke through his shoulder, that the blood en-
In great abundance, as a well it were, [sew'd
That forth out of an hill fresh gushing did appere.

LI.

Yet ceast he not for all that cruell wound,
But chaste him still for all his Ladies cry ;
Not satisfyde till on the fatal ground
He saw his life powrd forth dispiteously ;
The which was certes in great ieopardy,
Had not a wondrous chaunce his reskue wrought,
And saved from his cruell villany :
Such chaunces oft exceed all humane thought !
That in another Canto shall to end be brought.

CANTO IV.

Calepine by a Salvage Man
From Turpine reskewed is ;
And, whilst an Infant from a beare
He saves, his Love doth misse.

I.

LIKE as a ship with dreadfull storme long tost,
Having spent all her mastes and her groundhold,
Now farre from harbour likely to be lost,
At last some fisher-harke doth neare behold,
That giveth comfort to her courage cold ;
Such was the state of this most courteous Knight
Being oppressed by that Faytour bold,
That he remayned in most perilous plight,
And his sad Ladie left in pitifull affright :

II.

Till that, by fortune passing all foresight,
A Salvage Man, which in those woods did wonne,
Drawne with that Ladies loud and piteous shright,
Toward the same incessantly did ronne
To understand what there was to be donne :
There he this most discourteous Craven found
As fiercely yet, as when he first begonne,

I. 9. *And his sad Ladie left &c.*] That is, his sad Lady was left &c. CHURCH.

II. 3. — shright,] *Shriek*. From the participle *shright*, which comes from *shrick*, Sax. to *shrick*. TONN.

Chasing the gentle Calepine around,
Ne sparing him the more for all his grievous wound.

III.

The Salvage Man, that never till this houre
Did taste of pittie, neither gentlesse knew,
Seeing his sharpe assault and cruell stoure
Was much emmowed at his perils vew,
That even his ruder hart began to rew,
And feele compassion of his evill plight,
Against his foe that did him so pursew ;
From whom he meant to free him, if he might,
And him avenge of that so villenous despight.

IV.

Yet armes or weapon had he none to fight,
Ne knew the use of warlike instruments,
Save such as sudden rage him lent to smite ;
But naked, without needfull vestiments
To clad his corpse with meete habiliments,
He cared not for dint of sword nor speere,
No more then for the stroke of straws or bents:
For from his mothers wombe, which him did beare,
He was invulnerable made by magicke leare.

V.

He stayed not t' advise which way were best
His foe t' assaile, or how himselfe to gard,
But with fierce fury and with force infest
Upon him ran ; who being well prepar'd
His first assault full warily did ward,
And with the push of his sharp-pointed speare
Full on the breast him strooke, so strong and hard
That forst him backe recoyle and reele areare ;
Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud appeare.

VI.

With that the Wyld Man more enraged grew,
Like to a tygre that hath mist his pray,
And with mad moode againe upon him flew,
Regarding neither speare that mote him slay,
Nor his fierce steed that mote him much dismay :
The salvage nation doth all dread despize :
Tho on his shield he griple hold lay,
And held the same so hard, that by no wize
He could him force to loose, or leave his enterprize.

VII.

Long did he wrest and wring it to and fro,
And every way did try, but all in vaine ;
For he would not his greedie grype forgoe,
But hayld and puld with all his might and maine,
That from his steed him nigh he drew againe :
Who having now no use of his long speare
So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to straine,
Both speare and shield, as things that needlesse
were,
He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away for feare.

VIII.

But after him the Wyld Man ran apace,
And him pursewed with impörtune speed,
For he was swift as any bucke in chace ;
And, had he not in his extreame need
Bene helped through the swiftnesse of his steed,
He had him overtaken in his flight.
Who, ever as he saw him nigh succeed,

IV. 7. — bents:] *Rushes, bent-grass.* UPRON.

VI. 7. — griple] *Tenacious.* UPRON.

VIII. 7. — succeed,] *Approach.* Lat. *succedo.* CHURCH.

Gan cry aloud with horrible affright,
And shrieked out ; a thing uncomely for a Knight.

IX.

But, when the Salvage saw his labour vaine
In following of him that fled so fast,
He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe
With speede unto the place, whereas he last
Had left that couple nere their utmost cast :
There he that Knight full sorely bleeding found,
And eke the Ladie fearefully aghast,
Both for the perill of the present stound,
And also for the sharpnesse of her rankling wound :

X.

For though she were right glad so rid to bee
From that vile Lozell which her late offended ;
Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see
And perill, by this Salvage Man pretended ;
Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be defended
By reason that her Knight was wounded sore :
Therefore herselfe she wholly recommended
To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft implore
To send her succour, being of all hope forelore.

XI.

But the Wyld Man, contrarie to her feare,
Came to her creeping like a fawning hound,
And by rude tokens made to her appeare
His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound ;
Kissing his hands, and crouching to the ground ;
For other language had he none nor speach,
But a soft murmure and confused sound
Of senselesse words (which Nature did him teach
T' expresse his passions) which his reason did em-
peach :

XII.

And comming likewise to the wounded Knight,
When he beheld the streames of purple blood
Yet flowing fresh, as moved with the sight,
He made great mone after his salvage mood ;
And, running straight into the thickest wood,
A certaine herbe from thence unto him brought,
Whose vertue he by use well understood ;
The iuyce whereof into his wound he wrought,
And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it stancht
thought.

XIII.

Then taking up that recreants shield and speare,
Which earst he left, he signes unto them made
With him to wend unto his winning neare ;
To which he easily did them perswade.
Farre in the forrest, by a hollow glade [brode
Covered with mossie shrubs, which spreading
Did underneath them make a gloomy shade,
Where foot of living creature never trode,
Ne scarce wyld beasts durst come, there was this
wights abode.

IX. 5. — nere their utmost cast:] That is, almost dead. CHURCH.

X. 4. — pretended:] Held forth to her view. Lat. *præfendo.* CHURCH.

XI. 8. — (which Nature did him teach
T' expresse his passions)] The sense is, He had no language, only some inarticulate sounds (which sounds Nature taught him whereby to express his passions) which did empeach his reason, that is, did hinder his reason from being discovered. *Empeach, hinder.* Fr. *empêcher.* CHURCH.

xiv.

Thither he brought these unacquainted guests ;
To whom faire semblance, as he could, he shewed
By signes, by looks, and all his other gests :
But the bare ground with hoarie mosse bestrowed
Must be their bed ; their pillow was unsowed ;
And the frutes of the Forrest was their feast :
For their bad Stuard neither plough'd nor sowed,
Ne fed on flesh, ne ever of wyld beast
Did taste the bloud, obeying Natures first behest.

xv.

Yet, howsoever base and meane it were ;
They tooke it well, and thanked God for all,
Which had them freed from that deadly feare,
And sav'd from being to that Caytive thrall.
Here they of force (as fortune now did fall)
Compelled were themselves awhile to rest,
Glad of that easement, though it were but small ;
That, having there their wounds awhile redrest,
They mote the abler be to passe unto the rest.

xvi.

During which time that Wyld Man did apply
His best endeavour and his daily paine
In seeking all the woods both farre and nye
For herbes to dresse their wounds ; still seeming
faine
When ought he did, that did their loking gaine.
So as ere long he had that Knight's wound
Recured well, and made him whole againe :
But that same Ladies hurts no herbe he found
Which could redresse, for it was inwardly unsound.

xvii.

Now whenas Calepine was woxen strong,
Upon a day he cast abroad to weud,
To take the ayre and heare the thrushes song,
Unarm'd, as fearing neither foe nor frend,
And without sword his person to defend ;
There him befell, unlooked for before,
An hard adventure with unhappie end,
A cruell beare, the which an Infant bore,
Betwixt his bloodie iawes, besprinkled all with
gore.

xviii.

The litle Babe did loudly scrike and squall,
And all the woods with piteous plaints did fill,
As if his cry did meane for helpe to call
To Calepine, whose eares those shrieches shrill,
Percing his hart, with pitie point did thrill ;
That after him he ran with zealous haste
To rescue th' Infant, ere he did him kill :
Whom though he saw now somewhat overpast,
Yet by the cry he follow'd, and pursewed fast.

xix.

Well then him chaunst lie heavy armes to want,
Whose burden mote empeach his needfull spee-
l,
And hinder him from libertie to pant :
For having long time, as his daily weed,
Them wont to weare, and wend on foot for need,
Now wanting them he felt himselfe so light,
That like an hauke, which feeling herselfe freed

From bells and iesses which did let her flight,
Him seem'd his feet did fly and in their speed
delight.

xx.

So well he sped him, that the wearie beare
Ere long he overtooke and forst to stay ;
And, without weapon him assaying neare,
Compell him soone the spoyle adowne to lay.
Wherewith the beast enrag'd to loose his pray
Upon him turned, and, with greedie force
And furie, to be crossed in his way,
Gaping full wyde, did thinke without remorse
To be aveng'd on him and to devoure his corse.

xxi.

But the bold Knight no whit theat dismayd,
But catching up in hand a ragged stone
Which lay thereby (so fortune him did ayde)
Upon him ran, and thrust it all attone
Into his gaping throte, that made him grone
And gaspe for breath, that he nigh choked was,
Being unable to digest that bone ;
Ne could it upward come, nor downward passe,
Ne could he brooke the coldnesse of the stony masse.

xxii.

Whom whenas he thus combred did behold,
Strying in vaine that nigh his bowels brast,
He with him closd, and, laying mightie hold
Upon his throte, did gripe his gorge so fast,
That wanting breath him downe to ground he cast ;
And, then oppressing him with urgent paine,
Ere long enforst to breath his utmost blast,
Gnashing his cruell teeth at him in vaine,
And threatning his sharpe clawes, now wanting
powre to straine.

xxiii.

Then tooke he up betwixt his arm's twaine
The litle Babe, sweet relickes of his pray ;
Whom pitying to heare so sore complaine,
From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away,
And from his face the filth that did it ray ;
And every litle limbe he searcht around,
And every part that under sweat-bands lay,
Least that the beasts sharpe teeth had any wound
Made in his tender flesh ; but whole them all he
found.

xxiv.

So, having all his bands againe uptyde,
He with him thought backe to returne againe ;
But when he lookt about on every syde,
To weet which way were best to entertaine
To bring him to the place where he would faine,
He could no path nor tract of foot descry,
Ne by inquirie learne, nor ghesse by ayme ;
For nought but woods and Forrests farre and nye,
That all about did close the compasse of his eye.

xxv.

Much was he then encombred, ne could tell
Which way to take : now west he went awhile,
Then north, then neither, but as fortune fell :
So up and downe he wandred many a mile

xix. 8. — iesses.] The leathers that fasten on the hawk's bells. CHURCH.

xxi. 9. — hrooke] Digest. CHURCH.

xxiii. 5. — ray ;] Defile, or soil. TODD.

xxiv. 4. — entertaine] Take. Lat. excipere. CHURCH.

xv. 4. — faine] Pleased. CHURCH.

xviii. 1. — scrike] Shrick. An apparent corruption of the Saxon verb *shrick*. TODD.

With wearie travell and uncertaine toile,
Yet nought the nearer to his journeys end ;
And evermore his lovely litle Spoile
Crying for food did greatly him offend :
So all that day, in wandring, vainely he did spend.

xxxvi.

At last, about the setting of the sunne,
Himselfe out of the forest he did wynd,
And by good fortune the plaine champion wonne :
Where, looking all about where he mote fynd
Some place of succour to content his mynd,
At length he heard under the forrests syde
A voyce, that seemed of some womankynd,
Whaich to herselfe lamenting loudly cryde,
And oft complayn'd of fate, and fortune oft defyde.

xxxvii.

To whom approaching, whenas she perceived
A stranger wight in place, her plaint she stayd,
As if she doubted to have bene deceived,
Or loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd :
Whom whenas Calepine saw so dismayd,
He to her drew, and, with faire blandishment
Her chearing up, thus gently to her sayd ;
"What be you, wofull Dame, which thus lament,
And for what cause, declare ; so mote ye not repent."

xxxviii.

To whom she thus ; "What need me, Sir, to tell
That which yourself have earst ared so right ?
A wofull Dame ye have me termed well ;
So much more wofull, as my wofull plight
Cannot redressed be by living wight !" [bynd,
"Nathlesse," quoth he, "if need doe not you
Doe it disclose, to ease your grieved spright :
Of times it haps that sorrowes of the mynd
Find remedie unsought, which seeking cannot fynd."

xxxix.

Then thus began the lamentable Dame ;
"Sith then ye needs will know the griefe I hoord,
I am th' unfortunate Matilde by name,
The wife of bold Sir Bruin, who is Lord
Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword
From a great Gyant, called Cormoraunt,
Whom he did overthrow by yonder foord ;
And in three battailes did so deadly daunt,
That he dare not returne for all his daily vaunt.

xxx.

"So is my Lord now seiz'd of all the land,
As in his fee, with peaceable estate,
And quietly doth hold it in his hand,
Ne any dares with him for it debate :
But to these happie fortunes cruell fate
Hath ioyn'd one evil, which doth overthrow
All these our ioyes, and all our blisse abate ;
And like in time to further ill to grow,
And all this land with endlesse losse to over-flow.

xxxi.

"For th' heavens, envying our prosperitie,
Have not vouchsaf't to graunt unto us twaine
The gladfull blessing of posteritie,
Which we might see after ourselves remaine
In th' heritage of our unhappie paine :

xxv. 8. — did greatly him offend :] Gave him great
uneasiness. CHURCH.

xxxi. 5. In th' heritage of our unhappie paine :] That
is, to inherit our hitherto unsuccessful endeavours. UPON.

So that for want of heires it to defend,
All is in time like to returne againe
To that foule Feend, who dayly doth attend
To leape into the same after our liv'es end.

xxxii.

"But most my Lord is grieved herewithall,
And makes exceeding mone, when he does thinke
That all this land unto his foe shall fall,
For which he long in vaine did sweat and swinke,
That now the same he greatly doth forthinke.
Yet was it sayd, there should to him a sonne
Be gotten, not begotten ; which should drinke
And dry up all the water which doth runne
In the next brooke, by whom that Feend should be
fordonne.

xxxiii.

"Well hop't he then, when this was propheside,
That from his sides some noble chyld should rize,
The which through fame should farre be magnifide,
And this proud Gyant should with brave emprize
Quite overthrow, who now ginnes to despize
The good Sir Bruin growing farre in years,
Who thinks from me his sorrow all doth rize.
Lo ! this my cause of griefe to you appears ;
For which I thus doe mourne, and poure forth
ceaselesse teares."

xxxiv.

Which when he heard, he inly touched was
With tender ruth for her unworthy griefe ;
And, when he had devized of her case,
He gan in mind conceive a fit reliefe
For all her paine, if please her make the priefe :
And, having cheared her, thus said ; "Faire
In evils Counsell is the comfort chiefe ; [Dame,
Which though I be not wise enough to frame,
Yet, as I well it meane, vouchsafe it without blame.

xxxv.

"If that the cause of this your languishment
Be lacke of children to supply your place,
Lo ! how good fortune doth to you present
This litle Babe, of sweete and lovely face,
And spotlesse spirit in which ye may enchace
Whatever formes ye list thereto apply,
Being now soft and fit them to embrace ;
Whether ye list him traine in Chevalry,
Or nurse up in lore of learn'd Philosophy.

xxxvi.

"And, certes, it hath oftentimes bene seene,
That of the like, whose linage was unknowne,
More brave and noble Knights have rayseed beene
(As their victorious deedes have often shoven,
Being with fame through many nations blowen,)
Then those which have bene dandled in the lap.
Therefore some thought that those brave imps
were sown

xxxii. 4. — did sweat and swinke.] An old ex-
pression, signifying that the person took great pains,
laboured greatly. TODD.

xxxii. 5. — he greatly doth forthinke.] It should
be, *forethinke*, i. e. think beforehand of. UPON.

xxxiii. 2. — his sides] Loins. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 2. — her unworthy griefe :] The uneasiness

which she no way deserved to suffer. CHURCH.

xxxv. 9. Or nurse up] Educate. TODD.

Here by the gods, and fed with heavenly sap,
That made them grow so high t' all honourable
hap."

xxxvii.

The Ladie, hearkning to his sensefull speech,
Found nothing that he said unmeet nor reason,
Having oft seene it tryde as he did teach:
Therefore inclyning to his goodly reason,
Agreeing well both with the place and season,
She gladly did of that same Babe accept,
As of her owne by livery and seisin;
And, having over it a litle wept,
She bore it thence, and ever as her owne it kept.

xxxviii.

Right glad was Calepine to be so rid
Of his young charge whereof he skilled nought;
Ne she lesse glad; for she so wisely did,
And with her husband under hand so wrought,
That, when that Infant unto him she brought,
She made him think it surely was his owne;
And it in goodly thewes so well upbrought,
That it became a famous Knight well knowne,
And did right noble deedes; the which elsewhere
are showne.

xxxix.

But Calepine, now being left alone
Under the greenewoods side in sorie plight,
Withouten armes or steede to ride upon,
Or house to hide his head from heavens spight;
Albe that Dame, by all the meanes she might,
Him oft desired home with her to wend,
And offred him, his courtesie to requite,
Both horse and armes and whatso else to lend,
Yet he them all refusd, though thank her as a
frend;

xl.

And, for exceeding griefe which inly grew,
That he his Love so lucklesse now had lost,
On the cold ground mangre himselfe he threw
For fell despight, to be so sorely crost;
And there all night himselfe in anguish tost,
Vowing that never he in bed againe
His limbs would rest, ne lig in ease embost,
Till that his Ladies sight he mote attaine,
Or understand that she in safetie did remaine.

CANTO V.

The Salvage serves Serena well,
Till she Prince Arture fynd;
Who her, together with his Swayne,
With th' Hermit leaves behynd.

I.

O WHAT an easie thing is to descry
The gentle blood, however it be wrapt
In sad misfortunes foule deformity
And wretched sorrowes, which have often hapt!

xxxvii. 2. — unmeet nor reason.] That is, either
improper or uncommon. Reason is rare, uncommon.
CHURCH.

xxxvii. 7. — by livery and seisin.] That is, by
delivery and possession. CHURCH.

xl. 3. — maugre] Much against his will. UPTON.

xl. 7. — ne lig in ease embost.] Nor lie in ease con-
cealed or enclosed. TOND.

For howsoever it may grow mis-shapt,
Like this Wyld Man being undiscyplind,
That to all vertue it may seeme unapt;
Yet will it shew some sparkes of gentle mynd,
And at the last breake forth in his owne proper
kynd.

ii.

That plainly may in this Wyld Man be red,
Who, though he were still in this desert wood,
Mongst salvage beasts, both rudely borne and
bred,
Ne ever saw faire guize, ne learned good,
Yet shewd some token of his gentle blood
By gentle usage of that wretched Dame:
For certes he was borne of noble blood,
However by hard hap he hether came;
As ye may know, when time shall be to tell the
same.

iii.

Who, whenas now long time he lacked had
The good Sir Calepine, that farre was strayd,
Did wexe exceeding sorrowfull and sad,
As he of some misfortune were afraid;
And, leaving there this Ladie all dismayd,
Went forth streightway into the Forrest wyde
To seeke if he perchance asleep were layd,
Or whatso else were unto him betyde:
He sought him farre and neare, yet him no where
he spyde.

iv.

Tho, backe returning to that sorie Dame,
He shewed semblant of exceeding mone
By speaking signes, as he them best could frame,
Now wringing both his wretched hands in one,
Now beating his hard head upon a stone,
That ruth it was to see him so lament:
By which she well perceiving what was done,
Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments rent,
And beat her breast, and piteously herselfe tor-
ment.

v.

Upon the ground herselfe she fiercely threw,
Regardlesse of her wounds yet bleeding rife,
That with their blood did all the flore imbrow,
As if her breast new launcht with murderous knife
Would streight dislodge the wretched wearie Life:
There she long groveling and deepe groning lay,
As if her vitall powers were at strife
With stronger Death, and feared their decay:
Such were this Ladies pangs and dolorous assay.

vi.

Whom when the Salvage saw so sore distrest,
He reared her up from the bloudie ground,
And sought, by all the meanes that he could best,
Her to recure out of that stony wound,
And staunch the bleeding of her dreary wound:
Yet nould she be recomforted for nought,
Nor cease her sorrow and impatient stound,
But day and night did vex her carefull thought,
And ever more and more her owne affliction
wrought.

vii.

At length, whenas no hope of his retourne
She saw now left, she cast to leave the place,
And wend abroad, though feeble and forlorne,
To seeke some comfort in that sorie case:

His steede, now strong through rest so long a space,

Well as she could she got, and did bedight ;
And being thereon mounted forth did pace
Withou^{en} guide her to conduct aright,
Or guard her to defend from bold oppressors might.

VIII.

Whom when her Host saw readie to depart,
He would not suffer her alone to fare,
But gan himselfe addresse to take her part.
Those warlike armes, which Calepine whyleare
Had left behind, he gan eftsoones prepare,
And put them all about himself unfit,
His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare,
But without sword upon his thigh to sit ;
Sir Calepine himselfe away had hidden it.

IX.

So forth they traveld an uneven payre,
That mote to all men seeme an uncouth sight ;
A Salvage Man match with a Ladie fayre
That rather seem'd the conquest of his might
Gotten by spoyle then purchaced aright :
But he did her attend most carefully,
And faithfully did serve both day and night
Withouten thought of shame or villeny,
Ne ever shewed signe of foule disloyalty.

X.

Upon a day, as on their way they went,
It chaunst some furniture about her steed
To be disordred by some accident ;
Which to redresse she did th' assistance need
Of this her Groome ; which he by signes did
reede ;
And streight his combrous armes aside did lay
Upon the ground, withouten doubt or dreed ;
And, in his homely wize, began to assay
T' amend what was amisse, and put in right aray.

XI.

Bout which whilest he was busied thus hard,
Lo ! where a Knight, together with his Squire,
All arm'd to point came ryding thetherward ;
Which seemed, by their portance and attire,
To be two Errant Knights, that did inquire
After adventures, where they mote them get :
Those were to weet (if that ye it require)
Prince Arthur and young Timias, which met
By straunge occasion, that here needs forth be set.

XII.

After that Timias had againe recured
The favour of Belphebe, as ye heard,
And of her grace did stand againe assured,
To happie blisse he was full high uprear'd,
Nether of envy nor of change afeard :
Though many foes did him maligne therefore,
And with uniuert detraction him did beard ;

Yet he himselfe so well and wisely bore,
That in her soveraine lyking he dwelt evermore.

XIII.

But, of them all which did his ruine seeke,
Three mightie enemies did him most despight,
Three mightie ones, and cruell minded ecke,
That him not onely sought by open might
To overthrow, but to supplant by sight :
The first of them by name was cald Despetto,
Exceeding all the rest in powre and hight ;
The second, not so strong but wise, Decetto ;
The third, nor strong nor wise but spightfullest,
Defetto.

XIV.

Of times their sundry powres they did employ,
And several deceits, but all in vaine ;
For neither they by force could him destroy,
Ne yet entrap in treasons subtile traine :
Therefore, conspiring all together plaine,
They did their counsels now in one compound :
Where singled forces faile, conioynd may gaine.
The Blatant Beast the fittest meanes they found
To worke his utter shame, and throughly him con-
found.

XV.

Upon a day, as they the time did waite
When he did raunge the wood for salvage game,
They sent that Blatant Beast to be a baite
To draw him from his deare beloved Dame
Unwares into the daunger of defame ;
For well they wist that Squire to be so hold,
That no one beast in Forrest wyld or tame
Met him in chase, but he it challenge would,
And plucke the pray of times out of their greedy
hould.

XVI.

The hardy Boy, as they devised had,
Seeing the ugly Monster passing by,
Upon him set, of perill nought adrad,
Ne skilfull of the uncouth ieopardy ;
And charged him so fierce and furiously,
That, his great force unable to endure,
He forced was to turne from him and fly :
Yet, ere he fled, he with his tooth impure
Him heedlesse bit, the whiles he was thereof secure.

XVII.

Securely he did after him pursew,
Thinking by speed to overtake his flight ;
Who through thicke woods and brakes and briers
him drew,
To weary him the more and waste his spight,
So that he now has almost spent his spright :
Till that at length unto a woody glade
He came, whose covert stopt his further sight ;
There his three foes shrowded in guilefull shade
Out of their ambush broke, and gan him to invade.

XVIII.

Sharpely they all atonce did him assaile,
Burning with inward rancour and despight,
And heaped strokes did round about him haile
With so huge force, that seemed nothing might

XIII. 6. — Despetto, &c.] Despetto is Despight, Ma
lice; Decetto, Deceit; Defetto, Defamation. CHURCH.

XV. 4. — from his deare beloved Dame] That is
Belphebe. UPTON.

IX. 1. — an uneven payre,] Unsuitably matched.
CHURCH.

XII. 1. — recured] Recovered, regained. TOND.

Ibid. After that Timias had againe recured &c.] When
Sir Walter Rawleigh had recovered again the favour of
Q. Elizabeth. UPTON.

XII. 7. — did beard:] Affront him to his face. Fr.
Faire la barbe à quelqu'un. UPTON.

Beare off their blowes from percing thorough
Yet he them all so warily did ward, [quite :
That none of them in his soft flesh did bite ;
And all the while his backe for best safegard
He lent against a tree, that backward onset bard.

XIX.

Like a wyld bull, that, being at a bay,
Is bayted of a mastiffe and a hound
And a curre-dog, that doe him sharpe assay
On every side, and beat about him round ;
But most that curre, barking with bitter sownd,
And creeping still behinde, doth him incomber,
That in his chauffe he digs the trampled ground,
And threats his horns, and bellowes like the
thonder :
So did that Squire his foes disperse and drive
asonder.

XX.

Him well behaved so ; for his three foes
Sought to encompasse him on every side,
And dangerously did round about enclose :
But, most of all, Defetto him annoyed,
Creeping behinde him still to have destroyde ;
So did Decetto eke him circumvent ;
But stout Despetto in his greater pryde
Did front him, face to face against him bent :
Yet he them all withstood, and often made relent.

XXI.

Till that at length nigh tyrd with former chace,
And weary now with carefull keeping ward,
He gan to shrinke and somewhat to give place,
Full like ere long to have escaped hard ;
Whenas unwares he in the Forrest heard
A trampling steede; that with his neighing fast
Did warne his rider be upon his gard ;
With noise whereof the Squire, now nigh aghast,
Revived was, and sad dispaire away did cast.

XXII.

Eftsoones he spide a Knight approaching nye ;
Who, seeing one in so great danger set
Mongst many foes, himself did faster hie
To reskue him, and bis weake part abet,
For pitty so to see him overset :
Whom soone as his three enemies did vew,
They fled, and fast into the wood did get :
Him booted not to thinke them to pursue ;
The covert was so thicke, that did no passage shew.

XXIII.

Then, turning to that Swaine, him well he knew
To be his Timias, his owne true Squire ;
Whereof exceeding glad, he to him drew,
And, him embracing twixt his armes entire,
Him thus bespake ; “ My liefie, my lifes desire,
Why have ye me alone thus long yleft ?
Tell me what worlds despight, or heavens yre,
Hath you thus long away from me bereft ?
Where have ye all this while bin wandring, where
bene weft ?

XXIV.

With that he sighed deepe for inward tyme :
To whom the Squire nought answered againe,
But, shedding few soft teares from tender eyne,
His dear affect with silence did restraine,

xx. 9. ——— relent.] *Stay or abate.* TODD.

xxiv. 4. ——— affect] Affection. CHURCH.

And shut up all his plaint in privy paine.
There they awhile some gracious speeches spent,
As to them seem'd fit time to entertaine :
After all which up to their steedes they went,
And forth together rode, a goodly couplement.

XXV.

So now they be arrived both in sight
Of this Wyld Man, whom they full busie found
About the sad Serena things to dight,
With those brave armouris lying on the ground,
That seem'd the spoile of some rightwell renownd.
Which when that Squire beheld, he to them stept
Thinking to take them from that hylding hound ;
But he it seeing lightly to him lept,
And sternely with strong hand It from his
handling kept :

XXVI.

Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly looke,
And sparkling fire out of his furious eyne,
Him with his fist unwares on th' head he strooke,
That made him downe unto the earth encline ;
Whence soone upstarting, much he gan repine,
And laying hand upon his wrathfull blade
Thought therewithall forthwith him to have slaine ;
Who it perceiving hand upon him layd,
And greedily him griping his avengement stayd.

XXVII.

With that aloude the faire Serena cryde
Unto the Knight, them to dispart in twaine :
Who to them stepping did them soone divide,
And did from further violence restraine,
Albe the Wyld Man hardly would refraine.
Then gan the Prince of her for to demand
What and from whence she was ; and by what
traîne
She fell into that Salvage Villaines hand ;
And whether free with him she now were, or in
band.

XXVIII.

To whom she thus ; “ I am, as now ye see,
The wretchedst Dame that lives this day on
ground,
Who both in minde (the which most grieveth me)
And body hath receiv'd a mortall wound,
That hath me driven to this dreery stound.
I was erewhile the Love of Calepine ;
Who whether he alive be to be found,
Or by some deadly chauce be done to pine,
Since I him lately lost, uneach is to define.

XXIX.

“ In salvage Forrest I him lost of late,
Where I had surely long ere this bene dead,
Or else remained in most wretched state,
Had not this Wyld Man in that wofull stead
Kept and delivered me from deadly dread.
In such a salvage wight, of brutish kynd,
Amongst wilde beastes in desert Forrests bred,
It is most strange and wonderful to fynd
So milde humanity and perfect gentle mynd.

XXX.

“ Let me therefore this favour for him finde,
That ye will not your wrath upon him wreake,

xxv. 7. ——— that hylding hound:] That base creature, the Wild Man. TODD.

xxviii. 8. ——— be done to pine.] Is put to death, starved pined away; and so used by Chaucer. UPTON.

Sith he cannot expresse his simple minde,
Ne yours conceive, ne but by tokens speake :
Small praise to prove your powre on wight so
weake !”

With such faire words she did their heate asswage,
And the strong course of their displeasure breake,
That they to pittie turnd their former rage,
And each sought to supply the office of her Page.

xxx.

So, having all things well about her dight,
She on her way cast forward to proceede ;
And they her forth conducted, where they might
Finde harbour fit to comfort her great neede ;
For now her wounds corruption gan to breed :
And eke this Squire, who likewise wounded was
Of that same Monster late, for lacke of heed
Now gan to faint, and further could not pas
Through feeblenesse, which all his limbes op-
pressed has.

xxxii.

So forth they rode together all in troupe [ease
To seeke some place, the which mote yeeld some
To these sicke twaine that now began to droupe :
And all the way the Prince sought to appease
The bitter anguish of their sharpe disease
By all the courteous meanes he could invent ;
Somewhile with merry purpose, fit to please,
And otherwhile with good encouragement,
To make them to endure the pains did them torment.

xxxiii.

Mongst which, Serena did to him relate
The foule discourtsies and unknighly parts,
Which Turpine had unto her shewed late
Without compassion of her cruell smarts :
Although Blandina did with all her arts
Him otherwise perswade all that she might,
Yet he of malice, without her desarts,
Not onely her excluded late at night,
But also trayterously did wound her weary Knight.

xxxiv.

Wherewith the Prince sore moved there avoud
That, soone as he returned hacke againe,
He would avenge th’ abuses of that proud
And shameful Knight, of whom she did complaine.
This wize did they each other entertaine
To passe the tedious travell of the way ;
Till towards night they came unto a plaine,
By which a little Hermitage there lay,
Far from all neighbourhood, the which annoy it may.

xxxv.

And nigh thereto a little Chappel stode,
Which being all with yvy overspred
Deekt all the roofe, and, shadowing the roode,
Seem’d like a grove faire branched over hed ;
Therein the Hermit, which his life here led
In streight observance of religious vow,
Was wont his howres and holy things to hed ;
And therein he likewise was praying now,
Whenas these Knights arriv’d, they wist not where
nor how.

xxxv. 3. — *the roode,*] *The roode,* i. e. the *cross* or *crucifix*. Anglo-Sax. *rode*. URTON.

xxxv. 7. — *his howres and holy things to bed ;*] *To bed,* is, on account of the rhyme, put for *to bid*. In French *heures* signifies *prayers*, or a prayer-book. URTON.

xxxvi.

They stayd not there, but streightway in did pas :
Whom when the Hermite present saw in place,
From his devotion streight he troubled was ;
Which breaking off he toward them did pace
With stayed steps and grave beseeching grace :
For well it seem’d that whilome he had bene
Some goodly person, and of gentle race,
That could his good to all ; and well did weene
How each to entertaine with curtsie well beseeene :

xxxvii.

And soothly it was sayd by common fame,
So long as age enabled him thereto,
That he had hene a man of mickle name,
Renowned much in armes and derring doe :
But being aged now, and weary to
Of warres delight and worlds contentions toyle,
The name of Knighthood he did disavow ;
And, hanging up his armes and warlike spoyle,
From all this worlds incomprance did himselfe
assoyle.

xxxviii.

He thence them led into his Hermitage,
Letting their steedes to graze upon the greene :
Small was his house, and, like a little cage,
For his owne turne ; yet inly neate and clene,
Deekt with greene houghes and flowers gay be-
seene :
Therein he them full faire did entertaine
Not with such forged shoves, as fitter beene
For courting fooles that curtesies would faine,
But with entire affection and appearance plaine.

xxxix.

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee
Did use his feeble body to sustaine ;
The which full gladly they did take in glee,
Such as it was, ne did of want complaine,
But, heing well suffiz’d, their rested faine :
But fair Serene all night could take no rest,
Ne yet that gentle Squire, for grievous paine
Of their late woundes, the which the Blatant Beast
Had given them, whose grieffe through suffraunce
sore increast.

xl.

So all that night they past in great disease,
Till that the morning, bringing carely light
To guide mens labours, brought them also ease,
And some asswagement of their painefull plight.
Then up they rose, and gan themselves to dight
Unto their journey ; but that Squire and Dame
So faint and feeble were, that they ne might
Endure to travell, nor one foote to frame :
Their hearts were sicke ; their sides were sore ;
their feete were lame.

xxxvi. 8. *That could his good to all ;*] *That knew* and practised his good manners to all people. URTON.

xxxviii. 5. — *and flowers gay beseeene.*] *That is,* *or a gay appearance*. So above, st. 36. “How each to entertaine with curtsie well beseeene ;” i. e. well looking and becoming. URTON.

xxxix. 9. — *through suff’raunce*] *Through forbearance,* i. e. for want of being duly taken care of. CHURCH.

xl. 1. — *disease,*] *Uneasiness,* as already has been remarked. TODD.

xl. 8. — *nor one foote to frame ;*] *That is,* *to order right*. URTON.

XL.

Therefore the Prince, whom great affaires in mynd
 Would not permit to make there lenger stay,
 Was forced there to leave them both behynd
 In that good Hermits charge, whom he did pray
 To tend them well : So forth he went his way,
 And with him eke the Salvage (that whyleare
 Seeing his royall usage and array
 Was greatly growne in love of that brave Pere)
 Would needs depart; as shall declared be elsewhere.

CANTO VI.

The Hermite heales both Squire and Dame
 Of their sore maladies:
 He Turpine doth defeat and shame
 For his late villanies.

I.

No wound, which warlike hand of enemy
 Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore doth light
 As doth the poysonous sting, which infamy
 Infixeth in the name of noble wight;
 For, by no art nor any leaches might,
 It ever can recured be againe;
 Ne all the skill, which that immortall spright
 Of Podalyrius did in it retaine,
 Can remedy such hurts; such hurts are hellish paine.

II.

Such were the wounds the which that Blatant Beast
 Made in the bodies of that Squire and Dame;
 And, being such, were now much more increast
 For want of taking heede unto the same,
 That now corrupt and curelesse they became:
 Howbeit that careful Hermite did his best,
 With many kindes of medicines meete, to tame
 The poysonous humour which did most infest
 Their rancaking wounds, and every day them duely
 drest.

III.

For he right well in leaches craft was seene;
 And, through the long experience of his dayes,
 Which had in many fortunes tossed benee
 And past through many perillous assayes,
 He knew the diverse went of mortall wayes,
 And in the mindes of men had great insight;
 Which with sage counsell, when they went astray,
 He could enforme, and them reduce aright;
 And all the passions heale, which wound the weaker
 spright.

IV.

For whylome he had bene a doughty Knight,
 As any one that lived in his daies,
 And proved oft in many perillous fight,
 In which he grace and glory wonne alwaies,
 And in all battels bore away the baies;
 But being now attacht with timely age,
 And weary of this worlds unquiet waies,

ARG. 3. He Turpine doth defeat.] He, (not the Hermit, as the construction seems to imply, but) Prince Arthur, mentioned in the close of the last Canto. CHURCH.

I. 3. — infamy] That is, slander. Lat. *infamia*.

CHURCH.

II. 5. — went] Turnings and windings. CHURCH.

III. 8. — enforme.] Fashion. Old French, *enformer*.

CHURCH.

He tooke himselfe unto this Hermitage,
 In which he liv'd alone, like carelesse bird in cage.

V.

One day, as he was searching of their wounds,
 He found that they had festred privily;
 And, rancaking inward with unruly stounds,
 The inner parts now gan to putrify,
 That quite they seem'd past helpe of surgery;
 And rather needed to be disciplinde
 With holesome reede of sad sobriety,
 To rule the stubborne rage of passion blinde:
 Give salves to every sore, but counsell to the minde.

VI.

So, taking them apart into his cell,
 He to that point fit speaches gan to frame,
 As he the art of words knew wondrous well,
 And eke could doe as well as say the same;
 And thus he to them sayd; "Faire Daughter
 Dame,
 And you, faire Sonne, which here thus long now lie
 In piteous languor since ye hither came;
 In vaine of me ye hope for remedie,
 And I likewise in vaine doe salves to you applie:

VII.

"For in yourselfe your onely helpe doth lie
 To heale yourselves, and must proceed alone
 From your owne will to cure your maladie.
 Who can him cure that will be cur'd of none?
 If therefore health ye seeke, observe this one:
 First learne your outward senses to refraine
 From things that stirre up fraile affection;
 Your eies, your eares, your tongue, your talk
 restraine
 From that they most affect, and in due terraes
 containe.

VIII.

"For from those outward sences, ill affected,
 The seede of all this evill first doth spring,
 Which at the first, before it had infected,
 Mote easie he suppress with litle thing:
 But, being growen strong, it forth doth bring
 Sorrow, and anguish, and impatient paine,
 In th' inner parts; and lastly, scattering
 Contagious poyson close through every vaine,
 It never rests till it have wrought his final bane.

IX.

"For that Beastes teeth, which wounded you tofore,
 Are so exceeding venomous and keene,
 Made all of rusty yron rancaking sore,
 That, where they bite, it booteth not to weene
 With salve, or antidote, or other mene,
 It ever to amend: ne marvaile ought;
 For that same Beast was bred of hellish strene,
 And long in darksome Stygian den upbrought,
 Begot of foule Echidna, as in bookes is taught.

X.

"Echidna is a Monster direfull dred,
 Whom gods doe hate, and heavens abhor to see
 So hideous is her shape, so huge her hed,
 That even the hellish fiends affrighted bee
 At sight thereof, and from her presence flee:

VIII. 1. — ill affected,] Affected with bad impressions. CHURCH.

IX. 7. — strene,] Race. CHURCH.

Yet did her face and former parts professe
A faire young Mayden, full of comely glee ;
But all her hinder parts did plaine expresse
A monstrous Dragon, full of fearfull ugliness.

xi.

"To her the gods, for her so dreadfull face,
In fearefull darknesse, furthest from the skie
And from the earth, appointed have her place
Mongst rocks and caves, where she enrold doth lie
In hideous horreur and obscurity,
Wasting the strength of her immortall age :
There did Typhaon with her company ;
Cruell Typhaon, whose pestemous rage
Makes th' heavens tremble oft, and him with vowes
asswage.

xii.

"Of that commixtion they did then beget
This hellish dog, that hight the Blatant Beast ;
A wicked monster, that his tongue doth whet
Gainst all, both good and bad, both most and least,
And pours his poysnous gall forth to infest
The noblest wights with notable defame:
Ne euer Knight that bore so lefty creast,
Ne euer Lady of so honest name,
But he them spotted with reproch, or secrete shame.

xiii.

"In vaine therefore it were with medicine
To goe about to salve such kind of sore,
That rather needes wise read and discipline
Then outward salves that may augment it more."
"Aye me !" sayd then Serena, sighing sore,
"What hope of helpe doth then for us remaine,
If that no salves may us to health restore !"
"But sith we need good counsell," sayd the Swaine,
"Aread, good Sire, some counsell that may us
sustaine."

xiv.

"The best," sayd he, "that I can you advize,
Is, to avoide th' occasion of the ill ;
For when the cause, whence evill doth arise,
Removed is, th' effect surceaseth still ;
Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your will ;
Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight ;
Use scantied diet, and forbear your fill ;
Shun secresie, and talke in open sight :
So shall you some repaire your present evill plight."

xv.

Thus having sayd, his sickely patients
Did gladly hearken to his grave beheast,
And kept so well his wise commandments,
That in short space their malady was ceast,
And eke the biting of that harmefull Beast [ceave
Was throughly heal'd. Tho when they did per-
Their wounds recur'd, and forces reincrease,
Of that good Hermite both they tooke their leave,
And went both on their way, ne ech would other
leave :

xvi.

But each the other vow'd t' accompany :
The Lady, for that she was much in dred,

x. 6. — did professe] Had the appearance of. CHURCH.
x. 9 — fearfull ugliness.] Ugliness that occasions
feare. CHURCH.

xii. 4. — both most and least,] Most here signifies
greatest. T. WARTON.

Now left alone in great extremity ;
The Squire, for that he courteous was indeed,
Would not her leave alone in her great need.
So both together traveld, till they met
With a faire Mayden clad in mourning weed,
Upon a mangy iade unmeetely set,
And a lewd Foole her leading through dry and wet.

xvii.

But by what means that shame to her befell,
And how thereof herselfe she did acquite,
I must a while forbear to you to tell ;
Till that, as comes by course, I doe recite
What fortune to the Briton Prince did lite,
Pursuing that proud Knight, the which whileare
Wrought to Sir Calepine so foule despight ;
And eke his Lady, though she sickly were,
So lowly had abusde, as ye did lately heare.

xviii.

The Prince, according to the former token,
Which faire Serene to him delivered had,
Purs'd him streight ; in mynd to bene ywroken
Of all the vile demeane and usage bad,
With which he had those two so ill bestad :
Ne wight with him on that adventure went,
But that Wylde Man ; whom though he oft for-
Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent, [bad,
Would he restrained be from his attendement.

xix.

Arriving there, as did by chance befall,
He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode,
Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall ;
Where soft dismounting, like a weary lode,
Upon the ground with feeble feete he trode,
As he unable were for very neede
To move one foote, but there must make abode ;
The whiles the Salvage Man did take his steede,
And in some stable neare did set him up to feede.

xx.

Ere long to him a homely Groome there came,
That in rude wise him asked what he was,
That durst so boldly, without let or shame,
Into his Lords forbidden hall to passe :
To whom the Prince, him fayning to embase,
Mylde answer made, he was an Errant Knight,
The which was fall'n into this feeble case
Through many wounds, which lately he in fight
Received had, and prayd to pittie his ill plight.

xxi.

But he, the more outrageous and bold,
Sternely did bid him quickly thence avaunt,
Or deare aby ; for why ? his Lord of old

xvi. 4. — indeed,] Rather, in deed. UPTON.

xvi. 7. With a faire Mayden &c.] Mr. Upton thinks
that the cruel Rosalind is here plainly characterised in
Mirabella ; her pride and disdain being repeatedly binted
at by the poet. TODD.

xvi. 9. And a lewd Foole her leading &c.] Namely,
Scorn, thus personified. TODD.

xvii. 6. — that proud Knight,] Sir Turpine. CHURCH.

xviii. 4. — demeane,] Behaviour, demeanour, from
the verb demeane. TODD.

xviii. 8. — shent,] Abused with reproachful lan-
guage. CHURCH.

xx. 5. — him fayning to embase,] That is, affecting
to demean or lessen himself. So we say to imbase, or
embase, gold and silver ; that is, to lower the value. TODD.

Did hate all Errant Knights which there did haunt,
 Ne lodging would to any of them graunt ;
 And therefore lightly had him packe away,
 Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt ;
 And therewithall rude hand on him did lay,
 To thrust him out of dore doing his worst assay.

XXII.

Which when the Salvage comming now in place
 Beheld, eftsoones he all enraged grew,
 And, running streight upon that Villaine base,
 Like a fell lion at him fiercely flew,
 And with his teeth and nailes, in present vew,
 Him rudely rent and all to peeces tore ;
 So miserably him all helpelesse slew,
 That with the noise, whilst he did loudly rore,
 The people of the house rose forth in great uprore.

XXIII.

Who when on ground they saw their fellow slaine,
 And that same Knight and Salvage standing by,
 Upon them two they fell with might and maine,
 And on them layd so huge and horribly,
 As if they would have slaine them presently :
 But the bold Prince defended him so well,
 And their assault withstood so mightily,
 That, maugre all their might, he did repell
 And beat them back, whilst many underneath him
 fell.

XXIV.

Yet he them still so sharply did pursew,
 That few of them he left alive, which fled,
 Those evill tidings to their Lord to shew :
 Who, hearing how his people badly sped,
 Came forth in hast ; where whenas with the dead
 He saw the ground all strow'd, and that same
 Knight
 And Salvage with their blond fresh steeming red,
 He woxe nigh mad with wrath and fell despight,
 And with reprochfull words him thus bespake on
 hight ;

XXV.

“ Art thou He, traytor, that with treason vile
 Hast slaine my men in this unmanly maner,
 And now triumphest in the piteous spoile [honor
 Of these poore folk, whose soules with black dis-
 And foule defame doe decke thy bloudie baner ?
 The meede whereof shall shortly be thy shame,
 And wretched end which still attendeth on her.”
 With that himselfe to battell he did frame ;
 So did his forty yeomen, which there with him
 came.

XXVI.

With dreadfull force they all did him assaile,
 And roundabout with boystrous strokes oppresse,
 That on his shield did rattle like to haile
 In a great tempest ; that in such distresse
 He wist not to which side him to adresse :
 And evermore that craven cowherd Knight
 Was at his backe with heartlesse heedinesse,
 Wayting if he unwares him murder might :
 For cowardize doth still in villany delight.

XXVII.

Whereof whenas the Prince was well aware,
 He to him turnd with furious intent,

xxv. 7. — on her.] On shame. CHURCH.

xxvi. 6. — that craven &c.] Base or recreant. TODD.

And him against his powre gan to prepare :
 Like a fierce bull, that being busie bent
 To fight with many foes about him ment,
 Feeling some curie behinde his heeles to bite,
 Turnes him about with fell avengement :
 So likewise turnde the Prince upon the Knight,
 And layd at him amaine with all his will and might.

XXVIII.

Who, when he once his dreadful strokes had tasted,
 Durst not the furie of his force abyde,
 But turn'd abacke, and to retyre him hasted
 Through the thick prease, there thinking him to
 hyde :
 But, when the Prince had once him plainely eyde,
 He foot by foot him followed alway,
 Ne would him suffer once to shrinke asyde ;
 But, joyning close, huge lode at him did lay ;
 Who flying still did ward, and warding fly away.

XXIX.

But, when his foe he still so eger saw,
 Unto his heeles himselfe he did betake,
 Hoping unto some refuge to withdraw :
 Ne would the Prince him ever foot forsake
 Whereso he went, but after him did make.
 He fled from roome to roome, from place to place,
 Whylest every ioynt for dread of death did quake,
 Still looking after him that did him chace,
 That made him evermore increase his speedie pace.

XXX.

At last he up into the chamber came
 Whereas his Love was sitting all alone,
 Wayting what tydings of her folke became.
 There did the Prince him overtake anone
 Crying in vaine to her him to bemoone ;
 And with his sword him on the head did smyte,
 That to the ground he fell in senselesse swone :
 Yet, whether thwart or flatly it did lyte,
 The tempered steele did not into his braynepan hyte.

XXXI.

Which when the Ladie saw, with great afright
 She starting up began to shriek aloud ;
 And, with her garment covering him from sight,
 Seem'd under her protection him to shroud ;
 And, falling lowly at his feet, her bowd
 Upon her knee, intreating him for grace,
 And often him besought, and prayd, and vowd ;
 That, with the ruth of her so wretched case,
 He stayd his second strooke and did his hand abase.

XXXII.

Her weed she then withdrawing did him discover ;
 Who now come to himselfe yet would not rize,
 But still did lie as dead, and quake, and quiver,
 That even the Prince his basenesse did despize ;
 And eke his Dame, him seeing in such guize,
 Gan him recomfort and from ground to reare :
 Who rising up at last in ghastly wize,
 Like troubled ghost, did dreadfully appeare,
 As one that had no life him left through former
 feare.

XXXIII.

Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dismayd,
 He for such basenesse shamefully him shent,

xxvii. 5. — about him ment,] That is, which sur-
 round him. MENT. mingled. CHURCH.

xxx. 9. — his braynepan] Brain-pan was a com-
 mon phrase for head. T. WARTON.

And with sharpe words did bitterly upbrayd ;
 " Vile cowheard Dogge, now doe I much repent,
 That euer I this life unto thee lent,
 Whereof thou caytive so unworthie art,
 That both thy Love, for lacke of hardiment,
 And eke thyselfe, for want of manly hart,
 And eke all Knights had shamed with this knight-
 lesse part.

XXXIV.

" Yet further hast thou heaped shame to shame,
 And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard feare :
 For first it was to thee reprochfull blame,
 T' erect this wicked custome, which I heare
 Gainst errant Knights and Ladies thou dost reare ;
 Whom when thou mayst thou dost of arms de-
 spoile,
 Or of their upper garment which they weare :
 Yet doest thou not with manhood, but with guile,
 Maintaine this evil use, thy foes thereby to foile.

XXXV.

" And lastly, in approvance of thy wrong,
 To shew such faintnesse and foule cowardize
 Is greatest shame ; for oft it falles, that strong
 And valiant Knights doe rashly enterprize
 Either for fame, or else for exercize,
 A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight ;
 Yet have through prowess and their brave em-
 gotten great worship in this world's sight : [prize
 For greater force there needs to maintaine wrong
 then right.

XXXVI.

" Yet, since thy life unto this Ladie fayre
 I given have, live in reproch and scorne !
 Ne ever armes ne ever knighthood dare
 Hence to professe ; for shame is to adorne
 With so brave badges one so basely borne ;
 But onely breath, sith that I did forgive !"
 So having from his craven bodie torne
 Those goodly armes, he them away did give,
 And onely suffred him this wretched life to live.

XXXVII.

There whilest he thus was setting things above,
 Atwene that Ladie myld and recreant Knight,
 To whom his life he graunted for her love,
 He gan bethinke him in what perilous plight
 He had behynd him left that salvage wight
 Amongst so many foes, whom sure he thought
 By this quite slaine in so unequal fight :
 Therefore descending backe in haste he sought
 If yet he were alive, or to destruction brought.

XXXVIII.

There he him found environed about [slaine ;
 With slaughtred bodies, which his hand had
 And laying yet afresh with courage stout
 Upon the rest that did alive remaine ;
 Whom he likewise right sorely did constraine,
 Like scattred sheepe, to seeke for safetie,
 After he gotten had with busie paine
 Some of their weapons which thereby did lie,
 With which he layd about, and made them fast to
 flie.

XXXIX.

Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage,
 Approaching to him neare, his hand he stayd,

And sought, by making signes, him to asswage .
 Who them perceiving, streight to him obeyd,
 As to his Lord, and downe his weapons layd,
 As if he long had to his heasts bene trayned.
 Thence he him brought away, and up convayd
 Into the chamber, where that Dame remainyd
 With her unworthy Knight, who ill him entertayned.

XL.

Whom when the Salvage saw from daunger free,
 Sitting beside his Ladie there at ease,
 He well remembered that the same was hee,
 Which lately sought his Lord for to displease :
 Tho all in rage he on him streight did seaze,
 As if he would in peeces him have rent ;
 And, were not that the Prince did him appeaze,
 He had not left one limbe of him unrent :
 But streight he held his hand at his commaund&-
 ment.

XLI.

Thus having all things well in peace ordayned,
 The Prince himselfe there all that night did rest ;
 Where him Blandina fayrely entertayned
 With all the courtesous glee and goodly feast
 The which for him she could imagine best :
 For well she knew the wayes to win good will
 Of every wight, that were not too infest ;
 And how to please the minds of good and ill,
 Through tempering of her words and lookes by
 wondrous skill.

XLII.

Yet were her words and lookes but false and fayned,
 To some hid end to make more easie way,
 Or to allure such fondlings whom she trayned
 Into her trap unto their owne decay :
 Thereto, when needed, she could weepe and pray,
 And when her listed she could fawne and flatter ;
 Now snyling smoothly like to sommers day,
 Now glooming sadly, so to cloke her matter ;
 Yet were her words but wynd, and all her tears but
 water.

XLIII.

Whether such grace were given her by kynd,
 As women wont their guilefull wits to gyude ;
 Or leard the art to please, I doe not fynd :
 This well I wote, that she so well applyde
 Her pleasing tongue, that soon she pacifyde
 The wrathfull Prince, and wrought her husbands
 Who nathelasse, not therewith satisfyde, [peace :
 His rancorous despight did not releasse,
 Ne secretly from thought of fell revenge surceasse :

XLIV.

For all that night, the whyles the Prince did rest
 In carelesse couch not weeting what was ment,
 He watcht in close awayt with weapons prest,
 Willing to worke his villenous intent
 On him, that had so shamefully him shent :
 Yet durst he not for very cowardize
 Effect the same, whylest all the night was spent.
 The morrow next the Prince did early rize,
 And passed forth to follow his first enterprize.

xxxix. 4. *Who them perceiving.*] That is, perceiving
 the signs which the Prince made to him. CHURCH.

xl.iii. 3. *Or learned*] Or that she had leard'd. CHURCH

CANTO VII.

Turpine is baffald : his two Knights
Doe gaine their treasons meed.
Fayre Mirabellines punishment
For Loves disdaine decreed.

I.

LIKE as the gentle hart itselfe bewrayes
In doing gentle deedes with franke delight,
Even so the baser mind itselfe displayes
In cancred malice and revengefull spight :
For to maligne, t' envie, t' use shifting slight,
Be arguments of a vile donghill mind ;
Which, what it dare not doe by open might,
To worke by treason wayes doth find,
By such discourteous deedes discovering his base kind.

II.

That well appears in this discourteous Knight,
The coward Turpine, whereof now I treat ;
Who notwithstanding that in former fight
He of the Prince his life received late,
Yet in his mind malicious and ingrate
He gan devise to be aveng'd anew
For all that shame, which kindled inward hate :
Therefore, so soone as he was out of vew,
Himselfe in hast he arm'd, and did him fast pursue.

III.

Well did he tract his steps as he did ryde,
Yet would not neare approach in daungers eye,
But kept aloofe for dread to be descryde,
Untill fit time and place he mote espy,
Where he mote worke him scath and villeny.
At last he met two Knights to him unknowne,
The which were armed both agreeably,
And both combynd, whatever chance were
blowne,
Betwixt them to divide and each to make his owne.

IV.

To whom false Turpine comming courteously,
To cloke the mischief which he inly ment,
Gan to complaine of great discourtesie, [went,
Which a straunge Knight, that neare afore him
Had doen to him, and his deare Ladie shent ;
Which if they would afford him ayde at need
For to avenge in time convenient,
They should accomplish both a knightly deed,
And for their paines obtaine of him a goodly meed.

V.

'The Knights beleev'd that all he sayd was trew ;
And, being fresh and full of youthly spright,
Were glad to heare of that adventure new,
In which they mote make triall of their might
Which never yet they had approv'd in fight,
And eke desirous of the offred meed :
Said then the one of them ; " Where is that wight,
The which hath doen to thee this wrongfull deed,
That we may it avenge, and punish him with speed ?"

VI.

" He rides," said Turpine, " there not farre afore,
With a Wyld Man soft footing by his syde ;
That, if ye list to haste a litle more,
Ye may him overtake in timely tyde."

III. 7. — agreeably,] *Alike*, like each other. CHURCH.

Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward pryde,
And, ere that litle while they ridden had,
The gentle Prince not farre away they spyde,
Ryding a softly pace with portance sad,
Devising of his Love more then of daunger drad.

VII.

Then one of them aloud unto him cryde, [Knight,
Bidding him turne againe ; " False traytour
Foule woman-wronger !" — for he him defyde,
With that they both at once with equall spight
Did bend their speares, and both with equall might
Against him ran ; but th' one did misse his marke,
And being carried with his force forthright
Glaunst swiftly by ; like to that heavenly sparke,
Which glyding through the ayre lights all the hea-
vens darke.

VIII.

But th' other, ayming better, did him smite
Full in the shield with so impetuous powre,
That all his lance in peeces shivered quite,
And scattered all about fell on the flowre :
But the stout Prince with much more steddystowre
Full on his bever did him strike so sore,
That the cold steele through piercing did devowre
His vitall breath, and to the ground him bore,
Where still he bathed lay in his own bloody gore.

IX.

As when a cast of falcons make their flight
At an hernessaw, that lies aloft on wing,
The whyles they strike at him with heedlesse
might,
The warie foule his bill doth backward wring ;
On which the first, whose force her first doth bring,
Herselfe quite through the bodie doth engore,
And fallett downe to ground like senselesse thing ;
But th' other, not so swift as she before,
Fayles of her house, and passing by doth hurt no
more.

X.

By this the other, which was passed by,
Himselfe recovering, was return'd to fight ;
Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly,
He much was daunted with so dismal sight ;
Yet, nought abating of his former spight,
Let drive at him with so malicious mynd,
As if he would have passed through him quight :
But the steele-head no stedfast hold could fynd,
But glauncing by deceiv'd him of that he desynd.

XI.

Not so the Prince ; for his well-learned speare
Tooke surer hould, and from his horses backe
Above a launces length him forth did beare,
And gainst the cold hard earth so sore him strake,
That all his bones in peeces nigh he brake.
Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed,
And, to him leaping, vengeance thought to take
Of him, for all his former follies meed,
With flaming sword in hand his terror more to breed.

XII.

The fearfull Swayne beholding death so nie
Cryde out aloud, for mercie, him to save ;
In lieu whereof he would to him descrie

IX. 1. *As when a cast of falcons*] A cast of falcons is
a couple of hawks. CHURCH.

Great treason to him meant, his life to reave.
The Prince soone hearkned, and his life forgave.
Then thus said he ; "There is a straunger Knight,
The which, for promise of great meed, us drave
To this attempt, to wreake his hid despight,
For that himselfe thereto did want sufficient might."

xiii.

The Prince much mused at such villenie, [meed ;
And said ; " Now sure ye well have earn'd your
For th' one is dead, and th' other soone shall die,
Unlesse to me thou hither bring with speed
The wretch that hyr'd you to this wicked deed."
He glad of life, and willing eke to wreake
The guilt on him which did this mischiefe breed,
Swore by his sword, that neither day nor weeke
He would surceasse, but him whereso he were would
seeke.

xiv.

So up he rose, and forth streightway he went,
Backe to the place where Turpin late he lore :
There he him found in great astonishment,
To see him so bedight with bloodie gore
And griesly wounds, that him appalled sore.
Yet thus at length he said ; " How now, Sir Knight,
What meaneth this which here I see before ?
How fortuneth this foule uncomely plight,
So different from that which earst ye seem'd in
sight ?"

xv.

"Perdie," said he, " in evill houre it fell,
That ever I for meed did undertake
So hard a taske as life for hyre to sell ;
The which I earst adventur'd for your sake :
Witness the wounds, and this wide bloudie lake,
Which ye may see yet all about me steeme.
Therefore now yeeld, as ye did promise make,
My due reward, the which right well I deeme
I yearned have, that life so dearely did redeeme."

xvi.

" But where then is," quoth he halfe wrothfully,
" Where is the bootie, which therefore I bought,
That cursed caytive, my strong enemy,
That recreant Knight, whose hated life I sought ?
And where is eke your friend which halfeit ought ?"
" He lyes," said he, " upon the cold bare ground,
Slayne of that Errant Knight with whom he fought ;
Whom afterwards my selfe with many a wound
Did slay againe, as ye may see there in the stound."

xvii.

Thereof false Turpin was full glad and faine, [ryde,
And needs with him streight to the place would
Where he himselfe might see his foeman slaine ;
For else his feare could not be satisfide.
So, as they rode, he saw the way all dyde [traile,
With streames of blood ; which tracting by the
Ere long they came, whenas in evill tyde
That other Swayne, like ashes deadly pale,
Lay in the lap of death, rewing his wretched bale.

xviii.

Much did the Craven seeme to mone his case,
That for his sake his deare life had forgone ;
And, him bewaying with affection base,
Did counterfeit kind pittie where was none :

xv 9. *I yearned have,*] I have gained or deserved. TODD.

xvi. 5. ——— ought?] Owned, had a right to. CHURCH.

For where's no courage, there's no ruth nor more.
Thence passing forth, not farre away he found
Whereas the Prince himselfe lay all alone,
Loosely displayd upon the grassie ground,
Possessed of sweete sleepe that luld him soft in
swound.

xix.

Wearie of travell in his former fight,
He there in shade himselfe had layd to rest,
Having his armes and warlike things undight,
Fearelesse of foes that mote his peace molest ;
The whyles his Salvage Page, that wont be prest,
Was wandred in the wood another way,
To doe some thing, that seemed to him best ;
The whyles his Lord in silver slomber lay,
Like to the evening starre adorn'd with dewy ray.

xx.

Whom whenas Turpin saw so loosely layd,
He weened well that he indeed was dead,
Like as that other Knight to him had said :
But, when he nigh approcht, he mote aread
Plaine signes in him of life and liveliead.
Whereat much griev'd against that straunger
Knight,
That him too light of credence did mislead,
He would have backe retyred from that sight,
That was to him on earth the deadliest despight.

xxi.

But that same Knight would not once let him start ;
But plainly gan to him declare the case
Of all his mischiefe and late lucklesse smart ;
How both he and his fellow there in place
Were vanquished, and put to foule disgrace ;
And how that he, in lieu of life him lent,
Had vow'd unto the Victor, him to trace
And follow through the world whereso he went.
Till that he him delivered to his punishment.

xxii.

He, therewith much abashed and affrayd,
Began to tremble every limbe and vaine ;
And, softly whispering him, entyrelly prayd
T' advize him better then by such a traine
Him to betray unto a straunger Swaine :
Yet rather counseld him contrarywise,
Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine,
To ioyne with him and vengeance to devise,
Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping to
surprize.

xxiii.

Nathelesse, for all his speach, the gentle Knight
Would not be tempted to such villenie,
Regarding more his faith which he did plight,
All were it to his mortall enemy,
Then to entrap him by false treacherie :
Great shame in lies blood to be embrew'd !
Thus whylest they were debating diverslie,
The Salvage forth out of the wood issew'd
Backe to the place, whereas his Lord he sleeping
vew'd.

xix. 5. ——— prest,] *Prest* is very frequently used by Spenser. In some places it signifies *ready* or *quick* ; in others it seems to be used, adverbially, for *quickly*, *immediately*. It is plainly the old French word *PRESTER*, *quick*, or *nimble*, which sometimes is used adverbially. T. WARTON.

xx. 1. ——— loosely layd,] That is, *carelessly* layd, as in F. Q. ii. v. 32, and elsewhere. TODD.

xxiv.

There when he saw those two so neare him stand,
He doubted much what mote their meaning bee ;
And, throwing downe his load out of his hand,
(To weete, great store of Forrest frute which hee
Had for his food late gathered from the tree,)
Himselfe unto his weapon he betooke,
That was an oaken plant, which lately hee
Rent by the root ; which he so sternly shooke,
That like an hazell wand it quivered and quooke.

xxv.

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde
The traytour Turpin with that other Knight,
He started up ; and snatching neare his syde
His trustie sword, the servant of his might,
Like a fell lyon leaped to him light,
And his left hand upon his collar layd.
Therewith the Cowheard, deaded with affright,
Fell flat to ground, ne word unto him sayd,
But, holding up his hands, with silence mercie prayd.

xxvi.

But he so full of indignation was,
That to his prayer nought he would incline,
But, as he lay upon the humbled gras,
His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe
Of servile yoke, that nobler harts repine.
Then, letting him arise like abiect thrall,
He gan to him obiect his haynous crime,
And to revile, and rate, and recreant call,
And lastly to despoyle of knightly bannerall.

xxvii.

And after all, for greater infamie,
He by the heeles him hung upon a tree,
And baffuld so, that all which passed by
The picture of his punishment might see,
And by the like ensample warned bee,
However they through treason doe trespassse.
But turne we now backe to that Ladie free,
Whom late we left rying upon an asse,
Led by a Carle and Foele which by her side did
passe.

xxviii.

She was a Ladie of great dignitie,
And lifted up to honorable place,
Famous through all the Land of Faërie :
Though of meane parentage and kindred base,
Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of natures grace,
That all men did her person much admire,
And praise the feature of her goodly face ;
The beames whereof did kinde lovely fire
In th' harts of many a Knight, and many a gentle
Squire :

xxix.

But she thereof grew proud and insolent,
That none she worthie thought to be her fere,
But scordn them all that love unto her ment ;
Yet was she lov'd of many a worthy Pere :
Unworthy she to be belov'd so dere,
That could not weigh of worthinesse aright :
For beautie is more glorions bright and clere,

xxvi. 3. — the humbled gras,] See the note on
" senselesse ground," F. Q. v. x. 33. F. WARTON.

xxvi. 5 — repine,] For repine at. CHURCH.

xxvi. 9. — bannerall,] A little flag ; a person borne
on the top of a lance, by a horseman that would be gallant.
TODD.

The more it is admir'd of many a wight,
And noblest she that served is of noblest Knight.

xxx.

But this coy Damzell thought contrariwise, [more,
That such proud looks would make her prayesd
And that, the more she did all love despize,
The more would wretched Lovers her adore.
What cared she who sighed for her sore,
Or who did wayle or watch the wearie night ?
Let them that list their lucklesse lot deplore ;
She was borne free, not bound to any wight,
And so would ever live, and love her own delight.

xxxii.

Through such her stubborne stifnesse and hard hart,
Many a wretch for want of remedie
Did languish long in life-consuming smart,
And at the last through dreary doulour die :
Whylest she, the Ladie of her libertie,
Did boast her beautie had such soveraine might,
That with the onely twinkle of her eye
She could or save or spill whom she would hight :
What could the Gods doe more, but doe it more
aright !

xxxiii.

But loe ! the gods, that mortall follies vew,
Did worthily revenge this Maydens pride ;
And, nought regarding her so goodly hew,
Did laugh at her that many did deride,
Whilest she did weepe, of no man mercifide :
For on a day, when Cupid kept his Court.
As he is wont at each Saint Valentine,
Unto the which all Lovers doe resort,
That of their Loves successe they there may make
report :

xxxiiii.

It fortun'd then, that when the roules were red,
In which the names of all Loves folke were fyled,
That many there were missing ; which were ded,
Or kept in bands, or from their Loves exyled,
Or by whomeas violence despoyled.
Which whenas Cupid heard, he waxed wroth ;
And, doubting to be wronged or beguyled,
He had his eyes to be unblindfold both,
That he might see his men, and muster them by
oth.

xxxv.

Then found he many missing of his crew,
Which wont doe suit and service to his might ;
Of whom what was becomen no man knew.
Therefore a Iurie was impaneld straight
T' enquire of them, whether by force, or sleight,
Or their owne guilt, they were away convayd :
To whom foule Infamie and fell Despight
Gave evidence, that they were all betrayd
And mured cruelly by a rebellious Mayd.

xxxvi.

Fayre Mirabella was her name, whereby
Of all those crymes she there indited was :
All which when Cupid heard, he by and by
In great displeasure wil'd a Capias

xxxii. 5. — mercifide :] *Pitied*. A word of his own.
CHURCH.

xxxiii. 2. — fyled,] Kept and filed up. UPTON.

xxxv. 4. — wil'd a Capias &c.] That is, ordered a
writ &c. A Capias is a writ requiring an appearance in
person. CHURCH.

Should issue forth t' attach that scornfull Lasse.
The Warrant straight was made, and therewithall
A Baylieffe errant forth in post did passe,
Whom they by name there Portamore did call ;
He which doth summon Lovers to Loves Judge-
ment Hall.

xxxvi.

The Damzell was attach, and shortly brought
Unto the Barre whereas she was arrayned :
But she thereto nould plead, nor answer ought,
Even for stubborne pride, which her restrayned ;
So judgement past, as is by law ordayned
In cases like : Which when at last she saw,
Her stubborne hart, which love before disdayned,
Gan stoupe ; and, falling downe with humble awe,
Cryde mercie, to abate the extremite of law.

xxxvii.

The Sonne of Venus, who is myld by kynd,
But where he is provokt with peevisshnesse,
Unto her prayers piteously encluynd,
And did the rigour of his doome repress ;
Yet not so freely, but that nathelless
He unto her a penance did impose,
Which was, that through this worlds wyde wilder-
She wander should in companie of those, [nes
Till she had sav'd so many Loves as she did lose.

xxxviii.

So now she had bene wandring two whole yeares
Throughout the world, in this uncomely case,
Wasting her goodly hew in heavie teares,
And her good dayes in dolorous disgrace ;
Yet had she not in all these two yeares space
Saved but two ; yet in two yeares before,
Through her dispiteous pride, whilest love lackt
place,
She had destroyed two and twenty more.
Aie me, how could her love make half amends
therefore !

xxxix.

And now she was upon the weary way,
Whenas the gentle Squire, with faire Serene,
Met her in such misseeming foule array ;
The whiles that mighty Man did her demeane
With all the evil termes and cruell meane
That he could make ; and ecke that angry Foole
Which follow'd her, with cursed hands unclean
Whipping her horse, did with his smarting toole
Off whip her dainty selfe, and much augment her
doole.

xl.

Ne ought it mote availle her to entreat
The one or th' other better her to use ;
For both so wilfull were and obstinate
That all her piteous plaint they did refuse,
And rather did the more her beate and bruse :
But most the former Villaine, which did lead

xxxvii. 2. But where he is provokt with peevisshnesse,] That is, except where he is provoked by perverseness of the party offending. CHURCH.

xxxviii 8. — those,] The Carle and Foole, that is, Scorn and Disdain. TODD.

xxxvii. 9. — Loves] That is, Lovers. CHURCH.

xxxix. 4. — that mighty Man] Disd. in. TODD.

Ibid. — did her demeane] Treated her. CHURCH.

xl. 6. But most the former villaine,] He who went fore-
most or first ; who led the Lady's horse, st. 44. UPTON.

Her tyreling iade, was bent her to abuse ;
Who, though she were with wearinesse nigh dead
Yet would not let her lye, nor rest a little stead .

xli.

For he was sterne and terrible by nature,
And ecke of person huge and hideous,
Exceeding much the measure of mans stature,
And rather like a Gyant monstrous :
For sooth he was descended of the hous
Of those old Gyants, which did warres darraigne
Against the Heaven in order battailous ;
And sib to great Orgolio, which was slaine
By Arthure, whenas Unas Knight he did maintaine.

xlii.

His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery eies,
Like two great beacons, glared bright and wyde,
Glauncing askew, as if his enemies
He scorned in his overweening pryde ;
And stalking stately, like a crane, did stryde
At every step upon the tiptoes hie ;
And, all the way he went, on every syde
He gaz'd about and stared horrible,
As if he with his lookes would all men terrifie.

xliii.

He wore no armour, ne for none did care,
As no whit dreading any living wight ;
But in a iacket, quilted richly rare
Upon checklaton, he was straungely dight ;
And on his head a roll of linnen plight,
Like to the Mores of Malaber, he wore,
With which his locks, as blacke as pitchy night,
Were bound about and voyded from before ;
And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

xliv.

This was Disdaine, who led that Ladies horse
Through thick and thin, through mountains and
through plains,
Compelling her, where she would not, by force,
Haling her palfrey by the hempen rames:
But that same Foole, which most increast her
paines,
Was Scorne ; who, having in his hand a whip,
Her therewith yrks ; and still, when she com-
plaines,
The more he laughes, and does her closely quip,
To see her sore lament and bite her tender lip.

xlv.

Whose cruell handling when that Squire beheld,
And saw those Villaines her so vildely use,
His gentle heart with indignation sweld,
And could no lenger beare so great abuse
As such a Lady so to beate and bruse ;
But, to him stepping, such a stroke him lent,
That forst him th' halter from his hand to loose,

xli. 9. — whenas &c.] That is, when he was in the
palace of, and acted the part of, Una's Knight. CHURCH.

xliii. 4. — checklaton,] The Glossaries suppose this
word to be compounded of *cheke* and *latoun*, a species of
hase metal like gold : But it seems rather to be merely a
corruption of the Fr. *cyclaton*, which originally signified
a circular robe of state, from the Gr. Lat. *cyclos* ; and
afterwards the *cloth of gold*, of which such robes were
generally made. TYRWHITT.

xliv. 7. — yrks ;] Jerks or lashes. TODD.

xliv. 8. — quip,] Sneer at or insult ; from the sub-
stantive quip. TODD.

And maugre all his might, backe to relent :
Else had he surely there bene slaine, or fowly shent.

XLVI.

The Villaine, wroth for greeting him so sore,
Gathered himselfe together soone againe,
And with his yron batton which he bore
Let drive at him so dreadfully amaine,
That for his safety he did him constraine
To give him ground, and shift to every side,
Rather than once his burden to sustaine:
For bootlesse thing him seemed to abide
So mighty blowes, or prove the puissance of his
pride.

XLVII.

Like as a mastiffe having at a bay
A salvage bull, whose cruell hornes doe threat
Desperate danger, if he them assay,
Traceth his ground, and round about doth beat,
To spy where he may some advantage get,
The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly rore ;
So did the Squire, the whiles the Carle did fret
And fume in his disdainefull mynd the more,
And oftentimes by Turmagant and Mahound swore.

XLVIII.

Nathelesse so sharply still he him pursewd,
That at advantage him at last he tooke,
When his foote slipt, (that slip he dearely rewd,)
And with his yron club to ground him strooke ;
Where still he lay, ne out of swoune awooke,
Till heavy hand the Carle upon him layd,
And bound him fast : Tho, when he up did looke
And saw himselfe captiv'd, he was disnayd,
Ne powre had to withstand, ne hope of any ayd.

XLIX.

Then up he made him rise, and forward fare,
Led in a rope which both his hands did bynd ;
Ne ought that Foole for pittie did him spare,
But with his whip him following behynd
Him often scourg'd, and forst his feete to fynd:
And other whiles with bitter mockes and mowes
He would him scorne, that to his gentle mynd
Was much more grievous then the others blowes:
Words sharply wound, but greatest griefe of
scorning growes.

L.

The faire Serena, when she saw him fall
Under that Villaines club, then surely thought
That slaine he was, or made a wretched thrall,
And fled away with all the speede she mought
To seeke for safety ; which long time she sought ;
And past through many perils by the way,
Ere she againe to Calepine was brought :
The which discourse as now I must delay,
Till Mirabellaes fortunes I doe further say.

XLVI. 3. — batton] *Club*. See st. 48. Or a truncheon, or any weapon of offence. Fr. *baston*, *bâton*. Todd.

XLVI. 7. — his burden] That is, his *club*. Ital. *bordone*, Fr. *bourdon*. Upton.

XLIX 6. — with bitter mockes and mowes] *Mockes and mowes* seem to imply insults by *distortions of the countenance*; or, as we say vulgarly, *making mouths at one*. Todd.

XLIX 9 *Words* &c.] So all the editions. The opposition i- between *blows* and *words*. I incline to think Spenser gave, "*Swords* sharply wound, &c." Church.

1. 9. *Till Mirabellaes fortunes I doe further say*] To say is here used for to relate. Todd.

CANTO VIII.

Prince Arthure overcomes Disdaine;
Quites Mirabell from dread:
Serena, found of Salvages,
By Calepine is freed.

I.

YE gentle Ladies, in whose souveraine powre
Love hath the glory of his kingdome left,
And th' hearts of men, as your eternall dowre,
In yron chaines, of liberty bereft,
Delivered hath unto your hands by gift ;
Be well aware how ye the same doe use,
That pride doe not to tyranny you lift ;
Least, if men you of cruelty accuse,
He from you take that chiefedome which ye doe
abuse.

II.

And as ye soft and tender are by kynde,
Adorn'd with goodly gifts of beauties grace,
So be ye soft and tender ecke in mynd ;
But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace,
That all your other praises will deface,
And from you turne the love of men to hate :
Ensample take of Mirabellaes case,
Who from the high degree of happy state
Fell into wretched woes, which she repented late.

III.

Who after thraldome of the gentle Squire,
Which she beheld with lamentable eye,
Was touched with compassion entire,
And much lamented his calamity,
That for her sake fell into misery ;
Which booted nought for prayers nor for threa
To hope for to release or mollify ;
For aye the more that she did them entreat,
The more they him misust, and cruelly did beat.

IV.

So as they forward on their way did pas,
Him still reviling and afflicting sore,
They met Prince Arthure with Sir Enias,
(That was that courteous Knight, whom he befor
Having subdew'd yet did to life restore ;)
To whom as they approacht, they gan augment
Their cruelty, and him to punish more,
Scourging and haling him more vehement ;
As if it them should grieve to see his punishment.

V.

The Squire himselfe, whenas he saw his Lord
The witnesse of his wretchednesse in place,
Was much asham'd that with an hempen cord
He like a dog was led in captive case,
And did his head for bashfulness abase,
As loth to see or to be seene at all ;
Shame would he hid : But whenas Enias
Beheld two such, of two such Villaines thrall,
His manly mynd was much enmov'd therewith
all ;

VI.

And to the Prince thus sayd ; "See you, Sir Knight
The greatest shame that ever eye yet saw,
Yond Lady and her Squire with foule despight

1. 9. *He*] The God of Love : as in the foregoing instance of Mirabella. Church.

Abuse, against all reason and all law,
Without regard of pitty or of awe!
See! how they doe that Squire beat and revile!
See! how they doe the Lady hale and draw!
But, if ye please to lend me leave awhile,
I will them soone acquite, and both of blame assoile."

vii.

The Prince assented; and then he, streightway
Dismounting light, his shield about him threw,
With which approaching thus he gan to say;
"Abide, ye caytive treachetours untrew,
That have with treason thralld unto you
These two, unworthy of your wretched hands;
And now your crime with cruelty pursew:
Abide, and from them lay your loathly hands;
Or else abide the Death that hard before you
stands."

viii.

The Villaine stayd not answer to invent;
But, with his yron club preparing way,
His mindes sad message backe unto him sent;
The which descended with such dreadfull sway,
That seemed nought the course thereof could
No more then lightning from the lofty sky: [stay,
Ne list the Knight the powre thereof assay,
Whose doome was death; but, lightly slipping
Unwarcs defrauded his intended destiny: [by,

ix.

And, to requite him with the like againe,
With his sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew,
And strooke so strongly, that the Carle with paine
Saved himselfe but that he there him slew;
Yet sav'd not so, but that the blood it drew,
And gave his Foe good hope of victory:
Who, therewith flesht, upon him set anew,
And with the second stroke thought certainly
To have supplyde the first, and paid the usury.

x.

But Fortune answerd not unto his call;
For, as his hand was heaved up on hight,
The Villaine met him in the middle fall, [bright
And with his club bet backe his brond-yrone
So forcibly, that with his owne hands might
Rebeaten backe upon himselfe againe
He driven was to ground in selfe despight;
From whence ere he recovery could gaine,
He in his necke had set his foote with fell disdain.

xi.

With that the Foole, which did that end awayte,
Came running in; and, whilst on ground he lay,
Laide heavy hands on him and held so strayte,
That downe he kept him with his scornfull sway,
So as he could not weld him any way:
The whiles that other Villaine went about
Him to have bound and thrald without delay;
The whiles the Foole did him revile and flout,
Threatning to yoke them two and tame their
corage stout.

vi. 9. *I will &c.*] That is, I will soon release them from the reproach they now suffer. CHURCH.

vii. 4. — treachetours] *Traitors.* TODD.

xi. 5. *So as he could not weld him*] *Wield*, direct or manage himselfe any way: *him for himself* is frequent in Spenser. UPRON.

xi. 9. — *them two*] Sir Enias and Timias. CHURCH.

xii.

As with a sturdy ploughman with his hynde
Bystrength have overtrowne a stubborne steare,
They downe him hold, and fast with cords do
hynde,
Till they him force the buxome yoke to beare;
So did these two this Knight oft tug and teare.
Which when the Prince beheld, there standing
He left his lofty steede to aide him neare; [by,
And, buckling soone himselfe, gan fiercely fly
Upon that Carle, to save his friend from ieopardy.

xiii.

The Villaine, leaving him unto his Mate,
To be captiv'd and handled as he list,
Himselfe address unto this new debate,
And with his club him all about so blist,
That he which way to turne him scarcely wist:
Sometimes aloft he layd, sometimes alow,
Now here, now there, and oft him neare he mist;
So doubtfully, that hardly one could know
Whether more wary wero to give or ward the
blow.

xiv.

But yet the Prince so well enured was
With such huge strokes, approved oft in fight,
That way to them he gave forth right to pas;
Ne would endure the daunger of their might,
But wayd advantage when they downe did light.
At last the Caytive after long discourse,
When all his strokes he saw avoyded quite,
Resolved in one t' assemble all his force,
And make one end of him without ruth or remorse.

xv.

His dreadfull hand he heaved up aloft,
And with his dreadfull instrument of yre
Thought sure have pownded him to powder soft,
Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre;
But Fortune did not with his will conspire:
For, ere his stroke attayned his intent,
The noble Childe, preventing his desire,
Under his club with wary boldnesse went,
And smote him on the knee that never yet was
bent.

xvi.

It never yet was bent, ne bent it now,
Albe the stroke so strong and puissant were,
That seem'd a marble pillour it could bow;
But all that leg, which did his body beare,
It crackt throughout, (yet did no blood appeare,
So as it was unable to support
So huge a burden on such broken geare,
But fell to ground like to a lumpe of durt;
Whence he assayed to rise, but could not for his hurt.

xvii.

Eftswoones the Prince to him full nimble stept,
And, least he should recover foote againe,
His head meant from his shoulders to have swept:

xii. 4. — *the buxome yoke*] The word *buxome* is here used in the sense of *yielding or obedient*. TODD.

xiii. 3. — *debate*.] *Contest*; as the French use *débat*, and the Italians *dibatto*. UPRON.

xiii. 4. *And with his club him all about so blist*] *Wounded*, from the Fr. *blessor*. TODD.

xiv. 6. — *after long discourse*.] After shifting ground and traversing to and fro. Lat. *discursus*. JORTIN.

xv. 7. — *preventing*] *Coming before*. CHURCH.

Which when the Lady saw, she cryde amaine ;
 "Stay, stay, Sir Knight, for love of God abstaine
 From that unwares ye thoughtlesse doe intend ;
 Slay not that Carle, though worthy to be slaine ;
 For more on him doth then himselfe depend ;
 My life will by his death have lamentable end."

xviii.

He staide his hand according her desire,
 Yet nathemore him suffred to arise ;
 But, still suppressing, gan of her inquire, [prize,
 What meaning mote those uncouth words com-
 That in that Villaines health her safety lies ;
 That were no might in man, nor heart in Knights,
 Which durst her dreaded rescue enterprize,
 Yet heavens themselves, that favour feeble rights,
 Would for itselfe redresse, and punish such despights.

xix.

Then bursting forth in teares, which gushed fast
 Like many water-streams, awhile she stayd ;
 Till the sharpe passion being overpast,
 Her tongue to her restord, then thus she said ;
 "Nor heavens, nor men, can me most wretched
 Deliver from the doome of my desart, [Mayd
 The which the God of Love hath on me layd,
 And damned to endure this direfull smart,
 For penance of my proud and hard rebellious hart.

xx.

"In prime of youthly yeares, when first the flowre
 Of beauty gan to bud, and bloosme delight ;
 And Nature me endu'd with plenteous dowre
 Of all her gifts, that please each living sight ;
 I was belov'd of many a gentle Knight,
 And snde and sought with all the service dew :
 Full many a one for me deepe groand and sigh't,
 And to the dore of death for sorrow drew,
 Complayning *out on me* that would not on them rew.

xxi.

"But let them love that list, or live or die ;
 Me list not die for any lovers doole :
 Ne list me leave my loved libertie
 To pittie him that list to play the foole :
 To love myself I learned had in schoole.
 Thus I triumphed long in lovers paine,
 And, sitting carelesse on the scorners stoole,
 Did laugh at those that did lament and plaine :
 But all is now repayd with interest againe.

xxii.

"For loe ! the winged god, that woundeth harts,
 Causede me be called to accompt therefore ;
 And for revengement of those wrongful smartz,
 Which I to others did inflict afore,
 Addeem'd me to endure this penance sore ;
 That in this wize, and this unmeete array,
 With these two lewd companions, and no more,
 Disdaine and Scorne, I through the world should
 stray,
 Till I have sav'd so many as I earst did slay."

xviii. 6. *Thai*] That thing, i. e. her safety. CHURCH.xix. 8. ——— damned] *Condenned*. CHURCH.xx. 7. ——— *sigh't*.] For *sighcd*. From the Saxon verb *sike*, to *sigh*. TODD.xx. 9. *Complayning out on me*] *Out on me*: words of indignation, as *out on thee*; *fy on thee*. Upton.

xxiii.

"Certes," sayd then the Prince, "the god is iust,
 That taketh vengeance of his peoples spoile :
 For were no law in love, but all that lust
 Might them oppresse, and painefully turmoile,
 His kingdome would continue but a while.
 But tell me, Lady, wherefore doe you beare
 This bottle thus before you with such toile,
 And eeke this wallet at your backe arreare,
 That for these Carles to carry much more comely
 were ?"

xxiv.

"Here in this bottle," sayd the sory Mayd,
 "I put the tears of my contrition,
 Till to the brim I have it full defrayd :
 And in this bag, which I behinde me don,
 I put repentance for things past and gon.
 Yet is the bottle leake, and bag so torne,
 That all which I put in fals out anon,
 And is behinde me trodden downe of Scorne,
 Who mocketh all my paine, and laughs the more
 I mourn."

xxv.

The Infant hearkned wisely to her tale,
 And wondred much at Cupids indg'ment wise,
 That could so meekly make proud hearts avale,
 And wreake himselfe on them that him despise.
 Then suffred he Disdaine up to arise,
 Who was not able up himselfe to reare,
 By meanes his leg, through his late lucklesse prise,
 Was crackt in twaine, but by his foolish feare
 Was holpen up, who him supported standing neare.

xxvi.

But being up he lookt againe aloft,
 As if he never had received fall ;
 And with sterne eye-brows stared at him oft,
 As if he would have daunted him withall :
 And standing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall,
 Downe on his golden feete he often gazed,
 As if such pride the other could apall ;
 Who was so far from being ought amazed,
 That he his lookes despised, and his boast dispraized.

xxvii.

Then turning backe unto that captive thrall,
 Who all this while stood there beside them bound,
 Unwilling to be knowne or seene at all,
 He from those bands weend him to have unbound ;
 But when approaching neare he plainly found
 It was his owne true Groome, the gentle Squire,
 He thereat wext exceedingly astound,
 And him did oft embrace, and oft admire,
 Ne could with seeing satisfie his great desire

xxviii.

Meane while the Salvage Man, when he beheld
 That huge great Foole oppressing th' other Knight,
 Whom with his weight unwedly downe he held,
 He flew upon him like a greedy light
 Unto some carrion offered to his sight ;

xxv. 6. ——— leake,] *Leaky* CHURCH.xxv. 1. *The Infant*] Spenser has here employed the word in the sense of *Prince*, which is the Spanish signification of it. TODD.Ibid. ——— wisely] *Considerately*. Lat. *consulto*. CHURCH.xxv. 8. ——— feare] *Companion* TODD.

And, downe him plucking, with his nayles and
teeth [bite ;
Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch, and
And, from him taking his owne whip, therewith
So sore him scourgeth that the blond downe followeth.

XXIX.

And sure I weene, had not the Ladies cry
Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to stay,
He would with whipping him have done to dye :
But, being checkt, he did abstaine straightway
And let him rise. Then thus the Prince gan say ;
" Now, Lady, sith your fortunes thus dispose,
That, if ye list have liberty, ye may ;
Unto yourselfe I freely leave to chosse,
Whether I shall you leave, or from these Villaines
lose."

XXX.

" Ah ! nay, Sir Knight," said she, " it may not be,
But that I needes must by all meanes fulfill
This penance, which enioyned is to me,
Least unto me betide a greater ill :
Yet no lesse thanks to you for your good will."
So humbly taking leave she turnd aside :
But Arthure with the rest went onward still
On his first quest, in which did him betide
A great adventure, which did him from them deuide.

XXXI.

But first it falleth me by course to tell
Of faire Serena ; who, as earst you heard,
When first the gentle Squire at variaunce fell
With those two Carles, fled fast away, afeard
Of villany to be to her inferd :
So fresh the image of her former dread,
Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeared,
That every foote did tremble which did tread,
And every body two, and two she foure did read.

XXXII.

Through hils and dales, through bushes and through
breres,
Long thus she fled, till that at last she thought
Herselfe now past the perill of her feares :
Then looking round about, and seeing nought
Which doubt of daunger to her offer mought,
She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine ;
And, sitting downe, herselfe awhile bethought
Of her long travell and turmoyling paine ;
And often did of love, and oft of lucke, complaine.

XXXIII.

And evermore she blamed Calepine,
The good Sir Calepine, her owne true Knight,
As th' onely author of her wofull time ;
For being of his love to her so light,
As her to leave in such a piteous plight :
Yet never turtle truer to his Make,
Then he was tride unto his Lady bright :
Who all this while endured for her sake
Great perill of his life, and restlesse paines did take.

XXXIV.

Tho whenas all her plaints she had displayd,
And well disburdened her engrieved brest,
Upon the grasse herselfe adowne she layd ;
Where, being tyrd with travell, and opprest

With sorrow, she betooke herselfe to rest :
There whilst in Morpheus bosome safe she lay,
Fearelesse of ought that mote her peace molest,
False Fortune did her safety betray
Unto a strange mischaunce, that menac'd her decay.

XXXV.

In these wyld deserts, where she now abode,
There dwelt a salvage nation, which did live
Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly rode
Into their neighbours borders ; ne did give
Themselves to any trade, (as for to drive
The painefull plough, or cattell for to breed,
Or by adventurons merchandize to thrive,)
But on the labours of poor men to feed,
And serve their owne necessities with others need.

XXXVI.

There to they use one most accursed order,
To eate the flesh of men, whom they mote fynde,
And straungers to devoure, which on their border
Were brought by errour or by wreckfull wynde :
A inonstrous cruelty gainst course of kynde !
They, towards evening wandering every way
To seeke for booty, came by fortune blynde
Whereas this Lady, like a sheepe astray,
Now drowned in the depth of sleepe all fearelesse lay.

XXXVII.

Soone as they spide her, lord ! what gladfull glee
They made amongst themselves ! but when her
Like the faire yvory shining they did see, [face
Each gan his fellow solace and embrace
For joy of such good hap by heavenly grace.
Then gan they to devize what course to take ;
Whether to slay her there upon the place,
Or suffer her out of her sleepe to wake,
And then her eate attonce, or many meales to make.

XXXVIII.

The best advizement was, of bad, to let her
Sleepe out her fill without encomberment ;
For sleepe, they sayd, would make her battill
better :
Then, when she wakt, they all gave one consent
That, since by grace of god she there was sent,
Unto their god they would her sacrificize,
Whose share, her guiltlesse bloud they would pre-
But of her dainty flesh they did devize [sent :
To make a common feast, and feed with gurmardize.

XXXIX.

So round about her they themselves did place
Upon the grasse, and diversely dispose,
As each thought best to spend the lingring space :
Some with their eyes the daintest morsels chosse ;
Some praise her paps ; some praise her lips and
nose ; [bare :
Some whet their knives, and strip their elbows
The Priest himselfe a garland doth compose
Of finest flowers, and with full busie care
His bloudie vessels wash and holy fire prepare.

xxxvi. 5. ——— *gainst course of kynde !*] Against the
course of nature, *unnatural*. CHURCH.

xxxvii. 5. ——— *grace.*] *Favour*. So again, in st. 38
CHURCH.

xxxviii. 1. ——— *of bad,*] That is, of many bad ones.
CHURCH.

xxxviii. 3. ——— *would make her battill better :*] That
is, *grow fatter*. To *battel* is to *grow* or *make fat*. CHURCH.

xxxvi. 5. ——— *to her inferd :*] *Brought upon her*. Lat.
infero CHURCH.

XI.

The Damzell wakes ; then all attonce upstart,
 And round about her flocke, like many flies,
 Whooping and hallowing on every part,
 As if they would have rent the brasen skies.
 Which when she sees with ghastly grieffull eies,
 Her heart does quake, and deadly pallid hew
 Benumbes her cheekes : then out aloud she cries,
 Where none is nigh to heare, that will her rew,
 And rends her golden locks, and snowy brests
 embrew.

XLI.

But all bootes not ; they hands upon her lay :
 And first they spoile her of her iewels deare,
 And afterwards of all her rich array ;
 The which amongst them they in peeces teare,
 And of the pray each one a part doth beare.
 Now being naked, to their sordid eyes
 The goodly treasures of nature appeare :
 Which as they view with lustfull fantasies,
 Each wisheth to himselfe, and to the rest envyes.

XLII.

Her yvorie neck ; her alablaster brest ;
 Her paps, which like white silken pillowes were
 For Love in soft delight thereon to rest ;
 Her tender sides ; her bellie white and clere,
 Which like an altar did itselife upere
 To offer sacrifice divine thereon ;
 Her goodly thighes, whose glorie did appeare
 Like a triumphall arch, and thereupon
 The spoiles of Princes hang'd which were in battel
 won.

XLIII.

Those daintie parts, the dearlings of delight,
 Which mote not be prophan'd of common eyes,
 Those Villeins vew'd with loose lascivious sight,
 And closely tempted with their craftie spyes ;
 And some of them gan mongst themselves deize
 Thereof by force to take their beastly pleasure :
 But them the Priest rehuking did advize
 To dare not to pollute so sacred treasure
 Vow'd to the gods : Religion held even theeves in
 measure.

XLIV.

So, being stayd, they her from thence directed
 Unto a litle grove not farre asyde,
 In which an altar shortly they erected
 To slay her on. And now the Eventyde [wyde
 His brode black wings had through the heavens
 By this dispreed, that was the tyme ordayned
 For such a dismall deed, their guilt to hyde :
 Of few greene turfes an altar soone they fayned,
 And deekt it all with flowres which they nigh hand
 obtayned.

XLV.

Tho, whenas all things readie were aright,
 The Damzell was before the altar set,
 Being already dead with fearefull fright :
 To whom the Priest with naked armes full net

XL. 9. — embrew.] For *embrews*, on account of the rhyme. UPRON.

XLV. 4. — net] *Neat*, clean. Fr. *net*. But as just below he says *met* for *meet* ; so here, without going to the French language, he says *net* for *neat* ; in both places omitting a letter, the easier to introduce his jingling terminations. UPRON.

Approching nigh, and murdrous knife well whet,
 Gan mutter close a certain secret charme,
 With other divelish ceremonies met :
 Which doen, he gan aloft t' advance his arme,
 Whereat they shouted all, and made a loud alarme.

XLVI.

Then gan the baggyppes and the hornes to shrill
 And shriek aloud, that, with the peoples voyce
 Confused, did the ayre with terror fill,
 And made the wood to tremble at the noyce :
 The whyles she wayld, the more they did reioyce.
 Now mote ye understand that to this grove
 Sir Calepine, by chaunce more than by choyce,
 The selfe same evening fortune hether drove,
 As he to seeke Serena through the woods did rove.

XLVII.

Long had he sought her, and through many a soyle
 Had travell sill on foot in heavie armes,
 Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyle,
 Ne ought was feared of his certaine harmes :
 And now, all welesse of the wretched stormes
 In which his Love was lost, he slept full fast ;
 Till, being waked with these loud alarmes,
 He lightly started up like one aghast,
 And catching up his arms streight to the noise
 forth past.

XLVIII.

There by th' uncertaine glims of starry night,
 And by the twinkling of their sacred fire,
 He mote perceive a litle dawning sight
 Of all which there was doing in that quire :
 Mongst whom a Woman spoyled of all attire
 He spyde lamenting her unluckie strife,
 And groning sore from grieved hart entire :
 Eftsoones he saw one with a naked knife
 Readie to launch her brest, and let out loved life.

XLIX.

With that he thrusts into the thickest throng ;
 And, even as his right hand adowne descends,
 He him preventing lays on earth along,
 And sacrificeth to th' infernall feends :
 Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he bends ;
 Of whom he makes such havocke and such hew,
 That swarmes of damned soules to hell he sends :
 The rest, that scape his sword and death eschew,
 Fly like a flocke of doves before a falcons vew.

L.

From them returning to that Ladie backe,
 Whom by the altar he doth siting find
 Yet fearing death, and next to death the lacke
 Of clothes to cover what she ought by kind ;
 He first her hands beginneth to unbind,
 And then to question of her present woe ;
 And afterwards to cheare with speaches kind :
 But she, for nought that he could say or doe,
 One word durst speake, or answer him a whit
 thereto.

XLVII. 4. *Ne ought was feared of his certaine harmes* :] That is, *frayed, affrighted*, on account of his certain harmes. UPRON.

XLVIII. 4. — quire :] *Company*. Lat. *chorus*. CHURCH.
 XLVIII. 7. *And groning &c.*] That is, and groaning sadly from the bottom of her heart. CHURCH.

XLIX. 6. — hew.] That is, *hewing*. CHURCH.

L. 4. — *what she ought by kind* ;] that is, what she should naturally have covered, viz. her nakedness. CHURCH.

LI.

So inward shame of her uncomely case
 She did conceive, through care of womanhood,
 That though the night did cover her disgrace,
 Yet she in so unwomanly a mood
 Would not bewray the state in which she stood :
 So all that night to him unknown she past :
 But day, that doth discover bad and good,
 Ensewing, made her knowen to him at last :
 The end whereof Ile keepe until another cast.

CANTO IX.

Calidore hostes with Melibee,
 And loves fayre Pastorell :
 Coridon envies him, yet he,
 For ill, rewards him well.

I.

Now turne againe my teme, thou lolly swayne,
 Backe to the furrow which I lately left ;
 I lately left a furrow one or twayne
 Unplough'd, the which my coulter had not cleft ;
 Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frutefull eft,
 As I it past ; that were too great a shame,
 That so rich frute should be from us hereft ;
 Besides the great dishonour and defame,
 Which should befall to Calidores immortal name.

II.

Great travell hath the gentle Calidore
 And toyle endured, sith I left him last
 Sewing the Blatant Beast ; which I forbore
 To finish then, for other present hast.
 Full many pathes and perils he hath past,
 Through hills, through dales, through forests,
 and through plaines,
 In that same quest which fortune on him cast,
 Which he achieved to his owne great gaines,
 Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse paines.

III.

So sharply he the Monster did pursew,
 That day nor night he suffred him to rest,
 Ne rested he himselfe (but natures dew)
 For dread of daunger not to be redrest,
 If he for slouth forslackt so famous quest.
 Him first from court he to the citties coursed,
 And from the citties to the townes him prest,
 And from the townes into the countrie forsed,
 And from the country back to private farmes he
 scorsed.

IV.

From thence into the open fields he fled,
 Whereas the heardes were keeping of their neat,
 And shepherds singing, to their flockes that fed,
 Layes of sweet love and youthes delightfull heat :
 Him thether eke for all his fearefull threat
 He followed fast, and chaced him so nie,
 That to the folds, where sheepe at night doe seat,
 And to the litle cots, where shepherds lie
 In winters wrathfull time, he forced him to fie.

LI. 9. — cast] *Cast* is here used for a *throw*, or *time*.
 UPRON.

I. 5. — eft,] *Moreover*. CHURCH.

III. 3. — but natures dew,] Only nature's dew. UPRON.

IV. 9. *In winters wrathfull time,*] So all the editions. I think Spenser gave, "In winter's wrathfull time," i. e. *indulgency*. CHURCH.

V.

There on a day, as he pursew'd the chace,
 He chaunst to spy a sort of shepheard groomes
 Playing on pypes and caroling apace, [broomes
 The whyles their beasts there in the budded
 Beside them fed, and nipt the tender bloomes ;
 For other worldly wealth they cared nought :
 To whom Sir Calidore yet sweating comes,
 And them to tell him courteously besought,
 If such a beast they saw, which he had thether
 brought.

VI.

They answer'd him that no such beast they saw,
 Nor any wicked feend that mote offend
 Their happie flockes, nor daunger to them draw ;
 But if that such there were (as none they kend)
 They prayd High God them farre from them to
 send :
 Then one of them him seeing so to sweat,
 After his rusticke wise, that well he weend,
 Offred him drinke to quench his thirstie heat,
 And, if he hungry were, him offred eke to eat.

VII.

The Knight was nothing nice, where was no need,
 And tooke their gentle offer : so adowne
 They prayd him sit, and gave him for to feed
 Such homely what as serves the simple clowne,
 That doth despise the dainties of the towne :
 Tho, having fed his fill, he there besyde
 Saw a fayre Damzell, which did weare a crowne
 Of sundry flowres with silken ribbands tyde,
 Yclad in home-made greene that her owne hands
 had tyde.

VIII.

Upon a litle hillocke she was placed
 Higher then all the rest, and round about
 Environ'd with a girland, goodly graced,
 Of lovely lasses ; and them all without
 The lustie shepheard swaynes sate in a rout,
 The which did pype and sing her prayses dew,
 And oft rejoyce, and oft for wonder shout,
 As if some miracle of heavenly hew
 Were downe to them descended in that earthly vew.

IX.

And soothly sure she was full fayre of face,
 And perfectly well shapt in every lim,
 Which she did more augment with modest grace
 And comely carriage of her count'nance trim,
 That all the rest like lesser lamps did dim :
 Who, her admiring as some heavenly wight,
 Did for their soveraine goddesses her esteeme,
 And, caroling her name both day and night,
 The fayrest Pastorella her by name did hight.

X.

Ne was there heard, ne was there shepherds swayne,
 But her did honour ; and eke many a one
 Burnt in her love, and with sweet pleasing payne
 Full many a night for her did sigh and groane :
 But most of all the shepheard Coridon
 For her did languish, and his deare life spend ;

v. 2. — a sort of shepheard groomes,] The word *sort* occurs perpetually in Spenser, for *stock*, *troop*, *company*, &c. T. WARTON.

vii. 4. *Such homely what*] *Fare, things*, &c. UPRON.

viii. 5. — in a rout,] *Company*. TODD.

x. 1. — heard,] *A keeper of cattle*. TODD.

Yet neither she for him nor other none
Did care a whit, ne any liking lend:
Though meane her lot, yet higher did her mind
ascend.

xI.

Her whyles Sir Calidore there vewed well,
And markt her rare demeanure, which him seemed
So farre the meane of shepherds to excell,
As that he in his mind her worthy deemed
To be a Princes paragone esteemed,
He was unwares surprisid in subtile bands
Of the Blynd Boy ; ne thence could be redeemed
By any skill out of his cruell hands ;
Caught like the bird which gazing still on others
stands.

xII.

So stood he still long gazing thereupon,
Ne any will had thence to move away,
Although his quest were farre afore him gon:
But after he had fed, yet did he stay
And sate there still, untill the flying day
Was farre forth spent, discoursing diversly
Of sundry things, as fell, to worke delay ;
And evermore his speach he did apply
To th' heards, but meant them to the Damzels
fantazy.

xIII.

By this the moystie Night approching fast
Her dewy humour gan on th' earth to shed,
That warn'd the shepherds to their homes to hast
Their tender flocks, now being fully fed,
For feare of wetting them before their bed:
Then came to them a good old aged Syre,
Whose silver lockes bedeckt his beard and hed,
With shepherds hooke in hand, and fit attyre,
That wil'd the Damzell rise ; the day did now
expyre.

xIV.

He was to weet, by common voice, esteemed
The father of the fayrest Pastorell,
And of herselfe in very deede so deemed ;
Yet was not so ; but, as old stories tell,
Found her by fortune, which to him befell,
In th' open fields an infant left alone ;
And, taking up, brought home and nursed well
As his owne chyld ; for other he had none ;
That she in tract of time accompted was his owne.

xV.

She at his bidding meekly did arise,
And streight into her litle flocke did fare :
Then all the rest about her rose likewise,
And each his sundrie sheepe with severall care
Gathered together, and them homeward bare :
Whylest everie one with helping hands did strive
Amongst themselves, and did their labours share,
To helpe faire Pastorella home to drive
Her fleecie flocke ; but Coridon most helpe did give.

xVI.

But Melibee (so hight that good old man)
Now seeing Calidore left all alone,
And night arrived hard at hand, began
Him to invite unto his simple home ;
Which though it were a cottage clad with lome,
And all things therein meane, yet better so

To lodge then in the salvage fields to rome.
The Knight full gladly soone agreed thereto,
Being his harts owne wish ; and home with him
did go.

xVII.

There he was welcom'd of that honest Syre
And of his aged Beldame homely well ;
Who him besought himselfe to disattyre,
And rest himselfe, till supper time befell ;
By which home came the fayrest Pastorell ;
After her flocke she in their fold had tyred ;
And, supper readie dight, they to it fell
With small adoe, and nature satisfide,
The which doth litle crave contented to abyde.

xVIII.

Tho when they had their hunger slaked well,
And the fayre Mayd the table ta'ne away ;
The gentle Knight, as he that did excell
In courtesie and well could doe and say,
For so great kindnesse as he found that day
Gan greatly thanke his Host and his good Wife ;
And, drawing thence his speach another way,
Gan highly to commend the happie life
Which shepherds lead, without debate or bitter
strife.

xIX.

"How much," said he, "more happie is the state
In which ye, Father, here doe dwell at ease,
Leading a life so free and fortunate
From all the tempests of these worldly seas,
Which tesse the rest in dangerous disease ;
Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked enmitie
Doe them afflict, which no man can appease !
That certes I your happinesse envie,
And wish my lot were plast in such felicitie !"

xx.

"Surely, my Sonne," then answer'd he againe,
"If happie ; then it is in this intent,
That having small yet doe I not complaine
Of want, ne wish for more it to augment,
But doe myselfe, with that I have, content ;
So taught of nature, which doth litle need
Of forreine helpes to lifes due nourishment :
The fields my food, my flocke my rayment breed ;
No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed.

xxI.

"Therefore I doe not any one envý,
Nor am envýde of any one therefore:
They that have much, feare much to loose thereby,
And store of cares doth follow riches store.
The litle that I have growes dayly more
Without my care, but onely to attend it ;
My lamhes dee every yeare increase their score,
And my flockes father daily doth amend it.
What have I, but to praise th' Almighty that doth
send it !

xxII.

"To them, that list, the worlds gay shoves I leave,
And to great ones such follies doe forgive ;
Which oft through pride do their owne perill
weave,
And through ambition downe themselves doe drive
To sad decay, that might contented live.
Me no such cares nor combrous thoughts offend,
Ne once my minds unmoved quiet grieve ;

But all the night in silver sleepe I spend,
And all the day, to what I list, I doe attend.

XXII.

"Sometimes I hunt the fox, the vowed foe
Unto my lambes, and him dislodge away;
Sometime the fawne I practise from the doe,
Or from the goat her kidde, how to conuay;
Another while I haytes and nets display
The birds to catch or fishes to beguyle;
And, when I wearie am, I downe doe lay
My limbes in every shade to rest from toyle;
And drinke of every brooke, when thirst my throte
doth boyle.

XXIV.

"The time was once, in my first prime of yeares,
When pride of youth forth pricked my desire,
That I disdain'd amongst mine equal peares
To follow sheepe and shepherds base attire;
For further fortune then I would inquire:
And, leaving home, to roiall court I sought,
Where I did sell myselfe for yearlyre hire,
And in the Princes gardin daily wrought:
There I beheld such vainnesse as I never thought.

XXV.

"With sight whereof soone cloyd, and long deluded
With idle hopes which them doe entertaime,
After I had ten yeares myselfe excluded
From native home, and spent my youth in vaine,
I gan my follies to myselfe to plaine,
And this sweet peace, whose lacke did then ap-
Tho, backe returning to my sheepe againe, [peare:
I from thenceforth have learn'd to love more
This lowly quiet life which I inherite here." [deare

XXVI.

Whylest thus he talkt, the Knight with greedy eare
Hong still upon his melting mouth attent;
Whose sensefull words emperst his hart so neare,
That he was wrapt with double ravishment,
Both of his speach that wrought him great con-
And also of the obiect of his vew, [tent,
On which his hungry eye was always bent;
That twixt his pleasing tongue, and her faire hew,
He lost himselfe, and like one halfe-entraunced
grew.

XXVII.

Yet to occasion meanes to worke his mind,
And to insinuate his harts desire,
He thus replyde; "Now surely, Syre, I find,
That all this worlds gay shoves, which we admire,
Be but vaine shadows to this safe retyre
Of life, which here in lowlinesse ye lead,
Fearelesse of foes, or fortunes wrackfull yre,
Which tosseth states, and nnder foot doth tread
The mightie ones affrayd of every changes dreed.

XXVIII.

"That even I, which daily doe behold
The glorie of the great mongst whom I won,
And now have prov'd what bappinesse ye hold

xxii. 8. — in silver sleepe] In quiet sleep. TODD.
xxiii. 8. — in every shade] That is, in the first
shady place that offers itself. So, in the next line, every
brooke. CHURCH.

xxv. 2. — them] Those who attend for preferment
at Court. CHURCH.

xxvii. 5. — retyre] Retirement. TODD.

In this small plot of your dominion,
Now loath great lordship and ambition;
And wish the heavens so much had graced mee,
As graunt me live in like condition;
Or that my fortunes might transposed bee
From pitch of higher place unto this low degree."

XXIX.

"In vaine," said then old Melibee, "doe men
The heavens of their fortunes fault accuse;
Sith they know best what is the best for them:
For they to each such fortune doe diffuse,
As they doe know each can most aptly use;
For not that, which men covet most, is best;
Nor that thing worst, which men do most refuse;
But fittest is, that all contented rest
With that they hold: each hath his fortune in his
brest.

XXX.

"It is the mynd, that maketh good or ill,
That maketh wretch or happie, rich or poore:
For some, that hath abundance at his will,
Hath not enough, but wants in greatest store;
And other, that hath litle, asks no more,
But in that litle is both rich and wise;
For wisdom is most riches: fooles therefore
They are, which fortunes doe by voves devize;
Sith each unto himselfe his life may fortunize."

XXXI.

"Since then in each mans self," said Calidore,
"It is to fashion his owne lyfes estate,
Give leave awhyle, good Father, in this shore
To rest my barcke, which hath bene beaten late
With stormes of fortune and tempestuous fate,
In seas of troubles and of toylesome paine;
That, whether quite from them for to retrace
I shall resolve or backe to turne againe,
I may here with yourselfe some small repose obtaine.

XXXII.

"Not that the burden of so bold a guest
Shall chargefull be, or change to you at all;
For your meane food shall be my daily feast,
And this your cabin both my bowre and hall:
Besides, for recompence hereof, I shall
You well reward, and golden guerdon give,
That may perhaps you better much withall,
And in this quiet make you safer live."
So forth he drew much gold, and toward him it drive.

XXXIII.

But the good man, nought tempted with the offer
Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away,
And thus bespake; "Sir Knight, your bounteous
proffer
Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display
That mucky masse, the cause of mens decay,
That mote empaire my peace with daungers dread:
But, if ye algates covet to assay
This simple sort of life that shepherds lead,
Be it your owne: our rudenesse to yourselfe aread."

XXXIV.

So there that night Sir Calidore did dwell,
And long while after, whilst him list remaine,
Daly beholding the faire Pastorell,
And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane:

xxxii. 9. — drive.] For drove. CHURCH.

During which time he did her enteraine
 With all kind courtesies he could invent ;
 And every day, her companie to gaine,
 Wheu to the field she went, he with her went :
 So for to quench his fire he did it more augment.

xxxv.

But she that never had acquainted beene
 With such quiet usage, fit for queens and kings,
 Ne ever had such knightly service seene ;
 But, being bred under base shepherds wings,
 Had ever learn'd to love the lowly things ;
 Did little whit regard his courteous guize,
 But cared more for Colins carolings
 Then all that he could doe, or e'er devise ;
 His layes, his loves, his lookes, she did them all
 despize.

xxxvi.

Which Calidore perceiving, thought it best
 To chaunge the manner of his loftie looke ;
 And doffing his bright armes, himselfe address
 In shepherds weed ; and in his hand he tooke,
 Instead of steele-head speare, a shepherds hooke ;
 That who had seene him then, would have be-
 thought
 On Phrygian Paris by Plexippus brooke,
 When he the love of fayre Benone sought,
 What time the Golden Apple was unto him brought.

xxxvii.

So being clad unto the fields he went
 With the faire Pastorella every day,
 And kept her sheepe with diligent attent,
 Watching to drive the ravenous wolfe away,
 The whylest at pleasure she mote sport and play ;
 And every evening helping them to fold :
 And otherwhiles, for need, he did assay
 In his strong hand their rugged teats to hold,
 And out of them to presse the milke : Love so
 much could.

xxxviii.

Which seeing Coridon, who her likewise
 Long time had lov'd, and hop'd her love to gaine,
 He much was troubled at that Straungers guize,
 And many gealous thoughts conceiv'd in vaine,
 That this of all his labour and long paine
 Should reap the harvest ere it ripened were ;
 That made him scoule, and pout, and oft complaine
 Of Pastorell to all the shepherds there,
 That she did love a stranger swayne then him more
 dere.

xxxix.

And ever, when he came in companie
 Where Calidore was present, he would loure
 And byte his lip, and even for gealousie
 Was readie oft his owne hart to devour,
 Impatient of any paramoure :
 Who on the other side did seeme so farre
 From malicing, or grudging his good houre,
 That, all he could, he graced him with her,
 Ne ever shewed signe of rancour or iarre.

xxxvi. 3. — *himselfe* address] So all the editions.
 Quære, "himselfe he drest." CHURCH.

xxxvii. 3. — *attent,*] For *attention*. TODD.

xxxix. 7. — *good houre,*] *Good fortune*, happiness.
 Fr. *bonne heure* ; as *malheur* is used for *ill fortune*. CHURCH.

xli.

And oft, when Coridon unto her brought
 Or litle sparrows stolen from their nest,
 Or wanton squirrels in the woods farre sought,
 Or other daintie thing for her address,
 He would commend his guift, and make the best :
 Yet she no whit his presents did regard,
 Ne him could find to fancie in her brest :
 This new-come Shepheard had his market mard.
 Old love is litle worth when new is more prefard.

xlii.

One day, whenas the shepheard swaynes together
 Were met to make their sports and merrie glee,
 As they are wont in faire sunshynie weather,
 The whiles their flockes in shadowesshrouded bee ;
 They fell to daunce : Theu did they all agree
 That Colin Clout should pipe, as one most fit ;
 And Calidore should lead the ring, as hee
 That most in Pastorellaes grace did sit :
 Thereat frown'd Coridon, and his lip closely bit.

xliii.

But Calidore, of courteous inclination,
 Tooke Coridon and set him in his place,
 That he should lead the daunce, as was his fashion ;
 For Coridon could daunce, and trimly trace ;
 And whenas Pastorella, him to grace,
 Her flowry garland tooke from her owne head,
 And plast on his, he did it soone displace,
 And did it put on Coridons instead :
 Then Coridon woxe frolicke, that earst seemed
 dead.

xliv.

Another time, whenas they did dispose
 To practise games and maisteries to chuse,
 They for their iudge did Pastorella chose ;
 A garland was the meed of victory :
 There Coridon, forth stepping, openly
 Did challenge Calidore to wrestling game ;
 For he, through long and perfect industry,
 Therein well practis'd was, and in the same
 Thought sure t' avenge his grudge, and worke his
 foe great shame.

xlv.

But Calidore he greatly did mistake ;
 For he was strong and mightily stiffe pight,
 That with one fall his necke he almost brake ;
 And, had he not upon him fallen light,
 His dearest ioynt he sure had broken quight.
 Then was the oaken crowne by Pastorell
 Given to Calidore as his due right ;
 But he, that did in courtesie excell,
 Gave it to Coridon, and said he wonne it well.

xlvi.

Thus did the gentle Knight himselfe abeare
 Amongst that rusticke rout in all his deeds,
 That even they, the which his rivals were,
 Could not maligne him, but commend him needs :
 For courtesie amongst the rudest breeds
 Good will and favour : So it surely wrought
 With this faire Mayd, and in her mynde the seeds
 Of perfect love did sow, that last forth brought
 The fruite of ioy and blisse, though long time
 dearly bought.

xlvii.

Thus Calidore continu'd there long time
 To winne the love of the faire Pastorell :

Which having got, he used without crime
Or blamefull blot; but menaged so well,
That he, of all the rest which there did dwell,
Was favoured and to her grace commended:
But what straunge fortunes unto him befell,
Ere he attain'd the point by him intended,
Shall more conveniently in other place be ended.

CANTO X.

Calidore sees the Graces dance
To Colins melody:
The whiles his Pastorell is led
Into captivity.

I.
WHO now does follow the foule Blatant Beast,
Whilest Calidore does follow that faire Mayd,
Unmyndfull of his vow, and high behest
Which by the Faery Queene was on him layd,
That he should never leave, nor be delayd
From chasing him, till he had it atchieved?
But now, entrapt of Love which him betrayd,
He mindeth more how he may be relieved
With grace from her, whose love his heart hath
sore engrieved.

II.
That from henceforth he meanes no more to sew
His former quest, so full of toile and paine;
Another quest, another game in vew
He hath, the guerdon of his Love to gaine;
With whom he myndes for ever to remaine,
And set his rest amongst the rusticke sort,
Rather then hunt still after shadowes vaine
Of courtly favour fed with light report
Of every blaste, and sayling alwaies in the port.

III.
Ne certes mote he greatly blamed be
From so high step to stoupe unto so low;
For who had tasted once, as oft did he,
The happy peace which there doth overflow,
And prov'd the perfect pleasures which doe grow
Amongst poore hyndes, in hills, in woods, in dales;
Would never more delight in painted show
Of such false blisse, as there is set for stales
T' entrap unwary fooles in their eternall bales.

IV.
For what hath all that goodly glorious gaze
Like to one sight which Calidore did vew? [daze,
The glauce whereof their dimmed eies would
That never more they should endure the shew
Of that sunne-shine, that makes them looke
askew:
Ne ought, in all that world of beauties rare,
(Save onely Glorianaes heavenly hew,
To which what can compare?) can it compare;
The which, as commeth now by course, I will
declare.

xlvi. 5. — of all the rest] That is, above all the rest
CHURCH.

i. 9. — in the part.] Sailing in the port, as Mr.
Upton observes, without ever getting on shore. TODD

iii. 8. — stales] Devices. TODD.

V.
One day, as he did raunge the fields abroad,
Whilest his faire Pastorella was elsewhere,
He chaunst to come, far from all peoples troad,
Unto a place, whose pleasaunce did appere
To passe all others on the earth which were
For all that ever was by Natures skill
Deviz'd to worke delight was gathered there
And there by her were poured forth at fill,
As if, this to adorne, she all the rest did pill.

VI.
It was an Hill plaste in an open plaine,
That round about was bordered with a wood
Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th' earth to dis-
In which all trees of honour stately stood, [daine;
And did all winter as in sommer bud,
Spreading pavilions for the birds to bowre,
Which in their lower branuches sung aloud;
And in their tops the soring hauke did towre,
Sitting like king of fowles in maiesty and powre:

VII.
And at the foote thereof a gentle flud
His silver waves did softly tumble downe,
Unmard with ragged mosse or filthy mud;
Ne mote wyld beasts, ne mote the ruder elowne,
Thereto approach; ne filth mote therein drowne:
But Nymphes and Faeries by the bancks did sit
In the woods shade which did the waters crowne,
Keeping all noysome things away from it,
And to the waters fall tuning their accents fit.

VIII.
And on the top thereof a spacious plaine
Did spred itselfe, to serve to all delight,
Either to daunce, when they to daunce would
Or else to course-about their bases light; [faine,
Ne ought there wanted, which, for pleasure might
Desired be, or thence to banish bale:
So pleasauntly the Hill with equall hight
Did seeme to overlooke the lowly vale;
Therefore it rightly cleeped was Mount Acidale.

IX.
They say that Venus, when she did dispose
Herselfe to pleasaunce, used to resort
Unto this place, and therein to repose
And rest herselfe as in a gladsome port,
Or with the Graces there to play and sport;
That even her owne Cytheron, though in it
She used most to keepe her royall court
And in her souveraine majesty to sit,
She in regard hereof refusde and thought unfit.

X.
Unto this place whenas the Elfin Knight
Approcht, him seemed that the merry sound
Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight,
And many feete fast thumping th' hollow ground,
That through the woods their echo did rebound
He nigher drev, to weete what mote it be:
There he a troupe of Ladies dauncing found
Full merrily, and making gladfull glee,
And in the midst a Shepheard piping he did see

v. 3. — troad,] Treading, footsteps. CHURCH.

viii. 4. Or else to course-about their bases light:] He
seems to allude to the country sport called Prison-base,
or Prison-bars. UPTON.

xI.
He durst not enter into th' open greene,
For dread of them unwares to be descryde,
For breaking of their daunce, if he were seene ;
But in the covert of the wood did byde,
Beholding all, yet of them unespyde :
There he did see, that pleased much his sight,
That even he himselve his eyes envyde,
An hundred naked Maidens lilly white
All ranged in a ring and launcing in delight.

xII.
All they without were ranged in a ring,
And daunced round ; but in the midst of them
Three other Ladies did both daunce and sing,
The whilest the rest them roundabout did hemme,
And like a girlond did in compasse stemme :
And in the midst of those same three was placed
Another Damzell, as a precious gemme
Amidst a ring most richly well enchaced,
That with her goodly presence all the rest much
graced.

xIII.
Looke ! how the crowne, which Ariadne wore
Upon her yvory forehead that same day
That Theseus her unto his bridale bore,
When the bold Centaures made that bloudy fray
With the fierce Lapithes which did them dismay ;
Being now placed in the firmament,
Through the bright heaven doth her beams display,
And is unto the starres an ornament,
Which round about her move in order excellent.

xIV.
Such was the beauty of this goodly band,
Whose sundry parts were here too long to tell :
But she, that in the midst of them did stand,
Seem'd all the rest in beauty to excell,
Crownd with a rosie girlond that right well
Did her beseme : and ever, as the crew
About her daunst, sweet flowres that far did
smell
And fragrant odours they upon her threw ;
But, most of all, those Three did her with gifts
endew.

xV.
Those were the Graces, daughters of delight,
Handmaidens of Venus, which are wont to haunt
Upon this Hill, and daunce there day and night :
Those Three to men all gifts of grace do graunt ;
And all, that Venus in herself doth vaunt,
Is borrowed of them : but that faire one,
That in the midst was placed paravaunt,
Was she to whom that Shepheard pypt alone ;
That made him pipe so merrily, as never none.

xVI.
She was, to weete, that iolly Shepherds Lasse,
Which piped there unto that merry rout ;

xI. 3. For *breaking* &c.] That is, *lest* they should break their dance, if he were seen. UPRON.

xII. 5. ——— *did in compasse stemme* :] Did *stem* or *stay* them in compass, i. e. did *encompass* them UPRON.

xII. 3. ——— *his bridale*] The substantive *bridal* is Saxon for the *nuptial feast*. The adjective *bridal* for *connubial* occurs also in Spenser, and often in Milton. TONN.

xv. 7. ——— *paravaunt*] *Publicly* or *in front*. TODD.

xvi. 1. *She was, to weete, that iolly Shepherds Lasse,*] Colin Clout is Spenser's this Lass, whom he so much

That iolly Shepheard, which there piped, was
Poore Colin Clout, (who knows not Colin Clout ?)
He pypt apace, whilst they him daunst about.
Pype, iolly Shepheard, pype thou now apace
Unto thy Love that made thee low to lout ;
Thy Love is present there with thee in place ;
Thy Love is there advaunst to be another Grace.

xVII.
Much wondred Calidore at this straunge sight,
Whose like before his eye had never seene ;
And standing long astonished in spright,
And rapt with pleasaunce, wist not what to weene,
Whether it were the traine of Beauties Queene,
Or Nymphes, or Faeries, or enchanted show,
With which his eyes mote have deluded beene.
Therefore, resolving what it was to know,
Out of the wood he rose, and toward them did go.

xVIII.
But, soone as he appeared to their vew,
They vanisht all away out of his sight,
And cleane were gone, which way he never knew ;
All save the Shepheard, who, for fell despight
Of that displeasure, broke his bag-pipe quight,
And made great mone for that unhappy turne :
But Calidore, though no lesse sory wight
For that mishap, yet seeing him to mourne,
Drew neare, that he the truth of all by him mote
learne :

xIX.
And, first him greeting, thus unto him spake ;
" Haile, iolly Shepheard, which thy ioyous dayes
Here ledest in this goodly merry-make,
Frequented of these gentle Nymphes alwayes,
Which to thee flocke to heare thy lovely layes !
Tell me what mote these dainty Damzels be,
Which here with thee doe make their pleasant
playes :
Right happy thou, that mayest them freely see !
But why, when I them saw, fled they away from
me ?"

xx.
" Not I so happy," answerd then that Swaine,
" As thou unhappy, which them thence didst
chace,
Whom by no meanes thou canst recall againe ;
For, being gone, none can them bring in place,
But whom they of themselves list so to grace."
" Right sory I," saide then Sir Calidore,
" That my ill fortune did them hence displace :
But since things passed none may now restore,
Tell me what were they all, whose lacke thee
grieves so sore."

xxI.
The gan that Shepheard thus for to dilate ;
" Then wote, thou Shepheard, whatsoe'er thou
bee,
That all those Ladies, which thou sawest late,
Are Venus Damzels, all within her fee,
But differing in honour and degree :
They all are Graces which on her depend ;

praises and characterises in st. 25, images her whom he married, being forsaken by the fair Rosalind. UPRON.

xviii. 2. *They vanisht all away*] Perhaps the allusion is that Sir Philip Sidney, imaged in Calidore, drew Spenser from his rustick muse to Court. UPRON.

Besides a thousand more which ready bee
Her to adorne, wheuso she forth doth wend ;
But those Three in the midst, doe chiefe on her
attend :

xxii.

"They are the Daughters of sky-ruling Iove,
By him begot of faire Eurynome,
The Oceans daughter, in this pleasant grove,
As he, this way comming from feastful glee
Of Thetis wedding with Accidee,
In sommers shade himselfe here rested weary.
The first of them hight mylde Euphrosyne,
Next faire Aglaia, last Thalia merry ;
Sweete goddesses all Three, which me in mirrh do
cherry !

xxiii.

"These Three on men all gracious gifts bestow,
Which decke the body or adorne the mynde,
To make them lovely or well-favoured show ;
As comely carriage, entertainment kynde,
Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that bynde,
And all the complements of curtesie :
They teach us, how to each degree and kynde
We should ourselves demeane, to low, to hie,
To friends, to foes ; which skill men call Civility.

xxiv.

"Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme to smile,
That we likewise should mylde and gentle be ;
And also naked are, that without guile
Or false dissemblance all them plaine may see,
Simple and true from covert malice free ; [bore,
And ecke themselves so in their dance they
That two of them still froward seem'd to bee,
But one still towards shew'd herselfe afore ;
That good should from us goe, then come, in greater
store.

xxv.

Such were those goddesses which ye did see :
But that fourth Mayd, which there amidst them
traced,
Who can arcad what creature mote she bee,
Whether a creature, or a goddesse graced
With heavenly gifts from heven first enrac'd !
But whatso sune she was, she worthy was
To be the Fourth with those Three other plac'd :
Yet was she certes but a cuntry lasse ;
Yet she all other cuntry lasses farre did passe :

xxvi.

"So farre, as doth the Daughter of the Day
All other lesser lights in light excell ;
So farre doth she in beautyfull array

xxii. 9. ——— *cherry!*] For *cherish*. CHURCH.
xxiii. 6. *And all the complements*] *Complements*, as
Mr. Church observes, are every thing which serves to com-
plete the virtue of Courtesy. TODD.

xxiv. 7. ——— *froward*] *Froward*, that is, *from-ward*,
in opposition to *to-wards*. CHURCH.
xxiv. 9. That &c.] *Thereby intimating*, that, &c.
CHURCH.

Ibid. That good should from us goe, then come, in
greater store.] In old writers, *then* is the same as *than*.
The meaning is, that good should go from us in greater
store than come to us ; that we should be more ready to
give than to receive. JORTIN.

xxv. 5. ——— *enrac'd?*] To *enrace* is to *enroot*, *im-
plant*, Fr. *enraciner*, *enracier* ; or from the substantive
race, a stock, a root. UFTON.

Above all other lasses beare the bell ;
Ne lesse in vertue that becomes her well
Doth she exceede the rest of all her race ;
For which the Graces, that here wont to dwell,
Have for more honor brought her to this place,
And graced her so much to be another Grace.

xxvii.

"Another Grace she well deserves to be,
In whom so many graces gathered are,
Excelling much the meane of her degree ;
Divine resemblance, beauty souveraine rare,
Firme chastity, that spight ne blemish dare !
All which she with such courtesie doth grace,
That all her peres cannot with her compare,
But quite are dimmed when she is in place :
She made me often pipe, and now to pipe apace.

xxviii.

"Sunne of the world, great glory of the sky,
That all the earth doest lighten with thy rayes,
Great Gloriana, greatest Maiesty !
Pardon thy Shepheard, mongst so many layes
As he hath sung of Thee in all his dayes,
To make one minime of thy poore Handmayd,
And underneath thy feete to place her prayse ;
That, when thy glory shall be farre displayd
To future age, of her this mention may be made !"

xxix.

When thus that Shepheard ended had his speach,
Sayd Calidore ; "Now sure it yrketh mee,
That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse breach,
As now the author of thy bale to be,
Thus to bereave thy Loves deare sight from thee :
But, gentle Shepheard, pardon thou my shame,
Who rashly sought that which I mote not see."
Thus did the courteous Knight excuse his blame,
And to recomfort him all comely meanes did frame.

xxx.

In such discourses they together spent
Long time, as fit occasion forth them led ;
With which the Knight himselfe did much con-
And with delight his greedy fancy fed [tent,
Both of his words, which he with reason red,
And also of the place, whose pleasures rare
With such regard his senses ravished,
That thence he had no will away to fare,
But wisht that with that Shepheard he mote dwell-
ling share.

xxxi.

But that envenim'd sting, the which of yore
His poysnous point deepe fixed in his hart
Had left, now gan afresh to rancle sore,
And to reneue the rigour of his smart ;
Which to recure, no skill of leaches art
Mote him avails, but to returne againe
To his wounds worker, that with lovely dart
Dinting his brest had bred his restlesse paine ;
Like as the wounded whale to shore flies from the
maine.

xxvii. 5. ——— *ne blemish dare!*] *Dare* not find fault
with. CHURCH.

xxviii. 6. *To make one minime*] To compose one little
song ; *minim* is a term in musick. TODD.

xxxi. 8. *Dinting*] *Striking*, from the substantive *dint*
often used by Chaucer, as well as Spenser, for *stroke* or
blow. TODD.

xxxii.

So, taking leave of that same gentle Swaine,
He backe returned to his rusticke wounne,
Where his faire Pastorella did remaine :
To whome in sort, as he at first begonne,
He daily did apply himselfe to donne
All dewfull service, voide of thoughts impure ;
Ne any paines ne perill did he shonne,
By which he might her to his love allure,
And liking in her yet untamed heart procure.

xxxiii.

And evermore the shepheard Coridon,
Whatever thing he did her to aggrate,
Did strive to match with strong contention,
And all his paines did closely emulate ;
Whether it were to caroll, as they sate
Keeping their sheepe, or games to exercise,
Or to present her with their labours late ;
Through which if any grace chaunst to arize
To him, the Shepheard straight with icalonsie did
frize.

xxxiv.

One day, as they all three together went
To the greene wood to gather strawberries,
There chaunst to them a dangerous accident :
A tigre forth out of the wood did rise,
That with fell clawes full of fierce gourmandize,
And greedy mouth wide gaping like hell-gate,
Did runne at Pastorell her to surprize ;
Whom she beholding, now all desolate,
Gan cry to them aloud to helpe her all too late.

xxxv.

Which Coridon first hearing, ran in hast
To reskue her ; but, when he saw the feend,
Through cowerd feare he fled away as fast,
Ne durst abide the daunger of the end ;
His life he steemed dearer then his frend :
But Calidore soone comming to her ayde,
When he the beast saw ready now to rend
His Loves deare spoile, in which his heart was
prayde,

He ran at him enraged, instead of being frayde.

xxxvi.

He had no weapon but his shepheards hooke
To serve the vengeance of his wrathfull will ;
With which so sternely he the monster strooke,
That to the ground astonished he fell ;
Whence ere he could recou'r, he did him quell,
And hewing off his head, it presented
Before the fecte of the faire Pastorell ;
Who, scarcely yet from former feare exempted,
A thousand times him thank that had her death
prevented.

xxxvii.

From that day forth she gan him to affect,
And daily more her favour to augment,
But Coridon for cowerdize reiect,

xxxii. 5. — donne] *Do.* UPTON.xxxiii. 2. — her to *aggrate,*] That is, in order to please her. TONO.xxxiii. 9. *To him,]* *To Calidore.* CHURCH.xxxiv. 7. — surprize:] *Seize.* Fr. *surprendre.* CHURCH.xxxv. 4. — *in which his heart was prayde,]* In which his own heart was the *prey.* UPTON.

Fit to keepe sheepe, unfit for loves content :
The gentle heart scornes base disparagement.
Yet Calidore did not despise him quight,
But usde him friendly for furthér intent,
That by his fellowship he colour might
Both his estate and love from skill of any wight.

xxxviii.

So well he wood her, and so well he wrought her,
With humble service, and with daily sute,
That at the last unto his will he brought her ;
Which he so wisely well did prosecute,
That of his love he reapt the timely frute,
And ioyed long in close felicity :
Till Fortune, franght with malice, blinde and
That envies lovers long prosperity, [brute,
Blew up a bitter storme of foule adversity.

xxxix.

It fortun'd one day, when Calidore
Was hunting in the woods, as was his trade,
A lawlesse people, Brigants hight of yore,
That never usde to live by plough nor spade,
But fed on spoile and hooty, which they made
Upon their neighbours which did nigh them
border,
The dwelling of these shepheards did invade ;
And spoyld their houses, and themselves did
murder,
And drove away their flocks ; with other much dis-
order.

xl.

Amongst the rest, the which they then did pray,
They spoyld old Melibee of all he had,
And all his people captive led away ;
Mongst which this lucklesse Mayd away was lad,
Faire Pastorella, sorrowfull and sad,
Most sorrowfull, most sad, that ever sigh't,
Now made the spoile of theeves and Brigants bad,
Which was the conquest of the gentlest Knight
That ever liv'd, and th' onely glory of his might

xli.

With them also was taken Coridon,
And carried captive by those theeves away ;
Who in the covert of the night, that none
Mote them descry, nor reskue from their pray,
Unto their dwelling did them close convey :
Their dwelling in a little island was,
Covered with shrubby woods, in which no way
Appeared for people in nor ont to pas,
Nor any footing fynde for overgrown gras :

xlii.

For underneath the ground their way was made
Through hollow caves, that no man mote discover
For the thicke shrubs, which did them alwaies
shade
From view of living wight and covered over ;
But Darkenesse dred and daily Night did hover
Through all the inner parts, wherein they dwelt ;

xxxix. 3. — *Brigants]* Ital, *brigante.* Fr. *brigand,* a robber, a vagabond. The *Brigantes* likewise are the inhabitants of the northern parts of England. UPTON.xl. 1. — did pray,] *Made a prey of.* CHURCH.xl. 6. — *that ever sigh't,]* That ever did sigh or grieve, as Spenser elsewhere uses it. TONO.xl. 9. — *th' onely]* *Greatest.* CHURCH.xlii. 5. — *daily Night]* So all the editions. Inclined to think Spenser gave "*deadly Night.*" CHURCH.

Ne lightned was with window, nor with lover,
But with continuall candle light, which delt
A doubtfull sense of things, not so well scene as felt.

XLIII.

Hither those Brigants brought their present pray,
And kept them with continuall watch and ward ;
Meaning, so soone as they convenient may,
For slaves to sell them for no small reward
To Merchants, which them kept in bondage hard,
Or sold againe. Now when faire Pastorell
Into this place was brought, and kept with gard
Of griesly theeves, she thought herself in hell,
Where with such damned fiends she should in dark-
nesse dwell.

XLIV.

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment
And pittifull complaints which there she made,
(Where day and night she nought did but lauent
Her wretched life shut up in deadly shade,
And waste her goodly beauty, which did fade
Like to a floure that feels no heate of sunne
Which may her feeble leaves with comfort glade;)
And what befell her in that theevisch wonne,
Will in another Canto better be begonne.

CANTO XI.

The Theeves fall out for Pastorell,
Whylest Melibee is aiaun;
Her Calidore from them redeemes,
And bringeth backe againe.

I.

THE ioyes of love, if they should ever last
Without affliction or disquietnesse
That worldly channeses doe amongst them cast,
Would be on earth too great a blessednesse,
Liker to heaven then mortall wretchednesse :
Therefore the winged god, to let men weat
That here on earth is no sure happinesse,
A thousand sowres hath tempered with one sweet,
To make it seeme more deare and dainty, as is
meet.

II.

Like as is now befallne to this faire Mayd,
Faire Pastorell, of whom is now my song :
Who being now in dreadfull darknesse layd
Amongst those Theeves, which her in bondage
strong
Detaynd ; yet Fortune, not with all this wrong
Contented, greater mischief on her threw,
And sorrowes heapt on her in greater throng ;
That whoso heares her heavinesse, would rew
And pittie her sad plight, so chang'd from pleasaut
hew.

III.

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens remayned,
Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts unrest,
It so befell, as Fortune had ordayned,
That he which was their Capitaine profest,

XLII. 7. — lover.] A *lover* is an opening in a poor cottage at the top, to let out the smoke, and to let in the light. Fr. *l'ouverte*, apertura; *ouvrir*, aperire. Spenser seems to have in view the Irish poor cottages which were thus built in his time. Upton.

XLIV. 7. — glade.] *Make glad*. Todd.

And had the chiefe commaund of all the rest,
One day, as he did all his prisoners vew,
With lustfull eyes beheld that lovely guest,
Faire Pastorella, whose sad mournfull hew
Like the faire morning clad in misty fog did shew.

IV.

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was fired,
And inly burnit with flames most raging whot,
That her alone he for his part desired
Of all the other pray which they had got,
And her in mynde did to himselfe allot.
From that day forth he kyndnesse to her showed,
And sought her love by all the meanes he mote ;
With looks, with words, with gifts he oft her
wowed,
And mixed threats among, and much unto her
wowed.

V.

But all that ever he could doe or say
Her constant mynd could not a whit remove,
Nor draw unto the lure of his lewd lay,
To graunt him favour or afford him love :
Yet ceast he not to sew, and all waies prove,
By which he mote accomplish his request,
Saying and doing all that mote behove ;
Ne day nor night he suffred her to rest,
But her all night did watch, and all the day molest.

VI.

At last, when him she so impörtune saw,
Fearing least he at length theraines would lend
Unto his lust, and make his will his law,
Sith in his powre she was to foe or friend ;
She thought it best, for shadow, to pretend
Some shew of favour, by him gracing small,
That she thereby mote either freely wend,
Or at more ease continue there his thrall :
A little well is lent that gaineth more withall.

VII.

So from thenceforth, when love he to her made,
With better tearmes she did him entertaine ;
Which gave him hope, and did him halfe perswade,
That he in time her ioyance should obtaine :
But when she saw, through that small favours
gaine,
That further then she willing was he prest ;
She found no meanes to barre him, but to faime
A sodaine sicknesse which her sore opprest,
And made unfit to serve his lawlesse mindes behest.

VIII.

By meanes whereof she would not him permit
Onee to approach to her in privy,
But onely mongst the rest by her to sit,
Mourning the rigour of her ma'lady,
And seeking all things meete for remedy :
But she resolv'd no remedy to fynde,
Nor better cheare to shew in misery,
Till Fortune would her captive bonds unbynde :
Her sicknesse was not of the body but the mynde.

IX.

During which space that she thus sicke did lie,
It chaunst a sort of Merchants, which were wount

IV. 8. — wowed.] For *wowed*. Church.

VI. 4. *Sith in his powre she was to foe or friend* ; That is, for him to be a *foe* or a *friend* to her, "to *foe* her or to *friend* her." Upton.

To skim these coastes for bounden there to buy,
And by such traffike after gaines to hunt,
Arrived in this isle, though bare and blunt,
T' inquire for slaves; where being readie met
By some of these same Theeves at th' instant
brunt,

Were brought unto their Captaine, who was set
By his faire patients side with sorrowfull regret.

To whom they shewed, how these Marchants were
Arriv'd in place their bondslaves for to buy;
And therefore prayd that those same captives
Mote to them for their most commodity [there
Be sold, and amongst them shared equally.
This their request the Captaine much appalled;
Yet could he not their just demaund deny,
And willed straight the slaves should forth be
called,
And sold for most advantage not to be forstalled.

Then forth the good old Melibee was brought,
And Ceridon with many other moe,
Whom they before in diverse spoyles had caught;
All which he to the Marchants sale did shewe:
Till some, which did the sundry prisoners knowe,
Gan to inquire for that faire Shepherdesse,
Which with the rest they tooke not long agoe;
And gan her forme and feature to expresse,
The more t' augment her price through praise of
comlinesse.

To whom the Captaine in full angry wize
Made answer, that "the Mayd of whom they
spake

Was his owne purchase and his onely prize;
With which none had to doe, ne ought partake,
But he himselfe which did that conquest make;
Little for him to have one silly lasse;
Besides through sicknesse new so wan and weake,
That nothing meet in merchandise to passe:"
So shew'd them her, to prove how pale and weake
she was.

The sight of whom, though new decayd and mard,
And eke but hardly seene by candle-light,
Yet, like a diamond of rich regard,
In doubtfull shadow of the darke some night
With starrie beames about her shining bright,
These Marchants fixed eyes did so amaze,
That what through wonder, and what through
A while on her they greedily did gaze, [delight,
And did her greatly like, and did her greatly praise.

At last when all the rest them offred were,
And prizes to them placed at their pleasure,
They all refused in regard of her;
Ne ought would buy, however prisd with measure,
Withouten her, whose worth above all threasure,
They did esteeme, and offred store of gold:
But then the Captaine, fraught with more dis-
pleasure,
Bad them be still; "his Love should not be sold;
The rest take if they would; be her to him would
hold."

ix. 5. — though bare and blunt,] Though barren and
uncultivated. CHURCH.

Therewith some other of the chiefest Theeves
Boldly him had such iniurie forbear; e
For that same Mayd, however it him greeves,
Should with the rest be sold before him there,
To make the prizes of the rest more deare.
That with great rage be stoutly doth deny;
And, fiercely drawing forth his blade, doth swear
That whose hardie hand on her doth lay,
It dearly shall aby, and death for handsell pay.

Thus, as they words amongst them multiply,
They fall to strokes, the frute of too much talke,
And the mad steele about doth fiercely fly,
Not sparing wight, ne leaving any balke,
But making way for Death at large to walke;
Who, in the horror of the griesly night,
In thousand dreadful shapes doth amongst them
stalke,
And makes huge havock; whiles the candle-light
Out-quenched leaves no skill nor difference of wight.

Like as a sort of hungry degs, ymet
About some carcase by the common way,
Doe fall together, stryving each to get
The greatest portion of the greedie pray;
All on confused heapes themselves assay,
And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug, and teare;
That who them sees would wonder at their fray,
And who sees not would be affrayd to heare:
Such was the conflict of those cruell Brigants there.

But, first of all, their captives they doe kill,
Least they should ioyne against the weaker side,
Or rise against the remnant at their will:
Old Melibee is slaine; and him beside
His aged wive; with many others wide:
But Ceridon, escaping craftily,
Creepes forth of doores, whilst darknes him doth
And flics away as fast as he can hie, [hide,
Ne stayeth leave to take before his friends doe dye.

But Pastorella, wofull wretched elfe,
Was by the Captaine all this while defended,
Who, minding more her safety than himselfe,
His target alwayes ever her pretended;
By meanes whereof, that mote not be amended,
He at the length was slaine and layd on ground,
Yet holding fast twixt both his armes extended
Fayre Pastorell, who with the selfe same wound
Launcht through the arme fell down with him in
drierie swound.

There lay she covered with confused preasse
Of carcasses, which dyiug on her fell:
The, whenas he was dead, the fray gan cease;
And each to ether calling did compell
To stay their cruell hands from slaughter fell,
Sith they that were the cause of all were gone:

xvi. 4. — ne leaving any balke,] Balke is here used
in the sense of balke in agriculture, that is, a ridge of land
between two furrows. UPRON.

xix. 4. — pretended;] Stretched or held over her.
T. WARTON.

Thereto they all attonce agreed well ;
And, lighting candles new, gan search anone,
How many of their friends were slaine, how many
fone.

xxx.

Their Captaine there they cruelly found kild,
And in his armes the dreary dying Mayd,
Like a sweet angell twixt two clouds uphild ;
Her lovely light was dimmed and decayd
With cloud of death upon her eyes displayd ;
Yet did the cloud make even that dimmed light
Seeme much more lovely in that darknesse layd,
And twixt the twinkling of her eye-hids bright
To sparke out litle beames, like starres in foggie
night.

xxxi.

But, when they mov'd the carcasses aside,
They found that life did yet in her remaine ;
Then all their helpes they busily applyde
To call the soule backe to her home againe ;
And wrought so well, with labour and long paine,
That they to life recovered her at last :
Who, sighing sore, as if her hart in twaine
Had riven bene and all her hart-strings brast,
With drearie drouping eyne lookt up like one aghast.

xxxii.

There she beheld, that sore her griev'd to see,
Her father and her friends about her lying,
Herselfe sole left a second spyble to bee
Of those, that having saved her from dying
Renew'd her death by timely death denying.
What now is left her but to wayle and weepe,
Wringing her hands, and ruefully loud crying !
Ne cared she her wound in teares to steepe,
Albe with all their might those Brigants her did
keepe.

xxxiii.

But when they saw her now reliv'd againe,
They left her so, in charge of one, the best
Of many worst, who with unkind disdain
And cruell rigour her did much molest ;
Scarse yeelding her due food or timely rest,
And scarsely suffering her infested wound,
That sore her payn'd, by any to be drest.
So leave we her in wretched thraldome bound,
And turne we hack to Calidore, where we him found

xxxiv.

Who when he backe returned from the wood,
And saw his shepherds cottage spoyled quight,
And his Love left away ; he waxed wood
And halfe enraged at that ruefull sight ;
That even his hart, for very fell desight,
And his owne flesh he readie was to teare :
He chaunt, he griev'd, he fretted, and he sigh't,
And fared like a furious wyld beare,
Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being other-
where.

xxxv.

Ne wight he found to whom he might complaine ;
Ne wight he found of whom he might inquire ;
That more increast the anguish of his paine :
He sought the woods, but no man could see there ;
He sought the plaines, but could no tydings heare :
The woods did nought but echoes vaine rebound ;
The playnes all waste and emptie did appeare ;

xxx. 3. — uphild.] For upheld. TODD.

Where wont the shepherds oft their pypes re-
sound,
And feed an hundred flocks, there now not one he
found.

xxxvii.

At last, as there he romed up and downe,
He chaunst one coming towards him to spy,
That seem'd to be some sorie simple clowne,
With ragged weedes, and lockes upstaring hye,
As if he did from some late daunger fly,
And yet his feare did follow him behynd :
Who as he unto him approached nye,
He mote perceive, by signes which he did fynd,
That Coridon it was, the silly shepherds hynd.

xxxviii.

Tho, to him running fast, he did not stay
To greet him first, but askt Where were the rest,
Where Pastorell !—Who full of fresh dismay,
And gushing forth in teares, was so opprest,
That he no word could speake, but smit his brest,
And up to heaven his eyes fast-streeming threw :
Whereat the Knight amaz'd, yet did not rest,
But askt againe, what ment that ruffull hew ;
Where was his Pastorell ? Where all the other crew ?

xxxix.

“ Ah ! well away,” said he, then sighing sore,
“ That ever I did live this day to see,
This dismal day, and was not dead before,
Before I saw faire Pastorella dye !”
“ Die ! out alas !” then Calidore did cry,
“ How could the Death dare ever her to quell !
But read thou, Shepheard, read what destiny
Or other dyrefull hap from heaven or hell
Hath wrought this wicked deed : doe feare away,
and tell.”

xxxix.

Tho, when the Shepheard breathed had awhile,
He thus began ; “ Where shall I then commence
This wofull tale ! or how those Brigants vyle
With cruell rage and dreadfull violence
Spoyld all our cots, and caried us from hence ;
Or how faire Pastorell should have bene sold
To Marchants, but was sav'd with strong defence ;
Or how those Theeves, whilst one sought her to
hold,
Fell all at ods, and fought through fury fierce and
hold.

xxxix.

“ In that same conflict (woe is me !) hefell
This fatal chauce, this dolefull accident,
Whose heavy tydings now I have to tell.
First all the captives, which they here had hent,
Were by them slaine by generall consent ;
Old Melibee and his good wife withall
These eyes saw die, and dearely did lament :
But, when the lot to Pastorell did fall,
Their Captaine long withstood, and did her death
forstall.

xxxix.

“ But what could he gainst all them doe alone ?
It could not boot ; needs mote she die at last !
I onely scapt through great confusione
Of cryes and clamors, which amongst them past,

xxxvii. 6. And yet his feare &c.] That is, and that his
feare did still follow &c. CHURCH.

In dreadfull darknesse, dreadfully aghast ;
That better were with them to have bene dead,
Then here to see all desolate and wast,
Despoyled of those ioyes and iollyhead,
Which with those gentle shepherds here I wont
to lead."

xxxiii.

When Calidore these ruefull newes had raught,
His hart quite deaded was with anguish great,
And all his wits with doole were nigh distraught,
That he his face, his head, his brest did beat,
And death itselfe unto himselfe did threat ;
Oft cursing th' heavens, that so cruell were
To her, whose name he often did repeat ;
And wishing oft, that he were present there
When she was slaine, or had bene to her succour
nere.

xxxiv.

But after griefe awhile had had his course,
And spent itselfe in mourning, he at last
Began to mitigate his swelling sourse,
And in his mind with better reason cast
How he might save her life, if life did last ;
Or, if that dead, how he her death might wreake ;
Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past ;
Or, if it to revenge he were too weake,
Then for to die with her, and his lives threed to
breake.

xxxv.

Tho Coridon he prayd, sith he well knew
The readie way unto that theevish wonne,
To wend with him, and be his conduct trew
Unto the place, to see what should he donne :
But he, whose heart through feare was late for-
donne,
Would not for ought he drawne to former drede ;
But by all meanes the daunger knowne did shonne :
Yet Calidore so well him wrought with need,
And faire bespoken with words, that he at last
agreed.

xxxvi.

So forth they goe together (God before)
Both clad in shepherds weeds agreeably,
And both with shepherds hookes ; but Calidore
Had, underneath, him armed privily :
Tho, to the place when they approached nye,
They chaunst, upon an hill not farre away,
Some flockes of sheepe and shepherds to espy ;
To whom they both agreed to take their way,
In hope there newes to learne, how they mote best
assay.

xxxvii.

There did they find, that which they did not feare,
The self-same flockes the which those Theeves
had reft
From Melibee and from themselves whyleare ;
And certaine of the Theeves there by them left,
The which, for want of heards, themselves then
kept :

xxxii. 8. — iollyhead] *A state of jollity.* URTON.xxxiii. 1. *When Calidore &c.*] That is, when this rueful story had reached Calidore. CHURCH.xxxvi. 2. — agreeably.] *Alike, like each other.* CHURCH.xxxvi. 4. — him] *Himself.* CHURCH.xxxvii. 5. — heards] *Herdsmen.* So Spenser elsewhere employs this word. TODD.

Right well knew Coridon his owne late sheepe,
And, seeing them, for tender pittie wept : [keepe,
But, when he saw the Theeves which did them
His hart gan fayle, albe he saw them all asleepe.

xxxviii.

But Calidore recomforting his griefe, [swade ;
Though not his feare ; for nought may feare dis-
Him hardly forward drew, whereas the thiefe
Lay sleeping soundly in the bushes shade,
Whom Coridon him counsell to invade
Now all unwares, and take the spoyle away .
But he, that in his mind had closely made
A further purpose, would not so them slay,
But gently waking them gave them the time of day.

xxxix.

Tho, sitting downe by them upon the greene,
Of sundrie things he purpose gan to faine,
That he by them might certaine tydings weene
Of Pastorell, were she alive or slaine : [again,
Mongst which the Theeves them questioned
What mister men, and eke from whence they
were.
To whom they answer'd, as did appertaine,
That they were poore heardgroomes, the which
whylere
Had from their maisters fled, and now sought hyre
elsewhere.

xli.

Whereof right glad they seem'd, and offer made
To hyre them well if they their flockes would
keepe : [sayd,
For they themselves were evill groomes, they
Unwont with heards to watch, or pasture sheepe,
But to forray the land, or scoure the deepe.
Thereto they soone agreed, and earnest tooke
To keepe their flockes for litle hyre and chepe ;
For they for better hyre did shortly looke :
So there all day they bode, till light the sky forsooke.

xlii.

Tho, whenas towards darksome night it drew,
Unto their hellish dens those Theeves them
brought ;
Where shortly they in great acquaintance grew,
And all the secrets of their entrayles sought :
There did they find, contrarie to their thought,
That Pastorell yet liv'd ; but all the rest
Were dead, right so as Coridon had taught :
Whereof they both full glad and blyth did rest,
But chiefly Calidore, whom griefe had most possess.

xlii.

At length, when they occasion fittest found,
In dead of night, when all the Theeves did rest
After a late forray, and slept full sound,
Sir Calidore him arm'd, as he thought best ;
Having of late by diligent inquest
Provided him a sword of meanest sort ; [next :
With which he streight went to the Captaines

xxxix. 7. — as did appertaine,] As was suitable both to their dress, and to Calidore's design. CHURCH.

xl. 3. — evill groomes,] That is, such as were not used to the business of keeping sheep. CHURCH.

xl. 5. — to forray the land,] To ravage or spoil the land. TODD.

xli. 4. — the secrets of their entrayles] That is, their most hidden secrets. CHURCH.

But Coridon durst not with him consort,
Ne durst abide behind for dread of worse effort.

XLIII.

When to the cave they came, they found it fast :
But Calidore with huge resistlesse might
The dores assayed, and the locks upbrast :
With noyse wherof the theefe awaking light
Unto the entrance ran ; where the bold Knight
Encountring him with small resistance slew :
The whiles faire Pastorell through great affright
Was almost dead, misdoubting least of new
Some upore were like that which lately she did
vew.

XLIV.

But whenas Calidore was comen in,
And gan aloud for Pastorell to call,
Knowing his voice, although not heard long sin,
She sudden was revived therewithall,
And wondrous ioy felt in her spirits thrall :
Like him that being long in tempest tost,
Looking each houre into Deathes mouth to fall,
At length espyes at hand the happie cost,
On which he safety hopes that earst feard to be
lost.

XLV.

Her gentle hart, that now long season past
Had never ioyance felt nor chearefull thought,
Began some smacke of comfort new to tast,
Like lyfeful heat to nummed senses brought,
And life to feele that long for death had sought :
Ne lesse in hart reioyced Calidore,
When he her found ; but, like to one distraught
And robd of reason, towards her him bore ;
A thousand times enbrast, and kist a thousand
more.

XLVI.

But now by this, with noyse of late upore,
The hue and cry was raysed all about ;
And all the Brigants flocking in great store
Unto the cave gan preasse, nought having dout
Of that was doen, and entred in a rout.
But Calidore in th' entry close did stand,
And, entertayning them with courage stout,
Still slew the foremost that came first to hand ;
So long, till all the entry was with bodies mand.

XLVII.

Tho, when no more could nigh to him approach,
He breath'd his sword, and rested him till day ;
Which when he spyde upon the earth t' encroch,
Through the dead carcasses he made his way,
Mongst which he found a sword of better say,
With which he forth went into th' open light,
Where all the rest for him did readie stay,
And, fierce assaying him, with all their might
Gan all upon him lay : there gan a dreadfull fight.

XLVIII.

How many flies in whottest summers day
Do seize upon some beast, whose flesh is bare,

XLIII. 4. ——— light] *Light*, I apprehend, is here used
for *lightly*, nimbly. CHURCH.

XLIV. 3. ——— sin,] *Since*. TODD.

XLV. 5. ——— thrall:] For *thrill*, pierce. CHURCH.

XLVI. 7. ——— entertayning] Mr. Church here interprets
the word, *receiving*. TODD.

XLVII. 5. ——— say,] *Assay*, prof. CHURCH.

XLVIII. 2. ——— bare,] *Raw*. Elsewhere he uses *raw*
for *bare*. CHURCH.

That all the place with swarmes do overlay,
And with their litle stings right felly fare ;
So many theeves about him swarming are,
All which do him assayle on every side,
And sore oppresse, ne any him doth spare ;
But he doth with his raging brond divide
Their thickest troupes, and round about him scat-
tred wide.

XLIX.

Like as a lion mongst an heard of dere,
Disperseth them to catch his choysest pray ;
So did he fly amongst them here and there,
And all that nere him came did hew and slay,
Till he had strowd with bodies all the way ;
That none his daunger daring to abide
Fled from his wrath, and did themselves convey
Into their caves, their heads from death to hide,
Ne any left that victorie to him envide.

L.

Then, backe returning to his dearest Deare,
He her gan to recomfort, all he might,
With gladfull speaches and with lovely cheare ;
And forth her bringing to the ioyous light,
Whereof she long had lackt the wishfull sight,
Deviz'd all goodly meanes from her to drive
The sad remembrance of her wretched plight :
So her unneath at last he did revive
That long had lyen dead, and made againe alive.

LI.

This doen, into those theevish dens he went, [take,
And thence did all the spoyles and treasures
Which they from many long had robd and rent
But Fortune now the victors meed did make ;
Of which the best he did his Love betake ;
And also all those flockes, which they before
Had reft from Meliibe and from his Make,
He did them all to Coridon restore :
So drove them all away, and his Love with him
bore.

CANTO XII

Fayre Pastorella by great hap
Her parents understands.
Calidore doth the Blatant Beast
Subdew, and bynd in bands.

I.

LIKE as a ship, that through the ocean wyde
Directs her course unto one certaine cost,
Is met of many a counter winde and tyde,
With which her winged speed is let and crost,
And she herselfe in stormie surges tost ;
Yet, making many a borde and many a bay,
Still winneth way, ne hath her compass lost ;
Right so it fares with me in this long way,
Whose course is often stayd, yet never is astray.

XLIX. 9. *Ne any left,*] Nor were there any left. CHURCH.
L. 8. ——— unneath] *Scarcely*. TODD.

LI. 5. ——— betake:] *Deliver*. The sense here is, *Of
the best of which he made Pastorella a present*. CHURCH.

I. 6. *Yet making &c.*] "To make a board, or to board
it up to a place, is to turn the ship up to the windward,
sometimes on one tack, and sometimes on another :"
Kersey. CHURCH.

ii.
For all that hetherto hath long delay
This gentle Knight from sewing his first quest,
Though out of course, yet hath not bene mis-
To shew the courtesie by him profest [sayd,
Even unto the lowest and the least.
But now I come into my course againe,
To his atchievement of the Blataut Beast ;
Who all this while at will did range and raine,
Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him to
restraine.

iii.
Sir Calidore, when thus he now had raught
Faire Pastorella from those Brigants powre,
Unto the Castle of Belgard her brought,
Whereof was Lord the good Sir Bellamour ;
Who whylome was, in his youthes freshest flowre,
A lustie Knight as ever wielded speare,
And had endured many a dreadfull stoure
In blondy battell for a Ladie deare,
The fayrest Ladie then of all that living were :

iv.
Her name was Claribell ; whose father hight
The Lord of many ilands, farre renound
For his great riches and his greater might :
He, through the wealth wherein he did abound,
This Daughter thought in wedlocke to have bound
Unto the Prince of Picteland, bordering nere ;
But she, whose sides before with secret wound
Of love to Bellamour empierced were,
By all meanes shund to match with any forrcign fere :

v.
And Bellamour againe so well her pleased
With dayly service and attendance dew,
That of her love he was entyrelly seized,
And closely did her wed, but knowne to few :
Which when her father understood, he grew
In so great rage that them in dongeon deepe
Without compassion cruelly he threw ;
Yet did so streightly them asunder keepe,
That neither could to company of th' other creepe.

vi.
Nathlesse Sir Bellamour, whether through grace
Or secret guifts, so with his keepers wrought,
That to his Love sometimes he came in place ;
Whereof her wombe unwist to wight was fraught,
And in dew time a Mayden Child forth brought ;
Which she streightway (for dread least if her syre
Should know thereof to slay he would have sought)
Delivered to her handmayd, that for hyre
She should it cause be fostred under straunge attyre.

vii.
The trustie damzell bearing it abrode
Into the emptie fields, where living wight
Mote not bewray the secret of her lode,
She forth gan lay unto the open light
The little Babe, to take thereof a sight :
Whom whylest she did with watrie eyne behold,
Upon the litle brest, like christall bright,

ii. 3. ——— out of course.] “ *Course*, in Navigation, is a ship’s way, or that point of the compass on which it is to be steer’d :” Kersey. CHURCH.

iii. 3. *Unto the Castle of Belgard*] It seems to me that the *Castle of Belgard* hints at *Belvoir Castle*. UPON.

v. 4. ——— closely] *Secretly*. CHURCH.

She mote perceive a litle purple mold,
That like a rose her silken leaves did faire unfold.

viii.
Well she it markt, and pittied the more,
Yet could not remedie her wretched case ;
But, closing it againe like as before,
Bedeav’d with teares there left it in the place ;
Yet left not quite, but drew a litle space
Behind the bushes, where she her did hyde,
To weet what mortal hand, or heavens grace,
Would for the wretched Infants helpe provyde ;
For which it loudly cald, and pittifully cryde.

ix.
At length a shepheard, which thereby did keepe
His fleecie flocke upon the playnes around,
Led with the Infants cry that loud did weepe,
Came to the place ; where when he wrapped found
Th’ abandond spoyle, he softly it unbound ;
And, seeing there that did him pittie sore,
He tooke it up and in his mantle wound ;
So home unto his honest wife it bore,
Who as her owne it nurst and named evermore.

x.
Thus long continu’d Claribell a thrall,
And Bellamour in bands ; till that her syre
Departed life, and left unto them all :
Then all the stormes of fortunes former yre
Were turnd, and they to freedome did retyre.
Thenceforth they joy’d in happinesse together,
And lived long in peace and love entyre,
Without disquiet or dislike of ether,
Till time that Calidore brought Pastorella thether.

xi.
Both whom they goodly well did entertaime ;
For Bellamour knew Calidore right well,
And loved for his prowess, sith they twaine
Long since had fought in field : als Claribell
Ne lesse did tender the faire Pastorell,
Seeing her weake and wan through durance long
There they awhile together thus did dwell
In much delight, and many ioyes among,
Untill the Damzell gan to wex more sound and strong.

xii.
The gan Sir Calidore him to advize
Of his first quest, which he had long foreloze,
Asham’d to thinke how he that enterprize,
The which the Faery Queene had long afore
Bequeath’d to him, forslacked had so sore ;
That much he feared least reproachfull blame
With foule dishonour him mote blot therefore ;
Besides the losse of so much loos and fame,
As through the world thereby should glorie his
name.

xiii.
Therefore, resolving to returne in hast
Unto so great atchievement, he bethought

vii. 8. ——— mold] *Mole*. CHURCH.

ix. 6. ——— that did him pittie sore.] That which did greatly move his compassion. CHURCH.

xii. 1. ——— him to advize] To bethink himself. Fr. *s’oviser*. CHURCH.

xii. 5. ——— forslacked] *Delayed* ; as in F. Q. v. xii. 3. Arthegal *forstacke* his exploit. TODD.

xii. 8. ——— loos] *Praise*. Lat. *laus*. CHURCH.

To leave his Love, now perill being past,
With Claribell ; whylest he that Monster sought
Throughout the world, and to destruction brought.
So taking leave of his faire Pastorell,
Whom to recomfort all the meanes he wrought,
With thanks to Bellamour and Claribell,
He went forth on his quest, and did that him befell.

xiv.

But first, ere I doe his adventures tell
In this exploite, me needeth to declare
What did betide to the faire Pastorell,
During his absence left in heavy care,
Through daily mourning and nightly misfare :
Yet did that ancient Matrone all she might,
To cherish her with all things choice and rare ;
And her owne handmayd, that Melissa hight,
Appointed to attend her dewly day and night.

xv.

Who in a morning, when this Maiden faire
Wasighting her, having her snowy breast
As yet not laced, nor her golden haire
Iuto their comely tresses dewly drest,
Chaumst to espy upon her yvory chest
The rosie marke, which she remembered well
That litle Infant had, which forth she kest,
The daughter of her Lady Claribell,
The which she bore the whiles in prison she did dwell.

xvi.

Which well avizing, streight she gan to cast
In her conceitfull mynd that this faire Mayd
Was that same Infant, which so long sith past
She in the open fields had loosely layd
To Fortunes spoile, unable it to ayd :
So, full of ioy, streight forth she ran in hast
Unto her Mistresse, being halfe dismayd,
To tell her, how the heavens had her graste,
To save her Chylde, which in Misfortunes mouth
was plaste.

xvii.

The sober Mother seeing such her mood,
Yet knowing not what meant that sodaine thro,
Askt her, how mote her words be understood,
And what the matter was that mov'd her so.
" My lief," said she, " ye know that long ygo,
Whylest ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gave
A litle Mayde, the which ye chyldeid tho ;
The same againe if now ye list to have,
The same is yonder Lady, whom High God did save."

xviii.

Much was the Lady troubled at that speach,
And gan to question streight how she it knew.
" Most certaine markes," said she, " do me it
teach ;
For on her breast I with these eyes did vew
The litle purple rose which thereon grew,
Whereof her name ye then to her did give.

xv. 7. — kest,] *Cast*. UPRON.

xvi. 1. — well avizing,] Looking upon with attention. TODD.

xvi. 8. — graste,] *Graced*, favoured. CHURCH.

xvii. 2. — thro,] *Thro* is here used for *throw*, agony : " That sodaine thro," that sudden agony of joy which Melissa discovered. CHURCH.

xviii. 7. — the which ye chyldeid] *Childing* is used in Chaucer for *conceiving*. In Shakspeare *childed* is used for *begot*. In Lydgate it is to bring forth. T. WARTON.

Besides, her countenance and her likely hew,
Matched with equal years, do surely prieve
That yond same is your Daughter sure, which yet
doth live."

xix.

The Matrone stayd no leuger to enquire,
But forth in hast ran to the stranger Mayd ;
Whom catching greedily, for great desire
Rent up her brest, and bosome open layd,
In which that rose she plainly saw displayd :
Then, her embracing twixt her arm's twaine,
She long so held, and softly weeping sayd ;
" And livest thou, my Daughter, now agame ?
And art thou yet alive, whom dead I long did
faine ?"

xx.

Tho further asking her of sundry things,
And times comparing with their accidents,
She found at last, by very certaine signes
And speaking markes of passed monuments,
That this young Mayd, whom chance to her
presents,
Is her owne Daughter, her owne Infant deare.
Tho, wondering long at those so straunge events,
A thousand times she her embraced ure,
With many a ioyfull kisse and many a melting
teare.

xxi.

Whoever is the mother of one chylde,
Which having thought long dead she fyndes
alive,
Let her by proove of that which she hath fylde
In her owne breast, this Mothers ioy describe :
For other none such passion can contrive
In perfect forme, as this good Lady felt,
When she so faire a Daughter saw survive,
As Pastorella was ; that nigh she swelt
For passing ioy, which did all into pittie melt.

xxii.

Thence running forth unto her loved Lord,
She unto him recounted all that fell :
Who, ioyning ioy with her in one accord,
Acknowledg'd, for his owne, faire Pastorell.
There leave we them in ioy, and let us tell
Of Calidore ; who, seeking all this while
That monstros Beas't by finall force to quell,
Through every place with restlesse paine and toile
Him follow'd by the tract of his outrageous spoile.

xxiii.

Through all estates he found that he had past,
In which he many massacres had left,
And to the Clergy now was come at last ;
In which such spoile, such havocke, and such
theft
He wrought, that thence all goodnesse he bereft,
That endlesse were to tell. The Elfin Knight,
Who now no place besides unsought had left,

xviii. 8. *Matched with equal years,*] Corresponding with the distance of time. CHURCH.

Ibid. — prieve] For *prove*. So *prieve* is used for *proof*, F. Q. ii. i. 48, and elsewhere. TODD.

xxi. 3. — fylde] *Feled*, *fell*, the spelling answers to the rhyme. UPRON.

xxi. 4. — describe:] *Describe*. TODD.

xxi. 8. — swelt] *Swelt* is here used for *fainted*. CHURCH.

xxii. 7. — by finall force] That is, finally. CHURCH.

At length into a Monastere did light,
Where he him found despoyling all with maine
and might.

XXIV.

Into their cloysters now he broken had,
Through which the Monckes he chased here
and there,

And them pursu'd into their dortours sad,
And searched all their cels and secrets neare ;
In which what filth and ordure did appeare,
Were yrkesome to report ; yet that foule Beast,
Nought sparing them, the more did tosse and
teare,

And ransacke all their demes from most to least,
Regarding nought religion nor their holy heast.

XXV.

From thence into the sacred church he broke,
And robd the chancell, and the deskes downe
threw,

And altars fouled, and blasphemý spoke,
And the images, for all their goodly hew,
Did cast to ground, whilist none was them to
So all confounded and disordered there : [rew ;
But, seeing Calidore, away he flew,
Knowing his fatal hand by former feare ;
But he him fast pursuing soone approached neare.

XXVI.

Him in a narrow place he overtooke,
And fierce assailing forst him turne againe :
Sternely he turnd againe, when he him strooke
With his sharpe steele, and ran at him amaine
With open mouth, that seemed to containe
A full good pecke within the utmost brim,
All set with yron teeth in raunges twaine,
That terrifide his foes, and armed him,
Appearing like the month of Orens griesly grim :

XXVII.

And therein were a thousand tongs empight
Of sundry kindes and sundry quality ;
Some were of dogs, that barked day and night ;
And some of cats, that wrawling still did cry ;
And some of beares, that grownd continually ;
And some of tygres, that did seeme to gren
And snar at all that ever passed by :
But most of them were tongues of mortal men,
Which spake reprochfully, not caring where nor
when.

XXVIII.

And them amongst were mingled here and there
The tongues of serpents, with three-forked stings,
That spat out poyson, and gore-bloudy gere,
At all that came within his ravengings ;
And spake licentious words and hatefull things
Of good and bad alike, of low and hie,
Ne kesars spared he a whit nor kings ;
But either blotted them with infamie,
Or bit them with his banefull teeth of iniury.

XXIX.

But Calidore, thereof no whit afraid,
Rencountred him with so impetuous might,
That th' outrage of his violence he stayd,

xxiv. 3. ——— dortours] The places where the Monks
lay were called dortours, from dormitorium. UPRON.

xxvii. 5. ——— grownd] Grunted. Anglo-Sax. g̃nennian
UPRON.

xxvii. 7. ——— snar] Belg. snarren, to snarl. UPRON.

And bet abacke threatning in vaine to bite,
And spitting forth the poyson of his spight
That fomed all about his bloody iawes :
Tho, rearing up his former feete on hight,
He rampt upon him with his ravenous pawes,
As if he would have rent him with his cruell clawes

XXX.

But he right well aware, his rage to ward,
Did cast his shield atweene ; and, therewithall
Putting his puissaunce forth, pursu'd so hard,
That backward he enforced him to fall ;
And, being downe, ere he new helpe could call,
His shield he on him threw, and fast downe held ;
Like as a bullocke, that in bloudy stall
Of butchers balefull hand to ground is feld,
Is forcibly kept downe, till he be throughly queld.

XXXI.

Full cruelly the Beast did rage and rore
To be downe held, and maystred so with might,
That he gan fret and fume out bloudy gore,
Striving in vaine to rere himself upright :
For still, the more he strove, the more the Knight
Did him suppress, and forcibly subdew ;
That made him almost mad for fell despight :
He grind, he bit, he seracht, he venim threw,
And fared like a feend right horrible in hew :

XXXII.

Or like the hell-borne Hydra, which they faine
That great Alcides whilome overthrew,
After that he had labourd long in vaine
To crop his thousand heads, the which still new
Forth budded, and in greater number grew.
Such was the fury of this hellish Beast,
Whilist Calidore him under him downe threw ;
Who nathemore his heavy load releast,
But aye, the more he rag'd, the more his powre
increast.

XXXIII.

Tho, when the Beast saw he mote nought availe
By force, he gan his hundred tongues apply,
And sharply at him to revile and raile
With bitter termes of shamefull infamy ;
Of interlacing many a forged lie,
Whose like he never once did speake, nor heare,
Nor ever thought thing so unworthy :
Yet did he nought, for all that, him forbear,
But strained him so streightly that he chokt him
neare.

XXXIV.

At last, whenas he found his force to shrinke
And rage to quaille, he tooke a muzzle strong
Of surest yron made with many a lincke ;
Therewith he mured up his month along,
And therein shut up his blasphemous tong,
For never more defaming gentle Knight,
Or unto lovely Lady doing wrong :
And thereunto a great long chaine he tight,
With which he drew him forth, even in his own
despight.

xxxii. 9. But &c.] That is, the more the Beast strug-
gled, the greater strength Calidore exerted to keep him
under. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 4. ——— mured] Enclosed. Ital. murare.
UPRON.

xxxiv. 6. For never more &c.] That is, that he might
never more defame &c. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 8. ——— tight,] Tied UPRON.

xxxv.

Like as whylome that strong Tiryinthian swaine
Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog of hell
Against his will fast bound in yron chaine,
And roring horribly did him compell
To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell
To griesly Pluto, what on earth was donne,
And to the other damned ghosts which dwell
For aye in Darknesse which day light doth
shonne :

So led this Knight his captvye with like conquest
wonne.

xxxvi.

Yet greatly did the Beast repine at those
Straunge bands, whose like till then he never bore,
Ne ever any durst till then impose ;
And chaufed inly, seeing now no more
Him liberty was left allow to rore :
Yet durst he not draw backe, nor once withstand
The proved powre of noble Calidore ;
But trembled underneath his mighty hand,
And like a fearefull dog him followed through the
land.

xxxvii.

Him through all Faery Land he follow'd so,
As if he learned had obedience long,
That all the people, whereso he did go,
Out of their townes did round about him throng ;
To see him leade that Beast in bondage strong ;
And, seeing it, much wondred at the sight :
And all such persons, as he earst did wrong,
Rejoyced much to see his captive plight,
And much admyr'd the Beast, but more admyr'd
the Knight.

xxxviii.

Thus was this Monster, by the maystring might
Of doughty Calidore, supprest and tamed,
That never more he mote endammage wight
With his vile tongue, which many had defamed,
And many causelesse caused to be blamed :
So did he eeke long after this remaine,
Untill that, (whether wicked fate so framed
Or fault of men,) he broke his yron chaine,
And got into the world at liberty againe.

xxxix.

Thenceforth more mischief and more scath he
To mortall men then he had done before ; [wrought
Ne ever could, by any, more be brought
Into like bands, ne maystred any more :
Albe that, long time after Calidore,
The good Sir Pelleas him tooke in hand ;
And after him Sir Lamoracke of yore ;
And all his brethren borne in Britaine land ;
Yet none of them could ever bring him into band.

xl.

So now he raungeth through the world againe,
And rageth sore in each degree and state ;
Ne any is that may him now restraine,
He grown is so great and strong of late,
Barking and biting all that him doe bate,

xxxv. 4. *And roring horribly &c.*] That is, notwithstanding Cerberus roared horribly, yet Hercules compelled him &c. CHURCH.

xxxv. 8. — *Darknesse which day-light doth shonne.*] Spenser might mean *utter darknesse*, darkness palpable which no light can penetrate. URTON.

Albe they worthy blame, or cleare of crime ;
Ne spareth he most learned Wits to rate,
Ne spareth he the gentle Poets rime ;
But rends, without regard of person or of time.

xli.

Ne may this homely Verse, of many meanest,
Hope to escape his venomous despite,
More than my former Writs, all were they cleanest
From blamefull blot, and free from all that wite
With which some wicked tongues did it backebite,
And bring into a mighty Peres displeasure,
That never so deserved to endite.
Therefore do you, my rimes, keep better measure,
And seeke to please ; that now is counted wise mens
treasure.

[Let us close our notes on this Sixth Book, with a short review of the Legend of Courtesy. The reader needs not be put in mind, that the Fairy Queen annually held a solemn feast, which continued with great magnificence for twelve several days. In one of those days, (supposing the sixth,) there came in presence a Hermit, who complained of the cruel ravagings of a monstrous beast, called the Blatant Beast ; and at the same time desired some Knight might be appointed, that alone might undertake the enterprize, not of destroying, but subduing, this monster of scandal. The petition was granted ; and the adventure assigned to Sir Calidore ; who, binding himself by a vow to perform it without aid or companion, sets forward on his quest, and, after many a courteous enterprize first achieved, at length overtakes and entirely masters and tames the Blatant Beast. The meeting of Arthegall and Calidore shows the connection of this with the former Book ; so likewise does the introducing of Timias in the fifth Canto ; but more particularly Princee Arthur, the hero of the Poem ; who is to be perfected in all virtues, that he might be worthy of the glory to which he aspires. If we turn our thoughts towards those mysteries that lie enveloped in types and allegories, we cannot help applying the following verses of our poet, in the introduction to the second Book, to many of the episodes herein related :

"And thou, O fairest Princess under sky,
"In this fair mirror mayst behold thy face,
"And thine own realms in Lond of Faery!"

Methinks, by no far-fetcht allusions, we might discover pictured out to us that truly courteous Knight Sir Philip Sidney, in the character of Sir Calidore ; whose name *Καλλιόμαχος* leads us to consider the many graceful and goodly endowments that Heaven peculiarly gave him. This is that *brave courtier* mentioned by our poet in *Mother Hubberds Tale* :

"Yet the *brave courtier*, in whose beauteous thought
"Regard of honour harbours——
"He will not creep, nor crouch with fained face,
"But walks upright with comely stedfast pace,
"And unto all doth yield due *Courtesie*."

With this hint given, who can help thinking of Sidney's *Arcadia*, when he finds Sir Calidore mispending his time among the *Shepherds* ? And when this Knight of Courtesy meets in his pastoral retirement with Colin Clout, and by his abrupt appearance drives away the rural Nymphs and Graces, which makes the shepherd,

—— "for fell despight
"Of that displeasure, break his bag-pipe quite :"—

Do not all these circumstances, agreeably to the tenor of this Poem, allude to our poet's leaving the country, and the rural muse, at Sir Philip Sidney's request ? I make no doubt myself, but the *Country Lass* described in C. x.

xl. 6. *Albe they*] Whether they be. CHURCH.

st. 25, 26, 27, is the same as described in his *Sonnets*, lxi. &c. Her name was Elizabeth, as he tells us in *Sonnet* lxxiv. And he was married to her after his unsuccessful love of the fair Rosalind, who seems imaged in that *Wondrous Fair* (as her name imports) who is so justly punished for love's disdain in Canto vii. I have mentioned in the notes that *Belgard Castle*, in Canto xii, seems from its very name to point out *Belvoir Castle*: If this is granted, Sir Bellamour must be the noble Lord of the Castle, who married into the royal house of York; and this seems hinted at in Canto xii. st. 4. Another of this noble family likewise married the daughter of Sir Phillip Sidney: but how far the story told of Pastorella, who found her parents in Belvoir Castle, may allude to this alliance, I neither affirm nor deny. In these kind of historical allusions Spenser usually perplexes the subject; he leads you on, and then designedly misleads you: for he is writing a Fairy Poem, not giving you the detail of an historian. It seems to me that our poet makes use of the same perplexing manner in hinting at the oslumious tale, then in every good woman's mouth, told of a certain Lady at Court, no less than a maid of honour to queen Elizabeth, and a daughter of Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, who had been too free of her favours before marriage to Sir Walter Raleigh: This Lady he married afterwards, and she made him the most quiet, the most *serene*, and best of wives. But the reader will not fail to apply this

story, when he finds Serena and Timias (in whom all along, and almost in every circumstance, is imaged Sir Walter Raleigh,) both carried to the Hermit's cell, to be cured of their sore maladies that they had contracted by the bite of Calumny and Scandal. This story too he will apply, when he finds Timias under the discipline of Diedain and Scorn, in Cantos vii, and viii. The Salvage Man characterised in Canto iv. st. 2, and in Canto v. st. 2, and 41, was intended to be shewn in a new light in some other part of this Poem, now left unfinished; and this *Salvage* perhaps represents, by way of type, the heir of *Lord Savage* mentioned by Spenser in his *View of Ireland*; "now (he says) a poor gentleman of very mean condition, yet dwelling in the Ardes." And the episode of the Infant saved from a bear, and delivered to the wife of Sir Bruin to be brought up as their son, might allude to the noble Irish family of the *Macmahons*, descended from the *Fitz-ursulas*. These kind of types and symbols, and historical allusions, the English reader will not fail to apply to many Parts of this Poem, when he considers what Spenser himself tells us, in his Introduction to B. ii. st. 4, that there are "*certain* *Sions* by which *FAIRY LOND* may be found." Hence the Poem itself, by this pleasing mask, partakes of the nature of fable, mystery, and allegory; not only in its moral representations of virtues and vices, and in what relates to nature and natural philosophy, but likewise in its history. [UPTON.]

TWO CANTOS OF MUTABILITIE:

WHICH, BOTH FOR FORME AND MATTER, APPEARE TO BE PARCELL OF SOME FOLLOWING BOOKE OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE;

UNDER THE

LEGEND OF CONSTANCIE.

CANTO VI.

Proud Change (not pleas'd in mortall things
Beneath the moone to raigne)
Pretends, as well of gods as men,
To be the soveraine.

I.
HAT man that sees the ever-whirling wheele
Of Change, the which all mortall things doth sway,
But that thereby doth find, and plainly feele,
How Mutability in them doth play
Her cruell sports to many mens decay?
Which that to all may better yet appeare,
I will rehearse, that whylome I heard say,
How she at first herself began to reare
Gainst all the gods, and th'empire sought from them
to beare.

II.
But first, here falleth fittest to unfold
Her antique race and lineage ancient,
As I have found it registred of old
In Faery Laud mongst records permanent.

1. 9. ——— to beare.] See F. Q. III. iii. 45. I think *beare*, in both places, is used for *gain*, *win*. See st. 4. CHURCH.

She was, to weet, a daughter by descent
Of those old Titans that did whylome strive
With Saturnes sonne for heavens regiment;
Whom though high Love of kingdome did deprive,
Yet many of their stemme long after did survive:

III.
And many of them afterwards obtain'd
Great power of Love, and high authority:
As Hecatè, in whose almighty hand
He plac't all rule and principality,
To be by her disposed diversly
To gods and men, as she them list divide;
And drad Bellona, that doth sound on hie
Warres and allarums unto nations wide,
That makes both heaven and earth to tremble at
her pride.

IV.
So likewise did this Titanesse aspire
Rule and dominion to herself to gaine;
That as a goddesse men might her admire,
And heavenly honours yield, as to them twaine:
And first, on earth she sought it to obtaine;
Where she such prooffe and sad examples shewed

Of her great power, to many ones great paine,
That not men onely (whom she soone subdued)
But eke all other creatures her bad dooings rewed.

v.

For she the face of earthly things so changed,
That all which Nature had establish't burst
In good estate, and in meet order ranged,
She did pervert, and all their statutes burst :
And all the worlds faire frame (which none yet
Of gods or men to alter or misguide) [durst
She alter'd quite ; and made them all accurst
That God had blest, and did at first provide
In that still happy state for ever to abide.

vi.

Ne shee the lawes of Nature onely brake,
But eke of Iustice, and of Policie ;
And wrong of right, and bad of good did make,
And death for life exchanged foolishlie :
Since which, all living wights have learn'd to die,
And all this world is woxen daily worse.
O pittious worke of Mutabilitie,
By which we all are subject to that curse,
And death, in stead of life, have sucked from eur
nurse !

vii.

And now, when all the earth she thus had brought
To her bebest and thrall'd to her might,
She gan to cast in her ambitious thought
T' attempt the empire of the heavens hight,
And love himselfe to shoulder from his right.
And first, she past the region of the ayre
And of the fire, whose substance thin and slight
Made no resistance, ne could her contraire,
But ready passage to her pleasure did prepare.

viii.

Thence to the circle of the Moone she clambe,
Where Cynthia raignes in everlasting glory,
To whose bright shining palace straight she came,
All fairely deckt with beavens goodly story ;
Whose silver gates (by which there sate an hory
Old aged Sire, with hower-glasse in hand,
Hight 'Tyne,) she entred, were he liefe or sory ;
Ne staide till she the highest stage had scand,
Where Cynthia did sit, that never still did stand.

ix.

Her sitting on an ivory throne shee found, [white,
Drawne of two steeds, th' one black, the other
Envirend with tenne thousand starres around,
That duly her attended day and night ;
And by her side there ran her Page, that hight
Vesper, whom we the evening-starre intend ;
That with his torche, still twinkling like twyght,
Her lightened all the way where she should wend,
And ioy to weary wandring travailers did lend :

x.

That when the hardy Titanesse beheld
The goodly building of her palace bright,
Made of the heavens substance, and up-hold

vii. 8. — *contraire,*] Fr. *contrarier*, to contrarie, *crosse*, thwart, &c. TODD.

viii. 8. — *stage*] Mr. Upton is of opinion that Spenser wrote *stege*, an old word for *seat*, and generally used for a seat of dignity. TOWN.

Ibid. — *scand,*] *Climbed up to.* Lat. *scandere.* CHURCH.

With thousand crystall pillars of huge hight ;
Shee gan to burne in her ambitious spright,
And t' envie her that in such glorie raigned.
Eftsoones she cast by force and tortious might
Her to displace, and to herselfe t' have gained
The kingdom of the Night, and waters by her
wained.

xi.

Boldly shee bid the goddess dewne descend,
And let herselfe into that ivory throne ;
For she herselfe more worthy thereof wend,
And better able it to guide alone ;
Whether to men whose fall shee did benone,
Or unto gods whose state shee did maligne,
Or to th' infernall powers her need give lone
Of her faire light and bounty most benigne,
Herselfe of all that rule shee deemed most con-
digne.

xii.

But shee that had to her that soveraigne seat
By highest love assign'd, therein to beare
Nights burning lamp, regarded not her threat,
Ne yielded ought for faveur or for feare ; [cheare
But, with sterne countenance and disdainfull
Bending her herved browes, did put her back ;
And, boldly blaming her for coming there,
Bade her attonce from heavens coast to pack,
Or at her perill bide the wrathfull thunders wrack.

xiii.

Yet nathemore the Giantesse ferbare ;
But, boldly preacing on, raught forth her hand
To pluck her downe perforce from off her chaire ;
And, there-with lifting up her golden wand,
Threatened to strike her if shee did with-stand :
Whereat the Starres, which round about her
blazed,
And eke the Meones bright wagon still did stand,
All beeing with so bold attempt amazed,
And on her uncouth habit and sterne loeke still
gazed.

xiv.

Mean while the lower World, which nothing knew
Of all that chanced here, was darkned quite ;
And eke the Heavens, and all the heavenly crew
Of happy wights, now unpurvaide of light,
Were much afraid and wondred at that sight ;
Fearing least Chaos broken had his chaine,
And brought againe on them eternall night ;
But chiefly Mercury, that next doth raigne,
Ran forth in haste unto the King of gods to plaine

xv.

All ran together with a great out-cry
To Loves faire palace fixt in heavens hight ;
And, beating at his gates full earnestly,
Gan call to him aloud with all their might
To know what meant that suddaine lack of light.
The Father of the gods, when this he heard,
Was troubled much at their so strange affright,
Doubting least Typhon were againe uprear'd,
Or other his old foes that once him sorely fear'd.

xvi.

Eftsoones the Senne of Maia forth he sent
Downe to the circle of the Moone, to knowe
The cause of this so strange astonishment,

xi. 3. — *wend,*] For *weced*, thought, CHURCH.

And why shee did her wanted course forslowe ;
 And, if that any were ou earth belowe
 That did with charmes or magick her molest,
 Him to attache, and downe to hell to throwe ;
 But if from heaven it were, then to arrest
 The author, and him bring before his presence prest.

xxvii.

The wing-foot god so fast his plumes did beat,
 That soone he came whereas the Titanesse
 Was striving with faire Cythia for her seat ;
 At whose strange sight and haughty hardnesse
 He wondred much, and feared her no lesse :
 Yet, laying feare aside to doe his charge,
 At last he bade her, with bold stedfastnesse,
 Ceasse to molest the Moone to walke at large,
 Or come before high Love her dooings to discharge.

xxviii.

And therewithall he on her shoulder laid
 His snaky-wreathed mace, whose awfull power
 Doth make both gods and helish fiends afraid :
 Whereat the Titanesse did sternely lower,
 And stoutly answer'd ; That in evill hower
 He from his Love such message to her brought,
 To bid her leave faire Cynthias silver bower ;
 Sith shee his Love and him esteemed nought,
 No more then Cynthias selfe ; but all their king-
 doms sough't.

xxix.

The heavens Herald staid not to reply,
 But past away, his doings to relate
 Unto his Lord ; who now, in th' highest sky,
 Was placed in his principall estate,
 With all the gods about him congregat :
 To whom when Hermes had his message told,
 It did them all exceedingly amate,
 Save Iove ; who, changing nought his count'nance
 bold,
 Did unto them at length these speeches wise unfold ;

xx.

" Harken to me awhile, ye heavenly Powers :
 Ye may remember since th' Earths cursed seed
 Sought to assaile the heavens eternall towers,
 And to us all exceeding feare did breed ;
 But, how we then defeated all their deed,
 Yee all doe knowe, and them destroyed quite ;
 Yet not so quite, but that there did succeed
 An off-spring of their blood, which did alite
 Upon the fruitfull earth, which doth as yet despite.

xxi.

" Of that bad seed is this bold Woman bred,
 That now with bold presumption doth aspire
 To thrust faire Phœbe from her silver bed,
 And eke ourselves from heavens high empire,
 If that her might were match to her desire :
 Wherefore it now behoves us to advise
 What way is best to drive her to retire ;
 Whether by open force, or counsell wise :
 Areed, ye Sonnes of God, as best ye can devise."

xvi. 9. ——— prest.] *Immediately*: here used adverbially. TODD.

xvii. 9. ——— her dooings to discharge.] *To clear her actions from the charge laid against them. Fr. descharger. CHURCH.*

xix. 5. ——— congregat:] *Assembled together.* TODD.

xxii.

So having said, he ceast ; and with his brow
 (His black eye-brow, whose doomefull dreaded
 Is wont to wield the world unto his vow, [beck
 And even the highest powers of heaven to check,)
 Made signe to them in their degrees to speake :
 Who straight gan cast their counsell grave and
 wise.

Meanwhile th' Earths daughter, though she
 nought did reck
 Of Hermes message, yet gan now advise
 What course were best to take in this hot bold
 emprise.

xxiii.

Eftsoones she thus resolv'd ; that whil'st the gods
 (After returne of Hermes embassie)
 Were troubled, and amongst themselves at ods ;
 Before they could new counsels re-allie,
 To set upon them in that extasie, [lend :
 And take what fortune, time, and place would
 So forth she rose, and through the purest sky
 To Ioves high palace straight cast to ascend,
 To prosecute her plot : Good onset boads good
 end.

xxiv.

Shee there arriving boldly in did pass ;
 Where all the gods she found in counsell close,
 All quite unarm'd, as then their manner was.
 At sight of her they suddaine all arose
 In great amaze, ne wist what way to chose :
 But Love, all fearelesse, forc't them to aby ;
 And in his sovaine throne gan straight dispose
 Himselfe, more full of grace and maestie,
 That mote encheare his friends, and foes mote ter-
 rife.

xxv.

That when the haughty Titanesse beheld,
 All were she fraught with pride and impudence,
 Yet with the sight thereof was almost quell'd ;
 And, inly quaking, seem'd as reft of sense
 And voyd of speech in that drad audience ;
 Untill that Love himselfe herselfe bespake :
 " Speake, thou fraile Woman, speake with con-
 fidence ; [make ?
 Whence art thou, and what doost thou here now
 What idle errand hast thou earths mansion to for-
 sake ?"

xxvi.

Shee, halfe confused with his great commaund,
 Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride,
 Him boldly answer'd thus to his demand ;
 " I am a daughter, by the mothers side,
 Of her that is grand-mother magnifice
 Of all the gods, great Earth, great Chaos child :
 But by the fathers, be it not envie,
 I greater am in blood, whereon I build,
 Then all the gods, though wrongfully from heaven
 exil'd.

xxvii.

" For Titan, as ye all acknowledge must,
 Was Saturnes elder brother by birth-right ;
 Both sonnes of Uranus ; but by uniuert

xxiii. 4. ——— re-allie.] *Rallie*, get in order, from *ral-lier*: q. d. *realligare*: So Skinner; agreeable to our poet's spelling. UPTON.

xxiii. 5. ——— extasie.] *Sudden surpris.* CHURCH

xv. 8. ——— make ?] *Devis.* CHURCH.

And guilefull meanes, through Corybantes slight,
The younger thrust the elder from his right :
Since which thou, Ioue, iniuriously hast held
The heavens rule from Titans somes by might ;
And them to hellish dungeons downe hast feld :
Witnesse, ye heavens, the truth of all that I have
told !”

xxviii.

Whil'st she thus spake, the gods that gave good
eare

To her bold words, and marked well her grace,
(Beeing of stature tall as any there
Of all the gods, and beautifull of face
As any of the goddesses in place.)
Stood all astonied ; like a sort of steeres, [race
Mongst whom some beast of strauge and forraigne
Unwares is chaunc't, far straying from his peeres :
So did their ghastly gaze bewray their hidden
feares.

xxx.

Till, having pauz'd awhile, Ioue thus bespake ;
“ Will never mortall thoughts cease to aspire
In this bold sort to heaven claime to make,
And touch celestiall seates with earthly mire ?
I would have thought that bold Proerustes hire,
Or Typhons fall, or proud Ixions paine,
Or great Prometheus tasting of our ire,
Would have suffiz'd the rest for to restraine,
And warn'd all men, by their example, to refraine :

xxx.

“ But now this off-scum of that cursed fry
Dare to renew the like bold enterprize,
And challenge th' heritage of this our skie ;
Whom what should hinder, but that we likewise
Should handle as the rest of her allies,
And thunder-drive to hell !” With that, he
shooke

His nectar-deawed locks, with which the skyes
And all the world beneath for terror quooke,
And eft his burning leuin-brood in hand he tooke.

xxxii.

But when he looked on her lovely face,
In which faire beames of beauty did appeare
That could the greatest wrath soone turne to
grace,

(Such sway doth beauty even in heaven beare,)
He staide his hand ; and, having chang'd his
He thus againe in milder wise began ; [cheare,
“ But ah ! if gods should strive with flesh yfere,
Then shortly should the progeny of man
Be rooted out, if Ioue should doe still what he can !

xxxiii.

“ But thee, faire Titans child, I rather woene,
Through some vaine error, or inducement light,
To see that mortall eyes have never seene ;
Or through ensample of thy sisters might,
Bellona, whose great glory thou doost spight,
Since thou hast seene her dreadfull power belowe,
Mongst wretched men, dismaide with her affright,

To handie crownes, and kingdoms to bestowe :
And sure thy worth no lesse then hers doth seem
to showe.

xxxiiii.

“ But wote thou this, thou hardy Titanesse,
That not the worth of any living wight
May challenge ought in heavens interesse ;
Much lesse the title of old Titans right :
For we by conquest, of our souveraine might,
And by eternall doome of Fates decree,
Have wonne the empire of the heavens bright ;
Which to ourselves we hold, and to whom wee
Shall worthy deeme partakers of our blisse to bee.

xxxv.

“ Then cease thy idle claime, thou foolish gerle ;
And seeke by grace and goodnesse to obtaine
That place, from which by folly Titan fell ;
Thereto thou maist perhaps, if so thou faine
Have Ioue thy gracious Lord and Sovereigne.”
So having said, she thus to him replyde ;
“ Ceasse, Saturues Sonne, to seeke by proffers
Of idle hopes t' allure mee to thy side, [vaine
For to betray my right before I have it tride.

xxxvi.

“ But thee, O Ioue, no equall iudge I deeme
Of my desert, or of my dewful right ;
That in thine owne behalfe maist partiall seeme :
But to the highest him, that is beight
Father of gods and men by equall might,
‘ To weet, the god of Nature, I appeale.’
Therewith Ioue waxed wroth, and in his spright
Did inly grudge, yet did it well conceale ;
And bade Dan Phœbus scribe her appellation seale.

xxxvii.

Eftscoones the time and place appointed were,
Where all, both heavenly powers and earthly
wights,

Before great Natures presence should appeare,
For triall of their titles and best rights :
That was, to weet, upon the highest heights
Of Arlo-hill (who knowes not Arlo-hill ?)
That is the highest head, in all mens sights,
Of my old father Mole, whom shepherds quill
Renowned hath with hymnes fit for a rurall skill.

xxxviii.

And, were it not ill fitting for this file
To sing of hilles and woods mongst warres and
Knights,

I would abate the sternenesse of my stile,
Mongst these sternestounds to mingle soft delights ;
And tell how Arlo, through Dianæ's spights,
(Beeing of old the best and fairest hill
That was in all this Holy-Islands heights,)
Was made the most unpleasaut and most ill :
Meane while, O Clio, lend Calliope thy quill.

xxxiii. 3. — *interesse* ;] For interest, i. e. right or
title to. CHURCH.

xxxiv. 4. — *faine*

Have] That is, desire to have. CHURCH.

xxxv. 9. — *appellation*] *Appeal*. Lat. *appellatio*.
CHURCH.

xxxvi. 7. — *in all mens sights* ;] That is, in the
opinion of all men. CHURCH.

xxxvii. 1. — *this file*] That is, this stile, Lat. *filum*.
CHURCH.

xxvii. 9. — *told*] For *told*. CHURCH.

xxx. 8. — *quooke* ;] *Quaked*, the old preterite of
quake. TODD.

xxx. 9. — *eft*] *Moreover*. CHURCH.

xxxii. 7. — *yfere* ;] In Chaucer and our old poets
we frequently meet with *yfere*, *ifere*, in *for e*, for *together*.
URTON.

xxxviii.

Whylome when Ireland flourished in fame
 Of wealth and goodnesse, far above the rest
 Of all that heare the British Islands name,
 The gods then us'd, for pleasure and for rest,
 Oft to resort thereto, when seem'd them best:
 But none of all therein more pleasure found
 Then Cynthia, that is soveraine Queene profess
 Of woods and Forrests, which therein abound,
 Sprinkled with wholsom waters more then most on
 ground:

xxxix.

But amongst them all, as fittest for her game,
 (Either for chace of beasts with hound or bowe,
 Or for to shroude in shade from Phœbus flame,
 Or bathe in fountaines that doe freshly flowe
 Or from high hilles, or from the dales belowe,)
 She chose this Arlo; where shee did resort
 With all her nymphes eranged on a rowe,
 With whom the woody gods did oft consort;
 For with the nymphes the satyres love to play and
 sport:

xl.

Amongst the which there was a Nymph that light
 Molanna; daughter of old Father Mole,
 And sister unto Mulla faire and bright:
 Unto whose bed false Bregog whylome stole,
 That Shepheard Colin dearely did condole,
 And made her lucklesse loves well knowne to be:
 But this Molanna, were she not so shole,
 Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee:
 Yet, as she is, a fairer flood may no man see.

xli.

For first she springs out of two marble rocks,
 On which a grove of oakes high-mounted growes,
 That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks
 Of some faire bride, brought forth with pompous
 shoves
 Out of her howre, that many flowers strowes:
 So through the flowry dales she tumbling downe
 Through many woods and shady covert flowes,
 That on each side her silver chamell crowne,
 Till to the plaine she come, whose valleyes shee
 doth drowne.

xlii.

In her sweet streames Diana used oft,
 After her sweatie chace and toilesome play,
 To bathe herselfe; and, after, on the soft
 And downy grasse her dainty limbes to lay
 In covert shade, where none behold her may;
 For much she hated sight of living eye:
 Foolish god Faunus, though full many a day
 He saw her clad, yet longed foolishly
 To see her naked amongst her nymphes in privy.

xliii.

No way he found to compass his desire,
 But to corrupt Molanna, this her Maid,
 Her to discover for some secret hire:
 So her with flattering words he first assaid;

xL. 5. *That Shepheard Colin dearely did condole.*] Which story Colin Clout (Spenser himself) did dearely condole in his Poem, entitled *Colin Clouts come home again*. UPTON.

xL. 7. — shole,] *Shallow*. As the epithet is here applied to the River, as being a Person, it means *little of stature*. CHURCH.

And, after, pleasing gifts for her purvaide,
 Queene-apples, and red cherries from the tree,
 With which he her allured and betraid
 To tell what time he might her Lady see
 When she herselfe did bathe, that he might secret
 bee.

xliv.

Thereto hee promist, if she would him pleasure
 With this small boone, to quit her with a better;
 To weet, that whereas shee had out of measure
 Long lov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did set
 her,
 That he would undertake for this to get her
 To be his Love, and of him liked well:
 Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter
 For many moe good turnes then he would tell;
 The least of which this little pleasure should excell.

xlv.

The simple Maid did yield to him anone;
 And eft him placed where he close might view
 That never any saw, save only one,
 Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew,
 Was of his honnds devour'd in hunters hew.
 Tho, as her manner was on sunny day,
 Diana, with her nymphes about her, drew
 To this sweet spring; where, doffing her array,
 She bath'd her lovely limbes, for Iove a likely
 pray.

xlvi.

There Faunus saw that pleased much his eye,
 And made his hart to cackle in his brest,
 That, for great ioy of somewhat he did spy,
 He could him not containe in silent rest;
 But, breaking forth in laughter, loud protest
 His foolish thought: a foolish Faune indeed,
 That couldst not hold thyselfe so hidden blest,
 But wouldest needs thine owne conceit areed!
 Babblers unworthy been of so divine a meed.

xlvii.

The Goddess, all ashamed with that noise,
 In haste forth started from the guilty brooke;
 And, running straight whereas she heard his
 voice,
 Enclos'd the bush about, and there him tooke
 Like darred larke, not daring up to looke
 On her whose sight before so much he sought.
 Thence forth they drew him by the hornes, and
 shooke
 Nigh all to peeces, that they left him nought;
 And then into the open light they forth him brought.

xlviii.

Like as an huswife, that with busie care
 Thinks of her daire to make wondrous gaine,
 Finding whereas some wicked beast unware
 That breakes into her dayr' house, there doth
 draie
 Her creaming pannes, and frustrate all her paine;
 Hath, in some snare or gin set close behind,
 Entrapped him, and caught into her traine,
 Then thinks what punishment were best assign'd,
 And thousand deaths deviseth in her vengefull
 mind:

xLv. 3. — *save only one*;] viz. Actæon. UPTON.

xLvi. 5. *Like darred larke*;] A glass, made use of in catching larks, is called a *daring-glass*. CHURCH.

XLIX.

So did Diana and her maydens all
Use silly Faunus, now within their baile : [call ;
They mocke and scorne him, and him foule mis-
Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the taile,
And by his goatish beard some did him haile :
Yet he (poore soule !) with patience all did beare ;
For nought against their wils might countervaile :
Ne ought he said, whatever he did heare :
But, hanging downe his head, did like a mome
appeare.

L.

At length, when they had flouted him their fill,
They gan to cast what penance him to give.
Some would have gelt him ; but that same would
spill
The wood-gods breed, which must for ever live :
Others would through the river him have drive
And ducked deepe ; but that seem'd penance
light :
But most agreed, and did this sentence give,
Him in deares skin to clad ; and in that plight
To hunt him with their hounds, himselfe save how
hee might.

LI.

But Cynthia's selfe, more angry then the rest,
Thought not enough to punish him in sport,
And of her shame to make a gamesome test ;
But gan examine him in straighter sort,
Which of her nymphes, or other close consort,
Him thither brought, and her to him betraid.
He, much afeard, to her confessed short
That 'twas Molanna which her so bewraid.
Then all attonce their hands upon Molanna laid.

LII.

But him (according as they had decreed)
With a deeres-skin they covered, and then chast
With all their hounds that after him did speed ;
But he, more speedy, from them fled more fast
Then any deere ; so sore him dread aghest.
They after follow'd all with shrill out-cry,
Shouting as they the heavens would have brast ;
That all the woods and dales, where he did flie,
Did ring againe, and loud reecho to the skie.

LIII.

So they him follow'd till they weary were ;
When, back returning to Molann' againe,
They, by commaund'ment of Diana, there
Her whelm'd with stones : Yet Faunus, for her
Of her beloved Fanchin did obtaine, [paine,
That her he would receive unto his bed.
So new her waves passe through a pleasant plaine,
Till with the Fanchin she herselfe doe wed,
And, both combin'd, themselves in one faire river
spred.

LIV.

Nath'lesse Diana, full of indignation,
Thenceforth abandond her delicious brooke ;
In whose sweete streame, before that bad occasion,
So much delight to bathe her limbes she tooke :

XLIX. 2. — now within their baile:] That is, now
within their power. CHURCH.

XLIX. 9. — a mome] A dull stupid blockhead, a
stock a post. HAWKINS.

I. 5. — drive] For driven. CHURCH.

Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke
All those faire forrests about Arlo hid ;
And all that mountaine, which doth overlooke
The richest champian that may else be rid ;
And the faire Shure, in which are thousand sal-
mons bred.

LV.

Them all, and all that she so deare did way,
Thenceforth she left ; and, parting from the place,
Thereon an heavy haplesse curse did lay ;
To weet, that wolves, where she was wout to space,
Shou'd harbour'd be and all those woods deface,
And thieves should rob and spoile that coast
around,
Since which, those woods, and all that goodly chace
Doth to this day with wolves and thieves abound ;
Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers since
have found I

CANTO VII.

Peeling from Iove to Natures bar
Bold Alteration pleades
Large evidence: but Nature soone
Her righteous doome arcads.

L.

Ah ! whither doost thou now, thou greater Muse,
Me from these woods and pleasing forrests bring
And my fraile spirit, that dooth oft refuse
This too high fight unfit for her weake wing,
Lift up aloft, to tell of heavens king
(Thy soveraine Sire) his fortunate successe ;
And victory in bigger noates to sing,
Which he obtain'd against that Titanessee,
That him of heavens empire sought to dispossesse

LII.

Yet, sith I needs must follow thy behest,
Doe thou my weaker wit with skill inspire,
Fit for this turne ; and in my sable brest
Kindle fresh sparks of that immortall fire
Which learned minds inflameth with desire
Of heavenly things : for who, but thou alone
That art yborne of heaven and heavenly Sire,
Can tell things doen in heaven so long ygone,
So farre past memory of man that may be knowne

LIII.

Now, at the time that was before agreed,
The gods assembled all on Arlo Hill ;
As well those that are sprung of heavenly seed,
As those that all the other world doe fill,
And rule both sea and land unto their will :
Onely th' infernall powers might not appeare ;
As well for horror of their count'naunce ill,
As for th' unruly fiends which they did feare ;
Yet Pluto and Proserpina were present there.

LIV.

And thither also came all other creatures,
Whatever life or motion doe retaine,

LIV. 8. — rid ;] *Red, rad*, be spoken of, or declared ;
from the Anglo-Sax. *Rædan*. UPTON.

Lv. 1. — way,] *Esteem*. CHURCH.

Lv. 9. *Which too-too true &c.*] The reduplication of
too signifies *exceedingly*, as I have before observed. TODD.

I. 1. — *thou greater Muse,*] *Cho*. CHURCH.

A A

According to their sundry kinds of features ;
That Arlo scarsly could them all containe ;
So full they filled every hill and plaine :
And had not Natures Sergeant (that is Order)
Them well disposed by his busie paine,
And raunged farre abroad in every border,
They would have caused much confusion and disorder.

Then forth issew'd (great Goddess) great Dame
Nature

With goodly port and gracious maiesty,
Being far greater and more tall of stature
Then any of the gods or powers on hie ;
Yet certes by her face and physnomy,
Whether she man or woman inly were,
That could not any creature well descry ;
For, with a veile that wimpled every where,
Her head and face was hid that mote to more
appear.

That, some doe say, was so by skill dezived,
To hide the terror of her uncouth hew
From mortall eyes that should be sore agrized,
For that her face did like a lion shew,
That eye of wight could not indure to view :
But others tell that it so beautious was,
And round about such beames of splendor threw,
That it the sunne a thousand times did pass,
Ne could be seene but like an image in a glass.

That well may seemen true ; for well I weene
That this same day, when she on Arlo sat,
Her garment was so bright and wondrous sheene,
That my fraile wit cannot devize to what
It to compare, nor finde like stufte to that :
As those three sacred saints, though elsemost wise,
Yet on Mount Thabor quite their wits forgat,
When they their glorious Lord in strange disguise
Transfigur'd sawe ; his garments so did daze their
eyes.

In a fayre plaine upon an equal hill
She placed was in a pavilion ;
Not such as craftsmen by their idle skill
Are wont for princes states to fashion ;
But th' Earth herself, of her owne motion,
Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe
Most dainty trees, that, shooting up anon,
Did seeme to bow their bloosming heads full lowe
For homage unto her, and like a throne did shew.

So hard it is for any living wight
All her array and vestiments to tell,
That old Dan Geoffrey (in whose gentle spright
The pure well-head of poesie did dwell)
In his *Foules parley* durst not with it mell,
But it transferd to Alane, who he thought
Had in his *Plaint of Kindes* describ'd it well :

v. 8. — wimpled] Covered. UPRON.

vi. 9. — like an image in a glass.] That is, by being reflected. CHURCH.

viii. 4. — princes states] The meaning of *states* is *canopies* or *pavilions*, as indeed the second line of the stanza points out. *State* was frequently used by our old poets in this sense. TODD.

Which who will read set forth so as it ought,
Go seek he out that Alane where he may be sought.

And all the earth far underneath her feete
Was dight with flowers, that voluntary grew
Out of the gronnd, and sent forth odours sweet ;
Tenne thousand mores of sundry sent and bew,
That might delight the smell, or please the view,
The which the nymphes from all the brooks there by
Had gathered, they at her foot-stoole threw ;
That richer seem'd then any tapestry,
That princes bowres adorne with painted imagery.

And Mole himselfe, to honour her the more,
Did deck himself in freshest faire attire ;
And his high head, that seemeth alwaies here
With hardned frosts of former winters ire,
He with an oaken girlond now did tire,
As if the love of some new nymph late seene
Had in him kindled youthfull fresh desire,
And made him change his gray attire to greene :
Ah! gentle Mole, such ioyance had thee well
besene.

Was never so great ioyance since the day
That all the gods whylome assembled were
On Hæmus hill in their divine array,
To celebrate the solemne bridall cheare
Twixt Peleus and Dame Thetis pointed there ;
Where Phœbus self, that god of poets hight,
They say, did sing the spousall hymne full cleere,
That all the gods were ravisht with delight
Of his celestial song and musicks wondrous might.

This great Grandmother of all creatures bred,
Great Nature, ever young, yet full of eld ;
Still mooving, yet unmoved from her sted ;
Unseene of any, yet of all beheld ;
Thus sitting in her throne, as I have told,
Before her came Dame Mutabilitie ;
And, being love before her presence feld
With meek obaysance and humilitie,
Thns gan her plaintif plea with words to amplifie :

“ To thee, O greatest Goddess, onely great,
An humble suppliant loe ! I lowely fly,
Seeking for right, which I of thee entreat ;
Who right to all dost deale indifferently,
Dammning all wrong and tortions iniurie,
Which any of thy creatures doe to other
Oppressing them with power unequally,
Sith of them all thou art the equal mother,
And knittest each to each, as brother unto brother:

“ To thee therefore of this same Love I plaine,
And of his fellow gods that faine to be,
That challenge to themselves the whole worlds
Of which the greatest part is due to me, [raign,
And heaven itselfe by heritage in fee :
For heaven and earth I both alike do deeme,

x. 4. — mores] We use the word *mores* in the West of England for *roots* &c. Somner, Anglo-Sax. *mōran*, *actni*, *bacce*, *semina*. UPRON.

xii. 5. — pointed] For *appointed*. CHURCH.

Sith heaven and earth are both alike to thee ;
And gods no more then men thou doest esteeme :
For even the gods to thee, as men to gods, do seeme.

xvi.

“ Then weigh, O soveraigne Goddess, by what right
These gods do claime the worlds whole sovereignty ;
And that is onely dew unto my might
Arrogate to themselves ambitiously :
As for the gods owne principality,
Which Iove usurpes uniuistly, that to be
My heritage, Iove’s selfe cannot deny,
From my great grandsire Titan unto mee
Deri’v’d by dew descent ; as is well known to th’ e.

xvii.

“ Yet manger Iove, and all his gods beside,
I doe possess the worlds most regiment ;
As if ye please it into parts divide,
And every parts inholders to convent,
Shall to your eyes appeare incontinent.
And first, the Earth (great mother of us all)
That only seems unmov’d and permanent,
And unto Mutability not thrall,
Yet is she chang’d in part, and eeke in generall :

xviii.

“ For all that from her springs, and is ybredde,
However fayre it flourish for a time,
Yet see we soone decay ; and, being dead,
To turne again unto their earthly slime :
Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime,
We daily see new creatures to arise,
And of their Winter spring another Prime,
Unlike in forme, and chang’d by strange disguise :
So turne they still about, and change in restlesse wise.

xix.

“ As for her tenants ; that is, man and beasts ;
The beasts we daily see massacred dy
As thralls and vassals unto mens beheasts ;
And men themselves doe change continually,
From youth to eld, from wealth to poverty,
From good to bad, from bad to worst of all :
Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly ; [call]
But eeke their minds (which they immortall
Still change and vary thoughts, as new occasions
fall.

xx.

“ Ne is the Water in more constant case ;
Whether those same on high, or these belowe :
For th’ ocean moveth still from place to place ;
And every river still doth ebbe and flowe ;
Ne any lake, that seems most still and slowe,
Ne poole so small, that can his smoothnesse holde
When any winde doth under heaven blowe ;
With which the clouds are also tost and roll’d,
Now like great hills ; and streight, like sluces, them
unfold.

xxi.

“ So likewise are all watry living wights
Still tost and turned with continuall change,

xvii. 2. *I doe possess the worlds most regiment ;] The chief government of the world. URROS.*

xvii. 4. — inholders] *Inhabitants. TODD.*

Ibid. — convent,] *Summon to appear. CHURCH.*

xvii. 5. — incontinent.] *Immediately. TODD.*

xviii. 5. — mortall crime,] *Mortality. CHURCH.*

Never abiding in their steadfast plights
The fish, still floating, doe at random range,
And never rest, but evermore exchange [carrie :
Their dwelling places, as the streames them
Ne have the watry foules a certaine grange
Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry ;
But flitting still doe flie, and still their places vary.

xxii.

“ Next is the Ayre : which who feesles not by sense
(For of all sense it is the middle meane)
To flit still, and with subtile influence
Of his thin spirit all creatures to maintaine
In state of life ! O weake life ! that does leane
On thing so tickle as th’ unsteady Ayre,
Which every howre is chang’d, and altdred cleane
With every blast that bloweth fowle or faire :
The faire doth it prolong ; the fowle doth it impaire.

xxiii.

“ Therein the changes infinite beholde,
Which to her creatures every minute chaunce ;
Now boyling hot ; streight friezing deadly cold ;
Now faire sun-shine, that makes all skip and
daunce ;
Streight bitter storms, and balefull countenance
That makes them all to shiver and to shake :
Rayne, hayle, and snowe do pay them sad penance,
And dreadful thunder-claps (that make them
quake)
With flames and flashing lights that thousand
changes make.

xxiv.

“ Last is the Fire ; which, though it live for ever,
Ne can be quenched quite ; yet, every day,
We see his parts, so soone as they do sever,
To lose their heat and shortly to decay ;
So makes himself his owne consuming pray :
Ne any living creatures doth he breed ;
But all, that are of others bredd, doth slay ;
And with their death his cruell life dooth feed ;
Nought leaving but their barren ashes without
seede.

xxv.

“ Thus all these I’cwer (the which the ground-
work bee
Of all the world and of all living wights)
To thousand sorts of change we subject see :
Yet are they chang’d by other wondrous slights
Into themselves, and lose their native mights ;
The Fire to Aire, and th’ Ayre to Water sheere,
And Water into Earth ; yet Water fights
With Fire, and Aire with Earth, approaching
Yet all are in one body, and as one appeare. [neere ;

xxvi.

“ So in them all raignes Mutabilitie ;
However these, that gods themselves do call,
Of them doe claime the rule and sovereignty ;
As Vesta, of the fire æthereall ;

xxi. 7. — grange] In the sense of *dwelling-place*. The word *grange* is generally used for a *solitary farmhouse*. Mr. Warton says, that *grange*, strictly and properly speaking, is the farm of a monastery, where the religious deposited their corn ; *grangia*, Lat. from *granum* ; but that in Lincolnshire, and in other northern counties, they call every lone house, or farm which stands solitary, a *grange*. TODD.

Vulcan, of this with us so usuall ;
Ops, of the earth ; and Iuno, of the ayre ;
Neptune, of seas ; and Nymphes, of rivers all :
For all those rivers to me subiect are ;
And all the rest, which they usurp, be all my share.

xxvii.

“ Which to approven true, as I have told,
Vouchsafe, O Goddesse, to thy presence call
The rest which doe the world in being hold ;
As Times and Seasons of the yeare that fall :
Of all the which demand in generall,
Or iudge thyselfe, by verdit of thine eye,
Whether to me they are not subiect all.”
Nature did yeeld thereto ; and by-and-by
Bade Order call them all before her Maiesty.

xxviii.

So forth issew'd the Seasons of the yeare :
First, lusty Spring all dight in leaves of flowres
That freshly budded and new bloosmes did beare,
In which a thousand birds had built their bowres
That sweetly sung to call forth paramours ;
And in his hand a iavelin he did beare,
And on his head (as fit for warlike stoures)
A guilt engraven morion he did weare ;
That as some did him love, so others did him feare.

xxix.

Then came the iolly Sommer, being dight
In a thin silken cassock coloured greene,
That was unlyned all, to be more light :
And on his head a girlond well besene
He wore, from which as he had chauffed been
The sweat did drop ; and in his hand he bore
A bowe and shaftes, as he in forrest greene
Had hunted late the libbard or the bore,
And now would bathe his limbes with labor heated
sore.

xxx.

Then came the Autumne all in yellow clad,
As though he ioyed in his plentious store,
Laden with fruits that made him laugh, full glad
That he had banisht hunger, which to-fore
Had by the belly oft him pinched sore :
Upon his head a wreath, that was enrold
With eares of corne of every sort, he bore ;
And in his hand a sickle he did holde,
To reape the ripened fruits the which the earth had
yold.

xxxI.

Lastly, came Winter clothed all in frize,
Chattering his teeth for cold that did him chill ;
Whil'st on his hoary beard his breath did freese,
And the dull drops, that from his purpled bill
As from a limbeck did adown distill :
In his right hand a tipped staffe he held,
With which his feeble steps he stayed still ;
For he was faint with cold, and weak with eld ;
That scarce his loosed limbes he hable was to weld.

xxxii.

These, marching softly, thus in order went.
And after them the Monthes all riding came :
First, sturdy March, with brows full sternly bent
And armed strongly, rode upon a Ram,
The same which over Hellespontus swam ;

xxxviii. 2. ——— lusty Spring,] That is, beautiful,
lovely Spring. Todd.

xxx. 9. ——— yold,] Yielded. Todd.

Yet in his hand a spade he also hent,
And in a bag all sorts of seeds ysame,
Which on the earth he strowed as he went,
And fild her womb with fruitfull hope of nourish-
ment.

xxxiii.

Next came fresh Aprill, full of lustyhed,
And wanton as a kid whose horne new buds :
Upon a Bull he rode, the same which led
Europa floting through th' Argolick fluds :
His hornes were gilden all with golden studs,
And garnished with garlonds goodly dight
Of all the fairest flowres and freshest buds
Which th' earth brings forth ; and wet he seem'd
in sight
With waves, through which he waded for his Loves
delight.

xxxiv.

Then came faire May, the fayrest Mayd on ground,
Deckt all with dainties of her seasons pryde,
And throwing flowres out of her lap around :
Upon two Brethrens shoulders she did ride,
The Twinnes of Leda ; which on eyther side
Supported her like to their soveraine queene :
Lord ! how all creatures laught when her they
spide,
And leapt and daunc't as they had ravisht beene !
And Cupid selfe about her flutted all in greene.

xxxv.

And after her came iolly Iune, arrayd
All in greene leaves, as he a player were ;
Yet in his time he wrought as well as playd,
That by his plough-yrons moteright well appeare :
Upon a Crab he rode, that him did beare
With crooked crawling steps an uncouth pase,
And backward yode, as bargemen wont to fare
Bending their force contrary to their face ;
Like that ungracious crew which faines demurest
grace.

xxxvi.

Then came hot Iuly boyling like to fire,
That all his garments he bad cast away :
Upon a Lyon raging yet with ire
He boldly rode, and made him to obey :
(It was the beast that whylome did forray
The Nœnæan forrest, till th' Amphytrionide
Him slew, and with his hide did him array :)
Behinde his backe a sithe, and by his side
Under his belt he bore a sickle circling wide.

xxxvii.

The sixt was August, being rich arrayd
In garment all of gold downe to the ground :
Yet rode he not, but led a lovely Mayd
Forth by the lilly hand, the which was cround
With eares of corne, and full her hand was found :
That was the righteous Virgin, which of old
Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made abound ;
But, after Wrong was lov'd and Iustice solde,
She left th' unrighteous world, and was to heaven
extold.

xxxii. 6. ——— hent,] Held, from hend, which is also
used by Spenser. Anglo-Sax. hendan, Lat. prehendere
Todd.

xxxiii. 7. ——— ysame,] i.e. collected together. Upton.

xxxv. 1. ——— iolly Iune,] That is, handsome June
Todd.

xxxvii. 5. ——— and full her hand was found:] That
is, And her hand was found full of eares of corn. Upton.

XXXVIII.

Next him September marched eeke on foote ;
 Yet was he heavy laden with the spoyle
 Of harvests riches, which he made his boot,
 And him enrich with bounty of the soyle :
 In his one hand, as fit for harvests toyle,
 He held a knife-hook ; and in th' other hand
 A Paire of Waights, with which he did assoyle
 Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did stand,
 And equall gave to each as Iustice duly scann'd.

XXXIX.

Then came October full of merry glee ;
 For yet his noule was totty of the must,
 Which he was treading in the wine-fats see,
 And of the ioyous oyle, whose gentle gust
 Made him so frolicke and so full of lust :
 Upon a dreadfull Scorpion he did ride,
 The same which by Dianæs doom unist
 Slew great Orion ; and eeke by his side
 He had his ploughing-share and coulter ready tyde.

XL.

Next was November ; he full grosse and fat
 As fed with lard, and that right well might seeme ;
 For he had been a fattig hogs of late,
 That yet his browes with sweat did reek and steem,
 And yet the season was full sharp and breem ;
 In planting eeke he took no small delight :
 Whereon he rode, not easie was to deeme ;
 For it a dreadfull Centaure was in sight,
 The seed of Saturne and faire Nais, Chiron hight.

XLI.

And after him came next the chill December :
 Yet he, through merry feasting which he made
 And great bonfires, did not the cold remember ;
 His Saviours birth his mind so much did glad :
 Upon a shaggy-bearded Goat he rode,
 The same wherewith Dan Iove in tender yeares,
 They say, was nourisht by th' Iean Mayd ;
 And in his hand a broad deepe bowle he beares,
 Of which he freely drinks an health to all his peeres.

XLII.

Then came old January, wrapped well
 In many needs to keep the cold away ;
 Yet did he quake and quiver like to quell,
 And blowe his nayles to warme them if he may ;
 For they were numb'd with holding all the day
 An hatchet keene, with which he felle wood
 And from the trees did lop the needles spray :
 Upon an huge great Earth-pot Steane he stood,
 From whose wide mouth there flowed forth the
 Romane Flood.

xxxviii. 7. *A Paire of Waights.*] Intending the sign
Libra. Todd.

Ibid. — assoyle] *Determine.* Church.
 xxxix. 2. — noule] *Nodde.* Germ. *not, nal, caput,*
 the crown or top of the head. Hereof *not* in jobbernot or
 gabbernot. Upton.

Ibid. — totty] *Wavering.* Church.
 xxxix. 3. — in the wine fats see.] *See, or sea, is,* by
 a kind of a catachresis, used for the liquor in the vats.
 Upton.

xlh. 3. — like to quell,] Like to die ; or to be starved
 Upton.

xlh. 8. *Upon an huge great Earth-pot Steane he stood,*
From whose wide mouth there flowed forth the
Romane Flood.] Spenser's spelling steane is agreeable to

XLIII.

And lastly came cold February, sitting
 In an old wagon, for he could not ride,
 Drawne of two Fishes for the season fitting,
 Which through the flood before did softly slyde
 And swim away ; yet had he by his side
 His plough and harness fit to till the ground,
 And tooles to prune the trees, before the pride
 Of hasting Prime did make them burgein round.
 So past the Twelve Months forth, and their dew
 places found.

XLIV.

And after these there came the Day and Night,
 Riding together both with equall pase ;
 Th' one ou a palfrey blacke, the other white :
 But Night had covered her uncomely face
 With a blacke veile, and held in hand a mace,
 On top whereof the moon and stars were pight,
 And Sleep and Darknesse round about did trace :
 But Day did beare upon his scepters hight
 The goodly sun encompassed all with beames bright.

XLV.

Then came the Howres, faire daughters of high Iove
 And timely Night ; the which were all endowed
 With wondrous beauty fit to kindle love ;
 But they were virgins all, and love eschewed
 That might forsack the charge to them fore-
 shewed
 By mighty Iove ; who did them porters make
 Of heavens gate (whence all the gods issued)
 Which they did dayly watch, and nightly wake
 By even turnes, ne ever did their charge forsake.

XLVI.

And after all came Life ; and lastly Death :
 Death with most grim and griesly visage scene,
 Yet is he nought but parting of the breath ;
 Ne ought to see, but like a shade to weene,
 Unbodied, unsoul'd, unheard, unscene :
 But Life was like a faire young lusty boy,
 Such as they faine Dan Cupid to have beene,
 Full of delightfull health and lively ioy,
 Deckt all with flowres and wings of gold fit to employ.

XLVII.

When these were past, thus gan the Titanesse ;
 "Lo ! mighty Mother, now he iudge, and say
 Whether in all thy creatures more or lesse
 CHANGE doth not rain and beare the greatest
 sway :
 For who sees not that Time on all doth pray ?
 But times do change and move continually :
 So nothing here long standeth in one stay :
 Wherefore this lower world who can deny
 But to be subiect still to Mutabilitie !"

XLVIII.

Then thus gan Iove ; "Right true it is, that these
 And all things else that under heaven dwell
 Are chaung'd of Time, who doth them all disseise

the Belgic word *steen*, a *steen-pot*. Aquarius is painted
 pouring out from his *steen-pot* or *urn*, a flood, *χθους*
ὕδατος, effusio aquæ, which Spenser calls the *Roman Flood*;
 not to be confounded with the constellation called by various
 names, viz. *ἡ ποταμῶν, Fluvius, Oceanus, Nilus, Eri-*
danus, Padus, &c. Upton.

xlh. 8. — burgein] Fr. *bourgeonner*, to burgeon,
 spring forth, or bud. Upton.

xlviii. 3. — disseise] *Disposse* s. Tonn.

Of being : But who is it (to me tell)
That Time himselfe doth move and still compell
To keepe his course ? Is not that namely Wee
Which poure that vertue from our heavenly cell
That moves them all, and makethem changed be ?
So them We gods doe rule, and in them also Thee."

XLIX.

To whom thus Mutability ; " The things,
Which we see not how they are mov'd and swayd,
Ye may attribute to yourselves as kings,
And say, they by your secret power are made :
But what we see not, who shall us perswade ?
But were they so, as ye them faine to be,
Mov'd by your might, and ordered by your ayde,
Yet what if I can prove, that even Yee
Yourselves are likewise chang'd, and subiect unto
Mee !

L.

" And first, concerning her that is the first,
Even you, faire Cynthia ; whom so much ye make
Ioves dearest darling, she was bred and nurst
On Cynthus hill, whence she her name did take ;
Then is she mortall borne, howso ye crake :
Besides, her face and countenance every day
We changed see and sundry forms partake,
Now horn'd, now round, now bright, now brown
and gray :
So that as *changefull as the moone* men use to say.

LI.

" Next Mercury ; who though he lesse appeare
To change his hew, and alwayes seeme as one,
Yet he his course doth alter every year,
And is of late far out of order gone :
So Venus eeke, that goodly paragone,
Though faire all night, yet is she darke all day :
And Phœbus self, who lightsome is alone,
Yet is he oft eclipsed by the way,
And fills the darkned world with terror and dismay.

LII.

" Now Mars, that valiant man, is changed most ;
For he sometimes so far runs out of square,
That he his way doth seem quite to have lost,
And cleane without his usuall sphere to fare ;
That even these star-gazers stonight are
At sight thereof, and damne their lying bookes :
So likewise grim Sir Saturne oft doth spare
His sterne aspect, and calme his crabbed lookes :
So many turning cranks these have, so many crookes.

LIII.

" But you, Dan Iove, that only constant are,
And king of all the rest, as ye do clame,
Are you not subject eeke to this misfare ?
Then let me aske you this withouten blame ;
Where were ye borne ? Some say in Crete by name,
Others in Thebes, and others otherwhere ;
But, wheresoever they comment the same,
They all consent that ye begotten were
And borne here in this world ; ne other can appeare.

XLVIII. 6. — *namely*] *Particularly.* CHURCH.
L. 5. — *crake* ;] *Boast.* TODD.

LII. 9. — *cranks*] *Cranks*, literally taken, signify the
ducts of the human body. Here, they mean the sudden or
frequent involutions of the planets. T. WARTON.

LIII. 7. — *comment*] *Devise or feign.* Lat. *commen-*
tum. CHURCH.

LIV.

" Then are ye mortall borne, and thrall to Me ;
Unless the kingdome of the sky yee make
Immortall and unchangeable to be :
Besides, that power and vertue, which ye spake,
That ye here worke, doth many changes take,
And your owne natures change : for each of you,
That vertue have or this or that to make,
Is cheekt and changed from his nature trew,
By others opposition or obliquid view.

LV.

" Besides, the sundry motions of your speares,
So sundry waies and fashions as clerkes faine,
Some in short space, and some in longer yeares ;
What is the same but Alteration plaine !
Onely the starrie skie doth still remaine
Yet do the starres and signes therein still move,
And even itself is mov'd, as wizards saile :
But all that moveth doth Mutation love :
Therefore both you and them to Me I subiect prove.

LVI.

" Then since within this wide great Universe
Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare,
But all things tost and turned by transverse ;
What then should let, but I aloft should reare
My trophee, and from all the triumph beare ?
Now iudge then, O thou greatest Goddesses trew,
According as thyselfe doest see and heare,
And unto me addoom that is my dew ;
That is, the Rule of all ; all being rul'd by You."

LVII.

So having ended, silence long ensewed ;
Ne Nature to or fro spake for a space,
But with firme eyes affixt the ground still viewed.
Meane while all creatures, looking in her face,
Expecting th' end of this so doubtfull case,
Did hang in long suspence what would ensue,
To whether side should fall the soveraigne place :
At length she, looking up with chearefull view,
The silence brake, and gave her doome in speeches
few :

LVIII.

" I well consider all that ye have sayd ;
And find that all things stedfastnes doe hate
And changed be ; yet, being rightly wayd,
They are not changed from their first estate ;
But by their change their being doe dilate ;
And, turning to themselves at length againe,
Doe worke their owne perfection so by fate :
Then over them Change doth not rule and raigne ;
But they raigne over Change, and doe their states
maintaine.

LIX.

" Cease therefore, Daughter, further to aspire
And thee content thus to be rul'd by Me :
For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire :
But time shall come that all shall changed bee,
And from thenceforth none no more change shall
see !"
So was the Titaness put downe and whist,

LIV. 9. — *obliquid*] *Oblique.* CHURCH.
LV. 5. — *doth still remaine* ;] Still remains to be
spoken of. CHURCH.

LV. 7. — *saine* ;] *Say.* TODD.

LIX. 6. — *whist* ;] *Silenced.* TODD.

And Iove confirm'd in his imperiall see.
Then was that whole assembly quite dismiss,
And Natures selfe did vanish, whither no man wist.

THE VIIITH CANTO,

UNPERFITE.

I.

WHEN I bethinke me on that speech whyleare
Of Mutability, and well it way ;
Me seemes, that though she all unworthy were
Of the heav'ns rule ; yet, very sooth to say,
In all things else she bears the greatest sway :
Which makes me loath this state of life so tickle,
And love of things so vaine to cast away ;
Whose flowing pride, so fading and so fickle,
Short Time shall soon cut down with his consuming
sickle !

8. ——— *11:50 tickle,] Uncertain. Todd.*

II.

Then gin I thinke on that which Nature sayd,
Of that same time when no more change shall be,
But stedfast rest of all things, firmly stayd
Upon the pillours of Eternity,
That is contrayr to Mutabilitie :
For all that moveth doth in change delight :
But thenceforth all shall rest eternally
With Him that is the God of Sabaoth hight :
O ! that great Sabaoth God, grant me that Sabbaths
sight !

[By what means this unfinished Canto, and the two preceding Cantos, were preserved ; the first editor of them has left no particulars. They are usually termed the Seventh Book of the Poem. The fragment exhibits a very fine specimen of Spenser's sublime invention.

Todd.]

II. 8. ——— *that is the God of Sabaoth hight:]* The meaning is, Who is called the God of Hosts or Armies.
CHURCH.

II. 9. ——— *that Sabbaths sight !] Sabbath signifies rest.* "That Sabbaths sight" is the *rest eternal* spoken of in the seventh line. The poet meant to say—*O! Thou, that art the God of Hosts, grant me the enjoyment of that rest eternal.*
CHURCH.

THE
SHEPHEARDS CALENDER:

CONTAINING

TWELVE AEGLOGUES, PROPORTIONABLE TO THE TWELVE MONETHES.

ENTITLED TO THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS GENTLEMAN, MOST WORTHIE OF ALL TITLES BOTH OF LEARNING
AND CHIVALRY,

MAISTER PHILIP SIDNEY.

TO HIS BOOKE.

Goe, little Booke! thy selfe present,
As childe whose parent is unkent,
To him that is the President
Of Noblesse and Chevalree:
And if that Envie harke at thee,
As sure it will, for succour flee
Under the shadow of his wing.
And, asked who thee forth did bring,
A shepheards swaine, say, did thee sing,

All as his straying flocke he fedde:
And, when his Honour has thee redde,
Crave pardon for thy hardy-hedde.
But, if that any aske thy name,
Say, thou wert hase-begot with blame;
Forthy thereof thou takest shame.
And, when thou art past iepardee,
Come tell me what was said of mee,
And I will send more after thee.

IMMERITO.

TO

THE MOST EXCELLENT AND LEARNED, BOTH ORATOR AND POET,

MAISTER GABRIEL HARVEY,

HIS VERIE SPECIALL AND SINGULAR GOOD FRIEND E. K. COMMENDETH THE GOOD LYKING OF THIS HIS GOOD LABOUR,
AND THE PATRONAGE OF THE NEW POET.

UNCOUTH, unkist, said the old famous poet Chaucer: whom for his excellencie and wonderfull skill in making, his scholler Lidgate, a worthie scholler of so excellent a master, calleth the loadstarre of our language: and whom our Colin Clout in his Eglogue calleth Tityrus the god of shepheards, comparing him to the worthinesse of the Roman Tityrus, Virgil. Which proverb, mine owne good friend M. Harvey, as in that good old poet it served well Pandares purpose for the bolstering of his * bawdie brocage, so very well taketh place in this our new Poet, who for that hee is uncouth (as sayde Chaucer) is unkist, and unknowne to most men, is regarded but of a fewe. But I doubt not, so soone as his name shall come into the knowledge of men, and his woorthinesse bee sounded in the trumpe of Fame, but that hee shall bee not onely kist, but also beloved of all, imbraced of the most, and wondred at of the best. No lesse, I thinke, deserveth his wittnesse in devising, his pithinesse in uttering, his complaints of love so lovely, his discourses of pleasure so pleasantly, his pastoral rudenes, his morall wisenesse, his due observing of Decorum everie where, in personages, in seasons, in matter, in spech; and generallie, in

* *bawdie brocage,*] *Brocage* here signifies *pimping*. Todd.

all seemly simplicitie of handling his matters, and framing his wordes: the which of many things which in him be straunge, I know will seeme the strangest, and wordes themselves being so auncient, the knitting of them so short and intricate, and the whole period and compasse of speech so delightsom for the roundnesse, and so grave for the strangenesse. And first of the wordes to speake, I graunt they bee something hard, and of most men unused, yet both English, and also used of most excellent authours, and most famous poets. In whom, when as this our Poet hath bin much travailed and throughly read, how could it be, (as that worthie Oratour sayde) but that walking in the Sunne, althouth for other cause he walked, yet needes he mought be sunburnt; and, having the sound of those auncient poets still ringing in his eares, he mought needes, in singing, hit out some of their tunes. But whether he useth them by such casualtie and custome, or of set purpose and choise, as thinking them fittest for such rustical rudenesse of shepheards, either for that their rough sound would make his rimes more ragged and rustical; or else because such old and obsolete wordes are most used of Country folke, sure I thinke, and thinke I think not amisse, that they bring great grace, and, as one would say, authoritie to the verse. For albe, amongst many other faults, it specially be obiected of Valla against Livie, and of other against Salust, that with over much studie they affect antiquitie, as covering thereby credence and honour of elder yeares; yet I am of opinion, and eke the best learned are of the like, that those auncient solemne wordes, are a great ornament, both in the one, and in the other: the one labouring to set forth in his worke an eternall image of antiquitie, and the other carefully discoursing matters of gravity and importance. For, if my memorie faile not, Tully in that booke, wherein he endevoureth to set forth the patterne of a perfect Orator, saith that oftentimes an ancient worde maketh the stile seeme grave, and as it were reverend, no otherwise then we honor and reverence gray haire for a certaine religious regard, which we have of old age. Yet neither every where must old wordes be stuffed in, nor the common Dialect and maner of speaking so corrupted thereby, that, as in olde buildings, it seeme disorderly and ruynous. But all as in most exquisite pictures they use to blaze and portraict not only the daintie lineaments of beautie, but also round about it to shadowe the rude thickets and craggy cliffs, that, by the basenes of such parts, more excellencie may accrew to the principall: for oftentimes we find our selves, I know not how, singularly delighted with the shew of such naturall rudenesse, and take great pleasure in that disorderly order. Even so doo those rough and harsh tearmes enlumine, and make more clearly to appeare, the brightnesse of brave and glorious wordes. So oftentimes a discorde in musike maketh a comely concordance: so great delight tooke the worthie poet Alceus to behold a blemish in the ioynt of a well shaped bodie. But, if any will rashly blame such his purpose in choise of olde and unwonted wordes, him may I more iustly blame and condemne, or of witlesse headnesse in iudging, or of heedles hardnesse in condemning: for, not marking the compasse of his bent, he will iudge of the length of his cast: for in my opinion it is one especial praise of many, which are due to this Poet, that he hath labored to restore, as to their rightfull heritage, such good and naturall English wordes, as have beene long time out of use, and almost cleane disherited. Which is the only cause, that our mother tongue, which truly of itself is both full inough for prose, and stately inough for verse, hath long time been counted most bare and barren of both. Which default when as some endevoured to salve and recure, they patched up the holes with peeces and rags of other languages, borrowing here of the French, there of the Italian, every where of the Latin; not weighing how ill those tongues accord with themselves, but much worse with ours: So now they have made our English tong a gallimaufrey, or hodgepodge of all other speeches. Other some not so well seene in the English tongue, as perhaps in other languages, if they happen to heare an olde word, albeit very naturall and significant, cry out straightway, that we speake no English, but gibberish, or rather such as in olde time Evanders mother spake: whose first shame is, that they are not ashamed, in their own mother tongue, to bee counted strangers and aliens. The second shame no lesse then the first, that what so they understand not, they streightway deeme to be senselesse, and not at all to be understood. Much like to the Mole in Aesops fable, that, being blind herself, would in no wise be perswaded, that any beast could see. The last, more shamefull then both, that of their owne country and naturall speach, which together with their nurses milke they sucked, they have so base regard and bastard iugement, that they wil not only themselves not labor to garnish and beautifie it, but also repine, that of other it should be embellished. Like to the dogge in the maunger, that himselfe can eate no hay, and yet barketh at the hungrie bullock, that so faine would feed: whose currish kinde, though it cannot be kept from barking, yet I come them thanke that they refraine from byting.

Now, for the knitting of sentences, which they call the ioynts and members thereof, and for all the

compasse of the speech, it is round without roughnesse, and learned without hardnesse, such in deede as may be perceyved of the least, understood of the most, but iudged onely of the learned. For what in most English writers useth to be loose, and as it were unright, in this Authour is well grounded, finely framed, and strongly trussed up together. In regarde whereof, I scorne and spew out the rake-helly rout of our ragged rymers (for so themselves use to hunt the letter) which without learning boast, without iudgement iangle, without reason rage and fome, as if some instinct of poetical spirit had newly ravished them above the meannesse of common capacitie. And being, in the midst of all their braverie, suddenly, either for want of matter, or rime ; or having forgotten their former conceit ; they seem to be so pained and travailed in their remembrance, as it were a woman in childbirth, or as that same Pythia, when the traunce came upon her. "*Os rabidum fera corda domans, &c.*"

Netlesse, let them a Gods name feed on their owne folly, so they seeke not to darken the beams of others glorie. As for Colin, under whose person the Authors selfe is shadowed, how farre he is from such vaunted titles and glorious shewes, both himselfe sheweth, where he saith :

And

"Of Muses Hobbin, I conne no skill."

"Enough is me to paint out my unrest, &c."

And also appeareth by the hasenesse of the name, wherein it seemeth he chose rather to unfold great matter of argument covertly then, professing it, not suffice thereto accordingly. Which moved him rather in Æglogues then otherwise to write doubting perhaps his ability, which he little needed, or minding to furnish our tongue with this kinde, wherein it faulteth ; or following the example of the best and most ancient poets, which devised this kinde of writing, being both so base for the matter, and homely for the maner, at the first to trie their habilities ; and as yong birdes, that bee newly crept out of the nest, by little first prove their tender wings, before they make a greater flight. So flew Theocritus, as you may perceyve hee was already full fledged. So flew Virgil, as not yet well feeling his wings. So flew Mantuane, as not being ful somd. So Petrarque. So Boecccace. So Marot, Sanazarus, and also diverse other excellent both Italian and French poets, whose footing this author everie where foloweth : yet so as few, but they be well sented, can trace him out. So finally flieth this our new Poet as a birde whose principals be scarce growne out, but yet as one that in time shall be able to keepe wing with the best. Now, as touching the general drift and purpose of his Æglogues, I mind not to say much, himselfe laboring to conceal it. Only this appeareth, that his unstayed youth had long wandred in the common Labirinth of Love, in which time to mitigate and allay the heate of his passion, or else to warne (as he saith) the yong shepheards, his equals and companions, of his unfortunate folly, hee compiled these twelve Æglogues, which, for that they be proportioned to the state of the twelve Moneths, he tearmeth it the *Shepheards Calender*, applying an olde name to a new work. Hereunto have I added a certaine Glosse, or scholion, for the exposition of olde wordes ; and harder phrases which maner of glossing and commenting, well I wote, will seeme strange and rare in our tongue : yet, for so much as I knewe many excellent and proper devises, both in wordes and matter, would passe in the speedie course of reading either as unknowne, or as not marked ; and that in this kinde, as in other, we might be equal to the learned of other nations ; I thought good to take the paines upon me, the rather for that by meanes of some familiar acquaintance I was made privie to his counsaile and secret meaning in them, as also in sundrie other works of his. Which albeit I know he nothing so much hateth, as to promulgate, yet thus much have I adventured upon his friendship, himselfe being for long time farre estraunged ; hoping that this will the rather occasion him to put forth diverse other excellent works of his, which sleep in silence ; as his *Dreams*, his *Legends*, his *Court of Cupid*, and sundrie others, whose commendation to set out were verie vaine, the things though worthe of many, yet beeing knowne to fewe. These my present paines, if to any they be pleasurable or profitable, be you iudge, mine owne maister Harvey, to whom I have both in respect of your worthines generally, and otherwise upon some particular and speciall considerations, vowed this my labour, and the maidenhead of this our common friends poetrie ; himselfe having already in the beginning dedicated it to the noble and worthe Gentleman, the right worshipfull maister Philip Sidney, a speciall favourer and maintainer of all kinde of learning. Whose cause, I pray you, sir, if envie shall stirre up any wrongfull accusation, defend with your mightie rhetoricke and other your rath gifts of learning, as you can, and shield with your good will, as you ought, against the malice and outrage of so many enemies, as I know will bee set on fire with the sparkes of his kindled glorie. And thus recommending the Authour unto you, as unto his most speciall good friend, and my selfe unto you both, as one making singular account

of two so very good and so choise friends, I bid you both most hartly fare well, and commit you and your commendable studies to the tuition of the Greatest. Your owne assuredly to be commaunded,

E. K.

Post scr.

Now I trust, M. Harvey, that upon sight of your special friends and fellow poets doings, or else for envie of so many unworthy Quidams, which catch at the garland which to you alone is due, you will be perswaded to plucke out of the hatefull darknes those so many excellent English poems of yours which lie hid, and bring them forth to eternal light. Trust me, you do both them great wrong, in depriving them of the desired sun; and also your selfe, in smothering your deserved praises; and all men generally, in withholding from them so divine pleasures, which they might conceive of your gallant English verses, as they have already done of your Latin poems, which, in my opinion, both for invention and elocution are verie delicate and super-excellent. And thus againe I take my leave of my good M. Harvey. From my lodging at Lew'n on this tenth of April, 1579.

THE

GENERALL ARGUMENT OF THE WHOLE BOOKE.

LITTLE, I hope, needeth me at large to discourse the first original of Aeglogues, having already touched the same. But, for the worde Aeglogues I know is unknown to most, and also mistaken of some of the best learned, (as they thinke,) I will say somewhat thereof, being not at all impertinent to my present purpose.

They were first of the Greekes, the inventours of them, called * *Aeglogai*, as it were *Aegon*, or *Aeginomon logi*, that is, Gotheheards tales. For although in Virgil and others the speakers be more Shepheards then Gotheards, yet Theocritus, in whom is more ground of authoritie then in Virgil, This specially from That deriving, as from the first heade and wellspring, the whole invention of these Aeglogues, maketh Goateheards the perasons and authors of his tales. This being, who seeth not the grossnesse of such as by colour of learning would make us beleve, that they are more rightly termed *Eclogai*, as they would say, extraordinarie discourses of unnecessary matter: which definition albe in substance and meaning it agree with the nature of the thing, yet no whit answereth with the analysis and interpretation of the worde. For they be not termed *Eclogues*, but *Aeglogues*; which sentence this Authour verie well observing, upon good judgement, though indeede fewe Gotheards have to doe herein, nevertheless doubteth not to call them by the used and best known name. Other curious discourses hereof I reserve to greater occasion.

These twelve Aeglogues, every where answering to the seasons of the twelve Moneths, may be well divided into three formes or ranke. For either they be Plaintive, as the first, the sixth, the eleventh, and the twelfth; or Re-creative, such as all those be, which containe matter of love, or commendation of special personages; or Morall, which for the most part be mixed with some Satyricall bitterness; namely, the second, of reverence due to olde age; the fifth, of coloured deceyte; the seventh and ninth, of dissolute Shepheards and Pastors; the tenth, of contempt of Poetrie and pleasant Wittes. And to this division may everie thing herein be reasonably applied; a few onelis except, whose speciall purpose and meaning I am not privie to. And thus much generally of these twelve Aeglogues. Now will we speake particularlie of all, and first of the first, which hee calleth by the first Monethes name, Ianuarie: wherein to some hee may seeme foully to have faulted, in that he erroneously beginneth with that Moneth, which beginneth not the yeare. For it is well knowne, and stoultie maintained with strong reasons of the learned, that the yeare beginneth in Mareh; for then the sunne renneth his finished course, and the seasonable spring refresheth the earth, and the pleasure thereof, being buried in the sadnesse of the dead winter now worne away, reliveth.

This opinion maintaine the olde Astrologers and Philosophers, namely, the reverend Andalo, and Macrobius in his holy dayes of Saturne; which account also was generally observed both of Grecians and Romans. But, saving the leave of such learned heades, wee maintaine a custome of counting the seasons from the Moneth Ianuarie upon a more speciall cause then the heathen Philosophers ever could conceive, that is, for the Incarnation of our mightie Saviour, and eternal Redeemer the Lorde Christ, who as then renewing the state of the decayed worlde, and returning the compass of expyred yeares to their former date and first commencement, left to us his Heyres a memoriall of his byrth in the end of the last yeare and beginning of the next. Which reckoning, besida that eternal Monument of our saluation, leaeneth also upon good proofe of speciall judgement.

For albeit that in elder tymes, when as yet the count of the yeare was not perfected, as afterward it was by Iulius Caesar, they began to tell the Monethes from Marches beginning, and according to the same God (as is sayde in Scripture) commaunded the people of the Iewes, to count the Moneth *Abib*, that which wee call March, for the first Moneth, in remembrance that in that Moneth hee brought them out of the lande of Aegypt: yet, according to tradition of latter times it hath been otherwise observed, both in government of the Church and rule of mightiest realmes. For from Iulius Caesar who first observed the leape yeare, which hee called *Bissextilem Annum*, and brought into a more certaine course the olde wandring dayea which of the Greekes were called *Hyperbainontes*, of the Romans *Intercalares*, (for in such matter of learning I am forced to use the termes of the learned,) the Moneths have bene numbred twelve, which in the first ordinance of Romulus were but ten, counting but 304 dayes in everie yeare, and beginning with Mareh. But Numa Pompilius, who was the father of al the Romane Ceremonies and Religion, seeing that reckoning to agree neither with the course of the Sunne nor the Moone, thereunto added two Moneths, Ianuarie and Februarie: wherein it seemeth, that wise king minded upon good reason to begin the yeare at Ianuarie, of him therefore so called *lanquam Ianua anni*, the gate and enteraunce of the yeare; or of the name of the god *Ianus*, to which god for that the olde

* *Aeglogai*, as it were *Aegon*, or *Aeginomon logi*, that is, *Goteheards tales*, &c.] A mistaken etymology; and derived from Petrarch. T. Warton.

Paynims attributed the birth and beginning of all creatures new comming into the world, it seemeth that he *therefore* to him assigned the beginning and first entrance of the year. Which account for the most part hath hitherto continued: Notwithstanding that the Egyptians beginne their year at September; for that, according to the opinion of the best Rabbines and verie purpose of the Scripture it selfe, God made the worlde in that Moneth, that is called of them *Tisri*. And therefore he commanded them to keepe the feast of Pavilions in the ende of the year, in the xv. day of the seventh Moneth, which before that time was the first.

But our Authour respecting neither the subtiltie of the one part, nor the antiquitie of the other, thinketh it fittest, according to the simplicitie of common understanding, to begin with Ianuarie; weening it perhaps no *decorum* that Shepheards should be scene in matter of so deep insight, or canvass a case of so doubtful iudgement. So therefore beginneth he, and so continueth he throughtout.

JANUARIE.

AEGLOGA PRIMA.

ARGUMENT.—In this first Aeglogue Colin Clout, a Shepheards Boy, complaineth himselfe of his unfortunate love, being hut newly (as seemeth) enamoured of a Country Lasse called Rosalinde: with which strong affection being veris sore travelled, he compareth his careful case to the sad season of the year, to the frostie ground, to the frozen trees, and to his owne winterbeaten floeke. And lastly, finding himselfe robbed of all former pleasance and delight, he breaketh his Pipe in peeces, and casteth himselfe to the ground.

COLIN CLOUT.*

A SHEPHERDS Boy, (no better doe him call,
When winters wastful spight was almost spent,
All in a sunneshe day, as did befall,
Led forth his floek, that had bene long ypent :
So faint they woxe, and feeble in the folde, ⁵
That now unnetthes their feete could them uphold.

All as the sheepe, such was the shepheards looke,
For pale and waune he was, (alas the while !)
May seeme he lovd, or else some care hee tooke ;
Well couth hee tune his pipe and frame his stile : ¹⁰
Tho to a hill his fainting floeke hee ledde,
And thus him playnde, the while his sheepe
there fedde :

" Yee gods of love ! that pitie lovers paine,
(If any gods the paine of lovers pitie,)
Looke from above, where you in ioyes remaine, ¹⁵
And bow your eares unto my dolefull dittie.
And, Pan ! thou shepheards god, that once didst
love,
Pitie the paines that thou thy selfe didst prove.

" Thou barraine ground, whom winters wrath hath
wasted,
Art made a mirror to behold my plight : ²⁰
Whilome thy fresh spring flourd, and after hasted
Thy sommer prowde, with diffadillies dight ;
And now is come thy winters stormie state,
Thy mantle mard wherein thou maskedst late.

" Such rage as winters raineth in my hart, ²⁵
My life-bloud freesing with unkindly cold ;
Such stormie stoures do breede my balefull smart,
As if my yeare were wast and woxen old ;
And yet, alas ! but now my spring begonne,
And yet, alas ! it is already donne. ³⁰

* Colin Clout is Spenser himself. T. WARTON.

Ver. 9. *May seeme he lovd,*] The impersonal *seem* was often used without *it*. T. WARTON.Ver. 11. *Tho] Tho is then.* And is constantly so used by Spenser. TODD.

" You naked trees, whose shadie leaves are lost,
Wherein the birds were wont to build their bowre,
And now are clothd with mosse and hoarie frost,
In steede of blosomes, wherewith your buds did
floure ;
I see your teares that from your boughes do
raine, ³⁵
Whose drops in drerie ysicles remaine.

" All so my lustfull leafe is drie and sere,
My timely buds with wayling all are wasted ;
The blossome which my braunch of youth did beare,
With breathed sighes is blowne away and
blasted ; ⁴⁰
And from mine eyes the drizzling teares descend,
As on your boughes the ysicles depend.

" Thou feeble Flocke ! whose fleece is rough and
rent,
Whose knees are weake through fast and cvill fare,
Maist witnesse well, by thy ill government, ⁴⁵
Thy maisters mind is overcome with care :
Thou weake, I wanne ; thou leane, I quite forlorne:
With mourning pyne I ; you with pynning mourne.

" A thousand sithes I curse that careful houre
Wherein I longd the neighbour towne to see, ⁵⁰
And eke teune thousand sithes I blesse the stoure
Wherein I sawe so faire a sight as shee :
Yet all for naught : such sight hath bred my bane.
Ah, God ! that love should breed both ioy and
paine !

" It is not Hobbinol wherefore I plaine, ⁵⁵
Albee my love hee seeke with dayly suit ;
His clownish gifts and curtsies I disdaine,
His kiddes, his cracknelles, and his early fruit.
Ah, foolish Hobbinol ! thy giftes bene vaine ;
Colin them gives to Rosalind againe. ⁶⁰

Ver. 55. — Hobbinol] *Hobbinol* is our author's friend, Gabriel Harvey; who is often introduced, under the same fictitious name, in these Pastorals. T. WARTON.Ver. 60. — Rosalind] *Rosalind* is our poet's mistress,

"I love thilke Lasse, (alas! why doe I love?)
 And am forlorne, (alas! why am I lorne?)
 She deignes not my good will, but doth reprove,
 And of my rurall musick holdeth scorn.
 Shepherds devise she hateth as the snake, ⁶⁵
 And laughes the songs that Colin Clout doth
 make.

"Wherefore, my Pype, albee rude Pan thou please,
 Yet for thou pleasest not where most I would;
 And thou, unluckie Muse, that wontst to ease
 My musing minde, yet canst not when thou should;⁷⁰
 Both Pype and Muse shall sore the while aby.—
 So broke his oaten pype, and down did lye.

By that, the welked Phebus gan availe
 His wearie waine; and now the frostie Night
 Her mantle black through heaven gan overhaile; ⁷⁵
 Which seeme, the pensive Boy, halfe in despight,
 Arose, and homeward drove his sunned sheepe,
 Whose hanging heades did seeme his careful
 case to weepe. ⁷⁸

COLINS EMBLEME.

Anchora speme.

GLOSSE.

Colin Clout, is a name not greatly used, and yet have I seen a poesie of M. Skeltons under that title. But in deede the worde Colin is French, and used of the French poet Marot (if hee bee wortheie of the name of a poet) in a certaine Aeglogue. Under which name this Poet secretly shadeweth himselfe, as sometime did Virgil under the name of Tityrus, thinking it much fitter then such Latin names, for the great unlikelihood of the language.

Unnethes, scarcely.

Couth, commeth of the verbe *Conne*, that is, to know, or to have skil. As well interpreteth the same, the worthy Sir Tho. Smith, in his booke of government: whereof I have a perfect copie in writing, lent mee by his kinsman, and my very singular good friend, M. Gabriel Harvey; as also of some other his grave and excellent writings.

Sith, time.

Neighbour towne, the next towne: expressing the Latin *Vicinia*.

Stoure, a fit.

Sere, withered.

His clownish gifts, imitateth Virgil's verse:

"Rusticus es Corydon, nec munera curat Alexia."

Hobbinoll, is a fained country name, whereby, it being so common and usuall, seemeth to be hidden the person of some his very speciall and most familiar friend, whom he intirely and extraordinarily beloved, as peradventure shall be more largely declared hereafter. In this place seemeth to be some favor of disorderly love, which the learned call *Pæderastice*: but it is gathered beside his meaning. For who hath read Plato his Dialogue called *Alcibiades*; Xenophon, and Maximus Tyrius, of Socrates opinions; may easily perceive, that such love is to be allowed and liked of, specially so ment, as Socrates used it; who saith, that indeede he loved Alcibiades extremely, yet not Alcibiades person, but his soule, which is Alcibiades owne self. And so is *Pæderastice* much to be preferred before *Gynæastice*, that is, the love which inflameth men with lust toward womankind. But yet let no man thinke, that herein I stand with Lucian, or his divelish disciple Unico Aretino, in defence of execrable and horrible sinnes of forbidden and unlawfull fleshinesse. Whose abhominable error is fully confuted of Perionius, and others.

I love, a pretie Eponorthosis in these two verses, and withal a paronomasia or playing with the word, where he saith *I love thilke lasse alas, &c.*

Rosalinde, is also a fained name, which, being well ordered, will hewray the verie name of his love and mistresse, whom by that name he coloureth. So as Ovid shadeweth his love under the name of Corynna, which of some is supposed to be Iulia, the Emperor Augustus his daughter, and wife to Agrippa. So doth Aruntius Stella every where call his Ladie, Asteris and Ianthes, albeit it is well knowne that her right name was Violantilla: as witnesseth Statius in his *Epithalamium*. And so the famous paragon of Italy, Madonna Cælia, in her letters envelopeth her self under the name of Zaira, and Petrona under the name of Bellochia. And this generally hath bene a common custome of counterfeiting the names of secrete personages.

Avail, bring downe.

Overhaile, draw over.

EMBLEME.

His Embleme or Poësie is here under added in Italian, *Anchora speme*, the meaning whereof is, that notwithstanding his extreame passion and luckelesse love, yet, leaning on hope, he is somewhat recomforted.

FEBRUARIE.

AEGLOGA SECUNDA.

ARGUMENT.—This Aeglogue is rather morall and general then bent to anie secret or particular purpose. It speciallie containeth a discourse of olde age, in the person of Thenot, an old shepheard, who, for his crookednesse and unlustinesse, is scorned of Cuddie, an unhappie heardmans boy. The matter verie well accordeth with the season of the moneth, the yeare now drooping, and as it were drawing to his last age. For as in this time of yeare, so then in our bodies, there is a drie and withering cold, which congealeth the crudled blood, and frieath the weatherbeaten flesh, with stormes of Fortune and heare frosts of Care. To which purpose the olde man telleth a tale of the Oake and the Brier, so livelie, and so feelingie, as, if the thing were set forth in some picture before our eyes, more plainlie could not appeare.

CUDDIE, THENOT.

Cud. AH for pittie! will rancke winters rage
 These bitter blastes never gin t' asswage?

whom he is supposed to have fallen in love with, soon after his departure from the University; and whose cruelty is frequently lamented in the course of these Pastorals.
 T. WARTON.

The kene cold blowes through my beaten hide,
 All as I were through the body gride:
 My ragged rontes all shiver and shake,
 As doen high towers in an earthquake:

Ver. 4. — gride:] Spenser frequently uses *gride*, which signifies to pierce. T. WARTON.

They woot in the winde wagge their wriggle tayles
Perke as a peacocke ; but now it availles.

The. Lewdly complainest, thou laesie ladde,
Of winters wracke for making thee sadde. 10
Must not the worlde wend in his common course,
From good to bad, and from bad to worse,
From worse unto that is worst of all,
And then returne to his former fall ?
Who will not suffer the stormie time,
Where will he live till the lustie prime ?
Selfe have I worne out thrise thirtie yeres,
Some in much ioy, many in many teares,
Yet never complained of cold nor heate,
Of sommers flame, nor of winters threate, 20
Ne ever was to Fortune focman,
But gently tooke that ungently care ;
And ever my flocke was my chiefe care ;
Winter or sommer they might well fare.

Cud. No marveile, Thenot, if thou can beare 25
Cherefully the winters wrathfull cheare ;
For age and winter accord full nie,
This chill, that cold ; this crooked, that wrye ;
And as the lowring wether lookes downe,
So seemest thou like Good Friday to frowne : 30
But my flouring youth is foe to frost,
My shippe unwont in stormes to be tost.

The. The soveraigne of seas he blames in vaine,
That, once sea-beate, will to sea againe :
So loytring live you little heardgroomes,
Keeping your beastes in the budded broomes ; 35
And, when the shining sunne laugheth once,
You deemen, the spring is come attonce ;
Tho ginne you, fond Flies ! the cold to scorne,
And, crowing in pypes made of greene corne,
You thinke to be lords of the yere ;
But eft, when ye count you freed from feare,
Comes the breme Winter with chamfred browes,
Full of wrinckles and frosty furrowes,
Drerily shooting his stormie darte, 45
Which cruddles the blond and pricks the harte :
Then is your carelesse courage accoyed,
Your carefull heards with cold bene amoyed :
Then pay you the price of your surquedrie,
With weeping, and wailing, and miserie. 50

Cud. Ah ! foolish old man ! I scorne thy skill,
That wouldst me my springing youth to spill :
I deeme thy braine emperished bee
Through rustie elde, that hath rotted thee ;
Or sicker thy head verie tottie is, 55
So on thy corbe shoulder it leanes amisse.
Now thy selfe hath lost both lopp and topp,
Als my budding branch thou wouldst cropp ;
But were thy yeres greene, as now bene mine,
To other delights they would encline :
Tho wouldst thou learne to caroll of love,
And hery with hymnes thy lasses glove ;
Tho wouldst thou pype of Phillis prais ;
But Phillis is mine for many dayes ;
I wonne her with a girdle of gelt, 60
Embost with buegle about the belt :

Ver. 8. Perke] *Pert, or brisk.* TODD.

Ibid. — availles.] *Drops or lovers.* T. WARTON.

Ver. 9. Lewdly] *Foolishly.* TODD.

Ver. 30. *So seemest thou like Good Friday to frowne ;*
This I presume is a proverbial expression. *Good-Friday*
is said to frown, as being a *fast-day*. Thus a *Lenten face*
is used to denominate sourness and severity of aspect.
T. WARTON.

Ver. 65. *I wonne her with a girdle of gelt.]* With a
golden or gilded girdle. T. WARTON.

Such an one shepherds would make full faine ;
Such an one would make thee young againe.

The. Thou art a fon, of thy love to boste ;
All that is lent to love will be loste. 70

Cud. Seest how brag yond bullocke beares,
So smirke, so smoothe, his pricked eares ?
His hornes bene as broode as rainebow bent,
His dewlap as lythe as lasse of Kent :
See how he venteth into the winde ;
Weenest of love is not his minde ? 75
Seemeth thy flocke thy counsell can,
So lustlesse bene they, so weake, so wan ;
Clothed with cold, and hoarie with frost,
Thy flockes father his courage hath lost. 80
Thy ewes, that woot to have blowne bags,
Lik waillefull widowes hangen their crags ;
Thy cather lames bene starved with cold,
All for their maister is lustlesse and old.

The. Cuddie, I wote thou kenst little good, 85
So vainely to advance thy headesse hood ;
For yongth is a bubble blowne up with breath,
Whose witte is weakenesse, whose wage is death,
Whose way is wilderness, whose ynnce penaunce,
And stoope gallant Age, the hoast of Greevaunce. 90
But shall I tell thee a tale of truth,
Which I cond of Tityrus in my youth,
Keeping his sheepe on the hilles of Kent ?

Cud. To nought more, Thenot, my minde is bent 95
Then to heare novells of his devise ;
They bene so well thewed, and so wise,
What ever that good old man bespake.

The. Many meete tales of youth did hee make,
And some of love, and some of chevalrie ;
But none fitter then this to applie. 100
Now listen a while and hearken the end.

"There grewe an aged tree on the greene,
A goodly Oake sometime had it bene,
With armes full strong and largely displayd,
But of their leaves they were disarayde : 105
The bodie bigge, and mightily pight,
Thoroughly rooted, and of wonderous hight ;
Whilome had bene the king of the fieldes,
And mochell mast to the husbando did yielde,
And with his nuts larded many swine ; 110
But now the gray mosse marred his rine ;
His bared boughes were beaten with stormes,
His topp was bald, and wasted with wormes,
His honour decayed, his braunches sere.

Hard by his side grewe a bragging Brere, 115
Which proudly thrust into th' element,
And seemed to threat the firmament :
It was embellisht with blossomes fayre,
And thereto aye wanted to repayre
The shepherds daughters to gather flowres, 120
To painte their girmonds with his colowres ;
And in his small bushes used to shrowde
The sweete nightingale singing so lowde ;

Ver. 84. — lustlesse] *Languid or lifeless.* TODD.

Ver. 86. — *thy headlesse hood ;]* For "thy heedless-
ness." HOOD is a termination denoting estate; as *manhood*,
&c. T. WARTON.

Ver. 89. *Whose way is wilderness, whose ynnce penaunce,*
And stoope gallant Age, the hoast of Greevaunce.]
The meaning of the last verse seems to be this: The tamer
of those gay gallantries is Old Age, the guest or compan-
ion of Misery. T. WARTON.

Ver. 108. *Whilome had bene &c.]* Here is an ellipsis of
a very important word. *It*, (that is, the *Oak*,) should have
been inserted before *had*. T. WARTON.

Ver. 116. — *into th' element.]* The *sky* or *air*. TODD.

Which made this foolish Brere wexe so bold,
That on a time hee east him to scold 125
And snebbe the good Oake, for hee was old.

'Why standst there (quoth he) flon brutish
blocke !

'Nor for fruit nor for shadowe serves thy stocke ;

'Seest how fresh my flowers bene spredde,

'Dyed in lilly white and cremsin redde, 130

'With leaves engrained in lustie green ;

'Colours meete to clothe a mayden queene ?

'Thy waste bignes but combers the ground,

'And dirks the beautie of my blossomes round :

'The mouldie mosse, which thee acloyeth, 135

'My sinamon smell too much annoyeth :

'Wherefore soome I rede thee hence remove,

'Least thou the price of my displeasure prove.'

So spake this bold Brere with great disdain :

Little him answered the Oake againe, 140

But yielded, with shame and grief adawed,

That of a weede he was overcrowed.

It chanced after upon a day,

The husbandman selfe to come that way,

Of custome for to surreve his grounde, 145

And his trees of state in compasse rounde :

Him when the spitefull Brere had espied,

Causelesse complayned, and lowdly cryed

Unto his lord, stirring up sterne strife :

'O my liege Lord ! the god of my life, 150

'Pleaseth you ponder your suppliaunts plaint,

'Caused of wrong and cruell constraint,

'Which I your poore vassall daylie endure ;

'And, but your goodnes the same recure,

'Am like for desperate doole to die, 155

'Through felonous force of mine encmie.'

Greatly agast with this piteous plea,

Him rested the goodman on the lea,

And had the Brere in his plaint proceede. 160

With painted wordes tho gan this proude weede

(As most usen ambitious folke)

His coloured crime with craft to cloke.

'Ah, my Sovereigne ! lord of creatures all,

'Thou placer of plants both humble and tall, 165

'Was not I planted of thine owne hande,

'To bee the prinrose of all thy lande ;

'With flowring blossomes to furnish the prime,

'And scarlet berries in sommer time ?

'Howe falls it then that this faded Oake,

'Whose hodie is sere, whose branches broke, 170

'Whose naked arms stretch unto the fire,

'Unto such tyrannie doth aspire ;

'Hindring with his shade my lovely light,

'And robbing mee of the sweete suines sight ?

'So beate his old boughes my tender side, 175

'That oft the bloude springeth from woundes wide ;

'Untimely my flowres forced to fall,

'That bene the honour of your coronall :

'And oft hee lets his cancker-wormes light

'Upon my branches, to worke me more sight ; 180

'And oft his hoarie locks downe both east,

'Wherewith my fresh flowrets bene defast :

'For this, and many more such outrage,

'Craving your goodlyhead to asswage

'The ranckorous rigour of lus might ; 185

'Nought aske I, but onely to holde my right ;

'Submitting mee to your good sufferance,

'And praying to be garded from grevaunce.'

To this this Oake cast him to replie

Well as hee couth ; but his enemie 190

Had kindled such coles of displeasure,

That the goodman coulde stay his leasure,

But home him hasted with furious heate,

Encreasing his wrath with many a threate :

His harmfull hatchet he hent in hand, 195

(Alas ! that it so readie should stand !)

And to the felde alone hee speedeth,

(Ay litle help to harme there needeth !)

Anger nould let him speake to the tree,

Enaunter his rage mought cooled bee ; 200

But to the roote bent his sturdie stroake,

And made many woundes in the waste Oake.

The axes edge did oft turne againe,

As halfe unwilling to cutte the graine ;

Seemed, the senselesse yron did feare,

Or to wrong holy cld did forbear ; 205

For it had been an auncient tree,

Sacred with many a mysteree,

And often crost with the priestes crewes,

And often hallowed with holy-water dewe : 210

But sike fancies weren foolerie,

And broughten this Oake to this miserie ;

For nought mought they quiten him from decay,

For fiercely the goodman at him did laye,

The blocke oft groned under the blow, 215

And sighed to see his neere overthrow.

In fine, the steale had pierced his pith,

Tho downe to the earth hee fell forthwith.

His wonderous weight made the ground to quake,

Th' earth shronke under him, and seemed to 220

shake :—

There lyeth the Oake, pitied of none !

Now stands the Brere like a lord alone,

Puffed up with pryde and vaine pleasaunce :

But all this glee had no continuance : 225

For eftsoones winter gan to approche ;

The blustering Boreas did encroche,

And beate upon the solitarie Brere ;

For nowe no succour was seene him neere.

Now gan hee repent his pride too late ;

For, naked left and disconsolate, 230

The byting frost nipt his stalke dead,

The watrie wette weighed downe his head,

And heaped snowe burdned him so sore,

That nowe upright hee can stand no more ;

And, being downe, is trod in the durt 235

Of cattell, and bronzed, and sorely hurt.

Such was th' end of this ambitious Brere,

For scorning eild—"

Quid. Now I pray thee, shepheard, tell it not

forth :

Here is a long tale, and litle worth. 240

So long have I listened to thy speche,

That graffed to the ground is my breche ;

My heartblood is well nigh frome I feele,

And my galage growne fast to my heele ;

But litle ease of thy lewde tale I tasted, 245

Hie thee home, Shepheard, the day is nighwasted.

Ver. 189. cast] *Considered.* Todd.

Ver. 195. — he hent in hand,] The word *hent* for *seized, snatched, or took,* is repeatedly used by Chaucer, and is also employed by the Scottish writers. Todd.

Ver. 243. — frome] *Frome* is the passive participle of the verb *freeze.* Todd.

Ver. 244. — galage] It means a *wooden shoe,* from the French *galuche.* T. WARTON.

Ver. 126. *And snebbe &c.] Snebbe is chide or revile.*
T. WARTON.

Ver. 134. — dirks] *Darkens.* Todd.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

Iddio, perche é vecchio,
Fa suoi al suo esemplo.

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Ninno vecchio
Spaventa Iddio.

GLOSSE.

Kene, sharpe.
Gride, pierced: an old word much used of Lidgate, but not found (that I know of) in Chaucer.

Ronts, yong bullocke.
Wracke, ruine or violence, whence cometh shipwracke: and not *veracke*, that is vengeance or wrath.

Poeman, a foe.
Thenot, the name of a Shepheard in Marot his Aeglogues. *The Sovereigne of Seas*, is Neptune the god of the Seas. The saying is borrowed of Mimua Publilianns, which used this proverbe in a verse:

"Improhè Neptunum accusat, qui iterum naufragium facit."

Heardgroomes, Chaucers verse almost whole.
Fond flies, He compareth carelesse sluggardes, or ill husbandmen, to flies that so come as the sunne abineth, or it waxeth any thing warme, begin to fie abroad, when suddenly they be overtaken with cold.

But est when, a very excellent and lively description of Winter, so as may be indifferently taken, either for old age, or for Winter season.

Breme, Chill, bitter.
Chawfred, chapt or wrinkled.
Accoied, plucked downe and daunted.
Surguedrie, pride.
Eld, old age.
Siker, sure.
Tottie, wavering.
Corbe, crooked.
Herie, worship.
Phyllis, the name of some maid unknowne, whom Cuddie, whose person is secret, loved. The name is used in Theocritus, Virgil, and Mantuane.

Belt, a girdle or waste band.
A fen, a foale.
Lythe, soft and gentle.
Venteth, snuffeth in the wind.
Thy flocks father, the ram.
Craggs, necks.
Rather lambs, that be ewed early in the beginning of the yeare.

Youth is, a verie moral and pithie Allegorie of youth, and the lusta thereof, compared to a wearie wayfaring man.
Tityrus, I suppose he meanes Chaucer, whose praise for pleasant tales cannot die, so long as the memorie of his name shall live, and the name of poetrie shall endure.

Well thewed, that is, *Bene morata*, Full of morall wisnesse.

There grew, This tale of the Oake and the Brere, he telleth as learned of Chaucer, but it is cleane in another kind, and rather like to Aesops fables. It is verie excellent for pleasant descriptions, being altogether a certaine Icon or Hypotyposis of disdainfull younkens.

Embellisht, beautified and adorned.
To wonne, to haunt or frequent.
Snebbe, checke.
Why standst, The speach is scornfull and verie presumptuous.

Engrained, dyed in graine.
Accoioeth, accumbreth.
Adawed, daunted and onfounded.

Trees of state, taller trees fit for timber wood.
Sterne strife, said Chaucer, a fell and sturdie.
O my liege, a maner of supplication, wherein is kindly colourd the affection and speech of ambitious men.
Coronall, garland.

Flourrets, yong blossomes.
The Primrose, the chiefe and worthiest.
Naked armes, metaphorically meant of the bare boughs, spoiled of leaves. This colourably he spcaketh, as adindging him to the fire.

The blood, spoken of a blocke, as it were of a living creature, figuratively, and (as they say) *Kal' eikasmon*.

Hoarie lockes, metaphorically for withered leaues.
Hent, caught.

Nould, for would not.
Aye, evermore.

Wounds, gasbes.
Enaunt, least that.

The priests crew, holy water pot, wherwith the popish priest used to sprinkle and hallow the trees from mischance. Such blindnesse was in those times, which this poet supposeth to have bin the final decay of this ancient Oake.

The blocke oft groned, a lively figure, which giveth sense and feeling to unseensible creatures, as Virgil also saith: "Saxa gemunt gravido," &c.

Boreas, The Northern wind, that bringeth the most stormie weather.

Glee, Cheare and iollitie.
For scorning eid, And minding (as should seeme) to have made rime to the former verse, he is cunningly cut off by Cuddie, as disdainng to hear any more.

Galage, A startup or clownish shoe.

EMBLEME.

This Embleme is spoken of Thenot, as a morall of his former tale: namely, that God, which is himself most aged, being before all ages, and without beginning, maketh those, whom he loveth, like to himselfe, in heaping yeares unto their daies, and blessing them with long life. For the blessing of age is not given to all, but unto whom God will so blesse. And albeit that many evill men reach unto such fulnes of yeares, and some also waxe old in miserie and thraldome, yet therefore is not age ever the lesse blessing. For even to such evill men such number of yeares is added, that they may in their last dayes repent, and come to their first home: So the old man checketh the raw-headed boy for despising his gray and frostie haire.

Whom Cuddie doth counterbuffe with a biting and bitter proverbe, spoken indeed at the first in contempt of old-age generally. For it was an old opinion, and yet is continued in some mens conceipt, that men of yeares have no feare of God at all, or not so much as yonger folke. For that being ripened with long experience, and having passed many bitter brunts and blasts of vengeance, they dread no stormes of Fortune, nor wrath of God, nor daunger of men, as being either by long and ripe wisdomed armed against all mischaunces and adversitie, or with much trouble hardned against all troublesome tides: like unto the Ape, of which is said in Aesops fables, that oftentimes meeting the Lion, he was at first sore agast and dismayd at the grimnesse and austeritie of his countenance, but at last, being acquainted with his lookes, he was so farre from fearing him, that he would familiarly gybe and iest with him: Such long experience breedeth in some men securitie. Although it please Erasmus, a great clark, and good old father, more fatherly and favourably, to construe it in his Adages, for his owne behoofe, That by the proverbe, "Nemo senex metuit Iovem," is not meant, that old men have no feare of God at all, but that they bes farre from superstition and idolatrous regard of false gods, as is Iupiter. But his great learning notwithstanding, it is too plaine, to be gaineaied, that old men are much more enclined to such fond fooleries, then yonger heades

MARCH.

AEGLOGA TERTIA.

ARGUMENT.—In this Aeglogue two Shepheards Boyes, taking occasion of the season, beginne to make purpose of love, and other pleasure which to spring-time is most agreeable. The special meaning hereof, is, to give certaine marks and tokens, to know Cupid the poets god of Love. But more particularly, I thinke, in the person of Thomalin, is meant some secret Friend, who scorned Love and his Knights so long, till at length himselfe was entangled, and unawares wounded with the dart of some beautiful regard, which is Cupids arrow.

WILLYE. THOMALIN.

Willye. THOMALIN, why sitten wee soe,
As weren overwent with woe,
Upon so fayre a morow ?
The ioyous time now nighth fast,
That shall allege this bitter blast,
And slake the winter sorow.
Tho. Sicker, Willye, thou warnest well ;
For winters wrath beginnes to quell,
And pleasaunt spring appeareth :
The grasse nowe ginnes to be refresht,
The swallow peepes out of her nest,
And clowdie welkin cleareth.
Wil. Seest not thilke same hawthorne stude,
How bragly it begins to budde,
Aud utter his tender head ?
Flora nowe calleth forth eche flower,
And bids make readie Maiaes bower,
That newe is upryst from bedd :
Tho shall wee sporten in delight,
And learne with Lettice to wexe light,
That scornefully lookes askaunce ;
Tho will wee little Love awake,
That nowe sleepeth in Lethe lake,
And pray him leaden our daunce.
Tho. Willye, I ween thou be assot ;
For lusty Love still sleepeth not,
But is abroad at his game.
Wil. Howe kenst thou, that hee is awoke ?
Or hast thy selfe his slomber broke ?
Or made privie to the same ?
Tho. No ; but happily I him spide,
Where in a bush he did him hide,
With winges of purple and blew ;
And, were not that my sheepe would stray,
The privie markes I would bewray,
Whereby by chaunce I him knew.
Wil. Thomalin, have no care for-thy ;
My selfe will have a double eye,
Ylike to my flocke and thine ;
For, alas ! at home I have a syre,
A stepdame eke, as hote as fyre,
That dewly adayes counts mine.
Tho. Nay, but thy seeing will not serve,
My sheep for that may chaunce to swerve,
And fall into some mischief :
For sithens is but the third morow
That I chaunst to fall asleepe with sorow,

Ver. 2. *As weren &c.*] *We* is omitted before *weren*. T. WARTON.
Ver. 13. — studde,] *Stud* is stock or trunk. T. WARTON.
Ver. 25. — assot:] *Stupefied*. Tonn.

And waked againe with griefe ;
The while thilke same unhappie ewe,
Whose clouted legge her hurt doth shewe,
Fell headloug into a dell.
And there uncoynted both her bones :
Mought her neck bene ioynted attones,
She shoulde have neede no more spell ;
Th' elfe was so wanton and so wood,
(But now I trowe can better good,)
She mought ne gang on the greene.
Wil. Let be, as may be, that is past ;
That is to come, let be forecast :
Now tell us what thou hast seene.
Tho. It was upou a holiday,
When shepheards groomes han leave to play,
I cast to go a shooting ;
Long wandring up and downe the land,
With bow and bolts in either hand,
For birdes in bushes tooting,
At length within the yvie todde,
(There shrowded was the little god,)
I heard a busie bustling ;
I bent my bolt against the bush,
Listuing if anie thing did rush,
But then heard no more rustling.
Tho, peeping close into the thicke,
Might see the moving of some quicke,
Whose shape appeared not ;
But were it faerie, feend, or snake,
My courage eard it to awake,
And manfully thereat shotte :
With that sprang forth a naked wayne,
With spotted winges like peacocks trayne,
And laughing lope to a tree ;
His gylden quiver at his backe,
And silver bowe, which was but slacke,
Which lightly he bent at me :
That seeing, I leveld againe,
And shotte at him with might and maine,
As thicke as it had hayled.
So long I shott, that all was spent ;
Tho pumie stones I hastily hent,
And threw ; but nought awayled :

Ver. 53. *Mought her neck bene ioynted attones, She shoulde have neede no more spell ;*] That is, I wish she had died in the fall. I then should never have had any further occasion of blessing her with a charm. T. WARTON.
Ver. 56. — can] *Knows*. Tonn.
Ver. 65. *With bow and bolts in either hand,*] That is, with bow and arrows. Tonn.
Ver. 66. — tooting.] *Looking about*. Tonn.
Ver. 73. — the thicke,
Might see the moving of some quicke,] *Thicke, thicket. Quicke, living creature*. Tonn.

He was so wimble and so wight,
 From bough to bough he lepped light,
 And off the pumies latched:
 Therewith affrayd I ranne away;
 But he, that earst seemd but to play,
 A shaft in earnest statched,
 And hit me running in the heele:
 For then I little smart did feele,
 But soone it sore increased;
 And now it ranckleth more and more,
 And inwardly it festreth sore,
 Ne wote I how to cease it.
Will. Thomalin, I pitie thy plight,
 Perdie with Love thou diddest fight;
 I know him by a token:
 For once I heard my father say,
 How he him caught upon a day,
 (Whereof he will be wroken,)
 Entangled in a fowling net,
 Which he for carrion crowes had set
 That in our pearce-tree haunted:
 Tho said, he was a winged lad,
 But bowe and shaftes as then noue had,
 Els had he sore been daunted,
 But see, the welkin thicks apace,
 And stouping Phœbus steepes his face;
 Yts time to haste us homeward.

WILLYES EMBLEME.

To be wise and eke to love,
 Is graunted scarce to gods above.

THOMALINS EMBLEME.

Of hony and of gaule in love there is store;
 The hony is much, but the gaule is more.

GLOSSE.

This Aeglogus seemeth somewhat to resemble that same of Theocritus, wherein the boy likewise telling the olde man, that he had shot at a winged boy in a tree, was by him warned to beware of mischief to come.

Overwent, overgone.

Ategge, to lessen or asswage.

To quell, to abate.

Welkin, the skie.

The swallow, which bird useth to be counted the messenger, and as it were the forerunner, of spring.

Flora, the Goddess of flowers, but indeed (as saith Tacitus) a famous harlot, which with the abuse of her bodie having gotten great riches, made the people of Rome her heire: who, in remembrance of so great beneficence, appointed a yearly feast for the memoriall of her, calling her, not as she was, nor as some do thinke, *Andronica*, but *Flora*: making her the Goddess of flowers, and doing yearly to her solemne sacrifice.

Maia's bowe, that is, the pleasant field, or rather the May bushes. *Maia* is a Goddess, and the mother of *Mercurie*, in honor of whom the moneth of May is of her name so called, as saith *Macrobius*.

Lettice, the name of some Country lasse.

Ascaunce, askew, or asquint.

For thy, therefore.

Lethe, is a lake in hell, which the poets call the lake of forgetfulness. For *Lethe* signifieth forgetfulness. Wherein the soules being dipped, did forget the cares of their former life. So that by sleeping in *Lethe* lake, he meant he was almost forgotten, and out of knowledge, by reason of winters hardoesse, when all pleasures, as it were, sleepe and wearo out of mind.

Assotte, to dote.

His slomber, to breack loves slumber, to exerceise the delights of love and wanton pleasures.

Wings of purple, so is he fained of the poets.

For als, he imitateth *Virgils* verse:

"Est mihi namque domi pater, est iniusta novcrea, &c."

A dell, a hole in the ground.

Spell, is a kinde of vers or charme, that in elder times they used often to say over every thing that they would have preserved, a the nightspell for theeves, and the woodspell. And here hence, I thinke, is named the Godspel or word. And so saith *Chaucer*, Listeneth Lordings to my spel.

Gang, go.

An yvie todde, a thicke bush.

Swaine, a boy: For so is he described of the poets, to be a boy, s. always fresh and lustie; hindfolded, because he maketh no difference of personages; with diverse coloured wings, s. full of flying fancies; with bowe and arrow, that is, with glance of beautie, which pricketh as a forked arrow. He is saide also to have shaftes, some leaden, some golden: that is, both pleasure for the gracious and loved, and sorrowe for the lover that is disdaind or forsaken. But who list more at large to behold *Cupids* colours and furniture, let him read either *Propertius*, or *Moseus* his *Idyllion of Wandring Love*, being nowe most excellently translated into Latine, by the singular learned man *Angelus Politianus*; Which worke I have seene amongst other of this Poets doings, verie well translated also into English rimes.

Wimble and wight, quicke and deliver.

In the heele, is very poetically spoken, and not without special judgement. For I remember that in *Homer* it is said of *Thetis*, that she tooke her yong babe *Achilles* being newly borne, and holding him by the hele, dipped him in the river of *Styx*. The vertue whereof is, to defend and keepe the bodies washed therein from any mortall wound. So *Achilles* being washed all over save onely his heele, by which his mother held, was in the rest invulnerable; therefore by *Paris* was fained to bee shotte with a poysoned arrow in the heele, whiles he was busie aboute the marrying of *Polyxena* in the Temple of *Apollo*. Which mystical fable *Eustathius* unfolding, saith: that by wounding the heele, is meant lustfull love. For from the heele (as say the best physicians) to the privie partes there passe certaine veines and slender sinewes, as also the like come from the head, and are caried like little pypes behind the eares; so that (as saith *Hipocrates*) if those veynes there be cut a sunder, the partie straight becometh cold and unfruitfull. Which reason our poet well weighing, maketh this shepherds boy of purpose to be wounded by Love in the heele.

Latched, caught.

Wroken, revenged.

For once: In this tale is set out the simplicity of shepherds opinion of love.

Stouping Phœbus, is a Periphrasis of the sunne setting.

EMBLEME.

Hereby is meant, that all the delights of love, wherein wanton youth walloweth, he but fellie mixt with bitterness, and sorrow sawced with repentance. For besides that the very affection of Love it selfe tormenteth the minde, and vexeth the bodie manie waies, with unrestfulness all night, and wearinesse all day, seeking for that wee cannot have, and finding that wee would not have: even the selfe things which best before us liked, in course of time, and change of riper yeares, which also therewithall chaangeth our wonted liking and former fantasies, will then seeme loathsome, and breed us annoyance, when youths flower is withered, and we find our bodies and wits answere not to such vaine iollitie and lustfull pleasanee.

APRIL.

ÆGLOGA QUARTA.

ARGUMENT.—This Æglogue is purposely intended to the honour and prayse of our most gracious soveraigne, Queene Elizabeth. The speakers hereof hee Hobbinoll and Thenot, two shepherds: the which Hobbinoll, being before mentioned greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth more largely, complaining him of that boyes great misadventure in love; whereby his mind was alienated and withdrawn not onely from him, who most loved him, but also from all former delights and studies, as well in pleasant pyping, as cunning ryming and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby he taketh occasion, for prooffe of his more excellencie and skill in poetrie, to record a song, which the said Colin sometime made in honour of her Maiestie, whom abruptly he termeth Elisa.

THENOT. HOBBINOLL.

Thenot. TELL me, good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greete?

What! hath some wolfe thy tenderlambes ytorne?
Or is thy bagpype broke, that soundes so sweete?
Or art thou of thy loved lasse forlorne?

Or bene thine eyes attempted to the yeare,
Quenching the gasping furrowes thirst with rayne?

Like Aprill showre so stream the trickling teares
Adowne thy cheeke, to quench thy thirstie paine.

Hob. Nor this, nor that, so much doth make me mourne,

But for the ladde, whom long I lovd so deare,
Now loves a lasse that all his love doth scorne:

He, plunged in paine, his tressed locks doth teare;
Shepherds delights he doth them all forswear;

His pleasaunt pipe, which made us merriment,
He wilfully hath broke, and doth forbear.

His wanted songs wherein he all outwent,
The. What is he for a ladde you so lament?

Ys love such pinching paine to them that prove?
And hath he skill to make so excellent,

Yet hath so little skill to bridle love?
Hob. Colin thou kenst, the southerne shepherds boye;

Him Love hath wounded with a deadly darte:
Whilome on him was all my care and ioye,

Forcing with giftes to winne his wanton heart.
But now from me his madding minde is start,

And woos the widdowes daughter of the glenne;
So now fayre Rosalind hath bredde his smart;

So now his friend is chaunged for a frenne.
The. But if his ditties bene so trimly dight,

I pray thee, Hobbinoll, recorde some one,
The whites our flockes do graze about in sight,

And we close shrowded in this shade alone.
Hob. Contented I: then will I sing his laye

Of fair Elisa, queene of shepherds all,
Which once he made as by a spring he laye,

And tuned it unto the waters fall.

“Ye daintie Nymphs, that in this blessed brooke
“Doe bathe your brest,

“Forsake your watrie bowres, and hether looke,
“At my request.

“And eke you Virgins, that on Parnasse dwell,
“Whence floweth Helicon, the learned well,

“Help me to blaze
“Her worthy prayse,

“Which in her sexe doth all excell.

“Of fair Elisa be your silver song,
“That blessed wight,

“The flowre of virgins; may she florish long
“In princely plight!

“For she is Syriux daughter without spotte,
“Which Pan, the shepherdes god, of her hegotte:

“So sprong her grace
“Of heavenly race,

“No mortall hlemishe may her blotte.

“See, where she sits upon the grassie greene,
“ (O seemly sight!)

“Yclad in scarlot, like a mayden queene,
“And ermines white:

“Upon her head a cremosin coronet,
“With damaske roses and daffadillies set;

“Bayleaves betweene,
“And primroses greene,
“Embellish the sweete violet.

“Tell me, have ye seene her angelike face,
“Like Phoebe fayre?

“Her heavenly haveoure, her princely grace,
“Can you well compare?

“The redde rose medled with the white yfere,
“In either cheeke depeincten lively chere:

“Her modest eye,
“Her majestie,

“Where have you seene the like but there?

“I sawe Phoebus thrust out his golden hede,
“Upon her to gaze;

“But, when he saw howe broade her beames did sprede,

“It did him amaze.

“Hee blusht to see another sunne belowe,
“Ne durst againe his frie face out showe.

“Let him, if hee dare,
“His brightnesse compare

“With hers, to have the overthrowe.

“Shewe thyself, Cynthia, with thy silver rays,
“And be not abasht:

“When shee the beames of her beautie dispiayes,
“O how art thou dasht!

“But I will not match her with Latonaes seede;
“Such follie great sorow to Niobe did breede.

“Now shee is a stone,
“And makes daylie mone,

“Warning all other to take heede.

“Pan may bee prowde that ever hee begot
“Such a bellibone;

“And Syrinx reioyce, that ever was her lot
“To beare such an one.

" Soone as my younglinges cryen for the dam, 95
 " To her will I offer a milkewhite lamb :
 " She is my goddesse plaine,
 " And I her shepherdes swain,
 " Albee forswonck and forswatt I am.

" I see Calliope speede her to the place, 100
 " Where my goddesse shines ;
 " And after her the other Muses trace,
 " With their violines.
 " Bene they not bay-branches which they doe beare,
 " All for Elisa in her hand to weare ? 105
 " So sweetlie they play,
 " And sing all the way,
 " That it a heaven is to heare.

" Lo, how finely the Graces can it foote 110
 " To the instrument :
 " They dauncea deffily, and singen soote,
 " In their meriment.
 " Wants not a fourth Grace, to make the daunce
 " Let that rowme to my Lady bee yeven. [even ?
 " She shalbe a Grace, 115
 " To fill the fourth place,
 " And reigne with the rest in heaven.

" And whither rennes this bevie of ladies bright,
 " Ranged in a rowe ?
 " They bene all Ladyes of the Lake behight, 120
 " That unto her goe.
 " Chloris, that is the chiefest nymph of all,
 " Of olive haunches beares a coronall :
 " Olives bene for peace,
 " When warres do surcease : 125
 " Such for a princesse bene principall.

" Ye shepheards daughters, that dwell on the greene,
 " Hye you there apace :
 " Let none come there but that virgins bene,
 " To adorne her grace : 130
 " And, when you come whereas shee is in place,
 " See that your rudenesse doe not you disgrace :
 " Binde your fillets faste,
 " And gird in your waste,
 " For more finenesse, with a tawdrie lace. 135

" Bring hether the pincke and purple cullamine,
 " With gelliflowres ;
 " Bring coronations, and sops in wine,
 " Worne of paramoures :
 " Strowe mee the grounde with daffadowdillies, 140
 " And cowslips, and kingcups, and loved lillies :
 " The pretie pawne,
 " And the chevisaunce,
 " Shall match with the fayre flowre Delice.

" Now rise up, Elisa, decked as thou art 145
 " In royall aray ;
 " And now yee daintie damsells may depart
 " Eche one her way.

Ver. 95. — cryen] For cry : the ancient termination of the verb, and what Mr. Tyrwhitt considers to have been the Teutonick; as in the plural of *love* ; *We loven, ye loven*, &c. TODD.

Ver. 135. — a tawdrie lace.] *Tawdrie lace* is thus described in Skinner by his friend Dr. Henshaw : " TAWDRIE LACE, Astringenta, fimbria, seu fasciola, emata nundinis feno S^{te} Etheldredæ celebratie: *Ut recte monet Doc. T. Henshaw.*" T. WARTON.

" I feare, I have troubled your troupes too long ; 150
 " Let Dame Elisa thanke you for her song :
 " And, if you come hether
 " When damsines I gether,
 " I will part them all you among."

The. And was thilk same song of Colins owne making ?
 Ah ! foolish Boy ! that is with love yblent ; 155
 Great pittie is, hee bee in such taking,
 For naught caren that bene so lewdly bent.
Hob. Sicker I holde him for a greater fon,
 That loves the thing hee cannot purchase.
 But let us homeward, for night draweth on, 160
 And twinkling starres the daylight hence chase.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

O quam te memorem Virgo !

HOBBINOLLS EMBLEME.

O Lea certe !

GLOSSE.

Gars thou greet, causeth thee weep and complaine.
Forlorne, left and forsaken.

Attempted to the yeare, agreeable to the season of the yeere, that is April, which moneth is most bent to showers and seasonable raine : to quench, that is, to delay the drought, caused through drinesse of March winds.

The lae, Colin Clout.

The lasse, Rosalinda.

Tressed locks, withered and curled.

Is he for a lae? a strange maner of speaking, a what maner of lad is he ?

To make, to rime and versifie. For in this word, *making*, our olde English Poets were wont to comprehend all the skill of Poetrie, according to the Greeke word *Poiein*, to make, whence commeth the name of Poets.

Colin thou kenst, knowest. Seemeth hereby that Collin pertaineth to some Southern noble man, and perhaps in Surrey or Kent, the rather because he so often nameth the Kentish downes, and before, *As lithe as lasse of Kent.*

The widowes, He calleth Rosalinde the widowes daughter of the glenne, that is, of a cuntry hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather said to colour and conceal the person then simply spoken. For it is well knowne, even in spight of Colin and Hobbinnoll, that she is a gentlewoman of no meane house, nor endued with any vulgar and common giftes, both of nature and maners : but such in deede, as neede neither Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinnoll be greeved, that so she should be commended to immortalitye for her rare and singular vertues: Specially deserving it no lesse, then either Myrto the most excellent Poet Theocritus his darling, or Lauretta the divine Petrarches goddesse, or Himeria the worthy poet Stesichorus his idol ; upon whom he is said so much to have doted, that, in regard of her excellencie, he scorned and wrote against the beautie of Helena. For which his presumptuous and unheedic hardnesse, he is sayd by vengeance of the gods, thereat being offended, to have lost both his eies.

Frenne, a stranger. The word I thinke was first poetically put, and afterward used in common custome of speech for forrene.

Dight, adorned.

Laye, a song, as Roundelays and Virelayes.

In all this song is not to be respected, what the worthinesse of her Maicetia deserveth, nor what to the highnesse of a prince is agreeable, but what is most comely for the meannesse of a shepherds wit, or to conceive, or to utter. And therefore hee calleth her Elisa, as through rudenesse tripping in her name ; and a shepheards daughter, it being very unfit, that a shepheards boy, brought up in the sheep-

fold, should know, or ever seem to have heard of, a Queenes royaltie.

Ye daintie, is, as it were, an Exordium *ad præparandos animos*.

Virgins, the nine Muses, daughters of Apollo and Memorie, whose abode the Poets feigne to be on Parnassus, a hill in Greece, for that in that countrey specially flourished the honour of all excellent studies.

Helicon, is both the name of a fountaine at the foote of Parnassus, and also of a mountain in Bœotia, out of the which floweth the famous spring Castallius, dedicate also to the Muses: of which spring it is saide, that, when Pegasus the winged horse of Perseus (whereby is meant fame and flying renowne) strooke the ground with his hoofe, sodainly therout sprang a well of most cleare and pleasant water, which from thence was consecrate to the Muses and Ladies of learning.

Your silver song, seemeth to imitate the like in Hesiodus *argurus melos*.

Syrinx, is the name of a Nymph of Arcadie, whom when Pan heeing in love pursued, she, flying from him, of the Gods was turned into a reede. So that Pan catching at the reeds, in stead of the Damosell, and puffing hard, (for he was almost out of winde,) with his breath made the reedes to pipe, which he seeing, tooke of them, and, in remembrance of his lost love, made him a pipe thereof. But here by Pan and Syrinx is not to be thought, that the shepherds simple meant those poetical Gods: but rather supposing (as seemeth) her graces progenie to be divine and immortal (so as the painims were wont to judge of all kings and princes, according to Homers saying,

“Thumos de megas esti diotrepheos basiléos,
“Time d'ek dios esti, philiei de c metieta Zeu,”

could devise no parents in his judgement so worthy for her, as Pan the shepherds God, and his best beloved Syrinx. So that by Pan is here meant the most famous and victorious king, her highness father, late of worthie memorie king Henrie the eight. And by that name, oftentimes (as hereafter appeareth) be noted kings and mightie potentates: And in some place Christ himselfe, who is the very Pan and God of shepherds.

Cremosin coronet, he deviseth her crowne to bee of the finest and most delicate flowers, in stead of pearles and precious stones wherewith princes diademes use to be adorned and embost.

Embellish, beautifie and set out.

Phebe, the Moone, whom the poets feign to be sister unto Phœbus, that is, the Sunne.

Medled, mingled.

Yfere, together. By the mingling of the Redde rose and the White, is meant the uniting of the two principall houses of Lancaster and Yorke: by whose long discord and deadly debate this realme many years was sore travailed, and almost cleane decayed. Till the famous Henrie the seventh, of the line of Lancaster, taking to wife the most vertuous princess Elizabeth, daughter to the fourth Edward of the house of Yorke, begat the most royall Henrie the eight aforesaid, in whom was the first union of the White rose, and the Redde.

Calliope, one of the nine Muses: to whom they assigne the honour of all poetical invention, and the first glorie of the Heroical verse. Other say, that she is the Goddess of Rethoricke: but by Virgill it is manifest, that they mistake the thing. For there, in his Epigrams, that Art seemeth to be attributed to Polymnia, saying:

“Signat cuncta manu, loquiturque Polymnia gestu.”

Which seemeth specially to be meant of Action, and Eloution, both special parts of Rethoricke: beside that her name, which (as some construe it) importeth great remembrance, containeth another part. But I holde rather with them, which call her Polymnia, or Polyhymnia, of her good singing.

Bay branches, be the signe of honour and victorie, and therefore of mightie conquerour worne in their triumphs, and also of famous poets, as saith Petrarch in his Sonets:

“Arbor vittoriosa triumphale,
“Honor d' Imperadori et di Poeti, &c.”

The Graces, be three sisters, the daughters of Iupiter, (whose names are Agalala, Thalia, Euphrosyne: and Homer onely addeth a fourth, e. Pasithea, otherwise called Charites, that is, thanks. Whom the poets feined to be goddesses of all beautie and comelinesse, which therefore (as saith Theodontius) they make three, to weete, that men first ought to bee gracious and bountifull to other freely; then to receive benefits at other mens hands courteously; and thirdly, to requite them thankfully: which are three sundrie actions in liberality. And Boccace saith, that they be painted naked (as they were in deed on the tombe of C. Iulius Casar) the one having her backe towards us, and her face forward, as proceeding from us: the other two toward us: noting double thanks to be due to us for the benefit we have done.

Deffly, finely and nimbly.

Sooke, sweete.

Meriment, mirth.

Bevie, a bevie of ladies, is spoken figuratively for a companie of a troupe; the terme is taken of larkes. For they say a bevie of larkes, even as a covey of partridges, or an eye of pheasants.

Ladies of the lake, be Nymphes. For it was an old opinion among the auncient heathen, that of every spring and fountaine was a goddesse the Sovereigne. Which opinion stuck in the minds of men not many years since, by meanes of certaine fine fablers, and loud lyers, such as were the authors of King Arthure the great, and such like, who tell many an unlawful leasing of the Ladies of the Lake, that is, the Nymphes. For the word Nymph in Greece, significth Well-water, or otherwise, a Spouse or Bride.

Bedight, called or named.

Chloris, the name of a Nymph, and significth greenesse, of whom is said, that Zephyrus the Western wind being in love with her, and coveting her to wife, gave her for a dowrie the chiefdome and soveraintie of all flowers, and greene herbs, growing on the earth.

Olives bene, the Olive was wont to be the ensigne of peace and quietnes, either for that it cannot be planted and pruned, and so carefully looked to as it ought, but in time of peace: or else for that the olive tree, they say, will not growe neare the Firre tree, which is dedicate to Mars the God of battaile, and used most for Speares, and other instruments of warre. Whereupon is finely feined, that, when Neptune and Minerva strove for the naming of the Citie of Athens, Neptune striking the ground with his Mace, caused a horse to come forth, that importeth war, but at Minervaes stroke sprung out an Olive, to note that it should be a nurse of learning, and such peaceable studies.

Bind your, spoken rudely, and according to shepherds simplicitie.

Bring, all these be names of flowers. *Sops in wine*, a flower in colour much like to a Carnation, but differing in smell and quantitie. *Floure delicate*, that which they use to misterme floure deluce, being in Latine called *Flos deliciarum*.

A bellibone, or a bonnibel, homely spoken for a fair maid, or homilasse.

Forswonck and forsuaft, overlaboured and sunneburnt.

I saw Phœbus, the sunne. A sensible narration, and a present view of the thing mentioned, which they call *Parousia*.

Cynthia, the Moone, so called of *Cynthus* a hill, where she was honoured.

Latonaes seede, was Apollo and Diana. Whom when as Niobe the wife of Amphion scorned, in respect of the noble fruit of her wombe, namely her seaven sonnes, and so many daughters; Latona, being therewith displeas'd, commaunded her sonne Phœbus to slay all the sonnes, and Diana all the daughters: wherat the unfortunate Niobe being sore dismayed, and lamenting out of measure, was feined by the Poets to be turned into a stone, upon the sepulchre of her children: for which cause the Shenheard

saith, he will not compare her to them, for feare of misfortune.

Now rise, is the conclusion. For, having so decked her with prayes and comparisons, he returneth all the thanks of his labour to the excellencie of her Maiestie.

When damains, A haase reward of a clownish giver.

Yblent, *Y*, is a poetically addition, *blent*, blinded.

EMBLEME.

This poesie is taken out of Virgil, and there of him used in the person of Aeneas to his mother Venus, appearing to

him in likenes of one of Dianaes damosels; being there most divinely set forth. To which similitude of divinity Hobbinoll comparing the excellencie of Elisa, and being through the worthinesse of Colins song, as it were, overcome with the hugeness of his imagination, bursteth out in great admiration, (*O quam te memorem virgo!*) being otherwise unable, then by sudden silence, to express the worthinesse of his conceits. Whom Themo answereth with another part of the like verse, as confirming by his grant and approvance, that Elisa is no whit inferiour to the Maiestie of her, of whom the poet so boldly pronounced, *O dea certe*.

MAY.

AEGLOGA QUINTA.

ARGUMENT.—In this fift Aeglogue, under the person of two Shepheards, Piers and Palinode, be represented two formes of Pastours or Ministers, or the Protestant and the Catholike; whose chiefe talks standeth in reasoning, whether the life of the one must be like the other; with whom having shewed, that it is daungerous to maintaine any fellowship, or give too much credite to their colourable and fained good wil, he telleth him a tale of the Foxe, that, by such a counterpoint of craftinesse, deceyved and devoured the credulous Kidde.

PALINODE. PIERS.

Pal. Is not thilke the mery moneth of May,
When love-lads masken in fresh aray?
How falles it, then, wee no merrier beene,
Ylike as others, girt in gawdy greene?
Our bloncket liveries bene all to sadde
For thilke same season, when all is ycladde
With pleasaunce; the ground with grasse, the woods
With greene leaves, the bushes with blooming buds.
Yongthes folke now flocken in every where,
To gather May-baskets and smelling brere;
And home they hasten the postes to dight,
And all the kirk-pillours care day-light,
With hawthorne buds, and sweete eglantine,
And girlonds of roses, and soppes in wine.
Such merimake holy saints doth queme,
But wee here sitten as drownde in dreme.

Piers. For yonkers, Palinode, such follies fitte,
But wee tway bene men of elder witte.

Pal. Sicker this morowe, no lenger agoe,
I sawe a shole of shepheardes outgoe
With singing, and shouting, and iolly chere:
Before them yode a lustie tabrere,
That to the many a horn-pype playd,
Whereto they dauncen eche one with his mayd.
To see those folks make such ioyvsaunce,
Made my heart after the pype to daunce:
Tho to the greene wood they speeden hem all,
To fetchen home May with their muscill;
And home they bringen in a royall throne,
Crowned as king; and his queene atone
Was Lady Flora, on whom did attend
A fayre flocke of faeries, and a fresh bend
Of lovely nymphes. (O that I were there,
To helpen the ladies their Maybush beare!)
Ah! Piers, bene not thy teyth on edge, to thinke
How great sport they gaynen with little swinck?

Ver. 5. — all to sad,] *All-to is completely or entirely.* TODD.

Ver. 29. *And home they bringen &c.*] There is the ellipsis of him [May] after *bringen*. T. WARTON.

Ver. 32. — bend] *Bend, a band or knot.* T. WARTON.

Piers. Perdie, so farre am I from envie,
That their fondnesse inly I pitie:
Those faytours little regarden their charge,
While they, letting their sheep runne at large,
Passen their time, that should be sparely spent,
In lustihede and wanton meryment.
Thilke same bene shepheardes for the devils stedde,
That playen while their flockes be unfedde:
Well it is seeme their sheepe bene not their owne,
That lettien them runne at randon alone:
But they bene hyred for little pay
Of other, that caren as little as they,
What fallen the flocke, so they han the fleece,
And get all the gayne, paying but a peece.

I muse, what account both these will make;
The one for the hire, which he doth take,
And th' other for leaving his Lordes taske,
When great Pan account of shepheardes shall aske.
Pal. Sicker, now I see thou speakest of spight,
All for thou lackest somdele their delight.
I (as I am) had rather be envied,
All were it of my foe, then fonly pitied;
And yet, if neede were, pitied would be,
Rather then other should scorne at me;
For pittied is mishap that nas remedie,
But scorned bene dedes of fond foolerie.
What shoulde shepheardes other things tend,
Then, sith their God his good does them send,
Reapen the fruite thereof, that is pleasure,
The while they here liven at ease and leasure?
For, when they bene dead, their good is ygoe,
They sleepen in rest, well as other moe:
Tho with them wends what they spent in cost,
But what they left behinde them is lost.
Good is no good, but if it be spend;
God giveth good for none other end.

Piers. Ah! Palinode, thou art a worldes child:
Who touches pitch, mought needs be defilde;
But shepheardes (as Algrind used to say)
Mought not live ylike as men of the laye.

Ver. 46. — at randon] *Without direction.* TODD.

With them it sits to care for their heire,
 Enaunter their heritage doe impair :
 They must provide for meanes of maintenance,
 And to continue their wont countenance ; 80
 But shepheard must walke another way,
 Sike worldly sovenance he must for-say.
 The sonne of his loines why should he regard
 To leave enriched with that he hath spard ?
 Should not thilke God, that gave him that good, 85
 Eke cherish his child, if in his waies he stood ?
 For if he mislive in leudness and lust,
 Little bootes all the wealth, and the trust,
 That his father left by inheritauce ;
 All will be soon wasted with misgovernance : 90
 But through this, and other their miscreaunce,
 They maken many a wrong chevisaunce,
 Heaping up waves of wealth and woe,
 The floods whereof shall them overflow.
 Sike mens follie I cannot compare 95
 Better then to the apes foolish care,
 That is so enamoured of her young one,
 (And yet, God wote, such cause had shee none.)
 That with her hard hold, and straight embracing,
 Shee stoppeth the breath of her youngling. 100
 So oftentimes, when as good is meant,
 Evil ensueth of wrong entent.

The time was once, and may againe retorne,
 (For ought may happen, that hath been beforen,) 105
 When shepheards had none inheritauce,
 Ne of land nor fee in sufferance,
 But what might arise of the bare sheepe,
 (Were it more or lesse) which they did keepe.
 Well ywis was it with shepheards thoe : 110
 Nought having, nought feared they to forgoe ;
 For Pan himselfe was their inheritauce,
 And little them served for their maintenaunce.
 The shepheards God so well them guided,
 That of nought they were unprovided ;
 Butter enough, honny, milke, and whay, 115
 And their flockes fleeces them to araye :
 But tract of time, and long prosperitie,
 (That nource of vice, this of insolencie,)
 Lulled the shepheards in such securitie,
 That, not content with leyll obeysaunce, 120
 Some gan to gape for greedie governaunce,
 And match them selfe with mightie potentates,
 Lovers of lordship, and troublers of states :
 Tho gan shepheards swaines to looke aloft,
 And leave to live hard, and learne to ligge soft : 125
 Tho, under colour of shepheards, sometime
 There crept in wolves, full of fraud and guile,
 That often devoured their owne sheepe,
 And often the shepheards that did hem keep :
 This was the first sourse of shepheards sorow, 130
 That now will be quitt with baile nor borow.

Pal. Three things to heare bene very burdenous,
 But the fourth to forbear is outrageous :
 Wemen, that of loves longing once lust,
 Hardly forbearen, but have it they must ; 135
 So when cholere is inflamed with rage,
 Wanting revenge, is hard to asswage :
 And who can counsell a thirstie soule,
 With patience to forbear the ofred bowle ?
 But of all burdens, that a man can beare, 140
 Most is, a foolles talke to beare and to heare.
 I weene the geaunt has not such a weight,

Ver. 77. *With them it sits*] *Sits it becomes.* TODD.
 Ver. 92. ——— chevisaunce.] *Dargain.* T. WARTON.
 Ver. 123. *Lovers of lordship.*] *Sovereynty.* TODD.

That beares on his shoulders the heavens height-
 Thou findest fault where nys to be found,
 And buildest strong warke upon a weake ground : 145
 Thou raylest on right withouten reason,
 And blamest hem much for small encheason.
 How shouldest shepheardes live, if not so ?
 What? should they pynen in payne and woe ?
 Nay, say I thereto, by my dear borrowe, 150
 If I may rest, I will live in sorrowe.
 Sorrowe ne neede be hastened on,
 For he will come, without calling, anone.
 While times enduren of tranquillitie,
 Usen we freely our felicitie ; 155
 For, when approachen the stormie stowres,
 We mought with our shoulders bear off the sharp
 showres ;

And, sooth to sayne, nought seemeth sike strife,
 That shepheards so witen eche others life,
 And layen her faults the worlds beforen, 160
 The while their foes done eache of bem scorne.
 Let nene mislike of that may not be mended ;
 So conteck soone by concord mought be ended.

Piers. Shepheard, I list no accordaunce make
 With shepheard, that does the right way forsake ;
 And of the twaive, if choise were to me, 164
 Had lever my foe then my friend he be ;
 For what concord han light and darke sam ?
 Or what peace has the lion with the lambe ?
 Such faitors, when theyr false hearts bene hidde, 170
 Will doe as did the Foxe by the Kidde.

Pal. Now, Piers, of fellowship, tell us that saying ;
 For the lad can keep both our flockes from stray-
 ing.

Piers. Thilke same Kidde (as I can well devise) 175
 Was too very foolish and unwise ;
 For on a time, in sommer season,
 The Gate her dame, that had good reason,
 Yode forth abroad unto the greene wood,
 To brouze, or play, or what she thought good :
 But, for she had a motherly care 180
 Of her young sonne, and wit to beware,
 She set her youngling before her knee,
 That was both fresh and lovely to see,
 And full of favour as Kidde mought be. 185
 His vellet head began to shoete out,
 And his wretched horns gan newly sprout ;
 The blossomes of lust to bud did beginne,
 And spring forth ranckly under his chinne.

“ My Sonne,” (quoth she, and with that gan weepe ;
 For careful thoughts in her heart did creepe ;) 190
 “ God blesse thee, poore Orphane ! as he mought me,
 And send thee ioy of thy iollitie.
 Thy father,” (that worde she spake with payne,
 For a sigh had nigh rent her heart in twaine,) 193
 “ Thy father, had he lived this day,
 To see the braunche of his body displye,
 How would he have ioyed at this sweete sight !
 But ah ! false Fortune such ioy did him spight,
 And cut off his dayes with untimely woe,
 Betraying him into the traynes of his foe. 200
 Now I, a wailefull widowe beight,
 Of my olde age have this one delight,
 To see thee succede in thy fathers steade,
 And flouirish in floures of lustthead ;
 For even so thy father his head upheld, 205
 And so his hauty hornes did he weld.”

The marking him with melting eyes,
 A thrilling throbbe from her heart did arise,

Ver. 185. *His vellet head*] *His velvet head.* TODD.

And interrupted all her other speeche
 With some olde sorowe that made a new breache ;
 Seemed she saw in her younglings face 211
 The old lineaments of his fathers grace.
 At last her solein silence she broke,
 And gan his new-budded beard to stroke.
 " Kiddie, (quoth she) thou kenst the great care 215
 I have of thy health and thy welfare,
 Which many wilde beastes ligen in waite
 For to entrap in thy tender state :
 But most the Foxe, maister of collusion ;
 For he has vowed thy last confusion. 220
 Forthy, my Kiddie, be rulde by me,
 And never give trust to his trecherre ;
 And, if he chaunce come when I am abroad,
 Sperre the yate fast, for fear of fraude ;
 Ne for all his worst, nor for his best, 225
 Open the dore at his request."

So schooled the Gate her wanton sonne,
 That answer'd his mother, All should be done.
 Tho went the pensive damme out of dore,
 And chaunst to stumble at the threshold flore ; 230
 Her stumbling steppe somewhat her amazed,
 (For such, as signes of ill lucke, bene dispraised ;)
 Yet forth she yode, thereat half agast ;
 And Kiddie the dore sperred after her fast.
 It was not long, after she was gone, 235
 But the false Foxe came to the dore anone ;
 Not as a foxe, for then he had be kend,
 But all as a poore pedler he did weud,
 Bearing a trusse of trifles at his backe,
 As bells, and babes, and glasses in his packe : 240
 A biggen he had got about his braine :
 For in his headpeace he felt a sore paine :
 His hinder heele was wrapt in a clout,
 For with great cold he had got the gout :
 There at the dore he cast me downe his pack, 245
 And layd him downe, and groned, " Alack ! alack !
 Ah ! dear Lord ! and sweet Saint Charitee !
 That some good body would once pitie mee !"

Well heard Kiddie all this sore constraint,
 And lengd to know the cause of his complaint ; 250
 Tho, creeping close behinde the wickets clinck,
 Privily he peeped out through a chinck,
 Yet not so privily but the Foxe him spyed ;
 For deceitfull meaning is double-eyed.

" Ah ! good young Maister" (then gan he crye) 255
 " Jesus blesse that sweete face I espye,
 And keep your corpse from the carefull stounds
 That in my carrion carcas abounds."

The Kidd, pitying his heavinesse,
 Asked the cause of his great distresse, 260
 And also who, and whence that he were.

Tho he, that had well ycond his lere,
 Thus medled his talke with many a teare :
 " Sicke, sicke, alas ! and little lacke of dead,
 But I be relieved by your beastlyhead. 265
 I am a poore sheepe, albe my colour donne,
 For with long travaile I am brent in the sonne ;
 And if that, my grandsire me sayd, he true,
 Sicker, I am very sybbe to you ;
 So be your goodlihead do not disdaine 270
 The base kiured of so simple swaine.
 Of mercy and favour then I you pray,
 With your ayde to forestall my nere decay."

Tho out of his packe a glasse he tooke,
 Wherein while Kiddie unwares did looke,
 He was so enamored with the newell,
 That nought he deemed deare for the iewell :
 Tho opened he the dore, and in came 275

The false Foxe, as he were starke lame :
 His tayle he clapt betwixt his legs twayne, 280
 Lest he should be descried by his trayne.

Being within, the Kidde made him good glee,
 All for the love of the glasse he did see.
 After his chere the pedler can chat, 285
 And tell many leasings of this and that,
 And how he could shew many a fine knack ;
 Tho shewed his ware and opened his packe,
 All save a bell, which he left behinde
 In the basket for the Kidde to finde ;
 Which when the Kidde stouped downe to catch, 290
 He popt him in, and his basket did latch ;
 Ne stayed he once the dore to make fast,
 But ranne away with him in all hast.

Home when the doubtfull damme had her hide,
 She mought see the dore stand open wide ; 295
 All agast, lowly she gan to call
 Her Kidde ; but he nould aunswere at all :
 Tho on the flore she saw the merchaundise
 Of which her sonne had sette too deere a prise.
 What help ! her Kidde she knew well was gone : 300
 She weeped, and wayled, and made great mone.
 Such end had the Kidde, for he nould warned be
 Of craft, coloured with simplicitie ;
 And such end, perdie, does all hem remayne, 305
 That of such falsers friendship bene fayne.

Pal. Truly, Piers, thou art beside thy wit.
 Furthest fro the marke, weening it to hit.
 Now, I pray thee, let me thy tale borowe
 For our Sir John, to say to-morrow 310
 At the kerke when it is holiday ;
 For well he meanes, but little can say.
 But, and if foxes bene so craftie as so,
 Much needeth all shepherds hem to know.
Piers. Of their falshode more could I recount,
 But now the bright sunne gynneth to dismount ; 315
 And, for the deawie night now doth nye,
 I hold it best for us home to hye.

PALINODES EMBLEME.

Pas men apistos apistici.

PIERS HIS EMBLEME.

Tis d'ara pistis apisto.

GLOSSE.

Thilke, this same moneth. It is applied to the season of the moneth, when all men delight themselves with pleasure of fields, and gardens, and garments.

Bloncket liveries, gray coats.

Yclad, arrayed, Y, redoundeth, as before.

In every where, a strange, yet proper kind of speaking.

Buskets, a diminutive, a little bushes of hawthorne.

Kirke, Church.

Queme, please.

A shole, a multitude, taken of fish, whereof some going in great companies, are said to swim in a shole.

Yode, went.

Iouissance, Ioy.

Swinck, labour.

Inly, entirely.

Faitours, vagabonds.

Great Pan, is Christ, the very God of all shepherds.

Ver. 311. — can say.] The verb *say* was a technical term for the performance of divine service. T. WARREN.

Ver. 316. — now doth nye,] That is, now doth advance. TORP.

which calleth himselfe the great and good shepheard. The name is most rightly (methinkes) applyed to him; for Pan signifieth all, or omnipotent, which is only the Lord Iesus. And by that name (as I remember) he is called of Eusebius, in his fifth booke *De Preparat. Evange.* who thereof telleth a proper storie to that purpose. Which storie is first recorded of Plutarch, in his Booke of the ceasing of miracles: and of Lavatere translated, in his booke of walking spirits. Who sayth, that about the same time that our Lorde suffered his most bitter passion, for the redemption of man, certaine persons sayling from Italie to Cyprus, and passing by certaine isles called Paxæ, heard a voyce calling aloud Thamus, Thamus, (now Thamus was the name of an Aegyptian, which was Pylote of the ship,) who, giving eare to the crye, was bidden, when he came to Palodes, to tell that the great Pan was dead: which hee doubting to doe, yet for that when hee came to Palodes, there suddenly was such a calme of winde, that the ship stode still in the sea unmoved, he was forced to crye aloud, that Pan was dead: wherewithall there was heard such piteous outcries, and dreadful shriking, as hath not bene the like. By which Pan, though of some bee understoode the great Sathanas, whose kingdome was at that time by Christ conquered, the gates of hell broken up, and death by death delivered to eternall death, (for at that time, as hee sayth, all Oracles sturceased, and enchanted sprites, that were wont to delude the people thenceforth held their peace;) and also at the demaund of the Emperor Tiberius, who that Pan should be, answer was made him by the wisest and best learned, that it was the sonne of Mercurie and Penelope: yet I thinke it more properly meant of the death of Christ, the only and verie Pan, then suffering for his flocke.

I as I am, seemeth to imitate the common proverbe, *Malim invidere mihi omnes, quàm miserescere.*
Nas, is a syncope, for *nehas,* or *has not:* as *would* for *would not.*

Thio with them, doth imitate the Epitaph of the rycous king Sardanapalus, which he caused to be written on his tombe in Oreke: which verses he thus translated by Tullie.

“Hæc habui quæ edi, quæque exaturata libido
 “Hæusit, at illa manent multa ac præclara relicta.”

Which may thus be turned into English.

“All that I eat did I joy, and all that I greedily gorged:
 “As for those many goodly matters left I for others.

Much like the Epitaph of a good old Earle of Devonshire, which though much more wisdom bewrayeth then Sardanapalus, yet hath a smacke of his sensual delights and beastliness: the rimes be these:

“Ho, ho, who lies here?
 “I the good Earle of Devonshire,
 “And Manld my wife that was full deare:
 “We lived togethir lv. yeare.
 “That we spent, we had:
 “That we gave, we have:
 “That we left, we lost.”

Agrind, the name of a shepheard.

Men of the lay, Laymen.

Encounter, least that.

Soverance, remembrance.

Misreance, dispraise, or misbeleefe.

Chevisance, sometime of Chaucer used for gaine: sometime of other for spoile, or bootie, or enterprise, and sometime for chiefedome.

Pan himselfe, God, according as is said in Deuteronomie, that, in division of the land of Canaan to the tribe of Levi, no portion of heritage should be allotted, for God himselfe was their inheritance.

Some gan, meant of the pope, and his antechristian prelates, which usurpe a tyrannicall dominion in the Church, and with Peters counterfeit keyes open a wide gate to all wickednesse and insolent government. Nought here spoken, as of purpose to denie fatherly rule and governance (as some maliciously of late have done, to the

great unrest and hindrance of the Church,) but to display the pride and disorder of such as, in stead of feeding their sheep, in deed feed of their sheepe.

Sourse, wellspring and originall.

Borrow, pledge or suretie.

The Geavnt, is the great Atlas, whom the poets feigne to be a huge Giant, that beareth heaven on his shoulders: hee in deed a marvellous high mountain in Mauritania, that now is Barbarie, which to mans seeming pearceh the cloudes, and seemeth to touch the heavens. Other thinke, and they not amisse, that this fable was meant of one Atlas king of the same country, who (as the Greekes say) did first finde out the hidden courses of the starres, by an excellent imagination; wherefore the poets feigned, that hee sustained the firmament on his shoulders: Many other conjectures needlesse be tolde hereof.

Warke, worke.

Encheason, cause, occasion.

Dear borrow, that is our Saviour, the common pledge of all mens debts to death.

Wytten, blame.

Nought seemeth, is unseemly.

Conteck, strife, contention.

Her, their, as useth Chaucer

Han, together.

Sam, together.

This tale is much like to that in Aescops fables, but the catastrophe and ende is farre different. By the Kiddle may bee understoode the simple sort of the faithfull and true Christians. By his damme Christ, that hath alreadie with careful watch-words (as here doth the Gote) warned her little ones, to beware of such doubling deceit. By the Fox, the false and faithlesse Pupists, to whom is no credit to be given, nor fellowship to be used.

The Gate, the Gote: Northrien spoken, to turne O into A.

Yode, went: aforesaid.

Shee set, a figure called *Fictio,* which useth to attribtne reasonable actions and speeches to unreasonable creatures.

The blossomes of lust, be the yong and mossie hairens, which then beginne to sprout and shoote forth, when lustfull heat beginneth to kindle.

And with, a very poeticall pathos.

Orphane, a yongling or pupill, that needeth a tutor or governour.

That word, a patheticall parenthesis, to encrease a carefull hyperbaton.

The bravnch, of the fathers bodie, is the childe.

For even so, alluded to the saying of Andromache to Aescanius in Virgil.

“Sic oculos, sic ille manus, sic ora ferebat.”

A thrilling throb, a piercing sigh.

Liggen, lie.

Maister of collusion, a. coloured guile, because the Foxe, of all beasts, is most wile and craftie.

Sparre the yate, shnt the doore.

For such, the Gotes stumbling is bere noted as an evil signe. The like to be marked in all histories: and that not the least of the Lorde Hastings in King Richard the third his daies. For, beside his dangerous dreame (which was a shrewd prophesie of his mishap that folowed) it is said, that in the morning riding toward the tower of London, there to sit upon matters of counsell, his horse stumbled twice or thrise by the way: which of some, that riding with him in his company were privy to his neare destinie, was secretly marked, and afterward noted for memorie of his great mishap that ensued. For being then as merrie as man might be, and least doubting any mortal danger, he was, within two honres after, of the tyrant put to a shamfull death.

As belles, by such trifles are noted, the reliques and rags of popish superstition, which put no small religion in belles, and babies, a. Idoles, and glasses, s. Paxos, and such like trumperies.

Great cold, for they boast much of their outward patience, and voluntary snfferance, as a worke of merit and holy humblinesse.

Sweet S. Charitie, the Catholiques common othe, and onely speech, to have charitie alwayes in their mouth, and sometime in their outward actions, but never inwardly in faith and godly zeale.

Clincke, a keyhole: whose dimmutive is clicket, used of Chaucer for a key.

Stounds, fittes: aforesaid.

His lere, his lesson.

Medled, mingled.

Beastlihead, a greeting to the person of a beast.

Sibbe, a kinne.

Newell, a newe thing.

To forestall, to prevent.

Glee, cheare: aforesaid.

Deare a price, his life which he lost for those toyes.

Such end, is an Epiphenema, or rather the moral of the whole tale, whose purpose is to warn the Protestant to beware, how he giveth credit to the unfaithfull Catholique; wherof we have dayly proofes sufficient, but one most famous of all practised of late yeares by Charles the ninth.

Faine, glad or desirous.

Our sir Iohn, a Popish priest. A saying fit for the grossness of a shepheard, but spoken to taunte unlearned priests.

Dismount, descend or set.

Nye, draweth neere.

EMBLEME.

Both these Emblemes make one whole Hexametre. The first spoken of Palinode, as in reproach of them that be distrustfull, is a peece of Theognis verse, intending, that who doth most mistrust is most false. For such experience in falshood breedeth mistrust in the minde, thinking no lesso guile to lurke in others then in himselfe. But Piers thereto strongly replieth with an other peece of the same verse, saying, as in his former fable, what faith then is there in the faithlesse? For if faith be the ground of Religion, which faith they daily false, what hold is there of their religion? And this is all that they say.

IUNE.

ÆGLOGA SEXTA.

ARGUMENT.—This Æglogue is wholly vowed to the complayning of Coline ill successe in his love. For being (as is aforesaid) enamored of a country lasse Rosalind, and having (as seemeth) found place in her heart, hee lamenteth to his deare friend Hobbinoll, that he is now forsaken unfaithfully, and in his steade Menalcas another shepheard received disloyally. And this is the whole Argument of this Æglogue.

HOBBINOLL. COLIN CLOUT.

Hob. Lo! Colin, here the place whose plesant syte
From other shades hath weand my wandring minde,
Tell mee, what wants mee here to worke delyte ?
The simple ayre, the gentle warbling winde,
So calme, so coole, as no where else I finde ;
The grassie grounde with daintie daysies dight,
The bramble bush, where byrdes of every kinde
To the waters fall their tunes attemper right.

Col. O happie Hobbinoll, I blesse thy state,
That Paradise hast founde which Adam lost :
Here wander may thy flocke early or late,
Withouten dread of wolves to bene ytost ;
Thy lovely layes here maist thou freely boste :
But I, unhappie Man ! whom cruell Fate
And angrie gods pursue from coste to coste,
Can no where finde to shroude my lucklesse pate.

Hob. Then, if by mee thou list advised bee,
Forsake the soyle that so doth thee bewitch ;
Leave mee those hilles where harbrough nis to see,
Nor holy-bush, nor brere, nor winding ditch ;
And to the dales resort, where shepheards ritche,
And fruitfull flocks, bene every where to see :
Here no night-ravens lodge, more black then pitch,
Nor elvish ghosts, nor gastly owles doe flee ;

But friendly Faeries, met with many Graces,
And lightfoote Nymphes, can chace the lingring
Night

Ver. 16. ——— pate.] *Pate* was not a ludicrous or illiberal word formerly. T. WARTON.

Ver. 19. ——— harbrough] This word *harbrough* or *herbrough*, is mentioned in the Glossary to Urry's Chaucer as signifying an *inn*, a *lodging*. TODD.

With heydeguyes, and trimly trodden traces, [hight,
Whilst Systers Nyne, which dwell on Parnasse
Doe make them musick for their more delight ;
And Pan himselfe to kisse their christall faces
Will pype and daunce, when Phoebe shineth bright :
Such pierlesse pleasures have wee in these places.

Col. And I, whilst youth, and course of care-
lesse yeeres,
Did let mee walke withouten lincks of love,
In such delights did ioy amongst my peeres ;
But ryper age such pleasures doth reprove :
My fancies eke from former follies moove
To staid steps ; for time in passing weares,
(As garments doen, which wexen olde above,)
And draweth newe delights with hoarie hairs.

The couth I sing of love, and tune my pype
Unto my plaintive pleas in verses made ;
Tho would I seeke for queene-apples unrype ;
To give my Rosalind, and in sommer shade
Dight gaudie girlonds was my common trade,
To crowne her golden locks ; but yeeres more
rype,
And losse of her, whose love as lyfe I wayde,
Those weary wanton toyes away did wbye.

Hob. Colin, to heare thy rymes and roundelays,
Which thou wert wont on wastefull hilles to sing,
I more delight then lark in sommer dayes,
Whose echo made the neighbour groves to ring,
And taught the hyrdes, which in the lower spring
Did shroude in shady leaves from sunny rayes,

Ver. 29. ——— their more delight:] Their greater de
light. TODD.

Frame to thy songe their cheerefull cheriping, ⁶⁵
Or holde their peace, for shame of thy sweete
layes.

I sawe Calliope with Muses moe,
Soone as thy oaten pype began to sounde,
Their ivory lutes and tamburins forgoe,
And from the fontaine, where they sat around, ⁶⁰
Renne after hastely thy silver sound ;
But, when they came where thou thy skill didst
showe,
They drewe abacke, as halfe with shame confound
Shepherd to see, them in their arte outgoe.

Col. Of Muses, Hobbinoll, I comne no skill, ⁶⁵
For they bene daughters of the highest Love,
And holden scorne of homely shepherds quill ;
For sith I heard that Pan with Phoebus strove,
Which him to much rebuke and daunger drove,
I never list presume to Parnasse hill, ⁷⁰
But, pyiping low in shade of lowly grove,
I play to please myselfe, all be it ill.

Nought weigh I, who my song doth praise or blame,
Ne strive to winne renouwe, or passe the rest :
With shepherd sittes not followe flying Fame, ⁷⁵
But feede his flocke in fieldes where falls him best.
I wote my rymes bene rough, and rudely drest ;
The fitter they my careful case to frame :
Enough is mee to paint out my unrest,
And poure my piteous plaintes out in the same. ⁸⁰

The god of shepherds, Tityrus, is dead,
Who taught mee homely, as I can, to make :
Hee, whilst hee lived, was the soveraigne head
Of shepherds all that bene with love ytake :
Well couth hee waile his woes, and lightly slake ⁸⁵
The flames which love within his heart had bredde,
And tell us merry tales to keepe us wake,
The while our sheepe about us safely fedde.

Nowe dead hee is, and lyeth wrapt in lead,
(O why should Death on him such outrage showe !) ⁹⁰
And all his passing skill with him is fledde,
The fame whereof doth daylie greater growe.
But, if on mee some little drops would flowe
Of that the spring was in his learned hedde,
I soone would learne these woods to waile my woe, ⁹⁵
And teache the trees their trickling teares to
shedde.

Then should my plaintes, cause of discourtesee,
As messengers of this my painfull plight,
Flye to my love where ever that shee bee,
And pierce her heart with poynnt of worthy wight, ¹⁰⁰
As shee deserves, that wrought so deadly spight.
And thou, Menalcas ! that by trecheriee
Didst underfonge my lasse to wexe so light,
Shouldst well be knowne for such thy villaniee.

But since I am not as I wishe I were, ¹⁰⁵
Yee gentle Shepherds ! which your flocks doe
feede,

Ver. 59. — *tamburins*] Span. *tamborino*. But E. K. says that some suppose this instrument to be the *clarion*. Dr. Johnson says it is a *labor* or *little drum*. Tonn.

Ver. 103. — *underfonge*] *Underfonge* means to *take*, to *undertake*, to *manage*, to *tamper with*. T. WARTON.

Whether on hylles, or dales, or other where,
Beare witnesse all of this so wicked deede ;
And tell the lasse, whose flowre is woxe a weede,
And faultlesse faith is turn'd to faithlesse fere, ¹¹⁰
That shee the truest shepherds heart made
bleede
That lyves on earth, and loved her most dere.

Hob. O carefull Colin, I lament thy case ;
Thy teares would make the hardest hilt to flowe !
Ah ! faithlesse Rosalind, and voyde of grace, ¹¹⁵
That art the roote of all this ruthfull woe !
But now is time, I gesse, homeward to goe :
Then rise, yee blessed Flocks ! and home apace,
Lest night with stealing steppes do you foresloe,
And wett your tender lambs that by you trace. ¹²⁰

COLINS EMBLEME.

Gia speme spenta.

GLOSSE.

Syle, situation and place.

Paradise, A Paradise in Greeke, signifieth a garden of pleasure, or place of delights. So hee compared the soyle, wherein Hobbinoll made abode, to that earthly Paradise, in Scripture called Eden, wherein Adam in his first creation was placed ; which of the most learned is thought to be in Mesopotamia, the most fertile pleasant country in the world (as may appeare by Diodorus Syculus description of it, in the historie of Alexanders conquest thereof,) lying betwene the two famous Rivers (which are said in Scripture to flow out of Paradise) Tygris and Euphrates, wherof it is so denominat.

Forsake the soyle. This is no Poetical fiction, but unfeignedly spoken of the Poet selfe, who for speciall occasion of private affaires (as I have bene partly of himselfe informed) and for his more preferment, removed out of the North partes, [and] came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeed advised him privately.

Those hilles, that is in the North country where he dwelt.

Nis, is not.

The dales. The South parts, where he now abideth, which though they be full of hilles and woods (for Kent is very hilly and woody, and therefore so called, for *Kantish* in the Saxons tongue signifieth woody,) yet in respect of the North partes they be called dales. For indeed the North is counted the higher country.

Night Ravens, &c. By such hatefull hyrdes, hee meaneth all misfortunes (wherof they be tokens) flying every where.

Friendly Faeries. The opinion of Faeries and Elfes is very olde, and yet sticketh very religiously in the mindes of some. But to roote that rancke opinion of Elfes out of mens hearts, the truth is, that there be no such thing, nor yet the shadowes of the things, but onely by a sort of halde Fryers and knavish shavelings so fained, which as in other things, so in that, sought to nouse the common people in ignorance, least, being once acquainted with the truth of things, they would in time smell out the untruth of their packed pelfe and Masse-peny religion. But the sooth is, that when all Italy was distract into the Factions of the Guelfes and the Gibelyns, being two famous houses in Florence, the name began through their great mischiefes and many outrages, to be so odious or rather dreadfull in the peoples ears, that, if their children at any time were froward and wanton, they would say to them that the Guelfe or the Gibelyne came. Which words now from them (as many things else) be come into our usage, and, for Guelfes and Gibelynes, we say Elfes and Gobylns. No otherwise then the Frenchmen used to say of that valiant capitaine, the verie scourge of Fraunce, the Lords Thalho', afterward Earle of Shrewsbury, whose noblenesse herd

such a terror in the hearts of the French; that oft times even great armies were defeated and put to flight at the onely hearing of his name. In so much that the French women, to affray their children, would toll them that the Talbot commeth.

Many Graces, though there be indeed but three Graces or Charities (as afore is said) or at the utmost but foure, yet, in respect of many gifts of bountie, there may be said more. And so Musæus saith, that in Heroes either eye there sat a hundred Graces. And, by that authoritie, this same Poet in his Pageants saith "An hundred Graces on her eyelid sat," &c.

Heydeguites, A country daunce or round. The conceipt is, that the Graces and Nymphs do daunce unto the Muses and Pan his musicke all night by Moonelight. To signifie the pleasantnesse of the soyle.

Peeres. Equale and fellow shepherds.

Queenie-apples unripe, Imitating Virgils verse:

"Ipes ego cana legam tenera lanugine mala."

Neighbour groves, a strange phrase in English, but word for word expressing the Latin *vicina nemora*.

Spring, not of water, but of yong trees springing.

Calliope, aforesaid. This staffe is full of very poetical invention.

Tamburines, an old kind of instrument, which of some is supposed to be the Clarion.

Pan with Phæbus: the tale is well knowne, how that Pan and Apollo, striving for excellencie in musicke, chose

Midas for their iudge. Who, being corrupted with partiall affection, gave the victory to Pan undeserved: for which Phæbus set a paire of Ases eares upon his head, &c.

Tityrus: That by Tityrus is meant Chaucer, hath bene already sufficiently sayd, and by this more plaine appeareth, that he saith, he told mery tales. Such as he his Canterbury tales, whom he calleth the God of the Poets for his excellencie, so as Tully calleth Lentulus, *Deum vita sua*, e. the God of his life.

To make, to versifie.

O why, A pretty Epanorthosis or correction.

Discurtesie: hee meaneth the falsenesse of his lover Rosalinde, who forsaking him had chosen another.

Point of worthie witte, the pricke of deserved blame.

Menaldas, the name of a shepheard in Virgil: but heere is meant a person unknowne and secret, against whom he often bitterly inveiyeth.

Underfong, undermine and deceive by false suggestion.

EMBLEME.

You remember, that [in] the first Æglogue Collins Poets is was *Anchora speme*: for that as then there was hope of favour to be found in time. But now being cleane forlome and reiected of her, as whose hope, that was, is cleane extinguished and turned into despaire, he renounceth all comfort and hope of goodnesse to come; which is all the meaning of this Embleme.

IULY.

AEGLOGA SEPTIMA.

ARGUMENT.—This Æglogue is made in the honour and commendation of good shepheards, and to the shame and dispraise of proud and ambitious Pastours: Such as Morrell is here imagined to be.

TROMALIN. MORRELL.

Thom. Is not thilke sânie a goteheard prowde,
That sittes on yonder bancke,
Whose straying heard them selfe doth shrowde
Emong the bushes rancke?
Mor. What, ho, thou iolly shepherdes swaine,
Come up the hill to me;
Better is then the lowly plaine,
Als for thy flocke and thee.
Thom. Ah! God shield, Man, that I should clime,
And learne to looke alofte;
This rede is rife, that oftentime
Great clymbers fall unsoft.
In humble dales is footing fast,
The trode is not so tickle,
And though one fall through heedless hast,
Yet is his misse not mickle.
And now the Sunne hath reared upp
His ferie-footed teme,
Making his way betweene the Cupp
And golden Diademe;
The rampant Lyon hunts he fast,
With dogges of noysome breath,
Whose balefull barking brings in hast
Pyne, plagues, and dreerie death.
Against his cruell scorching heate,
Where thou hast coverture,
The wastefull hilles unto his threate
Is a plaine overtur:

But, if thee lust to holden chat
With seely shepherdes swayne,
Come downe, and learne the little what,
That Thomalin can sayne.
Mor. Syker thoust but a leasee loord,
And rekes much of thy swinck,
That with fond termes, and witlesse wordes,
To blere mine eyes doest thinke.
In evill houre thou hentst in hond
Thus holy hilles to blame,
For sacred unto saints they stond,
And of them han their name.
St. Michels Mount who does not know,
That wardes the Westerne coast?
And of St. Brigets Bowre I trow
All Kent can rightly boast:
And they that con of Muses skill
Sayne most-what, that they dwell
(As gote-herdes wont) upon a hill,
Beside a learned well.
And woned not the great good Pan
Upon mount Olivet,
Feeding the blessed flocke of Dan,
Which did himselfe beget?
Thom. O blessed Sheepe! O Shepheard great!
That bought his flocke so deare,
And them did save with bloudy sweat
From wolves that would them teare.
Mor. Beside, as holy Fathers sayne,
There is a holy place
Where Titan riseth from the mayne

To renne his dayly race,
 Upon whose toppes the starres hene stayed,
 And all the skie doth leane ;
 There is the cave where Phoebe layed
 The shepheard long to dreame.
 Whylome there used shepherdes all
 To feede theyr flockes at will,
 Till by his folly one did fall,
 That all the rest did spill.
 And, sithens shepherds hene foresayd
 From places of delight,
 For-thy I weene thou be afrayd
 To clime this lillies height.
 Of Synah can I tell thee more,
 And of our Ladyes Bowre ;
 But little needes to strow my store,
 Suffice this hill of our.
 Here han the holy Faunes recourse,
 And Sylvanes haunten rathe ;
 Here has the salt Medway his sourse,
 Wherein the Nymphes doe bathe ;
 The salt Medway, that trickling stremes
 Adowne the dales of Kent,
 Till with his elder brother Themes
 His brackish waves he meynt.
 Here growes melampode every where,
 And teribinth, good for gotes ;
 The one my madding kids to smere,
 The next to heale their throates.
 Hereto, the hilles bene nigher heaven,
 And thence the passage ethe ;
 As well can proove the piercing levin,
 That seldcme falles beneath.
Thom. Syker thou speakes like a lewd lorrell,
 Of heaven to demen so ;
 How he I am but rude and borrell,
 Yet nearer waies I know.
 To kerke the narre, from God more farre,
 Has hene an olde-said sawe ;
 And he, that strives to touche a starre,
 Oft stombles at a strawe.
 Alsoome may shepheard climbe to skie
 That leades in lowly dales,
 As goteherd prowd, that, sitting hie,
 Upon the mountayne sayles,
 My seely sheepe like well belowe,
 They neede not melampode,
 For they hene hale enough, I trowe,
 And lyken their ahode ;
 But, if they with thy gotes should yede,
 They some might be corrupted,
 Or like not of the frowie fede,
 Or with the weedes be glutted.
 The hilles, where dwelled holy saints,
 I reverence and adore,
 Not for themselfe, but for the saints
 Which han hene dead of yore.
 And now they hene to heaven forewent,
 Their good is with them goe ;
 Their sample onely to us lent,
 That als we mought doe soe.
 Shepherds they weren of the best,
 And lived in lowly leas ;
 And, sith they soules be now at rest,

Ver. 74 *And of our Ladyes Bowre:]* At Loretto.
 T. WARTON.
 Ver. 93. ——— [lorrell,] *A loose, contemptible fellow.*
 T. WARTON.
 Ver. 95. ——— [borrell,] *Rustick.* TODD.

60 Why done we them disease ?
 Such one he was (as I have heard
 Old Algrind often sayne)
 That whilome was the first shepheard,
 And lived with little gayne :
 65 And meeke he was, as meeke mought he,
 Simple as simple sheepe ;
 Humble, and like in eche degree.
 The flocke which he did keepe.
 Often he used of his keepe
 70 A sacrifice to bring,
 Now with a kidd, now with a sheepe,
 The altars hallowing.
 So lowted he unto his Lord,
 Such favour couth he finde,
 75 That never sithens was abhord
 The simple shepherds kinde.
 And such, I weene, the brethren were
 That came from Canaan,
 The brethren Twelve, that kept yfere
 80 The flockes of mightie Pan.
 Bnt nothing such thilke shepheard was
 Whom Ida hill did beare,
 That left his flocke to fetche a lasse,
 Whose love he bought too deare.
 85 For he was proud, that ill was payd,
 (No such mought shepherds he !)
 And with lewd lust was overlaid ;
 Tway things doen ill agree.
 But shepheard mought be meek and mild,
 90 Well-eyed, as Argus was,
 With fleshly follies undefiled,
 And stoute as steede of brasse.
 Sike one (sayd Algrind) Moses was ;
 That sawe his Makers face,
 95 His face, more cleare then cristall glasse,
 And spake to him in place.
 This had a brother (his name I knewe)
 The first of all his cote,
 A shepheard true, yet not so true
 100 As he that earst I hote.
 Whilome all these were low and liefie,
 And loved theyr flockes to feede ;
 They never stroven to be chiefe,
 And simple was theyr weede :
 105 But now (thanked be God therefore !)
 The world is well amend,
 Theyr weedes hene not so nighly wore ;
 Such simpleesse mought them shend !
 They hene yclad in purple and pall,
 110 So hath theyr God them blist ;
 Theyr reigne and rulen over all,
 And lord it as they list ;
 Ygyrt with beltes of glitterand gold.
 (Mought they good shepherds hene !)
 115 Their Pan their sheepe to them has sold,
 I say as some have scene.
 For Palinode (if thou him ken)
 Yode late on pilgrimage
 To Rome, (if such be Rome,) and then
 120 He sawe thilke misusage ;
 For shepherdes (sayd he) there doen lead,
 As lordes done other where ;
 Their sheep han crusts, and they the bread ;
 The chippes, and they the cliere :

Ver. 124. *Why done we them disease ?* Why do we give them uneasiness ? why do we disturb them ? *Fr. desaise.* TODD.
 Ver. 168. ——— *thanked &c.]* Ironically. T. WARTON.

They han the fleece, and eke the flesh,
 (O seely sheepe the while!)
 The corne is theyrs, let other thresh,
 Their handes they may not file.
 They han great store and thrifite stockes,
 Great friendes and feeble foes;
 What neede hem caren for their flockes,
 Their hoyes can looke to those.
 These wisards welter in wealths waves,
 Pampred in pleasures deepe;
 That han fat kernes, and leany knaves,
 Their fasting flockes to keepe.
 Sike mister men bene all misgone,
 They heapen hilles of wrath;
 Sike syrlie shepheards han we none,
 They keepen all the path.
Mor. Here is a great deale of good matter
 Lost for lacke of telling;
 Now sicker I see thou dost bot clutter,
 Harne may come of melling.
 Thou meddlest more, then shall have thank,
 To witen shepheards wealth;
 When folke bene fat, and riches ranck,
 It is a signe of health.
 But say mee, what is Algrind, hee
 That is so oft bynempt?
Thom. Hee is a shepheard great in gree,
 But hath bene long ypent:
 One day hee sat upon a hill,
 As now thou wouldest mee;
 But I am taught, by Algrinds ill,
 To love the lowe degree;
 For sitting so with bared scalp;
 An eagle sored hie,
 That, weening his white head was chalke
 A shell-fish downe let flye;
 She weend the shell-fish to have broke,
 But therewith bruzd his brayne;
 So now, astonied with the stroke,
 Hee lyes in lingring payne.
Mor. Ah! good Algrind! his hap was ill
 But shall be better in time.
 Now farewell, Shepheard, sith this hill
 Thou hast such doubt to clime.

THOMALINS EMBLEME.

In medio virtus.

MORRELLS EMBLEME.

In summo felicitas.

GLOSSE.

A Gotcheard: by Gotes in scripture be represented the wicked and reprobate, whose Pastour also must needs be such.

Bancke, is the seate of honour.

Straying heard, which wander out of the way of truth.

Ale, for also.

Climbe, spoken of ambition.

Great climbers, according to Seneca his verse:

"Decidunt celsa graviore lapsu."

Mickle, much.

The Sunne: a reason why he refused to dwell on mountaines; because there is no shelter against the scorching Sun, according to the time of the year, which is the whotest moneth of all.

The Cup and Diademe, he two signes in the firmament,

through which the sunne maketh his course in the moneth of Iuly.

Lion, this is poetically spoken, as if the Sun did hunt a Lion with one dog. The meaning whereof is, that in Iuly the Sun is in Leo. At which time the Dogge star, which is called Syrius, or Canicula reigneth, with immoderate heate causing peetillence, drought, and many diseases.

Overture, an open place: the word is borrowed of the French, and used in good writers.

To holden chat, to talke and prate.

A loord, was wont among the old Britons to signifie a Lord. And therefore the Danes, that long time usurped their tyrannie here in Britaine, were called, for more dread then dignitie, Lurdanes, s. *Lord danes*. At which time it is said, that the insolencie and pride of that nation was so outrageous in this realm, that if it fortun'd a Briton to be going over a hridge, and saw the Dane set foote upon the same, he must returne backe, till the Dane were cleane over, or else abide the price of his displeasure, which was no lesse then present death. But being afterward expelled, the name of Lurdane became so odious unto the people, whom they had long oppressed, that even at this day they use, for more reproch, to call the quartane Ague the fever lurdane.

Recks much of thy swinke, countes much of thy paines. *Weetelesse*, not understoode.

S. Michaels Mount, is a promontorie in the West part of England.

A hill, Parnassus aforesaid.

Pan, Christ.

Dan, one tribe is put for the whole nation per *Synecdochen*.

Where Tylan, the Sunne. Which storio is to be read in Diodorus Syc. of the hill Ida, from whence, he saith, all night time is to be seene a mightie fire, as if the skie burned, which toward morning beginneth to gather a rounde forme, and thereof riseth the Sunne, whom the Poets call Tytan.

The shepheard, is Endymion, whom the Poets faine to have been so beloved of Phœbe, s. the Moone, that he was by her kept asleepe in a cave by the space of thirtie yeares, for to enjoy his companie.

There, that is, in Paradise, where, through error of the shepheards understanding, he saith, that all shepheards did use to feede their flockes, till one, (that is) Adam, by his folly and disobedience, made all the rest of his offspring be debarred and shut out from thence.

Synah, a hill in Arabia, where God appeared.

Our Ladies bowre, a place of pleasure so called.

Faunes, or *Sylvanes*, be of Poets fained to be gods of the wood.

Medway, the name of a river in Kent, which, running by Rochester, meeteth with Thames, whom he calleth his elder brother, both because hee is greater, and also falleth sooner into the sea.

Meint, mingled.

Melampode and Terebinth, be hearbe good to cure diseased Gotes, of the one speaketh Mantuan, and of the other Theocritus:

"Terminatho tragoon sikatou acremona."

Nigher heaven: note the shepheards simplenesse, which supposeth that from the hilles is nearer way to heaven.

Levin, lightning, which he taketh for an argument to prove the nighnesse to heaven, because the lightning dath commonly light on high mountaine, according to the saying of the Poet:

"Feruntque summos fulmina montes."

Lorrell, a losell.

A borrell, a plaine fellow.

Narre, nearer.

Hale, for hole.

Yede, go.

Frouye, mustie or moesie.

Of yore, long ago.

Forewent, gone afore.

The first of shepheards, was Abel the righteous, who (as

Scripture saeth) bent his mind to keeping of sheep, as did his brother Caine to tilling the ground.

His keepe, his charge, a. his flocke.

Louled, did honour and reverence.

The brethren, the twelve sonnes of Iacob, which were sheep-maisters, and lived enely thereupon.

Whom Ido, Paris, which being the sonne of Priamus king of Troy, for his mother Hecubas dreame, which, heeing with childe of him, dreamed she brought forth a firebrand, that set the tower of Ilium on fire, was cast forth on the hill Ido, where being festred of shepherds, he eke in time became a shepheard, and lastly came to the knowledge of his parentage.

A lasse, Helena, the wife of Menelaus king of Lacedemonia, was by Venus, for the golden apple to her given, then promised to Paris, who, thereupon with a sort of lustie Troyans, stele her out of Lacedemonia, and kept her in Troy, which was the cause of the ten yeares warre in Troy, and the most famous citie of all Asia lamentably sacked and defaced.

Argus, was of the Poets devised to be full of eyes, and therefore to him was committed the keeping of the transformed Cow, Io; so called, because that, in the print of the Cowes foote, there is figured an I in the midst of an O.

His name, he meaneth Aaron; whose name, for more decorum, the shepheard saith he hath forgot, least his remembrance and skill in antiquities of holy writ should seeme to exceede the meanness of the person.

Not so true, for Aaron in the absence of Moses started aside, and committed idolatrie.

In purple, spoken of the Popes and Cardinals, which use such tyrannical colours and pompous painting.

Belts, girdles.

Glitterand, glittering, a participle used sometime in Chaucer, but altogether in I. Gower

Their Pan, that is, the Pope, whom they count their God and greatest shepheard.

Painode, a shepheard, of whose report he seemeth to speake all this.

Wizards, great learned heads.

Weller, wallow.

Kerne, a Churle or Farmer.

Sike mister men, such kinde of men.

Surly, stately and providew.

Melling, meddling.

Benempte, named.

Gree, for degree.

Algrind, the name of a shepheard aforesaid, whose mishap hee alludeth to the chance that happened to the Poet Æschylus, that was brained with a shell fish.

EMBLEM.

By this poesie Themalin confirmeth that, which in his former speach by sundry reasons he had proved; for being both himself sequestered from all ambition, and also abhorring it in others of his oete, he taketh occasion to praise the mean and lowly state, as that wherein is safetie without feare, and quiet without danger; according to the saying of olde Philosophers, that vertue dwelleth in the midst, being environed with two contrarie vices; whereto Morrell replieth with continuance of the same Philosophers opinion, that albeit all bountie dwelleth in mediocrity, yet perfect felicitie dwelleth in supremacie. For they say, and most true it is, that happinesse is placed in the highest degree; so as if any thing bee higher or better, then that way ceaseth to be perfect happinesse. Much like to that which once I heard alledged in defence of humilitie, out of a great doctor. "Suorum Christus humilimus;" which saying a gentleman in the companie taking at the rebound, beate backe againe with a like saying of another doctor, as he sayde, "Suorum Deus altissimus."

AUGUST.

AEGLOGA OCTAVA.

ARGUMENT—In this Aeglogue is set forth a delectable controversie, made in imitation of that in Theocritus: whereto also Virgil fashioned his third and seventh Aeglogue. They chose for Umper of their strife, Cuddy, a neat-beards boye; who having ended their cause, reciteth also himselfe a proper Song, whereof Colin he saith was Authour.

WILLIE. PERIGOT. CUDDIE.

Wil. TELL mee, Perigot, what shalbe the game,
Wherefore with mine thou dare thy musick
matche?

Or bene thy baggyppes renne farre out of frame?
Or hath the crampe thy ioynts benomd with ache?

Per. Ah! Willie, when the hart is ill assayde, ⁵

How can baggyppes or ioynts be well apayde?

Wil. What the foule evill hath thee so bestad?

Whilom thou was peregall to the best,
And, wont to make the iolly shepherds glad,

With pypping and dauncing didst passe the rest. ¹⁰

Per. Ah! Willie, now I have learnd a new daunce;

My old musick mard by a new mischaunce.

Wil. Mischief mought to that mischaunce befall,

That so hath raft us of our meriment;

But rede me what paine doth thee so apall; ¹⁵

Or lovest thou, or bene thy younglinges miswent?

Per. Love hath misled both my younglinges and

I pine for payne, and they my paine to see. [me;

Wil. Perdie, and wellawaye! ill may they thrive;

Never knew I lovers sheepe in good plight; ²⁰

But and if in rymes with me thou dare strive,

Such fond fantasies shall soone be put to flight.

Per. That shall I doe, though mochell worse I
fared:

Never shall be sayde that Perigot was dared.

Wil. Then loe, Perigot, the pledge which I plight, ²⁶

A mazer ywrought of the maple warre,

Wherein is enchased many a fayre sight

Of bears and tygers, that maken fiers warre;

And over them spred a goodly wilde vine,

Entrailed with a wanton yvy twine. ³⁰

Thereby is a lambe in the wolvs iawes;

But see, how fast renneth the shepheard swain

To save the innocent from the beastes pawes,

And here with his sheepehookke hath him slain.

Tell me, such a cup hast thou ever scene? ³⁵

Well mought it beseme any harvest queene.

Per. Thereto will I pawne yonder spotted lambe;

Of all my flocke there nis sike another,

For I brought him up without the dambe;

But Colin Clout rafte me of his brother, ⁴⁰

That he purchast of me in the plaine field;

Sore aginst my will was I forst to yeeld.

Wil. Sicker, make like account of his brother;

But who shall iudge the wager wonne or lost?

Per. That shall yonder heardgrome and none other, 45

Which over the pousse hetherward doth post.

Wil. But, for the sunnbeame so sore doth us beate, Were not better to shunne the scorching heate?

Per. Well agreed, Willie; then set thee downe, swayne;

Sike a song never heardest thou but Colin sing. 50

Cud. Gyne, when ye list, ye lolly shepheardes twayne;

Sike a iudge, as Cuddie, were for a king.

Per. "It fell upon a holy eve,

Wil. Hey, ho, holiday!

Per. When holy Fathers wont to shrieve; 55

Wil. Now ginneth this roundelay.

Per. Sitting upon a hill so hie,

Wil. Hey, ho, the high hill!

Per. The while my flocke did feede thereby;

Wil. The while the shepheard selfe did spill; 60

Per. I saw the bouncing Bellibone,

Wil. Hey, ho, Bonnihell!

Per. Tripping over the dale alone;

Wil. She can trip it very well.

Per. Well decked in a frocke of gray, 65

Wil. Hey, ho, gray is greet!

Per. And in a kirtle of greene saye,

Wil. The greene is for maydens meet.

Per. A chapelet on her head she wore,

Wil. Hey, ho, chapelet!

Per. Of sweete violets therein was store,

Wil. She sweeter then the violet.

Per. My sheepe did leave their wanted food,

Wil. Hey, ho, seeley sheepe!

Per. And gazd on her as they were wood,

Wil. Wood as he that did them keepe. 70

Per. As the bonilasse passed bye,

Wil. Hey, ho, bonilasse!

Per. She rovd at mee with glauncing eye,

Wil. As cleare as the cristall glasse:

Per. All as the sunny beame so bright,

Wil. Hey, ho, the sunne-beame!

Per. Glaunceth from Phoebus face forthright,

Wil. So love into thy heart did streame: 80

Per. Or as the thonder cleaves the cloudes,

Wil. Hey, ho, the thonder!

Per. Wherein the lightsome levin shroudes,

Wil. So cleaves thy soule asonder:

Per. Or as Dame Cynthias silver ray,

Wil. Hey, ho, the moonelight! 90

Per. Upon the glittering wave doth play,

Wil. Such play is a pitteous plight.

Per. The glaunce into my heart did glide,

Wil. Hey, ho, the glyder!

Per. Therewith my soule was sharply gryde,

Wil. Such woundes soon wexen wider. 95

Per. Hasting to raunch the arrowe out,

Wil. Hey, ho, Perigot!

Per. I left the head in my heart-root,

Wil. It was a desperate shot. 100

Per. There it rancckleth aye more and more,

Wil. Hey, ho, the arrow!

Per. Ne can I find salve for my sore,

Wil. Love is a carelesse sorrow.

Per. And though my bale with death I bought, 105

Wil. Hey, ho, heave cheere!

Per. Yet should thilk lasse not from my thought,

Wil. So you may buye golde too deere.

Per. But whether in paynefull love I pyne, 110

Wil. Hey, ho, pinching payne!

Per. Or thrive in wealth, she shalbe mine,

Wil. But if thou can her obtaine.

Per. And if for gracelesse grieffe I dye,

Wil. Hey, ho, gracelesse grieffe!

Per. Witness she slue me with her eye, 115

Wil. Let thy folly be the priefe.

Per. And you, that sawe it, simple sheepe,

Wil. Hey, ho, the fayre flocke!

Per. For priefe thereof, my death shall weepe,

Wil. And mone with many a moeke. 120

Per. So leard I love on a holy eve,

Wil. Hey, ho, holy-day!

Per. That ever since my heart did greve,

Wil. Now endeth our roundelay.

Cud. Sicker, sike a roundle never heard I none;

Little lacketh Perigot of the best, 125

And Willie is not greatly overgone,

So weren his under-songs well address. [eye;

Wil. Heardgrome, I fear me thou have a squint

Arceede uprightly, who has the victorie. 130

Cud. Fayth of my soule, I deeme eche have gained;

Fortly let the lambe be Willie his owne;

And for Perigot, so well hath him payned,

To him be the wroughten mazer alone.

Per. Perigot is well pleased with the doome, 135

Ne can Willie wite the witlesse heardgrome.

Wil. Never dempt more right of beautie, I weene,

The shepheard of Ida that iudged Beauties queene.

Cud. But tell me, Shepheardes, should it not yshend

Your roundels fresh, to heare a dolefull verse 140

Of Rosalind (who knows not Rosalind)

That Colin made? ylike can I you rehearse.

Per. Now say it, Cuddie, as thou art a ladde;

With mery thing its good to medle sadde.

Wil. Fayth of my soule, thou shalt ycrownd he 145

In Colins steede, if thou this song arceede;

For never thing on earth so pleaseth me

As him to heare, or matter of his deede.

Cud. Then listen eche unto my heavey lay,

And tune your pypes as ruthfull as yee may. 150

"Ye wasteful Woodes! bear witness of my woe,

Wherein my plaints did oftentimes resounde;

Ye carelesse Byrds are privy to my cries,

Which in your songs were wont to make a part:

Thou, pleasaunt Spring, hast luid mee oft 155

asleepe,

Whose streames my trickling teares did oft aug-

ment!

"Resort of people doth my griefes augment,

The walled towns doe work my greater woe;

The forest wide is fitter to resound

The hollow echo of my careful cries: 160

I hate the house, since thence my Love did part,

Whose wailefull want debars mine eyes of sleepe.

"Let stremes of teares supply the place of sleepe;

Let all, that sweete is, voyd; and all, that may

augment

My dole, draw neere! More meete to waile my

woe 165

Bene the wilde woods, my sorows to resound,

Then bed, nor bowre, both which I fill with cries,

When I them see so waste, and finde no part

Ver. 75. — wood,] *Mad.* TODD.

Ver. 79. — rovd] The old spelling of roved. TODD.

Ver. 142. — ylike] *That, or the same.* TODD.

" Of pleasure past. Here will I dwell apart
 In gastfull grove therefore, till my last sleep 170
 Doo close mine eyes ; so shall I not augment
 With sight of such as change my restlesse woe.
 Help me, yee banefull Byrds ! whose shrieking
 Is signe of dreery death, my deadly cries [sound

" Most ruthfully to tune : and as my cryes 175
 (Which of my woe cannot bewray least part)
 You heare all night, wheu Nature craveth sleep,
 Increase, so let your yrksome yelles augment.
 Thus all the nightes in plaintes, the daye in woe,
 I vowed have to waste, till safe and sound 180

" She home returne, whose voyces silver sound
 To cheerefull songes can change my cheerelesse
 Hence with the nightingale will I take part, [cries.
 That blessed byrd, that spendes her time of sleepe
 In songes and plaintive pleas, the more t' aug-
 ment 185
 The memorie of his misdeede that bred her woe.

" And you that feel no woe, when as the sound
 Of these my nightlie cries ye heare apart,
 Let breake your sounder sleepe, and pitie aug-
 ment."

Per. O Colin, Colin ! the shepheardes ioye, 190
 How I admire ech turning of thy verse ;
 And Cuddie, freshe Cuddie, the hiefest boye,
 How dolefully his dole thou didst rehearse !
Cud. Then blow your pypes, Shepheardes, till you
 be at home ;
 The night higheth fast, yts time to be gone. 205

PERIGOT HIS EMBLEME.

Vincenti gloria victi.

WILLYES EMBLEME.

Vinto non vitto.

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Felice chi puo.

GLOSSE.

Bestadde, disposed, ordered.
Perigall, equall.
Whilome, once.
Rafte, bereft, deprived.
Miswent, gone astray.
Ill may, according to Virgil.

"Infelix O semper ovis pecus."

A mazer ; So also doo Theocritus and Virgil feigne pledges of theyr strife.

Enchosed, engraven. Such prettie descriptions every where useth Theocritus, to bring in his Idyllia. For which speciall cause indeed, hee by that name termeth his Aeglogues ; for Idyllion in Greeke signifieth the shape or picture of any thing, whereof his booke is full. And not as I have heard some fondly guesse, that they bee called not Idyllia, but Hædilia, of the Goteheards in them.

Entrailed, wrought betweene.

Harvest Queene, The maner of cuntry folke in harvest time.

Pousse, Pease.

It fell upon ; Perigot maketh all his song in praise of his Love, to whom Willye answereth every under-verse. By Perigot who is ment, I cannot uprightly say : but if it be who is supposed, his Love deserveth no lesse praise then be giveth her.

Grette, weeping and complaint.

Chaplet, a kinde of Garland like a crowne.

Levin, Lightning.

Cynthia, was said to be the Moone.

Gryde, peared.

But if, not unlesse.

Squint eye, partiall iudgement.

Eche have, so saith Virgil.

"Et vitula tu dignus, & hic &c."

Doo, iudgement.

Dempt, for deemed, iudged.

Write the witelesse, blame the blamelesse.

The shepheard of Ida, was said to be Paris.

Beauties Queene, Venus, to whom Paris adjudged the golden Apple, as the price of hir beantie.

EMBLEME.

The meaning hereof is verie ambiguous : for Perigot by his poesie claiming the conquest, and Willye not yeelding, Cuddie the arbiter of theyr cause, and patron of his owne, seemeth to challenge it, as his due, saying, that hee is happie which can ; so abruptly ending, bu thee meaneth eyther him, that can win the best, or moderate himselfe being best, and leave off with the best.

SEPTEMBER.

A E G L O G A N O N A.

ARGUMENT.—Herein Diggon Davie is devised to be a shepheard that, in hope of more gaine, drove his sheepe into a farre cuntry. The abuses whereof, and loose living of popish prelates, by occasion of Hobbinnols demaund, he discourseth at large.

HOBBINOLL. DIGGON DAVIE.

Hob. Diggon Davie ! I bid her god day ;
 Or Diggon her is, or I missay.

Dig. Her was her, while it was day-light,
 But nowe her is a most wretched wight :

For day, that was, is wightly past,
 And now at earst the dirke night doth hast.

Hob. Diggon, areede who has thee so dight ;
 Never I wist thee in so poore a plight.

Where is the layre flocke thou was woont to lead ?
 Or bene they chaffred, or at mischief dead ? 10

Dig. Ah ! for love of that is to thee most leefee,
 Hobbinnoll, I pray thee gall not my olde greefe ;

Ver. 6. — dirke] *Dirk* is the old northern word for lark. Tonn.

Ver. 11. — of that is] Of that which is. Again, Ver. 138. "And cleanly cover that [which] cannot be cured." Numerous examples of this ellipsis occur in Spenser. Tonn.

Sike question rippeth up cause of new woe,
For one, opened, mote unfold many moe.

Hob. Nay, but sorrow close shrouded in heart, 15
I know, to keepe is a burdenous smart :
Ech thing imparted is more eath to beare :
When the rayne is fallen, the clouds waxen cleare.
And now, sithence I saw thy head last,
Thrice three moones bene fully spent and past ; 20
Since when thou hast measured much ground,
And wandred weele about the world round,
So as thou can many thinges relate ;
But tell me first of thy flockes estate.

Dig. My sheepe bene wasted ; (wae is me there-
fore l) 25

The iolly shepheard that was of yore,
Is now nor iolly, nor shepheard more.
In forreine coastes men sayd was plentie ;
And so there is, but all of miserie :
I dempt there much to have eeked my store, 30
But such eeking hath made my heart sore.
In the countries, whereas I have bene,
No beeing for those that truly mene ;
But for such, as of guile maken gaine,
No such country as there to remaine ; 35
They setten to sale theyr shops of shaine,
And maken a mart of theyr good name :
The shepherds there robben one another,
And layen baytes to beguile her brother ;
Or they will buye his sheepe out of the cote,
Or they will carven the shepheardes throte.
The shepheardes swayne you cannot well ken,
But it be by his pride, from other men ;
They looken bigge as bulles that bene bate,
And hearen the cragge so stiffe and so state, 45
As cocke on his dunghill crowing cranck.

Hob. Diggon, I am so stiffe and so stanck,
That uneth may I stand any more ;
And now the westerne winde bloweth sore,
That now is in his chiefe soveraigntee,
Beating the withered leafe from the tree ;
Sitte we downe here under the hill ;
Tho may we talke and tellen our fill,
And make a mocke at the blustering blast :
Now say on, Diggon, whatever thou hast. 55

Dig. Hobbin, ah Hobbin ! I curse the stound
That ever I cast to have lorne this ground :
Wel-away the while I was so fond
To leave the good, that I had in hond,
In hope of better that was uncooth ;
So lost the dogge the flesh in his month.
My seely sheepe (ah ! seely sheepe !)
That here by there I wilome usde to keepe,
All were they lustie as thou diddest see,
Bene all starved with pyne and penuree ; 65
Hardly my selfe escaped thilke paine,
Driven for neede to come home againe.

Hob. Ah ! fon, now by thy losse art taught
That seldom change the better brought :
Content who lives with tryed state,
Neeede feare no change of frowning Fate ;
But who will seeke for unknowne gayne,
Oft lives by losse, and leaves with payne.

Dig. I wote ne, Hobbin, how I was bewitcht
With vayne desire and hope to be enricht : 75
But, sicker, so it is, as the bright starre
Seemeth aye greater when it is farre :

I thought the soyle would have made me rich,
But now I wote it is nothing sich ;
For eyther the shepherds bene ydle and still, 80
And ledde of theyr sheepe what way they will,
Or they bene false, and full of covetise,
And casten to compass many wronge emprise :
But the more bene fraight with fraud and spight,
Ne in good nor goodnes taken delight, 85
But kindle coales of conteck and yre,
Wherewith they set all the world on fire ;
Which when they thinke againe to quench,
With holy water they doen hem all drench,
They saye they con to heaven the high-way, 90
But by my soule I dare undersaye
They never sette foote in that same troad,
But balke the right way, and strayen abroad.
They boast they han the devill at commaund,
But aske hem therefore what they han paund : 95
Marrie ! that great Pan bought with deare borrow,
To quite it from the blacke bowre of sorrow.
But they han sold thilke same long egoe,
For they woulde draw with hem many moe.
But let hem gange alone a Gods name ; 100
As they han brewed, so let hem beare blame.

Hob. Diggon, I praye thee speake not so dirke ;
Such myster saying me seemeth to-mirke ;

Dig. Then, plainly to speake of shepherds
moste what, 105

Badde is the best ; (this English is flat.) 110
Their ill haviour garres men missay
Both of theyr doctrine, and theyr fay.
They sayne the world is much war then it wont,
All for her shepheardes bene beastly and blont.
Other sayne, but howe truely I n'ote, 115
All for they holden shame of their cote :
Some sticke not to say, (hote cole on her tongue !)
That sike mischiefe graseth hem emong,
All for they casten too much of worldes care,
To deck her dame, and enrich her heire ; 120
For such encheason, if you goe nie,
Fewe chimnies reeking you shall espie.
The fat oxe, that wont ligge in the stall,
Is now fast stalled in her crumenall.
Thus chatten the people in their steads, 125
Ylike as a monster of many heads :
But they, that shooten nearest the pricke,
Sayne, other the fat from their beards doen lick :
For bigge bulles of Basan brace hem about,
That with their hornes butten the more stoute ; 130
But the leane soules treaden nder foot,
And to seeke redresse mought little boote ;
For liker bene they to pluck away more,
Then onght of the gotten good to restore :
For they bene like fowle wagoires overgrast, 135
That, if thy galage once sticketh fast,
The more to winde it out thou dost swinck,
Thon mought aye deeper and deeper sinck.
Yet better leave off with a litle losse,
Then by much wrestling to leese the grosse. 140

Hob. Nowe, Diggon, I see thou speakest too
Better it were a litle to feine, [plaine ;
And cleanelly cover that cannot be cured ;
Such ill, as is forced, mought needes bee endured.
But of sike pastoures howe done the flocks creepe? 145

Dig. Sike as the shepherds, sike bene her sheepe,
For they nill listen to the shepherds voice ;

Ver. 39. — her] *Their.* TOOD.
Ver. 46. *As cocke on his dunghill, crowing cranck.*]
Crank is lusty, courageous. TOOD.

Ver. 104. — what,] *Affairs, &c.* TOOD.
Ver. 109. — blont.] *Stupid or unpolished.* TOOD.
Ver. 130. — wagoires] *Quagmires.* TOOD.

But if he call hem, at their good choice
 They wander at will and stay at pleasure,
 And to their folds yeade at their owne leasure. 145
 But they had be better come at their call;
 For many han unto mischiefe fall,
 And bene of ravenous wolves yrent,
 All for they could be buxome and bent.

Hob. Fie on thee, Diggon, and all thy foule
 leasing; 150

Well is knowne that, sith the Saxon king,
 Never was wolf seene, many nor some,
 Nor in all Kent, nor in Christendome;
 But the fewer wolves (the sooth to saine)
 The more bene the foxes that here remaine. 155

Dig. Yes, but they gang in more secret wise,
 And with sheeps clothing doen hem disguise.
 They walke not widely as they were wont,
 For feare of raungers and the great hunt,
 But prively prolling to and froe, 160
 Enaunter they mought be inly knowe.

Hob. Or privie or pert if any him,
 We han great bandogs will teare their skin.

Dig. In deede thy Ball is a bold bigge cur,
 And could make a iolly hole in their fur:
 But not good dogs hem needeth to chace,
 But heedy shepherds to discerne their face;
 For all their craft is in their countenance,
 They bene so grave and full of maintenance.
 But shall I tell thee what my self knowe 170
 Chaunced to Roffin not long ygoe?

Hob. Say it out, Diggon, whatever it hight,
 For not but well mought him betight:
 He is so meeke, wise, and merchieable, 175
 And with his word his work is convenable.
 Colin Clout, I weene, be his selfe boye,
 (Ah, for Colin! he whilome my ioye:)
 Shepherds sich, God mought us many send,
 That doo so carefully theyer flocks tend.

Dig. Thilke same shepherd mought I well
 marke, 180

He has a dogge to bite or to barke;
 Never had shepherd so keene a cur,
 That waketh and if but a leafe stur.
 Whilome there wonned a wicked wolfe,
 That with many a lambe had gutted his gulfe, 185
 And ever at night wont to repayre
 Unto the flocke, when the welkin shone fayre,
 Yelad in clothing of seely sheepe,
 When the good olde man used to sleepe;
 Tho at midnight he would barke and ball, 190
 (For he had eft learned a curre's call.)

As if a wolfe were among the sheepe:
 With that the shepherd would breake his sleepe,
 And send out Lowder (for so his dog hote)
 To rounge the fields with wide open throte, 195
 Tho, when as Lowder was far away,
 This wolvishe sheepe would catchen his pray,
 A lambe, or a kid, or a weanell wast;
 With that to the wood would hee speede him fast.
 Long time he used this slipperly pranck, 200
 Ere Roffy could for his labour him thanck.
 At end, the shepherd his practise spyed,
 (For Roffy is wise, and as Argus eyed,
 And, when at even he came to the flocke,
 Fast in their foldes he did them locke, 205

Ver. 145. — yeade] To yeade or yede is to go, and frequently occurs in the *Faerie Queene*. Todd.

Ver. 162. Or privie or pert] Open or secret. T. WAR-
 TON.

And tooke out the wolfe in his counterfeit cote,
 And let out the sheepes bloud at his throte.

Hob. Marry, Diggon, what should him affraye
 To take his owne where ever it laye?

For, had his wesand been a little widder, 210
 He woulde have devoured both hidder and shidder.

Dig. Mischiefe light on him, and Gods great
 curse,

Too good for him had bene a great deale worse;
 For it was a perilous beast above all,

And eke had hee comd the shepherds call, 215
 And oft in the night came to the sheep-cote,

And called Lowder; with a hollow throte,
 As if the olde man selfe had benee:

The dogge his maisters voice did it weene,
 Yet halfe in doubt he opened the dore, 220

And ranne out as he was wont of yore.
 No sooner was out, but, swifter then thought,

Fast by the hyde the wolfe Lowder caught;
 And, had not Roffy renne to the steven,

Lowder had bene slaine thilke same even. 225

Hob. God shield, Man, hee should so ill have
 All for he did his devoyre helive. [thrive,

If sike bene wolves, as thou hast told,
 How mought we, Diggon, hem behold?

Dig. How, but, with heede and watchfullnesse, 230
 Forstallen hem of their wilnesse:

For-ty with: shepherd sittes not play,
 Or sleepe, as some doen, all the long day;

But ever ligen in watch and ward,
 From sodaine force their flocks for to gard. 235

Hob. Ah! Diggon, thilke same rule were too
 All the cold season to watch and waite: [straight,

We bene of flesh, men as other hee,
 Why should we be bound to such miseree?

What-ever thing lacketh chaungeable rest, 240
 Mought needes decay, when it is at best.

Dig. Ah! but, Hobbinoll, all thi's long tale
 Nought easeeth the care that doth mee forhaile;

What shall I doe? what way shall I wend,
 My piteous plight and losse to amend? 245

Ah! good Hobbinoll, mought I thee pray
 Of ayde or counsell in my decaye.

Hob. Now by my soule, Diggon, I lament
 The haplesse mischiefe that has thee hent;

Nethelasse thou seest my lowly saile, 250
 That forward Fortune doth ever availe:

But, were Hobbinoll as God mought please,
 Diggon should soone finde favour and ease:

But if to my cotage thou wilt resort,
 So as I can I will thee comfort; 255

There mayst thou ligue in a vetchy bed,
 Till fairer Fortune shew forth his head.

Dig. Ah! Hobbinoll, God mought it thee requite;
 Diggon on fewe such friendes did ever lite. 260

DIGGONS EMBLEME.

In opem me copia fecit.

GLOSSE.

The Dialect and phrase of speech, in this Dialogue, seemeth somewhat to differ from the common. The cause whereof is supposed to be, by occasion of the partie herein

Ver. 215. — comd] *Learnt*. So in ver. 90. *con* signifies to know. Todd.

Ver. 227. *All for he did his devoyre helive*.] "Because he did his duty promptly or quickly." Todd.

mesnt, who, being verie friend to the Authour hereof, had bene long in forrain countreys, and there seene many disorders, which he here recounteth to Hobbinoll.

Bidde her, Bidde good morrow. For to hidde, is to pray, whereof commeth beades for priers, and so they say, To bidde his beades, s. to say his priers.

Wightly, quickly, or sodainly.

Chaffred, solde.

Dead at mischiefe, an unusuall spesch, but much usurped of Lidgate, and sometime of Chaucer.

Leefe, Deare.

Ethe, easie.

Thrise three Moones, nine monethes.

Measured, for traueiled.

Wae, woe, Northernly.

Eeked, encreased.

Carven, cutte.

Ken, know.

Cragge, neck.

Stale, stoutly.

Slanck, weary or faint.

And now: hee applieth it to the time of the yeare, which is in the eade of harvest, which they call the fall of the leafe: at which time the Westerns wiade beareth most swaye.

A mocke, Imitating Horace, "*Debes iudibrum ventis.*"

Lorne, left.

Saote, sweete.

Incouth, uoknowne.

Here by, there, here and there.

As the bright, &c. translated out of Mantua.

Emprisa, for enterprisa. Per Syncopen.

Conteck, strife.

Trode, path.

Marrie that, that is, their soules, which by Popish exorcismes and practises they damne to hell.

Blacke, hell.

Gang, goe.

Mister, manner.

Mirke, obscure.

Warre, worse.

Crumenall, purse.

Brace, compass.

Encheson, occasion.

Overgrast, overgrowne with grasse.

Galage, shoe.

The grosse, the whole.

Buxome and bent, meeke and obedient.

Saxon King, King Edgare that reigned here in Britanie in the yeare of our Lord [959 &c.] Which King caused all the Wolves, whereof then was store in this country, by a proper policie to be destroyed. So as never since that time, there have bene Wolves here found, unless they were brought from other countries. And therefore Hobbinoll rebuketh him of untruth, for sayiog that there be Wolves in England.

Nor in Christendome: this saying seemeth to be strange

and unreasonable: but indeed it was wont to be an olde proverbe and common phrase. The Originall whereof was, for that most part of England in the reigns of King Ethelbert was christened, Keat only except, which remained long after in misbeliefs and unchristened: So that Keat was counted no part of Christendome.

Great hunt, Executing of lawes and iustice.

Encunter, least that.

Inly, inwardly: aforesaid.

Prive or pert, openly, saith Chaucer.

Roffy, the name of a shepheard in Marot his Aeglogue of Robin and the King. Whom he here commendeth for great care and wise gouernance of his flocke.

Colin Clout: Now I think no man doubteth but by Colin is meant the Authors selfe, whose especial good friend Hobbinoll saith hee is, or more rightly Maister Gabriel Harvey: of whose especial commendation, as well in Poetrie as Rhetoricke and other choice learning, we have lately had a sufficient triall in divers his workes, but specially in his *Musarum Lacrymae*, and his late *Gratulationum Vaddinensium*, which books, in the progresse at Andley in Essex, he dedicated in writing to her Maiestie, afterward presenting the same in print to her Highnesse at the worshipful Maister Capels in Hertfordshire. Beside other his suadry most rare and verie notable writings, partly under unknowen titles, and partly under counterfeit names, as his *Tyrannomastix*, his *Olde Natalitia*, his *Rameidos*, and especially that part of *Philomusus*, his *divine Anticosmopolita*, and divers other of like importance. As also, by the name of other shepherds, he covereth the persons of divers other his familiar friends and best acquaintance.

This tale of Roffy seemeth to colour some particular Action of his. But what, I certainly know not.

Wonne, haunted.

Welkin, skye: aforesaid.

A weanell waste, a weaned yongling.

Hidder and shidder, he and she, Male and Female

Steven, noyse.

Belive, quickly.

What ever, Ovids verse translated.

"Quod caret alterna requie, durabile non est."

Forhaile, draw or distresse.

Vetchie, of Pease straw.

EMBLEME.

This is the saying of Narcissus in Ovid. For when the foolish boy, by beholding his face in the brooke, fell in love with his owne likeness; and, not able to content himselfe with much looking thereon, he cried out, that pleatie made him poore, meaning that much gazing had bereft him of sence. But Diggon useth to other purpose, as who that, by tryall of many wayes, had found the worst, and through great plentie was fallen into great penury. This Poesie I know to have bene much used of the Authour and to such like effect, as first Narcissus spake it.

OCTOBER.

AEGLOGA DECIMA.

ARGUMENT.—In Cuddie is set out the perfect patern of a Poet, which, finding no maintenance of his state and studies, complaineth of the contempt of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: Specially having bene in all ages, and even amongst the most barbarous, alwaies of singular account and honour, and being indeed so worthie and commendable an art; or rather no art, but a divine gift and heavenly instinct not to be gotten by labour and learning, but adorned with both, and poured into the wits by a certaine Enthousiasmos and celestiaall inspiration, as the Author hereof elsde where at large discourseth in his booke called *The English Poet*, which booke being lately come to my handes, I minde also to Gods grace, upon further advisement, to publish.

PIERS. CUDDIE.

Piers. CUDDIE, for shame, holde up thy heavie
And let us cast with what delight to chace [head,
And weary this long lingring Phœbus race.
Whilome thou wont the shepheards laddes to leade
In rimes, in riddles, and in bydding base ;
Nowe they in thee, and thou in sleepe arte, deade.

Cud. Piers, I have pyped erst so long with payne,
That all mine oten reedes ben rent and wore,
And my poore Muse hath spent her spared store,
Yet little good hath got, and much lesse gayne.
Such pleasaunce makes the grasshopper so poore,
And ligge so layd, when winter doth her straine.

The dapper ditties, that I wont devise,
To feede youtnes fansie, and the flocking fry
Delighten much ; what I the bett forthy ?
They han the pleasure, I a sclender prise :
I beate the bush, the hyrdes to them do flie :
What good thereof to Cuddie can arise ?

Piers. Cuddie, the praise is better then the price,
The glory eke much greater then the gayne :
O what an honour is it, to restraine
The lust of lawlesse youth with good advice,
Or pricke them fourth with pleasaunce of thy vaine,
Whereto thou list their trained willes entice !

Soone as thou gynst to sette thy notes in frame,
O how the rural routes to thee do cleave !
Seemeth thou doest theyr soule of sense bereave,
All as the shepheard that did fetch his dame
From Plutoes balefull bowre withouten leave ;
His musickes might the hellish hound did tame.

Cud. So praysen babes the peacocks spotted
trayne,
And wondren at bright Argus blazing eye ;
But who rewardes him ere the more forthy,
Or feedes him once the fuller by a graine ?
Sike praise is smoke, that sheddeth in the skie ;
Sike words bene winde, and wasten soone in vaine.

Piers. Abandon then the hase and viler clowne ;
Lift up thy selfe out of the lowly dust,
And sing of bloody Mars, of wars, of giusts ;
Turne thee to those that weld the awful crowne,
To doubted knights, whose woundlesse armour
rusts,
And helmes unbrazed wexen daylie browne.

There may thy Muse display her fluttering wing,
And stretch her selfe at large from east to west ;
Whither thou list in fayre Elisa rest,
Or, if thee please in bigger notes to sing,
Advance the Worthy whom shee loveth best,
That first the White Beare to the Stake did bring.

And, when the stubborne stroke of stronger stounds
Has somewhat slackt the tenor of thy string,

Ver. 2. — cast] *Consider.* TODD.
Ver. 5. — in bydding base,] The game of base or
Prison-base. TODD.

Ver. 15. — bett] *Better.* TODD.
Ver. 39. — giusts:] *Justs or tournaments.* TODD.
Ver. 40. — weld] *Wield.* T. WARTON.
Ver. 49. — stounds] *Times or occasions.* TODD.

Of love and lustihead tho maist thou sing,
And earroll lowde, and leade the Millers rounde,
All were Elisa one of thilk same ring ;
So mought our Cuddies name to heaven sounde.

Cud. In deede the Romish Tityrus, I heare,
Through his Mecænas left his oaten reede,
Whereon hee earst had taught his flocks to feede,
And laboured lands to yeeld the timely eare,
And eft did sing of warres and deadly dreede,
So as the heavens did quake his verse to heare.

But ah ! Mecænas is yclad in claye,
And great Augustus long ygoe is dead,
And all the worthies ligger wrapt in lead,
That matter made for poets on to playe :
For ever, who in derring-doe were dread,
The loftie verse of hem was loved aye.

But after Vertue gan for age to stonpe,
And mightie Manhood brought a bedde of ease,
The vaunting poets found nought worth a pease
To put in preace among the learned troupe ;
Tho gan the streames of flowing wittes to cease,
And sunnebright honour pend in shamefull coupe.

And if that any buddes of Poesie,
Yet of the old stocke, gan to shoote againe,
Or it mens follies mote to-force to faim,
And rolle with rest in rymes of ribaudrie ;
Or, as it sprung, it wither must againe ;
Tom Piper makes us better melodie.

Piers. O pierlesse Po'esie ! where is then thy
place !
If nor in princes pallace thou doest sit,
(And yet is princes pallace the most fit,)
Ne brest of baser birth doth thee embrace,
Then make thee wings of thine aspiring wit,
And, whence thou camst, flie backe to heaven apace.

Cud. Ah ! Percy, it is all-to weake and wanne,
So high to sore and make so large a flight ;
Her peeced pyneons bene not so in plight ;
For Colin fits such famous flight to scanne ;
He, were he not with love so ill bedight,
Would mount as high and sing as soote as swanne.

Piers. Ah ! fon ; for Love does teach him climbe
so hie,
And lyftes him up out of the loathsome myre ;
Such immortal mirror, as he doth admire,
Would rayse ones minde above the starrie skie,
And cause a caytive corage to aspire ;
For loftie love doth loath a lowly eye.

Cud. All otherwise the state of Poet stands ;
For lordly Love is such a tyranne fell,
That, where he rules, all power he doth expell ;
The vaunted verse a vacant head demaundes,
Ne wont with crabbed Care the Muses dwell :
Unwisely weaves, that takes two webbes in hand.

Who ever castes to compasse wightie prise,
And thinks to throwe out thundring words of threat,

Ver. 51. — lustihead] *Jollity.* TODD.
Ver. 76. — ribaudrie:] *Ribaldry, obscenity.* Tonn
Ver. 98. — tyranne] *Tyrant.* TODD.

Let powre in lavish cups and thriftie bittes of meate,
For Bacchus fruite is friend to Phoebus wise; ¹⁰⁵
And, when with wine the braine begins to sweat,
The numbers flow as fast as spring doth rise.

Thou kenst not, Percie, how the rime should rage;
O if my temples were distain'd with wine, ¹¹⁰
And girt in girdlands of wilde yvie twine,
How I could reare the Muse on stately stage,
And teach her tread aloft in buskin fine,
With quaint Bellona in ber equipage!

But ah! my courage cooles ere it be warme: ¹¹⁵
Forthy content us in this humble shade,
Where no such troublous tydes han us assayde;
Here we our slender pipes may safely charme.

Piers. And, when my gates shall han their bellies
layd,
Cuddie shall have a kidde to store his farme. ¹²⁰

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Agitante calescimus illo, &c.

GLOSSE.

This Aeglogue is made in imitation of Theocritus his 16. Idilion, wherein he reprooved the Tyranne Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towards Poets, in whom is the power to make men immortal for their good deeds, or shameful for their naughtie life. And the like also is in Mantuane. The style hereof as also that in Theocritus, is more loftie then the rest, and applied to the height of Poeticall wit.

Cuddie, I doubt whether by Cuddy be specified the Author selfe, or some other. For in the eight Aeglogue the same person was brought in, singing a Cansion of Colins making, as he saith. So that some doubt, that the persons be different.

Whilome, sometime.

Oaten reedes, Avenæ.

Ligge so layd, lye so faint and unlustie.

Dapper, pretie.

Fry, is a bold Metaphor, forced from the spawning fishes; for the multitude of young fish be called the Frye.

To restraine: This place seemeth to conspire with Plato, who in his first booke de Legibus saith, that the first invention of Poetry was of very vertuous intent. For at what time an infinit number of youth usually came to their great solemne feastes called Panegyrica, which they used every five yeare to hold, some learned man, being more able then the rest for speciall gifts of wit and Musick, would take upon him to sing fine verses to the people, in praise either of vertue or of victorie, or of immortalitie, or such like. At those wonderfull gift all men being astonished and as it were ravished with delight, thinking (as it was indeed) that he was inspired from above, called him *Vatem*: which kinde of men afterward framing their verses to lighter musick (as of Musicke there be many Kindes, some sadder, some lighter, some martiall, some heroicall, and so diversly eke affect the mindes of men.) found out lighter matter of Poesie also, some playing with love, some acoring at mens fashions, some poured out in pleasure: and so were called Poets or makers.

Sense hereane: what the secret working of musick is in the minds of men, as well appeareth hereby, that some of the auintient Philosophers, and those the most wise, as Plato and Pythagoras, held for opinion, that the minde was made of a certaine harmony and musicall numbers, for the great compassion, and likeness of affection in th' one and the other, as also by that memorable history of Alexander; to whom whenas Timotheus the great Musi-

tian plaid the Phrygian melody, It is said, that hee was distraught with such unwonted fury, that, straightway rising from the table in great rage, he caused himselfe to be armed, as ready to go to warre, (for that musicke is very warlike.) And immediately when as the Musitian changed his stroke into the Lydian and Ionique harmony, he was so far from warring, that he sat as still, as if he had bin in matters of counsell. Such might is in Musick. Wherefore Plato and Aristotle forbid the Arabian Melody from children and youth. For that being altogether on the fifth and seventh tone, it is of great force to mollifie and quench the kindly courage, which useth to burne in young breasts. So that it is not incredible which the Poet here saith, that Musick can bereave the soule of sense.

The shepherd that, Orpheus: of whom is said, that by his excellent skill in Musick and Poetry, he recovered his wife Eurydice from hell.

Argus eyes: of Argus is before said, that Iuno to him committed her husband Inpiter his Paragon Io, because hee had an hundred eyes; but afterward Mercury, with his Musick lulling Argus asleepe, slue him and brought Io away, whose eyes it is said that Iuno, for his eternall memorie, placed in her byrd the Peacocks taile; for those coloured spots indeed resemble eyes.

Woundlesse armour, unwounded in warre, do rust through long peace.

Display, A Poeticall metaphor, whereof the meaning is, that, if the Poet list shew his skill in matter of more dignitie then in the homely Aeglogue, good occasion is him offered of bigger veynes and more Heroicall argument in the person of our most grations soveraigne, whom (as before) hee calleth Elisa. Or if matter of knighthood and chivalry please him better, that there be many noble and valiant men, that are both worthy of his pains to theyr deserved praises, and also favourers of his skill and facultie.

The Worthy, he meaneth (as I ghesse) the most honour able and renowned the Earle of Leycester, whom by his cognisance (although the same be also proper to other, rather then by his name he hewraeth, being not likely that the names of worldly princes be knowne to countrey clownes.

Slack, that is when thou chaungest thy verse to stately course, to matter of more pleasance and delight.

The Millers, a kinde of daunce.

Ring, companie of dauncers.

The Romish Tityrus, well known to be noble Virgil, who by Mæcenas meanes was brought into the favor of the Emperour Augustus, and by him moved to write in loftier kind then he earst had done,

Whereon, &c. in these three verses are the three severall workes of Virgil intended, for in teaching his flocke to feede, is meant his Aeglogues. In labouring of lands, is his Georgiques. In singing of warres and deadly dread, is his divine Aeneis figured.

In derring do, In manhood and chivalrye.

For ever. He sheweth the cause why Poets were wont to bee had in such honour of noble men, that is, that by them their worthinesse and valor should through their famous poesies be commended to all posterities. Wherefore it is said, that Achilles had never bene so famous, as he is, but for Homers immortal verses, which is the onely advantage which hee had of Hector. And also that Alexander the great, comming to his tombe in Sigues, with naturall teares blessed him, that ever it was his hap to be honoured with so excellent a poets worke, as so renowned and ennobled only by his meanes. Which being declared in a most eloquent Oration of Tullies, is of Petrarch no lesse worthily set forth in a Sonnet.

"Giunto Alessandro a la famosa tomba

"Del fero Achille, sospirando disse:

"O fortunato, che ai chiara tomba Tronasti, &c."

And that such account hath bene always made of Poets, as well sheweth this, that the worthy Scipio, in all his warres against Carthage and Numantia, had evermore in his companie, and that in most familiar sort, the good olde poet Ennius; as a' so that Alexander destroying Thebes, when he was informed, that the famous Lyrick poet Pin-

darus was borne in that Cittle, not onely commaunded straightly, that no man should, upon paine of death, do any violence to that house, or otherwise: but also specially spared most, and some highly rewarded, that were of his kinne. So favoured he the onely name of a poet, which praise otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, that when he came to ransacking of king Darius coffers, whom hee lately had overthrowne, he found in a little coffer of silver the two bookes of Homers workes, as laide up there for special Jewels and riches, which he taking thence, put one of them dayly in his bosome, and the other every night layde under his pillow. Such honour have Poets alwayes found in the sight of Princes and noble men, which this authour here verie well sheweth, as else were more notably.

But after, &c. he sheweth the cause of contempt of poetrie to be idlenesse and baseness of minde.

Pent, shut up in slouth, as in a coope or cage.

Tom Pyper, an ironicall Sarcasmus, spoken in derision of those rude wits, which make more account of a ryming ribaud then of skill groundd upon learning and judgement.

Ne brest, the meaner sort of men

Her peeced pineons, imperfect skill: Spoken with humble modestie.

As soote as swanne: The comparison seemeth to be strange: for the swan hath ever woonne small commendation for her sweete singing: but it is said of the learned, that the Swanne, a litle before her death, singeth most pleasantly, as prophceying by a secreete instinct her neere destinie, as well saith the poet elsewhere in one of his Sonnets.

"The silver Swan doth sing before her dying day,

"As she that feeles the deepe delight that is in death, &c."

Immortall mirrour, Beautie, which is an excellent object of poeticall spirits, as appeareth by the worthie Petrarch, saying.

"Florir faceva il mio debile ingegno,

"A la sua ombra, et crescer ne gli affanni."

A caytive courage, a base and ableet minde.

For lustie love, I thinke this playing with the letter, he rather a fault then a figure, as well in our English tongue, as it hath bene always in the Latin, called *Cocozelon*.

A vacant, imitateth Mantuans saying, "Vacuum curis divina cerebrum Poscit."

Lavish cups, Resembleth the common verse, "Fœcundi calices quem non fecere disertum."

O if my, &c. he seemeth here to be ravished with a poeticall furie. For (if one rightly marke) the numbers rise so full, and the verse groweth so bigge, that it seemeth he had forgot the meannesse of shepheards state and stile.

Wild yvie, for it is dedicate to Bacchus, and therefore it is sayd, that the Mænades (that is Bacchus franticke priests) used in their sacrifice to carrie Thyrsos, which were pointed staves or iavelins, wrapped about with yvie.

In buskin, it was the maner of poets and players in Tragedies to weare buskins, as also in Comedies to use socks and light shoes. So that the buskin in poetrie is used for tragical matter, as is said in Virgill, "Sola Sophocleo tua carmina digna cothurno." And the like in Horace, "Magnum loqui, nitique cothurno."

Queint, strange. Bellona the goddesse of battell, that is, Pallas, which may therefore well be called queint, for that (as Lucian saith) when Iupiter her father was in travaile of her, he caused his sonne Vulcan with his axe to hew his head: Out of which leaped out lustily a valiant Damsell armed at all points, whom Vulcan seeing so faire and comely, lightly leaping to her, preferred her some curtesie, which the Ladie disdayning, shanked her speare at him, and threatned his saucennesse. Therefore such strange-nesse is well applied to her

Equipage, order.

Tydes, seasons.

Charme, temper and order. For charmes were wont to be made by verses, as Ovid sayth. "Aut si carminibus."

EMBLEME.

Hereby is meant, as also in the whole course of this Aeglogue, that poetrie is a divine instinct, and unnatural rage passing the reach of common reason. Whom Piers answereth Epiphonematically, as admitting the excellency of the skill, whereof in Cuddie he had already had a taste.

NOVEMBER.

AEGLOGA UNDECIMA.

ARGUMENT.—In this xi. Aeglogue hee bewalleth the death of some maiden of great blood, whom he calleth Dido. The personage is secret, and to me altogether unknowne, albeit of himselfe I often required the same. This Aeglogue is made in imitaion of Maro his song, which he made upon the death of Loyes the French Queen; but farre passing his reach, and in mine opinion all other the Aeglogues of this Book.

THENOT. COLIN.

Thenot. Colin, my deare, when shall it please thee sing,

As thou wert wont, songes of some iouisauce?

Thy Muse too long slombreth in sorrowing,

Lulled asleepe through Loves misgovernance.

Now somewhat sing, whose endlesse sovnaunce

Emong the shepheards swaines may aye remaine,

Whether thee list thy loved lass advance,

Or honor Pan with himnes of higher vaine.

Col. Thenot, now nis the time of merrimake,

Nor Pan to herie, nor with Love to play;

Sike myrth in May is meetest for to make,

Or sommer shade, under the cocked hay.

But nowe sadde winter welked hath the day,

And Phoebus, wearie of his yearly taske,

Ystabled hath his steedes in lowly lay,

And taken up his ynne in Fishes haske:

Thilk sollein season sadder plight doest aske,

And loatheth sike delights as thou doest prayse:

The morefull Muse in myrth now list ne maske,

As she was wont in youghth and sommer-dayes;

But if thou algate lust light virelays,

And looser songes of love to underfong,

Who but thy self deserves sike poets praise?

Relieve thy oaten pypes that sleepeen long.

The. The nightingale is sovereigne of song,

Before him sits the titmouse silent bee;

And I, unfit to thrust in skilfull throng,

Ver. 20. ——— youghth] *Youth*. *Todd*.

Ver. 26. ——— sits] *That is, it is becoming*. *Todd*.

Should Colin make iudge of my foolerie :
 Nay, better learne of hem that learned bee,
 And han bene watered at the Muses well ;
 The kindly dewe drops from the higher tree,
 And wets the litle plants that lowly dwell :
 But if sadde winters wrath, and season chill,
 Accord not with thy Muses merriment,
 To sadder times thou maist attune thy quill,
 And sing of sorrowe and deathes dremment ;
 For deade is Dido, deade, alas ! and drent ;
 Dido ! the great shepheard his daughter sheene :
 The fayrest May shee was that ever went,
 Her like shee has not left behinde I weene :
 And, if thou wilt bewayle my wofull teene,
 I shall thee give yond cosset for thy payne ;
 And, if thy rymes as rounde and ruefull beene
 As those that did thy Rosalind complayne,
 Much greater gifts for guerdon thou shalt gayne,
 Than kid or cosset, which I thee bynempt :
 Then up, I say, thou lolly shepheard swayne,
 Let not my small demaunde be so contempt.

Col. Thenot, to that I chose thou doest mee tempt ;

But ah ! too well I wote my humble vayne,
 And how my rimes bene rugged and unkempt ;
 Yet, as I conne, my conning I will strayne.

“Up, then, Melpomene ! the mournefulst Muse of
 Such cause of mourning never hadst afore ; [Nine,
 Up, grislie ghostes ! and up my rufull rime !
 Matter of myrth now shalt thou have no more ;
 For dead shee is, that myrth thee made of yore.

Dido, my deare, alas ! is dead,
 Dead, and lyeth wrapt in lead.

O heavie herse !

Let streaming teares be powred out in store ;
 O carefull verse !

“Shepheards, that by your flocks of Kentish
 downes abyde,

Waile ye this woefull waste of Natures warke ;
 Waile we the wight, whose presence was our pryde ;
 Waile we the wight, whose absence is our carke ;
 The sunne of all the world is dimme and darke ;
 The earth now lacks her wonted light,
 And all we dwell in deadly night.

O heavie herse !

Breake we our pipes, that shrild as lowde as larke ;
 O carefull verse !

“Why doe we longer live, (ah ! why live we so
 long ?)

Whose better dayes Death hath shut up in woe ?
 The fayrest flowre our girlond all among
 Is faded quite, and into dust ygoe.

Sing now, ye shepheards daughters, sing no moe
 The songs that Colin made you in her praise,
 But into weeping turn your wanton layes.

O heavie herse !

Nowe is time to die : nay, time was long ygoe :
 O carefull verse !

“Whence is it, that the flowret of the field doth
 And lyeth buried long in Winters bale ; [fade,
 Yet, soone as Spring his mantle hath displayde,
 It flowreth fresh, as it should never fayle ?

But thing on earth that is of most availle,
 As vertues branch and beauties bud,
 Reliven not for any good.

O heavie herse !

The branch once dead, the bud eke needes must
 O carefull verse ! [quaile ;

“She, while she was, (that was, a wofull word to
 saine !)

For beauties praise and pleasaunce had no peere ;
 So well she couth the shepheards entertaune
 With cakes and cracknells, and such countrey
 cheere :

Ne would shee scorne the simple shepheards swaine ;
 For she would call him often heme,
 And give him curds and clouted creame.

O heavie herse !

Als Colin Cloute she would not once disdaine ;
 O carefull verse !

“But now sike happy cheere is turnde to heavy
 chaunce,

Such pleasaunce now displast by dolours dint ;
 All musick sleepes, where Death doth lead the
 daunce,

And shepheards wonted solace is extinct.

The blew in black, the greene in gray, is tinct ;

The gaudy girlonds deck her grave,
 The faded flowres her corse embrace.

O heavie herse !

Morne now, my Muse, now morne with teares
 O carefull verse ! [besprint ;

“O thou great Shepheard, Lobbin, how great is thy
 grieve !

Where bene the nosegayes that she dight for thee ?
 The coloured chaplets wrought with a chiefe,
 The knotted rush-ringes, and gilt rosemaree !
 For shee deemed nothing too deere for thee.

Ah ! they bene all yclad in clay ;
 One bitter blast blew all away.

O heavie herse !

Thereof nought remainyes but the memoree ;
 O carefull verse !

“Ay me ! that dreerie Death should strike so mor-
 tall stroke,

That can undoe Dame Natures kindly course ;
 The faded lockes fall from the loftie oke,
 The fouds doe gaspe, for dryed is their source,
 And fouds of teares flow in theyr stead perforce :

The mantled medowes mourne,
 Theyr sundrie colours tourne.

O heavie herse !

The heavens doe melt in teares without remorse ;
 O carefull verse !

“The feeble flocks in field refuse their former foode,
 And hang their heades as they would learne to weepe ;
 The beastes in Forrest wayle as they were woode,
 Except the wolves, that chase the wandring sheepe,
 Now shee is gone that safely did hem keepe :

The turtle on the bared braunch
 Laments the wounde that Death did launch.

O heavie herse !

And Philomele her song with teares doth steepe ;
 O carefull verse !

“The water nymphs, that wont with her to sing
 and daunce,

And for her girlond olive branches beare,
 Nowe balefull boughes of cypres doen advaunce ;

The Muses, that were wont greene bayes to weare,
 Now bringen bitter eldre brannches seare ;
 The Fatall Sisters eke repent
 Her vitall threde so soone was spent. 50
 O heavie herse !
 Morne now, my Muse, now morne with heavy cheare
 O carefull verse !

"O trustlesse state of earthly things, and slipper hope
 Of mortall men, that swincke and sweate for nought,
 And, shooting wide, doth misse the marked scope ; 165
 Nowe have I learnde (a lesson deereley bought)
 That nis on earth assuraunce of eternall night ;
 For what might bee in earthly mould,
 That did her buried body hould. 160
 O heavie herse !
 Yet saw I on the beere when it was brought ;
 O carefull verse !

"But maugre Death, and dreaded Sisters deadly
 And gates of hell, and fyrie furies force, [spight, 165
 She hath the bonds broke of eternall night,
 Her soule unbodied of the burdenous corse.
 Why then weepes Lobbin so without remorse ?
 O Lobb ! thy losse no longer lament ;
 Dido is dead, but into heaven hent. 170
 O happie herse !
 Cease now, my Muse, now cease thy sorrowes sourse,
 O ioyfull verse !

"Why waile we then ? why wearie we the gods
 with plaintes,
 As if some evill were to her betight ?
 She raignes a goddesse now among the saintes, 175
 That whilome was the saynt of shepherds light,
 And is enstalled nowe in heavens hight.
 I see thee, blessed soule ! I see
 Walk in Elisian fieldes so free.
 O happie herse ! 180
 Might I once come to thee, (O that I might !)
 O ioyfull verse !

"Unwise and wretched men, to weete what's good
 Wee deeme of death as doome of ill desert ; [or ill,
 But knewe wee, Fooles, what it ns brings untill, 185
 Dye would we daylie, once it to expert !
 No daunger there the shepheard can assett ;
 Fayre fieldes and pleasaunt layes there bene ;
 The fieldes aye fresh, the grasse ay greene. 190
 O happie herse !
 Make haste, yee shepherds, thether to revert.
 O ioyfull verse !

"Dido is gone afore ; (whose turne shall he the
 next ?)
 There lives shee with the blessed gods in blisse,
 There drinks she nectar with ambrosia mixt, 195
 And ioyes enjoyes that mortall men doe misse.
 The honor now of highest gods she is,
 That whilome was poore shepherds pride,
 While here on earth shee did abide. 200
 O happie herse !
 Cease now, my song, my woe now wasted is ;
 O ioyfull verse !"

The. Ay, franck shepheard, how bene thy verses
 With dolefull pleasaunce, so as I ne wotte [meint

Whether reioyce or weepe for great constraint !
 Thine be the cossette, well hast thou it gotte.
 Up, Colin up, ynough thou morned hast ;
 Now ginnes to mizzle, hye we homeward fast.

COLINS EMBLEM.

La mort ny mord.

GLOSSE.

Iouysaunce, myrth.
Souenaunce, remembrance.
Herie, honour.
Welkel, shortned or empayred. As the Moone being in
 the wayne is said of Lidgate to welk.
In loutly lay, according to the season of the month of
 November, when the Sunne draweth low in the South
 toward his Tropick or returne.
In fishes haske, the Sunne rayned, that is, in the signe
 Pisces all November ; a haske is a wicker ped, wherein
 they use to carrie fish.
Virelayes, a light kind of song.
Beuatred, for it is a saying of Poets, that they have
 drunke of the Muses Well Castalias, whereof was before
 sufficiently said.
Dreveriment, dreery and heavic cheere.
The great shepheard, is some man of high degree, and
 not, as some vainly suppose, god Pan. The person both of
 the shepheard and of Dido is unknowne, and closely hur-
 ried in the Authours conceipt. But out of doubt I am,
 that it is not Rosalind, as some imagine ; for he speaketh
 soome after of her also.
Shene, fayre and shining.
May, for mayde.
Teene, sorrow.
Guerdon, reward.
Bynempt, bequeathed.
Cosset, a lambe brought up without the dam.
Unkempt, Incompti. Not combed, that is, rude and un-
 handsome.
Melpomene, The sadde and wailefull Muse, used of Poets
 in hono.r of Tragedies : as saith Virgil, "Melpomene tra-
 gico proclamat mæsta boatu."
Up griesly ghosts, The manner of the tragical Poets, to
 call for helpe of Furies and damned ghosts : so is Hecuba
 of Euripides, and Tantalus brought in of Seneca. And
 the rest of the rest.
Ferse, is the solemne obsequie in funeralles.
Waste of, decay of so beautifull a peece.
Carke, care.
An why, an elegant Epanorthosis, as also soome after.
 Nay time was long ago.
Flouret, a diminutive for a little floure. This is a nota-
 ble and sententious comparison, "A minore ad maius."
Relive not, live not againe, i. not in their earthly bodies ;
 for in heaven they receive their due reward.
The braunch, He meaneth Dido, who being as it were the
 maine branch now withered, the buds, that is, beautie (as
 hee sayd afore) can no more flourish.
With cakes, fit for shepherds bankets.
Heame, for home, after the Northern pronouncing.
Tinct, dyed or stained.
The gaudie, the meaning is, that the things which were
 the ornaments of her life are made the honour of her
 funerall, as is used in burials.
Lobbin, the name of a shepheard, which seemeth to have
 benee the lover and deere friend of Dido.
Rushrings, agreeable for such base gifts.
Faded lockes, dried leaves. As if Nature her selfe be-
 wailed the death of the Mayde.
Sourse, spring.
Mantled Medowes, for the sundrie flowers are like a
 mantle or coverlet wrought with many colours.
Philomete, the Nightingale. Whom the Poets faime
 once to have benee a Lady of great beautie, till, being
 ravished by her sisters husband, she desired to be turn'd

Ver. 185. — until.] *Unto.* TODD.

Ver. 186. — to expert.] *To experience.* TODD.

into a birds of her name, whose complaints be very wel set forth of M. George Gaseoin a wittie gentleman, and the very cheefo of our late rimers, who and if some parts of learning wanted not (albe it is well knowne he altogether wanted not learning) no doubt would have attained to the excellencie of those famous Poets. For gifts of witte and naturall promptnes appeare in him abundantly.

Cypresse, used of the olde paynims in the furnishing of their funerall pompe, and properly the signe of all sorrow and heavinesse.

The fatall sisters, Clotho, Lachesis, and Atropos, daughters of Herebus and the Night, whome the Poets fause to spin the life of man, as it were a long thred, which they draw out in length, till his fatall houre and timely death be come; but if by other casualtie his daies be abridged, then one of them, that is, Atropos, is said to have cut the threed in twaine. Hereof commeth a common verse.

"Clotho colum bainulat, Lachesis trahit, Atropos occat."

Or trustlesse, &c. a gallant exclamation moralized with great wisdom, and passionate with great affection.

Beere, a frame, whereon they use to lay the dead corps.

Furies, of Poets are faigned to be three, Persephone, Alecto, and Megera, which are said to be the authors of all evill and mischefe.

Eternal night, is death or darkenesse of hell.

Belight, happened.

I see, A lively Icon or representation, as if he saw her in heaven present.

Elysian feldeis, be devised of Poets to be a place of pleasure like Paradise, where the happiesoules do rest in peace and eternall happinesse.

Die would, the very expresse saying of Plato in Phædone. *Astart*, befall uowares.

Nectar and Ambrosia, bee faigned to be the drinke and foode of the gods: Ambrosia they liken to Maona in Scripture, and Nectar to be white like creame, whereof is a proper tale of Hebe, that spilt a cup of it, and stayed the heavens, as yet appeareth. But I have already discoursed that at large in my Commentary upon the Dreames of the same Authour.

Meynt, mingled.

EMBLEM.

Which is as much to say, as *death byteth not*. For although by course of nature we be borne to dye, and being ripened with age, as with timely harvest, we must bee gathered in time, or else of our selves we fall like rotted ripe fruits from the tree: yet death is not to be coveted for evill, nor (as the Poet said a litle before) as doome of ill desert. For though the trespasser of the first man brought death into the world, as the guerdon of sinne, yet being overcome by the death of one that died for all, it is now made (as Chaucer saith) the greene pathway of life. So that it agreeth well with that was saide, that Death byteth not (that is) burtheth not at all.

DECEMBER.

AEGLOGA DUODECIMA.

ARGUMENT.—This Aeglogue (even as the first began) is ended with a complaint of Colin to god Pan; wherein, as wearie of his former wales, hee proportioneth his life to the foure seasons of the yeare; comparing his youth to the spring time, when hee was fresh and fres from loves follis. His manhood to the sommer, which, he saith, was consumed with great heate and excessive drouth, caused through a Comet or blazing Starre, by which hee meaneth love; which passion is commonly compared to such flames and immoderate heate. His ripest yeares hee resembleth to an unseasonable harvest, wherein the fruits fall ere they be ripe. His latter age to winters chill and frostie season, now drawing neere to his last ende.

The gentle shepherd sat beside a springe,
All in the shadowe of a bushye brere,
That Colin hight, which well coude pype and singe,
For hee of Tityrus his songs did leere:

There, as he satte in secret shade alone,⁵
Thus gan hee make of love his piteous mone.

"O soveraigne Pan! thou god of shepherdes all,
Which of our tender lambkins takest keepe,
And, when our flockes into mischaunce mought fall,
Doest save from mischefe the unwarie sheepe,¹⁰
Als of their maisters hast no lesse regard
Then of the flockes, which thou doest watch and
ward;

"I thee beseeche (so be thou deigne to hear
Rude ditties, tunde to shepherdes oaten reede,¹⁵
Or if I ever sct song so cleare,
As it with pleasure mought thy fancie feede,)
Hearken a while, from thy greene cabinet,
The rurall song of carefull Colinet.

"Whilome in youth, when flourd my ioyfull spring,
Like swallow swift I wandred here and there;²⁰
For heate of heedlesse lust me so did sting,
That I oft doubted daunger had no feare:

Ver. 8. — takest keepe;] Takest care. Toode.

I went the wastefull woodes and forrest wide,
Withouten dread of wolves to hene espide.

"I went to raunge amid the mazie thicket,²⁵
And gather nuttes to make my Christmas-game,
And ioyed off to chace the trembling pricket,
Or hunt the hartlesse hare till she were tame
What wreked I of wintric ages waste!—³⁰
Tho deemed I my spring would ever last

"How often have I scaled the craggie oke,
All to dislodge the raven of her nest?
How have I wearied, with many a stroke,
The stately walnut-tree, the while the rest
Under the tree fell all for nuttes at strife!³⁵
For like to me was libertie and life.

"And for I was in thilke same looser yeeres,
(Whether the Muse so wrought me from my byrth,
Or I too much beleev'd my shepherd peeres,
Somedele ybent to song and musickes mirth,⁴⁰
A good old shepherd, Wrenock was his name,
Made me by arte more cunning in the same.

Ver. 29. — wreked] Recked, i. e. cared or reckoned. Toode.

Ver. 40. Somedele] Somewhat, in some degree. Toode.

"Fro thence I durst in derring to compare
With shepherdes swayne whatever fed in field ;
And, if that Hobbinoll right indgement bare, 43
To Pan his own selfe pype I need not yield :
For, if the flocking nymphes did follow Pan,
The wiser Muses after Colin ran.

"But, ah ! such pride at length was ill repayde ;
The shepherds god (perdie god was he none) 50
My hurlesse pleasaunce did me ill upbraide,
My freedome lorne, my life he left to mone.
Love they him called that gave me checkmate,
But better mought they have behote him Hate.

"Tho gan my lovely spring hid me farewell, 55
And sommer season sped him to display
(For Love then in the Lyons house did dwell,)
The raging fire that kindled at his ray.
A comet stird up that unkindly heate,
That reigned (as men said) in Venus seate. 60

"Forth was I ledde, not as I went afore,
When choice I had to choose my wandring way,
But whether Luck and Loves unbridled lore
Would lead me forth on Fancies bitte to play :
The bush my bed, the hramble was my bowre, 65
The woodes can witnesse many a wofull stowre.

"Where I was wont to seeke the honie bee,
Working her formall rowmes in wexen frame,
The grieslie todestoole growne there mought I see,
And loathed paddockes lording on the same : 70
And, where the chaunting birds luld me asleepe,
The ghastly owle her grievous ynne doth keepe.

"Then as the spring gives place to elder Time,
And bringeth forth the fruite of sommers pride ;
All so my age, now passed youthly prime, 75
To things of riper season selfe applied,
And leard of lighter timber coties to frame,
Such as might save my sheepe and me fro shame.

"To make fine cages for the nightingale,
And baskets of bulrushes, was my wont : 80
Who to entrap the fish in winding sale
Was better seene, or hurtfull beastes to hunt ?
I learned als the signs of heaven to ken,
How Phoebe failes, where Venus sits, and when.

"And tryed time yet taught me greater thinges ;
The sodain rising of the raging seas, 86
The soothe of byrdes by beating of theyr winges,
The powre of herbes, both which can hurt and ease,
And which be wont t' enrage the restlesse sheepe,
And which be wont to worke eternal sleepe. 90

"But, ah ! unwise and witlesse Colin Cloute,
That kydst the hidden kindes of many a weede,
Yet kydst not ene to cure thy sore heart-roots,
Whose ranckling wound as yet does rifely bleede.
Why livest thou still, and yet hast thy deaths
wound ? 95
Why dyest thou still, and yet alive art found ?

"Thus is my sommer worne away and wasted,
Thus is my harvest hastened all-to rathe ;

Ver. 72. — *keepe.*] A Cambridge phrase, used, even at the present day, by the students to signify the apartments which they inhabit. TODD.

Ver. 98. — *rathe.*] *Early.* TODD.

The care that budded fayre is burnt and blasted,
And all my hoped gaine is turn'd to scathe. 100
Of all the seede, that in my youth was sowne,
Was none but brakes and brambles to be mowne.

"My boughs with bloosmes that crowne were at
And promised of timely fruite such stowre, [first, 105
Are left both bare and barrein now at erst ;
The flattering fruite is fallen to ground before,
And rotted ere they were halfe mellow ripe ;
My harvest, wast, my hope away did wipc.

"The fragrant flowres, that in my garden grewe,
Bene withered, as they had bene gathered long ; 110
Theyr rootes bene dried up for lack of dewe,
Yet dewed with teares they han be ever among.
Ah ! who has wrought my Rosalind this spight,
To spill the flowres that should her gir'ond dight ?

"And I, that whilome went to frame my pype 115
Unto the shifting of the shepherds foote,
Sike folies now have gathered as too ripe,
And cast hem out as rotten and unsoote.
The loser lasse I cast to please no more ;
One if I please, enough is me therefore. 120

"And thus of all my harvest-hope I have
Nought reaped but a weedie crop of care ;
Which, when I thought have thresht in swelling
sheave,
Cockle for corn, and chaffe for barley, bare ;
Soon as the chaffe should in the fan be fynd, 125
All was blown away of the wavcring wynd.

"So now my yeere drawes to his latter terme,
My spring is spent, my sommer burnt up quite ;
My harvest hastes to stirre up Winter sterne,
And bids him clayme with rigorous rage his
right : 130
So now he stormes with many a sturdy stoure ;
So now his blustering blast eche coast doth scoure.

"The careful cold hath nipt my rugged rynd,
And in my face deepe furrowes eld hath pight : 135
My head besprent with hoarie frost I finde,
And by myne eye the crowe his clawe doth wright :
Delight is layd abedd ; and pleasure, past ;
No sunne now shines ; clouds han all overcast.

"Now leave, ye Shepherds Boyes, your merry
glee ;
My Muse is hoarse and wearie of this stound : 140
Here will I hang my pype upon this tree,
Was never pype of reede did better sound :
Winter is come that blowes the bitter blast,
And after winter dreerie death does hast.

"Gather together ye my little focke, 145
My little focke, that was to me so liefe ;
Let me, ah ! let me in your foldes ye lock,
Ere the breme winter breede you greater griefe.
Winter is come, that blows the balefull breath,
And after winter commeth timely death. 150

"Adieu, Delightes, that lulled me asleepe ;
Adieu, my Deare, whose love I bought so deare ;
Adieu, my little Lambes and loved Sheepe ;

Ver. 134. — *pight.*] *Placed or fixed.* TODD

Adieu, ye Woodes, that oft my wisse were :
 Adieu, good Hobbinoll, that was so true, 155
 Tell Rosalind, her Colin bids her adieu."

COLINS EMBLEME.

Vivitur ingenio : cetera mortis erunt.

GLOSSE.

Tyirus, Chaucer, as hath bene oft said.
Lambkins, yong lambes.
Als of their, seemely to expresse Virgils verse.

"Pan curat oves oviumque magistros."

Deigne, vouchsafe.
Cabinet, *Colinet*, diminutives.
Mazie, For they be like to a maze whence it is hard to get out againe.

Peers, Fellowes and companions.
Musick, that is Poetrie, as Terence saith, "Qui artem tractant musicam," speaking of Poets.

Derring do, aforesaid.

Lions house : be imagineth simply that Cupid, which is love, had his abode in the hot signe Leo, which is in midst of Sommer ; a pretie allegory ; wherof the meaning is, that love in him wrought an extraordinarie heat of lust.

His ray, which is Cupids beame of flames of love.

A comet, a blasing starre, meant of beautie, which was the cause of his hot love.

Venus, the goddesse of beautie or pleasure. Also a signe in heaven, as it is here taken. So he meaneth that beautie, which hath alway aspect to Venus, was the cause of his quietnesse in love.

Where I was : a fine description of the change of his life and liking, for all things now seemed to him to have altered their kindly course.

Lording : Spoken after the manner of Paddocks and Frogs sitting, which is indeed lordly, not mooving or looking once aside, unless they be stirred.

Then as : The second part, that is, his manhood.

Cotes, Shepnotes, for such be exercoises of shepheards.

Sale or *sallow*, a kinde of wood like willow, fitte to wreath and binde in heapes to catch fish withall.

Phæbe failes, The Eclips of the Moone, which is alwayes in *Cauda*, or *Capite Draconis*, signes in heaven.

Venus, s. *Venus starre*, otherwise called *Hesperus*, and *Vesper*, and *Lucifer*, both because he seemeth to be one of the brightest stars, and also first riseth, and setteth last. All which skill in starres being convenient for shepheards to know, Theocritus and the rest use.

Raging seas : The cause of the swelling and ebbing of the sea commeth of the course of the Moone, sometime increasing, sometime waining and decreasing.

Sooth of birds, a kind of soothsaying used in the elder times, which they gathered by the flying of birds : First (as is said) invented by the Tuscans, and from them derived to the Romanes who, as it is said in *Livy*, were so superstitiously rooted in the same, that they agreed that every noble man should put his sonne to the Tuscanes, by them to be brought up in that knowledge.

Of herbes : That wondrous things be wrought by herbes, as wel appeareth by the common working of them in our bodies, as also by the wonderful enchantments and sorceries that have bene wrought by them, insomuch that it is said, that *Circe*, a famous sorceresse, turned men into sundry kinde of beasts and monsters, and only by herbes : as the Poet saith,

"Dea sava potentibus herbis &c."

Kidst, knowest.

Eare, of corne.

Scathe, losse, hindrance.

Ever among, Ever and anon.

And thus : The third part wherein is set forth his ripe yeares as an untimely harvest that bringeth little fruit.

The fragrant flowers, sundry studies and laudable parts of learning, wherein our poet is seene : be they wisse which are privie to this study.

So now my yeere : The last part, wherof is described his age, by comparison of wintrie stormes.

Carefull cold, for care is said to coole the bloud.

Glee, mirth.

Hoarie frost, a metaphor of hoarie haires scattered like s gray frost.

Breeme, sharpe and bitter.

Adieu delights, is a conclusion of all. Where in sixe verses he comprehendeth all that was touched in this booke. In the first verse his delights of youth generally : In the second, the love of Rosalinde : In the third, the keeping of sheep, which is the argument of all the *Æglogues* : In the fourth, his complaints : And in the last two, his professed friendship and good will to his good friend Hobbinoll.

EMBLEME.

The meaning wherof is, that all things perish and come to their last end, but works of learned wits and monuments abide for ever. And therefore Horace of his Odes, a worke though full indeed of great wit and learning yet of no so great weight and importance, boldly saith,

"Exegi monumentum ære perennius,

"Quod non imber edax, non aquile impotens &c."

Therefore let not be envied, that this Poet in his Epilogus saith, he made a Calender that shall endure as long as time, &c. following the example of Horace and Ovid in the like.

"Grande opus exegi, quod nec Iovis ira, nec ignis,

"Nec ferrum poterit nec edax abolere vetustas, &c."

EPILOGUE.

LOE ! I have made a Calender for every yeare,
 That steele in strength, and time in durance, shall
 outweare ;

And, if I marked well the starres revolution,
 It shall continue till the worldes dissolution,
 To teach the ruder shepheard how to feede his
 sheepe, [keepe.

And from the falsers fraude his folded flocke to
 Goe, little Calender ! thou hast a free passeporte ;

Goe but a lowly gate amongst the meaner sorte
 Dare not to match thy pype with Tityrus his stile,
 Nor with the Pilgrim that the plough-man playd a
 while ; [adore ;

But follow them farre off, and their high steps
 The better please, the worse despise ; I aske no
 more.

MERCE NON MERCEDE.

Ver. 6. — the falsers fraude | Spenser uses the verb
 "to false" for "to deceive," F. Q. ii. v. 9. *Falsar* here
 therefore is the *deceiver*. ToLD

MUIOPOTMOS :

OR, THE FATE OF THE BUTTERFLIE.

1590.

TO

THE RIGHT WORTHY AND VERTUOUS LADIE; THE LA: CAREY.

Most brave and bountifull La: for so excellent favours as I have received at your sweet handes, to offer these few leaves as in recompence, should be as to offer flowers to the gods for their divine benefites. Therefore I have determined to give my selfe wholly to you, as quite abandoned from my selfe, and absolutely vowed to your services: which in all right is ever held for full recompence of debt or damage, to have the person yielded. My person I wot wel how little worth it is. But the faithfull minde and humble zeale which I bear unto your La: may perhaps be more of price, as may please you to account and use the poore service therof; which taketh glory to advance your excellent partes and noble vertues, and to spend it selfe in honouring you; not so much for your great bounty to my self, which yet may not be unminded; nor for name or kindreds sake by you vouchsafed; being also regardable; as for that honorable name, which yee have by your brave deserts purchast to your selfe, and spread in the mouths of all men: with which I have also presumed to grace my verses; and, under your Name, to commend to the world this small Poëme. The which beseeching your La: to take in worth, and of all things therein according to your wonted graciousnes to make a milde construction, I humbly pray for your happines.

Your La: ever humbly;

E. S.

I SING of deadly dolorous debate,
 Stir'd up through wrathfull Nemesis despight,
 Betwixt two mightie ones of great estate,
 Drawne into armes, and prooffe of mortall fight,
 Through proud ambition and hart-swelling hate, 5
 Whilst neither could the others greater might
 And sdeignfull scorne endure; that from small iarre
 Their wraths at length broke into open warre.

The roote whereof and tragick effect,
 Vouchsafe, O thou the mournfulst Muse of nyne, 10
 That wont'st the tragick stage for to direct,
 In funerall complaints and wailefull tyne,
 Reveale to me, and all the meanes detect,
 Through which sad Clarion did at last decline 15
 To lowest wretchednes: And is there then
 Such rancour in the harts of mightie men?

Of all the race of silver-winged Flies
 Which doo possess the empire of the aire,
 Betwixt the centred earth, and azure skies,
 Was none more favourable, nor more faire, 20
 Whilst heaven did favour his felicities,
 Then Clarion, the eldest sonne and heire
 Of Muscaroll, and in his fathers sight
 Of all alive did seeme the fairest wight.

With fruitfull hope his aged breast he fed 25
 Of future good, which his young toward yeares,

Full of brave courage and bold hardyhed
 Above th' ensample of his equal Peares,
 Did largely promise, and to him fore-red,
 (Whilst oft his heart did melt in tender teares,) 30
 That he in time would sure prove such an one,
 As should be worthie of his fathers throne.

The fresh young Flie, in whom the kindly fire
 Of lustfull yongth began to kindle fast, 35
 Did much disdain to subiect his desire
 To loathsome sloth, or houres in ease to wast,
 But ioy'd to range abroad in fresh attire,
 Through the wide compas of the ayrie coast;
 And, with unwearied wings, each part t' inquire 40
 Of the wide rule of his renowned sire.

For he so swift and nimble was of flight,
 That from this lower tract he dar'd to stie
 Up to the clowdes, and thence with pigeons light
 To mount aloft unto the cristall skie, 45
 To view the workmanship of heavens hight:
 Whence down descending he along would flie
 Upon the streaming rivers, sport to finde;
 And oft would dare to tempt the troublous winde.

So on a summers day, when season milde
 With gentle calme the world had quieted, 50

Ver. 34. *Of lustfull yongth*] *Yongth is youth.* TODD.
 Ver. 42. ——— *stie*] *Ascend.* T. WARTON.

And high in heaven Hyperion's fierie childe
Ascending did his beames abroad disprede,
Whiles all the heavens on lower creatures smilede ;
Young Clarion, with vaumfull lustiehed,
After his guize did cast abroad to fare ;
And thereto gan his furnitures prepare.

His breast-plate first, that was of substance pure,
Before his noble heart he firmly bound,
That mought his life from yron death assure,
And ward his gentle corps from cruell wound :
For it by arte was framed, to endure
The bit of balefull steele and bitter stownd,
Nor lesse then that which Vulcane made to shield
Achilles life from fate of Troyan field.

And then about his shoulders broad he threw
An hairie hide of some wild beast, whom hee
In salvage Forrest by adventure slew,
And reftt the spoyle his ornament to bee ;
Which, spredding all his backe with dreadfull view,
Made all, that him so horrible did see,
Thinke him Alcides with the Lyons skin,
When the Næmæan conquest he did win.

Upon his head his glistering burganet,
The which was wrought by wonderous device,
And curiously engraven, he did set :
The metall was of rare and passing price ;
Not Bilbo steele, nor brasse from Corinth fet,
Nor costly oricalche from strange Phœnicie ;
But such as could both Phœbus arrowes ward,
And th' hayling darts of heaven beating hard.

Therein two deadly weapons fixt he bore,
Strongly outlaunced towards either side,
Like two sharpe speares, his enemies to gore :
Like as a warlike brigandine, applyde
To fight, layes forth her threatfull pikes afore,
The engines which in them sad death doo hyde :
So did this Flie outstretch his fearefull hornes,
Yet so as him their terrour more adorne.

Lastly his shinie wings as silver bright,
Painted with thousand colours passing farre
All painters skill, he did about him dight :
Not halfe so manie sundrie colours arre
In Iris howe ; ne heaven doth shine so bright,
Distinguished with manie a twineckling starre ;
Nor Iunoes bird, in her ey-spotted traine,
So many goodly colours doth containe.

Ne (may it be withouten perill spoken)
The Archer god, the sonne of Cytheree,
That ioyes on wretched lovers to be wroken,
And heaped spoyles of bleeding harts to see,
Beares in his wings so manie a changefull token.
Ah ! my liege Lord, forgive it unto mee,
If ought against thine honour I have tolde ;
Yet sure those wings were fairer manifolde.

Full many a Ladie faire, in Court full oft
Beholding them, him secretly envide,
And wisht that two such fannes, so silken soft,
And golden faire, her Love would her provide ;
Or that, when them the gorgeous Flie had doft,

Some one, that would with grace be gratifide,
From him would steale them privily away,
And bring to her so precious a pray.

Report is that dame Venus on a day,
Inspring when flowres doo clothe the fruitfull ground,
Walking abroad with all her nymphes to play,
Bad her faire damzels flocking her around
To gather flowres, her forhead to array :
Emongst the rest a gentle Nymph was found,
Hight Astery, excelling all the crewe
In courteous usage and unstained hewe.

Who beeing nimbler ioynted then the rest,
And more industrious, gathered more store
Of the fields honour, than the others best ;
Which they in secret harts envying sore,
Tolde Venus, when her as the worthiest
She praised, that Cupide (as they heard before)
Did lend her secret aide, in gathering
Into her lap the children of the Spring.

Whereof the goddesse gathering iealous feare,
Not yet unmindfull, how not long agoe
Her sonne to Psyche secrete love did beare,
And long it close conceal'd, till mickle woe
Thereof arose, and manie a rufull teare ;
Reason with sudden rage did overgoe ;
And, giving hastie credit to th' accuser,
Was led away of them that did abuse her.

Eftsoones that Damzell, by her heavenly might,
She turn'd into a winged Butterflie,
In the wide aire to make her wandring flight ;
And all those flowres, with which so plenteouslie
Her lap she filled had, that bred her spight,
She placed in her wings, for memorie
Of her pretended crime, though crime none were :
Since which that Flie them in her wings doth beare.

Thus the fresh Clarion, being readie dight,
Unto his journey did himselfe addresse,
And with good speed began to take his flight:
Over the fields, in his franke lustinesse,
And all the champagne o're he soared light ;
And all the countrey wide he did possesse,
Feeding upon their pleasures bounteouslie,
That none gainsaid, nor none did him envie.

The woods, the rivers, and the medowes greene,
With his aire-cutting wings he measured wide,
Ne did he leave the mountaines bare unseene,
Nor the ranke grassie fennes delights untride,
But none of these, how ever sweet they beene,
Mote please his fancie, nor him cause t' abide :
His choicefull sense with every change doth flit.
No common things may please a wavering wit.

To the gay gardins his unstaide desire
Him wholly caried, to refresh his sprights :
There lavish Nature, in her best attire,
Powres forth sweete odors and alluring sights ;
And Arte, with her contending, doth aspire,
T' excell the naturall with made delights :
And all, that faire or pleasant may be found,
In riotous excesse doth there abound.

There he arriving, round about doth flie,
From bed to bed, from one to other border ;
And takes survey, with curious busie eye,
Of every flowre and herbe there set in order ;

Ver. 78. — oricalche] Ορείχαλκον, *oricalchum*,
the most sonorous of metals for *tuba* and *tibiae*. BENTLEY.

Ver. 99. — wroken.] *Revenged*. TODD.

Now this, now that, he tasteth tenderly,
 Yet none of them he rudely doth disorder,
 Ne with his feete their silken leaves deface ; 175
 But pastures on the pleasures of each place.

And evermore with most varietie,
 And change of sweetnesse, (for all change is sweete,)
 He casts his glutton sense to satisfie,
 Now sucking of the sap of herbe most meet, 180
 Or of the dew, which yet on them does lie,
 Now in the same bathing his tender feete :
 And then he percheth on some braunch thereby,
 To weather him, and his moyst wings to dry.

And then againe he turneth to his play, 185
 To spoyle the pleasures of that Paradise ;
 The wholesome saulge, and lavender still gray,
 Rauke smelling rue, and cummin good for eyes,
 The roses raigning in the pride of May,
 Sharpe isope good for greene wounds remedies, 190
 Faire marigoldes, and bees-alluring thime,
 Sweet marioram, and daysies decking prime :

Coole violets, and orpine growing still,
 Embathed balme, and chearfull galingale,
 Fresh costmarie, and breathfull camomill, 195
 Dull poppy, and drink-quickning setuale,
 Veyne-healing verven, and hed-purging dill,
 Sound savorie, and hazil hartie-hale,
 Fat colworts, and comfórtng perseline,
 Cold lettuce, and refreshing rosmarine. 200

And whatso else of vertue good or ill
 Grewe in this Gardin, fetcht from farre away,
 Of everie one he takes, and tastes at will,
 And on their pleasures greedily doth pray. 205
 Then when he hath both plaid, and fed his fill,
 In the warme sunne he doth himselfe embay,
 And there him rests in riotous suffisance
 Of all his gladfulnes, and kingly ioyounce.

What more felicitie can fall to creature
 Then to enioy delight with libertie, 210
 And to be lord of all the workes of Nature,
 To raigne in th' aire from th' earth to highest skie,
 To feed on flowres and weeds of glorious feature,
 To take what ever thing doth please the eie ? 215
 Who rests not pleased with such happines,
 Well worthy he to taste of wretchednes.

But what on earth can long abide in state ?
 Or who can him assure of happy day ?
 Sith morning faire may bring fowle evening late, 220
 And least mishap the most blisse alter may !
 For thousand perills lie in close awaite
 About us daylie, to worke our decay ;
 That none, except a God, or God him guide,
 May them avoyde, or remedie provide.

And whatso heavens in their secret doome 225
 Ordained have, how can fraile fleshy wight
 Forecast, but it must needs to issue come ?
 The sea, the aire, the fire, the day, the night,
 And th' armies of their creatures all and some 230
 Do serve to them, and with importune might

Warre against us the vassals of their will.
 Who then can save what they dispose to spill ?

Not thou, O Clarion, though fairest thou
 Of all thy kinde, unhappie happie Flie,
 Whose cruell fate is woven even now 235
 Of loves owne hand, to worke thy miserie !
 Ne may thee help the manie hartie vow,
 Which thy old sire with sacred pietie
 Hath powred forth for thee, and th' altars sprent :
 Nought may thee save from heavens avengement ! 240

It fortun'd (as heavens had belight)
 That in this Gardin, where yong Clarion
 Was wont to solace him, a wicked wight,
 The foe of faire things, th' author of confusion,
 The shame of Nature, the bondslave of spight, 245
 Had lately built his hatefull mansion ;
 And, lurking closely, in awaite now lay,
 How he might any in his trap betray.

But when he spide the ioyous Butterflie
 In this faire plot dispacing to and fro, 250
 Feareles of foes and hidden iopardie,
 Lord ! how he gan for to bestirre him tho,
 And to his wicked worke each part applie !
 His heart did earne against his hated foe,
 And bowels so with rankling poyson swelde, 255
 That scarce the skin the strong contagion helde.

The cause, why he this Flie so maliced,
 Was (as in stories it is written found)
 For that his mother, which him bore and bred,
 The most fine-fingred workwoman on ground, 260
 Arachne, by his meanes was vanquished
 Of Pallas, and in her owne skill confound,
 When she with her for excellence contended,
 That wrought her shame, and sorrow never ended.

For the Tritonian goddesse having hard 265
 Her blazed fame, which all the world had filld,
 Came downe to prove the truth, and due reward
 For her praise-worthie workmanship to yield :
 But the presumptuous Damzell rashly dar'd
 The goddesse selfe to chalenge to the field, 270
 And to compare with her in curious skill
 Of workes with loome, with needle, and with quill.

Minerva did the chalenge not refuse,
 But deign'd with her the paragon to make :
 So to their worke they sit, and each doth chuse 275
 What storie she will for her tapet take.
 Arachne figur'd how Iove did abuse
 Europa like a Bull, and on his backe
 Her through the Sea did beare ; so lively seene,
 That it true Sea, and true Bull, ye would weene. 280

Shee seem'd still backe unto the land to looke,
 And her play-fellowes ayde to call, and feare
 The dashing of the waves, that up she tooke
 Her daintie feet, and garments gathered neare :
 But (Lord !) how she in everie member shooke, 285
 When as the land she saw no more appeare,

Ver. 257. — maliced,] *Bore him so much ill will.* TODD.
 Ver. 262. — confound,] *For confounded.* TODD.
 Ver. 276. — tapet,] *Worked or figured stuff.* In the
 Swedish language, I may add, a TAPESTRY-maker is termed
 TAPET-makare. TODD.

Ver. 201. — of vertue] *Of efficacy.* TODD.
 Ver. 229. — all and some] *One and all, every one.*
 UPTON.

But a wilde wildernes of waters deepe :
Then gan she greatly to lament and weepe.

Before the Bull she pictur'd winged Love,
With his yong brother Sport, light fluttering 290
Upon the waves, as each had been a Dove ;
The one his bowe and shafts, the other Spring
A burning teade about his head did move,
As in their syres new love both triumphing :
And manie Nymphes about them flocking round, 295
And many Tritons which their hornes did sound.

And, round about, her worke she did empale
With a faire border wrought of sundrie flowres,
Enwoven with an yvie-winding trayle :
A goodly worke, full fit for kingly bowres ; 300
Such as dame Pallas, such as Envie pale,
That all good things with venomous tooth devowres,
Could not accuse. Then gan the goddesse bright
Her selfe likewise unto her worke to dight.

She made the storie of the olde debate, 305
Which she with Neptune did for Athens trie :
Twelve gods doo sit around in royall state,
And love in midst with awfull maiestie,
To iudge the strife betweene them stirred late :
Each of the gods, by his like visnomie 310
Eathe to be knowne ; but love above them all,
By his great lookes and power imperiall.

Before them stands the god of Seas in place,
Clayming that sea-coast Citie as his right,
And strikes the rockes with his three-forked mace ;
Whenceforth issues a warlike steed in sight, 316
The signe by which he chalengeeth the place ;
That all the gods, which saw his wondrous might,
Did surely deeme the victorie his due :
But seldome seene, foreiudgement proveth true. 320

Then to herselfe she gives her Aegide shield,
And steel-hed speare, and morion on her hedd,
Such as she oft is seene in warlike field :
Then sets she forth, how with her weapon dredd
She smote the ground, the which streight foorth did 325
yield
A fruitfull Olyve tree, with berries spredd,
That all the Gods admir'd ; then all the storie
She compast with a wreathe of Olyves hoarie.

Emongst these leaves she made a Butterflie,
With excellent device and wondrous slight, 330
Fluttring among the Olives wantonly,
That seem'd to live, so like it was in sight :
The velvet nap which on his wings doth lie,
The silken downe with which his backe is dight, 336
His broad outstretched hornes, his hayrie thies,
His glorious colours, and his glistering eies.

Which when Arachne saw, as overlaid,
And mastered with workmanship so rare,
She stood astonied long, ne ought gainesaid ;
And with fast fixed eyes on her did stare, 340
And by her silence, signe of one dismayd,
The victorie did yeeld her as her share ;

Yet did she inly fret and felly burne,
And all her blood to poysonous rancor turne :

That shortly from the shape of womanhed, 346
Such as she was when Pallas she attempted,
She grew to hideous shape of dryrihed,
Pined with grieft of folly late repented :
Eftsoones her white streight legs were altered
To crooked crawlingshankes, of marrowe emptied ; 350
And her faire face to foule and loathsome hewe,
And her fine corpes to' a bag of venim grewe.

This cursed creature, mindfull of that olde
Enfested grudge, the which his mother felt,
So soone as Clarion he did beholde, 355
His heart with vengefull malice inly swelt ;
And weaving straight a net with manie a fold
About the cave, in which he luring dwelt,
With fine small cords about it stretched wide,
So finely sponne, that scarce they could be spide. 360

Not anie damzell, which her vaunteth most
In skilfull knitting of soft silken twyne ;
Nor anie weaver, which his worke doth boast
In diaper, in damaske, or in lyne ; 365
Nor anie skil'd in workmanship embost ;
Nor anie skil'd in loupes of fingring fine ;
Might in their divers cunning ever dare
With this so curious networke to compare.

Ne doo I thinke, that that same subtil gin,
The which the Lemnian god framde craftily, 370
Mars sleeping with his wife to compass in,
That all the gods with common mockerie
Might laugh at them, and scorne their shamefull
Was like to this. This same he did applie [sin,
For to entrap the careles Clarion, 375
That rang'd eachwhere without suspition.

Suspition of friend, nor feare of foe,
That hazarded his health, had he at all,
But walkt at will, and wandred to and fro,
In the pride of his freedome principall : 380
Little wist he his fatall future woe,
But was secure ; the liker he to fall.
He likest is to fall into mischaunce,
That is regardles of his gouernance.

Yet still Aragnoll (so his foe was hight) 385
Lay lurking coverly him to surprize ;
And all his gins, that him entangle might,
Drest in good order as he could devise.
At length, the foolish Flie without foresight,
As he that did all daunger quite despise, 390
Toward those parts came flying carelesselie,
Where hidden was his hatefull enimie.

Who, seeing him, with secret ioy therefore
Did tickle inwardly in everie vaine ;
And his false hart, fraught with all treasons store,
Was fill'd with hope his purpose to obtaine : 395
Himselfe he close upgathered more and more
Into his den, that his deceitfull traine
By his there being might not be hweraid,
Ne anie noyse, ne anie motion made. 400

Ver. 292. — Spring] Or *Springal*, a young person.
T. WARTON.

Ver. 293. — teade] *Torch*. Lat. *teda*. TODD.
Ver. 310. — visnomie] *Countenance*. TODD.

Ver. 347. — dryrihed,] *Dreryhed*, dismalness, sorrow. TODD.

Like as a wily foxe, that, having spide
Where on a sunnie banke the lames doo play,
Full closely creeping by the hinder side,
Lyes in ambushment of his hoped pray,
Ne stirreth limbe; till, seeing readie tide, 405
He rusheth forth, and snatcheth quite away
One of the litle yonglings unawares:
So to his worke Aragnoll him prepares.

Who now shall give unto my heavie eyes
A well of teares, that all may overflow? 410
Or where shall I find lamentable cryes,
And mournfull tunes, enough my grieffe to show?
Helpe, O thou Tragick Muse, me to devise
Notes sad enough, t' expresse this bitter throw: 415
For loe, the drierie stownd is now arrived,
That of all happines hath us deprived.

The Ickles Clarion, whether cruell Fate
Or wicked Fortune fancies him misled,
Or some ungracious blast out of the gate
Of Aeoles raine perforce him drove on hed, 420

Was (O sad hap and howre unfortunate!)
With violent swift flight forth caried
Into the cursed cobweb, which his foe
Had framed for his final overthrow.

There the fond Flie, entangled, struggled long, 425
Himselfe to free thereout; but all in vaine.
For, striving more, the more in laces strong
Hunselfe he tide, and wrapt his wings twaine
In lymie snares the subtile lonpes among; 430
That in the ende he breathlesse did remaine,
And, all his yongthly forces idly spent,
Him to the mercie of th' avenger lent.

Which when the greisly tyrant did espie,
Like a grimme Lyon rushing with fierce might
Out of his den, he seized greedelie 435
On the resistles pray; and, with fell spight,
Under the left wing strooke his weapon slic
Into his heart, that his deepe groning spright
In bloodie streames forth fled into the aire,
His bodie left the spectacle of care. 440

THE RUINES OF TIME.

1591.

~~~~~  
DEDICATED TO THE

RIGHT NOBLE AND BEAUTIFULL LADIE, THE LA: MARIE, COUNTESE OF  
PEMBROOKE.

Most Honourable and bountifull Ladie, there bee long sithens deepe sowed in my brest the seedes of most entire love and humble affection unto that most brave Knight, your noble brother deceased; which, taking roote, began in his life time somewhat to bnd forth, and to shew themselves to him, as then in the weaknes of their first spring; and would in their riper strength (had it pleased High God till then to drawe out his daies) spired forth fruit of more perfection. But since God hath disdeigned the world of that most noble Spirit, which was the hope of all learned men, and the Patron of my young Muses; together with him both their hope of anie further fruit was cut off, and also the tender delight of those their first blossoms nipped and quite dead. Yet, sithens my late cumming into England, some friends of mine, (which might much prevaile with me, and indeede commaund me,) knowing with howe straight bandes of duetie I was tied to him, as also bound unto that noble House, (of which the chiefe hope then rested in him,) have sought to revive them by upbraiding me, for that I have not shewed anie thankefull remembrance towards him or any of them; but suffer their names to sleep in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieffie to satisfie, or els to avoide that fowle blot of unthankfulnesse, I have conceived this small Poeme, intituled by a generall name of *The Worlds Ruines*: yet speciallie intended to the renoming of that noble Race, from which both you and he sprong, and to the eternizing of some of the chiefe of them late deceased. The which I dedicate unto your La. as whome it most specially concerneth; and to whome I acknowledge my selfe bounden by many singular favours and great graces. I pray for your Honourable happinesse: and so humbly kisse your hands.

Your Ladships ever hmbble at commaund,

E. S.

It chanced me on day beside the shore  
Of silver-streaming Thamesis to bee,  
Nigh where the goodly Verlame stood of yore,  
Of which there now remains no memorie,  
Nor anie little monument to see,  
By which the traveller, that fares that way,  
*This once was she*, may warned be to say.

There, on the other side, I did behold  
A Woman sitting sorrowfullie wailing,  
Rending her yellow locks, like wyrie gold  
About her shoulders carelesslie downe trailing,  
And streames of teares from her faire eyes forth  
railing :

In her right hand a broken rod she held,  
Which towards heaven shee seemd on high to weld.

Whether she were one of that Rivers Nymphes,  
Which did the losse of some dere Love lament,  
I doubt ; or one of those three fatal Impes,  
Which draw the dayes of men forth in extent ;  
Or th' annicent Genius of that Citie brent :  
But, seeing her so piteouslie perplexed,  
I (to her calling) askt what her so vexed.

" Ah ! what delight (quoth she) in earthlie thing,  
Or comfort can I, wretched creature, have ?  
Whose happines the heavens envying,  
From highest staire to lowest step me drave,  
And have in mine owne bowels made my grave,  
That of all nations now I am forlorne,  
The worlds sad spectacle, and fortunes scorne."

Much was I mooved at her piteous plaint,  
And felt my heart nigh riven in my brest  
With tender ruth to see her sore constraint ;  
That, shedding teares a while, I still did rest,  
And, after, did her name of her request.  
" Name have I none (quoth she) nor any being,  
Bereft of both by Fates unniust decreeing.

" I was that Citie, which the garland wore  
Of Brittaines pride, delivered unto me  
By Romane Victors, which it wonne of yore ;  
Though nought at all but ruines now I bee,  
And lye in mine owne ashes, as ye see :  
Verlame I was ; what hootes it that I was,  
Sith now I am but weedes and wastefull gras ?

" O vaine worlds glorie, and unstedfast state  
Of all that lives on face of sinfull earth !  
Which, from their first untill their utmost date,  
Taste no one houre of happines or merth ;  
But like as at the ingate of their berth  
They crying creep out of their mothers wombo,  
So wailing baek, go to their wofull toomb.

" Why then dooth flesh, a bubble-glas of breath,  
Hunt after honour and advancement vaine,  
And reare a trophee for devouring death,  
With so great labour and long lasting paine,  
As if his daies for ever should remaine ?  
Sith all, that in this world is great or gaie,  
Dooth as a vapour vanish, and decaie.

" Looke backe, who list, unto the former ages,  
And call to count, what is of them become :  
Where be those learned wits and antique sages,  
Which of all wisdome knew the perfect somme ?  
Where those great warriors, which did overcome<sup>61</sup>  
The world with conquest of their might and maine,  
And made one meare of th' earth and of their  
raine ?

" What nowe is of th' Assyrian Lyonesse,  
Of whom no footing now on earth appears !  
What of the Persian Beares outrageousnesse,  
Whose memorie is quite worne out with yeares ?  
Who of the Grecian Libbard now ought heares,  
That over-ran the East with greedie powre,  
And left his whelps their kingdomes to devour ?

" And where is that same great seven-headed  
Beast,  
That made all nations vassals of her pride,  
To fall before her feete at her beheast,  
And in the necke of all the world did ride ?  
Where doth she all that wondrous welth nowe  
hide ?

With her owne weight downe pressed now shee lies,  
And by her heapes her hugnesse testifies.

" O Rome, thy ruine I lament and rue,  
And in thy fall my fatal overthrowe,  
That whilom was, whilst heavens with equall  
vewe  
Deignd to behold me and their gifts bestowe,  
The picture of thy pride in pompous shew :  
And of the whole world as thou wast the Empresse,  
So I of this small Northerne world was Princesse.

" To tell the beawtie of my buildings fayre,  
Adorn with purest golde and precious stone ;  
To tell my riches, and endowments rare,  
That by my foes are now all spent and gone ;  
To tell my forces, matchable to none,  
Were but lost labour, that few would beleewe,  
And, with rehearsing, would me more agreeve.

" High towers, faire temples, goodly theaters,  
Strong walls, rich porches, princelie pallaces,  
Large streetes, brave houses, sacred sepulchers,  
Sure gates, sweete gardens, stately galleries,  
Wrought with faire pillours and fine imageries ;  
All those (O pitie !) now are turnd to dust,  
And overgrowne with black oblivions rust.

" Thereto for warlike power, and peoples store,  
In Britannie was none to match with mee,  
That manie often did abie full sore :  
Ne Troynovant, though elder sister shee,  
With my great forces might compared bee ;  
That stout Pendragon to his perill felt,  
Who in a siege seaven yeres about me dwelt.

" But long ere this, Bunduca, Britonnesse,  
Her mightie boast against my bulwarkes brought,  
Bunduca, that victorious conqueresse,  
That, lifting up her brave heroick thought  
Bove womens weaknes, with the Romanes fought,  
Fought, and in field against them thrice pre-  
vaild :

Yet was she foyled, when as she me assailed.

Ver 1. — on day] The adjective on for one is fre-  
quent in Chaucer. TODD.

Ver. 47. — ingate] Entrance. TODD.



" And though at last by force I conquered were  
Of hardie Saxons, and became their thrall ;  
Yet was I with much bloodshed bought full decree, 116  
And priz'd with slaught' of their General .  
The monument of whose sad funeral,  
For wonder of the world, long in me lasted ;  
But now to nought, through spoyle of time, is  
wasted.

" Wasted it is, as if it never were ; 120  
And all the rest, that me so honor'd made  
And of the world admir'd ev'rie where,  
Is turn'd to smoake, that doth to nothing fade ;  
And of that brightnes now appears no shade,  
But greislie shades, such as doo haunt in hell 125  
With fearfull fiends, that in deep darknes dwell.

" Where my high steeples whilom usde to stand,  
On which the lordly falcon wont to towre, 129  
There now is but an heap of lyme and sand  
For the shrliche-owle to build her balefull bowre :  
And where the nightingale wont forth to powre  
Her restles plaints, to comfort wakefull lovers,  
There now haunt yelling mewes and whining  
plovers.

" And where the christall Thamis wont to slide  
In silver channell, downe along the lee, 135  
About whose flowrie bankes on either side  
A thousand Nymphes, with mirthfull iollitee,  
Were wont to play, from all annoyance free ;  
There now no rivers course is to be seene,  
But moorish fennes, and marshes ever greene. 140

" Seemes, that that gentle river for great griefe  
Of my mishaps, which oft I to him plained ;  
Or for to shunne the horrible mischiefe,  
With which he saw my cruell foes me pained,  
And his pure streames with guiltles bloud oft 145  
stained ;  
From my unhappie neighborhood farre fled,  
And his sweete waters away with him led.

" There also, where the winged ships were seene  
In liquid waives to cut their fomie waie,  
And thousand fishers numbred to have been, 150  
In that wide lake looking for plenteous praie  
Of fish, which they with baits usde to betraie,  
Is now no lake, nor anie fishers store,  
Nor ever ship shall saile there anie more.

" They all are gone, and all with them is gone ! 155  
Ne ought to me remains, but to lament  
My long decay, which no man els doth mone,  
And mourne my fall with dolefull dreriment.  
Yet it is comfort in great languishment,  
To be bemoned with compassion kinde, 160  
And mitigates the anguish of the minde.

" But me no man bewaileth, but in game,  
Ne sheddeth teares from lamentable eie :  
Nor anie lives that mentioneth my name  
To be remembred of posteritie, 165  
Save One, that maugre Fortunes iniurie,  
And Times decay, and Envies cruell tort,  
Hath writ my record in true-seeming sort.

" Cambden ! the nourice of antiquitie,  
And lanterne unto late succeeding age, 170

To see the light of simple veritie  
Buried in ruines, through the great outráge  
Of her owne people led with warlike rage :  
Cambden ! though Time all monuments obscure, 175  
Yet thy iust labours ever shall endure.

" But whie (unhappie wight !) doo I thus crie,  
And grieve that my remembrance quite is raced  
Out of the knowledge of posteritie,  
And all my antique monuments defaced ? 180  
Sith I doo dailie see things highest placed,  
So soone as Fates their vitall thred have shorne,  
Forgotten quite as they were never borne.

" It is not long, since these two eyes beheld  
A mightie Prince, of most renowned race,  
Whom England high in count of honour held, 185  
And greatest ones did sue to gaine his grace ;  
Of greatest ones he greatest in his place,  
Sate in the bosome of his Sovereaine,  
And *Right and Loyall* did his word maintaine.

" I saw him die, I saw him die, as one 190  
Of the meane people, and brought forth on beare ;  
I saw him die, and no man left to mone  
His dolefull fate, that late him loved deare :  
Scarse anie left to close his eyldis neare ; 195  
Scarse anie left upon his lips to laie  
The sacred sod, or Requiem to saie.

" O trustlesse state of miserable men,  
That builde your blis on hope of earthly thing,  
And vainly thinke your selves halfe happie then, 200  
When painted faces with smooth flattering  
Doo fawne on you, and your wide praises sing ;  
And, when the courting masker louteth lowe,  
Him true in heart and trustie to you trow !

" All is but fained, and with oaker dide,  
That everie shower will wash and wipe away ; 205  
All things doo change that under heaven abide,  
And after death all friendship doth decaie.  
Therefore, what ever man bearest worldlie sway,  
Living, on God and on thy selfe relie ; 210  
For, when thou diest, all shall with thee die.

" He now is dead, and all is with him dead,  
Save what in heavens storehouse he uplaid :  
His hope is faild, and come to passe his dread,  
And evil men (now dead) his decdes upraid : 215  
Spite bites the dead, that living never baid.  
He now is gone, the whiles the Foxe is crept  
Into the hole, the which the Badger swept.

" He now is dead, and all his glorie gone,  
And all his greatnes vapoured to nought,  
That as a glasse upon the water shone, 220  
Which vanisht quite, so soone as it was sought :  
His name is worne alreadie out of thought,  
Ne anie Poet seekes him to revive ;  
Yet manie Poets honourd him alive.

" Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloute, 225  
Care now his idle bagpipe up to raise,  
Ne tell his sorrow to the listning rout [praise :  
Of shepheard groomes, which wont his songs to

Ver. 184. *A mightie prince, &c*] Robert Dudley, Ear  
of Leicester. OLDYS.

Ver. 189. *Right and Loyall*] His motto. OLDYS.

Praise who so list, yet I will him dispraise,  
 Untill he quite him of this guiltie blame :  
 Wake, shepherds boy, at length awake for shame. 230

“ And who so els did goodnes by him gaine,  
 And who so els his boutheous minde did trie,  
 Whether he shepherd be, or shepherds swaine,  
 (For manie did, which doo it now denie,) 235  
 Awake, and to his Song a part applie :  
 And I, the whilst you mourne for his decease,  
 Will with my mourning plaints your plaint increase.

“ He dyde, and after him his brother dyde,  
 His brother Prince, his brother noble Peere, 240  
 That whilst he lived was of none envyyde,  
 And dead is now, as living, counted deare,  
 Deare unto all that true affection beare :  
 But unto thee most deare, O dearest Dame,  
 His noble Spouse, and Paragon of Fame. 245

“ He, whilst he lived, happie was through thee,  
 And, being dead, is happie now much more ;  
 Living, that linkcd chaunst with thee to bee,  
 And dead, because him dead thou dost adore 250  
 As living, and thy lost deare Love deplore.  
 So whilst that thou, faire flower of chastitie,  
 Dost live, by thee thy Lord shall never die.

“ Thy Lord shall never die, the whites this verse  
 Shall live, and surely it shall live for ever :  
 For ever it shall live, and shall rehearse 255  
 His worthe praise, and vertues dying never,  
 Though death his soule doo from his bodie sever :  
 And thou thy selfe herein shalt also live ;  
 Such grace the heavens doo to my verses give.

“ Ne shall his Sister, ne thy Father die, 260  
 Thy Father, that good Earle of rare renowne,  
 And noble Patrone of weake povertie ;  
 Whose great good deeds in countrey, and in towne,  
 Have purchast him in heaven a happie crowne : 265  
 Where he now liveth in eternall blis,  
 And left his sonne t' ensue those steps of his.

“ He, noble Bud, his Grandsires livelie hayre,  
 Under the shadow of thy countenance  
 Now ginnes to shoote up fast, and flourish fayre  
 In learned artes, and goodlie gouvernaunce, 270  
 That him to highest honour shall advance.  
 Brave Impe of Bedford, grow apace in bountie,  
 And count of wisdome more than of thy countie !

“ Ne may I let thy husbands Sister die,  
 That goodly Ladie, sith she eke did spring 275

Ver. 239. — and after him his brother dyde,] Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick, died without issue Feb. 20, 1589. OLYVS.  
 Ver. 244. But unto thee &c.] Anne, the eldest daughter of Francis Lord Russel Earl of Bedford, was his last wife. OLYVS.  
 Ver. 260. — his Sister,] Lady Mary Sidney. OLYVS.  
 Ver. 261. — that good Earle &c.] This Earl of Bedford died in 1585. TOND.  
 Ver. 267. He, noble Bud, &c.] Edward Lord Russel, grandson of Francis Earl of Bedford, succeeded in the Earldom ; his father Francis having been slain by the Scots. OLYVS.  
 Ver. 275. That goodly Ladie, &c.] Lady Mary Sidney, mother of Sir Philip Sidney and the Countess of Pembroke. OLYVS.

Out of his stocke and famous familie,  
 Whose praises I to future age doo sing ;  
 And fourth out of her happie womb did bring  
 The sacred brood of learning and all honour ;  
 In whom the heavens powrde all their gifts upon 280  
 her.

“ Most gentle spirite breathed from above,  
 Out of the bosome of the Makers blis,  
 In whom all bountie and all vertuous love  
 Appeared in their native propertie,  
 And did enrich that noble breast of his 285  
 With treasure passing all this world's worth,  
 Worthie of heaven it selfe, which brought it forth.

“ His blessed spirite, full of power divine  
 And influence of all celestially grace,  
 Loathing this sinfull earth and earthlie slime, 290  
 Fled backe too soone unto his native place :  
 Too soone for all that did his love embrace,  
 Too soone for all this wretched world, whom he  
 Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

“ Yet, ere his happie soule to heaven went 295  
 Out of this fleshlie gaole, he did devise  
 Unto his heavenlie Maker to present  
 His bodie, as a spotles sacrifice ;  
 And those, that guiltie hands of enemies  
 Should powre forth th' offering of his guiltles blood :  
 So life exchanging for his countries good. 301

“ O noble spirite, live there ever blessed,  
 The worlds late wonder, and the heavens new ioy ;  
 Live ever there, and leave me here distressed  
 With mortall cares and cumbrous worlds any !  
 But, where thou dost that happines enjoy, 306  
 Bid me, O bid me quicklie come to thee,  
 That happie there I maie thee alwaies see !

“ Yet, whilst the Fates affoord me vitall breath, 311  
 I will it spend in speaking of thy praise,  
 And sing to thee, untill that timelie death  
 By heavens doome doo ende my earthlie daies :  
 Thereto doo thou my humble spirite raise,  
 And into me that sacred breath inspire,  
 Which thou there breathest perfect and entire. 315

“ Then will I sing ; but who can better sing  
 Than thine owne Sister, peerles Lady bright,  
 Which to thee sings with deep harts sorrowing,  
 Sorrowing tempered with deare delight,  
 That her to heare I feele my feeble spright 320  
 Robbed of sense, and ravished with ioy,  
 O sad ioy made of mourning and any !

“ Yet will I sing ; but who can better sing  
 Than thou thy selfe, thine owne selves valiance,  
 That, whilst thou livedst, madest the forrests  
 ring, 325  
 And fields resownd, and flockes to leap and daunce,  
 And shepherds leave their lambs unto mischaunce,  
 To runne thy shrill Arcadian Pipe to heare :  
 O happie were those dayes, thrice happie were !

Ver. 285. — that noble breast of his] Sir Philip Sidney. OLYVS.  
 Ver. 316. — but who can better sing,  
 Than thine owne Sister, &c.] Mary Countess of Pembroke. TOND.

"But now more happie thou, and wretched wee,<sup>330</sup>  
Which want the wonted sweetnes of thy voice,  
Whiles thou now in Elysian fields so free,  
With Orpheus, and with Linus, and the choice  
Of all that ever did in rimes reioyce,  
Conversest, and doost heare their heavenlie layes,<sup>335</sup>  
And they heare thine, and thine doo better praise.

"So there thou livest, singing evermore,  
And here thou livest, being ever song  
Of us, which living loved thee afore,  
And now thee worship amongst that blessed throug<sup>341</sup>  
Of heavenlie Poets and Heroës strong.  
So thou both here and there immortal art,  
And everie where through excellent desart.

"But such as neither of themselves can sing,<sup>345</sup>  
Nor yet are sung of others for reward,  
Die in obscure oblivion, as the thing  
Which never was, ne ever with regard  
Their names shall of the later age be heard,  
But shall in rustie darknes ever lie,  
Unles they mentioned be with infamie.<sup>350</sup>

"What booteth it to have beene rich alive ?  
What to be great ? what to be gracious ?  
When after death no token doth survive  
Of former beeing in this mortall hous,  
But sleeps in dust dead and inglorious,<sup>355</sup>  
Like beast, whose breath but in his nostrrels is,  
And hath no hope of happinesse or blis.

"How manie great ones may remembred be,  
Which in their daies most famouslie did florish ;  
Of whome no word we heare, nor signe now see,<sup>360</sup>  
But as things wipt out with a sponge do perishe,  
Because they living cared not to cherishe  
No gentle wits, through pride or eovetize,  
Which might their names for ever memorize !

"Provide therefore (ye Princes) whilst ye live,<sup>365</sup>  
That of the Muses ye may friendie bee,  
Which unto men eternitie do give ;  
For they be daughters of Dame Memorie  
And Love, the father of Eternitie,  
And do those men in golden thrones repose,<sup>370</sup>  
Whose merits they to glorifie do chose.

"The seven-fold yron gates of grislie Hell,  
And horrid house of sad Proserpina,  
They able are with power of mightie spell  
To breake, and thence the soules to bring awaie<sup>375</sup>  
Out of dread darkenesse to eternall day,  
And them immortall make which els would die  
In foule forgetfulness, and nameles lie.

"So whilome raised they the puissant brood  
Of golden-girt Alcmena, for great merite,<sup>380</sup>  
Out of the dust, to which the Octean wood  
Had him consum'd, and spent his vital spirite,  
To highest heaven, where now he doth inherit  
All happinesse in Hebes silver bowre,  
Chosen to be her dearest Paramoure.<sup>385</sup>

"So raisde they eke faire Ledaes warlike twinnes,  
And interchanged life unto them lent,

That, when th' one dies, the other then begins  
To shew in heaven his brightnes orient ;  
And they, for pittie of the sad wayment,<sup>390</sup>  
Which Orpheus for Eurydice did make,  
Her back againe to life sent for his sake.

"So happie are they, and so fortunate,  
Whom the Pierian sacred Sisters love,  
That freed from bands of impacable fate,<sup>395</sup>  
And power of death, they live for aye above,  
Where mortall wreakes their blis may not remove:  
But with the gods, for former vertues meede,  
On Nectar and Ambrosia do feede.

"For deeds doe die, how ever noblie donne,<sup>400</sup>  
And thoughts of men do as themselves decay :  
But wise wordes taught in numbers for to runne,  
Recorded by the Muses, live for aye ;  
Ne may with storming showers be washt away,  
Ne bitter-breathing windes with harmful blast,<sup>406</sup>  
Nor age, nor envie, shall them ever wast.

"In vaine doo earthly Princes then, in vaine,  
Seeke with Pyramides, to heaven aspired ;  
Or huge Colosses, built with costlie paine ;<sup>410</sup>  
Or brassen Pillours, never to be fired ;  
Or Shrines, made of the mettall most desired ;  
To make their memories for ever live :  
For how can mortall immortallitie give ?

"Such one Mausolus made, the worlds great  
wonder,  
But now no remnant doth thereof remaine :<sup>415</sup>  
Such one Marcellus, but was torne with thunder :  
Such one Lisippus, but is worne with raine :  
Such one King Edmond, but was rent for gaine.  
All such vaine moniments of earthlie masse,  
Devour'd of Time, in time to nought doo passe.<sup>420</sup>

"But Fame with golden wings aloft doth flie,  
Above the reach of ruinous decay,  
And with brave plumes doth beate the azure skie,  
Admir'd of base-borne men from farre away :  
Then who so will with vertuous deeds assay<sup>425</sup>  
To mount to heaven, on Pegasus must ride,  
And with sweete Poets verse be glorified.

"For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake,  
Could save the sonne of Thetis from to die ;  
But that blinde Bard did him immortall make<sup>430</sup>  
With verses, dipt in dew of Castalie :  
Which made the Easterne Conquerour to crie,  
O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue found  
So brave a Trompe, thy noble acts to sound.

"Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read<sup>435</sup>  
Good Melibe, that hath a Poet got  
To sing his living praises being dead,  
Deserving never here to be forgot,  
In spite of envie, that his deeds would spot :  
Since whose decease, learning lies unregarded,<sup>440</sup>  
And men of armes doo wander unrewarded.

"Those two be those two great calamities,  
That long agoe did grieve the noble spright

Ver. 436. *Good Melibe, that hath a Poet got.*] Sir Francis Walsingham, who died Apr. 6. 1590, is *Melibe*. The *Poet* is Thomas Watson, who published his "*Melibocus, sive Ecloga in Obitum Honoratissimi viri Dom. Fr. Walsinghami, Equitis Aurati, &c. 4to. 1590.*" OLYNS

Ver. 379. *So whilome raised they &c.*] The Muses raised &c. JORTIN.

Of Salomon with great indignities ;  
 Who whilome was alive the wisest wight. 445  
 But now his wisdom is disprooved quite ;  
 For he, that now welds all things at his will,  
 Scorns th' one and th' other in his deeper skill.

" O griefe of griefes ! O gall of all good heartes !  
 To see that vertue should dispised bee 450  
 Of him, that first was raise'd for vertuous parts,  
 And now, broad spreading like an aged tree,  
 Lets none shoot up that nigh him planted bee :  
 O let the man, of whom the Muse is scorned,  
 Nor alive nor dead be of the Muse adorned ! 455

" O vile worlds trust ! that with such vaine illusion  
 Hath so wise men bewicht, and overkest,  
 That they see not the way of their confusion :  
 O vainesse ! to be added to the rest,  
 That do my soule with inward griefe infest : 460  
 Let them behold the piteous fall of mee,  
 And in my case their owne ensample see.

" And who so els that sits in highest seate  
 Of this worlds glorie, worshipped of all,  
 Ne feareth change of time, nor fortunes threate, 465  
 Let him behold the horror of my fall,  
 And his owne end unto remembrance call ;  
 That of like ruine he may warned bee,  
 And in himselfe be mov'd to pittie mee."—

Thus having ended all her piteous plaint,  
 With dolefull shrikes shee vanished away,  
 That I through inward sorrowe wexen faint,  
 And all astonished with deepe dismay 470  
 For her departure, had no word to say ;  
 But sate long time in sencelesse sad affright,  
 Looking still, if I might of her have sight. 475

Which when I missed, having looked long,  
 My thought returned greewed home againe,  
 Renewing her complaint with passion strong,  
 For ruth of that same womans piteous paine ; 480  
 Whose wordes recording in my troubled braine,  
 I felt such anguish wound my feeble heart,  
 That frozen horror ran through everie part.

So inlie greewing in my groning brest,  
 And deepeлие mazing at her doubtfull speach, 485  
 Whose meaning much I labored forth to wreste,  
 Being above my slender reasons reach ;  
 At length, by demonstration me to teach,  
 Before mine eies strange sights presented were,  
 Like tragicke Pageants seeming to appeare. 490

I SAW an Image, all of masse gold,  
 Placed on high upon an Altare faire,  
 That all, which did the same from farre beholde,  
 Might worship it, and fall on lowest staire. 495  
 Not that great Idoll might with this compare,  
 To which th' Assyrian Tyrant would have made  
 The holie brethren falslie to have praid.  
 But th' Altare, on the which this Image staid,  
 Was (O great pitie !) built of bricke clay,  
 That shortly the foundation decayd, 500

Ver. 447. For he & c ] Lord Burleigh. Todd.

Ver. 499. — bricke] "BRICKLE, full of bricke, fit  
 for bricke, briqueux."—Colgrave. Todd.

With showres of heaven and tempests worne away ;  
 Then downe it fell, and low in ashes lay,  
 Scorned of everie one, which by it went ;  
 That I, it seeing, dearelie did lament.

## II.

Next unto this a stategie Towre appeared, 505  
 Built all of richest stone that might bee found,  
 And nigh unto the Heavens in height upreared,  
 But placed on a plot of sandie ground :  
 Not that great Towre, which is so much renownd  
 For tongues confusion in Holie Writ, 510  
 King Ninus worke, might be compar'd to it.  
 But O vaine labours of terrestriall wit,  
 That buildes so stronglie on so frayle a soyle,  
 As with each storme does fall away, and flit,  
 And gives the fruit of all your travailes toyle, 515  
 To be the pray of Tyme, and Fortunes spoyle !  
 I saw this Towre fall sodainelic to dust,  
 That nigh with griefe thereof my heart was brust.

## III.

Then did I see a pleasant Paradize,  
 Full of sweete flowres and daintiest delights, 520  
 Such as on earth man could not more devize,  
 With pleasures choyce to feed his choerefull  
 sprights :  
 Not that, which Merlin by his magicke slights  
 Made for the gentle Squire, to entertaine  
 His fayre Belphebe, could this gardine staine. 525  
 But O short pleasure bought with lasting paine !  
 Why will hereafter anie flesh delight  
 In earthlie blis, and ioy in pleasures vaine,  
 Since that I sawe this gardine wasted quite,  
 That where it was scarce seemed anie sight ? 530  
 That I, which once that beantie did beholde,  
 Could not from teares my melting eyes with-holde.

## IV.

Soone after this a Giant came in place,  
 Of wondrous powre, and of exceeding stature,  
 That none durst vewe the horror of his face, 535  
 Yet he was milde of speach, and meeke of nature :  
 Not he, which in despite of his Creatour  
 With railing tearmes defied the Iewish hoast,  
 Might with this mightie one in hugenes boast ;  
 For from the one he could to th' other coast 540  
 Stretch his strong thighes, and th' ocean overstride,  
 And reach his hand into his enemies hoast.  
 But see the end of pompe and fleshlie pride !  
 One of his feete unawares from him did slide,  
 That downe hee fell into the deepe abisse, 545  
 Where drown'd with him is all his earthlie blisse.

## V.

Then did I see a Bridge, made all of golde,  
 Over the sea from one to other side,  
 Withouten prop or pillour it t' upholde,  
 But like the coloured rainbowe arch'd wide : 550  
 Not that great Arche, which Trajan edifice,  
 To be a wonder to all age ensuing,  
 Was matchable to this in equal vewing.  
 But (ah !) what bootes it to see earthlie thing  
 In glorie, or in greatnes to excell, 555  
 Sith time doth greatest things to ruine bring ?  
 This goodlie Bridge, one foote not fastned well,  
 Gan faile, and all the rest downe shortlie fell,  
 Ne of so brave a building ought remained,  
 That griefe thereof my spirite greatly pained. 560

## vi.

I saw two Beares, as white as anie milke,  
Lying together in a mightie cave,  
Of milde aspect, and haire as soft as silke,  
That salvage nature seemed not to have,  
Nor after greedie spoyle of bloud to crave : 565  
Two fairer beasts might not elswhere be found,  
Although the compast world were sought around.  
But what can long abide above this ground  
In state of blis, or stedfast happinesse ?  
The Cave, in which these Beares lay sleeping 570  
sound,  
Was but of earth, and with her weightnesse  
Upon them fell, and did unwares oppresse ;  
That, for great sorrow of their sudden fate,  
Henceforth all worlds felicitie I hate.

¶ Much was I troubled in my heavie spright,  
At sight of these sad spectacles forepast,  
That all my senses were bereaved quight,  
And I in minde remained sore agast,  
Distraught twixt feare and pitie ; when at last  
I heard a voyce, which loudly to me called, 580  
That with the sudden shrill I was appalled.  
Behold (said it) and by ensample see,  
That all is vanitie and griefe of minde,  
Ne other comfort in this world can be,  
But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclinde ; 585  
For all the rest must needs be left behinde :  
With that it bad me, to the other side  
To cast mine eye, where other sights I spide.

## i.

Upon that famous Rivers further shore,  
There stood a snowie Swan of heavenly hiew, 590  
And gentle kinde, as ever Fowle afore ;  
A fairer one in all the goodlie crew  
Of white Strimonian brood might no man view :  
There he most sweetly sung the prophetic  
Of his owne death in dolefull Elegie. 595  
At last, when all his mourning melodie  
He ended had, that both the shores resounded,  
Feeling the fit that him forwarnd to die,  
With loftie flight above the earth he bounded, 600  
And out of sight to highest heaven mounted,  
Where now he is become an heavenly signe ;  
There now the ioy is his, here sorrow mine.

## ii.

Whilst thus I looked, loe ! adowne the lee  
I saw an Harpe stroong all with silver twyne,  
And made of golde and costlie yvorie, 605  
Swimming, that whilome seemed to have been  
The Harpe, on which Dan Orpheus was seene  
Wyld beasts and forrests after him to lead,  
But was th' Harpe of Philisides now dead.  
At length out of the river it was reard 610  
And borne above the cloudes to be divin'd,  
Whilst all the way most heavenly noyse was heard  
Of the strings, stirred with the warbling wind,  
That wrought both ioy and sorrow in my mind :  
So now in heaven a signe it doth appeare, 615  
The Harpe well knowne beside the Northern Beare.

## iii.

Soone after this I saw on th' other side,  
A curious Coffer made of Heben wood,

Ver. 609. ——— *th' Harpe of Philisides*] Of Sir Philip  
Sidney. Todd.

That in it did most precious treasure hide,  
Exceeding all this baser world's good : 620  
Yet through the overflowing of the flood  
It almost drowned was, and done to nought,  
That sight thereof much griev'd my pensive thought.  
At length, when most in perill it was brought,  
Two Angels, downe descending with swift flight, 625  
Out of the swelling streame it lightly caught,  
And twixt their blessed armes it carried quight  
Above the reach of anie living sight :  
So now it is transform'd into that starre,  
In which all heavenly treasures locked are. 630

## iv.

Looking aside I saw a stately Bed,  
Adorned all with costly cloth of gold,  
That might for anie Princes couche be red,  
And deckt with daintie flowres, as if it shold  
Be for some Bride, her ioyous night to hold : 635  
Therein a goodly Virgine sleeping lay ;  
A fairer wight saw never summers day.  
I heard a voyce that called farre away,  
And her awaking bad her quickly dight,  
For lo ! her Bridegroune was in readie ray 640  
To come to her, and seeke her loves delight :  
With that she started up with cherefull sight,  
When suddenly both Bed and all was gone,  
And I in languor left there all alone.

## v.

Still as I gazed, I beheld where stood 645  
A Knight all arm'd, upon a winged steed,  
The same that was bred of Medusae's blood,  
On which Dan Perseus, borne of heavenly seed,  
The faire Andromeda from perill freed : 650  
Full mortally this Knight ywounded was,  
That streames of blood fourth flow'd on the gras :  
Yet was he deckt (small ioy to him alas !)  
With manie garlands for his victories,  
And with rich spoyle, which late he did purchas  
Through brave atcheivements from his enemies : 655  
Fainting at last through long infirmitie,  
He smote his steed, that straight to heaven him  
And left me here his losse for to deplore. [bore,

## vi.

Lastly I saw an Arke of purest golde  
Upon a brazen pillour standing hie, 660  
Which th' ashes seem'd of some great Prince to  
Enclosde therein for endles memorie [hold,  
Of him, whom all the world did glorifie :  
Seemed the heavens with the earth did disagree, 665  
Whether should of those ashes keeper bee.  
At last me seem'd wing-footed Mercurie,  
From heaven descending to appease their strife,  
The Arke did beare with him above the skie,  
And to those ashes gave a second life, 670  
To live in heaven, where happines is rife :  
At which the earth did grieve exceedingly,  
And I for dole was almost like to die.

## I' ENVOY.

Immortal spirit of Philisides,  
Which now art made the heavens ornament,

Ver. 661. *Which th' ashes seem'd of some great Prince to hold, &c.*] This seems an allusion to the circumstance of Sir Philip Sidney's corpse being brought to England. Todd

That whilome was the world's chiefst richés ; <sup>675</sup>  
 Give leave to him that lov'de thee to lament  
 His losse, by lacke of thee to heaven hent,  
 And with last duties of this broken verse,  
 Broken with sighes, to decke thy sable Herse !  
 And ye, faire Ladie ! th' honour of your daies, <sup>680</sup>

And glorie of the world, your high thoughts  
 scorne ;  
 Vouchsafe this moniment of his last praise  
 With some few silver-dropping teares t' adorne ;  
 And as ye be of heavenlie off-spring borne,  
 So unto heaven let your high minde aspire, <sup>685</sup>  
 And loath this drosse of sinfull worlds desire !

THE  
 TEARES OF THE MUSES.

1591.

TO

## THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LADIE STRANGE.

Most brave and noble Ladie ; the things, that make ye so much honored of the world as ye bee, are such, as (without my simple lines testimonie) are throughlie knowen to all men ; namely, your excellent beautie, your vertuous behavior, and your noble match with that most honourable Lord, the very Paterne of right Nobilitie : But the causes, for which ye have thus deserved of me to be honoured, (if honour it be at all,) are, both your particular bounties, and also some private bands of affinitie, which it hath pleased your Ladiship to acknowledge. Of which whenas I found my selfe in no part woerthie, I devised this last slender meanes, both to intimate my humble affection to your Ladiship, and also to make the same universallie knowen to the world ; that by honouring you they might know me, and by knowing me they might honor you. Vouchsafe, noble Lady, to accept this simple remembrance, though not worthy of your self, yet such, as perhaps by good acceptance thereof ye may hereafter cull out a more meet and memorable evidence of your owne excellent deserts. So recommending the same to your Ladiships good liking, I humbly take leave.

Your La: humbly ever.

ED. SP.

REHEARSE to me, ye sacred Sisters nine,  
 The golden brood of great Apolloes wit,  
 Those piteous plaints and sorowfull sad tine,  
 Which late ye powred forth as ye did sit  
 Beside the silver springs of Helicone,  
 Making your musick of hart-breaking mone !

For since the time that Phœbus foolish sonne  
 Ythundered, through Ioves avengefull wrath,  
 For traversing the charret of the Sunne  
 Beyond the compass of his pointed path,  
 Of you his mournfull Sisters was lamented,  
 Such mournfull tunes were never since invented.

Nor since that faire Calliope did lose  
 Her loved Twinnes, the dearlings of her ioy,  
 Her Palici, whom her unkindly foes,  
 The Fatall Sisters, did for spight destroy,  
 Whom all the Muses did bewaile long space ;  
 Was ever heard such wayling in this place.

For all their groves, which with the heavenly noyses  
 Of their sweete instruments were wont to sound, <sup>20</sup>  
 And th' hollow hills, from which their silver voyces

Were wont redoubled echoes to rebound,  
 Did now rebound with nought but rufull cries,  
 And yelling shrieks throwne up into the skies.

<sup>5</sup> The trembling streames which wont in chanel cleare  
 To remble gently downe with murmur soft, <sup>26</sup>  
 And were by them right tunefull taught to beare  
 A bases part amongst their consorts off ;  
 Now, forst to overflowe with brackish teares,  
 With troublous noyse did dull their daintie eares. <sup>31</sup>

<sup>10</sup> The ioyous Nymphes and lightfoote Faëries  
 Which thether came to heare their musick sweet,  
 And to the measure of their melodies  
 Did learne to move their nimble-shifting feete ;  
 Now, hearing them so heavily lament, <sup>35</sup>  
 Like heavily lamenting from them went.

And all that els was wont to worke delight  
 Through the divine infusion of their skill,  
 And all that els seemd faire and fresh in sight,  
 So made by nature for to serve their will, <sup>40</sup>  
 Was turned now to dismall heavinesse,  
 Was turned now to dreadfull uglinesse.

Ay me! what thing on earth that all thing breeds,  
Might be the cause of so impatient plight?  
What furie, or what feend, with felon deeds 45  
Hath stirred up so mischievous despight?  
Can griepe then enter into heavenly harts,  
And pierce immortal breasts with mortall smarts?

Vouchsafe ye then, whom onely it concernes,  
To me those secret causes to display; 50  
For none but you, or who of you it learns,  
Can rightfully aread so dolefull lay.  
Begin, thou eldest Sister of the crew,  
And let the rest in order thee ensew.

## CLIO.

HEARE, thou great Father of the gods on hie, 55  
That most art dreaded for thy thunder darts;  
And thou our Sire, that raignt in Castalie  
And Mount Parnasse, the god of goodly Arts:  
Heare, and behold the miserale state  
Of us thy daughters, dolefull desolate. 60

Behold the fowle reproach and open shame,  
The which is day by day unto us wrought  
By such as hate the honour of our name,  
The foes of learning and each gentle thought;  
They, not contented us themselves to scorne, 65  
Doo seeke to make us of the world forlorne.

Ne onely they that dwell in lowly dust,  
The sonnes of darknes and of ignoraunce;  
But they, whom thou, great Love, by doome unist  
Didst to the type of honour earst advance; 70  
They now, puft up with sdeignfull insolence,  
Despise the brood of blessed Sapience.

The sectaries of my celestiall skill,  
That wont to be the worlds chiefe ornament,  
And learned Impes that wont to shoote up still, 75  
And grow to height of kingdomes government,  
They underkeep, and with their spreading armes  
Do beat their buds, that perish through their harmes.

It most behoves the honorable race  
Of mightie Peeres true wisdomes to sustaine, 80  
And with their noble countenance to grace  
The learned foreheads, without gifts or gaine:  
Or rather learnd themselves behoves to bee;  
That is the girlond of Nobilitie.

But (ah!) all otherwise they doo esteeme 85  
Of th' heavenly gift of wisdomes influence,  
And to be learned it a base thing deeme;  
Base minded they that want intelligence:  
For God himselfe for wisdomes most is praised, 90  
And men to God thereby are highest raised.

But they doo onely strive themselves to raise  
Through pompons pride, and foolish vanitie;  
In th' eyes of people they put all their praise,  
And onely boast of Armes and Auncestrie:  
But vertuous deeds, which did those armes first give 95  
To their grandsyres, they care not to atchive.

So I, that doo all noble feates professe  
To register, and sound in trump of gold;  
Through their had dooings, or base slothfulnessse, 100  
Finde nothing worthie to be writ, or told:  
For better farre it were to hide their names,  
Then telling them to blazon out their blames.

So shall succeeding ages have no light  
Of things forepast, nor monuments of time;  
And all that in this world is worthie hight 105  
Shall die in darknesse, and lie hid in slime!  
Therefore I mornne with deep harts sorrowing,  
Because I nothing noble have to sing.—

With that she raynd such store of streaming teares,  
That could have made a stonie heart to weep; 110  
And all her Sisters rent their golden heares,  
And their faire faces with salt humour steep.  
So ended shee: and then the next anew,  
Began her grievous plaint as doth ensew.

## MELPOMENE.

O! who shall powre into my swollen eyes 115  
A sea of teares that never may be dryde,  
A brasen voice that may with shrilling cryes  
Pierce the dull heavens and fill the ayer wide,  
And yron sides that sighing may endure, 120  
To waile the wretchednes of world impure?

Ah! wretched world, the den of wickednesse,  
Deformed with filth and fowle iniquitie;  
Ah! wretched world, the house of heavnesse,  
Fild with the wreaks of mortall miserie;  
Ah! wretched world, and all that is therein, 125  
The vassals of Gods wrath, and slaves to sin.

Most miserable creature nnder sky  
Man without Understanding doth appeare;  
For all this worlds affliction he thereby,  
And Fortunes freakes, is wisely taught to beare: 130  
Of wretched life the onely ioy Shee is,  
And th' only comfort in calamities.

She armes the brest with constant patience  
Against the bitter throwes of Dolours darts:  
She solaceth with rules of Sapience 135  
The gentle minds, in midst of worldly smarts:  
When he is sad, shee seeks to make him merie,  
And doth refresh his sprights when they be werie.

But he that is of reasons skill bereft,  
And wants the staffe of wisdomes him to stay, 140  
Is like a ship in midst of tempest left  
Withouten helme or pilot her to sway:  
Full sad and dreadfull is that ships event;  
So is the man that wants intendment.

Why then doo foolish men so much despize 145  
The precious store of this celestiall riches?  
They doo they banish us, that patronize  
The name of learning? Most unhappie wretches!  
The which lie drowned in deep wretchednes, 150  
Yet doo not see their owne unhappiness.

My part it is and my professed skill  
The Stage with Tragick Buskin to adorne,  
And fill the Scene with plaint and outcries shrill  
Of wretched persons, to misfortune borne:  
But none more tragick matter I can finde 155  
Then this, of men depriv'd of sense and minde.

For all mans life me seemes a tragedy,  
Full of sad sights and sore catastrophes;

Ver. 112. ——— steep.] Here is one of Spenser's ellipses;  
steep for did steep. JORTIN.

Ver. 131. ——— Shee] *The Understanding.* TODD.

Ver. 144. ——— intendment.] *Attention or thought.* TODD.

First coming to the world with weeping eye,  
Where all his dayes, like dolorous trophies, 160  
Are heapt with spoyles of fortune and of feare,  
And he at last laid forth on balefull beare.

So all with ruffall spectacles is filld,  
Fit for Megera or Persephone ;  
But I that in true Tragedies am skild, 165  
The floure of wit, finde nought to busie me :  
Therefore I mourne, and pitifully mone,  
Because that mourning matter I have none.—

Then gan she wofully to waile, and wring  
Her wretched hands in lamentable wise ; 170  
And all her Sisters, thereto answering,  
Threw forth lowd shrieks and drierie dolefull cries.  
So rested she : and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

## THALIA.

WHERE be the sweete delights of learnings treasure,  
That wont with Comick sock to beautifie 176  
The painted Theaters, and fill with pleasure  
The listners eyes and eares with melodie ;  
In which I late was wont to raine as Queene,  
And maske in mirth with Graces well besene ? 180

O ! all is gone ; and all that goodly glee,  
Which wont to be the glorie of gay wits,  
Is layd abed, and no where now to see ;  
And in her roome unseemly Sorrow sits,  
With hollow browes and greisly countenance, 185  
Marring my ioyous gentile dalliaunce.

And him beside sits ugly Barbarisme,  
And brutish Ignorance, yerept of late  
Out of dredd darknes of the deepe abysme,  
Where being bredd, he light and heaven does hate :  
They in the mindes of men now tyrannize, 191  
And the faire scene with rudenes foule disguise.

All places they with follie have possessd,  
And with vaine toyes the vulgar entertain ;  
But me have banished, with all the rest 195  
That whilome wont to wait upon my traine,  
Fine Counterfesance, and unhurtfull Sport,  
Delight, and Laughter, deckt in seemly sort.

All these, and all that els the Comick Stage  
With seasoned wit and goodly pleasance graced, 200  
By which mans life in his likest image  
Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced ;  
And those sweete wits, which wont the like to frame,  
Are now despizd, and made a laughing game.

And he, the man whom Nature selfe had made 205  
To mock her selfe, and Truth to imitate,  
With kindly counter under mimick shade,  
Our pleasant Willy, ah ! is dead of late :  
With whom all ioy and iolly meriment 210  
Is also deaded, and in dolour drent.

In stead thereof scoffing Scurrillitie,  
And scornfull Follie with Contempt is crept,  
Rolling in rymes of shameless ribaudrie  
Without regard, or due Decorum kept ;

Ver. 207. — counter] This word is interpreted, by the Author of the Supplement to Johnson's Dictionary, a trial of skill. Todd.

Each idle wit at will presumes to make, 215  
And doth the Learneds taske pouou him take.

But that same gentile Spirit, from whose pen  
Large streames of homnie and sweete nectar flowe,  
Scorning the boldnes of such base-borne men,  
Which dare their follies forth so rashlie throwe ;  
Doth rather choose to sit in idle cell, 221  
Than so himselfe to mockerie to sell.

So am I made the servant of the manie,  
And laughing stocke of all that list to scorne,  
Not honored nor cared for of anie ; 225  
But loath'd of losels as a thing forlorne :  
Therefore I mourne and sorrow with the rest,  
Untill my cause of sorrow be redrest.—

Therewith she lowdly did lament and shriek,  
Pouring forth streames of teares abundantly ;  
And all her Sisters, with compassion like,  
The breaches of her singulfs did supply.  
So rested shee : and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew. 230

## EUTERPE.

LIKE as the dearling of the Summers pryde,  
Faire Philomele, when Winters stormie wrath 235  
The goodly fields, that earst so gay were dyde  
In colours divers, quite despoyled hath,  
All comfortlesse doth hide her chearlesse head  
During the time of that her widowhead : 240

So we, that earst were wont in sweet accord  
All places with our pleasant notes to fill,  
Whilest favourable times did us afford  
Free libertie to chaunt our charmes at will ;  
All comfortlesse upon the bared bow, 245  
Like wofull culvers, doo sit wayling now.

For far more bitter storme than winters stowre  
The beantie of the world hath lately wasted,  
And those fresh buds, which wont so faire to flowre,  
Hath marred quite, and all their blossoms  
blasted ; 250  
And those yong plants, which wont with fruit t'  
abound,  
Now without fruite or leaves are to be found.

A stonie coldnesse hath benumbd the sence  
And livelie spirits of each living wight,  
And dimd with darknesse their intelligence, 255  
Darknesse more than Cymerians daylie night :  
And monstrous Error, flying in the ayre,  
Hath mar'd the face of all that semed fayre.

Image of hellish horroure, Ignorance,  
Borne in the bosome of the black abyse, 260  
And fed with Furies milke for sustenance  
Of his weake infancie, begot amisse  
By yawning Sloth on his owne mother Night ;  
So hee his sonnes both syre and brother light.

He, armd with blindnesse and with boldnes stout,  
(For blind is bold,) hath our fayre light defaced ;  
And, gathering unto him a ragged rout, 267  
Of Faunes and Satyres, hath our dwellings raced ;  
And our chast bowers, in which all vertue rained,  
With brutishnesse and beastlie filth hath stained.

Ver. 243. — charmes] Literally carmina. T. WARTON.



The sacred springs of horsefoot Helicon, 271  
 So oft bedeawed with our learned layes,  
 And speaking streames of pure Castalion,  
 The famous witness of our wonted praise,  
 They trampled have with their fowle footings  
 trade, 275  
 And like to troubled puddles have them made.

Our pleasant groves, which planted were with  
 That with our musick wont so oft to ring, [paines,  
 And arbors sweet, in which the shepherds swaines  
 Were wont so oft their Pastoralls to sing, 280  
 They have cut downe, and all their pleasureance  
 That now no Pastoral is to bee hard. [maud,

In stead of them, fowle goblins and shriek-owles  
 With fearfull howling do all places fill ;  
 And feeble Echo now laments, and howles, 285  
 The dreadful accents of their outcries shrill.  
 So all is turned into wilderness,  
 Whilset Ignorance the Muses doth oppresse.

And I, whose ioy was earst with spirit full  
 To teach the warbling pipe to sound aloft, 290  
 (My spirits now dismayd with sorrow dull,  
 Doo mone my miserie with silence soft.  
 Therefore I mourne and waile incessantly,  
 Till please the heavens affoord me remedy.—

Therewith shee wayled with exceeding woe, 295  
 And pitious lamentation did make ;  
 And all her Sisters, seeing her doo soe,  
 With equall plaints her sorrowe did partake.  
 So rested shee : and then the next in rew  
 Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew. 300

## TERPSICHORE.

Whoso hath in the lap of soft Delight  
 Been long time luld, and fed with pleasures sweet,  
 Feareles through his own fault or Fortunes spight  
 To tumble into sorrow and regret, 305  
 Yf chance him fall into calamitie,  
 Finds greater burthen of his miserie.

So wee that earst in ioyance did abound,  
 And in the bosome of all blis did sit,  
 Like Virgin Queenes, with laurell garlands croud,  
 For vertues meed and ornament of wit ; 310  
 Sith Ignorance our kingdome did confound,  
 Be now become most wretched wightes on ground.

And in our royall thrones, which lately stood  
 In th' hearts of men to rule them carefully, 315  
 He now hath placed his accnrst brood,  
 By him begotten of fowle Infamy ;  
 Blind Error, scornefull Follie, and base Spight,  
 Who hold by wrong that wee should have by right.

They to the vulgar sort now pipe and sing,  
 And make them merrie with their fooleries ; 320  
 They chericlie chaunt, and rymes at randon fling,  
 The fruitfull spawne of their ranke fantasies ;  
 They feede the eares of fooles with flattery,  
 And good men blame, and losels magnify.

All places they doo with their toyes possesse, 325  
 And raigne in liking of the multitude ;  
 The Schooles they fill with fond new-fanglenesse,  
 And away in Court with pride and rashnes rude ;

Mongst simple Shepheards they do boast their skill,  
 And say their musicke matcheth Phoebus quill. 330

The noble hearts to pleasures they allure,  
 And tell their Prince that learning is but vaine ;  
 Faire Ladies loves they spot with thoughts impure,  
 And gentle mindes with lewd delights distaine ;  
 Clerks they to loathly idlenes entice, 335  
 And fill their bookes with discipline of vice.

So every where they rule, and tyrannize,  
 For their usurped kingdomes mainteance,  
 The whiles we silly Maides, whom they dispize  
 And with reprochfull scorne discounteance, 340  
 From our owne native heritage exile,  
 Walk through the world of every one revilde.

Nor anie one doth care to call us in,  
 Or once vouchsafeth us to entertaine,  
 Unlesse some one perhaps of gentle kin, 345  
 For pitties sake, compassion our paine,  
 And yeeld us some reliefe in this distresse ;  
 Yet to be so reliev'd is wretchednesse.

So wander we all carefull comfortlesse,  
 Yet none doth care to comfort us at all ; 350  
 So seeke we helpe our sorrow to redresse,  
 Yet none vouchsafes to answere to our call ;  
 Therefore we mourne and pittilesse complaine,  
 Because none living pittieeth our paine.—

With that she wept and wofullie waymented, 355  
 That nought on earth her griefe might pacifie ;  
 And all the rest her dolefull din augmented  
 With shrikes, and groanes, and grievous agonie.  
 So ended shee : and then the next in rew  
 Began her piteous plaint, as doth ensew. 360

## ERATO.

Ye gentle Spirits ! breathing from above,  
 Where ye in Venus silver bowre were bred,  
 Thoughts halfe devine, full of the fire of love,  
 With beawtie kindled, and with pleasure fed, 365  
 Which ye now in securitie possesse,  
 Forgetfull of your former heavinesse ;

Now change the tenor of your ioyous layes,  
 With which ye use your Loves to deifie,  
 And blazon forth an earthlie Beauties praise  
 Above the compasse of the arched skie : 370  
 Now change your praises into piteous cries,  
 And Eulogies turne into Elegies.

Such as ye wont, whenas those bitter stounds  
 Of raging love first gan you to torment,  
 And launch your hearts with lamentable wounds 375  
 Of secret sorrow and sad languishment,  
 Before your Loves did take you unto grace ;  
 Those now renew, as fitter for this place.

For I that rule, in measure moderate,  
 The tempest of that stormie passion, 380  
 And use to paint in rimes the troublous state  
 Of lovers life in likest fashion,  
 Am put from practise of my kindlie skill,  
 Banisht by those that Love with leawducs fill.

Love wont to be schoolmaster of my skill, 385  
 And the devicefull matter of my song ;  
 Sweete Love devoyd of villanie or ill,

But pure and spotles, as at first he sprong  
Out of th' Almightyes bosome, where he nests ;  
From thence infused into mortall brests. 390

Such high concept of that celestial fire,  
The base-borne brood of Blindnes cannot gesse,  
Ne ever dare their dunghill thoughts aspire  
Unto so loftie pitch of perfectnesse,  
But rime at riot, and doo rage in love ;  
Yet little wote what doth thereto behove. 395

Faire Cytheree, the mother of Delight,  
And queene of Beautie, now thou maist go pack ;  
For lo ! thy Kingdome is defaced quight,  
Thy scepter rent, and power put to wrack ;  
And thy gay Sonne, the winged god of Love,  
May now goe prune his plumes like ruffed dove. 400

And ye three Twins, to light by Venus brought,  
The sweete companions of the Muses late,  
From whom whatever thing is goodly thought,  
Doth borrow grace, the fancie to aggrate ;  
Go beg with us, and be companions still,  
As heretofore of good, so now of ill. 405

For neither you nor we shall anie more  
Find entertainment or in Court or Schoole :  
For that, which was accounted heretofore  
The learneds meede, is now lent to the foole ;  
He sings of love, and maketh loving layes,  
And they him heare, and they him highly prayse.— 410

With that she powred forth a brackish flood  
Of bitter teares, and made exceeding mone ;  
And all her Sisters, seeing her sad mood,  
With lowd laments her answered all at one.  
So ended she : and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew. 415

## CALLIOPE.

To whom shall I my evill case complaine,  
Or tell the anguish of my inward smart,  
Sith none is left to remedie my paine,  
Or deignes to pitie a perplexed hart ;  
But rather seekes my sorrow to augment  
With fowle reproach, and cruell banishment ? 420

For they, to whom I used to applie  
The faithfull service of my learned skill,  
The goodly off-spring of Loves progenie,  
That wont the world with famous acts to fill ;  
Whose living praises in heroic style,  
It is my chiefe profession to comyle ; 430

They, all corrupted through the rust of time,  
That doth all fairest things on earth deface,  
Or through unnobel sloth, or sinfull crime,  
That doth degenerate the noble race ;  
Have both desire of worthie deeds forlorne,  
And name of learning utterly doo scorne. 435

Ne doo they care to have the auncestrie  
Of th' old Heroës memorizd anew ;  
Ne doo they care that late posteritie  
Should know their names, or speak their praises dew,  
But die forgot from whence at first they sprong,  
As they themselves shalbe forgot ere long. 440

What hootes it then to come from glorious  
Forefathers, or to have been nobly bredd ? 445

What oddes twixt Irus and old Inachus,  
Twixt best and worst, when both alike are dedd ;  
If none of neither mention should make,  
Nor out of dust their memories awake ? 450

Or who would ever care to doo brave deed,  
Or strive in vertue others to excell ;  
If none should yeeld him his deserved meed,  
Due praise, that is the spur of dooing well ?  
For if good were not praised more than ill,  
None would choose goodnes of his owne freewill. 455

Therefore the Nurse of Vertue I am hight,  
And golden Trompet of Eternitie,  
That lowly thoughts lift up to heavens hight,  
And mortall men have powre to deifie :  
Bacchus and Hercules I raisd to heaven,  
And Charlemaine amongst the starris seaven. 460

But now I will my golden clarion rend,  
And will henceforth immortalize no more ;  
Sith I no more find worthie to commend  
For prize of value, or for learned lore :  
For noble Peeres, whom I was wont to raise,  
Now onely seeke for pleasure, nought for praise. 465

Their great revenues all in sumptuous pride  
They spend, that nought to learning they may  
spare ; 470

And the rich fee, which Poets wont divide,  
Now Parasites and Sycophants doo share :  
Therefore I mourne and endlesse sorrow make,  
Both for my selfe and for my Sisters sake.—

With that she lowdly gan to waile and shriek,  
And from her eyes a sea of teares did powre ;  
And all her Sisters, with compassion like,  
Did more increase the sharpnes of her showre.  
So ended she : and then the next in rew  
Began her plaint, as doth herein ensew. 475

## URANIA.

WHAT wrath of gods, or wicked influence  
Of starres conspiring wretched men t' afflict,  
Hath powrd on earth this noyous pestilence,  
That mortall mindes doth inwardly infect  
With love of blindnesse and of ignorance,  
To dwell in darknesse without sovenance ? 485

What difference twixt man and beast is left,  
When th' heavenlie light of Knowledge is put out,  
And th' ornaments of Wisdome are bereft ?  
Then wandreth he in error and in doubt,  
Unweeting of the danger hee is in,  
Through fishes frailtie, and deceit of sin. 490

In this wide world in which they wretches stray,  
It is the onelie comfort which they have,  
It is their light, their loadstarre, and their day ;  
But hell, and darknesse, and the grislie grave,  
Is Ignorance, the enemy of Grace,  
That mindes of men borne heavenlie doth debace. 495

Through Knowledge we behold the worlds creation,  
How in his cradle first he fostred was ;  
And Iudge of Natures cunning operation, 500

Ver. 486. ——— sovenance?] Fr. *souvenance*, remembrance. Topp.

How things she formed of a formlesse mas :  
By Knowledge wee do learne our selves to knowe,  
And what to man, and what to God, wee owe.

From hence wee mount aloft unto the skie, 505  
And looke into the christall firmament ;  
There we behold the heavens great Hierarchie,  
The Starres pure light, the Spheres swift movément,  
The Spirites and Intelligences fayre,  
And Angels waighting on th' Almightyes chayre. 510

And there, with humble minde and high insight,  
Th' Eternall Makers maiestie wee viewe,  
His love, his truth, his glorie, and his might,  
And mercie more then mortall men can vew. 515  
O soveraigne Lord, O soveraigne happinesse,  
To see thee, and thy mercie measurelesse !

Such happines have they, that do embrace  
The precepts of my heavenlie discipline ;  
But shame and sorrow and acursed ease  
Have they, that scorne the schoole of Arts divine, 520  
And banish me, which do professe the skill  
To make men heavenly wise through humbled will.

However yet they mee despise and spight,  
I feede on sweet contentment of my thought,  
And, please my selfe with mine owne selfe-delight, 525  
In contemplation of things heavenlie wrought :  
So, loathing earth, I looke up to the sky,  
And, being driven hence, I thether fly.

Thence I behold the miserie of men,  
Which want the bliss that Wisedom would them  
breed, 530  
And like brute beasts doo lie in loathsome den  
Of ghostly darknes, and of gastlie dreed :  
For whom I mourne, and for my selfe complaine,  
And for my Sisters eake whom they disdaine.—

With that shee wept and waild so pityouslie, 535  
As if her eyes had beene two springing wells ;  
And all the rest, her sorrow to supplie,  
Did throw forth shriekes and cries and dreery yells.  
So ended shee ; and then the next in rev  
Began her mournfull plaint, as doth ensew. 540

## POLYHYMNIA.

A DOLEFULL case desires a dolefull song,  
Without vaine art or curions complements ;  
And squallid Fortune, into basenes flong,  
Doth scorne the pride of wonted ornaments. 545  
Then fittest are these ragged rimes for mee,  
To tell my sorrowes that exceeding bec.

For the sweet numbers and melodious measures,  
With which I wont the winged words to tie,  
And make a tune full Diapase of pleasures,  
Now being let to runne at libertie 550

By those which have no skill to rule them right,  
Have now quite lost their naturall delight.

Heapes of huge words uphoorded hideously,  
With horrid sound though having little sence, 555  
They thinke to be chiefe praise of Poëtry ;  
And, thereby wanting due intelligence,  
Have mar'd the face of goodly Poësie,  
And made a monster of their fantasie.

Whilom in ages past none might professe  
But Princes and high Priests that secret skill ; 560  
The sacred lawes therein they wont expresse,  
And with deepe Oraeles their verses fill :  
Then was shee held in soveraigne dignitie,  
And made the nursling of Nobilitie.

But now nor Prince nor Priest doth her maintayne, 565  
But suffer her prophaned for to bee  
Of the base vulgar, that with hands uncleane  
Dares to pollute her hidden mysterie ;  
And treadeth under foote hir holie things,  
Which was the care of Kesars and of Kings. 570

One onelie lives, her ages ornament,  
And myrrour of her Makers maiestie,  
That with rich bountie, and deare cherishment,  
Supports the praise of noble Poësie ; 575  
Ne onelie favours them which it professe,  
But is her selfe a peeceles Poëtresse.

Most peeceles Prince, most peeceles Poëtresse,  
The true Pandora of all heavenly graces,  
Divine Elisa, sacred Emperesse !  
Live she for ever, and her royall p'laces 580  
Be filld with praises of divinst wits,  
That her eternize with their heavenlie writs !

Some few beside this sacred skill esteeme,  
Admirers of her glorious excellence ;  
Which, being lightned with her beauties beme, 585  
Are thereby filld with happie influence ;  
And lifted up above the world's gaze,  
To sing with Angels her immortal praize.

But all the rest, as borne of salvage brood,  
And having beene with acorns alwaies fed ; 590  
Can no whit savour this celestiall food,  
But with base thoughts are into blindness led,  
And kept from looking on the lightsome day :  
For whome I waile and weepe all that I may.—

Eftsoones such store of teares shee forth did powre, 595  
As if shee all to water would have gone ;  
And all her Sisters, seeing her sad stowre,  
Did weep and waile, and made exceeding mone,  
And all their learned instruments did breake :  
The rest untold no living tongue can speake. 600

Ver. 580. — p'laces] That is, *palaces*. TODD.

# VIRGILS GNAT

LONG SINCE DEDICATED

TO THE MOST NOBLE AND EXCELLENT LORD, THE EARLE OF LEICESTER

LATE DECEASED.

1591.

WRONO'D, yet not daring to expresse my paine,  
To you (great Lord) the causer of my care,  
In clowdie teares my case I thus complaine  
Unto your selfe, that onely privie are.

But if that any Œdipus unware  
Shall chauce, through power of some divining spright,  
To reade the secrete of this riddle rare,

And know the purpote of my evill plight ;  
Let him rest pleased with his owne insight,  
Ne further seeke to glose upon the text :  
For grieffe enough it is to griev'd wight  
To feele his fault, and not be further vext.  
But what so by my selfe may not be showen,  
May by this Gnatts complaint be easily knownen.

WE now have playde, Augustus, wantonly,  
Tuning our song unto a tender Muse,  
And, like a cobweb weaving slenderly,  
Have onely playde : Let thus much then excuse  
This Gnats small Poëme, that th' whole historie <sup>5</sup>  
Is but a iest, though envie it abuse :  
But who such sports and sweet delights doth blame,  
Shall lighter seeme then this Gnats idle name.

Hereafter, when as season more secure  
Shall bring forth fruit, this Muse shall speak to thee  
In bigger notes, that may thy sense allure, <sup>11</sup>  
And for thy worth frame some fit Poesie :  
The golden ofspring of Latona pure,  
And ornament of great Loves progenie, <sup>15</sup>  
Phœbus, shall be the author of my song,  
Playing on ivorie harp with silver strong.

He shall inspire my verse with gentle mood  
Of Poets Prince, whether he woon beside  
Faire Xanthus sprinced with Chimæras blood ; <sup>20</sup>  
Or in the woods of Astery abide ;  
Or whereas mount Parnasse, the Muses brood,  
Doth his broad forehead like two hornes divide,  
And the sweete waves of sounding Castaly  
With liquid foote doth slide downe easily.

Wherefore ye Sisters, which the glorie bee <sup>25</sup>  
Of the Pierian streames, fayre Naiades,  
Go too ; and, dauneing all in companie,  
Adorne that god : And thou holie Pales,  
To whome the honest care of husbandrie <sup>30</sup>  
Returneth by continuall succeesse,  
Have care for to pursue his footing light  
Through the wide woods, and groves, with green  
leaves dight.

Professing thee I lifted am aloft  
Betwixt the forrest wide and starrie sky :

Ver. 16. ——— strong.] That is, *strung*, having silver strings. Tonn.

Ver. 18. ——— woon] *Dwell*. Tonn.

And thou, most dread Octavius, which oft <sup>35</sup>  
To learned wits giv'st courage worthily,  
O come, thou sacred childe, come sliding soft,  
And favour my beginnings graciously :  
For not these leaves do sing that dreadfull stound,  
When Giants bloud did staine Phlegræan ground. <sup>40</sup>

Nor how th' halfe horsy people, Centaures light,  
Fought with the bloudie Lapithæes at bord ;  
Nor how the East with tyranous despight  
Burnt th' Attick towres, and people slew with sword ;  
Nor how mount Athos through exceeding might <sup>45</sup>  
Was digged downe ; nor yron bands aboard  
The Pontick sea by their huge Navy cast ;  
My volume shall renowne, so long since past.

Nor Hellespont trampled with horses feete,  
When flocking Persians did the Greeks affray : <sup>50</sup>  
But my soft Muse, as for her power more meete,  
Delights (with Phœbus friendly leave) to play  
An easie running verse with tender feete.  
And thou, dread sacred child, to thee alway, <sup>55</sup>  
Let everlasting lightsome glory strive,  
Through the worlds endles ages to survive.

And let an happie roome remaine for thee  
Mongst heavenly ranks, where blessed soules do  
And let long lasting life with ioyous glee, [rest ; <sup>60</sup>  
As thy due meede that thou deservest best,  
Hereafter many yeares remembered be  
Amongst good men, of whom thou oft are blest ;  
Live thou for ever in all happinesse !  
But let us turne to our first businesse.

The fiery Sun was mounted now on hight <sup>65</sup>  
Up to the heavenly towers, and shot each where  
Out of his golden charet glistening light ;  
And fayre Aurora, with her rosie heare,

Ver. 46. *Was digged downe,*] Not digged down, but digged through. "Non per<sup>ossus</sup> Athos." JORTIN.  
Ibid. ——— aboard] *Across*, from shore to shore, I'r bord. Tonn.

The hateful darknes now had put to flight ;  
When as the shepheard, seeing day appeare, 70  
His little goats gan drive out of their stalls,  
To feede abroad, where pasture best befalls.

To an high mountaines top he with them went,  
Where thickest grasse did cloath the open hills :  
They now amongst the woods and thicketts ment, 75  
Now in the valleies wandring at their wills,  
Spread themselves farre abroad through each de-  
scent ;  
Some on the soft greene grasse feeding their fills ;  
Some, clambring through the hollow cliffes on hy,  
Nibble the bushie shrubs which growe thereby. 80

Others the utmost boughs of trees doe crop,  
And brouze the woodbine twiggcs that freshly bud ;  
This with full bit doth catch the utmost top  
Of some soft willow, or new grown stud ;  
This with sharpe teeth the bramble leaves doth lop,  
And chaw the tender prickles in her cud ; 85  
The whiles another high doth overlooke  
Her owne like image in a christall brooke.

O the great happines, which shepherds have,  
Who so loathes not too much the poore estate, 90  
With minde that ill use doth before deprave,  
Ne measures all things by the costly rate  
Of riotise, and semblants outward brave !  
No such sad cares, as wont to macerate  
And rend the greedie mindes of covetous men, 95  
Do ever creepe into the shepherds den.

Ne cares he if the fleece, which him arayscs,  
Be not twice steeped in Assyrian dye ;  
Ne glistering of golde, which underlaycs  
The summer beames, doe blinde his gazing eye ; 100  
Ne pictures beantie, nor the glauncing rayes  
Of precious stones, whence no good commeth by ;  
Ne yet his cup embost with imagery  
Of Boetus or of Alcons vanity.

Ne ought the whelky pearles esteemeth hee, 105  
Which are from Indian seas brought far away :  
But with pure brest from carefull sorrow free,  
On the soft grasse his limbs doth oft display,  
In sweete spring time, when flowres varietie  
With sundrie colours paints the sprinkled lay ; 110  
There, lying all at ease from guile or spight,  
With pype of fennie reedes doth him delight.

There he, Lord of himselfe, with palme bedight,  
His looser locks doth wrap in wreath of vine : 115  
There his milk-dropping goats be his delight,  
And fruitfull Pales, and the Forrest greene,  
And darke some caves in pleasant vallies pight,  
Wheras continuall shade is to be seene,  
And where fresh springing wells, as christall neate,  
Do awayes flow, to quench his thirstie heate. 120

O ! who can lead then a more happie life  
Than he, that with cleane minde, and heart sincere,  
No greedy riches knowes nor blondie strife,  
No deadly fight of warlike fleete doth feare ;

Ne runs in perill of foes cruell knife, 122  
That in the sacred temples he may reare  
A trophee of his glittering spoiles and treasure,  
Or may abound in riches above measure.

Of him his God is worshipt with his sythe,  
And not with skill of craftsman polished : 130  
He ioyes in groves, and makes himselfe full blythe  
With sundrie flowers in wilde fieldes gathered ;  
Ne frankincens he from Panchæa buyth :  
Sweete Quiet harbours in his harmeles head,  
And perfect Pleasure buildes her ioyous bowre, 135  
Free from sad cares, that rich mens hearts devowre.

This all his care, this all his whole indeavour,  
To this his minde and senses he doth bend,  
How he may flow in quietts matchles treasour,  
Content with any food that God doth send ; 140  
And how his limbs, resolv'd through idle leisour,  
Unto sweete sleepe he may securely lend,  
In some coole shadow from the scorching heat,  
The whiles his flock their chawed cuds do eate.

O Flocks, O Faunes, and O ye pleasant Springs 145  
Of Tempe, where the countrey Nymphs are rife,  
Through whose not costly care each shepheard sings  
As merrie notes upon his rusticke pipe,  
As that Ascræan bard, whose fame now rings  
Through the wide world, and leads as ioyfull life ; 150  
Free from all troubles and from worldly toyle,  
In which fond men doe all their dayes turmoyle.

In such delights whilst thus his carelesse time  
This Shepheard drives, upleaning on his batt,  
And on shrill reedes chaunting his rusticke rime ; 155  
Hyperion, throwing forth his beames full hott,  
Into the highest top of heaven gan clime,  
And, the world parting by an equal lott,  
Did shed his whirling flames on either side,  
As the great Ocean doth himselfe divide. 160

Then gan the Shepheard gather into one  
His stragling goates, and drave them to a foord,  
Whose cærule streame, rombling in pible stone,  
Crept under mosse as greene as any goord. 165  
Now had the Sun halfe heaven overgone,  
When he his heard back from that water foord  
Drave, from the force of Phœbus boyling ray,  
Into thicke shadowes, there themselves to lay

Soone as he them plac'd in thy sacred wood  
(O Delian Goddess) saw, to which of yore 170  
Came the bad daughter of old Cadmus brood,  
Cruell Agavè, flying vengeance sore  
Of king Nictileus for the guiltie blood,  
Which she with cursed hands had shed before ;  
There she halfe frantick, having slaine her sonne,  
Did shrowd her selfe like punishment to shonne.

Here also playing on the grassy greene,  
Woodgods, and Satyres, and switt Dryades,  
With many Fairies oft were dauncing seene.  
Not so much did Dan Orpheus repress 180  
The streames of Hebrus with his songs, I weenc,  
As that faire troupe of woodie Goddesses

Ver. 141. ——— resolv'd] *Dissolved, or laid at ease. Lat. resolutus. TODD.*

Ver. 149. ——— Ascræan bard.] He speaks of Hesiod. JORTIN.

Ver 75. ——— ment.] *Mixed. TODD.*

Ver. 94. ——— macerate] *Tear, that is, distract. TODD*

Ver. 105. ——— whelky] *The whilk or weik is a shell-fish. Perhaps the poet introduced this adjective in the sense of wreathed, twisted, as that shell-fish appears. TODD.*

Staid thee, O Peneus, powring foorth to thee,  
From cheereful lookes, great mirth and gladsome  
glee.

The verie nature of the place, resounding 185  
With gentle murmure of the breathing ayre,  
A pleasant bowre with all delight abounding  
In the fresh shadowe did for them prepayre,  
To rest their limbs with wearines redounding.  
For first the high palme-trees, with braunches faire,  
Out of the lowly vallies did arise, 191  
And high shoote up their heads into the skyes.

And them amongst the wicked Lotos grew,  
Wicked, for holding guilefully away  
Ulysses men, whom rapt with sweetenes new, 195  
Taking to hoste, it quite from him did stay ;  
And eke those trees, in whose transformed hew  
The Sunnes sad daughters waylde the rash decay  
Of Phaëton, whose limbs with lightening rent  
They gathering up, with sweete teares did lament.

And that same tree, in which Demophoon, 201  
By his disloyalty lamented sore,  
Eternall hurte left unto many one :  
Whom als accompanied the Oke, of yore  
Through fatal charmes transformd to such an one :  
The Oke, whose acornes were our foode, before 206  
That Ceres seede of mortall men were knowne,  
Which first Triptoleme taught how to be sowne.

Here also grew the rougher-rinded Pine,  
The great Argoan ships brave ornament, 210  
Whom golden Fleece did make an heavenly sigue ;  
Which coveting, with his high tops extent,  
To make the mountaines touch the starres divine,  
Decks all the Forrest with embellishment ;  
And the blacke Holme that loves the watrie vale ;  
And the sweete Cypressse, sigue of deadly bale. 216

Emongst the rest the clambring Yvie grew,  
Knitting his wanton armes with grasping hold,  
Least that the Poplar happily should rew  
Her brothers strokes, whose boughes she doth  
enfold 220

With her lythe twigs, till they the top survey,  
And paint with pallid greene her buds of gold.  
Next did the Myrtle tree to her approach,  
Not yet unmindfull of her olde reproach.

But the small birds, in their wide houghs embow-  
ring, 225  
Chaunted their sundrie tunes with sweete consent ;  
And under them a silver spring, forth powring  
His trickling streames, a gentle murmure sent ;  
Thereto the frogs, bred in the slimie scowring  
Of the moist moores, their iarring voyces bent ; 230  
And shrill grasshoppers chirped them around :  
All which the ayrie Echo did resound.

In this so pleasant place the Shepherds flocke  
Lay everie where, their wearie limbs to rest,  
On everie bush, and everie hollow rocke, 235  
Where breathe on them the whistling wind mote  
best ;  
The whiles the Shepherd self, tending his stocke,  
Sate by the fountaine side, in shade to rest,  
Where gentle slumbring sleep oppressed him  
Displaid on ground, and seized everie lim. 240

Of trecherie or traines nought tooke he keep,  
But, loosie on the grassie greene dispredd,  
His dearest life did trust to careles sleep ;  
Which, weighing down his dropping drowsie hedd,  
In quiet rest his molten heart did steep, 245  
Devoid of care, and feare of all falshedd :  
Had not inconstant fortune, bent to ill,  
Bid strange mischance his quietnes to spill.

For at his wonted time in that same place  
An huge great Serpent, all with speckles pide, 250  
To drench himselfe in moorish slime did trace,  
There from the boyling heate himselfe to hide :  
He, passing by with rolling wreathed pace,  
With brandisht tongue the emptie aire did gride,  
And wrapt his scalie boughs with fell despight, 255  
That all things seem'd appalled at his sight.

Now, more and more having himselfe enrolde,  
His glittering breast he lifteth up on hie,  
And with proud vaunt his head aloft doth holde ;  
His creste above, spotted with purple die, 260  
On everie side did shine like scalie golde ;  
And his bright eyes, glauncing full dreadfullie,  
Did seeme to flame out flakes of flashing fyre,  
And with sterne lookes to threaten kindled yre.

Thus wise long time he did himselfe dispace 266  
There round about, when as at last he spide,  
Lying along before him in that place,  
That flocks grand Captaine and most trustie guide :  
Eftsoones more fierce in visage, and in pace, 270  
Throwing his firie eyes on everie side,  
He commeth on, and all things in his way  
Full stearnly rends, that might his passage stay.

Much he disdaines, that anie one should dare  
To come unto his haunt ; for which intent  
He inly burnes, and gins straight to prepare 275  
The weapons, which Nature to him hath lent ;  
Fellie he hisseth, and doth fiercely stare,  
And hath his iawes with augrie spirits rent,  
That all his tract with blondie drops is stained,  
And all his foldes are now in length outstrained.

Whom, thus at point prepared, to prevent, 281  
A litle noursling of the humid ayre,  
A Guat, unto the sleepe Shephcard went ;  
And, marking where his ey-lids twinkling rae  
Shewd the two pearles, which sight unto him  
lent, 285  
Through their thin coverings appearing fayre,  
His litle needle there infixing deep,  
Warnd him awake, from death himselfe to keep.

Wherewith enrag'd, he fiercely gan upstart,  
And with his hand him rashly bruizing slewe 290  
As in avengement of his heedles smart,  
That streight the spirit out of his senses flew,  
And life out of his members did depart :  
When, suddenly casting aside his vew,  
He spide his foe with felonous intent, 295  
And fervent eyes to his destruction bent.

All suddenly dismayd, and hartles quight,  
He fled abacke, and, catching hastie holde  
Of a yong alder hard beside him pight,  
It rent, and streight about him gan beholde 300

What God or Fortune would assist his might.  
But whether God or Fortune made him bold  
Its hard to read: yet hardie will he had  
To overcome, that made him lesse adrad.

The scalie backe of that most hideous Snake 305  
Enwrapped round, oft faining to retire,  
And oft him to assaile, he fiercely strake  
Whereas his temples did his crest-front tyre;  
And, for he was but slowe, did slowth off shake  
And gazing ghastly on; (for feare and yre 310  
Had blent so much his sense, that lesse he feard;)   
Yet, when he saw him slaine, himselve he cheard.

By this the Night forth from the darksome bowre  
Of Herebus her teemed steedes gan call,  
And laesie Vesper in his timely howre 315  
From golden Oeta gan proceede withall;  
Whenas the Shepheard after this sharpe stowre,  
Seing the doubled shadowes low to fall,  
Gathering his straying flocke, does homeward fare,  
And unto rest his wearie ioynts prepare. 3.0

Into whose sense so soone as lighter sleepe  
Was entered, and, now loosing everie lim,  
Sweete slumbring deaw in carelesnesse did steepe;  
The Image of that Gnat appeard to him,  
And in sad tearmes gan sorrowfully weepe, 325  
With greislie countenance and visage grim,  
Wailing the wrong which he had done of late,  
In steed of good hastuing his cruell fate.

Said he, "What have I wretch deserv'd, that thus  
Into this bitter bale I am outcast, 330  
Whilist that thy life more deare and precious  
Was than mine owne, so long as it did last?  
I now, in lieu of paines so gracious,  
Am tost in th' ayre with everie windie blast:  
Thou, safe delivered from sad decay, 335  
Thy careles limbs in loose sleep dost display.

"So livest thou; but my poore wretched ghost  
Is forst to ferrie over Lethes river,  
And spoyld of Charon too and fro am tost.  
Seest thou not how all places quake and quiver,  
Lightned with deadly lamps on everie post? 341  
Tisphone each where doth shake and shiver  
Her flaming fier-brond, encountering me,  
Whose lockes uncombed cruell adders be.

"And Cerberus, whose many monthes doo bay 345  
And barke out flames, as if on fire he fed;  
Adowne whose necke, in terrible array,  
Ten thousand snakes erralling about his hed  
Doo hang in heapes, that horribly affray,  
And bloodie eyes doo glister firie red; 350  
He oftentimes me dreadfullie doth threaten  
With painfull torments to be sorely beaten.

"Ay me! that thankes so much should faile of  
meed;  
For that I thee restor'd to life againe, 354  
Even from the doore of death and deadlie dread.  
Where then is now the guerdon of my paine?  
Where the reward of my so piteous deed?  
The praise of Pitie vanisht is in vaine,

And th' antique faith of Justice long agone  
Out of the land is fled away and gone. 360

"I saw anothers fate approaching fast,  
And left mine owne his safetie to tender;  
Into the same mishap I now am cast,  
And shun'd destruction doth destruction render:  
Not unto him that never hath trespast, 365  
But punishment is due to the offender.  
Yet let destruction be the punishment,  
So long as thankfull will may it relent.

"I carried him into waste wildernesses,  
Waste wildernes, amongst Cymerian shades, 370  
Where endles paines and hideous heavinesse  
Is round about me heapt in darksome glades.  
For there huge Othos sits in sad distresse,  
Fast bound with serpents that him oft invades;  
Far of beholding Ephialtes tide, 375  
Whlich once assaid to burne this world so wide.

"And there is mournfull Tityus, mindefull yet  
Of thly displeasure, O Latona faire;  
Displeasure too implacable was it,  
That made him meat for wild foules of the ayre:  
Much do I feare among such fiends to sit; 381  
Much do I feare back to them to repayre,  
To the black shadowes of the Stygian shore,  
Where wretched ghosts sit wailing evermore.

"There next the utmost brinck doth he abide, 385  
That did the bankets of the gods bewray,  
Whose threat through thirst to nought nigh being  
dride  
His sense to seeke for ease turnes every way:  
And he, that in avengement of his pride 390  
For scorning to the sacred gods to pray,  
Against a mountaine rolls a mightie stone,  
Calling in vaine for rest, and can have none.

"Go ye with them, go, cursed Damosells,  
Whose bridale torches foule Erynnis tynde;  
And Hymen, at your spousalls sad, foretells 395  
Tydings of death and massacre unkinde:  
With them that cruell Colchid mother dwells,  
The which conceiv'd in her revengefull minde  
With bitter woundes her owne deere babes to slay,  
And mndred troupes upon great heapes to lay. 400

"There also those two Pandionian maides,  
Calling on Itis, Itis evermore,  
Whom, wretched boy, they slew with guiltie blades;  
For whome the Thracian king lamenting sore,  
Turn'd to a Lapwing, fowlie them upbraydes, 405  
And fluttering round about them still does sore,  
There now they all eternally complain  
Of others wrong, and suffer endles paine.

"But the two brethren borne of Cadmus blood,  
Whilst each does for the sovereignty contend, 410  
Blinde through ambition, and with vengeance wood,  
Each doth against the others bodie bend  
His cursed steele, of neither well withstood,  
And with wide wounds their carcasses doth rend;  
That yet they both doe mortall foes remaine, 415  
Sith each with brothers bloudie hand was slaine.

Ver. 314. — teemed] *Joined together in a team.*  
Fodd.

Ver. 394. — tynde;] *Kindled or lighted.* Todd  
E E

' Ah (waladay ! ) there is no end of paine,  
Nor change of labour may intreated bee :  
Yet I beyond all these am carried faine,  
Where other powers farre different I see,  
And must passe over to th' Elisian plaine :  
There grim Persephone, encountering mee,  
Doth urge her fellow Furies earnestlie  
With their bright firebronds me to terrifie.

420

" There chast Alceste lives inviolate,  
Free from all care, for that her husbands daies  
She did prolong by echanging fate for fate :  
Lo ! there lives also the immortal praise  
Of womankind, most faithfull to her mate,  
Penelope ; and from her farre awayes  
A rulesse route of yongmen, which her wood,  
All slaine with darts, lie wallowed in their blood.

425

430

" And sad Eurydice thence now no more  
Must turne to life, but there detained bee  
For looking back, being forbid before :  
Yet was the guilt thereof, Orphens, in thee !  
Bold sure he was, and worthe spirite bore,  
That durst those lowest shadowes goe to see,  
And could beleve that anie thing could please  
Fell Cerberus, or Stygian powres appease.

435

440

" Ne feard the burning waves of Phlegeton,  
Nor those same mournfull kingdomes, compassed  
With rustie horreur and fowle fashion ;  
And deep digd vawtes ; and Tartar covered  
With bloodie night, and darke confusion ;  
And iudgement seates, whose Iudge is deadlie dred,  
A Iudge, that after death doth punish sore  
The faults, which life hath trespassed before.

445

" But valiant fortune made Dan Orphens bolde :  
For the swift running rivers still did stand,  
And the wilde beasts their furie did withhold,  
To follow Orphens musickie through the land :  
And th' okes, deep grounded in the earthly molde,  
Did move, as if they could him understand ;  
And the shrill woods, which were of sense bereav'd,  
Through their hard barke his silver sound receav'd.

450

454

" And eke the Moone her hastie steedes did stay,  
Drawing in teemes along the starric skie ;  
And didst, O monthly Virgin, thou delay  
Thy nightly course, to heare his melodie ?  
The same was able with like lovely lay  
The Queene of hell to move as easily,  
To yeeld Eurydice unto her fere  
Backe to be borne, though it unlawfull were.

460

" She, (Ladie) having well before approved  
The feends to be too cruell and severe,  
Observ'd th' appointed way, as her behooved,  
Ne ever did her eyesight turne arere,  
Ne ever spake, ne cause of speaking mooved ;  
But, cruell Orpheus, thou much crueller,  
Seeking to kisse her, brok'st the gods decree,  
And thereby mad'st her ever damn'd to be.

465

470

" Ah ! but sweete love of pardon worthie is,  
And doth deserve to have small faults remitted ;  
If Hell at least things lightly done amis

475

Knew how to pardon, when ought is omitted ;  
Yet are ye both received into blis,  
And to the seates of happie ones admitted :  
And you, beside the honourable band  
Of great heroës, doo in order stand.

480

" There be the two stout sonnes of Æacus,  
Fierce Peleus, and the hardie Telamon,  
Both seeming now full glad and ioyeous  
Through their syres dreadfull irisdiction,  
Being the Iudge of all that horrid hous :  
And both of them, by strange occasion,  
Renown'd in choyce of happie marriage  
Through Venus grace, and vertues cariage.

485

" For th' one was ravisht of his owne bondmaide,  
The faire Ixione captiv'd from Troy :  
But th' other was with Thetis love assaid,  
Great Nereus his daughter and his ioy.  
On this side them there is a yongman layd,  
Their match in glorie, mightie, fierce, and coy ;  
That from th' Argoliek ships, with furious yre,  
Bett back the furie of the Troian fyre.

490

495

" O ! who would not recount the strong divorcees  
Of that great warre, which Troianes oft behelde,  
And oft beheld the warlike Greekish forces,  
When Teucurian soyle with bloodie rivers swelde,  
And wide Sigeean shores were spred with corsees,  
And Simois and Xanthus blood outwelde ;  
Whilst Hector raged, with outrageous minde,  
Flames, weapons, wounds, in Greeks flecte to have  
tynde.

500

505

" For Ida selfe, in ayde of that fierce fight,  
Out of her mountaines ministred supplies ;  
And, like a kindly nourse, did yeeld (for spight)  
Store of firebronds out of her nourseeries  
Unto her foster children, that they might  
Inflame the navie of their enemies,  
And all the Rhetean shore to ashes turne,  
Where lay the ships, which they did secke to burne.

510

" Gainst which the noble sonne of Telamon  
Oppos'd himselfe, and, thwirting his huge shield,  
Them battell bad, gainst whom appeard anon  
Hector, the glorie of the Troian field :  
Both fierce and furious in contention  
Encountred, that their mightie strokes so shrild,  
As the great clap of thunder, which doth ryve  
The rattling heavens, and cloudes asunder dryve.

520

" So th' one with fire and weapons did contend  
To ent the ships from turning home againe  
To Argos ; th' other strove for to defend  
The force of Vnlcane with his might and maine.  
Thus th' one Æacide did his fame extend :  
But th' other ioy'd, that, on the Phrygian playne  
Having the blood of vanquisht Hector shedd,  
He compast Troy thrice with his bodie dedd.

525

" Againe great dole on either partie grewe,  
That him to death unfaithfull Paris sent ;  
And also him that false Ulysses slewe,  
Drawne into danger through close ambushment ;  
Therefore from him Laërtes sonne his vewe  
Doth turne aside, and boasts his good event

530

Ver. 431. *A rulesse route*] *A lawless rout*, as we should now say. Todd.

Ver. 468. — arere,] *Backward*. Fr. *arrière*. Todd.

Ver. 523. — defend] *Repell*. This is a Latinism, and an elegant boldness. JORTIN.



In working of Strymonian Rhaesus fall, 535  
And efte in Dolons subtille súrprysall.

"Againe the dreadfull Cycones him dismay,  
And blacke Læstrigones, a people stout :  
Then greedie Scilla, under whom there bay  
Manie great bandogs, which her gird about : 540  
Then doo the Ætnean Cyclops him affray,  
And deep Charybdis gulping in and out :  
Lastly the squalid lakes of Tartarie,  
And griesly feends of hell him terrifie.

"There also goodly Agamemnon boasts, 545  
The glorie of the stock of Tantalus,  
And famous light of all the Greeckish hosts ;  
Under whose conduct most victorious,  
The Dorick flames consum'd the Iliack posts.  
Ah ! but the Greekes themselves, more dolorous, 550  
To thee, O Troy, paid penaunce for thy fall ;  
In th' Hellespont being nigh drowned all.

"Well may appeare by prooffe of their mischance,  
The chaungfull turning of mens slipperie state,  
That none, whom fortune freely doth advance, 555  
Himselfe therefore to heaven should elevate :  
For loftie type of honour, through the glance  
Of envies dart, is downe in dust prostrate ;  
And all, that vaunts in worldly vanitie,  
Shall fall through fortunes mutabilitie. 560

"Th' Argolicke Power returning home againe,  
Enrich with spoyles of th' Erichthonian towre,  
Did happie winde and weather entertaine,  
And with good speed the fomic billowes scowre : 565  
No signe of storme, no feare of future paine,  
Which soone ensued them with heavie stowre.  
Nereis to the seas a token gave,  
The whiles their crooked keeles the surges clave.

"Suddenly, whether through the gods decree,  
Or haplesse rising of some froward starre, 570  
The heavens on everie side enclowded bee :  
Black stormes and fogs are blown up from farre,  
That now the pylote can no loadstarre see,  
But skies and seas doo make most dreadfull warre ;  
The billowes striving to the heavens to reach, 575  
And th' heavens striving them for to impeach.

"And, in avengement of their bold attempt,  
Both sun and starres and all the heavenly powres  
Conspire in one to wreake their rash contempt,  
And downe on them to fall from highest towres : 580  
The skie, in pieces seeming to be rent,  
Throws lightning forth, and haile, and harmful  
showres,  
That death on everie side to them appeares,  
In thousand formes, to worke more ghastly feares.

"Some in the greedie floods are sunke and drent ;  
Some on the rocks of Caphareus are throwne ; 685  
Some on th' Enboick cliffs in pieces rent ;  
Some scattred on the Heræean shores unknowne ;  
And manie lost, of whom no monument  
Remaines, nor memorie is to be showne : 590  
Whilst all the purchase of the Phrigian pray,  
Tost on salt billowes, round about doth stray.

Ver. 540. — bandogs,] The mastiff was formerly  
called a bandog. Todd.

Ver. 576. — impeach,] Hinder. Todd.

Ver. 585. — drent,] Drowned. Todd.

"Here manie other like heroës bee,  
Equall in honour to the former crue,  
Whom ye in goodly seates may placed see, 695  
Descended all from Rome by image due ;  
From Rome, that holds the world in soverieignty,  
And doth all nations unto her subdue :  
Here Fabii and Decii doo dwell,  
Horatii that in vertue did excell. 600

"And here the antique fame of stout Camill  
Doth ever live ; and constant Curtius,  
Who, stify bent his vowed life to spill  
For countreyes health, a gulph most hideous 605  
Amidst the towne with his owne corps did fill,  
T' appease the Powers ; and prudent Mutius,  
Who in his flesh endur'd the scorching flame,  
To daunt his foe by' ensample of the same.

"And here wise Curius, companion 610  
Of noble vertues, lives in endles rest ;  
And stout Flaminus, whose devotion  
Taught him the fires scorn'd furie to detest ;  
And here the praise of either Scipion  
Abides in highest place above the best,  
To whom the ruin'd walls of Carthage vow'd, 615  
Trembling their forces, sound their praises lowd.

"Live they for ever through their lasting praise !  
But I, poore wretch, am forced to retourne  
To the sad lakes that Phoebus sunnie rayes  
Doo never see, where soules doo alwaies mourne ; 620  
And by the wayling shores to waste my dayes,  
Where Phlegeton with quenches flames doth burne ;  
By which iust Minos righteous soules doth sever  
From wicked ones, to live in blisse for ever.

"Me therefore thus the cruell fiends of hell 625  
Girt with long snakes, and thousand yron chaynes,  
Through doome of that their cruell Iudge, compell  
With bitter torture, and impatient paines,  
Cause of my death and iust complaint to tell.  
For thou art he, whom my poore ghost com- 630  
plains  
To be the author of her ill unwares,  
That careles hear'st my' intollerable cares.

"Them therefore as bequeathing to the winde,  
I now depart, returning to thee never,  
And leave this lamentable plaint behinde, 635  
But doo thou haunt the soft downe-rolling river,  
And wilde greene woods and fruitful pastures minde ;  
And let the fitting aire my vaine words sever." —  
Thus having said, he heavily departed 639  
With piteous crie, that anie would have smarted.

Now, when the sloathfull fit of lifes sweete rest  
Had left the heavie Shepherd, wondrous cares  
His inly grieved minde full sore opprest ;  
That balefull sorrow he no longer beares 644  
For that Gnats death, which deeply was imprest ;  
But bends what ever power his aged yeares  
Him lent, yet being such, as through their might  
He lately slue his dreadfull foe in fight.

By that same river lurking under greene,  
Eftsoones he gins to fashion forth a place ;  
And, squaring it in compass well besene,  
There plotteth out a tombe by measured space : 650  
His yron-headed spade tho making cleene,  
To dig up sods out of the flowrie grasse,

His worke he shortly to good purpose brought, <sup>655</sup>  
Like as he had conceiv'd it in his thought.

An heape of earth he hoorded up on hie,  
Enclosing it with banks on everie side,  
And thereupon did raise full busily  
A little mount, of greene turffs edifide; <sup>660</sup>  
Aud on the top of all, that passers by  
Might it behold, the toomb he did provide  
Of smoothest marble stone in order set,  
That never might his luckie scape forget.

And round about he taught sweete flowres to  
growe; <sup>665</sup>  
The Rose engrained in pure scarlet die;  
The Lilly fresh; and Violet belowe;  
The Marigolde; and cherefull Rosemarie;  
The Spartan Mirtle, whence sweet gumb does flowe;  
The purple Hyacinthe; and fresh Costmarie; <sup>670</sup>

And Saffron, sought for in Cilician soyle;  
And Lawrell, th' ornament of Phœbus toyle.

Fresh Rhododaphne; and the Sabine flowre,  
Matching the wealth of th' auncient Frankineence; <sup>675</sup>  
And pallid Yvie, building his owne bowre;  
And Box, yet mindfull of his olde offence;  
Red Amaranthus, lucklesse paramour;  
Oxeye still greene; and bitter Patience;  
Ne wants there pale Narcisse, that, in a well  
Seeing his beautie, in love with it fell. <sup>680</sup>

And whatsoever other flowre of worth,  
And whatso other hearb of lovely hew,  
The ioyous Spring out of the ground brings forth,  
To cloath her selfe in colours fresh and new;  
He planted there, and reard a mount of earth, <sup>685</sup>  
In whose high front was writ as doth ensue.

*To thee, small Gnat, in lieu of his life saved,  
The Shepherd hath thy deaths record engraved.*

---



---

PROSOPOPOIA :

OR

MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE.

1591.

TO

THE RIGHT HONORABLE, THE LADIE COMPTON AND MOUNTEGLE.

Most faire and vertuous Ladie; having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knowne to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull dutie, which I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare to that House, from whence yee spring, I have at length found occasion to remember the same, by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw concept of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, moved to set them forth. Simple is the device, and the composition meane, yet carrieth some delight, even the rather because of the simplicitie and meannesse thus personated. The same I beseech your Ladiship take in good part, as a pledge of that profession which I have made to you; and keepe with you untill, with some other more worthie labour, I do redeeme it out of your hands, and discharge my utmost dutie. Till then wishing your Ladiship all increase of honour and happinesse, I humbly take leave.

Your La: ever humbly;

ED. SP.

It was the month, in which the righteous Maide,  
That for disdain of sinfull worlds upbraide  
Fled back to heaven, whence she was first con-  
Into her silver bowre the Sunne received; [ceived, <sup>6</sup>  
And the hot Syrian Dog on him awayting,  
After the chafed Lyons cruell bayting,  
Corrupted had th' ayre with his noysome breath,  
And pow'd on th' earth plague, pestilence, and  
Emongst the rest a wicked maladie [death. <sup>10</sup>  
Raign'd amongst men, that manie did to die,

Depriv'd of sense and ordinarie reason;  
That it to leaches seemed strange and geason.  
My fortune was, mongst manie others moe,  
To be partaker of their common woe;  
And my weake bodie, set on fire with grieffe, <sup>15</sup>  
Was rob'd of rest and naturall reliefe.  
In this ill plight, there came to visite mee  
Some friends, who, sorie my sad case to see,  
Began to comfort me in chearfull wise,  
And meanes of gladsome solace to devise. <sup>20</sup>

But seeing kindly sleep refuse to doe  
 His office, and my feeble eyes forgoe,  
 They sought my troubled sense how to deceave  
 With talke, that might unquiet fancies reave ;  
 And, sitting all in seates about me round, 25  
 With pleasant tales (fit for that idle stound)  
 They cast in course to waste the wearie howres :  
 Some tolde of Ladies, and their Paramoures ;  
 Some of brave Knights, and their renowned Squires ;  
 Some of the Faeries and their strange attires ; 30  
 And some of Giaunts, hard to be beleev'd ;  
 That the delight thereof me much releev'd.  
 Amongst the rest a good old woman was,  
 Hight Mother Hubberd, who did farre surpas  
 The rest in honest mirth, that seem'd her well : 35  
 She, when her turne was come her tale to tell,  
 Tolde of a strange adventure, that betided  
 Betwixt the Foxe and th' Ape by him misguided ;  
 The which for that my sense it greatly pleased,  
 All were my spirite heavie and diseased, 40  
 Ile write in termes, as she the same did say,  
 So well as I her words remember may.  
 No Muses aide me needes hereto to call ;  
 Base is the style, and matter meane withall.

¶ Whilome (said she) before the world was  
 civill, 45

The Foxe and th' Ape, disliking of their evill  
 And hard estate, determined to seeke  
 Their fortunes farre abroad, lyeke with his lyeke :  
 For both were craftie and unhappie witted ;  
 Two fellows might no where be better fitted. 50  
 The Foxe, that first this cause of griefe did finde,  
 Gan first thus plaine his case with words unkinde.  
 " Neighbour Ape, and my Goship eke beside,  
 (Both two sure bands in friendship to be tide,) 55  
 To whom may I more trustly complaine  
 The evill plight, that doth me sore constraine,  
 And hope thereof to finde due remedie ?  
 Heare then my paine and inward agonie.  
 Thus manie yeares I now have spent and worne, 60  
 In meane regard, and basest fortunes scorne,  
 Dooing my cuntry service as I might,  
 No lesse I dare saie than the provdest wight ;  
 And still I hoped to be up advanced,  
 For my good parts ; but still it hath mischaunced. 65  
 Now therefore that no lenger hope I see,  
 But froward fortune still to follow mee,  
 And losels lifted high, where I did looke,  
 I meane to turne the next leafe of the booke.  
 Yet, ere that anie way I doo betake,  
 I meane my Gossip privie first to make." 70  
 " Ah ! my deare Gossip, (answer'd then the Ape,)  
 Deeply doo your sad words my wits awhape,  
 Both for because your griefe doth great appeare,  
 And eke because my selfe am touched neare : 75  
 For I likewise have wasted much good time,  
 Still wayting to preferment up to clime,  
 Whilst others alwayes have before me stept,  
 And from my beard the fat away have swept ;  
 That now unto despaire I gin to growe 80  
 And meane for better winde about to throwe.  
 Therefore to me, my trustie friend, aread  
 Thy counsell : two is better than one head."  
 " Certes (said he) I meane me to disguise  
 In some straunge habit, after uncouth wize, 85  
 Or like a Pilgrim, or a Lymiter,

Or like a Gipsen, or a Iuggler,  
 And so to wander to the world's ende,  
 To seeke my fortune, where I may it mend :  
 For worse than that I have I cannot meete. 90  
 Wide is the world I wote, and everie streete  
 Is full of fortunes, and adventures straunge,  
 Continualle subiect unto chaunge.  
 Say, my faire brother now, if this device  
 Doth like you, or may you to like entice." 95  
 " Surely (said th' Ape) it likes me wondrous well ;  
 And, would ye not poore fellowship expell,  
 My selfe would offer you t' accompanie  
 In this adventures chauncefull icopardie :  
 For, to wexe olde at home in idlenesse,  
 Is disadventurous, and quite fortunelesse ; 100  
 Abroad where change is, good may gotten bee."  
 The Foxe was glad, and quickly did agree :  
 So both resolv'd, the morrow next ensuing,  
 So soone as day appeard to peoples vewing,  
 On their intended journey to proceede ; 105  
 And over night, whatso theretoo did neede,  
 Each did prepare, in readines to bee.  
 The morrow next, so soone as one might see  
 Light out of heavens windowes forth to looke,  
 Both their habiliments unto them tooke, 110  
 And put themselves (a Gods name) on their way ;  
 Whenas the Ape, beginning well to wey  
 This hard adventurc, thus began t' advise :  
 " Now read Sir Reynold, as ye be right wise,  
 What course ye weene is best for us to take, 115  
 That for our selves we may a living make.  
 Whether shall we professe some trade or skill ?  
 Or shall we varie our device at will,  
 Even as new occasion appeares ?  
 Or shall we tie our selves for certaine yeares 120  
 To anie service, or to anie place ?  
 For it behoves, ere that into the race  
 We enter, to resolve first hereupon."  
 " Now surely brother (said the Foxe anon)  
 Ye have this matter motioned in season : 125  
 For everie thing that is begun with reason  
 Will come by readie meanes unto his end ;  
 But things miscounselled must needs miswend.  
 Thus therefore I advise upon the case,  
 That not to anie certaine trade or place, 130  
 Nor anie man, we should our selves applie ;  
 For why should he that is at libertie  
 Make himselfe bond ? sith then we are free borne  
 Let us all servile base subiection scorne ;  
 And, as we bec somes of the world so wide, 135  
 Let us our fathers heritage divide,  
 And challenge to our selves our portious dew  
 Of all the patrimonie, which a few  
 Now hold in hugger mugger in their hand,  
 And all the rest doo rob of good and land. 140  
 For now a few have all, and all have nought,  
 Yet all be brethren ylike dearly bought :  
 There is no right in this partition,  
 Ne was it so by institution  
 Ordained first, ne by the law of Nature, 145  
 But that she gave like blessing to each cature  
 As well of worldly livelode as of life,  
 That there might be no difference nor strife,  
 Nor ought cold mine or thine : thrice happie then  
 Was the condition of mortall men. 150  
 That was the golden age of Saturne old,  
 But this might better be the world of gold :

Ver. 72. — awshape.] *Terrify.* TODD.

Ver. 85. — Lymiter.] A Fryer licensed to beg  
 within a certain district. TYRWHITT.

Ver. 130. — in hugger-mugger] In secret, Fr. *en  
 cachette*, Cotgrave. TODD.

For without golde now nothing wilbe got,  
 Therefore (if please you) this shalbe our plot ;  
 We will not be of anie occupation, 155  
 Let such vile vassalls borne to base vocation  
 Drudge in the world, and for their living droyle,  
 Which have no wit to live withouten toyle.  
 But we will walke about the world at pleasure  
 Like two free men, and make our ease a treasure. 160  
 Free men some beggers call, but they be free ;  
 And they which call them so more beggers bee :  
 For they doo swinke and sweate to feed the other,  
 Who live like lords of that which they doo gather,  
 And yet doo never thanke them for the same, 165  
 But as their due by Nature doo it clame.  
 Such will we fashion both our selves to bee,  
 Lords of the world ; and so will wander free,  
 Where so us listeth, uncontrold of anie :  
 Hard is our hap, if we (amongst so manie) 170  
 Light not on some that may our state amend ;  
 Sildome but some good commeth ere the end." 175  
 Well seemd the Ape to like this ordinance :  
 Yet, well considering of the circumstance,  
 As pausing in great doubt awhile he staid,  
 And afterwards with grave advizement said ;  
 "I cannot, my lief brother, like but well  
 The purpose of the complot which ye tell :  
 For well I wot (compar'd to all the rest  
 Of each degree) that Beggers life is best : 180  
 And they, that thinke themselves the best of all,  
 Oft times to begging are content to fall.  
 But this I wot withall, that we shall runne  
 Into great daunger like to bee undonne.  
 Wildly to wander thus in the worlds eye 185  
 Withouten pasport or good warrantie,  
 For feare least we like rogues should be reputed,  
 And for eare-marked beasts abroad be bried ;  
 Therefore I read, that we our counsells call,  
 How to prevent this mischief ere it fall, 190  
 And how we may, with most securitie,  
 Beg amongst those that beggers doo defie."  
 "Right well, deere Gossip, ye advized have,  
 (Said then the Foxe,) but I this doubt will save : 195  
 For, ere we farther passe, I will devise  
 A pasport for us both in fittest wize,  
 And by the names of Souldiers us protect ;  
 That now is thought a civile begging sect.  
 Be you the Souldier, for you likest are  
 For manly semblance, and small skill in warre : 200  
 I will but wayte on you, and, as occasion  
 Falls out, my selfe fit for the same will fashion."  
 The pasport ended, both they forward went ;  
 The Ape clad Souldierlike, fit for th' intent,  
 In a blew iacket with a crosse of redd 205  
 And manie slits, as if that he had shedd  
 Much blood through many wounds therein received,  
 Which had the use of his right arme bereaved ;  
 Upon his head an old Scotch cap he wore,  
 With a plnme feather all to peeces tore : 210  
 His breeches were made after the new cut,  
 Al Portugese, loose like an emptie gut ;  
 And his hose broken high above the heeling,  
 And his shoes beaten out with traveling.  
 But neither sword nor dagger he did beare ; 215  
 Seemes that no foes revengement he did feare ;  
 In stead of them a handsome bat he held,  
 On which he leaned, as one farre in elde.  
 Shame light on him, that through so false illusion,  
 Doth turne the name of Souldiers to abusion, 220

And that, which is the noblest mysterie,  
 Brings to reproach and common infamie !  
 Long they thus travailed, yet never met  
 Adventure, which might them a working set :  
 Yet manie waies they sought, and manie tryed ; 225  
 Yet for their purposes none fit espied.  
 At last they chaunst to meet upon the way  
 A simple husbandman in garments gray ;  
 Yet, though his vesture were but meane and bare,  
 A good yeoman he was of honest place, 230  
 And more for thrift did care than for gay clothing :  
 Gay without good, is good hearts greatest loathing.  
 The Foxe, him spying, bad the Ape him dight  
 To play his part, for loe ! he was in sight,  
 That (if he er'd not) should them entertaune, 235  
 And yeld them timely profite for their paine.  
 Eftsoones the Ape himselfe gan up to reare,  
 And on his shoulders high his bat to beare,  
 As if good service he were fit to do ;  
 But little thrift for him he did it to : 240  
 And stoutly forward he his steps did straine,  
 That like a handsome swaine it him became :  
 When as they nigh approached, that good man,  
 Seeing them wander loosly, first began  
 T' enquire, of custome, what and whence they 245  
 were ?  
 To whom the Ape ; "I am a Souldier,  
 That late in warres have spent my dearest blood,  
 And in long service lost both limbs and good ;  
 And now, constrain'd that trade to overgive,  
 I driven am to seeke some meanes to live : 250  
 Which might it you in pitie please t' afford,  
 I would be readie, both in deed and word,  
 To doo you faithfull service all my dayes.  
 This yron world (that same he weeping sayes)  
 Brings downe the stowtest hearts to lowest state : 255  
 For miserie doth bravest mindes abate,  
 And make them seeke for that they wont to scorne,  
 Of fortune and of hope at once forlorne."  
 The honest man, that heard him thus complaine,  
 Was griev'd, as he had felt part of his paine ; 260  
 And, well dispos'd him some reliefe to showe,  
 Askt if in husbandrie he ought did knowe,  
 To plough, to plant, to reap, to rake, to sowe,  
 To hedge, to ditch, to thrash, to tetch, to mowe ; 265  
 Or to what labour els he was prepar'd ?  
 For husbands life is labourous and hard.  
 Whenas the Ape him hard so much to talke  
 Of labour, that did from his liking balke,  
 He would have slipt the collar handsomly,  
 And to him said ; "Good Sir, full glad am I, 270  
 To take what paines may anie living wight :  
 But my late maymed limbs lack wouted might  
 To doo their kindly services, as needeth :  
 Scarce this right hand the mouth with diet feedeth,  
 So that it may no painfull worke endure, 275  
 Ne to strong labour can it selfe enure.  
 But if that anie other place you have,  
 Which asks small paines, but thriftines to eave,  
 Or care to overlooke, or trust to gather,  
 Ye may me trust as your owne ghostly father." 280  
 With that the husbandman gan him avize,  
 That it for him were fittest exercise  
 Cattell to keep, or grounds to oversea ;  
 And asked him, if he could willing bee  
 To keep his sheep, or to attend his swyne, 285  
 Or watch his mares, or take his charge of kyne ?

" Gladly (said he) what ever such like paine  
 Ye put on me, I will the same sustaine :  
 But gladdest I of your fleecie sheepe  
 (Might it you please) would take on me the keep. 290  
 For, ere that unto armes I me betooke,  
 Unto my fathers sheepe I usde to looke,  
 That yet the skill thereof I have not loste :  
 Thereto right well this Curdog, by my coste,  
 (Meaning the Foxe) will serve my sheepe to gather,  
 And drive to follow after their belwether." 296  
 The husbandman was meanly well content  
 Triall to make of his endeavourment ;  
 And, home him leading, lent to him the charge  
 Of all his flocke, with libertie full large, 300  
 Giving accompt of th' annuall increase  
 Both of their lambes, and of their woolley fleece.  
 Thus is this Ape become a shepheard swaine,  
 And the false Foxe his dog : (God give them paine !)  
 For ere the yeare have halfe his course out-run, 305  
 And doo returne from whence he first begun,  
 They shall him make an ill accompt of thrift.  
 Now whenas Time, flying with winges swift,  
 Expired had the terme, that these two iavels  
 Should render up a reckning of their travels 310  
 Unto their master, which it of them sought,  
 Exceedingly they troubled were in thought,  
 Ne wist what answer unto him to frame,  
 Ne how to scape great punishment, or shame,  
 For their false treason and vile theverie : 315  
 For not a lambe of all their flockes supply  
 Had they to shew ; but, ever as they bred,  
 They slue them, and upon their fleshes fed :  
 For that disguised Dog lov'd blood to spill,  
 And drew the wicked Shepheard to his will. 320  
 So twixt them both they not a lambkin left ;  
 And, when lambes fail'd, the old sheepes lives they  
 reft ;  
 That how t' acquite themselves unto their Lord  
 They were in doubt, and flatly set aboard.  
 The Foxe then counsel'd th' Ape for to require 325  
 Respite till morrow, t' answer his desire :  
 For times delay new hope of helpe still breeds.  
 The good man granted, doubting nought their deeds,  
 And bad next day that all should readie be.  
 But they more subtile meaning had than he : 330  
 For the next morrowes meed they closely ment,  
 For feare of afterclaps, for to prevent :  
 And that same evening, when all shrowded were  
 In careles sleep, they without care or feare  
 Cruelly fell upon their flock in folde, 335  
 And of them slew at pleasure what they wolde :  
 Of which whenas they feasted had their fill,  
 For a full complement of all their ill,  
 They stole away, and tooke their hastie flight,  
 Carried in clowdes of all-concealing night. 340  
 So was the husbandman left to his losse,  
 And they unto their fortunes change to tosse.  
 After which sort they wandered long while,  
 Abusing manie through their cloaked guile ;  
 That at the last they gan to be descryed 345  
 Of everie one, and all their sleights espyed.  
 So as their begging now them failed quyte,  
 For none would give, but all men would them wyte ;

Ver. 309. — iavels] *Wandering or dirty fellows.*  
 Todd.

Ver. 324. — *aboard.*] In the figurative sense perhaps  
 of *aground*, as the author of the Supplement to Johnson's  
 Dictionary also thinks. Todd.

Ver. 348. — wyte:] *Blame.* Todd.

Yet would they take no paines to get their living,  
 But seeke some other way to gaine by giving, 350  
 Much like to begging but much better named ;  
 For manie beg, which are thereof ashamed.  
 And now the Foxe had gotten him a gowne,  
 And th' Ape a cassoeke sidelong hanging downe ;  
 For they their occupation meant to change, 355  
 And now in other state abroad to range :  
 For, since their souldiers pas no better spedd,  
 They forg'd another, as for Clerkes booke redd.  
 Who passing forth, as their adventures fell, 359  
 Through manie haps, which needs not here to tell ;  
 At length exhaust with a formall Priest to meete,  
 Whom they in civill manner first did greete,  
 And after askt an almes for Gods deare love.  
 The man straight way his choler up did move,  
 And with reproachfull tearmes gan them revile, 365  
 For following that trade so base and vile ;  
 And askt what liense, or what pas they had ?  
 " Ah ! (said the Ape as sighing wondrous sad)  
 Its an hard ease, when men of good deserving  
 Must either driven be perforce to sterving, 370  
 Or asked for their pas by every squib,  
 That list at will them to revile or snib :  
 And yet (God wote) small oddes I often see  
 Twixt them that aske, and them that asked bee.  
 Natheles because you shall not us misdeame, 375  
 But that we are as honest as we seeme,  
 Yee shall our pasport at your pleasure see,  
 And then ye will (I hope) well moved bee."  
 Which when the Priest beheld, he vew'd it nere,  
 As if therein some text he studying were, 380  
 But little els (God wote) could thereof skill :  
 For read he could not evidence, nor will,  
 Ne tell a written word, ne write a letter,  
 Ne make one title worse, ne make one better :  
 Of such deep learning little had he neede, 385  
 Ne yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that breede  
 Doubts mongst Divines, and difference of texts,  
 From whence arise diversite of sects,  
 And hateful heresies, of God abhor'd :  
 But this good Sir did follow the plaine word, 390  
 Ne medled with their controversies vaine ;  
 All his care was, his service well to saine,  
 And to read Homelies upon holidayes :  
 When that was done, he might attend his playes ;  
 An easie life, and fit high God to please. 395  
 He, having overlookt their pas at ease,  
 Gan at the length them to rebuke againe,  
 That no good trade of life did entertaine,  
 But lost their time in wandring loose abroad ;  
 Seeing the world, in which they bootles boad, 400  
 Had wayes enough for all therein to live ;  
 Such graec did God unto his creatures give.  
 Said then the Foxe ; " Who hath the world not tride,  
 From the right way full eath may wander wide.  
 We are but Novices, new come abroad, 405  
 We have not yet the tract of anie troad,  
 Nor on us taken anie state of life,  
 But readie are of anie to make preife, [proved,  
 Therefore might please you, which the world have  
 Us to advise, which forth but lately moved, 410  
 Of some good course, that we might undertake ;  
 Ye shall for ever us your bondmen make."  
 The Priest gan wexe halfe proud to be so praide,

Ver. 371. — squib.] *Any petty fellow.* JOHNSON

Ver. 372. — snib:] *Chide.* T. WARTON.

Ver. 406. — troad,] *Path.* TODD.

Ver. 308. — preife:] *Prof.* TODD

And thereby willing to afford them aide ;  
 " It seemes (said he) right well that ye be Clerks,  
 Both by your wittie words, and by your werks. 416  
 Is not that name enough to make a living  
 To him that hath a whit of Natures giving ?  
 Hew manie honest men see ye arize  
 Daylie thereby, and grow to goodly prize ; 420  
 To Deanes, te Archdeacons, to Commissaries,  
 To Lords, to Principalls, to Prebendaries ?  
 All iolly Preates, worthie rule to beare,  
 Who ever them envie : yet spite bites neare.  
 Why should ye doubt then, but that ye likewise 425  
 Might unto some of those in time arise ?  
 In the meane time to live in good estate,  
 Loving that love, and hating those that hate ;  
 Being some honest Curate, or some Vicker  
 Content with little in condition sicker." 430  
 " Ah ! but (said th' Ape) the charge is wondrous  
 great,  
 To feed mens soules, and hath an heavie threat."  
 " To feed mens soules (quoth he) is not in man :  
 For they must feed themselves, doo what we can.  
 We are but charg'd to lay the meate before : 435  
 Eatte they that list, we need to doo no more.  
 But God it is that feedes them with his grace,  
 The bread of life pow'd downe from heavenly place.  
 Therefore said he, that with the budding rod  
 Did rule the Jewes, *All shalbe taught of God.* 440  
 That same hath Iesus Christ now to him raught,  
 By whom the fleck is rightly fed, and taught :  
 He is the Shepheard, and the Priest is hee ;  
 We but his shepheard swaines ordain'd to bee.  
 Therefore herewith doo not your selfe dismay ; 445  
 Ne is the paines so great, but beare ye may ;  
 For not so great, as it was wont of yore,  
 It's now a dayes, ne halfe so streight and sore :  
 They whilome used duly everie day  
 Their service and their helie things to say, 450  
 At morne and even, besides their Antheemes sweete,  
 Their penie Masses, and their Complynes meete,  
 Their Diriges, their Trentals, and their Shrifts,  
 Their memories, their singings, and their gifts.  
 Now all these needlesse works are laid away ; 455  
 New once a weeke, upon the Sabbath day,  
 It is enough to doo our small devotion,  
 And then to follow any merrie motien.  
 Ne are we tyde to fast, but when we list ;  
 Ne to weare garments base of wollen twist, 460  
 But with the finest silkes us to aray,  
 That before God we may appeare mere gay,  
 Resembling Aarons glorie in his place :  
 For farre unfit it is, that person base  
 Should with vile cloaths approach Gods Maiestic,  
 Whom ne uncleannes may approachen nie ; 465  
 Or that all men, which anie master serve,  
 Good garments for their service should deserve ;  
 But he that serves the Lord of Hoasts Most High,  
 And that in highest place t' approach him nigh, 470  
 And all the peoples prayers to present  
 Before his throne, as an ambassage sent

Ver. 430. ——— sicker.] *Sure.* Todd.

Ver. 452. ——— Complynes] *Fr. Complic. Even-song* ;  
 the last service of the day. TYRWHITT.

Ver. 453. ——— Trentals.] *Un trentel*, Fr. was a service  
 of thirty Masses, which were usually celebrated, upon as  
 many different days, for the dead. TYRWHITT.

Ibid. ——— Shrifts.] *Confessions.* Todd.

Ver. 454. ——— memories.] *By memories*, says Fuller,  
 we understand the *Obsequia for the dead*, which some say  
 succeeded in the place of the heathen *Parentalia.* Todd.

Both to and fro, should not deserve to weare  
 A garment better, than of wooll or heare. 475  
 Beside, we may have lying by our sides  
 Our lovely Lasses, or bright shining Brides :  
 We be net tyde to willfull chastitie,  
 But have the Gospell of free libertie."  
 By that he ended had his ghostly sermon,  
 The Foxe was well induc'd to be a Parson ; 480  
 And of the Priest eftsouenes gan to enquire,  
 How to a Benefice he might aspire.  
 " Marie, there (said the Priest) is arte indeed :  
 Much good deep learning one thereout may reed ;  
 For that the ground-worke is, and end of all, 485  
 How to obtaine a Beneficial.  
 First therefore, when ye have in handsome wise  
 Your selfe attyred, as you can devise,  
 Then to some Nobleman your selfe applye,  
 Or other great one in the world's eye, 490  
 That hath a zealous disposition  
 To God, and so to his religion :  
 There must thou fashion eke a godly zeale,  
 Such as no carpers may contrayre reveale :  
 For each thing fained ought more warie bee. 495  
 There thou must walke in sober gravitee,  
 And seeme as saintlike as Saint Radegund :  
 Fast much, pray oft, looke lewly on the ground,  
 And unto everie one deo curtesie mecke :  
 These lookes (nought saying) doo a benefice seeke,  
 And be thou sure one not to laeke ere long. 501  
 But if thee list unto the Court to throng,  
 And there to hunt after the hoped pray,  
 Then must thou thee dispose another way :  
 For there thou needs must learne to laugh, to lie,  
 506  
 To face, to forge, to scoffe, to companie,  
 To crouche, to please, to be a beetle stock  
 Of thy great Masters will, to scorne, or mock :  
 So maist thou chauce mock out a Benefice,  
 Unless thou canst one coniure by device, 510  
 Or cast a figure for a Bisheprick ;  
 And if one could, it were but a schoole trick.  
 These be the wayes, by which without reward  
 Livings in Court be gotten, though full hard ;  
 For nothing there is done without a fee : 515  
 The Courtier needs must recompenced bee  
 With a Benevolence, or have in gage  
 The Primitias of your Parsonage :  
 Scarce can a Bisheprick forpas them by,  
 But that it must be gelt in privitie. 520  
 Doo net thou therefore seeke a living there,  
 But of more private persons seeke elswhere,  
 Whereas thou maist compound a better penie,  
 Ne let thy learning question'd be of anie.  
 For some goed Gentleman, that hath the right 525  
 Unto his Church for to present a wight,  
 Will cope with thee in reasonable wise ;  
 That if the living yerely doo arise  
 To fortie pound, that then his yongest sonne  
 Shall twentie have, and twentie thou hast wonne : 530  
 Thou hast it wonne, for it is of franke gift,  
 And he will care for all the rest to shift ;  
 Both that the Bishop may admit of thee,  
 And that therein thou maist maintained bee.  
 This is the way for one that is unlern'd 535  
 Living to get, and not to be discern'd.  
 But they, that are great Clerkes, have nearer wayes,  
 For learning sake to living them to raise :  
 Yet manie eke of them (God wote) are driven  
 To accept a Benefice in peeces riven. 540  
 How saist thou (friend) have I not well discourst  
 Upon this cemmon-place, though plaine, not weurst !

Better a short tale than a bad long shriving :  
 Needs anie more to learne to get a living ?”  
 “ Now sure, and by my hallidome, (quoth he) 545  
 Ye a great master are in your degree :  
 Great thanks I yeeld you for your discipline,  
 And doo not doubt but duly to encline  
 My wits theretoo, as ye shall shortly heare.”  
 The Priest him wisht good speed, and well to fare :  
 So parted they, as eithers way them led. 551  
 But th’ Ape and Foxe ere long so well them sped,  
 Through the Priests holesome counsell lately tought,  
 And through their owne faire handling wisely wrought,  
 That they a Benefice twixt them obtained ; 555  
 And craftie Reynold was a Priest ordained ;  
 And th’ Ape his Parish Clarke procure’d to bee :  
 Then made they revell route and goodly glee.  
 But, ere long time had passed, they so ill  
 Did order their affaires, that th’ evill will 560  
 Of all their Parishners they had constraind ;  
 Who to the Ordinarie of them complain’d,  
 How fowlie they their offices abus’d,  
 And them of crimes and heresies accus’d ;  
 That pursivants he often for them sent : 565  
 But they neglected his commaundement.  
 So long persisted obstinate and bolde,  
 Till at the length he published to holde  
 A Visitation, and them cyted thether :  
 Then was high time their wits about to geather ; 570  
 What did they then, but made a composition  
 With their next neighbor Priest for light condition,  
 To whom their living they resigned quight  
 For a few pence, and ran away by night.  
 So passing through the Countrey in disguise, 575  
 They fled farre off, where none might them surprize,  
 And after that long straid here and there,  
 Through everie field and Forrest farre and nere ;  
 Yet never found occasion for their tourne,  
 But, almost sterr’d, did much lament and mourne.  
 At last they chaunst to meete upon the way 581  
 The Mule all deckt in goodly rich aray,  
 With bells and bosses that full lowdly rung,  
 And costly trappings that to ground downe hung.  
 Lowly they him saluted in meeke wise ; 585  
 But he through pride and fatnes gan despise  
 Their meanness ; scarce vouchsafte them to requite.  
 Whereat the Foxe deep groning in his sprite,  
 Said ; “ Ah ! sir Mule, now blessed be the day,  
 That I see you so goodly and so gay 590  
 In your attyres, and eke your silken hyde  
 Fil’d with round flesh, that everie bone doth hide.  
 Seemes that in fruitfull pastures ye doo live,  
 Or fortune doth you secret favour give.”  
 “ Foolish Foxe ! (said the Mule) thy wretched need  
 Praiseth the thing that doth thy sorrow breed. 595  
 For well I weene, thou canst not but envie  
 My wealth, compar’d to thine owne miserie,  
 That art so leane and meagre waxen late,  
 That scarce thy legs uphold thy feeble gate.” 600  
 “ Ay me ! (said then the Foxe) whom evill hap  
 Unworthy in such wretchednes doth wrap,  
 And makes the scorne of other beasts to bee :  
 But read faire Sir, of grace, from whence come yee ;  
 Or what of tidings you abroad doo heare ; 605  
 Newes may perhaps some good unweeting beare.”  
 “ From royall Court I lately came (said he)

Where all the braverie that eye may see,  
 And all the happinesse that heart desire,  
 Is to be found ; he nothing can admire, 610  
 That hath not seeme that heavens portraiture :  
 But tidings there is none I you assure,  
 Save that which common is, and knowne to all,  
 That Courtiers as the tide doo rise and fall.”  
 “ But tell us (said the Ape) we doo you pray, 615  
 Who now in Court doth beare the greatest sway :  
 That, if such fortune doo to us befall,  
 We may seeke favour of the best of all.”  
 “ Marie, (said he) the highest now in grace,  
 Be the wilde beasts, that swiftest are in chase ; 620  
 For in their speedie course and nimble flight  
 The Lyon now doth take the most delight ;  
 But chieffie joyes on foote them to beholde,  
 Enchaste with chaine and circulet of golde :  
 So wilde a beast so tame ytaught to bee, 625  
 And buxome to his bands, is ioy to see ;  
 So well his golden circlet him beseeemeth :  
 But his late chayne his Liege unmeete esteemeth ;  
 For so brave beasts she loveth best to see  
 In the wilde Forrest raunging fresh and free. 630  
 Therefore if fortune thee in Court to live,  
 In case thou ever there wilt hope to thrive,  
 To some of these thou must thy selfe apply ;  
 Els as a thistle-downe in th’ ayre doth flie,  
 So vainly shalt thou to and fro be tost,  
 And lose thy labour and thy fruitles cost.  
 And yet full few, which follow them I see,  
 For vertues bare regard advanced bee,  
 But either for some gainfull benefit,  
 Or that they may for their owne turnes be fit. 634  
 Nath’les perhaps ye things may handle see,  
 That ye may better thrive than thousands moe.”  
 “ But (said the Ape) how shall we first come in,  
 That after we may favour seeke to win ?”  
 “ How els (said he) but with a good bold face, 638  
 And with big words, and with a stately pace,  
 That men may thinke of you in generall,  
 That to be in you, which is not at all :  
 For not by that which is, the world now deemeth,  
 (As it was wont) but by that same that seemeth.  
 Ne do I doubt but that ye well can fashion 651  
 Your selves theretoo, according to occasion :  
 So fare ye well, good Courtiers may ye bee !”  
 So, prouddie neighing, from them parted hee.  
 Then gan this craftie couple to devize, 655  
 How for the Court themselves they might aguize :  
 For thither they themselves meant to addresse,  
 In hope to finde there happier successe.  
 So well they shifted, that the Ape anon  
 Himselfe had cloathed like a Gentleman, 660  
 And the slie Foxe, as like to be his groomme,  
 That to the Court in seemly sort they come ;  
 Where the fond Ape, himselfe uprearing hy  
 Upon his tiptoes, stalketh stately by,  
 As if he were some great Magnifico, 665  
 And boldlie doth amongst the boldest go ;  
 And his man Reynold, with fine counterfesunce,  
 Supports his credite and his countenance.  
 Then gan the Courtiers gaze on everie side,  
 And stare on him, with big looks basen-wide, 670  
 Wondring what mister wight he was, and whence :  
 For he was clad in strange accoutrements,  
 Fashion’d with queint devises never seene

Ver. 545. ——— *hallidome,*] “ By my hallidome. *Par le Sacrement* Forme de jurement ancienne.” — *Colgrave.* TODD.

Ver. 583. *With bells and bosses,* &c.] An old ornament of bridles, as Mr. Warton also observes. TODD.

Ver. 620. ——— *she loveth*] *The Queen.* TODD.

Ver. 656. ——— *aguize*] *Decorate.* TODD.

Ver. 667. ——— *counterfesunce,*] *Counterfeiting.* TODD.

In Court before, yet there all fashions beene ;  
 Yet he them in newfangellesse did pas : 675  
 But his behavioer altogether was  
*Alla Turchesca*, much the more admv'd ;  
 And his lookes loftie, as if he aspyr'd  
 To dignitie, and sdeign'd the low degree ;  
 That all, which did such strangenesse in him see,  
 By secrete meanes gan of his state enquire, 681  
 And privily his servant thereto hire :  
 Who, throughly arm'd against such coverture,  
 Reported unto all, that he was sure  
 A noble Gentleman of high regard, 685  
 Which through the world had with long travel far'd,  
 And seene the manuers of all beasts on ground ;  
 Now here arriv'd, to see if like he found.  
 Thus did the Ape at first him credit gaine,  
 Which afterwards he wisely did maintaine 690  
 With gallant showe, and daylie more augment  
 Through his fine feates and Courtly complement ;  
 For he could play, and daunce, and vaute, and spring,  
 And all that els pertaines to reveling,  
 Onely through kindly aptnes of his ioynets. 695  
 Besides he could doo manie other poynts,  
 The which in Court him served to good stead:  
 For he mongst Ladies could their fortunes read  
 Out of their hands, and merie leasings tell,  
 And iuggle fluely, that became him well : 700  
 But he so light was at legierdemaine,  
 That what he toucht, came not to light againe ;  
 Yet would he laugh it out, and proudly looke,  
 And tell them, that they greatly him mistooke. 705  
 So would he scoffe them out with mockerie,  
 For he therein had great felicitie ;  
 And with sharp quips ioy'd others to deface,  
 Thinking that their disgracing did him grace :  
 So whilst that other like vaine wits he pleased,  
 And made to laugh, his heart was greatly eased. 710  
 But the right Gentle Minde would bite his lip,  
 To heare the Iavell so good men to nip :  
 For, though the vulgar yeeld an open eare,  
 And common Courtiers love to gybe and fleare 715  
 At everie thing, which they heare spoken ill,  
 And the best speaches with ill meaning spill ;  
 Yet the brave Courtier, in whose beauteous thought  
 Regard of honour harbours more than ought,  
 Doth loath such base condition, to backbite  
 Anies good name for envie or despite : 720  
 He stands on tearmes of honourable minde,  
 Ne will be carried with the common winde  
 Of Courts inconstant mutabilitie,  
 Ne after everie tattling fable fie ;  
 But heares, and sees, the follies of the rest, 725  
 And thereof gathers for himselfe the best :  
 He will not creepe, nor crouche with fained face,  
 But walkes upright with comely stedfast pace,  
 And unto all doth yeeld due curtesie ;  
 But not with kissed hand belowe the knee, 730  
 As that same Apish crue is wont to doo :  
 For he disdaines himselfe t' embase theretoo.  
 He hates fowle leasings, and vile flatterie,  
 Two filthie blots in noble gentrie ;  
 And lothefull idleness he doth detest, 735  
 The canker worme of everie gentle brest ;  
 The which to banish with faire exercise  
 Of knightly feates, he daylie doth devise :

Now menaging the mouthes of stubborne steedes,  
 Now practising the proove of warlike deedes, 740  
 Now his bright armes assaying, now his speare,  
 Now the nigh ayred ring away to beare ;  
 At other times he casts to sew the chace  
 Of swift wilde beasts, or runne on foote a race,  
 T' enlarge his breath, (large breath in armes most  
 needfull,) 745  
 Or els by wrestling to wex strong and heedfull,  
 Or his stiffe armes to stretch with eughen bowe,  
 And manly legs still passing too and fro,  
 Without a gowned beast him fast beside,  
 A vaine ensample of the Persiau pride ; 750  
 Who, after he had wonne th' Assyrian foe,  
 Did ever after scorne on foote to goe.  
 Thus when this Courtly Gentleman with toyle  
 Himselfe bath wearied, he doth recoyle  
 Unto his rest, and there with sweete delight 755  
 Of musicks skill revives his toyled spright ;  
 Or els with Loves, and Ladies gentle sports,  
 The joy of youth, himselfe he recomforts :  
 Or lastly, when the bodie list to pause,  
 His minde unto the Muses he withdrawes ; 760  
 Sweete Ladie Muses, Ladies of delight,  
 Delights of life, and ornaments of light !  
 With whom he close confers with wise discourse,  
 Of Natures workes, of heavens continual course,  
 Of forreine lands, of people different, 765  
 Of kingdomes change, of divers government,  
 Of dreadfull battailes of renowned Knights ;  
 With which he kindleth his ambitious sprights  
 To like desire and praise of noble fame,  
 The onely upshot whereto he doth ayme : 770  
 For all his minde on honour fixed is,  
 To which he levels all his purposis,  
 And in his Princes service spends his dayes,  
 Not so much for to gaine, or for to raise  
 Himselfe to high degree, as for his grace, 775  
 And in his liking to winne worthe place ;  
 Through due deserts and comely carriage,  
 In whatso please employ his personage,  
 That may be matter meete to gaine him praise ;  
 For he is fit to use in all assayes, 780  
 Whether for armes and warlike amenaunce,  
 Or else for wise and civill governaunce.  
 For he is practiz'd well in policie,  
 And thereto doth his courting most applie :  
 To learne the enterdeale of Princes strange, 785  
 To marke th' intent of counsellis, and the change  
 Of states, and eke of private men somewhile,  
 Supplanted by fine falshood and faire guile ;  
 Of all the which he gathereth what is fit  
 T' enrich the storehouse of his powerfull wit, 790  
 Which through wise speaches and grave conference  
 He daylie eekes, and brings to excellence.  
 Such is the rightfull Courtier in his kinde :  
 But unto such the Ape lent not his minde ;  
 Such were for him no fit companions, 795  
 Such would descrie his lewd conditions :  
 But the young lustie gallants he did chose  
 To follow, meete to whom he might disclose  
 His witlesse pleassance, and ill pleasing vaine.  
 A thousand wayes he them could entertaine, 800  
 With all the thrifles games that may be found ;  
 With mumming and with masking all around,  
 With dice, with cards, with balliards farre uufit,

Ver. 702. ——— legierdemaine,] *Slight of hand.* TODD.

Ver. 707. ——— quips] *Enceers or taunts.* TODD.

Ver. 711. ——— Gentle Minde] The usual description  
 of Sir Philip Sidney. TODD.

Ver. 781. ——— amenaunce,] *Carriage, or conduct.*  
 TODD.

Ver. 785. ——— enterdeale] *Mediation.* UPTON.



With shnttelcocks, misseeming manlie wit,  
 With courtizans, and costly riotize, 805  
 Whereof still somewhat to his share did rize :  
 Ne, them to pleasure, would he sometimes scorne  
 A pandares coate (so basely was he borne) ;  
 Thereto he could fine loving verses frame,  
 And play the Poet oft. But ah, for shame, 810  
 Let not sweete Poets praise, whose onely pride  
 Is virth to advance, and vice derided,  
 Be with the worke of losels wit defamed,  
 Ne let such verses Poetrie be named !  
 Yet he the name on him would rashly take, 815  
 Mangre the sacred Muses, and it make  
 A servant to the vile affection  
 Of such, as he depended most upon ;  
 And with the sugrie sweete thereof allure  
 Chast Ladies eares to fantasies impure. 820  
 To such delights the noble wits he led  
 Which him reliev'd, and their vaine humours fed  
 With fruitles follies and unsound delights.  
 But if perhaps into their noble spirits  
 Desire of honor or brave thought of armes 825  
 Did ever creepe, then with his wicked charmes  
 And strong conceits he would it drive away,  
 Ne suffer it to house there halfe a day.  
 And whenso love of letters did inspire  
 Their gentle wits, and kindly wise desire, 830  
 That chieftie doth each noble minde adorne,  
 Then he would scoffe at learning, and eke scorne  
 The sectaries thereof, as people base  
 And simple men, which never came in place  
 Of worlds affaires, but, in darke corners mewed, 835  
 Muttred of matters as their bookes them shewd,  
 Ne other knowledge ever did attaine,  
 But with their gownes their gravitie maintaine.  
 From them he would his impudent lewde speach  
 Against Gods holie Ministers oft reach, 840  
 And mocke Divines and their profession :  
 What else then did he by progression,  
 But mocke High God himselfe, whom they pro-  
 fesse ?  
 But what car'd he for God, or godlinesse ?  
 All his care was himselfe how to advance, 845  
 And to uphold his courtly countenance  
 By all the cunning meanes he could devise ;  
 Were it by honest wayes, or otherwise,  
 He made small choyce : yet sure his honestie  
 Got him small gaines, but shameles flatterie, 850  
 And filthie brocage, and unseemly shifts,  
 And borowe base, and some good Ladies gifts :  
 But the best helpe, which chieftly him sustain'd,  
 Was his man Raynolds purchase which he gain'd.  
 For he was school'd by kinde in all the skill 855  
 Of close conveyance, and each practise ill  
 Of coosinage and cleanly knaverie,  
 Which oft maintain'd his masters braverie.  
 Besides he usde another slipprie slight,  
 In taking on himselfe, in common sight, 860  
 False personages fit for everie sted,  
 With which he thousands cleanly coosined :  
 Now like a Merchant, Merchants to deceave,  
 With whom his credite he did often leave  
 In gage for his gay Masters hopelesse dett : 865  
 Now like a Lawyer, when he land would lett,  
 Or sell fee-simples in his masters name,  
 Which he had never, nor ought like the same :

Then would he be a Broker, and draw in  
 Both wares and money, by exchange to win : 870  
 Then would he seeme a Farmer, that would sell  
 Bargaines of woods, which he did lately fell,  
 Or corne, or cattie, or such other ware,  
 Thereby to coosin men not well aware :  
 Of all the which there came a secret fee 875  
 To th' Ape, that he his countenance might bee.  
 Besides all this, he us'd oft to beguile  
 Poore suters, that in Court did haunt some while :  
 For he would learne their busines secretly,  
 And then informe his Master hastily, 880  
 That he by meanes might cast them to prevent,  
 And beg the sute, the which the other ment.  
 Or otherwise false Reynold would abuse  
 The simple suter, and wish him to chuse  
 His Master, being one of great regard 885  
 In Court, to compas anie sute not hard,  
 In case his paines were recompent with reason :  
 So would he worke the silly man by treason  
 To bny his Masters frivolous good will,  
 That had not power to doo him good or ill. 890  
 So pitifull a thing is suters state !  
 Most miserable man, whom wicked fate  
 Hath brought to Court, to sue for had ywist,  
 That few have found, and manie one hath mist !  
 Full little knowest thou, that hast not tride, 895  
 What hell it is, in suing long to hide :  
 To loose good dayes, that might be better spent ;  
 To wast long nights in pensive discontent ;  
 To speed to day, to be put back to morrow ;  
 To feed on hope, to pine with feare and sorrow ;  
 To have thy Princes grace, yet want her Peeres ;  
 To have thy asking, yet waite manie yeeres ; 900  
 To fret thy soule with crosses and with cares ;  
 To eate thy heart through comfortlesse dispaire ;  
 To fawne, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to ronne,  
 To spend, to give, to want, to be undone. 905  
 Unhappie wight, borne to desastrous end,  
 That doth his life in so long tendance spend !  
 Who ever leaves sweete home, where meane estate  
 In safe assurance, without strife or hate, 910  
 Findes all things needfull for contentment meeke ;  
 And will to Court for shadowes vaine to seeke,  
 Or hope to gaine, himselfe will a daw trie :  
 That curse God send unto mineemie !  
 For none but such, as this bold Ape unblest, 915  
 Can ever thrive in that unlnckie quest ;  
 Or such as hath a Reynold to his man,  
 That by his shifts his master furnish can.  
 But yet this Foxe could not so closely hide  
 His craftie feates, but that they were descride 920  
 At length by such as sate in iustice seate,  
 Who for the same him fowlie did entreate ;  
 And, having worthily him punished,  
 Out of the Court for ever banished.  
 And now the Ape wanting his huckster man, 925  
 That wont provide his necessaries, gan  
 To growe into great lacke, ne could upholde  
 His countenance in those his garments olde ;  
 Ne new ones could he easily provide,  
 Though all men him unceas gan deride, 930  
 Like as a puppit placed in a play,  
 Whose part once past all men bid take away :  
 So that he driven was to great distresse,  
 And shortly brought to hopelesse wretchednesse.  
 Then closely as he might he cast to leave 935

Ver. 851. brocage,] *Pimping.* TODD.Ver. 852. And borowe base,] That is, base *pledges* or *usury.* TODD.

Ver. 893. — had ywist,] This appears to have been: an old English proverb. TODD.

The Court, not asking any passe or leave ;  
 But ran away in his rent rags by night,  
 Ne ever staid in place, ne spake to wight,  
 Till that the Foxe his copesmate he had found,  
 To whome complayning his unhappy stound, 940  
 At last againe with him in travell ioynd,  
 And with him far'd some better chaunce to fynde.  
 So in the world long time they wandered,  
 And mickle want and hardnesse suffered ;  
 That them repented much so foolishly 945  
 To come so farre to seeke for misery,  
 And leave the sweetnes of contented home,  
 Though eating hipps, and drinking waivy fome.  
 Thus as they them complayned too and fro,  
 Whilst through the forest rechlesse they did goe,  
 Lo ! where they spide, how, in a gloomy glade, 951  
 The Lyon sleeping lay in secret shade,  
 His Crowne and Scepter lying him beside,  
 And having doft for heate his dreadfull hide :  
 Which when they sawe, the Ape was sore afrayde,  
 And would have fled with terror all dismayde, 955  
 But him the Foxe with hardy words did stay,  
 And bad him put all cowardize away ;  
 For now was time (if ever they should hope)  
 To ayme their counsels to the fairest scope, 960  
 And them for ever highly to advance,  
 In case the good, which their owne happie chaunce  
 Them freely offred, they would wisely take.  
 Scarse could the Ape yet speake, so did he quake ;  
 Yet, as he could, he askt how good might growe 965  
 Where nought but dread and death do seeme in show.  
 " Now, (sayd he) whiles the Lyon sleepeeth sound,  
 May we his Crowne and Mace take from the ground,  
 And eke his skinne the terror of the wood,  
 Wherewith we may our selves (if we thinke good)  
 Make Kings of beasts, and Lords of forests all, 971  
 Subiect unto that powre imperiall."  
 " Ah ! but (sayd th' Ape) who is so bold a wretch,  
 That dare his hardy hand to those outstretch ;  
 When as he knowes his meede, if he be spide, 975  
 To be a thousand deathes, and shame beside ?"  
 " Fond Ape ! (sayd then the Foxe) into whose brest  
 Never crept thought of honor, nor brave gest,  
 Who will not venture life a King to be,  
 And rather rule and raigne in sovereign see, 980  
 Than dwell in dust inglorious and bace,  
 Where none shall name the number of his place ?  
 One ioyous houre in blisfull happines,  
 I chuse before a life of wretchednes.  
 Be therefore counselled herein by me, 985  
 And shake off this vile harted cowardree.  
 If he awake, yet is not death the next,  
 For we may color it with some pretext  
 Of this, or that, that may excuse the crime :  
 Else we may flye ; thou to a tree mayst clyme, 990  
 And I creepe under ground ; both from his reach :  
 Therefore be rul'd to doo as I doo teach."  
 The Ape, that earst did nought but chill and quake,  
 Now gau some courage unto him to take,  
 And was content to attempt that enterprise, 995  
 Ticked with glorie and rash covetise.  
 But first gan question, whether should assay  
 Those royall ornaments to steale away ?  
 " Marie, that shall your selfe, (quoth he theretoo)

For ye be fine and nimble it to doo ; 1006  
 Of all the beasts, which in the forrests bee,  
 Is not a fitter for this turne than yee ;  
 Therefore, mine owne deare brother, take good hart,  
 And ever thinke a kingdome is your part."  
 Loath was the Ape, though praised, to adventer,  
 Yet faintly gan into his worke to enter, 1006  
 Afraid of everie leafe that stir'd him by,  
 And everie stick that underneath did ly :  
 Upon his tiptoos nicely he up went,  
 For making noyse, and still his eare he lent 1010  
 To everie sound that under heaven blew ;  
 Now went, now stept, now crept, now backward  
 drew,  
 That it good sport had been him to have eyde :  
 Yet at the last, (so well he him applyde,) 1015  
 Through his fine handling, and cleanly play,  
 He all those royall signes had stolne away,  
 And with the Foxes helpe them borne aside  
 Into a secret corner unespide.  
 Whither whenas they came they fell at words,  
 Whether of them should be the lord of lords : 1020  
 For th' Ape was stryfull, and ambitious ;  
 And the Foxe guilefull, and most covetous ;  
 That neither pleased was, to have the rayne  
 Twixt them divided into even twaine,  
 But either (algates) would be lord alone : 1025  
 For Love and Lordship bide no paragone.  
 " I am most worthie, (said the Ape) sith I  
 For it did put my life in ieopardie :  
 Thereto I am in person and in stature  
 Most like a Man, the Lord of everie creature, 1030  
 So that it seemeth I was made to raigne,  
 And borne to be a kingly soveraigne."  
 " Nay (said the Foxe) Sir Ape, you are astray :  
 For though to steale the Diademe away  
 Were the worke of your nimble hand, yet I 1035  
 Did first devise the plot by pollicie ;  
 So that it wholly springeth from my wit :  
 For which also I claime my selfe more fit,  
 Than you, to rule : for government of state  
 Will without wisdomed soone be ruinate. 1040  
 And where ye claime your selfe for outward shape  
 Most like a man, Man is not like an Ape  
 In his chiefe parts, that is, in wit and spirite ;  
 But I therein most like to him doo merite,  
 For my slie wyles and subtil craftinesse, 1045  
 The title of the Kingdome to possess.  
 Nath'les (my brother) since we passed are  
 Unto this point, we will appease our iarre ;  
 And I with reason meete will rest content,  
 That ye shall have both crowne and government, 1050  
 Upon condition, that ye ruled bee  
 In all affaires, and counselled by mee ;  
 And that ye let none other ever drawe  
 Your minde from me, but keepe this as a lawe :  
 And hereupon an oath unto me plight." 1055  
 The Ape was glad to end the strife so light,  
 And thereto swore : for who would not oft swear,  
 And oft unswear, a Diademe to beare ?  
 Then freely up those royall spoyles he tooke,  
 Yet at the Lyons skin he inly quooke ; 1060  
 But it dissembled, and upon his head  
 The Crowne, and on his backe the skin he did,  
 And the false Foxe him helped to array.  
 Then when he was all dight he tooke his way  
 Into the forest, that he might be scene 1065  
 Of the wilde beasts in his new glory shiene.

Ver. 939. ——— *copesmate*] Perhaps for *cutsmate*, a companion in drinking ; or one that dwells under the same *cope*, for house. A companion, a friend. JOHNSON.

Ver. 996. ——— *cowardree*.] *Cowardice*, coined by the poet for the sake of the rhyme. TODD.

Ver 1066. ——— *shcene*.] *Shining, fair, &c.* TODD.

There the two first, whome he encountred, were  
 The Sheepe and th' Asse, who, striken both with  
 At sight of him, gan fast away to flye; [fcare  
 But unto them the Foxe alowd did ery, 1070  
 And in the Kings name bad them both to stay,  
 Upon the payne that thereof follow may.  
 Hardly naythles were they restrayned so,  
 Till that the Foxe forth toward them did goe,  
 And there dissuaded them from needlesse feare, 1075  
 For that the King did faviour to them beare;  
 And therefore dreadles bad them come to Corte:  
 For no wild beasts should do them any torte  
 There or abroad, ne would his Maiestye  
 Use them but well, with gracious clemencye, 1080  
 As whome he knew to him both fast and true:  
 So he perswaded them, with homage due  
 Themselves to humble to the Ape prostrate,  
 Who, gently to them bowing in his gate,  
 Receyved them with chearefull entertayne. 1085  
 Thenceforth proceeding with his princely trayne,  
 He shortly met the Tygre, and the Bore,  
 Which with the simple Camell ragged sore  
 In bitter words, seeking to take occasion  
 Upon his fleshy corpse to make invasion: 1090  
 But, soone as they this mock-King did espy,  
 Their troublous strife they stinted by and by,  
 Thinking indeed that it the Lyon was:  
 He then, to prove whether his powre would pas  
 As currant, sent the Foxe to them streight way, 1095  
 Commanding them their cause of strife bewray;  
 And, if that wrong on eyther side there were,  
 That he should warne the wronger to appeare  
 The morrow next at Court, it to defend;  
 In the meane time upon the King t' attend. 1100  
 The subtile Foxe so well his message sayd,  
 That the proud beasts him readily obeyd:  
 Whereby the Ape in wondrous stomack woxe,  
 Strongly encorag'd by the crafty Foxe;  
 That King indeed himselfe he shortly thought, 1105  
 And all the beasts him feared as they ought,  
 And followed unto his palaise hye;  
 Where taking congé, each one by and by,  
 Departed to his home in dreadfull awe,  
 Full of the feared sight, which late they sawe. 1110  
 The Ape thus seized of the Regall throne,  
 Eftsoones by counsell of the Foxe alone,  
 Gan to provide for all things in assurance,  
 That so his rule might lenger have endurance.  
 First to his gate he pointed a strong gard, 1115  
 That none might enter but with issue hard:  
 Then, for the safeguard of his personage,  
 He did appoint a warlike equipage  
 Of forreine beasts, not in the forest bred,  
 But part by land and part by water fed; 1120  
 For tyrannie is with strange ayde supported.  
 Then unto him all monstrous beasts resorted  
 Bred of two kindes, as Griffons, Minotaures,  
 Crocodiles, Dragons, Beavers, and Centaures:  
 With those himselfe he strengthened mightelie, 1125  
 That feare he neede no force ofemie.  
 Then gan he rule and tyrannize at will,  
 Like as the Foxe did guide his gracieus skill;  
 And all wyld beasts made vassals of his pleasures,  
 And with their spoyles enlarg'd his private treasures.  
 No care of iustice, nor no rule of reason, 1131

No temperance, nor no regard of season,  
 Did thenceforth ever enter in his minde;  
 But crueltie, the signe of currish kinde,  
 And sdeignfull pride, and wilfull arrogance; 1135  
 Such folloves those whom fortune doth advaunce.  
 But the false Foxe most kindly plaid his part:  
 For, whatsoever mother-wit or arte  
 Could worke, he put in prooffe: no practise slie,  
 No counterpoint of cunning policie, 1140  
 No reach, no breach, that might him profit bring,  
 But he the same did to his purpose wring.  
 Nought suffered he the Ape to give or graunt,  
 But through his hand alone must passe the Fiaunt.  
 All offices, all leases by him lept, 1145  
 And of them all, whatso he likte, he kept.  
 Iustice he soldc iniustice for to buy,  
 And for to purchase for his progeny.  
 Ill might it prosper, that ill gotten was;  
 But, so he got it, little did he pas. 1150  
 He fed his cubs with fat of all the soyle,  
 And with the sweete of others sweating toyle;  
 He crammed them with crumbs of Benefices,  
 And fild their mouthe with needs of malefices;  
 He cloathed them with all colours save white, 1155  
 And loded them with lordships and with might,  
 So much as they were able well to beare,  
 That with the weight their backs nigh broken were;  
 He chaffred Chayres in which Churchmen were set,  
 And breach of lawes to privie ferme did let: 1160  
 No statute so established might bee,  
 Nor ordinance so needfull, but that hee  
 Would violatc, though not with violence,  
 Yet under colour of the confidence  
 The which the Ape repos'd in him alone, 1165  
 And reckned him the kingdomes corner stone.  
 And ever, when he ought would bring to pas,  
 His long experience the platforme was:  
 And, when he ought not pleasing would put by,  
 The cloke was care of thrift, and husbandry, 1170  
 For to encrease the common treasures store;  
 But his owne treasure he encreased more,  
 And lifted up his loftie towres thereby,  
 That they began to threat the neighbour sky;  
 The whiles the Princes pallaces fell fast 1175  
 To ruine: (for what thing can ever last?)  
 And whilest the other Peeres, for povertie,  
 Were forst their ancient houses to let lie,  
 And their olde castles to the ground to fall,  
 Which their forefathers famous over all 1180  
 Had founded for the Kingdomes ornament,  
 And for their memories long monument.  
 But he no count made of Nobilitie,  
 Nor the wilde beasts whom armes did glorifie,  
 The Realmes chiefe strength and girdland of the 1185  
 crowne.  
 All these through fained crimes he thrust adowne,  
 Or made them dwell in darknes of disgrace:  
 For none, but whom he list, might come in place.  
 Of men of armes he had but small regard,  
 But kept them lowe, and streigned verie hard. 1190  
 For men of learning litle he esteemed;  
 His wisdomc he above their learning decmed.  
 As for the rascall Commons least he cared;

Ver. 1144. — Fiaunt.] *Commission or warrant.* TODD.  
 Ver. 1154. — malefices:] *Evil deeds.* TODD.

Ver. 1159. *He chaffred &c.] Sold or exchanged.* T. WARTON.

Ver. 1189. *Of men of armes he &c.] Alluding to Lord Burleigh.* TODD.

Ver. 1078. — torte] *Injury or wrong.* TODD.

Ver. 1085. — entertayne.] *Entertainment.* TODD.

Ver. 1092. — stinted] *Left off.* TODD.

Ver. 1111. — seized] *Possessed.* TODD.

For not so common was his bountie shared ;  
 Let God, (said he) if please, care for the manie, <sup>1195</sup>  
 : for my selfe must care before els anie :  
 So did he good to none, to manie ill,  
 So did he all the kingdome rob and pill,  
 Yet none durst speake, ne none durst of him plaine ;  
 So great he was in grace, and rich through gaine.  
 Ne would he anie let to have accesse <sup>1201</sup>  
 Unto the Prince, but by his owne adresse :  
 For all that els did come, were sure to faile ;  
 Yet would he further none but for availle.  
 For on a time the Sheepe, to whom of yore <sup>1205</sup>  
 The Foxe had promised of friendship store,  
 What time the Ape the kingdome first did gaine,  
 Came to the Court, her case there to complaine ;  
 How that the Wolfe, her mortall enemye,  
 Had sithence slaine her Lambe most cruellie ; <sup>1210</sup>  
 And therefore crav'd to come unto the King,  
 To let him knowe the order of the thing.  
 "Soft Gooddie Sheepe ! (then said the Foxe) not  
 Unto the King so rash ye may not goe ; [soe : <sup>1215</sup>  
 He is with greater matter busied  
 Than a Lambe, or the Lambes owne mothers hed.  
 Ne certes may I take it well in part,  
 That ye my cousin Wolfe so fowly thwart,  
 And seeke with slauder his good name to blot :  
 For there was cause, els doo it he would not : <sup>1220</sup>  
 Therefore surcease, good Dame, and hence depart." <sup>1225</sup>  
 So went the Sheepe away with heavie hart :  
 So manie moe, so everie one was used,  
 That to give largely to the boxe refused.  
 Now when high love, in whose almightie hand <sup>1225</sup>  
 The care of Kings and power of Empires stand,  
 Sitting one day within his turret lye,  
 From whence he vewes, with his black-lidded eye,  
 Whatsoe the heaven in his wide vawte contains,  
 And all that in the deepest earth remains ; <sup>1230</sup>  
 And troubled kingdome of wilde beasts behelde,  
 Whom not their kindly Sovereigne did welde,  
 But an usurping Ape, with guile suborn'd,  
 Had all subvert ; he sdeignfully it scorn'd <sup>1235</sup>  
 In his great heart, and hardly did refrain,  
 But that with thunder bolts he had him slaine,  
 And driven downe to hell, his dewest meed :  
 But, him avizing, he that dreadfull deed  
 Forbore, and rather chose with scornfull shame  
 Him to avenge, and blot his brutish name <sup>1240</sup>  
 Unto the world, that never after anie  
 Should of his race be voyd of infamie ;  
 And his false counsellor, the cause of all,  
 To damne to death, or dote perpetuall,  
 From whence he never should be quit, nor stal'd. <sup>1245</sup>  
 Forthwith he Mercurie unto him cal'd,  
 And bad him flie with never resting speed  
 Unto the Forrest, where wilde beasts doo breed,  
 And there enquiring privily, to learne  
 What did of late chance to the Lyon stearne, <sup>1250</sup>  
 That he rul'd not the Empire, as he ought ;  
 And whence were all those plaints unto him brought  
 Of wrongs, and spoyles, by salvage beasts com-  
 Which done, he bad the Lyon be remitted [mitted : <sup>1255</sup>  
 Into his seate, and those same treachours vile  
 Be punished for their presumptuous guile.  
 The Sonne of Maia, soone as he receiv'd  
 That word, streight with his azure wings he cleav'd

The liquid clowdes, and lucid firmament ;  
 Ne staid, till that he came with steep descent <sup>1260</sup>  
 Unto the place, where his prescript did shoue.  
 There stouping, like an arrowe from a bowe,  
 He soft arrived on the grassie plaine,  
 And fairly paced forth with easie paine,  
 Till that unto the Pallace nigh he came. <sup>1265</sup>  
 Then gan he to himselfe new shape to frame ;  
 And that faire face, and that ambrosiall hew,  
 Which wents to decke the gods immortal crew,  
 And beautefie the shinie firmament,  
 He doft, unfit for that rude rabblement. <sup>1270</sup>  
 So, standing by the gates in strange disguise,  
 He gan enquire of some in secret wize,  
 Both of the King, and of his government,  
 And of the Foxe, and his false blandishment :  
 And evermore he heard each one complaine <sup>1275</sup>  
 Of foule abuses both in realme and raine.  
 Which yet to prove more true, he meant to see,  
 And an ey-witnes of each thing to bee.  
 Tho on his head his dreadfull hat he dight,  
 Which maketh him invisible in sight, <sup>1280</sup>  
 And mocketh th' eyes of all the lookers on,  
 Making them thinke it but a vision. [swerds ;  
 Through power of that, he runnes through enemies  
 Through power of that, he passeth through the herds  
 Of ravenous wilde beasts, and doth beguile <sup>1285</sup>  
 Their greedie mouthes of the expected spoyle ;  
 Through power of that, his cunning theeveries  
 He wents to worke, that none the same espies ;  
 And, through the power of that, he putteth on  
 What shape he list in apparition. <sup>1290</sup>  
 That on his head he wore, and in his hand  
 He tooke Caduceus his snakie wand,  
 With which the damned ghosts he governeth,  
 And furies rules, and Tartare tempereth.  
 With that he causeth sleep to seize the eyes, <sup>1295</sup>  
 And feare the harts, of all his enemies ;  
 And, when him list, an universall night  
 Throughout the world he makes on everie wight ;  
 As when his Syre with Alcumena lay :  
 Thus dight, unto the Court he tooke his way, <sup>1300</sup>  
 Both through the gard, which never him descride,  
 And through the watchmen, who him never spide :  
 Thereforth he past into each secrete part,  
 Whereas he saw, that sorely griev'd his hart,  
 Each place abounding with fowle iniuries, <sup>1305</sup>  
 And filld with treasure rackt with robberies ;  
 Each place defilde with blood of guiltes beasts,  
 Which had been slaine to serve the Apes beheasts ;  
 Gluttonie, malice, pride, and covetize,  
 And lawlesnes reigning with riotize ; <sup>1310</sup>  
 Besides the infinite extortions,  
 Done through the Foxes great oppressions,  
 That the complaints thereof could not be tolde.  
 Which when he did with lothfull eyes beholde,  
 He would no more endure, but came his way, <sup>1315</sup>  
 And cast to seeke the Lion, where he may,  
 That he might worke the avengement for this shame  
 On those two caytives, which had bred him blame.  
 And, seeking all the Forrest busily,  
 At last he found, where sleeping he did lye : <sup>1320</sup>  
 The wicked weed, which there the Foxe did lay,  
 From underneath his head he tooke away,  
 And then him waking, forced up to rize.

Ver. 1198. — pill,] "Take by extortion." Barret's Dict. Todd.

Ver. 1245. — stal'd.] Or *stal'd*, as the modern editions read : that is, perhaps, *stolen*. Todd.

Ver. 1264. — paine,] *Labour or exertion*. Fr. *peine* Todd.

Ver. 1294. — tempereth.] *Governs*. A plain Latinsim. T. WARTON.

The Lion looking up gan him avize,  
 As one late in a trauce, what had of long 1325  
 Become of him : for fantasie is strong.  
 " Arise, (said Mercurie) thou sluggish beast,  
 That here liest senseles, like the corpse deceast,  
 The whilst thy kingdome from thy head is rent,  
 And thy throne royall with dishonour blent : 1330  
 Arise, and doo thy selfe redeeme from shame,  
 And be aveng'd on those that breed thy blame."  
 Thereat enraged, soone he gan upstart,  
 Grinding his teeth, and grating his great hart ;  
 And, rouzing up himselfe, for his rough hide 1335  
 He gan to reach ; but no where it espide :  
 Therewith he gan full terribly to rore,  
 And chafte at that indignitie right sore.  
 But when his Crowne and scepter both he wanted,  
 Lord ! how he fum'd, and sweld, and rag'd, and 1340  
 panted ;  
 And threatned death, and thousand deadly dolours,  
 To them that had pur'loyn'd his Princely honours.  
 With that in hast, disroabed as he was,  
 He toward his owne Pallace forth did pas ;  
 And all the way he roared as he went, 1345  
 That all the Forrest with astonishment  
 Thereof did tremble, and the beasts therein  
 Fled fast away from that so dreadful din.  
 At last he came unto his mansion,  
 Where all the gates he found fast lockt anon, 1350  
 And manie warders round about them stood :  
 With that he roar'd alowd, as he were wood,  
 That all the Pallace quaked at the sound,  
 As if it quite were riven from the ground,  
 And all within were dead and hartles left ; 1355

And th' Ape himselfe, as one whose wits were reft  
 Fled here and there, and evoorie corner sought,  
 To hide himselfe from his owne feared thought.  
 But the false Foxe when he the Lion heard,  
 Fled closely forth, streightway of death afear'd, 1360  
 And to the Lion came, full lowly creeping,  
 With fained face, and watrie eyne halfe weeping,  
 T' excuse his former treason and abusion.  
 And turning all unto the Apes confusion :  
 Nath'les the Royall Beast forbore beleaving, 1365  
 But had him stay at ease till further preeving.  
 Then when he saw no entrance to him granted,  
 Roaring yet lowder that all harts it daunted,  
 Upon those gates with force he fiercely flew,  
 And, rending them in pieces, felly slewe 1370  
 Those warders strange, and all that els he met.  
 But th' Ape still flying he no where might get :  
 From rowme to rowme, from beame to beame he fled  
 All breathles, and for feare now almost ded :  
 Yet him at last the Lyon spyde, and caught, 1375  
 And forth with shame unto his iudgement brought.  
 Then all the beasts he cans'd assembled bee,  
 To heare their doome, and sad ensamble see :  
 The Foxe, first Anthor of that treacherie,  
 He did uncase, and then away let fle. 1380  
 But th' Apes long taile (which then he had) he  
 Cut off, and both eares pared of their hight ; [quight  
 Since which, all Apes but halfe their eares have left,  
 And of their tailles are utterlie bereft.  
 So Mother Hubbard her discourse did end : 1385  
 Which pardon me, if I amisse have pend ;  
 For weake was my remembrance it to hold,  
 And bad her tongue that it so bluntly tolde.

THE RUINES OF ROME.

BY BELLAY.

1591.

I.

YE heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie  
 Under deep ruines, with huge walls opprest,  
 But not your praise, the which shall never die  
 Through your faire verses, ne in ashes rest ;  
 If so be shrilling voyce of wight alive  
 May reach from hence to depth of darkest hell,  
 Then let those deep abysses open rive,  
 That ye may understand my shrieking yell !  
 Thrice having scene under the heavens veale  
 Your toombs devoted compasse over all,  
 Thrice unto you with lowd voyce I appeale,  
 And for your antique furie here doo call,  
 The whiles that I with sacred horror sing  
 Your glorie, fairest of all earthly thing !

II.

Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise,  
 And sharped steeple high shot up in ayre ;  
 Greece will the olde Ephesian buildings blaze ;  
 And Nylus nurslings their Pyramides faire ;

The same yet vaunting Greece will tell the storne  
 Of Ioves great Image in Olympus placed ;  
 Mansolus worke will be the Carians glorie ;  
 And Crete will boast the Labyrinth, now raced ;  
 The antique Rhodian will likewise set forth  
 The great Colosse, erect to Memorie ;  
 And what els in the world is of like worth,  
 Some greater learned wit will magnifie.

But I will sing above all monuments  
 Seven Romane Hills, the worlds Seven Wonder  
 ments.

III.

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome here  
 seekest,  
 And nought of Rome in Rome perceivst at all,  
 These same olde walls, olde arches, which thou  
 seeest,  
 Olde palaces, is that which Rome men call.  
 Beholde what wreake, what ruine, and what wast,  
 And how that she, which with her mightie powre

Ver. 1366. — preeving.] *Prooving*, i. e. as it should  
 turn out upon trial. TODD.

Ver. 1330. — blent:] *Blemished, disgraced.* TODD.

Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd herselfe at last ;  
The pray of Time, which all things doth de-  
vowre !

Rome now of Rome is th' onely funerall,  
And onely Rome of Rome hath victorie ;  
Ne ought save Tyber hastning to his fall  
Remaines of all : O worlds inconstancie !

That which is firme doth flit and fall away,  
And that is flitting doth abide and stay.

## iv.

She, whose high top above the starres did sore,  
One foote on Thetis, th' other on the Morning,  
One hand on Scythia, th' other on the More  
Both heaven and earth in roundnesse compassing ;  
Love fearing, least if she should greater growe,  
The Giants old should once againe uprise,  
Her whelm'd with hills, these Seven Hills, which  
be nowe

Tombs of her greatnes which did threate the skies :  
Upon her head he heapt Mount Saturnal,  
Upon her bellie th' antique Palatine,  
Upon her stomacke laid Mount Quirinal,  
On her left hand the noysome Esquiline,  
And Cælian on the right ; but both her feete  
Mount Viminal and Aventine doo moete.

## v.

Who lists to see, what ever nature, arte,  
And heaven, could doo ; O Rome, thee let him see,  
In case thy greatnes he can gesse in harte,  
By that which but the picture is of thee !  
Rome is no more : but, if the shade of Rome  
May of the bodie yeeld a seeming sight,  
It's like a corse drawne forth out of the tombe  
By magicke skill out of eternall night :  
The corpes of Rome in ashes is entomb'd,  
And her great spirite, rejoynd to the spirite  
Of this great masse, is in the same enwomb'd ;  
But her brave writings, which her famous merite  
In sight of Time out of the dust doth reare,  
Doo make her Idole through the world appeare.

## vi.

Such as the Berecynthia Goddess bright,  
In her swifte charret with high turrets crownde,  
Proud that so manie gods she brought to light ;  
Such was this Citie in her good daies fownd :  
This Citie, more than that great Phrygian mother  
Renowm'd for fruite of famous progenie,  
Whose greatnes by the greatnes of none other,  
But by her selfe, her equall match could see :  
Rome onely might to Rome compar'd bee,  
And onely Rome could make great Rome to  
tremble :

So did the gods by heavenly doome decree,  
That other earthlie power should not resemble  
Her that did matche the whole earths puissaunce,  
And did her courage to the heavens advance.

## vii.

Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights,  
Which onely doo the name of Rome retaine,  
Olde monuments, which of so famous sprights  
The honour yet in ashes doo maintaine ;  
Triumphant arcks, spyres, neighbours to the skie ;  
That you to see doth th' heaven it selfe appall ;  
Alas, by little ye to nothing flie,  
The peoples fable, and the spoyle of all !  
And though your frames do for a time make warre

Gainst Time, yet Time in time shall ruinate  
Your workes and names, and your last reliques  
marre.

My sad desires, rest therefore moderate !

For if that Time make ende of things so sure,  
It als will end the paine which I endure.

## viii.

Through armes and vassals Rome the world sub-  
du'd,

That one would weene that one sole Cities strength  
Both land and sea in roundnes had survew'd,  
To be the measure of her bredth and length :  
This peoples vertue yet so fruitfull was  
Of vertuous nephewes, that posteritie,  
Striving in power their grandfathers to passe,  
The lowest earth ioin'd to the heaven lie ;  
To th' end that, having all parts in their power,  
Nought from the Romane Empire might be quight ;  
And that though Time doth Commonwealthis  
devowre,

Yet no time should so low embase their height,  
That her head earth'd in her foundations deep  
Should not her name and endles honour keep.

## ix.

Ye cruell starres, and eke ye gods unkinde,  
Heaven envious, and bitter stepdame Nature !  
Be it by fortune, or by course of kinde,  
That ye doo weld th' affaires of earthlie creature ;  
Why have your hands long sithence travailed  
To frame this world, that doth endure so long ?  
Or why were not these Romane palaces  
Made of some matter no lesse firme and strong ?  
I say not, as the common voyce doth say,  
That all things which beneath the Moone have  
Are temporal, and subject to decay : [being  
But I say rather, though not all agreeing  
With some that weene the contrarie in thought,  
That all this Whole shall one day come to nought.

## x.

As that brave sonne of Aeson, which by charmes  
Atcheiv'd the Golden Fleece in Colchid land,  
Out of the earth engendred men of armes  
Of dragons teeth, sowne in the sacred sand ;  
So this brave Towne, that in her youthlie daies  
An hydra was of warriours glorious,  
Did fill with her renowned nurslings praise  
The fire sunnes both one and other hous :  
But they at last, there being then not living  
An Hercules so ranke seed to repress,  
Emongst themselves with cruell furie striving,  
Mow'd downe themselves with slaughter merci-  
lesse ;

Renewing in themselves that rage unkinde,  
Which whilom did those earthborn brethren  
blinde.

## xi.

Mars, shaming to have given so great head  
To his off-spring, that mortall puissaunce,  
Puft up with pride of Romane hardie-head,  
Seem'd above heavens powre it selfe to advance ;  
Cooling againe his former kindled heate,  
With which he had those Romane spirits filld,  
Did blowe new fire, and with enflamed breath,

viii. 6. — nephewes,] *Descendants* Lat. *nepotes*  
T. WARREN.

Into the Gothicke colde, hot rage instil'd :  
Then gan that Nation, th' earths new Giant brood,  
To dart abroad the thunderbolts of warre,  
And, beating downe these walls with furious mood  
Into her mothers bosome, all did marre ;  
To th' end that none, all were it love his sire,  
Should boast himselfe of the Romane Empire

xii.

Like as whilome the children of the Earth  
Heapt hils on hils to scale the starrie skie,  
And fight against the gods of heavenly berth,  
Whiles love at them his thunderbolts let flie ;  
All suddenly with lightning overthrowne,  
The furious squadrons downe to ground did fall,  
That th' Earth under her childrens weight did  
grone,  
And th' Heavens in glorie triumpht over all :  
So did that haughtie front, which heaped was  
On these Seven Romane Hills, it selfe upreare  
Over the world, and lift her loftie face  
Against the heaven, that gan her force to feare.  
But now these scorned fields bemoane her fall,  
And gods secure feare not her force at all.

xiii.

Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring,  
Nor the deep wounds of victours raging blade,  
Nor ruthlesse spoyle of souldiers blood-desiring,  
The which so oft thee, Rome, their conquest made ;  
Ne stroke on stroke of fortune variable,  
Ne rust of age hating continuance,  
Nor wrath of gods, nor spight of men unstable,  
Nor thou oppo'd against thine owne puissance ;  
Nor th' horrible uprone of windes high blowing,  
Nor swelling streames of that god snake-paced,  
Which hath so often with his overflowing  
Thee drenched, have thy pride so much abaced ;  
But that this nothing, which they have thee left,  
Makes the world wonder what they from thee  
reft.

xiv.

As men in Summer feares passe the foord,  
Which is in Winter lord of all the plaine,  
And with his tumbling streames doth beare aboard  
The ploughmans hope and shepheards labour  
vaine :  
And as the coward beasts use to despise  
The noble Lion after his lives end,  
Whetting their teeth, and with vaine foolhardise  
Daring the foe that cannot him defend :  
And as at Troy most dastards of the Greekes  
Did brave about the corpes of Hector colde :  
So those, which whilome wont with pallid cheekes  
The Romane triumphs glorie to behold,  
Now on these ashie tombes shew holdnesse  
vaine,  
And, conquer'd, dare the Conquerour disdaine.

xv.

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoasts,  
Which, ioying in the brightnes of your day, [boasts  
Brought forth those signes of your presumptuous  
Which now their dusty reliques do bewray ;  
Tell me, ye spirits ! (sith the darksome river  
Of Styx, not passable to soules returning,  
Enclosing you in thrice three wards for ever,  
Do not restraine your images still mourning,)

Tell me then, (for perhaps some one of you  
Yet here above him secretly doth hide,)  
Doo ye not feele your torments to accrewe,  
When ye sometimes behold the ruin'd pride [hands,  
Of these old Romane works, built with your  
Now to become nought els but heaped sands ?

xvi.

Like as ye see the wrathfull sea from farre  
In a great mountaine heap't with hideous noyse,  
Eftsoones of thousand billowes shoudred narre,  
Against a rocke to breake with dreadfull poyse :  
Like as ye see fell Boreas with sharpe blast  
Tossing huge tempests through the troubled skie,  
Eftsoones having his wide wings spent in wast,  
To stop his wearie carriere suddenly :  
And as ye see huge flames spred diverslie,  
Gathered in one up to the heavens to spyre,  
Eftsoones consum'd to fall downe feebily :  
So whilom did this Monarchie aspyre  
As waves, as winde, as fire, spred over all,  
Till it by fatall doome adowne did fall.

xvii.

So long as Ioves great bird did make his flight,  
Bearing the fire with which heaven doth us fray,  
Heaven had not feare of that presumptuous might,  
With which the Giaunts did the gods assay.  
But all so soone, as scorching sunne had brent  
His wings which wont the earth to overspredd,  
The Earth out of her massie wombe forth sent  
That antique horror, which made heaven adredd.  
Then was the Germane Raven in disguise  
That Romane Eagle seeme to cleave asunder,  
And towards heaven freshly to arise  
Out of these mountaines, now consum'd to poulder ;  
In which the foule, that serves to beare the  
lightning,  
Is now no more seen flying, nor alighting.

xviii.

These heapes of stones, these old wals, which ye see,  
Were first enclosures but of salvage soyle ;  
And these brave pallaces, which maystred bee  
Of Time, were shephcards cottages somewhile.  
Then tooke the shepheards kingly ornament [steele :  
And the stout hynde arm'd his right hand with  
Eftsoones their rule of yearely Presidents  
Grew great, and sixe months greater a great deele ;  
Which, made perpetuall, rose to so great might,  
That thence th' Imperiall Eagle rooting tooke,  
Till th' heaven it selfe, opposing gainst her might,  
Her power to Peters successor betooke ;  
Who, shepheardlike, (as fates the same fore-  
seeing,)  
Doth shew that all things turne to their first  
being.

xix.

All that is perfect, which th' heaven beautifies ;  
All that's imperfect, borne belowe the Moone ;  
All that doth feede our spirits and our eies ;  
And all that doth consume our pleasures soone ;  
All the mishap, the which our daies outweares,  
All the good hap of th' oldest times afore ;  
Rome, in the time of her great ancestors,  
Like a Pandora, locked long in store.  
But Destinie this huge Chaos turmoyning,  
In which all good and evil was enclosed,

xiv. 3. — aboard] From the bank. Fr. bord. Todd.

xvi. 3. — narre,] Nearer. Todd.

Their heavenly vertues from these woes assoyling,  
Caried to heaven, from sinfull bondage losed :

But their great sinnes, the causers of their  
paine,

Under these antique ruines yet remaine.

## xx.

No otherwise than raynie cloud, first fed  
With earthy vapours gathered in the ayre,  
Eftsoones in compas arch't, to steepe his hed,  
Doth plunge himselfe in Tethys bosome faire ;  
Aud, mounting up againe from whence he came,  
With his great bellie spreads the dimmed world,  
Till at the last, dissolving his moist frame,  
In raine, or suowe, or haile, he forth is hold ;  
This Citie, which was first but shepherds shade,  
Uprising by degrees, grewe to such height,  
That Queene of land and sea her selfe she made.  
At last, not able to beare so great weight, [vade ;  
Her power, disperst, through all the world did  
To shew that all in th' end to nought shall fade.

## xxi.

The same, which Pyrrhus and the puissance  
Of Afrike could not tame, that same brave Citie,  
Which, with stout courage arm'd against mis-  
Sustein'd the shocke of common emmitie ; [chance,  
Long as her ship, tost with so manie freakes,  
Had all the world in armes against her bent,  
Was never seene, that anie fortunes wreakes  
Could breake her course begun with brave intent.  
But, when the obiect of her vertue failed,  
Her power it selfe against it selfe did arme ;  
As he that having long in tempest sailed,  
Faine would arrive, but cannot for the storme,  
If too great winde against the port him drive,  
Doth in the port it selfe his vessell rive.

## xxii.

When that brave honour of the Latine name,  
Which mear'd her rule with Africa, and Byze,  
With Thames inhabitants of noble fame,  
And they which see the dawning day arize ;  
Her nourshings did with mutinous uprore  
Harten against her selfe, her conquer'd spoile,  
Which she had wonne from all the world afore,  
Of all the world was spoyl'd within a while :  
So, when the compast course of the niverse  
In sixe and thirtie thousand yeares is ronne,  
The bands of th' elements shall backe reverse  
To their first discord, and be quite undonne :  
The seedes, of which all things at first were bred,  
Shall in great Chaos wombe againe be hid.

## xxiii.

O warie wisdom of the man, that would  
That Carthage towres from spoile should be for-  
borne,  
To th' end that his victorious people should  
With cancring laisure not be overworne !  
He well foresaw, how that the Romane courage,  
Impatient of pleasures faint desires,  
Through idlenes would turne to civill rage,  
And be her selfe the matter of her fires.  
For, in a people giver all to ease,  
Ambition is engendred easily ;  
As, in a vicious bodie, grosse disease

xx. 13. — vade,] *Vanish.* Lat. *vado.* TODD.  
xxii. 2. — mear'd] *Divided.* TODD.

Soone growes through humours superfluitie.  
That came to passe, when, swolne with plenties  
pride,  
Nor prince, nor peere, nor kin, they would abide.

## xxiv.

If the blinde Furie, which warres breedeth oft,  
Wonts not t' enrage the hearts of equal beasts,  
Whether they fare on foote, or fie aloft,  
Or armed be with claws, or scalie creasts ;  
What fell Erynnis, with hot burning tongs,  
Did grype your hearts with uoyesome rage imbew'd,  
That, each to other working cruell wrougs,  
Your blades in your owne bowels you embrew'd ?  
Was this (ye Romanes) your hard destinie ?  
Or some old sinne, whose unappased guilt  
Powr'd vengeance forth on you eternallie ?  
Or brothers blood, the which at first was spilt  
Upon your walls, that God might not endure  
Upon the same to set foundation sure ?

## xxv.

O that I had the Thracian Poets harpe,  
For to awake out of th' infernall shade  
Those antique Cæsars, sleeping long in darke,  
The which this ancient Citie whilome made !  
Or that I had Amphions instrument,  
To quicken, with his vitall notes accord,  
The stonie ioynts of these old walls now rent,  
By which th' Ausonian light might be restor'd !  
Or that at least I could, with pencill fine,  
Fashion the pourtraicts of these palacis,  
By paterne of great Virgils spirit divine !  
I would assay with that which in me is,  
To builde, with levell of my loftie style,  
That which no hands can evermore comyle.

## xxvi.

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure,  
Him needeth not to seeke for usage right  
Of line, or lead, or rule, or squire, to measure  
Her length, her breadth, her deepnes, or her height ;  
But him behooves to vew in compasse round  
All that the Ocean graspes in his long armes ;  
Be it where the yerely starre doth scorch the  
ground,  
Or where colde Boreas blowes his bitter stormes.  
Rome was th' whole world, and al the world was  
Rome ;  
And if things nam'd their names doo equalize,  
When land and sea ye name, then name ye Rome ;  
Aud, naming Rome, ye land and sea comprize :  
For th' ancient plot of Rome, displayed plaine,  
The map of all the wide world doth containe.

## xxvii.

Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold  
The antique pride, which menaced the skie,  
These haughtie heapes, these palaces of olde,  
These wals, these arcks, these baths, these temples  
ludge, by these ample Ruines vew, the rest [lie  
The which iniurious Time hath quite outworne,  
Since of all workmen helde in reckning best ;  
Yet these olde fragments are for paternes borne :  
Then also marke, how Rome, from day to day,  
Repayring her decayed fashion,  
Renewes herselfe with buildings rich and gay ;  
That one would iudge, that the Romaine Dæmon

xxvii. 12. — the Romaine Dæmon] *Demon* is Pla-  
tonick. T. WARTON.



Doth yet himselfe with fatall hand enforce,  
 Againe on foote to reare her pouldred corse.

xxviii.

He that hath seene a great oke drie and dead  
 Yet clad with reliques of some trophées olde,  
 Lifting her yong aged hoarie head,  
 Whose foote in ground hath left but feeble holde,  
 But halfe disbowel'd lies above the ground,  
 Shewing her wreathed rootes, and naked armes,  
 And on her trunke all rotten and unsound  
 Onely supports herselfe for meate of wormes ;  
 And, though she owe her fall to the first winde,  
 Yet of the devout people is ador'd,  
 And, manie yong plants spring out of her riude ;  
 Who such an oke hath seene, let him record  
 That such this Cities honour was of yore,  
 And mongst all Cities flourish'd much more.

xxix.

All that which Aegypt whilome did devise ;  
 All that which Greece their temples to embrace,  
 After th' Ionicke, Atticke, Doricke guise ;  
 Or Corinth skil'd in curious workes to grave ;  
 All that Lysippus practike arte could forme ;  
 Apelles wit ; or Phidias his skill ;  
 Was wont this auncient Citie to adorne,  
 And the heaven it selfe with her wide wonders fill,  
 All that which Athens ever brought forth wise ;  
 All that which Afrike ever brought forth strange ;  
 All that which Asie ever had of prise ;  
 Was here to see. O marvelous great change !  
 Rome, living, was the worlds sole ornament ;  
 And, dead, is now the worlds sole moniment.

xxx.

Like as the seeded field greene grasse first shoves,  
 Then from greene grasse into a stalke doth spring,  
 And from a stalke into an eare forth-growes,  
 Which eare the frutefull graine doth shortly bring ;  
 And as in season due the husband mowes  
 The waving lockes of those faire yeallow heares,  
 Which bound in sheaves, and layd in comely  
 rowes,  
 Upon the naked fields in stalkes he reares .  
 So grew the Romane Empire by degree,  
 Till that Barbarian hands it quite did spill,  
 And left of it but these olde markes to see,  
 Of which all passers by doo somewhat pill :  
 As they, which gleane, the reliques use to gather,  
 Which th' husbandman behind him chaunst to  
 scater.

xxxi.

That same is now nought but a champion wide,  
 Where all this worlds pride once was situate.  
 No blame to thee, whosoever dost abide  
 By Nyle, or Gange, or Tygre, or Euphrate ;

xxvii. 14. — pouldred] *Reduced to dust.* Todd.

Ne Afrike thereof guiltie is, nor Spaine,  
 Nor the bolde people by the Thamis brincks,  
 Nor the brave warlike brood of Alemaine,  
 Nor the borne souldier which Rhine running drinks:  
 Thou onely cause, O Civill Furie, art !  
 Which, sowing in th' Aemathian fields thy spight,  
 Didst arme thy hand against thy proper hart ;  
 To th' end that when thou wast in greatest hight  
 To greatnes growne, through long prosperitie,  
 Thou then adowne might'st fall more horriblie.

xxxii.

Hope ye, my Verses, that posteritie  
 Of age ensuing shall you ever read ?  
 Hope ye, that ever immortalitie  
 So meane Harpes worke may chalenge for her  
 meed ?

If under heaven anie endurance were,  
 These moniments, which not in paper writ,  
 But in porphyre and marble doo appeare,  
 Might well have hop'd to have obtained it.  
 Nath'les my Lute, whom Phœbus deign'd to give,  
 Cease not to sound these olde antiquities :  
 For if that Time doo let thy glorie live,  
 Well maist thou boast, how ever base thou bee,  
 That thou art first, which of thy Nation song  
 Th' olde honour of the people gowned long.

L'ENVOY.

Bellay, first garland of free Poësie  
 That France brought forth, though fruitfull of  
 brave wits,  
 Well worthie thou of immortalitie,  
 That long hast traveld, by thy learned writs,  
 Olde Rome out of her ashes to revive,  
 And give a second life to dead decayes !  
 Needes must he all eternitie survive,  
 That can to other give eternall dayes :  
 Thy dayes therefore are endles, and thy prayse  
 Excelling all, that ever went before.  
 And, after thee, gins Bartas hie to rayse  
 His heavenly Muse, th' Almightye to adore.  
 Live, happie spirits, th' honour of your name,  
 And fill the world with never dying fame !

*L'Envoy, 1. Bellay, &c.]* Joachim Bellay obtained the appellation of the French Ovid. He was also called *Pater elegantiarum, Pater omnium leporum.* He died in 1560. Todd.

*L'Envoy, 4. — travel'd.]* *Labour'd, endeavoured Ital. travagliare.* Todd.

*L'Envoy, 11. Bartas]* William de Salluste du Bartas, a Frenchman of high rank, was highly celebrated, in his own time, on account of his elaborate poem on the *Creation.* Todd.

## VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE.

1591.

i.

ONE day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe,  
My spirit, shaking off her earthly prison,  
Began to enter into meditation deepe  
Of things exceeding reach of common reason ;  
Such as this age, in which all good is geason,  
And all that humble is, and meane debaced,  
Hath brought forth in her last declining season,  
Griefe of good mindes, to see goodness disgraced !  
On which when as my thought was throghly placed,  
Unto my eyes strange shoves presented were,  
Picturing that, which I in minde embraced,  
That yet those sights empassion me full nere.

Such as they were (faire Ladie !) take in worth,  
That when time serves may bring things better  
forth.

ii.

In summers day, when Phoebus fairly shone,  
I saw a Bull as white as driven snowe,  
With gilden hornes embowed like the moone,  
In a fresh flowring meadow lying lowe :  
Up to his eares the verdant grasse did growe,  
And the gay floures did offer to be eateu ;  
But he with fatnes so did overflowe,  
That he all wallowed in the weedes downe beaten,  
Ne car'd with them his daintie lips to sweeten :  
Till that a Brize, a scorned little creature,  
Through his faire hide his angrie sting did threaten,  
And vext so sore, that all his goodly feature  
And all his plenteous pasture nought him pleased :  
So by the small the great is oft diseased.

iii.

Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile,  
Upon a sunnie banke outstretched lay,  
In monstrous length, a mightie Crocodile,  
That, cram'd with guiltles blood and greedie pray  
Of wretched people travailing that way,  
Thought all things lesse than his disdainfull pride.  
I saw a little Bird, call'd Tedula,  
The least of thousands which on earth abide,  
That forst this hideous beast to open wide  
The greisly gates of his devouring hell,  
And let him feede, as Nature did provide,  
Upon his iawes, that with blacke venime swell.  
Why then should greatest things the least disdain,  
Sith that so small so mightie can constraine ?

iv.

The kingly bird, that beares Loves thunder-clap,  
One day did scorne the simple Scarabee,  
Proud of his highest service, and good hap,

i. 5. ——— geason,] *Rare.* Todd.

ii. 10. ——— a Brize,] *A gad or horse-fly.* Todd.

iii. 7. ——— *Tedula,*] I suppose he means the little bird  
*Trochila*; which, Gesner informs us, is a small sea-bird  
that picks her meat out of the teeth of the crocodile,  
which, being thus eased, never molests her. Todd.

iv. 2. ——— Scarabee,] *Beetle.* Lat. *scarabeus.* Todd.

That made all other foules his thralls to bee :  
The silly Flie, that no redresse did see,  
Spide where the Eagle built his trowing nest,  
And, kindling fire within the hollow tree,  
Burnt up his yong ones, and himselfe distrest ;  
Ne suffred him in anie place to rest,  
But drove in Loves owne lap his eggs to lay ;  
Where gathering also filth him to infest,  
Forst with the filth his eggs to fling away :  
For which when as the foule was wroth, said Iove,  
“ Lo ! how the least the greatest may reprove.”

v.

Toward the sea turning my troubled eye,  
I saw the fish (if fish I may it cleepe)  
That makes the sea before his face to flye,  
And with his flaggie finnes doth seeme to sweepe  
The fomie waves out of the dreadfull deep,  
The huge Leviathan, dame Natures wonder,  
Making his sport, that manie makes to weep :  
A Sword-fish small him from the rest did sunder,  
That, in his throat him pricking softly under,  
His wide abyse him forced forth to spewe,  
That all the sea did roare like heavens thunder,  
And all the waves were stain'd with filthie hewe.  
Hereby I learned have not to despise  
Whatever thing seemes small in common eyes.

vi.

An hideous Dragon, dreadfull to behold,  
Whose backe was arm'd against the dint of speare  
With shields of brasse that shone like burnisht golde,  
And forked sting that death in it did beare,  
Strove with a Spider his unequal peare ;  
And bad defiance to his enemye.  
The subtile vermin, creeping closely nere,  
Did in his drinke shed poyson privilie ;  
Which, through his entrailles spredding diversly,  
Made him to swell, that nigh his howells brust,  
And him enforst to yeeld the victorie,  
That did so much in his owne greatnesse trust.  
O, how great vaineesse is it then to scorne  
The weake, that hath the strong so oft forlorne !

vii.

High on a hill a goodly Cedar grewe,  
Of wondrous length, and streight proportion,  
That farre abroad her daintie odour's threwe ;  
Mongst all the daughters of proud Libaoun,  
Her match in beautie was not anie one.  
Shortly within her inmost pith there bred  
A little wicked worme, perceiv'd of none,  
That on her sap and vitall moisture fed :  
Thenceforth her garland so much honoured  
Began to die, (O great ruth for the same !)  
And her faire lockes fell from her loftie head,  
That shortly balde and bared she became.  
I, which this sight beheld, was much dismayed,  
To see so goodly thing so soone decayed.

vii.

Soone after this I saw an Elephant,  
Adorn'd with bells and bosses gorgeouslie,  
That on his backe did beare (as batteilant)  
A gilden towre, which shone exceedinglie ;  
That he himselfe through foolish vanitie,  
Both for his rich attire, and goodly forme,  
Was puffed up with passing surquedrie,  
And shortly gan all other beasts to scorne.  
Till that a little Ant, a silly worme,  
Into his nostrils creeping, so him pained,  
That, casting downe his towres, he did deforme  
Both borrowed pride, and native beautie stained.  
Let therefore nought, that great is, therein glorie,  
Sith so small thing his happines may varie.

ix.

Looking far fourth into the ocean wide,  
A goodly ship with banners bravely dight,  
And flag in lier top-gallant, I espide  
Through the maine sea making her merry flight :  
Faire blew the winde into her bosome right ;  
And th' heavens looked lovely all the while ;  
That she did seeme to daunce, as in delight,  
And at her owne felicitie did smile.  
All sodainely there clove unto her keele  
A little fish, that men call Remora,  
Which stopt her course, and held her by the heele,  
That winde nor tide could move her thence away.  
Straunge thing, me seemeth, that so small a thing  
Should able be so great an one to wring.

x.

A mighty Lyon, lord of all the wood,  
Having his hunger thoroughly satisfide  
With pray of beasts and spoyle of living blood,  
Safe in his dreadles den him thought to hide :  
His sternesse was his prayse, his strength his pride,  
And all his glory in his cruell claws.  
I saw a Wasp, that fiercely him defide,

And bad him battaile even to his iawes ;  
Sore he him stong, that it the blood forth draws,  
And his proude heart is fild with fretting ire :  
In vaine he threats his teeth, his tayle, his pawes,  
And from his bloodie eyes doth sparkle fire ;  
That dead himselfe he wisheth for despight.  
So weakest may anoy the most of might !

xi.

What time the Romaine Empire bore the raine  
Of all the world, and florist most in might,  
The nations gan their soveraigntie disdaine,  
And cast to quitt them from their bondage night :  
So, when all shrouded were in silent night,  
The Galles were, by corrupting of a mayde,  
Possess nigh of the Capitol through slight,  
Had not a Goose the treachery bewrayde :  
If then a Goose great Rome from ruine stayde,  
And Iove himselfe, the patron of the place,  
Preserv'd from being to his foes betrayde ;  
Why do vaine men mean things so much deface,  
And in their might repose their most assurance,  
Sith nought on earth can challenge long endurance !

xii.

When these sad sights were overpast and gone,  
My spright was greatly moved in her rest,  
With inward ruth and deare affection,  
To see so great things by so small distrest :  
Thenceforth I gan in my engrieved brest  
To scorne all difference of great and small,  
Sith that the greatest often are oppress,  
And unawares doe into daunger fall.  
And ye, that read these Ruines Tragical,  
Learne, by their losse, to love the low degree ;  
And, if that Fortune chauce you up to call  
To Honours seat, forget not what you be :  
For he, that of himselfe is most secure,  
Shall finde his state most fickle and unsure.

## VISIONS OF BELLAY.

1569.

i.

It was the time when rest, the gift of Gods,  
Sweetely sliding into the eyes of men,  
Doth drowne in the forgetfulness of slepe  
The carefull trauailes of the painefull day :  
Then did a ghost appeare before mine eyes,  
On that great riuers bank that runnes by Rome :  
And, calling me then by my propre name,  
He bade me vpwarde vnto heauen looke :  
He cride to me ; and, loe, (quod he) beholde  
What vnder this great Temple is containe ;  
Loe, all is nought but flying vanitie.  
So I, knowing the worldes vnstedfastnesse,  
Sith onely God surmountes the force of tyme,  
In God alone do stay my confidence.

ii.

On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie  
I sawe, an hundred pillers eke about,

All of fine diamant decking the front,  
And fashond were they all in Dorike wise.  
Of bricke, ne yet of marble was the wall,  
But shining christall, which from top to base  
Out of deepe vaute threw forth a thousand rayes  
Vpon an hundred steps of purest golde :  
Golde was the parget ; and the sielyng eke  
Did shine all scaly with fine golden plates.  
The floore was Iaspis, and of Emeraude.  
O worldes vainenesse ! A sodein earthquake loe,  
Shaking the hill euen from the bottome deepe,  
Threw downe this building to the lowest stone.

iii.

Then did appeare to me a sharped spire  
Of diamant, ten feete eche way in square,  
Iustly proportionde vp vnto his height,  
So hie as mought an archer reache with sight.  
Vpon the top thereof was set a pot,

Made of the metall that we honour most.  
 And in this golden vessell couched were  
 The ashes of a mightie Emperour.  
 Vpon foure corners of the base there lay,  
 To beare the frame, foure Great Lions of golde :  
 A worthie tombe for such a worthie corps.  
 Alas, nought in this world but griefe endures.  
 A sudden tempest from the heaven, I saw,  
 With flushe stroke downe this noble monument.

## iv.

I saw raise vp on pillars of Iuorie,  
 Whereof the bases were of richest golde,  
 The chapters Alabaster, Christall frises,  
 The double front of a triumphall arke.  
 On eche side portraide was a Victorie,  
 With golden wings, in habite of a nymph,  
 And set on hie vpon triumphing chaire ;  
 The auncient glorie of the Romane lordes.  
 The worke did shew it selfe not wrought by man,  
 But rather made by his owne skilfull hands  
 That forgeth thunder dartes for Ioue his sire.  
 Let me no more see faire thing vnder heauen,  
 Sith I haue seene so faire a thing as this,  
 With sodaine falling broken all to dust.

## v.

Then I behelde the faire Dodonian tree  
 Vpon seuen hilles thurw forth his gladsome shade,  
 And conquerers bedecked with his leaues,  
 Along the bankes of the Italian streame.  
 There many auncient trophes were erect,  
 Many a spoile, and many goodly signes  
 To shewe the greatnesse of the stately race  
 That erst descended from the Troian bloud.  
 Rausht I was to see so rare a thing,  
 When barbarous villaines, in disordred heape,  
 Outraged the honour of these noble bours :  
 I heard the tronke to grone vnder the wedge,  
 And, since, I saw the roote in hie disdaine  
 Sende forth again a twinne of forked trees.

## vi.

I saw the birde, that dares beholde the sunne,  
 With feeble flight venture to mount to heauen,  
 By more and more she gan to trust hir wings,  
 Still following th' example of hir damme :  
 I saw hir rise, and with a larger flight  
 Surmount the toppes euen of the hiest hilles,  
 And pierce the cloudes, and with hir wings to reach  
 The place where is the temple of the gods ;  
 There was she lost, and sodenly I saw  
 Where tumbling through the aire in lompe of fire,  
 All flaming, downe she fell vpon the plaine.  
 I saw hir bodie turned all to dust,  
 And saw the foule, that shunnes the cherefull light,  
 Out of hir ashes as a worme arise.

## vii.

Then all astonne'd with this nightly ghost,  
 I saw an hideous body big and strong,  
 Long was his bearde, and side did hang his hair,  
 A grisly forehed and Saturnlike face.  
 Leaning against the belly of a pot,  
 He shed a water, whose outgushing streame  
 Ran flowing all along the creeke shoare,  
 Where once the Troyan Duke with Turnus fought.  
 And at his feete a bitch wolfe did giue sucke  
 To two yong babes. In his right hand he bare  
 The Tree of peace, in left the conquering Palme ;

His head was garnisht with the Laurel bow.  
 Theu sodenly the Palme and Oliue fell,  
 And faire greene Laurel withered up and dide.

## viii.

Hard by a riuers side a wailing Nimphe,  
 Folding hir armes with thousand sighs to heauē,  
 Did tune her plaint to falling riuers sound,  
 Renting hir faire visage and golden haire.  
 Where is (quod she) this whilome honored face ?  
 Where is thy glory and the auncient praise  
 Where all worldes hap was reposed,  
 When erst of gods and man I worshipt was ?  
 Alas, suffisde it not that ciuile bate  
 Made me the spoile and bootie of the world,  
 But this new Hydra, mete to be assailde  
 Euen by an hundred such as Hercules,  
 With seuen springing heds of monstrous crimes,  
 So many Neroes and Caligulaes  
 Must still bring forth to rule this croked shore.

## ix.

Vpon a hill I saw a kindled flame,  
 Mounting like waues with triple point to Heauen,  
 Which of incense of precious Ceder tree,  
 With balme-like odor did perfume the aire.  
 A bird all white, well feathered on her wings  
 Hereout did flie vp to the throne of gods,  
 And singing with most pleasant melodie  
 She climbed up to Heauen in the smoke.  
 Of this faire fire the faire dispersed rays  
 Threw forth abrode a thousand shining leames,  
 When sodain dropping of a golden shoure  
 Gan quench the glystering flame. O greuous change,  
 That, which erstwhile so pleasaunt scent did yeld,  
 Of sulphure now did breathe corrupted smel.

## x.

I saw a fresh spring rise out of a rocke,  
 Clere as christall against the sunny beames,  
 The bottome yellow like the shiming land,  
 That golden Pactol driues vpon the plaine.  
 It seemed that arte and nature striued to ioyne  
 There in one place all pleasures of the eye.  
 There was to heare a noise alluring slepe  
 Of many accordes more swete than Mermaids songs.  
 The seates and benches shone as iuorie,  
 An hundred Nymphes sate side by side about,  
 When from nie hilles a naked rout of Faunes  
 With hideous cry assembled on the place,  
 Which with their feete vnclene the water fouled,  
 Threw down the seats and droue the Nymphs to  
 flight.

## xi.

At length, euen at the time when Morpheus  
 Most truly doth appeare vnto our eyes,  
 Wearie to see th' inconstance of the heauens ;  
 I saw the great Typhæus sister come,  
 Hir head full brauely with a morian armed ;  
 In maistie she seemde to matche the gods.  
 And on the shore, harde by a violent streame,  
 She raise a trophée ouer all the worlde.  
 An hundred vanquish kings gronde at her feete,  
 Their armes in shameful wise boude at their backes.  
 While I was with so dreadfull sight afrayde,  
 I saw the heauens warre against her tho,  
 And seeing hir striken fall with clap of thunder,  
 With so great noyse I start in sodaine wonder.

## THE VISIONS OF BELLAY.

1531.

i.

It was the time, when Rest, soft sliding downe  
From heavens hight into mens heavy eyes,  
In the forgetfulness of sleepe doth drowne  
The carefull thoughts of mortall miseries ;  
Then did a Ghost before mine eyes appeare,  
On that great rivers bank, that runnes by Rome ;  
Which, calling me by name, bad me to reare  
My lookes to heaven whence all good gifts do come,  
And crying lowd, lo ! now beholde (quoth hee)  
What under this great temple placed is :  
Lo, all is nought but flying vanitee !  
So I, that know this worlds inconstancies,  
Sith onely God surmounts all times decay,  
In God alone my confidence do stay.

ii.

On high hills top I saw a stately frame,  
An hundred cubits high by iust assize,  
With hundredth pillours fronting faire the same,  
All wrought with diamond after Dorick wize :  
Nor brick nor marble was the wall in view,  
But shining christall, which from top to base  
Out of her womb a thousand rayons threw,  
One hundred steps of Afrike golde enchase :  
Golde was the parget ; and the seeling bright  
Did shine all scaly with great plates of golde ;  
The floore of iasp and emeraude was dight.  
O worlds vainesse ! Whiles thus I did behold,  
An earthquake shooke the hill from lowest seat,  
And overthrew this frame with ruine great.

iii.

Then did a sharped spyre of diamond bright,  
Ten feete each way in square, appeare to mee,  
Iustly proportion'd up unto his hight,  
So far as archer might his level see :  
The top thereof a pot did seeme to beare,  
Made of the mettall, which we most do honour ;  
And in this golden vessel couched weare  
The ashes of a mightie Emperour :  
Upon foure corners of the base were pight,  
To beare the frame, foure great Lyons of gold ;  
A worthy tombe for such a worthy wight.  
Alas this world doth nought but grievance hold !  
I saw a tempest from the heaven descend,  
Which this brave monument with flash did rend.

iv.

I saw raysde up on yvorie pillowes tall,  
Whose bases were of richest metallis warke,  
The chapters alablaster, the fryses christall,  
The double front of a triumphall arke :  
On each side purtraid was a Victorie,

Clad like a Nymph, that winges of silver weares,  
And in triumphant chayre was set on hie,  
The auncient glory of the Romaine Peares.  
No worke it seem'd of earthly craftsmans wit,  
But rather wrought by his owne industry,  
That thunder-dartes for Iove his syre doth fit.  
Let me no more see faire thing under sky,  
Sith that mine eyes have seene so faire a sight  
With sodain fall to dust consumed quight.

v.

Then was the faire Dodonian tree far seene,  
Upon seaven hills to spred his gladsome gleame,  
And conquerours bedecked with his greene,  
Along the bancks of the Ausonian streame :  
There many an auncient trophee was adrest,  
And many a spoyle, and many a goodly show,  
Which that brave races greatnes did attest,  
That whilome from the Troyan blood did flow.  
Ravisht I was so rare a thing to vew ;  
When lo ! a barbarous troupe of clownish fone  
The honour of these noble boughs down threw :  
Under the wedge I heard the tronck to grone ;  
And, since, I saw the roote in great disdain  
A twinne of forked trees send forth againe.

vi.

I saw a Wolfe under a rockie cave  
Nursing two whelpes ; I saw her litle ones  
In wanton dalliance the teate to crave, [noncs :  
While she her neck wreath'd from them for the  
I saw her ranuge abroad to seeke her food,  
And roming through the field with greedie rage  
T' embrew her teeth and claws with lukewarm  
blood  
Of the small heards, her thirst for to asswage.  
I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended  
Downe from the mountaines bordring Lombardie,  
That with an hundred speares her flank wide rended.  
I saw her on the plaine outstretched lie,  
Throwing out thousand throbs in her owne soyle ;  
Soone on a tree uphang'd I saw her spoyle.

vii.

I saw the Bird, that can the Sun endure,  
With feeble wings assay to mount on hight ;  
By more and more she gan her wings t' assure,  
Following th' ensample of her mothers sight :  
I saw her rise, and with a larger flight  
To pierce the cloudes, and with wide pinneons  
To measure the most haughtie mountaines hight,  
Untill she raught the gods owne mansions :

v. 10. — fone] *Foes.* TODD.

vi. 4. — for the noncs :] For the occasion. TODD.

vii. 8. — raught] *Reached*, the old and legitimate  
preter-perfect, as it should seem, of *reach* : as *taught* is of  
*teach*, &c. TODD.

ii. 7. — rayons] *Beams or rays.* Fr. *rayon.* TODD.

ii. 9. — parget:] *The varnish or plaster.* TODD.

ii. 11. — iasp] *Jasper stone.* Fr. *jasp.* TODD.

There was she lost ; when suddaine I behelde,  
Where, tumbling through the ayre in ferie fold,  
All flaming downe she on the plaine was felde,  
And soone her bodie turn'd to ashes colde.

I saw the foule, that doth the light despise,  
Out of her dust like to a worme arise.

## viii.

I saw a river swift, whose fomy hillowes  
Did wash the ground-work of an old great wall ;  
I saw it cover'd all with griessy shadowes,  
That with black horror did the ayre appall :  
Thereout a strange Beast with seven heads arose,  
That townes and castles under her brest did coure,  
And seem'd both milder beasts and fiercer foes  
Alike with equall ravine to devoure.

Much was I mazde, to see this monsters kinde  
In hundred formes to change his fearefull hew ;  
When as at length I saw the wrathfull winde,  
Which blows cold storms, burst out of Scithian  
mew,

That sperst these cloudes ; and, in so short as  
thought,

This dreadfull shape was vanished to nought.

## ix.

Then all astoined with this mighty ghoast,  
An hideous bodie big and strong I sawe,  
With side-long beard, and locks down hanging loast,  
Sterne face, and front full of Satúrnllike awe ;  
Who, leaning on the belly of a pot,  
Pourd fourth a water, whose out gushing flood  
Ran bathing all the creakie shore afloft,  
Whereon the Trojan prince spilt Turnus blood ;  
And at his feete a bitch wolfe suck did yeeld  
To two young babes : His left the Palme tree stout,  
His right hand did the peacefull Olive wield ;  
And head with Lawrell garnisht was about.

Sudden both Palme and Olive fell away,  
And faire greene Lawrell branch did quite decay.

## x.

Hard by a rivers side a Virgin faire,  
Folding her armes to heaven with thousand throbs,  
And outraging her cheekes and golden haire,  
To falling rivers sound thus tun'd her sobs.  
" Where is (quoth she) this whilom honoured face ?  
Where the great glorie and the aunceint praise,  
In which all worlds felicitie had place,  
When gods and men my honour up did raise ?  
Suffis'd it not that civill warres me made  
The whole worlds spoile, but that this Hydra new,  
Of hundred Hercules to be assaied,  
With seven heads, budding monstrous crimes anew,  
So many Neroes and Caligulaes  
Out of these crooked shores must dayly rayse ?"

## xi.

Upon an hill a bright flame I did see  
Waving aloft with triple point to skie,  
Which, like incense of precious Cedar tree,  
With balmie odours fil'd th' ayre farre and nie.  
A Bird all white, well feathered on each wing,  
Hereout up to the throne of gods did fie,  
And all the way most pleasant notes did sing,  
Whilst in the smoake she unto heaven did stie.  
Of this faire fire the scattered rayes forth threw  
On everie side a thousand shining beames :  
When sudden dropping of a silver dew [flames ;  
(O grievous chance!) gau quench those precious

That it, which earst so pleasant sent did yeld,  
Of nothing now but noyous sulphure smeld.

## xii.

I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle,  
As cleare as Christall gainst the sunnie beames,  
The bottome yellow, like the golden grayle  
That bright Pactolus washeth with his streames ;  
It seem'd that Art and Nature had assembled  
All pleasure there, for which mans hart could  
long ;

And there a noyse alluring sleepe soft trembled,  
Of manie accords more sweete than Mermaids  
The seates and benches shone as yvorie, [song :  
And hundred Nymphes sate side by side about ;  
When from nigh hills, with hideous outerie,  
A troupe of Satyres in the place did rout, [ray,  
Which with their villeine feete the streame did  
Threw down the seats, and drove the Nymphs  
away.

## xiii.

Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee,  
Which did to that sad Florentine appeare,  
Casting mine eyes farre off, I chaunst to see  
Upon the Latine Coast herselfe to reare :  
But suddenly arose a tempest great,  
Bearing close envie to these riches rare,  
Which gan assaile this ship with dreadfull threat,  
This ship, to which none other might compare :  
And finally the storme impetuous  
Sunke up these riches, second unto none,  
Within the gulfe of greedie Nereus.  
I saw both ship and mariners each one,  
And all that treasure drowned in the maine :  
But I the ship saw after raisd againe.

## xiv.

Long having deeply grash'd these Visions sad,  
I saw a Citie like unto that same,  
Which saw the messenger of tidings glad ;  
But that on sand was built the goody frame :  
It seem'd her top the firmament did rayse,  
And, no lesse rich than faire, right worthie sure  
(If ought here worthie) of immortall dayes,  
Or if ought under heaven might firme endure.  
Much wondred I to see so faire a wall :  
When from the Northerne coast a storme arose,  
Which, breathing furie from his inward gall  
On all which did against his course oppose,  
Into a clowde of dust sperst in the aire  
The weake foundations of this Citie faire.

## xv.

At length, even at the time, when Morpheus  
Most trulie doth unto our eyes appeare,  
Wearie to see the heavens still wavering thus,  
I saw Typhoeus sister comming neare ;  
Whose head, full bravely with a morion hidd,  
Did seeme to match the gods in maiestie.  
She, by a rivers bancke that swift downe slidd,  
Over all the world did raise a Trophee hie ;  
An hundred vanquisht Kings under her lay,  
With armes bound at their backs in shamefull wize ;  
Whilst I thus mazed was with great affray,  
I saw the heavens in warre against her rize :  
Then downe she stricken fell with clap of thonder,  
That with great noyse I wakte in sudden wonder.

xii. 3. — grayle] *Gravel*. TODD.

xv. 5. — morion] *Head-picce*. FR. *morion*. TODD.

# THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH,

FORMERLY TRANSLATED.

1591.

BEING one day at my window all alone,  
So manie strange things happened me to see,  
As much it grieveth me to thinke thereon.  
At my right hand a Hynde appear'd to mee,  
So faire as mote the greatest god delite ;  
Two eager dogs did her pursue in chace,  
Of which the one was blacke, the other white :  
With deadly force so in their cruell race  
They pincht the hamches of that gentle beast,  
That at the last, and in short time, I spide,  
Under a rocke, where she alas, opprest,  
Fell to the ground, and there untimely died.  
Cruell death vanquishing so noble beautie,  
Oft makes me wayle so hard a destenie.

II.

After, at sea a tall ship did appeare,  
Made all of heben and white yvorie ;  
The sailes of golde, of silke the tackle were :  
Milde was the winde, calme seem'd the sea to bee,  
The skie eachwhere did show full bright and faire :  
With rich treasures this gay ship freighted was :  
But sudden storme did so turmoyle the aire,  
And tumbled up the sea, that she (alas)  
Strake on a rock, that under water lay,  
And perished past all recoverie.  
O ! how great ruth, and sorrowfull assay,  
Doth vex my spirite with perplexitie,  
Thus in a moment to see lost, and drown'd,  
So great riches, as like cannot be found.

III.

The heavenly branches did I see arise  
Out of the fresh and lustie lawrell tree,  
Amidst the yong greene wood of Paradise ;  
Some noble plant I thought my selfe to see :  
Such store of birds therein yshrowded were,  
Chaunting in shade their sundrie melodie,  
That with their sweetnes I was ravish'd nere.  
While on this lawrell fixed was mine eie,  
The skie gan everie where to overcast,  
And darkned was the welkin all about,  
When sudden flash of heavens fire out brast,  
And rent this royall tree quite by the roote ;  
Which makes me much and ever to complaine ;  
For no such shadow shalbe had againe.

IV.

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise  
A spring of water, mildly rumbling downe,  
Whereto approached not in anie wise  
The homely shepheard, nor the ruder clowne ;  
But manie Muses, and the Nymphes withall,  
That sweetly in accord did tune their voyce  
To the soft sounding of the waters fall ;

That my glad hart thereat did much reioyce.  
But, while herein I tooke my chiefe delight,  
I saw (alas) the gaping earth devour  
The spring, the place, and all cleane out of sight ;  
Which yet aggreeves my hart even to this houre,  
And wounds my soule with rufull memorie,  
To see such pleasures gon so suddenly.

V.

I saw a Phœnix in the wood alone,  
With purple wings, and crest of golden hewe ;  
Strange bird he was, whereby I thought anone,  
That of some heavenly wight I had the vewe ;  
Untill he came unto the broken tree,  
And to the spring, that late devoured was.  
What say I more ! each thing at last we see  
Doth passe away : the Phœnix there alas,  
Spying the tree destroid, the water dride,  
Himselfe smote with his beake, as in disdaine,  
And so forthwith in great despite he did ;  
That yet my heart burnes, in exceeding paine,  
For ruth and pitie of so haples plight :  
O ! let mine eyes no more see such a sight.

VI.

At last so faire a Ladie did I spie,  
That thinking yet on her I burne and quake ;  
On herbs and floures she walked pensively,  
Milde, but yet love she proudly did forsake :  
White seem'd her robes, yet woven so they were,  
As snow and golde together had been wrought :  
Above the wast a darke clowde shrouded her,  
A stinging serpent by the heele her caught ;  
Wherewith she languisht as the gathered floure ;  
And, well assur'd, she mounted up to ioy.  
Alas, on earth so nothing doth endure,  
But bitter griefe and sorrowfull annoy :  
Which make this life wretched and miserable,  
Tossed with stormes of fortune variable.

VII.

When I beheld this tickle trustles state  
Of vaine worlds glorie, flitting too and fro,  
And mortall men tossed by troublous fate  
In restles seas of wretchednes and woe ;  
I wish I might this wearie life forgoe,  
And shortly turne unto my happie rest,  
Where my free spirite might not anie moe  
Be vext with sights, that doo her peace molest.  
And ye, faire Ladie, in whose bounteous brest  
All heavenly grace and vertue shrined is,  
When ye these rythmes doo read, and vew the rest,  
Loath this base world, and thinke of heavens blis :  
And though ye be the fairest of Gods creatures,  
Yet thinke, that Death shall spoyle your goodly  
features.

# DAPHNAÏDA :

## AN ELEGIE

UPON THE DEATH OF THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS DOUGLAS HOWARD, DAUGHTER AND HEIRE OF HENRY LORD HOWARD, VISCOUNT BYNDON, AND WIFE OF ARTHUR GORGES, ESQUIRE.

TO

THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADY, HELENA, MARQUESS OF NORTHHAMPTON.

I HAVE the rather presumed humbly to offer unto your Honour the dedication of this little Poëme, for that the noble and vertuous gentlewoman of whom it is written, was by match neere alied, and in affection greatly devoted, unto your Ladiship. The occasion why I wrote the same, was aswell the great good fame which I heard of her deceased, as the particular goodwill which I bear unto her husband Master Arthur Gorges, a lover of learning and vertue, whose house, as your Ladiship by marriage hath honoured, so doe I find the name of them, by many notable records, to be of great antiquitie in this realme, and such as have ever borne themselves with honourable reputation to the world, and unspotted loyaltie to their prince and country: besides, so lineally are they descended from the Howards, as that the Lady Anne Howard, eldest daughter to John Duke of Norfolk, was wife to Sir Edmond, mother to Sir Edward, and grandmother to Sir William and Sir Thomas Gorges, Knights: and therefore I doe assure myselfe that no dne honour done to the White Lyon, but will be most gratefull to your Ladiship, whose husband and children do so neerely participate with the blood of that noble family. So in all dutie I recommend this Pamphlet, and the good acceptance thereof, to your honourable favour and protection. London, this first of Ianuarie, 1591.

Your Honours humbly ever.

ED. SP.

WHAT-EVER man he be whose heavie mynd,  
With griefe of mournfull great mishap opprest,  
Fit matter for his cares increase would fynd,  
Let reade the ruffull plaint herein exprest,  
Of one, I weene, the wofulst man alive,  
Even sad Alcyon, whose empierced brest  
Sharpe sorrowe did in thousand peeces rive.

But whoso else in pleasure findeth sense,  
Or in this wretched life doeth take delight,  
Let him be banisht farre away from hence;  
Ne let the Sacred Sisters here be hight,  
Though they of sorrowe heavilie can sing;  
For even their heavie song would breede delight;  
But here no tunes, save sobs and grones, shall ring.

In stead of them, and their sweet harmonie,  
Let those three Fatall Sisters, whose sad hands  
Doe weave the direfull threds of Destinie,  
And in their wrath break off the vitall bands,  
Approach hereto; and let the dreadfull Queene  
Of Darknes deepe come from the Stygian strands,  
And grisly ghosts, to heare this dolefull teene.

In gloomy evening, when the wearie sun,  
After his dayes long labour drew to rest,

Ver. 4. *Let reade*] For "Let him read." JORTIN.

Ver. 6. ——— *Alcyon*] So he names Sir Arthur Gorges  
in *Colin Clouts come home again*. TODD.

And sweatie steedes, now having overrun  
The compast skie, gan water in the west,  
I walkt abroad to breath the freshing ayre  
In open fields, whose flowring pride, opprest  
With early frosts, had lost their beautie faire.

There came unto my mind a troublous thought,  
Which dayly doth my weaker wit possesse,  
Ne lets it rest untill it forth have brought  
Her long borne infant, fruit of heavinesse,  
Which she conceived hath through meditation  
Of this world's vainnesse and life's wretchednesse,  
That yet my soule it deeply doth empassion.

So I mazed on the miserie  
In which men live, and I of many most,  
Most miserable man; I did espie  
Where towards me a sory wight did cost,  
Clad all in black, that mourning did bewray,  
And Iacob staffe in hand devoutly crost,  
Like to some pilgrim come from farre away.

His carelesse locks, uncombed and unshorne,  
Hong long adowne, and beard all overgrowne,  
That well he seemd to be some wight forlorne,  
Downe to the earth his heavie eyes were throwne,  
As loathing light; and ever as he went  
He sighed soft, and inly deepe did grone,  
As if his heart in peeces would have rent.



Approaching nigh, his face I vewed nere,  
 And by the semblant of his countenance  
 Me seemd I had his person seene elsewhere,  
 Most like Alcyon seeming at a glance ;  
 Alcyon he, the iollie shepheard swaine,  
 That wont full merrilie to pipe and dannee,  
 And fill with pleasance every wood and plaine.

Yet halfe in doubt, because of his disguise,  
 I softlie said, Alcyon ! There-withall  
 He lookt aside as in disdainfull wise,  
 Yet stayed not, till I againe did call :  
 Then, turning back, he saide, with hollow sound,  
 " Who is it that dooth name me, wofull thrall,  
 The wretchedst man that treads this day  
 ground?"—

" One, whom like wofulnesse, impressed deepe,  
 Hath made fit mate thy wretched case to heare,  
 And given like cause with thee to waile and wepe ;  
 Griefe finds some ease by him that like does beare.  
 Then stay, Alcyon, gentle Shepheard ! stay,  
 (Quoth I) till thou have to my trustie eare  
 Committed what thee dooth so ill apay."

" Cease, foolish Man !" (saide he, halfe wrothfully)  
 " To seeke to heare that which cannot be told,  
 For the huge anguish, which doeth multiply  
 My dying paines, no tongue can well unfold ;  
 Ne doo I care that any should bemone  
 My hard mishap, or any weepe that would,  
 But seeke alone to weepe, and dye alone."

" Then be it so," quoth I, " that thou are bent  
 To die alone, unpitied, unplained ;  
 Yet, ere thou die, it were convenient  
 To tell the cause which thee thereto constrained,  
 Least that the world thee dead accuse of guilt,  
 And say, when thou of none shalt be maintained,  
 That thou for secret crime thy blood hast spilt."

" Who life does loath, and longs to be unbound  
 From the strong shackles of fraile flesh," quoth he,  
 " Nought cares at all what they, that live on ground,  
 Deem the occasion of his death to bee ;  
 Rather desires to be forgotten quight,  
 Than question made of his calamitie ;  
 For harts deep sorrow hates both life and light."

" Yet since so much thou seemst to rue my griefe,  
 And car'st for one that for himselfe cares nought,  
 (Sign of thy love, though nought for my reliefe,  
 For my reliefe exceedeth living thought ;) I  
 will to thee this heaue case relate :  
 Then harken well till it to end be brought,  
 For never didst thou heare more haplesse fate."

" Whilome I usde (as thou right well doest know)  
 My little focke on westernne downes to keep,  
 Not far from whence Sabrinaes streame doth flow,  
 And flowrie bancks with silver liquor steepe ;  
 Nought carde I then for worldly change or chaunce,  
 For all my ioy was on my gentle sheepe,  
 And to my pypc to caroll and to daunce."

" It there befell, as I the fields did range  
 Fearlesse and free, a faire young Lionesse,  
 White as the native rose before the change  
 Which Venus blood did in her leaues impresse,

I spied playing on the grassie plaine  
 Her youthfull sports and kindlie wantonnesse,  
 That did all other beasts in beawtie staine.

" Much was I moved at so goodly sight,  
 Whose like before mine eye had seldome seene,  
 And gan to cast how I her compasse might,  
 And bring to hand that yet had never beene :  
 So well I wrought with mildnes and with paine,  
 That I her caught disporting on the greene,  
 And brought away fast bound with silver chaine."

" And afterwarde I handled her so fayre,  
 That though by kind shee stout and salvage were,  
 For being borne an auncient Lions hayre,  
 And of the race that all wild beastes do feare,  
 Yet I her fram'd, and wan so to my bent,  
 That shee became so meeke and milde of cheare,  
 As the least lamb in all my flock that went :

" For shee in field, where-ever I did wend,  
 Would wend with me, and waite by me all day ;  
 And all the night that I in watch did spend,  
 If cause requir'd, or els in sleepe, if nay,  
 Shee would all night by me or watch or sleepe ;  
 And evermore when I did sleepe or play,  
 She of my flock would take full warie kepe."

" Safe then, and safest were my sillie sheepe,  
 Ne fear'd the wolfe, ne fear'd the wildest beast,  
 All were I drown'd in carelesse quiet deepe :  
 My lovely Lionesse without beheast  
 So careful was for them, and for my good,  
 That when I waked, neither most nor least  
 I found miscarried or in plaine or wood."

" Oft did the shepheards, which my hap did heare,  
 And oft their lasses, which my luck envye,  
 Daylie resort to me from farre and neare,  
 To see my Lyonesse, whose praises wyde  
 Were spred abroad ; and when her worthinesse  
 Much greater then the rude report they tryde,  
 They her did praise, and my good fortune blesse."

" Long thus I ioyed in my happinesse,  
 And well did hope my ioy would have no end ;  
 But oh ! fond Man ! that in worlds ficklenesse  
 Reposedst hope, or weenedst her thy frend  
 That glories most in mortall miseries,  
 And daylie doth her changefull counsels bend  
 To make new matter fit for tragedies ;

" For whilist I was thus without dread or dout,  
 A cruel Satyre with his murdrous dart,  
 Greedie of mischiefe, ranging all about,  
 Gave her the fatal wound of deadly smart,  
 And reft from me my sweete companion,  
 And reft from me my love, my life, my hart :  
 My Lyonesse (ah, woe is me !) is gon !

" Out of the world thus was she reft away,  
 Out of the world, unworthy such a spoyle,  
 And borne to heaven, for heaven a fitter pray ;  
 Much fitter then the Lyon, which with toyle  
 Alcides slew, and fixt in firmament ;  
 Her now I seeke throughout this earthly soyle,  
 And seeking misse, and missing doe lament."

Therewith he gan afresh to waile and weepe,  
 That I for pittic of his heaue plight

Could not abstain mine eyes with teares to steepe ;  
 But, when I saw the anguish of his spright  
 Some deale alaid, I him bespake againe ;  
 " Certes, Alcyon, painfull is thy plight,  
 That it in me breeds almost equall paine. 175

" Yet doth not my dull wit well understand  
 The riddle of thy loved Lionesse ;  
 For rare it seemes in reason to be skand,  
 That man, who doth the whole worlds rule possesse,  
 Should to a beast his noble hart embasse, 180  
 And be the vassall of his vassalesses ;  
 Therefore more plain areade this kowtfull case."

Then sighing sore, " Daphne thou knew'st," quoth  
 " She now is dead ;" ne more endur'd to say, [he,  
 But fell to ground for great extremitie ; 185  
 That I, beholding it, with deepe dismay  
 Was much apald ; and, lightly him uprearing,  
 Revoked life, that would have fled away,  
 All were my selfe, through grief, in deadly drear-  
 ing.

Then gan I him to comfort all my best, 190  
 And with milde counsaile strove to mitigate  
 The stormie passion of his troubled breast,  
 But he thereby was more empassionate ;  
 As stubborne steed, that is with curb restrained,  
 Becomes more fierce and fervent in his gate ; 195  
 And, breaking fourth at last, thus dearely plained :

" What man henceforth that breatheth vitall aire  
 Will honour Heaven, or heavenly powers adore,  
 Which so uniously doth their iudgements share  
 Mongst earthly wights, as to afflict so sore 200  
 The innocent, as those which do transgresse,  
 And doe not spare the best or fairest, more  
 Than worst or foulest, but doe both oppresse ?

" If this be right, why did they then create  
 The world so faire, sith fairenesse is neglected ? 205  
 Or why be they themselves immaculate,  
 If purest things be not by them respected ?  
 She faire, she pure, most faire, most pure she was,  
 Yet was by them as thing impure reected ;  
 Yet she in purenesse heaven it self did pas. 210

" In purenesse and in all celestiall grace,  
 That men admire in goodly womankind,  
 She did excell, and seem'd of angels race,  
 Living on earth like angell new divide, 215  
 Adorn'd with wisdome and with chastitie,  
 And all the dowries of a noble mind,  
 Which did her beantie much more beautifie.

" No age hath bred (since faire Astræa left  
 The sinfull world) more vertue in a wight ;  
 And, when she parted hence, with her she reft 220  
 Great hope, and robd her race of bounty quight.  
 Well may the shepheard lasses now lament ;  
 For double losse by her hath on them light,  
 To loose both her and bounties ornament.

Ver. 214. — *like angel new divide,*] *Divined* is an  
 odd expression. We meet with it again in *The Ruines of*  
*Time*, ver. 611. where it signifies, I suppose, to be deified  
 by being made a constellation, to be *divin'd*, *ἀποθεωθεῖν*.  
 JORTIN

" Ne let Elisa, royall shepheardesse,  
 The praises of my parted love envy,  
 For she hath praises in all pteousnesse  
 Powr'd upon her, like showers of Castaly,  
 By her owne shepheard, Colin, her own shepheard, 225  
 That her with heavenly hymnes doth deifie,  
 Of rusticke Muse full hardly to be betterd.

" She is the rose, the glory of the day,  
 And mine the primrose in the lowly shade :  
 Mine, ah ! not mine ; amisse I mine did say :  
 Not mine, but his, which mine awhile her made ;  
 Mine to be his, with him to live for ay. 230  
 O that so faire a flowre so soon should fade,  
 And through untimely tempest fall away !

" She fell away in her first ages spring,  
 Whilst yett her leafe was greene, and fresh her  
 rinde, 240  
 And whilst her branch faire blossomes fourth did  
 She fell away against all course of kinde. [bring,  
 For age to dye is right, but youth is wrong ;  
 She fell away like fruit blowne down with winde.  
 Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my under-  
 song. 245

" What hart so stonie hard but that would weepe,  
 And poure forth fountaines of incessant teares ?  
 What Timon but would let compassion creepe  
 Into his breast, and pierce his frozen eares ?  
 In stead of teares, whose brackish bitter well 250  
 I wasted have, my heart bloud dropping weares,  
 To think to ground how that faire blossome fell.

" Yet fell she not as one enforst to dye,  
 Ne dyde with dread and grudging discontent,  
 But as one toyld with travell downe doth lye, 255  
 So lay she downe, as if to sleepe she went,  
 And closde her eyes with carelesse quietnesse ;  
 The whiles soft Death away her spirit hent,  
 And soule assoyld from sinfull fleshlinesse.

" Yet ere that life her lodging did forsake,  
 She, all resolv'd, and readie to remove,  
 Calling to me (ay me !) this wise bespake ;  
 ' Alcyon ! ah, my first and latest love !  
 ' Ah ! why does my Alcyon weepe and mourne,  
 ' And grieve my ghost, that ill mote him behove, 265  
 ' As if to me had chaunst some evill tourne !

" I, since the messenger is come for mee,  
 ' That summons soules unto the brideale feast  
 ' Of his great Lord, must needs depart from thee,  
 ' And straight obey his soveraine behest ; 270  
 ' Why should Alcyon then so sore lament  
 ' That I from miserie shall be releast,  
 ' And freed from wretched long imprisonment !

" Our daies are full of dolour and disease,  
 ' Our life afflicted with incessant paine, 275  
 ' That nought on earth may lessen or appease ;  
 ' Why then should I desire here to remaine !  
 ' Or why should he, that loves me, sorrie bee  
 ' For my delivrance, or at all complain  
 ' My good to heare, and toward ioies to see ! 280

" I goe, and long desired have to goe ;  
 ' I goe with gladnesse to my wished rest,  
 ' Whereas no worlds sad care nor wasting woe

' May come, their happie quiet to molest ;  
' But saints and angels in celestiall thrones  
' Eternally Him praise that hath them blest ;  
' There shall I be amongst those blessed ones.

285

' Yet, ere I goe, a pledge I leave with thee  
' Of the late love the which betwixt us past,  
' My young Ambrosia ; in lieu of mee,  
' Love her ; so shall our love for ever last.  
' Thus, Deare ! adieu, whom I expect ere long. —  
" So having said, away she softly past :  
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make mine under-  
song.

III.

" So oft as I record those piercing words,  
Which yet are deepe engraven in my breast,  
And those last deadly accents, which like swords  
Did wound my heart, and rend my bleeding chest,  
With those sweet sugred speeches doe compare,  
The which my soul first conquer and possess,  
The first beginners of my endless care :

295

290

300

" And when those pallid cheekes and ashe hew,  
In which sad Death his portraiture had writ,  
And when those hollow eyes and deadly view,  
On which the cloud of ghastly Night did sit,  
I match with that sweete smile and chearfull brow,  
Which all the world subdued unto it,  
How happie was I then, and wretched now !

295

305

" How happie was I when I saw her leade  
The shepherds daughters dauncing in a round !  
How trimly would she trace and softly tread  
The tender grasse, with rosey garland crown'd !  
And, when she list, advaunce her heavenly voyce,  
Both Nymphes and Muses nigh she made astownd,  
And flocks and shepherds caused to reioyce.

315

311

315

" But now, ye shepheard Lasses ! who shall lead  
Your wandring troupes, or sing your virelays ?  
Or who shall dight your bowres, sith she is dead  
That was the lady of your holy-dayes ?  
Let now your blisse be turned into hale,  
And into plaints convert your ioyous playes,  
And with the same fill every hill and dale.

320

320

" Let bagpipe never more be heard to shrill,  
That may allure the senses to delight,  
Ne ever shepheard sound his oaten quill  
Unto the many that provoke them might  
To idle pleasance ; but let ghastlinesse  
And drearie horror dim the chearfull light,  
To make the image of true heavinesse :

325

325

325

" Let birds be silent on the naked spray,  
And shady woods resound with dreadfull yells ;  
Let streaming floods their hastie courses stay,  
And parching drouth drie up the cristall wells ;  
Let th' earth be barren, and bring forth no  
flowres,  
And th' ayre be filld with noyse of dolefull knells,  
And wandring spirits walke untimely howres.

330

330

335

" And Nature, nurse of every living thing,  
Let rest her selfe from her long wearinesse,  
And cease henceforth things kindly forth to bring,

Ver. 318. Or who shall dight your bowres,] Who shall deck or prepare your bowers. TODD.

But hideous monsters full of ugliness ;  
For she it is that hath me done this wrong,  
No nurse, but stepdame, cruell, mercilesse.  
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my under-  
song.

240

IV.

" My litle Floek, whom earst I lov'd so well,  
And wont to feed with finest grasse that grew,  
Feede ye hencefoorth on bitter astrofelf,  
And stinking smallage, and unsaverie rew ;  
And, when your mawes are with those weeds cor-  
Be ye the pray of wolves ; ne will I rew  
That with your carkasses wild beasts be glutted.

316

350

" Ne worse to you, my sillie Sheepe ! I pray,  
Ne sorer vengeance wish on you to fall  
Than to my selfe, for whose confusde decay  
To carelessse Heavens I doo daylie call ;  
But Heavens refuse to heare a wretches cry ;  
And cruell Death doth scorn to come at call,  
Or graunt his boone that most desires to dye.

355

" The good and righteous he away doth take,  
To plague th' unrighteous which alive remaine ;  
But the ungodly ones he doth forsake,  
By living long to multiplie their paine ;  
Else surely death should be no punishment,  
As the Great Iudge at first did it ordaine,  
But rather riddance from long languishment.

360

" Therefore, my Daphne they have tane away ;  
For worthe of a better place was she :  
But me unworthie willed here to stay,  
That with her lacke I might tormented be.  
Sith then they so have ordred, I will pay  
Penance to her, according their decree,  
And to her ghost doe service day by day.

365

370

" For I will walke this wandring pilgrimage,  
Throughout the world from one to other end,  
And in affliction waste my better age :  
My bread shall be the anguish of my mynd,  
My drink the teares which fro mine eyes do  
raine,  
My bed the ground that hardest I may fynd ;  
So will I wilfully increase my paine.

375

" And she, my love that was, my saint that is,  
When she beholds from her celestiall throne  
(In which shee ioyeth in eternal blis)  
My bitter penance, will my ease bemone,  
And pittie me that living thus doo die ;  
For heavenly spirits have compassion  
On mortall men, and rue their miserie.

380

385

" So when I have with sorrow satisfide  
Th' importune Fates, which vengeance on me seeke,  
And th' Heavens with long languor pacifyde,  
She, for pure pitie of my sufferance meeke,  
Will send for me ; for which I daily long ;  
And will till then my painfull penance eeke.  
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my under-  
song.

390

V.

" Hencefoorth I hate what ever Nature made,  
And in her workmanship no pleasure finde,  
For they be all but vaine, and quickly fade ;  
So soone as on them blowes the northern winde,  
They tarric not, but flit and fall away,

395

Leaving behind them nought but grieft of minde,  
And mocking such as thinke they long will stay.

"I hate the Heaven, because it doth withhold 400  
Me from my love, and eke my love from me ;  
I hate the earth, because it is the mould  
Of fleshly slime and fraile mortalitie ;  
I hate the fire, because to nought it flies ;  
I hate the ayre, because sighes of it be ;  
I hate the sea, because it teares supplies.

"I hate the day, because it lendeth light  
To see all things, and not my love to see ;  
I hate the darknesse and the dreary night,  
Because they breed sad balefulness in mee ;  
I hate all times, because, all times doo fly  
So fast away, and may not stayed bee,  
But as a speedie post that passeth by.

"I hate to speake, my voyce is spent with crying ;  
I hate to heare, lowd plaiunts have duld mine eares ;  
I hate to tast, for food withholdes my dying ;  
I hate to see, mine eyes are dimd with teares ;  
I hate to smell, no sweet on earth is left ;  
I hate to feele, my flesh is numb'd with feares :  
So all my senses from me are bereft.

"I hate all men, and shun all womankinde ;  
The one, because as I they wretched are ;  
The other, for because I doo not finde  
My love with them, that wont to be their starre :  
And life I hate, because it will not last ;  
And death I hate, because it life doth marre ;  
And all I hate that is to come or past.

"So all the world, and all in it I hate,  
Because it changeth ever to and fro,  
And never standeth in one certaine state,  
But, still unstedfast, round about doth goe  
Like a mill-wheele in midst of miserie,  
Driven with streames of wretchednesse and woe,  
That dying lives, and living still does dye.

"So doo I live, so doo I daylie die,  
And pine away in selfe-consuming paine !  
Sith she that did my vitall powres supplie,  
And feeble spirits in their force maintaine,  
Is fetcht for me, why seeke I to prolong  
My wearie daies in dolour and disdain !  
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my undersong.

vi.  
"Why doo I longer live in lifes despight,  
And doo not dye then in despight of death ;  
Why doo I longer see this loathsome light  
And doo in darknesse not abridge my breath,  
Sith all my sorrow should have end thereby,  
And cares finde quiet ! Is it so unseath  
To leave this life, or dolorous to dye ?

"To live I finde it deadly dolorous,  
For life drawes care, and care continuall woe ;  
Therefore to dye must needes be ioyeous,  
And wishfull thing this sad life to forgoe :  
But I must stay ; I may it not amend,  
My Daphne hence departing bad me so ;  
She bad me stay, till she for me did send.

"Yet, whilst I in this wretched vale doo stay,  
My wearie feete shall ever wandring be,

That still I may be readie on my way  
When as her messenger doth come for me ;  
Ne will I rest my feete for feeblenesse,  
Ne will I rest my limmes for frailtie,  
Ne will I rest mine eyes for heavinesse.

"But, as the mother of the gods, that sought  
For faire Euridyce, her daughter dere,  
Throughout the world, with wofull heavie thought  
So will I travell whilst I tarrie heere,  
Ne will I lodge, ne will I ever lin,  
Ne, when as drouping Titan draweth nere  
To loose his teeme, will I take up my inne.

"Ne sleepe (the harbenger of wearie wights)  
Shall ever lodge upon mine eye-lids more ;  
Ne shall with rest refresh my fainting sprights,  
Nor failing force to former strength restore :  
But I will wake and sorrow all the night  
With Philumene, my fortune to deplore ;  
With Philumene, the partner of my plight.

"And ever as I see the starre to fall,  
And under ground to goe to give them light  
Which dwell in darknesse, I to mind will call  
How my fair starre (that shind on me so bright)  
Fell sodainly and faded under ground ;  
Since whose departure, day is turnd to night,  
And night without a Venus starre is found.

"But soon as Day doth shew his deawie face,  
And cals foorth men unto their toylsome trade,  
I will withdraw me to some darkesome place,  
Or some dere cave, or solitarie shade ;  
There will I sigh, and sorrow all day long,  
And the huge burden of my cares unlade.  
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my undersong.

vii.  
"Henceforth mine eyes shall never more behold  
Faire thing on earth, ne feed on false delight  
Of ought that framed is of mortall mould,  
Sith that my fairest flower is faded quight ;  
For all I see is vaine and transitorie,  
Ne will be held in any stedfast plight,  
But in a moment loose their grace and glorie.

"And ye, fond Men ! on Fortunes wheele that rid  
Or in ought under heaven repose assurance,  
Be it riches, beautie, or honours pride,  
Be sure that they shall have no long endurance,  
But ere ye be aware will flit away ;  
For nought of them is yours, but th' only usance  
Of a small time, which none ascertainment may.

"And ye, true Lovers ! whom desastrous chaunce  
Hath farre exiled from your ladies grace,  
To mourne in sorrow and sad sufferance,  
When ye doe heare me in that desert place  
Lamenting loud my Daphnes elegie,  
Helpe me to waile my miserable case,  
And when life parts vouchsafe to close mine eye.

"And ye, more happie Lovers ! which enjoy  
The presence of your dearest loves delight,  
When ye doe heare my sorrowfull annoy,  
Yet pittie me in your empassiond spright,  
And thinke that such mishap, as chaunst to me,  
May happen unto the most happiest wight ;  
For all mens states alike unstedfast be.

" And ye, my fellow Shepheards ! which do feed  
Your carelesse flocks on hills and open plaines, <sup>520</sup>  
With better fortune than did me succeed,  
Remember yet my undeserved paines ;  
And, when ye heare, that I am dead or slaine,  
Lament my lot, and tell your fellow swaines  
That sad Alcyon dyde in lifes disdaine. <sup>525</sup>

" And, ye faire Damsels ! shepheards deare delights,  
That with your loves do their rude hearts possesse,  
When as my hearse shall happen to your sightes,  
Vouchsafe to deck the same with cypresse ; <sup>530</sup>  
And ever sprinckle brackish teares among,  
In pitie of my undeserv'd distresse,  
The which, I, wretch, endured have thus long.

" And ye poore Pilgrims ! that with restlesse toyle  
Wearie your selves in wandring desart wayes,  
Till that you come where ye your vovves assoyle,  
When passing by ye reade these wofull layes <sup>535</sup>  
On my grave written, rue my Daphnes wrong,  
And mourne for me that languish out my dayes.  
Cease, Shepheard ! cease, and end thy under-  
song."—

Thus when he ended had his heavie plaint, <sup>540</sup>  
The heaviest plaint that ever I heard sound,  
His cheekes waxt pale, and sprights began to faint,

As if againe he would have fallen to ground ;  
Which when I saw, I, stepping to him light, <sup>545</sup>  
Amooved him out of his stonic swound,  
And gan him to recomfort as I might.

But he no waie recomforted would be,  
Nor suffer solace to approach him nie,  
But casting up a sdeinfull eie at me,  
That in his traunce I would not let him lie, <sup>550</sup>  
Did rend his haire, and heat his blubbred face,  
As one disposed wilfullie to die,  
That I sore griev'd to see his wretched case.

Tho when the pang was somewhat overpast,  
And the outrageous passion nigh appeased, <sup>555</sup>  
I him desyrde sith daie was overcast,  
And darke night fast approached, to be pleased  
To turne aside unto my cabinet,  
And staie with me, till he were better cased  
Of that strong stownd which him so sore beset. <sup>560</sup>

But by no meanes I could him win thereto,  
Ne longer him intreate with me to staie, <sup>565</sup>  
But without taking leave he forth did goe  
With staggering pace and dismall looks dismay,  
As if that Death he in the face had seene,  
Or hellish Hags had met upon the way ;  
But what of him became I cannot weene.

## COLIN CLOUDS COME HOME AGAINE.

1505.

TO

## THE RIGHT WORTHY AND NOBLE KNIGHT SIR WALTER RALEIGH,

CAPTAINE OF HER MAIESTIES GUARD, LORD WARDEIN OF THE STANNERIES, AND  
LIEUTENANT OF THE COUNTIE OF CORNWALL.

SIR,

THAT you may see that I am not alwaies ydle as yee thinke, though not greatly well occupied, nor altogether undutifull, though not precisely officious, I make you present of this simple Pastorall, unworthie of your higher conceipt for the meanesse of the stile, but agreeing with the truth in circumstance and matter. The which I humbly beseech you to accept in part of paiment of the infiuite debt, in which I acknowledge my selfe boanden unto you for your singular favours, and sundrie good turnes, shewed to me at my late being in England ; and with your good countenance protect against the malice of evill mouthes, which are alwaies wide open to carpe at and misconstrue my simple meaning. I pray continually for your happiness. From my house of Kilcolman, the 27. of December.

1591. [rather perhaps 1595.]

Yours ever humbly,

ED. SP.

THE shepheards boy (best known by that name)  
That after Tityrus first sung his lay,  
Layes of sweet love, without rebuke or blame,  
Sate (as his custome was) upon a day,  
Charming his oaten pipe unto his peres, <sup>5</sup>  
The shepheard swaines that did about him play :  
Who all the while, with greedie listfull eares,

Did stand astonisht at his curicus skill,  
Like hartlesse deare, dismayd with thunders sound. <sup>10</sup>  
At last, when as he piped had his fill,  
He rested him : and, sitting then around,  
One of those groomes (a iolly groom was he,  
As ever piped on an oaten reed,  
And lov'd this shepheard dearest in degree,  
Hight Hobbinol ;) gan thus to him areed. <sup>15</sup>  
" Colin, my liefe, my life, how great a losse

Had all the shepherds nation by thy lacke !  
 And I, poore swaine, of many, greatest crosse !  
 That, sith thy Muse first since thy turning backe  
 Was heard to sound as she was wont on hye, 20  
 Hast made us all so blessed and so blythe.  
 Whilset thou wast hence, all dead in dole did lie :  
 The woods were heard to waile full many a sythe,  
 And all their birds with silence to complaine :  
 The fields with faded flowers did seem to mourne, 25  
 And all their flocks from feeding to refraine:  
 The running waters wept for thy returne,  
 And all their fish with languour did lament :  
 But now both woods and fields and floods revive,  
 Sith thou art come, their cause of meriment, 30  
 That us, late dead, hast made againe alive :  
 But were it not too painefull to repeat  
 The passed fortunes, which to thee befell  
 In thy late voyage, we thee would entreat,  
 Now at thy leisure them to us to tell." 35

To whom the shepherd gently answered thus ;  
 " Hohbin, thou temptest me to that I covet :  
 For of good passed newly to discuss,  
 By dubble usurie doth wise renew it.  
 And since I saw that Angels blessed eie, 40  
 Her worlds bright sun, her heavens fairest light,  
 My mind, full of my thoughts satietie,  
 Doth feed on sweet contentment of that sight :  
 Since that same day in nought I take delight,  
 Ne feeling have in any earthly pleasure, 45  
 But in remembrance of that glorious hright,  
 My lifes sole blisse, my hearts eternal threasure.  
 Wake then, my pipe ; my sleepeie Muse, awake ;  
 Till I have told her praises lasting long :  
 Hohbin desires, thou maist it not forsake ;— 50  
 Harke then, ye iolly shepherds, to my song."

With that they all gan throng about him neare,  
 With hungrie eares to heare his harmonie :  
 The whiles their flocks, devoyd of dangers feare,  
 Did round about them feed at libertie. 55

" One day (quoth he) I sat, (as was my trade)  
 Under the foote of Mole, that mountaine hore,  
 Keeping my sheepe amongst the coolly shade  
 Of the greene alders by the Mullaes shore :  
 There a straunge shepheard chaunst to find me out,  
 Whether allured with my pipes delight, 61  
 Whose pleasing sound ysprilled far about,  
 Or thither led by chance, I know not right :  
 Whom when I asked from what place he came,  
 And how he hight, himselfe he did ycleepe 65  
 The Shepheard of the Ocean by name,  
 And said he came far from the main-sea deepe.  
 He, sitting me beside in that same shade,  
 Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit ;  
 And, when he heard the musioke which I made, 70  
 He found himselfe full greatly pleased at it :  
 Yet, æmuling my pipe, he tooke in hond  
 My pipe, before that æmuled of many,  
 And plaid theron ; (for well that skill he cond ;)  
 Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any. 75  
 He pip'd, I sung ; and, when he sung, I piped ;  
 By change of turnes, each making other mery ;  
 Neither envying other, nor envied,  
 So piped we, untill we both were weary." 80

There interrupting him, a bonie swaine,  
 That Cuddy hight, him thus atweene bespake :  
 " And, should it not thy readie course restraine,

I would request thee, Colin, for my sake,  
 To tell what thou didst sing, when he did plaie ;  
 For well I weene it worth recounting was, 85  
 Whether it were some hymne, or morall laie,  
 Or carol made to praise thy loved lasse."

" Nor of my love, nor of my lasse, (quoth he)  
 I then did sing, as then occasion fell :  
 For love had me forlorne, forlorne of me, 90  
 That made me in that desert choose to dwell.  
 But of my river Bregoggs love I song,  
 Which to the shiny Mulla he did heare,  
 And yet doth heare, and ever will, so long  
 As water doth within his bancks appeare." 96

" Of fellowship (said then that bonny Boy)  
 Record to us that lovely lay againe :  
 The staie whereof shall nought these eares annoy,  
 Who all that Colin makes do covet faine." 100

" Heare then (quoth he) the tenor of my tale,  
 In sort as I it to that shepherd told :  
 No leasing new, nor grandams fable stale,  
 But ancient truth confirm'd with credence old.

" Old father Mole, (Mole hight that mountaine  
 gray

That walls the northside of Armulla dale ;) 105  
 He had a daughter fresh as floure of May,  
 Which gave that name unto that pleasant vale ;  
 Mulla, the daughter of old Mole, so hight  
 The Nymph, which of that water course has charge,  
 That, springing out of Mole, doth run downe right 110  
 To Buttevant, where, spreading forth at large,  
 It giveth name unto that ancient Cittie,  
 Which Kilmemullah cleped is of old ;  
 Whose ragged ruines breed great ruth and pittie 115  
 To travellers, which it from far behold.

Full faine she lov'd, and was belov'd full faine  
 Of her owne brother river, Bregog hight,  
 So hight because of this deceitfull traine,  
 Which he with Mulla wrought to win delight.

But her old sire more careful of her good,  
 And meaning her much better to preferre,  
 Did thinke to match her with the neighbour flood,  
 Which Allo hight, Broad-water called farre ;

And wrought so well with his continuall paine,  
 That he that river for his daughter wonne : 125  
 The dowre agreed, the day assigned plaine,  
 The place appointed where it should be donne.

Nath'lesse the Nymph her former liking held ;  
 For love will not he drawne, but must he ledde ;  
 And Bregog did so well her fancie weld, 130  
 That her good will he got her first to wedde.

But for her father, sitting still on hie,  
 Did warily still watch which way she went,  
 And eke from far observ'd, with iealous eie,  
 Which way his course the wanton Bregog bent ;

Him to deceive, for all his watchfull ward, 135  
 The wily lover did devise this slight :  
 First into many parts his streame he shar'd,  
 That, whilset the one was watcht, the other might

Passes unspide to meete her by the way ;  
 And then, besides, those little streames so broken  
 He under ground so closely did convey,  
 That of their passage doth appeare no token,  
 Till they into the Mullaes water slide. 145

So secretly did he his love enjoy :

Ver. 86. ——— or morall laie,] Meaning his *Færic* *Queene*. Todd.

Ver. 118. So hight because of this deceitfull traine,] The etymology of *Bregog*, according to Lluyd, as Mr. Walker has observed to me, means *false* or *lying*. Todd.

Ver. 69. ——— fit] *Strain* or *air*. Todd.

Ver. 72. ——— æmuling] See also *æmuled* in the next line. This verb is probably of Spenser's coinage. Todd.

Yet not so secret, but it was describe,  
 And told her father by a shepherds boy.  
 Who, wondrous wroth for that so foule despight,  
 In great avenge did roll downe from his hill  
 Huge mightie stones, the which encomber might 150  
 His passage, and his water-courses spill.  
 So of a River, which he was of old,  
 He none was made, but scattered all to nought ;  
 And, lost among those rocks into him rold,  
 Did lose his name : so deare his love he bought."

Which having said, him Thestylis hespake ; 156  
 " Now by my life this was a mery lay,  
 Worthie of Colin selfe, that did it make.  
 But read now eke, of friendship I thee pray,  
 What dittie did that other shepheard sing : 160  
 For I do covet most the same to heare,  
 As men use most to covet forreine thing."

" That shall I eke (quoth he) to you declare :  
 His song was all a lamentable lay  
 Of great unkindnesse, and of usage hard, 165  
 Of Cynthia the Ladie of the Sea,  
 Which from her presence faultlesse him debard.  
 And ever anon, with singul's rife,  
 He cryed out, to make his undersong :  
 Ah ! my loves queene, and goddesse of my life, 170  
 Who shall me pittie, when thou doest me wrong ?"

Then gan a gentle bonylasse to speake,  
 That Marin hight ; " Right well he sure did plaine,  
 That could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure breake,  
 And move to take him to her grace againe. 175  
 But tell on further, Colin, as befell

Twixt him and thee, that thee did hence dissuade."  
 " When thus our pipes we both had wearied well,  
 (Quoth he) and each an end of singing made,  
 He gan to cast great lyking to my lore, 180  
 And great dyslyking to my lucklesse lot,  
 That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore,  
 Into that waste, where I was quite forgot.

The which to leave, thenceforth he counsell mee,  
 Unmeet for man, in whom was ought regardfull, 185  
 And wend with him, his Cynthia to see ;  
 Whose grace was great, and bounty most rewardfull.  
 Besides her peerlesse skill in making well,  
 And all the ornaments of wondrous wit,  
 Such as all womankynd did far excell ; 190  
 Such as the world admyr'd, and praised it :  
 So what with hope of good, and hate of ill,  
 He me perswaded forth with him to fare.

Nought tooke I with me, but mine oaten quill :  
 Small needmes else need shepheard to prepare. 195  
 So to the sea we came ; the sea, that is  
 A world of waters heaped up on hie,  
 Rolling like mountaines in wide wilderness,  
 Horrible, hideous, roaring with hoarse crie."

" And is the sea (quoth Coridon) so fearfull ?" 200  
 " Fearful much more (quoth he) then hart can  
 fear :

Thousand wyld beasts with deep monthes gaping  
 Therin still wait poore passengers to teare. [direfull  
 Who life doth loath, and longs death to behold,  
 Before he die, already dead with feare, 205  
 And yet would live with heart halfe stonie cold,

Ver. 188. — in making well.] In poetical composition. Puttenham highly commends, as "passing sweete and harmonically," a Ditty by her Majesty; which is reprinted in Ellis's Specimens of the Early English Poets: And, in Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry, her verses, written with charcoal on a shutter while she was prisoner at Woodstock, are reprinted from a corrected copy of them as preserved by Heintzner. Todd.

Let him to sea, and he shall see it there.  
 And yet as ghastly dreadfull, as it seemes,  
 Bold men, presuming life for gaue to sell,  
 Dare tempt that gulf, and in those wandring 210  
 streemes

Seek waies unknowne, waies leading down to hell.  
 For, as we stood there waiting on the strond,  
 Behold, an huge great vessel to us came,  
 Dauncing upon the waters back to lond,  
 As if it scorn'd the daunger of the same ; 215  
 Yet was it but a wooden frame and fraile,  
 Glew'd together with some subtile matter.

Yet had it armes and wings, and head and taile,  
 And life to move it selfe upon the water. 219  
 Strange thing ! how bold and swift the monster was,  
 That neither car'd for wynd, nor haile, nor raine,  
 Nor swelling waves, but thorough them did passe  
 So proudly, that she made them roare againe.

The same aboard us gently did receive,  
 And without harme us farre away did beare, 225  
 So farre that land, our mother, us did leave,  
 And nought but sea and heaven to us appeare.  
 Then hartlesse quite, and full of inward feare,  
 That shepheard I besonght to me to tell,  
 Under what skie, or in what world we were, 230  
 In which I saw no living people dwell.

Who, me recomforting all that he might,  
 Told me that that same was the Regiment  
 Of a great shepheardesse, that Cynthia hight,  
 His liege, his Ladie, and his lifes Regent.— 235

" If then (quoth I) a shepheardesse she bee,  
 Where be the flockes and heards, which she doth  
 And where may I the hills and pastures see, [keep?  
 On which she useth for to feed her sheepe ?"

" These be the hills, (quoth he) the surges hie,  
 On which faire Cynthia her heards doth feed : 241  
 Her heards be thousand fishes with their frie,  
 Which in the bosome of the billowes breed.  
 Of them the shepheard which hath charge in chief,  
 Is Triton, blowing loud his wreathed horne : 245  
 At sound whereof, they all for their relief  
 Wend too and fro at evening and at morne.

And Protens eke with him does drive his heard  
 Of stinking seales and porepiscas together,  
 With hoary head and deawy dropping beard, 250  
 Compelling them which way he list, and whether.

And I, among the rest, of many least,  
 Have in the Ocean charge to me assignd ;  
 Where I will live or die at her beheast,  
 And serve and honour her with faithfull mind. 255  
 Besides an hundred Nymphs all heavenly borne,  
 And of immortal race, doo still attend  
 To wash faire Cynthiaes sheep, when they be shorne,  
 And fold them up, when they have made an end.  
 Those be the shepheardes which my Cynthia serve  
 At sea, beside a thousand moe at land : 261  
 For land and sea my Cynthia doth deserve  
 To have in her commandment at hand."

Thereto I wondred much, till, wondring more  
 And more, at length we land far off descryde : 265  
 Which sight much gladed me ; for much afore  
 I feard, least land we never should have eyde :

Thereto our ship her course directly bent,  
 As if the way she perfectly had knowne.  
 We Lunday passe ; by that same name is ment 270  
 An island, which the first to west was shoune.  
 From thence another world of land we kend,  
 Floating amid the sea in ieopardie,  
 And round about with mightie white rocks hemd,  
 Against the seas encroching crueltie. 274

Those same the shepheard told me, were the fields  
 In which dame Cynthia her landheards fed ;  
 Faire goodly fields, then which Armulla yields  
 None fairer, nor more fruitfull to be red.  
 The first, to which we nigh approached, was  
 An high headland thrust far into the sea,  
 Like to an horne, whereof the name it has,  
 Yet seemd to be a goodly pleasant lea :  
 There did a loftie mount at first us greet,  
 Which did a stately heape of stones upreare,  
 That seemd amid the surges for to fleet,  
 Much greater then that frame, which us did beare :  
 There did our ship her fruitfull wombe unlade,  
 And put us all ashore on Cynthias land.

" What land is that thou meanst, (then Cuddy sayd)  
 And is there other then whereon we stand ?"

" Ah ! Cuddy, (then quoth Colin) thous a fon,  
 That hast not seeme least part of natures worke :  
 Much more there is unkennd then thou doest kon,  
 And much more that does from mens knowledge  
 lurke.

For that same land much larger is then this,  
 And other men and beasts and birds doth feed :  
 There fruitfull corne, faire trees, fresh herbage is,  
 And all things else that living creatures need.

Besides most goodly rivers there appeare,  
 No whit inferiour to thy Fanchins praise,  
 Or unto Allo, or to Mulla cleare :

Nought hast thou, foolish boy, seene in thy daies."

" But if that land be there (quoth he) as here,  
 And is their heaven likewise there all one ?

And, if like heaven, be heavenly graces there,  
 Like as in this same world where we do wone !"

" Both heaven and heavenly graces do much more  
 (Quoth he) abound in that same land then this.

For there all happie peace and plenteous store  
 Conspire in one to make contented blisse :

No wayling there nor wretchednesse is heard,  
 No bloodie issues nor no leprosies,

No griesly famine, nor no raging sweward,  
 No nightly bodrags, nor no hue and cries ;

The shepheards there abroad may safely lie,  
 On hills and downes, withouten dread or daunger :

No ravenous wolves the good mans hope destroy,  
 Nor outlawes fell affray the forest raunger.

There learned arts do florish in great honor,  
 And Poets wits are had in peerlesse price :

Religion hath lay powre to rest upon her,  
 Advancing vertue and suppressing vice.

For end, all good, all grace there freely growes,  
 Had people grace it gratefully to use :

For God his gifts there plenteously bestowes,  
 But gracelesse men them greatly do abuse."

" But say on further, then said Corylas,  
 The rest of thine adventures, that betyded."

" Foorth on our voyage we by land did passe,  
 (Quoth he) as that same shepheard still us gvyded,

Untill that we to Cynthias presence came :  
 Whose glorie greater then my simple thought,

I found much greater then the former fame ;  
 Such greatnes I cannot compare to ought :

But if I her like ought on earth might read,  
 I would her lyken to a crowne of lillies,

Upon a virgin brydes adorned head,  
 With roses dight and goolds and daffadillies ;

Ver. 282. *Like to an horne, &c.*] Cornwall. Todd.

Ver. 315. — *bodrags.*] Rather *bodrags*, i. e. *bord-ragings*, as in the F. Q. ii. x. 63. Where see the note on the word. Todd.

Or like the cirelet of a turtle true,  
 In which all colours of the rainbow bee ;  
 Or like faire Phebes garland shining new,  
 In which all pure perfection one may see.

But vaine it is to thinke, by paragone  
 Of earthly things, to iudge of things divine :

Her power, her mercy, and her wisdom, none  
 Can deeme, but who the Godhead can define.

Why then do I, base shepheard, hold and blind,  
 Presume the things so sacred to prophane !

More fit it is t' adore, with humble mind,  
 The image of the heavens in shape humane."

With that Alexis broke his tale asunder,  
 Saying ; " By wondering at thy Cynthias praise,

Colin, thy selfe thou mak'st us more to wonder,  
 And her upraising doest thy selfe upraise.

But let us heare what grace she shewed thee,  
 And how that shepheard strange thy cause ad-  
 vanced."

" The Shepheard of the Ocean (quoth he)  
 Unto that Goddesse grace me first enbanced,

And to mine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare,  
 That she thenceforth therein gan take delight,

And it desir'd at timely honres to heare,  
 All were my notes but rude and roughly dight ;

For not by measure of her owne great mynd,  
 And wondrous worth, she mott my simple song,

But ioyd that cuntry shepheard ought could fynd  
 Worth harkening to, emongst the learned throng."

" Why ? (said Alexis then) what needeth shee  
 That is so great a shepheardesse her selfe,

And hath so many shepheards in her fee,  
 To heare thee sing, a simple silly elfe !

Or be the shepheards which do serve her laesie,  
 That they list not their mery pipes applie ?

Or be their pipes untunable and craesie,  
 That they cannot her honour worthylye ?"

" Ah ! nay (said Colin) neither so, nor so :  
 For better shepheards be not under skie,

Nor better hable, when they list to blow  
 Their pipes aloud, her name to glorifie.

There is good Harpalus, now woxen aged  
 In faithful service of faire Cynthia :

And there is Corydon though meanelly waged,  
 Yet habest wit of most I know this day.

And there is sad Aleyon bent to mourne,  
 Though fit to frame an everlasting dittie,

Whose gentle spright for Daphnes death doth tourn  
 Sweet layes of love to endlesse plaints of pittie.

Ah ! pensive boy, pursue that brave conceipt,  
 In thy sweet Eglantine of Merifute ;

Lift up thy notes unto their wonted height,  
 That may thy Muse and mates to mirth allure.

There eke is Palin worthie of great praise,  
 Albe he envie at my rustick quill :

And there is pleasing Aleon, could he raise  
 His tunes from laies to matter of more skill.

And there is old Palemon free from spight,  
 Whose careful pipe may make the hearer rew :

Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right,  
 That sung so long untill quite hoarse he grew.

And there is Alabaster throughly taught  
 In all this skill, though knownen yet to few ;

Yet, were he knowne to Cynthia as he ought,  
 His Elisis would be redde anew.

Who lives that can match that heroick song,

Ver. 365. — *she mott my simple song,*] Perhaps *mott* is the preterperfect of *mete*, i. e. *measure*. T. WARRON.  
 Ver. 403. *His Elisis &c.*] This is preserved among the



Which he hath of that mightie Princesse made ? 405  
 O dreaded Dread, do not thy selfe that wrong,  
 To let thy fame lie so in hidden shade :  
 But call it forth, O eall him forth to thee,  
 To end thy glorie which he hath begun :  
 That, when he finisht hath as it should be, 410  
 No braver Poeme can be under sun.  
 Nor Po nor Tyburns swans so much renowned,  
 Nor all the brood of Greece so highly praised,  
 Can match that Muse when it with bayes is crowned,  
 And to the pitch of her perfection raised. 415  
 And there is a new shepheard late up sprong,  
 The which doth all afore him far surpass ;  
 Appearing well in that well tuned song,  
 Which late he sung unto a scornfull lasse.  
 Yet doth his trembling Muse but lowly fie, 420  
 As daring not too rashly mount on hight,  
 And doth her tender plumes as yet but trie  
 In loves soft laies and looser thoughts delight.  
 Then rouze thy feathers quickly, Daniell,  
 And to what course thou please thy selfe advance : 425  
 But most, me seemes, thy accent will excell  
 In tragick plaints and passionate mischance.  
 And there that Shepheard of the Ocean is,  
 That spends his wit in loves consuming smart :  
 Full sweetly tempred is that Muse of his, 430  
 That can empierce a Princes mightie hart.  
 There also is (ah no, he is not now !)  
 But since I said he is, he quite is gone,  
 Amyntas quite is gone and lies full low,  
 Having his Amarylhis left to mone. 435  
 Helpe, O ye shepheards, helpe ye all in this,  
 Helpe Amarylhis this her losse to mourue ;  
 Her losse is yours, your losse Amyntas is,  
 Amyntas, floure of shepheards pride forlorne :  
 He whilst he lived was the noblest swaine, 440  
 That ever piped in an oaten quill :  
 Both did he other, which could pipe, maintaine.  
 And eke could pipe himselfe with passing skill.  
 And there, though last not least, is Aetion ;  
 A gentler shepheard may no where be found : 445  
 Whose Muse, full of high thoughts invention,  
 Doth like himselfe heroically sound.  
 All these, and many others mo remaine,  
 Now, after Astrofell is dead and gone :  
 But, while as Astrofell did live and raine, 450  
 Amongst all these was none his paragone.  
 All these do florish in their sundry kynd,  
 And do their Cynthia immortal make :  
 Yet found I lyking in her royall mynd,  
 Not for my skill, but for that shepheards sake." 455  
 Then spake a lovely lasse, hight Lucida ;  
 " Shepheard, enough of shepheards thou hast told,  
 Which favour thee, and honour Cynthia :  
 But of so many nymphs, which she doth hold 460  
 In her retinew, thou hast nothing sayd ;

That seems, with none of them thou favor foundest,  
 Or art ingrateful to each gentle mayd,  
 That none of all their due deserts resoundest."

" Ah far be it (quoth Colin Clout) fro me,  
 That I of gentle mayds should ill deserve : 465  
 For that my selfe I do professe to be  
 Vassall to one, whom all my dayes I serve ;  
 The beame of beautie sparkled from above,  
 The floure of vertue and pure elastitie,  
 The blossome of sweet ioy and perfect love, 470  
 The pearle of peerlesse grace and modestie :  
 To her my thoughts I daily dedicate,  
 To her my heart I nightly martyryze :  
 To her my love I lowly do prostrate,  
 To her my life I wholly sacrifice : 475  
 My thought, my heart, my love, my life is shee,  
 And I hers ever onely, ever one :  
 One ever I all vowed hers to bee,  
 One ever I, and others never none."

Then thus Melissa said ; " Thrise happie Mayd,  
 Whom thou doest so enforce to deifie : 481  
 That woods, and hills, and valleyes thou hast made  
 Her name to echo unto heaven hie.  
 But say, who else vouchsafed thee of grace ?"

" They all (quoth he) me graced goodly well, 485  
 That all I praise ; but, in the highest place,  
 Urania, sister unto Astrofell,  
 In whose brave mynd, as in a golden eofer,  
 All heavenly gifts and riches locked are ;  
 More rich then pearles of Ynde, or gold of Opher,  
 And in her sex more wonderfull and rare. 491  
 Ne lesse praise-worthie I Theana read,  
 Whose goodly beames though they be over dight  
 With mourning stole of carefull wydowhead,  
 Yet through that darksome vale do glisten bright ;  
 She is the well of boutie and brave mynd, 495  
 Excelling most in glorie and great light :  
 She is the ornament of womankind,  
 And courts chief garlond with all vertues dight.  
 Therefore great Cynthia her in chiefest grace 500  
 Doth hold, and next unto her selfe advance,  
 Well worthie of so honourable place,  
 For her great worth and noble governaee.  
 Ne lesse praise-worthie is her sister deare,  
 Faire Marian, the Muses onely darling : 505  
 Whose beautie shyneth as the morning cleare,  
 With silver deaw upon the roses pearling.  
 Ne lesse praise-worthie is Mansilia,  
 Best knowne by bearing up great Cythiaes traine :  
 That same is she to whom Daphnaida 510  
 Upon her neeces death I did complaine :  
 She is the paterne of true womanhead,  
 And onely mirrhor of feminitie :  
 Worthie next after Cynthia to tread,  
 As she is next her in nobilitie. 515  
 Ne lesse praise-worthie Galathea seemes,  
 Then best of all that honourable crew,  
 Faire Galathea with bright shining beames,  
 Inflaming feeble eyes that her do view.  
 She there then waited upon Cynthia, 520  
 Yet there is not her won ; but here with us  
 About the borders of our rich Coshma,  
 Now made of Maa, the Nymph delitious.  
 Ne lesse praiseworthy faire Neera is,  
 Neera ours, not theirs, though there she be ;  
 For of the famous Shure, the Nymph she is,  
 For high desert, advaunst to that degree.  
 She is the blossome of graee and curtesie,  
 Adorned with all honourable parts :  
 She is the branch of true nobilitie, 525

Manuscripts in Emmanuel College, Cambridge: and is numbered 1. 4. 16. It is entitled, *Eliseis, Apotheosis poetica, stoe. De florentissimo imperio et rebus gestis augustissimæ et invictissimæ principis Elizabethæ D. G. Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ, Reginæ. PŒMATIS in duodecim libros tribuendi LIBER PRIMUS. — AUREO GUGLIELMO ALABASTRO, Cantabrigiensi Colleg. Trin. —* It is dedicated to queen Elizabeth. Toun.

Ver. 429. *That spends his wit in loves consuming smart :*] Most of Sir Walter Raleigh's verses appear to have been of the amatory kind. Toun.

Ver. 434. *Amyntas &c.*] Amyntas is Ferdinando, Earl of Derby ; which poetical name he received also from Nash. Toun.

Belov'd of high and low with faithfull harts.  
 Ne lesse praiseworthy Stella do I read,  
 Though nought my praises of her needed arre,  
 Whom verse of noblest shepheard lately darre.  
 Hath prais'd and rais'd above each other starre.  
 Ne lesse praiseworthy are the sisters three, 536  
 The honor of the noble familie:  
 Of which I meanest boast my selfe to be,  
 And most that unto them I am so nie:  
 Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis; 540  
 Phyllis, the faire, is eldest of the three:  
 The next to her is bountifull Charillis:  
 But th' youngest is the highest in degree.  
 Phyllis, the floure of rare perfection,  
 Faire spreading forth her leaves with fresh delight, 546  
 That, with their beauties amorous reflexion,  
 Bereave of sence each rash beholders sight.  
 But sweet Charillis is the paragone  
 Of peerlesse price, and ornament of praise,  
 Admyr'd of all, yet envied of none, 550  
 Through the myld temperance of her goodly raies.  
 Thrise happie do I hold thee, noble swaine,  
 The which art of so rich a spoile possesst,  
 And, it embracing deare without disdain,  
 Hast sole possession in so chaste a brest: 556  
 Of all the shepheards daughters which there bee,  
 And yet there be the fairest under skie,  
 Or that elsewhere I ever yet did see,  
 A fairer Nymph yet never saw mine eie:  
 She is the pride and primrose of the rest, 560  
 Made by the Maker selfe to be admired;  
 And like a goodly beacon high address,  
 That is with sparks of heavenly beautie fired.  
 But Amaryllis, whether fortunate  
 Or else unfortunate may I aread, 566  
 That freed is from Cupids yoke by fate,  
 Since which she doth new bands adventure dread;—  
 Shepheard, what ever thou hast heard to be  
 In this or that prayd diversly apart,  
 In her thou maist them all assembled see, 570  
 And seald up in the treasure of her hart.  
 Ne thee lesse worthe, gentle Flavia,  
 For thy chaste life and vertue I esteeme:  
 Ne thee lesse worthe, curteous Candida,  
 For thy true love and loyaltie I deeme. 576  
 Besides yet many mo that Cynthia serve,  
 Right noble Nymphs, and high to be commended:  
 But, if I all should praise as they deserve,  
 This sun would faile me ere I halfe had ended.  
 Therefore, in closure of a thankfull mynd, 580  
 I deeme it best to hold eternally  
 Their bounteous deeds and noble favours shrynd,  
 Then by discourse them to indignifie."  
 So having said, Aglaura him bespake:  
 "Colin, well worthe were those goodly favours 586  
 Bestowd on thee, that so of them doest make,  
 And them requit with thy thankfull labours.  
 But of great Cynthiaes goodnesse, and high grace,  
 Finish the storie which thou hast begunne."  
 "More eath (quoth he) it is in such a case 590  
 How to begin, then know how to have donne.  
 For everie gift, and everie goodly meed,  
 Which she on me bestowd, demaunds a day;  
 And everie day, in which she did a deed,  
 Demaunds a yeare it duly to display. 596  
 Her words were like a streame of honny fleeting,  
 The which doth softly trickle from the hive:  
 Hable to melt the hearers heart unweeting,  
 And eke to make the dead againe alive.  
 Her deeds were like great clusters of ripe grapes, 600

Which load the bunches of the fruitfull vine;  
 Offring to fall into each mouth that gapes,  
 And fill the same with store of timely wine.  
 Her lookes were like beames of the morning sun,  
 Forth looking through the windowes of the east,  
 When first the fleecie cattell have begun 606  
 Upon the perled grasse to make their feast.  
 Her thoughts are like the fume of franckincence,  
 Which from a golden censer forth doth rise,  
 And throwing forth sweet odours mounts fro thence  
 In rolling globes up to the vaulted skies. 611  
 There she beholds, with high aspiring thought,  
 The cradle of her owne creation,  
 Emongst the seats of angels heavenly wrought,  
 Much like an angel in all forme and fashion." 616  
 "Colin, (said Cuddy then) thou hast forgot  
 Thy selfe, me seemes, too much, to mount so high:  
 Such loftie flight base shepheard seemeth not,  
 From flocks and fields, to angels and to skie."  
 "True, (answered he) but her great excellence, 620  
 Lifts me above the measure of my might:  
 That, being filld with furious insolence,  
 I feele my selfe like one yrap in spright.  
 For when I thinke of her, as oft I ought,  
 Then want I words to speake it fitly forth: 626  
 And, when I speake of her what I have thought,  
 I cannot thinke according to her worth.  
 Yet will I thinke of her, yet will I speake,  
 So long as life my limbs doth hold together;  
 And, when as death these vitall bands shall breake,  
 Her name recorded I will leave for ever. 631  
 Her name in every tree I will endosse,  
 That, as the trees do grow, her name may grow:  
 And in the ground each where will it engrosse,  
 And fill with stones, that all men may it know. 636  
 The speaking woods, and murmuring waters fall,  
 Her name Ile teach in known termes to frame:  
 And eke my lambs, when for their dauns they call,  
 Ile teach to call for Cynthia by name. 640  
 And, long while after I am dead and rotten,  
 Amongst the shepheards daughters dancing rownd,  
 My layes made of her shall not be forgotten,  
 But sung by them with flowry gyrlonds crownd.  
 And ye, who so ye be, that shall survive,  
 When as ye heare her memory renewed, 646  
 Be witnessse of her bountie here alive,  
 Which she to Colin her poore shepheard shewed."  
 Much was the whole assembly of those heards  
 Moov'd at his speech, so feelingly he spake:  
 And stood awhile astonish at his words, 650  
 Till Thestylis at last their silence brake,  
 Saying; "Why Colin, since thou foundst such grace  
 With Cynthia and all her noble crew;  
 Why didst thou ever leave that happie place,  
 In which such wealth might unto thee accrew; 656  
 And back returnedst to this barren soyle,  
 Where cold and care and penury do dwell,  
 Here to keep sheepe, with hunger and with toyle?  
 Most wretched he, that is and cannot tell."  
 "Happie indeed (said Colin) I him hold, 660  
 That may that blessed presence still enjoy,  
 Of fortune and of envy uncomptrold,  
 Which still are wont most happie states t' annoy:  
 But I, by that which little while I proved,  
 Some part of those enormities did see, 666

Ver. 622. — with furious insolence.] That is, with  
 UNUSUAL fury; INSOLENCE being here used as the Latin  
 insolentia sometimes is. Todd.

Ver. 632. — endosse] Carve or engrave. Todd.

The which in court continually hooved,  
 And followd those which happie seemd to bee.  
 Therefore I, silly man, whose former dayes  
 Had in rude fields bene altogether spent,  
 Durst not adventure such unknown wayes, 670  
 Nor trust the guile of fortunes blamishment;  
 But rather chose back to my sheep to tourne,  
 Whose utmost hardnesse I before had tryde,  
 Then, having learn'd repentance late, to mourne  
 Amongst those wretches which I there descrie.<sup>7</sup>

"Shepheard, (said Thestylis) it seemes of spight  
 Thou speakest thus gainst their felicitie,  
 Which thou enviest, rather then of right  
 That ought in them blameworthy thou doest spie."<sup>7</sup>

"Cauce have I none (quoth he) of cancerd will  
 To quite them ill, that me demaend so well: 681

But selfe-regard of private good or ill  
 Moves me of each, so as I found, to tell  
 And eke to warne yong shepheards wandring wit,  
 Which, through report of that lives painted blisse,  
 Abandon quiet home, to seeke for it, 685  
 And leave their lambes to losse misled amisse.

For, sooth to say, it is no sort of life,  
 For shepheard fit to lead in that same place,  
 Where each one seeks with malice, and with strife,  
 To thrust downe other into foule disgrace, 691

Himselfe to raise: and he doth soonest rise  
 That best can handle his deceitfull wit  
 In subtil shifts, and finest sleights devise,  
 Either by slaundring his well deemed name, 695  
 Through leasings lewd, and fained forgerie;  
 Or else by breeding him some blot of blame,  
 By creeping close into his secrecie;

To which him needs a guilefull hollow hart,  
 Masked with faire dissembling curtesie, 700  
 A filed tonng furnisht with tearmes of art,  
 No art of schoole, but courtiers schoolery.

For arts of schoole have there small countenance,  
 Counted but toys to busie ydle braines;  
 And there professors find small maintenance, 705  
 But to be instrumnts of others games.

Ne is there place for any gentle wit,  
 Unless, to please, it selfe it can applie;  
 But shouldred is, or out of doore quite shit,  
 As base, or blunt, unmeet for melodie. 710

For each mans worth is measured by his weed,  
 As harts by hornes, or asses by their eares:  
 Yet asses been not all whose eares exceed,  
 Nor yet all harts that hornes the highest beares.

For highest lookes have not the highest mynd, 715  
 Nor haughtie words most full of highest thoughts:  
 But are like bladders blownen up with wynd,  
 That being prickd do vanish into noughts.

Even such is all their vaunted vanitie,  
 Nought else but smoke, that fumeth soone away: 720  
 Such is their glorie that in simple eie  
 Seeme greatest, when their garments are most gay.

So they themselves for praise of fooles do sell,  
 And all their wealth for painting on a wall;  
 With price whereof they buy a golden bell, 725  
 And purchase highest rowmes in bowre and hall:

Whiles single Truth and simple Honestie  
 Do wander up and downe despys'd of all;  
 Their plaine attire such glorious gallantry  
 Disdaines so much, that none them in doth call." 730

"Ah! Colin, (then said Hobbino) the blame

Which thou imputest, is too generall,  
 As if not any gentle wit of name  
 Nor honest mynd might there be found at all.  
 For well I wot, sith I my selfe was there, 735

To wait on Lobbin, (Lobbin well thou knewest,)  
 Full many worthie ones then waiting were,  
 As ever else in princes court thou vestest.  
 Of which, among you many yet remaine, 740

Whose names I cannot readily now gesse:  
 Those that poore Sutors papers do retaine,  
 And those that skill of medicine professe,  
 And those that do to Cynthia expound 745

The ledden of straunge languages in charge:  
 For Cynthia doth in sciences abound,  
 And gives to their professors stipends large.  
 Therefore unjnstly thou doest wyte them all,  
 For that which thou mistikedst in a few."<sup>7</sup>

"Blame is (quoth he) more blamelesse generall,  
 Then that which private errours doth pursew; 750  
 For well I wot, that there amongst them bee  
 Full many persons of right worthie parts,

Both for report of spotlesse honestie,  
 And for profession of all learned arts,  
 Whose praise hereby no whit impaired is, 755  
 Though blame do light on those that faultie bee;

For all the rest do most-what far amis,  
 And yet their owne misfaring will not see:  
 For either they be puffed up with pride,  
 Or fraught with envie that their galls do swell, 760

Or they their dayes to ydlenesse divide,  
 Or drowned lie in pleasures wastefull well,  
 In which like moldwarps nousling still they lurke,  
 Unmindfull of chiefe parts of manlinesse;

And do themselves, for want of other worke, 765  
 Vaine votaries of laesie Love professe,  
 Whose service high so basely they ensew,  
 That Cupid selfe of them ashamed is,

And, mustring all his men in Venus wev,  
 Denies them quite for servitors of his." 770

"And is Love then (said Corylas) once knowne  
 In Court, and his sweet lore professed there!  
 I weened sure he was our god alone,  
 And only woode in fields and forests here:"

"Not so, (quoth he) Love most aboundeth there. 775  
 For all the walls and windows there are writ,  
 All full of love, and love, and love my deare,  
 And all their talke and studie is of it.

Ne any thre doth brave or valiant seeme,  
 Unless that some gay Mistresse badge he beares: 780  
 Ne any one himselfe doth ought esteeme,  
 Unless he swim in love up to the eares.

But they of Love, and of his sacred lere,  
 (As it should be) all otherwise devise,  
 Then we poore shepheards are accustomed here, 785  
 And him do sue and serve all otherwise.

For with lewd speeches, and licentious deeds,  
 His mightie mysteries they do prophane,  
 And use his ydle name to other needs,  
 But as a complement for courting vaine, 790

So him they do not serve as they professe,  
 But make him serve to them for sordid uses:  
 Ah! my dread Lord, that doest liege hearts possesse,  
 Avenge thy selfe on them for their abuses. 795

But we poore shepheards whether rightly so,  
 Or through our rudenesse into errour led,  
 Do make religion how we rashly go  
 To serve that god, that is so greatly dred;

Ver. 666. ——— hooved,] *Hovered.* Todd.

Ver. 710. *As base, or blunt,*] *Blunt is ignorant, or uncivilised.* Todd.

Ver. 744. *The ledden &c]* *Dialect;* a corruption, Mr. Tyrwhitt says, of *Latin.* Todd.

For him the greatest of the gods we deeme,  
 Borne without syre or couples of one kynd ; 800  
 For Venus selfe doth soly couples seeme,  
 Both male and female through commixture ioynd :  
 So pure and spotlesse Cupid forth she brought,  
 And in the Gardens of Adonis nurst :  
 Where growing he his owne perfection wrought, 805  
 And shortly was of all the gods the first.  
 Then got he bow and shafts of gold and lead,  
 In which so fell and puissant he grew,  
 That love himselfe his powre began to dread,  
 And, taking up to heaven, him godded new. 810  
 From thence he shootes his arrowes every where  
 Into the world, at random as he will,  
 On us fraile men, his wretched vassals here,  
 Like as himselfe us pleaseth save or spill.  
 So we him worship, so we him adore 815  
 With humble hearts to heaven uplifed hie,  
 That to true loves he may us evermore  
 Preferre, and of their grace us dignifie :  
 Ne is there shepheard, ne yet shepherds swaine,  
 What ever feeds in forest or in field, 820  
 That dare with evil deed or leasing vaine  
 Blaspheme his powre, or termes unworthie yield."  
 "Shepheard, it seemes that some celestiall rage  
 Of love (quoth Cuddy) is breath'd into thy brest,  
 That powreth forth these oracles so sage 825  
 Of that high powre, wherewith thou art possesst.  
 But never wist I till this present day,  
 Albe of Love I alwayes humbly deemed,  
 That he was such an one, as thou doest say,  
 And so religiously to be esteemed. 830  
 Well may it seeme, by this thy deep insight,  
 That of that god the priest thou shouldest bee :  
 So well thou wot'st the mysterie of his might,  
 As if his godhead thou didst present see."  
 "Of Loves perfection perfectly to speake, 835  
 Or of his nature rightly to define,  
 Indeed (said Colin) passeth reasons reach,  
 And needs his priest t' expresse his powre divine.  
 For long before the world he was ybore,  
 And bred above in Venus bosome deare : 840  
 For by his powre the world was made of yore,  
 And all that therein wondrous doth appeare.  
 For how should else things so far from attone,  
 And so great enemies as of them bee,  
 Be ever drawne together into one, 845  
 And taught in such accordance to agree ?  
 Through him the cold began to covet heat,  
 And water fire ; the light to mount on hie,  
 And th' heavie downe to peize ; the hungry t' eat,  
 And voydnesse to seeke full satietie. 850  
 So, being former foes, they waxed friends,  
 And gan by litle learne to love each other :  
 So, being knit, they brought forth other kynds  
 Out of the fruitfull wombe of their great mother.  
 Then first gan heaven out of darknesse dread 855  
 For to appeare, and brought forth chearfull day :  
 Next gan the earth to shew her naked head,  
 Out of deep waters which her drown'd alway :  
 And, shortly after, everie living wight  
 Crept forth like wormes out of her slimie nature. 860  
 Soone as on them the suns life-giving light  
 Had powred kindly heat and formall feature,  
 Thenceforth they gan each one his like to love,  
 And like himselfe desire for to beget :  
 The lyon chose his mate, the turtle dove 865  
 Her deare, the dolphin his owne dolphinet ;  
 But man, that had the sparke of reasons might  
 More taen the rest to rule his passion,

Chose for his love the fairest in his sight,  
 Like as himselfe was fairest by creation ; 870  
 For Beautie is the bayt which with delight  
 Doth man allure for to enlarge his kynd ;  
 Beautie, the burning lamp of heavens light,  
 Darting her beames into each feeble mynd :  
 Against whose powre, nor God nor man can fynd  
 Defence, ne ward the daunger of the wound ; 875  
 But, being hurt, seeke to be medicynd  
 Of her that first did stir that mortall stownd.  
 Then do they cry and call to Love apace,  
 With praiers lowd importuning the skie, 880  
 Whence he them heares ; and, when he list shew  
 grace,  
 Does graunt them grace that otherwise would die.  
 So Love is lord of all the world by right,  
 And rules their creatures by his powrfull saw :  
 All being made the vassalls of his might, 885  
 Through secret sence which therto doth them draw.  
 Thus ought all lovers of their lord to deeme :  
 And with chaste heart to honor him alway :  
 But who so else doth otherwise esteeme,  
 Are outlawes, and his lore do disobay. 890  
 For their desire is base, and doth not merit  
 The name of love, but of disloyall lust :  
 Ne mongst true lovers they shall place inherit,  
 But as exuls out of his court be thrust."  
 So having said, Melissa spake at will ; 895  
 "Colin, thou now full deeply hast divynd  
 Of Love and Beautie ; and, with wondrous skill,  
 Hast Cupid selfe depainted in his kynd.  
 To thee are all true lovers greatly bound,  
 That doest their cause so mightily defend : 900  
 But most, all women are thy debtors found,  
 That doest their hountie still so much commend."  
 "That ill (said Hobbinol) they him requite,  
 For having loved ever one most deare :  
 He is repayd with scorne and foule despite, 905  
 That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth heare."  
 "Indeed (said Lucid) I have often heard  
 Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed  
 For being to that swaine too cruell hard ;  
 That her bright glorie else hath much defamed. 910  
 But who can tell what cause had that faire Mayd  
 To use him so that used her so well ;  
 Or who with blame can iustly her upbrayd,  
 For loving not ? for who can love compell ?  
 And, sooth to say, it is foolhardie thing, 915  
 Rashly to wyten creatures so divine ;  
 For demigods they be and first did spring  
 From heaven, though graft in frailnesse femiine.  
 And well I wote, that oft I heard it spoken, 920  
 How one, that fairest Helene did revile,  
 Through iudgement of the gods to been ywroken,  
 Lost both his eyes and so remaynd long while,  
 Till he recanted had his wicked rimes,  
 And made amends to her with treble praise.  
 Beware therefore, ye groomes, I read betimes, 925  
 How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise."  
 "Ah! shepherds, (then said Colin) ye ne weet  
 How great a guilt upon your heads ye draw,  
 To make so bold a doome, with words unmeet,  
 Of things celestiall which ye never saw. 930

Ver. 884. — by his powerfull saw : ] Sentence, decree.  
 T. WARTON.

Ver. 906. That yrkes each gentle heart ] That grieves  
 each gentle heart. Todd.

Ver. 920. How one &c.] He speaks of the poet Stesichorus.  
 JOHNSON.

For she is not like as the other crew  
 Of shepherds daughters which amongst you bee,  
 But of divine regard and heavenly hew,  
 Excelling all that ever ye did see.  
 Not then to her that scorned thing so base, 985  
 But to my selfe the blame that lookt so hie :  
 So hie her thoughts as she her selfe have place,  
 And loath each lowly thing with loftie eie.  
 Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to grant  
 To simple swaine, sith her I may not love : 940  
 Yet that I may her honour paravant,  
 And praise her worth, though far my wit above.  
 Sneh grace shall be some guerdon for the grieffe,

And long affliction which I have endured ;  
 Such grace sometimes shall give me some reliefe,  
 And ease of paine which cannot be recured. 946  
 And ye, my fellow shepherds, which do see  
 And hear the languours of my too long dying,  
 Unto the world for ever witnesse bee,  
 That hers I die, nought to the world denying, 951  
 This simple trophe of her great conquest."—  
 So, having ended, he from ground did rise ;  
 And after him uprose eke all the rest :  
 All loth to part, but that the glooming skies 954  
 Warn'd them to draw their bleating flocks to rest.

## ASTROPHEL.

### A PASTORALL ELEGIE

UPON THE DEATH OF THE MOST NOBLE AND VALOROUS KNIGHT, SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

DEDICATED TO THE MOST BEAUTIFULL AND VERTUOUS LADIE, THE COUNTESS OF ESSEX.

SHEPHERDS, that wont, on pipes of oaten reed,  
 Oft times to plaine your loves concealed smart ;  
 And with your piteous layes have leard to breed  
 Compassion in a countrey lasses hart :  
 Hearken, ye gentle shepherds, to my song,  
 And place my dolefull plaint your plaints emong.

To you alone I sing this mournfull verse,  
 The mournfullst verse that ever man heard tell :  
 To you whose softened hearts it may empierse

With dolours dart for death of Astrophel.  
 To you I sing and to none other wight,  
 For well I wot my rymes bene rudely dight.

Yet as they been, if any nyער wit  
 Shall hap to heare, or covet them to read :  
 Thinke he, that such are for such ones most fit,  
 Made not to please the living but the dead.  
 And if in him found pity ever place,  
 Let him be moov'd to pity such a case.

A GENTLE Shepheard borne in Arcady,  
 Of gentlest race that ever shepheard bore,  
 About the grassie bancks of Hemony,  
 Did keepe his sheep, his litle stock and store.  
 Full carefully he kept them day and night, 5  
 In fairest fields ; and Astrophel he hight.

Young Astrophel, the pride of shepherds praise,  
 Young Astrophel, the rusticke lasses love :  
 Far passing all the pastors of his daies,  
 In all that seemly shepheard might behove. 10  
 In one thing onely fayling of the best,  
 That he was not so happie as the rest.

For from the time that first the Nymph his mother  
 Him forth did bring, and taught her lambs to feed ;  
 A sclender swaine, excelling far each other, 15  
 In comely shape, like her that did him breed,  
 He grew up fast in goodnesse and in grace,  
 And doubly faire woxe both in mynd and face.

Which daily more and more he did augment,  
 With gentle usage and demeanure myld : 20  
 That all mens hearts with secret ravishment  
 He stole away, and weetingly beguyld.

Ne Spight it selfe, that all good things doth spill,  
 Found ought in him, that she could say was ill.

His sports were faire, his ioyance innocent, 25  
 Sweet without sowre, and honny without gall :  
 And he himselfe seemd made for meriment,  
 Merily masking both in bowre and hall.  
 There was no pleasure nor delightfull play,  
 When Astrophel so ever was away. 30

For he could pipe, and daunce, and caroll sweet,  
 Emongst the shepherds in their shearing feast ;  
 As somers lark that with her song doth greet  
 The dawning day forth comming from the East.  
 And layes of love he also could compose : 35  
 Thrise happie she, whom he to praise did chose.

Full many Maydens often did him woo,  
 Them to vouchsafe amongst his rimes to name,  
 Or make for them as he was wont to doo  
 For her that did his heart with love inflame. 40  
 For which they promised to dight for him  
 Gay chapelets of flowers and gylronds trim.

And many a Nymph both of the wood and brooke,  
 Soone as his oaten pipe began to shrill,  
 Both christall wells and shadie groves forsooke 45

To heare the charmes of his enchanting skill ;  
And brought him presents, flowers if it were prime,  
Or mellow fruit if it were harvest time.

But he for none of them did care a whit,  
Yet Woodgods for them often sighed sore : 50  
Ne for their gifts unworthie of his wit,  
Yet not unworthie of the countries store.  
For one alone he cared, for one he sigh't,  
His lifes desire, and his deare loves delight.

Stella the faire, the fairest star in skie, 55  
As faire as Venus or the fairest faire,  
(A fairer star saw never living eie),  
Shot her sharp pointed beames through purest aire.  
Her he did love, her he alone did honor,  
His thoughts, his rimes, his songs were all upon  
her. 60

To her he vovd the service of his daies,  
On her he spent the riches of his wit :  
For her he made hymnes of immortal praise,  
Of onely her he sung, he thought, he writ. 65  
Her, and but her, of love he worthie deemed ;  
For all the ydle but litle he esteemed.

Ne her with ydle words alone he wowed,  
And verses vaine, (yet verses are not vaine,)  
But with brave deeds to her sole service vowed,  
And bold atcheyvements her did entertaîne. 70  
For both in deeds and words he nourtred was,  
Both wise and hardie, (too hardie alas !)

In wrestling nimble, and in renning swift,  
In shooting steddie, and in swimming strong : 75  
Well made to strike, to throw, to leape, to lift,  
And all the sports that shepherds are among.  
In every one he vanquisht every one,  
He vanquisht all, and vanquisht was of none.

Besides, in hunting such felicitie  
Or rather infelicitie he found, 80  
That every field and forest far away  
He sought, where salvage beasts do most abound.  
No beast so salvage but he could it kill,  
No chace so hard, but he therein had skill.

Such skill, matcht with such courage as he had, 85  
Did prick him forth with proud desire of praise  
To seek abroad, of daunger nought y'drad,  
His mistresse name, and his owne fame, to raise.  
What needeth perill to be sought abroad,  
Since, round about us, it doth make abroad ! 90

It fortun'd as he that perilous game  
In forreine soyle pursned far away ;  
Into a forest wide and waste he came,  
Where store he heard to be of salvage pray. 95  
So wide a forest and so waste as this,  
Nor famous Ardeyn, nor fowle Arlo, is.

There his welwoven toyles, and subtil traines,  
He laid the brutish nation to enwrap :  
So well he wrought with practise and with paines,  
That he of them great troupes did soone entrap. 100

Ver. 55. *Stella the faire, &c.*] This means Sir Philip's beloved mistress, as the name Astrophel points out Sir Philip himself. Tonn.

Full happie man (misweening much) was hee,  
So rich a spoile within his power to see.

Eftsoones, all heedlesse of his dearest hale,  
Fnl greedily into the heard he thrust, 105  
To slaughter them, and worke their finall bale, 105  
Least that his toyle should of their troupes be bust.  
Wide wounds amongst them many one he made,  
Now with his sharp borespear, now with his blade.

His care was all how he them all might kill,  
That none might scape, (so partiall unto none :) 110  
Ill mynd so much to mynd anothers ill,  
As to become unmyndfull of his owne.  
But pardon that unto the cruell skies,  
That from himselfe to them withdrew his eies.

So as be rag'd amongst that beastly rout, 115  
A cruell beast of most accursed brood  
Upon him turnd, (despeyre makes eowards stout,)  
And, with fell tooth accustomed to blood,  
Launched his thigh with so mischievous might,  
That it both bone and muscles ryved quight. 120

So deadly was the dint and deep the wondd,  
And so hnge streames of blood thereout did flow,  
That he endured not the hirefull stonnd,  
But on the cold deare earth himselfe did throw ;  
The whiles the captive heard his nets did rend, 125  
And, having none to let, to wood did wend.

Ah ! where were ye this while his shepheard peares,  
To whom alive was nought so deare as hee :  
And ye faire Mayds, the matches of his yeares,  
Which in his grace did boast you most to bee ! 130  
Ah ! where were ye, when he of you had need,  
To stop his wound that wondrously did bleed !

Ah ! wretched boy, the shape of dreryhead,  
And sad ensample of mans suddien end : 135  
Full litle faileth but thou shalt be dead,  
Unpitied, unplaynd, of foe or frend !  
Whilset none is nigh, thine ey lids up to close,  
And kisse thy lips like faded leaves of rose.

A sort of shepherds sewing of the chace, 140  
As they the forest raunged on a day,  
By fate or fortune came unto the place,  
Where as the lucklesse boy yet bleeding lay ;  
Yet bleeding lay, and yet would still have bled,  
Had not good hap those shepherds thether led.

They stopt his wound, (too late to stop it was !) 145  
And in their armes then softly did him reare :  
Tho (as he wild) unto his loved lasse,  
His dearest love, him dolefully did beare.  
The dolefulst biere that ever man did see,  
Was Astrophel, but dearest unto mee ! 150

She, when she saw her Love in such a plight,  
With cruded blood and filthie gore deformed,  
That wont to be with flowers and gyrlonds dight,  
And her deare favours dearly well adorned ;  
Her face, the fairest face that eye mote see, 155  
Sbe likewise did deforme like him to bee.

Ver. 103. — hale,] *Welfare*, Sax. *hœl*. sanitas, salus. Tonn.

Ver. 139. *A sort of shepherds &c.*] *A company of shepherds, &c.* T WARTON.

Her yellow locks that shone so bright and long,  
 As sunny beames in fairest somers day,  
 She fierly tore, and with outrageous wrong  
 From her red cheeks the roses rent away : 160  
 And her faire brest, the treasury of ioy,  
 She spoyled thereof, and filled with annoy.

His palled face, impictured with death,  
 She bathed oft with teares and dried oft :  
 And with sweet kisses suckt the wasting breath 165  
 Out of his lips like lillies pale and soft.  
 And oft she cald to him, who answerd nought,  
 But only by his lookes did tell his thought.

The rest of her impatient regret,  
 And piteous mone the which she for him made, 170  
 No toong can tell, nor any forth can set,  
 But he whose heart like sorrow did invade.  
 At last, when paine his vitall powres had spent,  
 His wasted life her weary lodge forwent.

Which when she saw, she staied not a whit, 175  
 But after him did make untimely haste :  
 Forth with her ghost out of her corps did flit,  
 And followed her make like turtle chaste :  
 To prove that death their hearts cannot divide,  
 Which living were in love so firmly tide. 180

The gods, which all things see, this same beheld,  
 And, pitying this paire of lovers trew,  
 Transformed them there lying on the field  
 Into one flowre that is both red and blew :  
 It first growes red, and then to blew doth fade, 185  
 Like Astrophel, which thereinto was made.

And in the midst thereof a star appears,  
 As fairly formd as any star in skyes :  
 Resembling Stella in her freshest yeares,  
 Forth darting beames of beautie from her eyes ;  
 And all the day it standeth full of dew, 191  
 Which is the teares, that from her eyes did flow.

That hearbe of some, Starlight is cald by name,  
 Of others Penthia, though not so well :  
 But thou, where ever thou doest finde the same, 196  
 From this day forth do call it Astrophel :  
 And, when so ever thou it up doest take,  
 Do pluck it softly for that shepherds sake.

Hereof when tydings far abroad did passe,  
 The shepherds all which loved him full deare, 200  
 And sure full deare of all he loved was,  
 Did thether flock to see what they did heare.  
 And when that pitteous spectacle they vewed,  
 The same with bitter teares they all bedewed.

And every one did make exceeding mone, 205  
 With inward anguish and great griefe opprest :  
 And every one did weep and waile, and mone,  
 And meanes devis'd to shew his sorrow best.  
 That from that houre, since first on grassie greene  
 Shepherds keptsheep, was not like mourning seen. 210

But first his sister that Clorinda hight,  
 The gentlest shepherdesse that lives this day,  
 And most resembling both in shape and spright  
 Her brother deare, began this dolefull lay.  
 Which, least I marre the sweetnesse of the vearse, 216  
 In sort as she it sung I will rehearse.

## THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA.

AY me, to whom shall I my ease complaine,  
 That may compassion my impatient griefe !  
 Or where shall I unfold my inward paine,  
 That my enriuen heart may find reliefe !  
 Shall I unto the heavenly powres it show ?  
 Or unto earthly men that dwell below ?

To heavens ? ah ! they alas ! the authors were,  
 And workers of my unremedied wo :  
 For they foresee what to us happens here,  
 And they foresaw, yet suffred this be so.  
 From them comes good, from them comes also ill,  
 That which they made, who can them warne to  
 spill !

To men ? ah ! they alas like wretched bee,  
 And subiect to the heavens ordinance :  
 Bound to abide what ever they decree,  
 Their best redresse, is their best suffurance.  
 How then can they, like wretched, comfort mee,  
 The which no lesse need comforted to bee ?

Ver. 178. — her make] *Mate, companion* ; the old word. Todd.

Then to my selfe will I my sorrow mourne,  
 Sith none alive like sorrowfull remains :  
 And to my selfe my plaints shall back retourne,  
 To pay their usury with doubled paines.  
 The woods, the hills, the rivers, shall resound  
 The mournfull accent of my sorrowes ground.

Woods, hills, and rivers, now are desolate,  
 Sith he is gone the which them all did grace :  
 And all the fields do waile their widow state,  
 Sith death their fairest flowre did late deface.  
 The fairest flowre in field that ever grew,  
 Was Astrophel ; that was, we all may rew.

What cruell hand of cursed foe unknowne,  
 Hath crompt the stalke which bore so faire a flowre ?

Ver. 215. *Which, least I marre the sweetnesse of the vearse, In sort as she it sung I will rehearse.* From this avowal I conclude that the following poem was not written by Spenser, but by the sister of Sir Philip, the accomplished Mary Countess of Pembroke, here poetically called *Clorinda*. All the subsequent poems on the death of Sir Philip are evidently a collection brought together by Spenser. Todd.

Untimely cropt, before it well were growne,  
And cleane defaced in untimely howre.  
Great losse to all that ever him did see,  
Great losse to all, but greatest losse to mee !

Breake now your gyrlonds, O ye shepherds lasses,  
Sith the faire flowre, which them adornd, is gon :  
The flowre, which them adornd, is gone to ashes,  
Never againe let lasse put gyrlond on.  
In stead of gyrlond, weare sad Cypros nowe,  
And bitter Elder, broken from the howe.

Ne ever sing the love-layes which he made,  
Who ever made such layes of love as hee !  
Ne ever read the riddles, which he sayd  
Unto your selves, to make you mery glee.  
Your mery glee is now laid all abed,  
Your mery maker now alas ! is dead.

Death, the devourer of all worlds delight,  
Hath robbed you, and reft fro me my ioy :  
Both you and me, and all the world he quight  
Hath robd of ioyance, and left sad annoy.  
Ioy of the world, and shepherds pride was hee !  
Shepherds, hope never like againe to see !

Oh Death ! that hast us of such riches reft,  
Tell us at least, what hast thou with it done ?  
What is become of him whose flowre here left  
Is but the shadow of his likeness gone ?  
Scarse like the shadow of that which he was,  
Nought like, but that he like a shade did pas.

But that immortall spirit, which was deckt  
With all the dowries of celestially grace,  
By soveraine choyce from th' heavenly quires select,  
And lineally deriv'd from Angels race,  
O ! what is now of it become aread.  
Ay me, can so divine a thing be dead ?

Ah ! no : it is not dead, ne can it die,  
But lives for aie, in blisfull Paradise :  
Where like a new-borne babe it soft doth lie,  
In bed of lillies wrapt in tender wise ;

And compast all about with roses sweet,  
And daintie violets from head to feet.

There thousand birds all of celestially brood,  
To him do sweetly caroll day and night ;  
And with straunge notes, of him well understood,  
Lull him a sleep in angelick delight ;  
Whilst in sweet dreame to him presented bee  
Immortall beauties, which no eye may see.

But he them sees and takes exceeding pleasure  
Of their divine aspects, appearing plaine,  
And kindling love in him above all measure,  
Sweet love still ioyous, never feeling paine.  
For what so goodly forme he there doth see,  
He may enjoy from iealous rancor free.

There liveth he in everlasting blis,  
Sweet Spirit never fearing more to die :  
Ne dreading harme from any foes of his,  
Ne fearing salvage beasts more cruelie.  
Whilst we here, wretches, waile his private lack,  
And with vaine vowes do often call him back.

But live thou there, still happie, happie Spirit,  
And give us leave thee here thus to lament !  
Not thee that doest thy heavens ioy inherit,  
But our owne selves that here in dole are drent.  
Thus do we weep and waile, and wear our eies,  
Mourning, in others, our owne miseries.

WHICH when she ended had, another swaine  
Of gentle wit and daintie sweet device,  
Whom Astrophel full deare did entertaine,  
Whilst here he liv'd, and held in passing price,  
Hight Thestylis, began his mournfull tourne :  
And made the Muses in his song to mourne.

And after him full many other moe,  
As everie one in order lov'd him best,  
Can dight themselves t' expresse their inward woe,  
With dolefull layes unto the time address.  
The which I here in order will rehearse,  
As fittest flowres to deck his mournfull hearse.

## THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS\*.

COME forth, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake your  
watry bowres,  
Forsake your mossy caves, and help me to lament :  
Help me to tune my dolefull notes to gurgling sound  
Of Liffies tumbling streames : Come, let salt tears  
of ours,  
Mix with his waters fresh. O come, let one consent  
Ioyne us to mourne with wailfull plaints the deadly  
wound

\* In 1587 the following licence, among others, was granted by the Stationers' Company to John Wolf, printer, viz. "The mourning Muses of Lod. Brysket upon the death of the most noble Sir Phillip Sydney knight &c." Todd.

Which fatal clap hath made ; decreed by higher  
powres.  
The dreery day in which they have from us yrent  
The noblest plant that might from East to West be  
found.  
Mourne, mourn, great Phillips fall, mourn we his  
wofull end,  
Whom spitefull death hath pluct untimely from the  
tree,  
Whiles yet his yeares in flowre did promise worthie  
frute.

Ah dreadful Mars, why didst thou not thy knight  
defend ? [thee  
What wrathfull mood, what fault of ours, hath mov'd



Of such a shining light to leave us destitute ?  
 Thou with benigne aspect sometime didst us behold,  
 Thou hast in Britons valour tane delight of old,  
 And with thy presence oft vouchsaf't to attribute  
 Fame and renowne to us for glorious martiall deeds.  
 But now their [thy] ireful beemes have chill'd our  
 hearts with cold ;  
 Thou hast estrang'd thy self, and deignest not our  
 land :  
 Farre off to others now thy favour honour breeds,  
 And high disdaine doth cause thee shun our clime,  
 (I feare ;)   
 For hadst thou not bene wroth, or that time neare  
 at hand,  
 Thou wouldst have heard the cry that wofull Eng-  
 land made ;  
 Eke Zeland's piteous plaints, and Hollands toren  
 heare,  
 Would haply have appeas'd thy divine angry mynd :  
 Thou shouldst have seen the trees refuse to yeeld  
 their shade,  
 And wailing to let fall the honor of their head ;  
 And birds in mournfull tunes lamenting in their  
 kinde.  
 Up from his tombe the mightie Corineus rose,  
 Who cursing off the fates that this mishap had bred,  
 His hoary locks he tare, calling the heavens unkinde.  
 The Thames was heard to roare, the Reyne and  
 eke the Mose,  
 The Schald, the Danow selfe, this great mischance  
 did rue,  
 With torment and with grief: their fountains pure  
 and cleere  
 Were troubled, and with swelling flouds declar'd  
 their woes.  
 The Muses comfortes, the Nymphs with paled hue,  
 The Silvan gods likewise, came running farre and  
 neere, [hie ;  
 And all with teares bedew'd, and eyes cast up on  
 O help, O help, ye gods, thy ghastly gan to crie.  
 O change the cruell fate of this so rare a wight,  
 And graunt that natures course may measure out  
 his age. [fully,  
 The beasts their foode forsooke, and, trembling fear-  
 Each sought his cave or den, this cry did them so  
 fright.  
 Out from amid the waves, by storme then stir'd to  
 rage,  
 This crie did cause to rise th' old father Ocean hoare,  
 Who grave with eld, and full of maiestie in sight,  
 Spake in this wise. " Refrain (quoth he) your  
 teares and plaints,  
 Cease these your idle words, make vaine requests  
 no more.  
 No humble speech, nor mone, may move the fixed  
 stint  
 Of destinie or death : Such is his will that paints  
 The earth with colours fresh ; the darkest skies  
 with store [flint  
 Of starry lights : And though your teares a hart of  
 Might tender make, yet nought herein they will  
 prevaile."  
 Whiles thus he said, the noble knight, who gan  
 to feele  
 His vitall force to faint, and death with cruell dint  
 Of direfull dart his mortall bodie to assaile, [steale,  
 With eyes lift up to heav'n, and courage franke as  
 With cheerfull face, where valour lively was exprest,  
 But humble mynd, he said. " O Lord, if ought this  
 fraile

And earthly carcasse have thy service sought t'  
 advance ;  
 If my desire have bene still to relieve th' opprest ;  
 If iustice to maintaine that valour I have spent  
 Which thou me gav'st ; or if henceforth I might  
 advance  
 Thy name, thy truth, then spare me (Lord) if thou  
 think best ;  
 Forbeare these unripe yeares. But if thy will be  
 bent,  
 If that prefixed time be come which thou hast set ;  
 Through pure and fervent faith, I hope now to be  
 plast  
 In th' everlasting blis, which with thy precious  
 blood  
 Thou purchase didst for us." With that a sigh he set,  
 And straight a cloudie mist his senses overcast ;  
 His lips waxt pale and wan, like damaske roses bnd  
 Cast from the stalke, or like in field to purple flowre,  
 Which languisheth being shred by culter as it past.  
 A trembling chilly cold ran through their veines,  
 which were  
 With eies brimfull of teares to see his fatall howre,  
 Whose blustering sighes at first their sorrow did  
 declare,  
 Next, murmuring ensude ; at last they not forbear  
 Plaine outcries, all against the heav'ns that enviously  
 Depriv'd us of a spright so perfect and so rare.  
 The Sun his lightsom beames did shrowd, and hide  
 his face  
 For grieft, whereby the earth feard night eternally:  
 The mountaines eachwhere shooke, the rivers  
 turn'd their streames,  
 And th' aire gan winterlike to rage and frett apace :  
 And grisly ghosts by night were scene, and fierie  
 gleames,  
 Amid the clouds with claps of thunder, that did  
 seeme [afear'd  
 To rent the skies, and made both man and beast  
 The birds of ill presage this lucklesse chance fore-  
 told,  
 By dernfull noise ; and dogs with howling made  
 man deeme  
 Some mischief was at hand: for such they do esteeme  
 As tokens of mishap, and so have done of old.  
 Ah ! that thou hadst but heard his lovely Stella  
 plaine [cheere,  
 Her greivous losse, or seene her heavie mourning  
 While she, with woe opprest, her sorrowes did unfold.  
 Her haire hung lose, neglect, about her shoulders  
 twaine ;  
 And from those two bright starres, to him some-  
 time so deere [downe  
 Her heart sent drops of pearle, which fell in foyson  
 Twixt lilly and the rose. She wroong her hands  
 with paine,  
 And piteously gan say : " My true and faithfull  
 pheere,  
 Alas, and woe is me, why should my fortune frowne  
 On me thus frowardly to rob me of my ioy !  
 What cruell envious hand hath taken thee away,  
 And with thee my content, my comfort, and my stay ?  
 Thou onlie wast the ease of trouble and annoy,  
 When they did me assaile ; in thee my hopes did rest.  
 Alas, what now is left but grief, that night and day  
 Afflicts this wofull life, and with continuall rage  
 Torments ten thousand waies my miserable brest !  
 O greedie envious heav'n, what needed thee to have  
 Enrich with such a Jewell this unhappie age ;  
 To take it back againe so soone ! Alas, when shalt

Mine eies see ought that may content them, since  
thy grave,

My onely treasure, hides the ioyes of my poore hart !  
As here with thee on earth I liv'd, even so equall  
Me thinks it were with thee in heav'n I did abide:  
And as our troubles all we here on earth did part,  
So reason would that there of thy most happie state  
I had my share. Alas, if thou my trustie guide  
Were wont to be, how canst thou leave me thus  
alone

In darknesse and astray ; weake, wearie, desolate,  
Plung'd in a world of woe, refusing for to take  
Me with thee to the place of rest where thou art  
gone !" [toong ;

This said, she held her peace, for sorrow tide her  
And instead of mere words, seemd that her eies a  
lake

Of teares had bene, they flow'd so plenteously  
therefro :

And, with her sobs and sighs, th' aire round about  
her roong.

If Venus, when she wail'd her deare Adonisslaine,  
Ought moov'd in thy fiers hart compassion of her  
wee,

His noble sisters plaints, her sighes and teares  
emong,

Would sure have made thee milde, and inly rue  
her paine :

Aurora halfe so faire her selfe did never show,  
When, from old Tithons bed, shee weeping did arise.  
The blinded archer-boy, like larke in showre of raine,  
Sat bathing of his wings, and glad the time did  
spend

Under those cristall drops, which fell from her faire  
eies ; [wise.

And at their brightest beames him proynd in lovely  
Yet sorie for her grief, which he could not amend,  
The gentle boy gan wipe her eies, and clear those  
lights,

Those lights through which his glory and his con-  
quests shine.

The Graces tuckt her hair, which hung like threds  
of gold,

Along her yvorie brest, the treasure of delights.  
All things with her to weep, it seemed, did encline,  
The trees, the hills, the dales, the caves, the stones  
so cold.

The aire did help them mourne, with dark clouds,  
raine, and mist,

Forbearing many a day to cleare it selfe againe ;  
Which made them eftsoones feare the daies of  
Pirrha shold

Of creatures spoile the earth, their fatal threds  
untwist.

For Phoebus gladsome raies were wished for in  
vaine,

And with her quivering light Latonas daughter  
faire,

And Charles-waine eke refus'd to be the shipmans  
guide. [traine,

On Neptune warre was made by Aeolus and his

Who, letting loose the winds, tost and tormented  
th' aire,

So that on ev'ry coast men shipwrack did abide,  
Or else were swallowed up in open sea with waves,  
And such as came to shoare were beaten with  
despaire.

The Medwaies silver streames, that wont so still to  
slide, [hollow caves,

Were troubled now and wrothe ; whose hidden  
Along his banks with fog then shrowded from mans  
eye,

Ay Phillip did resownd, aie Phillip they did crie.  
His Nymphs were seen no more (thogh custom stil  
it craves)

With haire spred to the wynd themselves to bath  
or spert,

Or with the hooke or net, barefooted wantonly,  
The pleasant daintie fish to entangle or deceive.

The shepheards left their wonted places of resort,  
Their bagpipes now were still ; their loving mery  
layes

Were quite forgot ; and now their flocks men  
might perceive

To wander and to straie, all carelesly neglect.  
And, in the stead of mirth and pleasure, nights and  
dayes

Nought els was to be heard, but woes, complaints,  
and mone.

But thou (O blessed soule !) doest haply not  
respect [affect,

These teares we shead, though full of loving pure  
Having affixt thine eyes on that most glorious  
throne,

Where full of maiestie the High Creator reignes ;  
In whose bright shining face thy ioyes are all com-  
plete,

Whose love kindles thy spright ; where, happie  
alwaies one,

Thou liv'st in blis that earthly passion never staines ;  
Where from the purest spring the sacred Nectar  
sweete [now

Is thy continuall drinke ; where thou doest gather  
Of well employed life th' inestimable gaines.

There Venus on thee smiles, Apollo gives thee place,  
And Mars in reverent wise doth to thy vertue bow,  
And decks his fiery sphere, to do thee honour most.

In highest part whereof, thy valour for to grace,  
A chaire of gold he sets to thee, and there doth  
tell

Thy noble acts arew, whereby even they that boast  
Themselves of auncient fame, as Pirrhus, Hanniball,  
Scipio, and Cæsar, with the rest that did excell  
In martiall prowess, high thy glorie do admire.

All haile, therefore, O wortheie Phillip immortall,  
The floure of Sydneys race, the honour of thy  
name !

Whose wortheie praise to sing, my Muses not aspire,  
But sorrowfull and sad these teares to thee let fall,  
Yet wish their verses might so farre and wide thy  
fame [same.

Extend, that envies rage, nor time, might end the

## A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE,

UPON THE DEATH OF SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT, &c.\*

LYCON. COLIN.

COLIN, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd,  
This wofull stownd, wherein all things complaine  
This great mishap, this greevous losse of owres.  
Hear'st thou the Orown? how with hollow sownd  
He slides away, and murmuring doth plaine,  
And seemes to say unto the fading flowres,  
Along his bankes, unto the bared trees;  
Phyllisides is dead. Up, iolly swaine,  
Thou that with skill canst tune a dolefull lay,  
Help him to mourn. My hart with grief doth  
freese,

Hoarse is my voice with crying, else a part  
Sure would I beare, though rude: But, as I may,  
With sobs and sighes I second will thy song,  
And so expresse the sorrowes of my hart.

*Colin.* Ah Lycon, Lycon, what need skill, to  
teach

A grieved mynd powre forth his plaints! how long  
Hath the pore turtle gon to school (weenest thou)  
To learne to mourne her lost make! No, no, each  
Creature by nature can tell how to waile.  
Seest not these flocks, how sad they wander now?  
Seemeth their leaders bell their bleating tunes  
In dolefull sound. Like him, not one doth faile  
With hanging head to shew a heaue cheare,  
What bird (I pray thee) hast thou seen, that prunes  
Himselfe of late? did any cheerfull note  
Come to thine eares, or gladsome sight appeare  
Unto thine eies, since that same fatal howre?  
Hath not the aire put on his mourning coat,  
And testified his grief with flowing teares?  
Sith then, it seemeth each thing to his powre  
Doth us invite to make a sad consort;  
Come, let us ioyne our mournfull song with theirs.  
Griefe will endite, and sorrow will enforce,  
Thy voice; and echo will our words report.

*Lycon.* Though my rude rymes ill with thy verses  
frame,

That others farre exeell; yet will I force  
My selfe to answer thee the best I can,  
And honor my base words with his high name.  
But if my plaints annoy thee where thou sit  
In secret shade or cave; vonehsafe (O Pan)  
To pardon me, and hear this hard constraint  
With patience while I sing, and pittie it.  
And eke ye rurall Muses, that do dwell  
In these wilde woods; if ever piteous plaint  
We did endite, or taught a wofull minde  
With words of pure affect his griefe to tell,  
Instruct me now. Now, Colin, then goe on,  
And I will follow thee, though farre behinde.

*Colin.* Phyllisides is dead. O harmful death,  
O deadly harme! Unhappie Albion,  
When shalt thou see, among thy shepheards all,  
Any so sage, so perfect? Whom unceath

Envie could touch for vertuous life and skill  
Curteous, valiant, and liberall.  
Behold the sacred Pales, where with haire  
Untrust she sits, in shade of yonder hill.  
And her faire face, bent sadly downe, doth send  
A flood of teares to bathe the earth; and there  
Doth call the heav'ns despightfull, envious,  
Cruell his fate, that made so short an end  
Of that same life, well worthie to have bene  
Prolongd with many yeares, happie and famous.  
The Nymphs and Oreades her round about  
Do sit lamenting on the grassie grene;  
And with shrill cries, beating their whitest brests,  
Accuse the direfull dart that death sent out  
To give the fatal stroke. The starres they blame  
That deafe or earelesse seeme at their request.  
The pleasant shade of stately groves they shun;  
They leave their cristall springs, where they went  
frame

Sweet bowres of myrtel twigs and lawrel faire,  
To sport themselves free from the scorching sun.  
And now the hollow caves where horror darke  
Doth dwell, whence banisht is the gladsome aire,  
They seeke; and there in mourning spend their  
time

With waifull tunes, whiles wolves do howle an  
barke,

And seem to beare a bourdon to their plaint.

*Lycon.* Phyllisides is dead. O dolefull ryme!  
Why should my toong expresse thee? who is left  
Now to uphold thy hopes, when they do faint,  
Lycon unfortunate! What spitefull fate,  
What lucklesse destinie, hath thee bereft  
Of thy chief comfort; of thy onely stay!  
Where is become thy wonted happie state,  
(Alas!) wherein through many a hill and dale,  
Through pleasant woods, and many an unknown  
Along the bankes of many silver streames, [way  
Thou with him yodest; and with him didst scale  
The eraggie rocks of th' Alpes and Appenine!  
Still with the Muses sporting, while those beames  
Of vertue kindled in his noble brest,  
Which after did so gloriously forth shine!  
But (woe is me!) they now yquenched are  
All suddenly, and death bath them oppress.  
Loe father Neptune, with sad countenance,  
How he sits mourning on the strond now bare,  
Yonder, where th' Ocean with his rolling waves  
The white feete washeth (wailing this mischance)  
Of Dover eliffes. His sacred skirt about  
The sea-gods all are set; from their moist caves  
All for his comfort gathered there they be.  
The Thamis rich, the Humber rough and stout,  
The fruitfull Severne, with the rest are come  
To helpe their lord to mourne, and eke to see  
The dolefull sight, and sad pomp funerall,  
Of the dead corps passing through his kingdome.  
And all their heads, with cypres gyrlonds crown'd,  
With wofull shrikes salute him great and small.

\* The signature to this poem is L. B., that is, Lodowick Bryskett. Todd.

Eke wailfull Echo, forgetting her deare  
Narcissus, their last accents doth resound.

*Colin.* Phillisides is dead. O lucklesse age;  
O widow world; O brookes and fountains cleere;  
O hills, O dales, O woods, that oft have rong  
With his sweet caroling, which could asswage  
The fiercest wrath of tygre or of beare:  
Ye Silvans, Fawnes, and Satyres, that among  
These thickets oft have daunst after his pipe;  
Ye Nymphs and Nayades with golden heare,  
That oft have left your purest cristall springs  
To harken to his layes, that coulden wipe  
Away all grieffe and sorrow from your hearts:  
Alas! who now is left that like him sings?  
When shall you heare againe like harmonie?  
So sweet a sound who to you now imparts?  
Loe where engraved by his hand yet lives  
The name of Stella in yonder bay tree.  
Happie name! happie tree! faire may you grow,  
And spread your sacred branch, which honor gives  
To famous Emperours, and Poets crowne.  
Unhappie flock that wander scattred now,  
What marvell if through grief ye woxen leane,  
Forsake your food, and hang your heads adowne!  
For such a shepheard never shall you guide,  
Whose parting hath of weale bereft you cleane.  
*Lycon.* Phillisides is dead. O happie sprite,  
That now in heav'n with blessed soules doest bide:

Looke down a while from where thou sitst above,  
And see how busie shepheards be to endite  
Sad songs of grief, their sorrowes to declare,  
And gratefull memory of their kynd love.  
Behold my selfe with Colin, gentle swaine,  
(Whose lerned Muse thou cherisht most whyleare),  
Where we, thy name recording, seeke to ease  
The inward torment and tormenting paine,  
That thy departure to us both hath bred;  
Ne can each others sorrow yet appease.  
Behold the fountains now left desolate,  
And withred grasse with cyprus boughes be spred;  
Behold these floures which on thy grave we strew;  
Which, faded, shew the givers faded state,  
(Though eke they shew their fervent zeale and pure),  
Whose onely comfort on thy welfare grow.  
Those praiers importune shall the heav'ns for ay,  
That, to thy ashes, rest they may assure:  
That learnedst shepheards honor may thy name  
With yeerly praises, and the Nymphs alway  
Thy tomb may deck with fresh and sweetest floures;  
And that for ever may endure thy fame. [steep  
*Colin.* The Sun (lo!) hastned hath his face to  
In western waves; and th' aire with stormy showres  
Warnes us to drive homewards our silly sheep:  
Lycon, lett's rise, and take of them good keep.

Virtute summa: cætera fortuna.

L. B.

## AN ELEGIE,

### OR FRIENDS PASSION, FOR HIS ASTROPHILL.

WRITTEN UPON THE DEATH OF THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY KNIGHT, LORD GOVERNOUR  
OF FLUSHING\*.

As then, no winde at all there blew,  
No swelling cloude acclod the aire;  
The skie, like grasse [glasse] of watchet hew,  
Reflected Phebus golden haire;  
The garnisht tree no pendant stird,  
No voice was heard of anie bird.

There might you see the burly Beare,  
The Lion king, the Elephant;  
The maiden Unicorn was there,  
So was Acteons horned plant,  
And what of wilde or tame are found,  
Were coucht in order on the ground.

Alcides speckled poplar tree,  
The palme that Monarchs do obtaine,  
With love-juice staid the mulberie;  
The fruit that dewes the poets braine;  
And Phillis philbert there away,  
Compared with mirtle and the bay.

\* This poem was written by Matthew Roydon, as we are informed in Nash's Preface to Greene's *Arcadia*, and in *Engl. Parnassus*.

To the two following pieces I am unable to assign their authors; but no reader will imagine them the productions of Spenser. TOND

The tree that coffins doth adorne,  
With stately height threatning the skie;  
And, for the bed of Love forlorne,  
The blacke and dolefull Ebonie;  
All in a circle compast were,  
Like to an ampitheater.

Upon the branches of those trees,  
The airie-winged people sat,  
Distinguished in od degrees,  
One sort is this, another that,  
Here Philomell, that knows full well  
What force and wit in love doth dwell.

The skiebred Eagle, roiall bird,  
Percht there upon an oke above;  
The Turtle by him never stird,  
Example of immortall love.  
The swan that sings, about to dy,  
Leaving Meander stood thereby.

And, that which was of woonder most,  
The Phoenix left sweet Arabie;  
And, on a Cædar in this coast,  
Built up her tombe of spicerie,  
As I coniecture, by the same  
Preparde to take her dying flame.

In midst and center of this plot,  
I saw one grovelling on the grasse :  
A man or stone, I knew not that ;  
No stone ; of man the figure was,  
And yet I could not count him one,  
More than the image made of stone.

At length I might perceive him reare  
His bodie on his elbow end :  
Earthly and pale with hastily cheare,  
Upon his knees he upward tend,  
Seeming like one in uncouth stound,  
To be ascending ont the ground.

A grievous sigh forthwith he throwes,  
As might have torne the vitall strings ;  
Then down his cheeks the teares so flows,  
As doth the streame of many springs.  
So thunder rends the cloud in twaine,  
And makes a passage for the raine.

Incontinent, with trembling sound,  
He wofully gan to complaine ;  
Such were the accents as might wound,  
And teare a diamond rocke in twaine :  
After his throbs did somewhat stay,  
Thus heavily he gan to say.

O sunne ! (said he) seeing the sunne,  
On wretched me why dost thou shine,  
My star is falne, my comfort done,  
Out is the apple of my eie ;  
Shine upon those possesse delight,  
And let me live in endlesse night.

O griefe that liest upon my soule,  
As hevie as a mount of lead,  
The remnant of my life controll,  
Consort me quickly with the dead ;  
Halfe of this hart, this sprite, and will,  
Di'de in the brest of Astrophill.

And you, compassionate of my wo,  
Gentle birds, beasts, and shadie trees,  
I am assurde ye long to kno  
What be the sorrowes me agreev's ;  
Listen ye then to that insu'th,  
And heare a tale of teares and ruthe.

You knew, who knew not Astrophill ?  
(That I should live to say I knew,  
And have not in possession still !)  
Things knowne permit me to renew,  
Of him you know his merit such,  
I cannot say, you heare, too much.

Within these woods of Arcadie,  
He chiefe delight and pleasure tooke,  
And on the mountaine Parthenie,  
Upon the chrystall liquid brooke,  
The Muses met him ev'ry day,  
That taught him sing, to write, and say.

When he descended downe to the mount,  
His personage seemed most divine,  
A thousand graces one might count,  
Upon his lovely cheerfull eie ;  
To heare him speake and sweetly smile,  
You were in Paradise the while.

A sweet attractive kinde of grace,  
A full assurance given by lookes,  
Continuall comfort in a face,  
The lineaments of Gospell bookes,  
I trowe that countenance cannot lie,  
Whose thoughts are legible in the eie.

Was never eie did see that face,  
Was never eare did heare that tong,  
Was never minde did minde his grace,  
That ever thought the travell long ;  
But eies, and eares, and ev'ry thought,  
Were with his sweete perfections caught.

O God, that such a worthy man,  
In whom so rare desarts did raigne,  
Desired thus, must leave us than,  
And we to wish for him in vaine !  
O could the stars, that bred that wit,  
In force no longer fixed sit !

Then being filld with learned dew,  
The Muses willed him to love ;  
That instrument can aptly shew,  
How finely our conceits will move ;  
As Bacchus opes dissembled harts,  
So Love sets out our better parts.

Stella, a Nymph within this wood,  
Most rare and rich of heavenly blis,  
The highest in his fancie stood,  
And she could well demerite this ;  
Tis likely they acquainted soone ;  
He was a Sun, and she a Moone.

Our Astrophill did Stella love ;  
O Stella, vaunt of Astrophill,  
Albeit thy graces gods may move,  
Where wilt thou finde an Astrophill !  
The rose and lillie have their prime,  
And so hath beantie but a time.

Although thy beantie do exceed,  
In common sight of ev'ry eie,  
Yet in his Poesies when we reede,  
It is apparant more therehy,  
He, that hath love and indgement too,  
Sees more than any other doo.

Then Astrophill hath honord thee ;  
For when thy bodie is extinet,  
Thy graces shall eternal he,  
And live by virtue of his inke ;  
For by his verses he doth give  
The short-livde beantie aye to live.

Above all others this is hee,  
Which erst approoved in his song,  
That love and honor might agree,  
And that pure love will do no wrong.  
Sweet saints ! it is no sinne or blame,  
To love a man of vertuous name.

Did never love so sweetly breath  
In any mortal brest before,  
Did never Muse inspire beneath  
A Poets braine with finer store :  
He wrote of love with high conceit,  
And beantie reard above her height.

Then Pallas afterward attyrde  
 Our Astrophill with her device,  
 Whom in his armor heaven admyrde,  
 As of the nation of the skies ;  
 He sparkled in his armes afarrs,  
 As he were dight with ferie starrs.

The blaze whereof when Mars beheld,  
 (An envious eie doth see afar,)  
 Such maiestie (quoth he) is seeld,  
 Such maiestie my mart may mar,  
 Perhaps this may a suter be,  
 To set Mars by his deitie.

In this surmize he made with speede  
 An iron cane, wherein he put  
 The thunder that in cloudes do breede ;  
 The flame and bolt together shut  
 With privie force burst out againe,  
 And so our Astrophill was slaine.

His word (was slaine!) straightway did move  
 And natures inward life strings twich ;  
 The skie immediately above  
 Was dimd with hideous clouds of pitch,  
 The wrastling winds from out the ground  
 Fild all the aire with rattling sound.

The bending trees exprest a grone,  
 And sigh'd the sorrow of his fall,  
 The Forrest beasts made ruthfull mone,  
 The birds did tune their mourning call,  
 And Philomell for Astrophill  
 Unto her notes annex a phill.

The turtle dove with tunes of ruthe  
 Shewd feeling passion of his death,  
 Me thought she said I tell thee truthe,  
 Was never he that drew in breath,  
 Unto his love more trustie found,  
 Than he for whom our griefs abound.

The swan, that was in presence heere,  
 Began his funerall dirge to sing,  
 Good things (quoth he) may scarce appeere,  
 But passe away with speedie wing.  
 This mortall life as death is tride,  
 And death gives life, and so he di'de.

The generall sorrow that was made,  
 Among the creatures of [each] kinde,  
 Fired the Phoenix where she laide,  
 Her ashes flying with the winde,  
 So as I might with reason see,  
 That such a Phoenix nere should bee.

Haply the cinders, driven about,  
 May breede an offspring neere that kinde,  
 But hardly a peere to that I doubt,  
 It cannot sinke into my minde,  
 That under branches ere can bee,  
 Of worth and value as the tree.

The Egle markt with pearcing sight  
 The mournfull habite of the place,  
 And parted thence with mounting flight,  
 To signifie to Iove the case,  
 What sorrow nature doth sustaine,  
 For Astrophill by envie slaine.

And, while I followed with mine eie  
 The flight the Egle upward tooke,  
 All things did vanish by and by,  
 And disappeared from my looke ;  
 The trees, beasts, birds, and grove was gone,  
 So was the friend that made this mone.

This spectacle had firmly wrought,  
 A deepe compassion in my spright,  
 My molting hart issude, me thought,  
 In streames forth at mine eies aright :  
 And here my pen is forst to shrinke,  
 My teares discollar so mine inke.

## AN EPITAPH,

UPON THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR PHILIP SIDNEY KNIGHT: LORD GOVERNOR  
 OF FLUSHING.

To praise thy life, or waile thy worthis death,  
 And want thy wit, thy wit high, pure, divine,  
 Is far beyond the powre of mortall line,  
 Nor any one hath worth that draweth breath.

Yet rich in zeale, though poore in learnings lore,  
 And friendly care obscurde in secret brest,  
 And love that envie in thy life suppress,  
 Thy deere life done, and death hath doubled more.

And I, that in thy time, and living state,  
 Did onely praise thy vertues in my thought,  
 As one that seeld the rising sun bath sought,  
 With words and teares now waile thy timelesse fate.

Drawne was thy race aright from princely line,  
 Nor lesse than such, (by gifts that nature gave,

The common mother that all creatures have,)  
 Doth vertue shew, and princely linage shine.

A king gave thee thy name ; a kingly minde,  
 That God thee gave, who found it now too deere  
 For this base world, and hath resumde it neere,  
 To sit in skies, and sort with powres divine.

Kent thy birth daies, and Oxford held thy youth ;  
 The heavens made hast, and staid nor yeers, nor  
 The fruits of age grew ripe in thy first prime, [time ;  
 Thy will, thy words ; thy words the scales of truth.

Great gifts and wisdom rare imployd thee thence,  
 To treat from kings with those more great than  
 kings ;

Such hope men had to lay the highest things  
On thy wise youth, to be transported hence !

Whence to sharpe wars sweet honor did thee call,  
Thy countries love, religion, and thy friends :  
Of worthy men the marks, the lives, and ends,  
And her defence, for whom we labor all.

There didst thou vanquish shame and tedious age,  
Griefe, sorrow, sicknes, and base fortunes might :  
Thy rising day saw never wofull night,  
But past with praise from off this worldly stage.

Back to the campe, by thee that day was brought,  
First thine owne death, and after thy long fame ;  
Tears to the soldiers, the proud Castilians shame,  
Vertue express, and honor truly taught.

What hath he lost, that such great grace hath woon ?  
Yoong yeeres for endles yeeres, and hope unsure  
Of fortunes gifts for wealth that still shall dure ;  
Oh ! happie race with so great praises run.

England doth hold thy lims that bred the same,  
Flaunders thy valure where it last was tried,  
The Campe thy sorrow where thy bodie died,  
Thy friends, thy want ; the world, thy vertues fame.

Nations thy wit, our mindes lay up thy love ;  
Letters thy learning, thy losse, yeeres long to come ;  
In worthy harts sorrow hath made thy tombe ;  
Thy soule and spright enrich the heavens above.

Thy liberall hart imbalmd in gratefull teares,  
Yoong sighes, sweet sighes, sage sighes, bewaile thy  
fall ;  
Envie her sting, and Spite hath left her gall,  
Malice her selfe a mourning garment wears.

That day their Hanniball died, our Scipio fell,  
Scipio, Cicero, and Petrarch of our time !  
Whose vertues, wounded by my worthelesse rime,  
Let Angels speake, and heaven thy praises tell.

### ANOTHER OF THE SAME.

SILENCE augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth rage,  
Stald are my thoughts, which lov'd, and lost, the  
wonder of our age, [ere now,  
Yet quickned now with fire, though dead with frost  
Enrag'de I write, I know not what : dead, quick, I  
know not how.

Hard harted mindes relent, and Rigors ceares  
abound,  
And Envie strangely rues his end, in whom no  
fault she found ; [knight ;  
Knowledge her light hath lost, Valor hath slaine her  
Sidney is dead, dead is my friend, dead is the  
worlds delight.

Place pensive wailes his fall, whose presence was  
her pride,  
Time crieth out, my ebbe is come ; his life was my  
spring tide :  
Fame mournes in that she lost the ground of her  
reports ;  
Ech living wight laments his lacke, and all in sun-  
dry sorts.

He was (wo worth that word!) to ech well thinking  
minde  
A spotlesse friend, a matchles man, whose vertue  
ever shinde,  
Declaring in his thoughts, his life, and that he writ,  
Highest conceits, longest foresights, and deepest  
works of wit.

He, onely like himselfe, was second unto none,  
Whose deth (though life) we rue, and wrong, and  
al in vain do mone ;  
Their losse, not him, waile they, that fill the world  
with cries ;  
Death slue not him, but he made death his ladder  
to the skies.

Now sinke of sorrow I, who live ; the more the  
wrong ;  
Who wishing death, whom deth denies, whose thred  
is al-to long,  
Who tied to wretched life, who looks for no reliefe,  
Must spend my ever dying daies in never ending  
griefe.

Harts ease and onely I, like parables run on,  
Whose equall length keep equall bredth, and never  
meet in one ; [cell,  
Yet for not wronging him, my thoughts, my sorrowes  
Shall not run out, though leake they will, for liking  
him so well.

Farewell to you, my hopes, my wonted waking  
dreames ;  
Farewell sometimes enjoyed, ioy ; eclipsed are thy  
beames !  
Farewell selfe pleasing thoughts, which quietnes  
brings foorth ;  
And farewell friendships sacred league, uniting  
minds of woorth.

And farewell mery hart, the gift of guiltlesse  
mindes, [assignes ;  
And all sports, which, for lives restore, varietie  
Let all, that sweete is, voyde ; in me no mirth may  
dwell,  
Phillip, the cause of all this woe, my lives content,  
farewell !

Now rime, the sonne of rage, which art no kin to  
skill,  
And endles griefe, which deads my life, yet knowes  
not how to kill,  
Go, seeke that haples tombe ; which if ye hap to finde,  
Salute the stones, that keep the lims that held so  
good a minde.

# PROTHALAMION:

OR, A SPOUSALL VERSE.

IN HONOUR OF THE DOUBLE MARRIAGE OF THE TWO HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADIES, THE LADIE ELIZABETH, AND  
THE LADIE KATHERINE SOMERSET, DAUGHTERS TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE EARLE OF WORCESTER, AND  
ESPOUSED TO THE TWO WOLFHIE GENTLEMEN, M. HENRY OILFORD AND M. WILLIAM PETER, ESQUYERS.

CALME was the day, and through the trembling ayre  
Sweete-breathing Zephyrus did softly play  
A gentle spirit, that lightly did delay  
Hot Titans beames, which then did glyster fayre ;  
When I, (whom [whose] sullein care,  
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay  
In princes court, and expectation vayne  
Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away,  
Like empty shadows, did afflict my brayne,)  
Walkt forth to ease my payne  
Along the shoare of silver streaming Themmes ;  
Whose ruty bank, the which his river hemmes,  
Was paynted all with variable flowers,  
And all the meades adordn with dainty gemmes,  
Fit to decke maydens bowres,  
And crowne their paramours  
Against the brydale-day, which is not long :  
Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
song.

There, in a meadow, by the rivers side,  
A flocke of Nymphes I chaunced to espy,  
All lovely daughters of the Flood thereby,  
With goodly greenish locks, all loose untyde,  
As each had bene a bryde ;  
And each one had a little wicker basket,  
Made of fine twigs, entrayled curiously,  
In which they gathered flowers to fill their flasket,  
And with fine fingers cropt full feateously  
The tender stalkes on hye.  
Of every sort, which in that meadow grew,  
They gathered some ; the violet, pallid blew,  
The little dazie, that at evening closes,  
The virgin lillie, and the primrose trew,  
With store of vermeil roses,  
To deck their bridegroomes posies  
Against the brydale-day, which was not long :  
Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
song.

With that I saw two Swannes of goodly hewo  
Come softly swimming downe along the lee ;  
Two fairer birds I yet did never see ;  
The snow, which doth the top of Pindus strew,  
Did never whiter shew,  
Nor Jove himselfe, when he a swan would be  
For love of Leda, whiter did appeare ;

Ver. 3. ——— delay] *Temper or mitigate.* Todd.  
Ver. 12. *Whose ruty bank,*] That is, whose bank full  
of roots, &c. *rootie*, an old English adjective. Todd.  
Ver. 17. ——— *which is not long :*] That is, approaching,  
near at hand. T. WARREN.  
Ver. 27. ——— *with fine fingers*] With *elegant or taper*  
fingers. Todd.

Yet Leda was (they say) as white as he,  
Yet not so white as these, nor nothing near ;  
So purely white they were,  
That even the gentle stream, the which them bare,  
Seem'd foule to them, and bad his billowes spare  
To wet their silken feathers, least they might  
Soyle their fayre plumes with water not so fayre,  
And marre their beauties bright,  
That shone as heavens light,  
Against their brydale day, which was not long :  
Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
song.

Eftsoones the Nymphes, which now had flowers  
their fill,  
Ran all in haste to see that silver brood,  
As they came floating on the cristal flood ;  
Whom when they sawe, they stood amazed still,  
Their wondering eyes to fill ;  
Them seem'd they never saw a sight so fayre,  
Of fowles, so lovely, that they sure did deeme  
Them heavenly borne, or to be that same payre  
Which through the skie draw Venus silver teeme ;  
For sure they did not seeme  
To be begot of any earthly seede,  
But rather angels, or of angels breede ;  
Yet were they bred of Somers-heat, they say,  
In sweetest season, when each flower and weede  
The earth did fresh aray ;  
So fresh they seem'd as day,  
Even as their brydale day, which was not long :  
Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
song.

Then forth they all out of their baskets drew  
Great store of flowers, the honour of the field,  
That to the sense did fragrant odours yeild,  
All which upon those goodly birds they threw,  
And all the waves did strew,  
That like old Peneus waters they did seeme,  
When downe along by pleasant Tempes shore,  
Scattered with floures, through Thessaly they  
streeme,  
That they appeare, through lillies plenteous store,  
Like a brydes chamber flore.  
Two of those Nymphes, meane while, two garlands  
bound  
Of freshest floures which in that mead they found,  
The which presenting all in trim array,  
Their snowie foreheades therewithall they crownd,

Ver. 67. ——— *Somers-heat.*] A punning allusion to  
the surname of the Ladies, whose marriages this spousal  
verse celebrates. Todd.



Whilst one did sing this lay,  
 Prepar'd against that day,  
 Against their brydale day, which was not long :  
 Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
 song. 90

"Ye gentle Birdes ! the worlds faire ornament,  
 "And heavens glorie, whom this happie hower  
 "Doth leade unto your lovers blissfull bower,  
 "Ioy may you have, and gentle hearts content  
 "Of your loves couplement ; 95  
 "And let faire Venus, that is Queene of Love,  
 "With her heart-quelling Sonne upon your smile,  
 "Whose smile, they say, hath vertue to remove  
 "All loves dislike, and friendships faultie guile  
 "For ever to assoile. 100  
 "Let endlesse peace your steadfast hearts accord,  
 "And blessed plentie wait upon your bord ;  
 "And let your bed with pleasures chast abound,  
 "That fruitfull issue may to you afford,  
 "Which may your foes confound, 105  
 "And make your ioyes redound  
 "Upon your brydale day, which is not long :  
 "Sweet Themmes ! runne softlie, till I end my  
 song."

So ended she ; and all the rest around  
 To her redoubled that her undersong, 110  
 Which said, their brydale daye should not be long :  
 And gentle Echo from the neighbour ground  
 Their accents did resound.  
 So forth those ioyous Birdes did passe along  
 Adowne the lee, that to them murmurde low, 115  
 As he would speake, but that he lackt a tong,  
 Yet did by signes his glad affection show,  
 Making his streame run slow.  
 And all the foule which in his flood did dwell  
 Gan flock about these twaine, that did excell 120  
 The rest, so far as Cynthia doth shend  
 The lesser stars. So they, enranged well,  
 Did on those two attend,  
 And their best service lend  
 Against their wedding day, which was not long : 125  
 Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
 song.

At length they all to mery London came,  
 To mery London, my most kyndly nurse,  
 That to me gave this lifes first native sourse,  
 Though from another place I take my name, 130  
 An house of auncient fame :  
 There when they came, whereas those bricky towres  
 The which on Themmes brode aged backe doe ryde,

Ver. 121. — shend] *Put to shame, disgrace.* Todd.

Where now the studious lawyers have their bowers,  
 There whylome went the Templer Knights to hyde,  
 Till they decayd through pride ; 135  
 Next whereunto there standes a stately place,  
 Where oft I gayned giftes and goodly grace  
 Of that great lord, which therein wont to dwell.  
 Whose want too well now feels my freendles case ; 140  
 But ah ! here fits not well  
 Olde woes, but ioyes, to tell  
 Against the brydale daye, which is not long :  
 Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
 song.

Yet therein now doth lodge a noble peer, 145  
 Great Englands glory, and the worlds wide wonder,  
 Whose dreadfull name late through all Spaine did  
 thunder,  
 And Hercules two Pillors standing neere  
 Did make to quake and feare :  
 Faire branch of honor, flower of chevalrie ! 150  
 That fillest England with thy triumphs fame,  
 Ioy have thou of thy noble victorie,  
 And endlesse happinesse of thine owne name  
 That promiseth the same ;  
 That through thy prowess, and victorious armes, 155  
 Thy country may be freed from forraie harmes,  
 And great Elisaes glorious name may ring  
 Through all the world, fill'd with thy wide alarmes,  
 Which some brave Muse may sing  
 To ages following, 160  
 Upon the brydale day, which is not long :  
 Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
 song.

From those high towers this noble lord issuing,  
 Like radiant Hesper, when his golden hayre  
 In th' ocean billowes he hath bathed fayre, 165  
 Descended to the rivers open vewing,  
 With a great traine ensuing.  
 Above the rest were goodly to bee seene  
 Two gentle Knights of lovely face and feature,  
 Beseeming well the bower of any queene, 170  
 With gifts of wit, and ornaments of nature,  
 Fit for so goodly stature,  
 That like the Twins of Iove they seem'd in sight,  
 Which decke the bauldricke of the heavens bright ;  
 They two, forth pacing to the rivers side, 175  
 Receiv'd those two faire Brides, their loves delight ;  
 Which, at th' appointed tyde,  
 Each one did make his Bryde  
 Against their brydale day, which is not long : 179  
 Sweet Themmes ! runne softly, till I end my  
 song.

Ver. 174. — bauldricke] *A girdle or belt.* Todd.

## AMORETTI, OR SONNETS.

### TO THE AUTHOR.

DARKS is the day, when Phœbus face is shrouded,  
And weaker sights may wander soone astray:  
But, when they see his glorious rays unclouded,  
With stedy steps they keep the perfect way:  
So, while this Muse in forraine land doth stay,  
Invention weeps, and pens are cast aside;  
The time, like night, depriv'd of chearfull day;  
And few do write, but (ah!) too soon may slide.  
Then, hie thee home, that art our perfect guide,  
And with thy wit illustrate England's fame,  
Daunting thereby our neighbours ancient pride,  
That do, for Poesie, challenge chiefest name:  
So we that live, and ages that succeed,  
With great applause thy learned works shall read.

G. W. SENIOR.

AN! Colin, whether on the lowly plaine,  
Piping to shepherds thy sweet roundelays;  
Or whether singing, in some lofty vaine  
Heroicks deeds of past or present days;  
Or whether, in thy lovely Mistresse praise,  
Thou list to exercise thy learned quill;  
Thy Muse hath got such grace and power to please  
With rare invention, beautified by skill,  
As who therein can ever ioy their fill!  
O! therefore let that happy Muse proceed  
To climb the height of Vertues sacred hill,  
Where endlesse honour shall be made thy meed:  
Because no malice of succeeding daies  
Can rase those records of thy lasting praise.

G. W. JUNIOR.

### SONNET I.

HAPPY, ye leaves! when as those lilly hands,  
Which hold my life in their dead-doing might,  
Shall handle you, and hold in loves soft bands,  
Lyke captives trembling at the victors sight.  
And happy lines! on which, with starry light,  
Those lamping eyes will deigne sometimes to look,  
And reade the sorrowes of my dying spright,  
Written with teares in harts close bleeding book.  
And happy rymes! bath'd in the sacred brooke  
Of Helicon, whence she derived is;  
When ye behold that Angels blessed looke,  
My soules long lacked food, my heavens blis;  
Leaves, lines, and rymes, seeke her to please alone,  
Whom if ye please, I care for other none!

### SONNET II.

UNQUIET thought! whom at the first I bred  
Of th' inward bale of my love-pined hart;  
And sithens have with sighes and sorrowes fed,  
Till greater then my wombe thou woxen art:  
Breake forth at length out of the inner part,  
In which thou lurkest lyke to vipers brood;  
And seeke some succour both to ease my smart,  
And also to sustayne thy selfe with food.  
But, if in presence of that fayrest Proud  
Thou chance to come, fall lowly at her feet;  
And, with meek humblesse and afflicted mood,  
Pardon for thee, and grace for me, intreat:

l. 6. — lamping] *Shining.* Tonn.

Which if she graunt, then live, and my love  
cherish:  
If not, die soone; and I with thee will perish.

### SONNET III.

THE soverayne beauty which I doo admyre,  
Witness the world how worthy to be prayzed!  
The light wherof hath kindled heavenly fyre  
In my fraile spirit, by her from basenesse rayzed;  
That being now with her huge brightnesse dazed,  
Base thing I can no more endure to view:  
But, looking still on her, I stand amazed  
At wondrous sight of so celestiall hev.  
So when my toung would speak her praises dew,  
It stopped is with thoughts astonishment;  
And, when my pen would write her titles true,  
It ravisht is with fancies wonderment:  
Yet in my hart I then both speak and write  
The wonder that my wit cannot endite.

### SONNET IV.

New yeare, forth looking out of Ianus gate,  
Doth seeme to promise hope of new delight:  
And, bidding th' old adieu, his passed date  
Bids all old thoughts to die in dumpish spright:  
And, calling forth out of sad Winters night  
Fresh Love, that long hath slept in cheerlesse bower,  
Wils him awake, and soone about him dight

iv. 4. — dumpish] *Mournful.* Tonn.

His wanton wings and darts of deadly power.  
For lusty Spring now in his timely howre  
Is ready to come forth, him to receive ;  
And warns the Earth with divers colored flowre  
To decke hir selfe, and her faire mantle weave.

Then you, faire flowre! in whom fresh youth  
doth raine,  
Prepare your selfe new love to entertaine.

## SONNET V.

RUDELY thou wrongest my deare harts desire,  
In finding fault with her too portly pride :  
The thing which I doo most in her admire,  
Is of the world unworthy most envide :  
For in those lofty lookes is close implide,  
Scorn of base things, and sdeigne of foul dishonor ;  
Thretning rash eies which gaze on her so wide,  
That loosely they ne dare to looke upon her.  
Such pride is praise ; such portlinesse is honor ;  
That boldned innocence beares in hir eies ;  
And her faire countenance like a goodly banner,  
Spreds in defiaunce of all enemies.

Was never in this world ought worthy tride,  
Without some spark of such self-pleasing pride.

## SONNET VI.

BE nought dismayd that her unmoved mind  
Doth still persist in her rebellious pride :  
Such love, not lyke to lusts of baser kynd,  
The harder wonne, the firmer will abide.  
The durefull oake, whose sap is not yet dride,  
Is long ere it conceive the kindling fyre ;  
But, when it once doth burne, it doth divide  
Great heat, and makes his flames to heaven aspire.  
So hard it is to kinde new desire  
In gentle brest, that shall endure for ever :  
Deepe is the wound, that dints the parts ~~of~~ <sup>of</sup> fire  
With chaste affects, that naught but death can sever.

Then thinke not long in taking litle paine  
To knit the knot, that ever shall remaine.

## SONNET VII.

FAYRE eyes ! the myrrour of my mazed hart,  
What wondrous vertue is contayn'd in you,  
The which both lyfe and death forth from you dart  
Into the obiect of your mighty view ?  
For, when ye mildly looke with lovely hew,  
Then is my soule with life and love inspired :  
But when ye lowre, or looke on me askew,  
Then do I die, as one with lightning fyred.  
But, since that lyfe is more then death desyred,  
Looke ever lovely, as becomes you best ;  
That your bright beams, of my wea keies admyred,  
May kinde living fire within my brest.

Such life should be the honor of your light,  
Such death the sad ensample of your might.

## SONNET VIII.

MORE then most faire, full of the living fire,  
Kindled above unto the Maker nere ;  
No eies but ioyes, in which al powers conspire,  
That to the world naught else be counted deare :  
Though your bright beams doth not the blinded  
gust

Shoot out his darts to base affections wound ;  
But Angels come to lead fraile mindes to rest  
In chaste desires, on heavenly beauty bound.  
You frame my thoughts, and fashion me within ;  
You stop my toung, and teach my hart to speake ;  
You calme the storme that passion did begin,  
Strong through your cause, but by your vertue weak.  
Dark is the world, where your light shined never ;  
Well is he horne, that may behold you ever.

## SONNET IX.

LONG-WHILE I sought to what I might compare  
Those powrefull eies, which lighten my dark  
spright :

Yet find I nought on earth, to which I dare  
Resemble th' ymage of their goodly light.  
Not to the Sun ; for they doo shine by night ;  
Nor to the Moore ; for they are changed never ;  
Nor to the Starres ; for they have purer sight ;  
Nor to the Fire ; for they consume not ever ;  
Nor to the Lightning ; for they still persevere ;  
Nor to the Diamond ; for they are more tender ;  
Nor unto Cristal ; for nought may them sever ;  
Nor unto Glasse ; such basenesse mought offend her  
Then to the Maker selfe they likest be,  
Whose light doth lighten all that here we see.

## SONNET X.

UNRIGHTEOUS Lord of love, what law is this,  
That me thou makest thus tormented be,  
The whiles she lordeth in licentious blisse  
Of her free-will, scorning both thee and me ?  
See ! how the Tyrannesse doth ioy to see  
The huge massacres which her eyes do make ;  
And humbled harts brings captive unto thee,  
That thou of them mayst mightie vengeance take.  
But her prond hart doe thou a little shake,  
And that high look with which she doth comptroll  
All this worlds pride bow to a haser make,  
And al her faults in thy black booke enroll :  
That I may laugh at her in equal sort,  
As she doth laugh at me, and makes my pain her  
sport.

## SONNET XI.

DAYLY when I do seeke and sew for peace,  
And hostages doe offer for my truth ;  
She, cruell warrior, doth her selfe addressse  
To battell, and the weary war renewth ;  
Ne wilbe moov'd with reason, or with rewth,  
To graunt small respit to my restlesse toile ;  
But greedily her fell intent poursewth,  
Of my poore life to make unpittie spoile.  
Yet my poore life, all sorrowes to assoyle,  
I would her yield, her wrath to pacify :  
But then she seeks, with torment and turmoyle,  
To force me live, and will not let me dy.  
All paine hath end, and every war hath peace ;  
But mine, no price nor prayer may surcease.

## SONNET XII.

ONE day I sought with her hart-thrilling eies  
To make a truce, and termes to entertaine ;  
All fearless then of so false enimies,  
Which sought me to entrap in treasons traine.

So, as I then disarmed did remaine,  
 A wicked ambush which lay hidden long,  
 In the close covert of her guilful eyen,  
 Thence breaking forth, did thicke about me throng.  
 Too feeble I t' abide the brunt so strong,  
 Was forst to yield my selfe into their hands;  
 Who, me captiuing streight with rigorus wrong,  
 Have ever since kept me in cruell bands.  
 So, Ladie, now to you I doo complaine,  
 Against your eies, that iustice I may gaine.

## SONNET XIII.

In that proud port, which her so goodly graceth,  
 Whiles her faire face she reares up to the skie,  
 And to the ground her eie-lids low embaseth,  
 Most goodly temperature ye may descry;  
 Myld humblesse, mixt with awfull maiestie.  
 For, looking on the earth whence she was borue,  
 Her minde remembreth her mortalitie,  
 Whatso is fayrest shall to earth returne.  
 But that same lofty countenance seemes to scorne  
 Base thing, and thinke how she to heaven may  
 clime;  
 Treading downe earth as lothsome and forlorne,  
 That hinders heavenly thoughts with drossy slime.  
 Yet lowly still vouchsafe to looke on me;  
 Such lowlinesse shall make you lofty be.

## SONNET XIV.

RETourNE agayne, my forces late dismayd,  
 Unto the siege by you abandon'd quite.  
 Great shame it is to leave, like one afrayd,  
 So fayre a peece, for one repulse so light.  
 'Gaynst such strong castles needeth greater might  
 Then those small forts which ye were wont belay:  
 Such haughty mynds, enur'd to hardy fight,  
 Disdayne to yield unto the first assay.  
 Bring therefore all the forces that ye may,  
 And lay incessant battery to her heart;  
 Playnts, prayers, vows, ruth, sorrow, and dismay;  
 Those engins can the proudest love convert:  
 And, if those fayle, fall down and dy before her;  
 So dying live, and living do adore her.

## SONNET XV.

YE tradefull Merchants, that, with weary toyle,  
 Do seeke most pretious things to make your gain;  
 And both the Indias of their treasure spoile;  
 What needeth you to seeke so farre in vaine?  
 For loe, my Love doth in her selfe containe  
 All this worlds riches that may farre be found;  
 If Saphyres, loe, her eies be Saphyres plaine,  
 If Rubies, loe, hir lips be Rubies sound:  
 If Pearles, hir teeth be Pearles, both pure and  
 round:  
 If Yvorie, her forehead Yvory weene;  
 If Gold, her locks are finest Gold on ground;  
 If Silver, her faire hands are Silver sheene:  
 But that which fairest is, but few behold,  
 Her mind adornnd with vertues manifold.

xiv. 4. — peece] Castle. TOLD.

xiv. 6. — belay:] To place in ambush, says Dr. Johnson; but it means, I conceive, to attack. TOLD.

## SONNET XVI.

ONE day as I unwarily did gaze  
 On those fayre eyes, my loves immortal light;  
 The whiles my stonish hart stood in amaze,  
 Through sweet illusion of her lookes delight;  
 I mote perceive how, in her glauncing sight,  
 Legions of Loves with little wings did fly;  
 Darting their deadly arrows, fyry bright,  
 At every rash beholder passing by.  
 One of those archers closely I did spy,  
 Ayming his arrow at my very hart:  
 When suddenly, with twincle of her eye,  
 The Damzell broke his misintended dart.  
 Had she not so doon, sure I had bene slayne;  
 Yet as it was, I hardly scap't with paine.

## SONNET XVII.

THE glorious pourtraict of that Angels faco,  
 Made to amaze weake mens confused skil,  
 And this worlds worthless glory to embaso,  
 What pen, what pencill, can expresse her fill?  
 For though he colours could devize at will,  
 And eke his learned hand at pleasure guide,  
 Least, trembling, it his workmanship should spill;  
 Yet many wondrous things there are beside:  
 The sweet eye-glaunces, that like arrowes glide;  
 The charming smiles, that rob sence from the hart;  
 The lovely pleasance; and the lofty pride;  
 Cannot expressed be by any art.

A greater craftsmans hand thereto doth neede,  
 That can expresse the life of things indeed.

## SONNET XVIII.

THE rolling wheele that runneth often round,  
 The hardest steele, in tract of time doth teare:  
 And drizzling drops, that often doe redound,  
 The firmest flint doth in continuance weare:  
 Yet cannot I, with many a drooping teare  
 And long intreaty, soften her hard hart;  
 That she will once vouchsafe my plaint to heare,  
 Or looke with pity on my paynefull smart.  
 But, when I pleade, she bids me play my part;  
 And, when I weep, she sayes, Teares are but water;  
 And, when I sigh, she sayes, I know the art;  
 And, when I waille, she turnes hir selfe to laughter.  
 So do I weepe, and wayle, and pleade in vaine,  
 Whiles she as steele and flint doth still remayne.

## SONNET XIX.

THE merry Cuckow, messenger of Spring,  
 His trumpet shrill hath thrise already sounded,  
 That warnes al Lovers wayte upon their king,  
 Who now is coming forth with girland crowned.  
 With noyse whercof the quyre of Byrds resounded  
 Their anthemes sweet, devized of loves prayse,  
 That all the woods theyr echoes back rebounded,  
 As if they knew the meaning of their layes.  
 But amongst them all, which did Loves honor rayse,  
 No word was heard of her that most it ought;  
 But she his precept proudly disobayes,  
 And doth his ydle message set at nought.  
 Therefore, O Love, unless she turne to thee  
 Ere Cuckow end, let her a rebell be!

## SONNET XX.

IN vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace,  
 And doe myne humbled hart before her poure ;  
 The whiles her foot she in my necke doth place,  
 And tread my life downe in the lowly floure.  
 And yet the lyon that is lord of power,  
 And reigneth over every beast in field,  
 In his most pride disdeigneth to deuoure  
 The silly lambe that to his might doth yield.  
 But she, more cruell, and more salvage wyld,  
 Than either lyon, or the lyonesse ;  
 Shames not to be with guiltlesse blond defylde,  
 But taketh glory in her cruellnesse.

Fayrer then fayrest ! let none ever say,  
 That ye were blooded in a yeelded pray.

## SONNET XXI.

WAS it the worke of Nature or of Art,  
 Which tempred so the feature of her face,  
 That pride and meeknesse, mixt by equal part,  
 Doe both appeare t' adorne her beauties grace ?  
 For with mild pleasance, which doth pride displace,  
 She to her love doth lookers eyes allure ;  
 And, with stern countenance, back againe doth chace  
 Their looser looks that stir up lustes impure ;  
 With such strange termes her eyes she doth inure,  
 That, with one looke, she doth my life dismay ;  
 And with another doth it streight recure ;  
 Her smile me drawes ; her frowne me drives away.  
 Thus doth she traine and teach me with her lookes ;  
 Such art of eyes I never read in bookes !

## SONNET XXII.

THIS holy season, fit to fast and pray,  
 Men to devotion ought to be inclynd :  
 Therefore, I lykewise, on so holy day,  
 For my sweet Saynt some service fit will find.  
 Her temple fayre is built within my mind,  
 In which her glorious ymage placed is ;  
 On which my thoughts doo day and night attend,  
 Lyke sacred Priests that never thinke amisse :  
 There I to her, as th' author of my blisse,  
 Will builde an altar to appease her yre ;  
 And on the same my hart will sacrifice,  
 Burning in flames of pure and chaste desyre :  
 The which vouchsafe, O Goddesse, to accept,  
 Amongst thy deerest relicks to be kept.

## SONNET XXIII.

PENELOPE, for her Ulisses sake,  
 Deviz'd a Web her woocers to deceave ;  
 In which the worke that she all day did make,  
 The same at night she did againe unweave ;  
 Such subtile craft my Damzell doth conceave,  
 Th' importune suit of my desire to shonne :  
 For all that I in many dayes do weave,  
 In one short houre I find by her undonene.  
 So, when I thinke to end that I begonne,  
 I must begin and never bring to end :  
 For, with one looke, she spils that long I sponne ;  
 And, with one word, my whole years work doth rend.  
 Such labour like the spyders web I fynd,  
 Whose fruitlesse worke is broken with least wynd.

## SONNET XXIV.

WHEN I behold that beauties wonderment,  
 And rare perfection of each goodly part ;  
 Of Natures skill the onely complement ;  
 I honor and admire the Makers art.  
 But when I feele the bitter balefull smart,  
 Which her fayre eyes unwarres doe worke in mee,  
 That death out of theyr shiny beames doe dart ;  
 I thinke that I a new Pandora see,  
 Whom all the gods in counsell did agree  
 Into this sinfull world from heaven to send ;  
 That she to wicked men a scourge should be,  
 For all their faults with which they did offend.  
 But, since ye are my scourge, I will intreat,  
 That for my faults ye will me gently beat.

## SONNET XXV.

How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure,  
 And know no end of her owne misery,  
 But wast and weare away in termes unsure,  
 Twixt feare and hope depending doubtfully !  
 Yet better were attonce to let me die,  
 And shew the last ensample of your pride ;  
 Then to torment me thus with cruelty,  
 To prove your powre, which I too wel have tride.  
 But yet if in your hardned brest ye hide  
 A close intent at last to shew me grace ;  
 Then all the woes and wrecks, which I abide,  
 As meanes of blisse I gladly wil embrace,  
 And wish that more and greater they might be,  
 That greater meede at last may turne to mee.

## SONNET XXVI.

SWEET is the Rose, but growes upon a breere ;  
 Sweet is the Iuniper, but sharpe his bough ;  
 Sweet is the Eglantine, but pricketh nere ;  
 Sweet is the Firbloomer, but his branches rough ;  
 Sweet is the Cypressse, but his rynd is tough ;  
 Sweet is the Nut, but bitter is his pill ;  
 Sweet is the Broome-flowre, but yet sowre enough ;  
 And sweet is Moly, but his root is ill.  
 So every sweet with soure is tempred still,  
 That maketh it be coveted the more :  
 For easie things, that may be got at will,  
 Most sorts of men doe set but little store.  
 Why then should I accompt of litle paine,  
 That endlesse pleasure shall unto me gaine !

## SONNET XXVII.

FAIRE Proud ! now tell me, why should faire be  
 Sith all worlds glorie is but drosse uncleane, [proud,  
 And in the shade of death it selfe shall shroud,  
 However now thereof ye little weene !  
 That goodly Idoll, now so gay besenee,  
 Shall doffe her fleshes borrowd fayre attyre ;  
 And be forgot as it had never beene ;  
 That many now much worship and admire !  
 Ne any then shall after it inquire,  
 Ne any mention shall thereof remaine,  
 But what this verse, that never shall expyre,  
 Shall to you purchas with her thankles pain !  
 Faire ! be no lenger proud of that shall perish ;  
 But that, which shall you make immortal  
 cherish.

## SONNET XXVIII.

THE laurel-leave, which you this day doe weare,  
Gives me great hope of your relenting mynd :  
For since it is the badge which I doe beare,  
Ye, bearing it, doe seeme to me inclind :  
The powre thereof, which ofte in me I find,  
Let it lykewise your gentle brest inspire  
With sweet infusion, and put you in mind  
Of that proud Mayd, whom now those leaves attyre :  
Proud Daphne, scorning Phoebus lovely fyre,  
On the Thessalian shore from him did flie :  
For which the gods, in their revengfull yre,  
Did her transforme into a Laurell-tree. [chace,  
Then fly no more, fayre Love, from Phebus  
But in your brest his leave and love embrace.

## SONNET XXIX.

SEE ! how the stubborn Damzell doth deprave  
My simple meaning with disdainfull scorne ;  
And by the bay, which I unto her gave,  
Accoumpts my self her captive quite forlorne.  
The bay, quoth she, is of the victours horn,  
Yielded them by the vanquish as their needs,  
And they therewith doe Poetes heads adorne,  
To sing the glory of their famous deede.  
But sith she will the conquest challeng needs,  
Let her accept me as her faithfull thrall ;  
That her great triumph, which my skill exceeds,  
I may in trump of fame blaze over all. [bayes,  
Then would I decke her head with glorious  
And fill the world with her victorious prayse.

## SONNET XXX.

MY Love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre ;  
How comes it then that this her cold so great  
Is not dissolv'd through my so hot desyre,  
But harder growes the more I her intreat !  
Or how comes it that my exceeding heat  
Is not delayd by her hart-frozen cold ;  
But that I burne much more in boyling sweat,  
And feele my flames augmented manifold !  
What more miraculous thing may be told,  
That fire, which all thing melts, should harden yse ;  
And yse, which is congeald with sencelesse cold,  
Should kindle fyre by wonderful devyse !  
Such is the powre of love in gentle mind,  
That it can alter all the course of kynd.

## SONNET XXXI.

AH ! why hath Nature to so hard a hart  
Given so goodly giftes of beauties grace !  
Whose pryde depraves each other better part,  
And all those pretious ornaments deface.  
Sith to all other beastes, of bloody race,  
A dreadfull countenance she given hath ;  
That with theyr terrour all the rest may chace,  
And warne to shun the daunger of theyr wrath.  
But my proud one doth worke the greater seath,  
Through sweet allurement of her lovely hew ;

xxx. 6. — delayd] *Tempered.* TODD.  
xxx. 4. — defuce.] For "does deface." JORTIN.

That she the better may, in bloody bath  
Of such poore thralls, her cruell hands embrew.  
But, did she know how ill these two accord,  
Such cruelty she would have soone abhord.

## SONNET XXXII.

THE paynefull smith, with force of fervent heat,  
The hardest yron soone doth mollify ;  
That with his heavy sledge he can it beat,  
And fashion to what he it list apply.  
Yet cannot all these flames, in which I fry,  
Her hart more hard then yron soft a whit ;  
Ne all the playnts and prayers, with which I  
Doe beat on th' anvile of her stubbernc wit :  
But still, the more she fervent sees my fit,  
The more she frieseth in her wilfull pryde ;  
And harder growes, the harder she is smit  
With all the playnts which to her be applyde.  
What then remains but I to ashes burne,  
And she to stones at length all frozen turne !

## SONNET XXXIII.

GREAT wrong I doe, I can it not deny,  
To that most sacred Emperesse, my dear dred,  
Not finishing her Queene of Faëry,  
That mote enlarge her living prayses, dead :  
But Lodwick, this of grace to me aread ;  
Do ye not thinke th' accomplishment of it,  
Sufficient worke for one mans simple head,  
All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ ?  
How then should I, without another wit,  
Thinke ever to endure so tedious toyle !  
Sith that this one is tost with troublous fit  
Of a proud Love, that doth my spirite spoyle.  
Cease then, till she vouchsafe to grawnt me rest ;  
Or lend you me another living brest.

## SONNET XXXIV.

LYKE as a ship, that through the ocean wyde,  
By conduct of some star, doth make her way ;  
Whenas a storm hath dimd her trusty gnyde,  
Out of her course doth wander far astray !  
So I, whose star, that wont with her bright ray  
Me to direct, with cloudes is over-cast,  
Doe wander now, in darknesse and dismay,  
Through hidden perils round about me past ;  
Yet hope I well that, when this storme is past,  
My Helice, the lodestar of my lyfe,  
Will shine again, and looke on me at last,  
With lovely light to cleare my cloudy grief.  
Till then I wander carefull, comfortlesse,  
In secret sorrow, and sad pensivenessse.

## SONNET XXXV.

MY hungry eyes, through greedy covetize  
Still to behold the obiect of their paine,  
With no contentment can themselves suffice ;  
But, having, pine ; and, having not, complaine.  
For, lacking it, they cannot lyfe sustayne ;  
And, having it, they gaze on it the more ;  
In their amazement lyke Narcissus vaine,

xxxii. 6. — soft] For *soften.* TODD.

Whose eyes him starv'd : so plenty makes me  
Yet are mine eyes so filled with the store [poore.  
Of that faire sight, that nothing else they brooke,  
But lothe the things which they did like before,  
And can no more endure on them to looke.

All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to me,  
And all their shoves but shadowes, saving she.

## SONNET XXXVI.

TELL me, when shall these wearie woes have end,  
Or shall their ruthlesse torment never cease :  
But al my days in pining languor spend,  
Without hope of asswagement or release !  
Is there no meanes for me to purchase peace,  
Or make agreement with her thrilling eyes ;  
But that their cruelty doth still increase,  
And dayly more augment my miseries ?  
But, when ye have shew'd all extremities,  
Then think how little glory ye have gayned  
By slaying him, whose lyfe, though ye despyse,  
Mote have your life in honor long maintayned.  
But by his death, which some perhaps will mone,  
Ye shall condemned be of many a one.

## SONNET XXXVII.

WHAT guyle is this, that those her golden tresses  
She doth attyre under a net of gold ;  
And with sly skill so cunningly them dresses,  
That which is gold, or haire, may scarce be told ?  
Is it that mens frayle eyes, which gaze too bold,  
She may entangle in that golden snare ;  
And, being caught, may craftily unfold  
Their weaker harts, which are not wel aware ?  
Take heed therefore, myne eyes, how ye d e stare  
Henceforth too rashly on that guilefull net,  
In which if ever ye entrapped are,  
Out of her bands ye by no meanes shall get.  
Fondnesse it were for any, being free,  
To covet fetters, though they golden bee !

## SONNET XXXVIII.

ARION, when, through tempests cruel wracke,  
He forth was thrown into the greedy seas ;  
Through the sweet musick, which his harp did  
Alhr'd a dolphin him from death to ease. [make,  
But my rude musick, which was wont to please  
Some dainty eares, cannot, with any skill,  
The dreadfull tempest of her wrath appease,  
Nor move the dolphin from her stubborn will ;  
But in her pride she dooth persever still,  
All carelesse how my life for her decayses :  
Yet with one word she can it save or spill.  
To spill were pittie, but to save were prayse !  
Chuse rather to be prayd for doing good,  
Then to be blam'd for spilling guiltlesse blood.

## SONNET XXXIX.

SWEET smile ! the daughter of the Queene of Love,  
Expressing all thy mothers powrefull art,  
With which she wonts to temper angry Love,  
When all the gods he threatens with thundring dart :

xxxv. 8. — so plentie makes me poore.] Inopem me  
copia fecit. Todd.

xxxvi. 6. — her thrilling eyes ;] Her piercing eyes.  
Todd.

Sweet is thy vertue, as thy selfe sweet art.  
For, when on me thou shimedst late in sadnesse,  
A melting pleasance ran through every part,  
And me revived with hart-robbing gladnesse.  
Whylest rapt with ioy resembling heavenly madnesse,  
My soule was ravisht quite as in a traunce ;  
And, feeling thence no more her sorrowes sadnesse,  
Fed on the fulnesse of that chearfull glance.

More sweet than nectar, or ambrosiall meat,  
Seem'd every bit which thenceforth I did eat.

## SONNET XL.

MARK when she smiles with amiable cheare,  
And tell me whereto can ye lyken it ;  
When on each eyelid sweetly doe appeare  
An hundred Graces as in shade to sit.  
Lykest it seemeth, in my simple wit,  
Unto the fayre sunshine in somers day ;  
That, when a dreadfull storme away is fit,  
Through the broad world doth spread his goodly ray ;  
At sight whereof, each bird that sits on spray,  
And every beast that to his den was fled,  
Comes forth afresh out of their late dismay,  
And to the light lift up their drouping hed.  
So my storme-beaten hart likewise is cheared  
With that sunshine, when cloudy looks are cleared.

## SONNET XLI.

Is it her nature, or is it her will,  
To be so cruell to an humbled foe ?  
If nature ; then she may it mend with skill :  
If will ; then she at will may will forgoe.  
But if her nature and her will be so,  
That she will plague the man that loves her most,  
And take delight 't increase a wretches woe ;  
Then all her natures goodly gifts are lost :  
And that same glorious beauties ydle boast  
Is but a bayt such wretches to beguile,  
As, being long in her loves tempest tost,  
She meanes at last to make her pitious spoyle.  
O fayrest fayre ! let never it be named,  
That so fayre beauty was so fowly shamed.

## SONNET XLII.

THE love, which me so cruelly tormenteth,  
So pleasing is in my extreamest paine,  
That, all the more my sorrow it augmenteth,  
The more I love and doe embrace my bane.  
Ne do I wish (for wishing were but vaine)  
To be acquit from my continual smart ;  
But ioy, her thrall for ever to remayne,  
And yield for pledge my poor and captvyd hart ;  
The which, that it from her may never start,  
Let her, yf please her, bynd with adamant chayne ;  
And from all waudring loves, which mote pervart  
His safe assurance, strongly it restrayne.  
Onely let her abstaine from cruelty,  
And doe me not before my time to dy.

## SONNET XLIII.

SHALL I then silent be, or shall I speake ?  
And, if I speake, her wrath renew I shall ;  
And, if I silent be, my hart will breake,  
Or choked be with overflowing gall.

What tyranny is this, both my hart to thrall,  
 And eke my toung with proud restraint to tie;  
 That neither I may speake nor thinke at all,  
 But like a stupid stock in silence die!  
 Yet I my hart with silence secretly  
 Will teach to speak, and my just cause to plead;  
 And eke mine eies, with meek humility,  
 Love-learned letters to her eyes to read; [spel,  
 Which her deep wit, that true harts thought can  
 Will soon conceive, and learne to construe well.

## SONNET XLIV.

WHEN those renowned noble Peres of Greece,  
 Through stubborn pride, among themselves did iar,  
 Forgetfull of the famous golden feece;  
 Then Orpheus with his harp theyr strife did bar.  
 But this continuall, cruell, civill warre,  
 The which my selfe against my selfe doe make;  
 Whilest my weak powres of passions warreid arre;  
 No skill can stint, nor reason can aslake.  
 But, when in hand my tunelesse harp I take,  
 Then doe I more augment my foes despight;  
 And griefe renew, and passions doe awake  
 To battaile, fresh against my selfe to fight.  
 Mongst whome the more I seeke to settle peace,  
 The more I fynd their malice to increase.

## SONNET XLV.

LEAVE, Lady! in your glasse of cristall clene,  
 Your goodly selfe for evermore to vew:  
 And in my selfe, my inward selfe, I meane,  
 Most lively lyke behold your semblant trew.  
 Within my hart, though hardly it can shew  
 Thing so divine to vew of earthly eye,  
 The fayre idea of your celestiall hew  
 And every part remains immortally:  
 And were it not that, through your cruelty,  
 With sorrow dimmed and deform'd it were,  
 The goodly ymage of your visnomy,  
 Clearer than cristall, would therein appere.  
 But, if your selfe in me ye playne will see,  
 Remove the cause by which your fayre beames  
 darkned be.

## SONNET XLVI.

WHEN my abodes prefixed time is spent,  
 My cruell fayre streight bids me wend my way:  
 But then from heaven most hideous stormes are sent,  
 As willing me against her will to stay.  
 Whom then shall I, or heavn or her, obey?  
 The heavens know best what is the best for me:  
 But as she will, whose will my life doth sway,  
 My lower heaven, so it perforce must be.  
 But ye high hevens, that all this sorowe see,  
 Sith all your tempests cannot hold me backe,  
 Aswage your storms; or else both you, and she,  
 Will both together me too sorely wrack.  
 Enough it is for one man to sustaine  
 The stormes, which she alone on me doth raine.

## SONNET XLVII.

Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes,  
 Untill ye have their guylefull traynes well tryde:

For they are lyke but unto golden hookes,  
 That from the foolish fish theyr baytes do hyde:  
 So she with flattering smyles weake harts doth guye  
 Unto her love, and tempte to theyr decay;  
 Whome, being caught, she kills with cruell pryde,  
 And feeds at pleasure on the wretched pray:  
 Yet, even whylst her bloody hands them slay,  
 Her eyes looke lovely, and upon them smyle;  
 That they take pleasure in their cruell play,  
 And, dying, doe themselves of payne beguyle.

O mighty charm! which makes men love theyr  
 bane,  
 And thnck they dy with pleasure, live with payne.

## SONNET XLVIII.

INNOCENT paper! whom too cruell hand  
 Did make the matter to avenge her yre;  
 And, ere she could thy cause well understand,  
 Did sacrificize unto the greedy fyre.  
 Well worthy thou to have found better hyre,  
 Then se bad end for hereticks ordayned;  
 Yet heresy nor treason didst conspire,  
 But plead thy Maisters cause, unjustly payned.  
 Whom she, all carelesse of his grief, constrained  
 To utter forth the anguish of his hart:  
 And would not heare, when he to her complaind  
 The piteous passion of his dying smart.  
 Yet live for ever, though against her will,  
 And speake her good, though she requite it ill.

## SONNET XLIX.

FAYRE Cruell! why are ye so fierce and cruell?  
 Is it because your eyes have powre to kill?  
 Then know that mercy is the Mighties jewell;  
 And greater glory think to save then spill.  
 But if it be your pleasure, and proud will,  
 To shew the powre of your imperious eyes;  
 Then not on him that never thought you ill,  
 But bend your force against your enemies:  
 Let them feel the utmost of your cruelties;  
 And kill with looks, as cockatrices do:  
 But him, that at your footstool humbled lies,  
 With merciful regard give mery to.  
 Such mercy shall you make aduyn'd to be;  
 So shall you live, by giving life to me.

## SONNET L.

LONG languishing in double malady  
 Of my harts wound, and of my bodies griefe;  
 There came to me a Leach, that would apply  
 Fit medicines for my bodies best reliefe.  
 Vayne man, quoth I, that hast but little priefe.  
 In deep discovery of the mynds disease;  
 Is not the hart of all the body chiefe,  
 And rules the members as it selfe doth please?  
 Then, with some cordialls, seeke for to appease  
 The inward languour of my wounded hart;  
 And then my body shall have shortly ease:  
 But such sweet cordialls passe Physicians art.  
 Then, my lyfes Leach! doe you yourskill reveale  
 And, with one salve, both hart and body heale.



## SONNET LI.

DOE I not see that fayrest ymages  
Of hardest marble are of purpose made,  
For that they should endure through many ages,  
Ne let theyr famous monuments to fade ?  
Why then doe I, untraide in Lovers trade,  
Her hardnes blame, which I should more commend ?  
Sith never ought was excellent assayde  
Which was not hard t' atchive and bring to end.  
Ne ought so hard, but he, that would attend,  
Mote soften it and to his will allure :  
So do I hope her stubborne hart to bend,  
And that it then more stedfast will endure.  
Only my paines will be the more to get her ;  
But, having her, my ioy will be the greater.

## SONNET LII.

So oft as homeward I from her depart,  
I go lyke one that, having lost the field,  
Is prisoner led away with heavy bart,  
Despoild of warlike armes and known shield.  
So doe I now my self a prisoner yeld  
To sorrow and to solitary paine ;  
From presence of my dearest deare exylde,  
Long-while alone in languor to remaine.  
There let no thought of ioy, or pleasure vaine,  
Dare to approach, that may my solace breed ;  
But sudden dumps, and drery sad disdayne  
Of all worlds gladnesse, more my torment feed.  
So I her absens will my penaunce make,  
That of her presens I my meed may take.

## SONNET LIII.

THE panther, knowing that his spotted hyde,  
Doth please all beasts, but that his looks them fray ;  
Within a bush his dreadful head doth hide,  
To let them gaze, whylst he on them may pray :  
Right so my cruell fayre with me doth play.  
For, with the goodly semblance of her hew,  
She doth allure me to mine owne decay,  
And then no mercy will unto me shew.  
Great shame it is, thing so divine in view,  
Made for to be the worlds most ornament,  
To make the bayte her gazers to embrew :  
Good shames to be to ill an instrument !  
But mercy doth with beantie best agree,  
As in theyr Maker ye them best may see.

## SONNET LIV.

OF this worlds Theatre in which we stay,  
My Love, like the Spectator, ydly sits ;  
Beholding me, that all the Pageants play,  
Disguysing diversly my troubled wits.  
Sometimes I ioy when glad occasion fits,  
And mask in myrth lyke to a Comedy ;  
Soone after, when my ioy to sorrow flits,  
I waile, and make my woes a Tragedy.  
Yet she, beholding me with constant eye,  
Delights not in my merth, nor rues my smart :  
But, when I laugh, she mocks ; and, when I cry,  
She laughs, and hardens evermore her hart.

LI. II. — dumps,] *Lamentations.* Todd.

What then can move her ? if nor merth, nor mone,  
She is no woman, but a sencelesse stone.

## SONNET LV.

So oft as I her beauty doe behold,  
And therewith doe her cruelty compare,  
I marvaile of what substance was the mould,  
The which her made attonce so cruell faire.  
Not earth ; for her high thoughts more heavenly are  
Not water ; for her love doth burne like fyre :  
Not ayre ; for she is not so light or rare :  
Not fyre ; for she doth friese with faint desire.  
Then needs another Element inquire  
Whereof she mote be made ; that is, the skye.  
For, to the heaven her haughty looks aspire ;  
And eke her love is pure immortal hye.  
Then, sith to heaven ye lykened are the best,  
Be lyke in mercy as in all the rest.

## SONNET LVI.

FAYRE ye be sure, but cruell and unkind,  
As is a tygre, that with greedinesse  
Hunts after blond ; when he by chance doth find  
A feeble beast, doth felly him oppresse.  
Fayre be ye sure, but proud and pitillesse,  
As is a storme, that all things doth prostrate ;  
Finding a tree alone all comfortlesse,  
Beats on it strongly, it to ruinate.  
Fayre be ye sure, but hard and obstinate,  
As is a rocke amidst the raging floods ;  
Gaynst which, a ship, of succour desolate,  
Doth suffer wreck both of her selfe and goods.  
That ship, that tree, and that same beast, am I,  
Whom ye doe wreck, doe ruine, and destroy.

## SONNET LVII.

SWEET warrior ! when shall I have peace with  
High time it is this warre now ended were ; [you ?  
Which I no lenger can endure to sue,  
Ne your incessant battry more to beare :  
So weake my powres, so sore my wounds, appear,  
That wonder is how I should live a iot,  
Seeing my hart through-launched every where  
With thousand arrowes, which your eies have shot :  
Yet shoot ye sharpely still, and spare me not,  
But glory thinke to make these cruel stoures.  
Ye cruell one ! what glory can be got,  
In slaying him that would live gladly yours !  
Make peace therefore, and graunt me timely  
grace,  
That al my wounds will heale in little space.

## SONNET LVIII.

BY HER THAT IS MOST ASSURED TO HER SELFE.

WEAKE is th' assurance that weake flesh repositeth  
In her own powre, and scorneth others ayde ;  
That soonest fals, when as she most supposeth  
Her selfe assur'd, and is of nought affrayd.  
All flesh is frayle, and all her strength unstayd,  
Like a vaine bubble blown up with ayre :  
Devouring tyme and changefull chance have prayd,

LV. 8. — ruinate.] *Throw down.* Ital. *ruinare.* Todd.

Her glorious pride that none may it repayre.  
 Ne none so rich or wise, so strong or fayre,  
 But fayleth, trusting on his owne assurance :  
 And he, that standeth on the hyghest stayre,  
 Falls lowest: for on earth nought hath endurance.

Why then doe ye, proud fayre, misdeeme so farre,  
 That to your selfe ye most assured arre !

## SONNET LIX.

THIRSE happie she ! that is so well assured  
 Unto her selfe, and settled so in hart,  
 That neither will for better be allured,  
 Ne feard with worse to any chauce to start;  
 But, like a stedy ship, doth strongly part  
 The raging waves, and keepes her course aright;  
 Ne ought for tempest doth from it depart,  
 Ne ought for fayrer weathers false delight.  
 Such selfe-assurance need not feare the spight  
 Of grudging foes, ne favour seek of friends:  
 But, in the stay of her owne stedfast might,  
 Neither to one her selfe nor other bends.

Most happy she, that most assur'd doth rest;  
 But he most happy, who such one loves best.

## SONNET LX.

THEY, that in course of heavenly spheares are skild,  
 To every planet point his sundry yeare :  
 In which her circles voyage is fulfilld,  
 As Mars in threescore yeares doth run his spheare.  
 So, since the winged god his planet cleare  
 Began in me to move, one yeare is spent:  
 The which doth longer unto me appeare,  
 Then al those fourty which my life out-went.  
 Then by that count, which lovers books invent,  
 The spheare of Cupid fourty yeares contains :  
 Which I have wasted in long languishment,  
 That seem'd the longer for my greater paines.

But let my Loves fayre planet short her wayes,  
 This yeare ensuing, or else short my dayes.

## SONNET LXI.

THE glorious image of the Makers beantie,  
 My soverayne saynt, the idoll of my thought,  
 Dare not henceforth, above the bounds of dewtie,  
 T' accuse of pride, or rashly blame for ought.  
 For, being as she is, divinely wrought,  
 And of the brood of Angels heavenly born ;  
 And with the crew of blessed saynts upbrought,  
 Each of which did her with their guifts adorne ;  
 The bud of ioy, the blossome of the morne,  
 The heame of light, whom mortal eyes admyre ;  
 What reason is it then but she should scorne  
 Base things, that to her love too bold aspire !  
 Such heavenly formes ought rather worshipt be,  
 Then dare be lov'd by men of meane degree.

## SONNET LXII.

THE weary yeare his race now having run,  
 The new begins his compass course anew :  
 With shew of morning mylde he hath begun,  
 Betokening peace and plenty to ensue.  
 So let us, which this change of weather vew,

Change eke our mynds, and former lives amend ;  
 The old yeares sinnes forepast let us eschew,  
 And fly the faults with which we did offend.  
 Then shall the new yeares ioy forth freshly send,  
 Into the glooming world, his gladsome ray :  
 And all these stormes, which now his beauty blend,  
 Shall turne to calmes, and tymely cleare away.

So, likewise, Love! cheare you your heavy  
 spright,  
 And change old yeares annoy to new delight.

## SONNET LXIII.

AFTER long stormes and tempests sad assay,  
 Which hardly I endured heretofore,  
 In dread of death, and daungerous dismay,  
 With which my silly hark was tossed sore ;  
 I doe at length descrie the happy shore,  
 In which I hope ere long for to arryve:  
 Fayre soyle it seemes from far, and fraught with  
 store

Of all that deare and daynty is alyve.  
 Most happy he ! that can at last atchive  
 The ioyous safety of so sweet a rest ;  
 Whose least delight sufficeth to deprive  
 Remembrance of all paines which him opprest.  
 All paines are nothing in respect of this ;  
 All sorrowes short that gaine eternall blisse.

## SONNET LXIV.

COMING to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found,)  
 Me seemd, I smelt a gardin of sweet flowres,  
 That dainty odours from them threw around,  
 For damzells fit to decke their lovers bowres.  
 Her lips did smell lyke unto gillyflowers ;  
 Her ruddy cheekes, lyke unto roses red ;  
 Her snowy browes, lyke budded bellamoures ;  
 Her lovely eyes, lyke pincks but newly spred ;  
 Her goodly bosome, lyke a strawberry hed ;  
 Her neck, lyke to a bouch of cullambynes ;  
 Her brest, lyke lillyes, ere their leaves be shed ;  
 Her nipples, lyke young blossomd jessemynes :  
 Such fragrant flowres doe give most odorous  
 smell ;  
 But her sweet odour did them all excell.

## SONNET LXV.

THE doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre Love, is vaine,  
 That fondly feare to lose your liberty ;  
 When, losing one, two liberties ye gayne,  
 And make him bond that bondage earst did fly.  
 Sweet be the bands, the which true love doth tye  
 Without constraynt, or dread of any ill:  
 The gentle birde feelles no captivity  
 Within her cage; but sings, and feeds her fill.  
 There pride dare not approach, nor discord spill  
 The league twixt them, that loyal love hath bound:  
 But simple Truth, and mutual Good-will,  
 Seeks, with sweet peace, to salve each others wound:  
 There Fayth doth fearless dwell in brasen towre,  
 And spotlesse Pleasure builds her sacred bowre.

LXII. 11. — blend,] *Confound*, in which sense it repeatedly occurs in the *Faerie Queene*. Todd.

## SONNET LXVI.

To all those happy blessings, which ye have  
 With plenteous hand by heaven upon you thrown ;  
 This one disparagement they to you gave,  
 That ye your love lent to so meane a one.  
 Ye, whose high worths surpassing paragon  
 Could not on earth have found one fit for mate,  
 Ne but in heaven matchable to none,  
 Why did ye stoupe unto so lowly state ?  
 But ye thereby much greater glory gate,  
 Then had ye sorted with a Princes pere :  
 For, now your light doth more it selfe dilate,  
 And, in my darknesse, greater doth appeare.  
 Yet, since your light hath once enlumind me,  
 With my reflex yours shall encreased be.

## SONNET LXVII.

LYKE as a huntsman after weary chace,  
 Seeing the game from him escapt away,  
 Sits downe to rest him in some shady place,  
 With panting hounds beguiled of their pray :  
 So, after long pursuit and vaine assay,  
 When I all weary had the chace forsooke,  
 The gentle deer returnd the selfe-same way,  
 Thinking to quench her thirst at the next brooke :  
 There she, beholding me with mylder looke,  
 Sought not to fly, but fearlesse still did bide ;  
 Till I in hand her yet halfe trembling tooke,  
 And with her owne goodwill her fyrmely tyde,  
 Strange thing, me seemd, to see a beast so wyld,  
 So goodly wonne, with her owne will beguyld.

## SONNET LXVIII.

Most glorious Lord of lyfe ! that, on this day,  
 Didst make thy triumph over death and sin ;  
 And, having harrowd hell, didst bring away  
 Captivity thence captive, us to win :  
 This ioyous day, dear Lord, with ioy begin ;  
 And grant that we, for whom thou diddest dy,  
 Being with thy deare blood cleane washt from sin,  
 May live for ever in felicity !  
 And that thy love we weighing worthily,  
 May likewise love thee for the same againe ;  
 And for thy sake, that all lyke deare didst buy,  
 With love may one another entertayne !  
 So let us love, deare Love, lyke as we ought :  
 Love is the lesson which the Lord us taught.

## SONNET LXIX.

THE famous warriors of the anticke world  
 Us'd trophees to erect in stately wize ;  
 In which they would the records have enrolld  
 Of their great deeds and valorous emprize.  
 What trophee then shall I most fit devise,  
 In which I may record the memory  
 Of my loves conquest, peerlesse beauties prise,  
 Adorn'd with honour, love, and chastity !  
 Even this verse, vowd to eternity,  
 Shall be thereof immortal monument ;

LXVIII. 3. ——— having harrowed hell.] Having conquered hell. TODD.

And tell her praise to all posterity,  
 That may admire such worlds rare wonderment ;  
 The happy purchase of my glorious spoile,  
 Gotten at last with labour and long toyle.

## SONNET LXX.

FRESH Spring, the herald of loves mighty king,  
 In whose cote-armour richly are displayd  
 All sorts of flowres, the which on earth do spring,  
 In goodly colours gloriously arrayd ;  
 Goe to my Love, where she is carelesse layd,  
 Yet in her winters bowre not well awake ;  
 Tell her the ioyous time wil not be staid,  
 Unlesse she doe him by the forelock take ;  
 Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready make,  
 To wayt on Love amongst his lovely crew ;  
 Where every one, that misseth then her make,  
 Shall be by him amearst with penance dew. [prime ;  
 Make hast therefore, sweet Love, whilst it is  
 For none can call againe the passed time.

## SONNET LXXI.

I TOY to see how, in your drawn work,  
 Your selfe unto the Bee ye doe compare ;  
 And me unto the Spyder, that doth lurke  
 In close awayt, to catch her unaware :  
 Right to your selfe were caught in cunning snare  
 Of a deare foe, and thralld to his love ;  
 In whose streight bands ye now captived are  
 So firmly that ye never may remove.  
 But as your worke is woven all about  
 With Woodbynd flowers and fragrant Eglantine ;  
 So sweet your prison you in time shall prove,  
 With many deare delights bedecked fyne.  
 And all thensforth eternall peace shall see  
 Betweene the Spyder and the gentle Bee.

## SONNET LXXII.

OFT, when my spirit doth spred her bolder winges,  
 In mind to mount up to the purest sky ;  
 It down is weighd with thought of earthly things,  
 And clogd with burden of mortality ;  
 Where, when that soverayne beauty it doth spy,  
 Resembling heavens glory in her light,  
 Drawn with sweet pleasures hayt, it hack doth fly  
 And unto heaven forgets her former flight.  
 There my fraile fancy, fed with full delight,  
 Doth bathe in blisse, and mantleth most at ease ;  
 Ne thinks of other heaven, but how it might  
 Her harts desire with most contentment please.  
 Hart need not wish none other happinesse,  
 But here on earth to have such hevens blisse.

## SONNET LXXIII.

BEING my self captvyed here in care,  
 My hart, (whom none with servile hands can tye,  
 But the fayre tresses of your golden hayre,)  
 Breaking his prison, forth to you doth fly.  
 Like as a byrd, that in ones hand doth spy  
 Desired food, to it doth make his flight :  
 Even so my hart, that wont on your fayre eye  
 To feed his fill, flies backe unto your sight.  
 Doe you him take, and in your bosome bright  
 Gently engage, that he may be your thrall :

Perhaps he there may learne, with rare delight,  
To sing your name and prayes ever all:  
That if hereafter may you not repent,  
Him lodging in your bosome to have lent.

## SONNET LXXIV.

Most happy letters! fram'd by skilfull trade,  
With which that happy name was first desynd,  
The which three times thrise happy hath me made,  
With gifts of body, fortune, and of mind.  
The first my being to me gave by kind,  
From Mothers womb deriv'd by dew descent:  
The second is my sovereigne Queene most kind,  
That honour and large richesse to me lent:  
The third, my Love, my lives last ornament,  
By whom my spirit out of dust was rayseed:  
To speake her prayse and glory excellent,  
Of all alive most worthy to be prayseed.  
Ye three Elizabeths! for ever live,  
That three such graces did unto me give.

## SONNET LXXV.

ONE day I wrote her name upon the strand;  
But came the waves, and washed it away:  
Agayne, I wrote it with a second hand;  
But came the tyde, and made my paynes his pray.  
Wayne man, sayd she, that deest in vaine assay  
A mortall thing so to immortalize;  
For I my selve shall lyke to this decay,  
And eke my name bee wyped out lykewize.  
Not so, quod I; let baser things devize  
To dy in dust, but you shall live by fame:  
My verse your vertues rare shall éternize,  
And in the hevens wryte your glorious name.  
Where, when as death shall all the world subdew,  
Our love shall live, and later life renew

## SONNET LXXVI.

FAYRE bosome! fraught with vertues richest trespure,  
The neast of love, the lodging of delight,  
The bowre of blisse, the paradise of pleasure,  
The sacred harbour of that heavenly spright;  
How was I ravisht with your lovely sight,  
And my frayle thoughts too rashly led astray!  
Whiles diving deepe through amorous insight,  
On the sweet spoyle of beautie they did pray;  
And twixt her paps, (like early fruit in May,  
Whose harvest seemd to hasten now apacc,)  
They loosely did theyr wanten wings display,  
And there to rest themselves did boldly place.  
Sweet thoughts! I envy your so happy rest,  
Which oft I wisht, yet never was so blest.

## SONNET LXXVII.

Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne;  
A goodly table of pure yvory,  
All spred with juncats, fit to entertayne  
The greatest Prince with pompous roialty:  
Mongst which, there in a silver dish did ly  
Two golden apples of unvalwed price;  
Far passing those which Hercules came by,  
Or those which Atalanta did entice;

LXXVII. 6. — unvalwed] *Invaluable*. TODD.

Exceeding sweet, yet veyd of sinfull vice;  
That many sought, yet none could ever taste;  
Sweet fruit of pleasure, brought from Paradise  
By Love himselfe, and in his garden plaste.  
Her brest that table was, so richly spredd;  
My thoughts the guests, which would thereon  
have fedd.

## SONNET LXXVIII.

LACKYNG my Love, I go from place to place,  
Lyke a young fawne, that late hath lost the hynd;  
And seeke each where, where last I sawe her face,  
Whose ymage yet I carry fresh in mynd.  
I seeke the fields with her late footing synd;  
I seeke her bowre with her late presence deekt;  
Yet nor in field ner bowre I can her fynd;  
Yet field and bowre are full of her aspect:  
But, when myne eyes I thereunte direct,  
They ydly back return to me agayne:  
And, when I hope to see theyr trew obiect,  
I fynd my self but fed with fancies wayne.  
Cease then, myne eyes, to seeke her selfe to see;  
And let my thoughts bchold her selfe in mee.

## SONNET LXXIX.

MEN call you fayre, and you doe credit it,  
For that your selfe ye daily such doe see:  
But the trew fayre, that is the gentle wit,  
And vertuous mind, is much mere praysd of me:  
For all the rest, how ever fayre it be,  
Shall turne to neught and lose that glorious hew:  
But onely that is permanent and free  
From frayle corruption, that doth flesh ensw.  
That is true beautie: that doth argue you  
To be divine, and born of heavenly seed;  
Deriv'd from that fayre Spirit, from whom all true  
And perfect beauty did at first proceed:  
He onely fayre, and what he fayre hath made;  
All other fayre, lyke flowers, untymely fade.

## SONNET LXXX.

AFTER so long a race as I have run  
Through Faery land, which these six books compile,  
Give leave to rest me being half feredonne,  
And gather to my selfe new breath awhile.  
Then, as a steed refreshed after toyle,  
Out of my prison I will break anew;  
And stoutly will that second work assoyle,  
With strong endeavour and attention dew.  
Till then give leave to me, in pleasant mew  
To spert my Muse, and sing my Loves sweet praise;  
The contemplation of whose heavenly hew,  
My spirit to an higher pitch will rayse.  
But let her prayses yet be low and meane,  
Fit for the handmayd of the Faery Queene.

## SONNET LXXXI.

FAYRE is my Love, when her fayre golden haire  
With the loose wynd ye waving chance to marke;  
Fayre, when the rose in her red cheekes appears;  
Or in her eyes the fyre of love does sparke.  
Fayre, when her brest, lyke a rich laden barke,  
With pretious merchandize she forth doth lay;

Fayre, when that cloud of pryde, which oft doth dark  
 Her goodly light, with smiles she drives away.  
 But fayrest she, when so she doth display  
 The gate with pearles and rubyes richly dight ;  
 Through which her words so wise do make their way  
 To heare the message of her gentle spright.  
 The rest be works of Natures wonderment ;  
 But this the worke of harts astonishment.

## SONNET LXXXII.

Iox of my life ! full oft for loving you  
 I blesse my lot, that was so lucky plac'd :  
 But then the more your owne mishap I rew,  
 That are so much by so meane love embased.  
 For, had the equall hevens so much you graced  
 In this as in the rest, ye mote invent  
 Some hevenly wit, whose verse could have enchased  
 Your glorious name in golden monument.  
 But since ye deignd so goodly to relent  
 To me your thrall, in whom is little worth ;  
 That little, that I am, shall all be spent  
 In setting your immortal prayes forth :  
 Whose lofty argument, uplifting me,  
 Shall lift you up unto an high degree.

## SONNET LXXXIII.

LET not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre  
 Breake out, that may her sacred peace molest ;  
 Ne one light glance of sensuall desyre  
 Attempt to work her gentle mindes unrest :  
 But pure affections bred in spotlesse brest,  
 And modest thoughts breathd from well tempred  
 spirits,  
 Goe visit her, in her chaste bowre of rest,  
 Accompanyde with angelick delightes.  
 There fill your selfe with those most ioyous sights,  
 The which my selfe could never yet attayne :  
 But speake no word to her of these sad plights,  
 Which her too constant stiffnesse doth constrayn.  
 Onely behold her rare perfection,  
 And blesse your fortunes fayre election.

## SONNET LXXXIV.

THE world that cannot deeme of worthy things,  
 When I doe praise her, say I doe but flatter :  
 So does the cuckow, when the mavis sings,  
 Begin his witlesse note apace to clatter.  
 But they that skill not of so heavenly matter,  
 All that they know not, envy or admyre ;  
 Rather then envy, let them wonder at her,  
 But not to deeme of her desert aspyre.  
 Deepe, in the closet of my parts entyre,  
 Her worth is written with a golden quill,  
 That me with heavenly fury doth inspire,  
 And my glad mouth with her sweet prayes fill.  
 Which when as Fame in her shril trump shall  
 thunder,  
 Let the world chuse to envy or to wonder.

## SONNET LXXXV.

VENEMOUS tongue, tipt with vile adders sting,  
 Of that self kynd with which the Furies fell

Their snaky heads doe combe, from which a spring  
 Of poisoned words and sightfull speeches well ;  
 Let all the plagues, and horrid paines, of hell  
 Upon thee fall for thine accursed hyre ;  
 That with false forged lyes, which thou didst tell,  
 In my true Love did stirre up coles of yre ;  
 The sparkes whereof let kinde thine own fyre,  
 And, catching hold on thine own wicked hed,  
 Consume thee quite, that didst with guile conspire  
 In my sweet peace such breaches to have bred !  
 Shame be thy meed, and mischiefe thy reward,  
 Due to thy selfe, that it for me prepar'd !

## SONNET LXXXVI.

SINCE I did leave the presence of my Love,  
 Many long weary dayes I have outworue ;  
 And many nights, that slowly seemd to move  
 Theyr sad protract from evening untill morn.  
 For, when as day the heaven doth adorne,  
 I wish that night the noyous day would end :  
 And, when as night hath us of light forlorne,  
 I wish that day would shortly reascend.  
 Thus I the time with expectation spend,  
 And faine my grieffe with chaunges to beguile,  
 That further seemes his terme still to extend,  
 And maketh every minute seem a myle.  
 So sorrowe still doth seem too long to last ;  
 But ioyous houres do fly away too fast.

## SONNET LXXXVII.

SINCE I have lackt the comfort of that light,  
 The which was wont to lead my thoughts astray ;  
 I wander as in darknesse of the night,  
 Affrayd of every dangers least dismay.  
 Ne ought I see, though in the clearest day,  
 When others gaze upon theyr shadowes vayne,  
 But th' only image of that heavenly ray,  
 Whereof some glance doth in mine eie remayne.  
 Of which beholding the idea playne,  
 Through contemplation of my purest part,  
 With light thereof I doe my self sustayne,  
 And thereon feed my love-affamisht hart.  
 But, with such brightnesse whylest I fill my mind,  
 I starve my body, and mine eyes doe blynd.

## SONNET LXXXVIII.

LYKE as the culver, on the bared bough,  
 Sits mourning for the absence of her mate ;  
 And, in her songs, sends many a wishful vow  
 For his returne that seemes to linger late :  
 So I alone, now left disconsolate,  
 Mourne to my selfe the absence of my Love ;  
 And, wandring here and there all desolate,  
 Seek with my playnts to match that mournful dove :  
 Ne ioy of ought, that under heaven doth have,  
 Can comfort me, but her owne ioyous sight :  
 Whose sweet aspect both God and man can move,  
 In her unspotted pleasauns to delight.  
 Dark is my day, whyles her fayre light I mis,  
 And dead my life that wants such lively blis.

## SONNETS.

COLLECTED FROM THE ORIGINAL PUBLICATIONS IN WHICH THEY APPEARED.

\* I.

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPPULL, MY SINGULAR GOOD FRIEND,  
M. GABRIELL HARVEY, DOCTOR OF THE LAWE.

HARVEY, the happy above happiest men  
I read ; that, sitting like a Looker-on  
Of this worldes stage, doest note with critique pen  
The sharpe dislikes of each condition :  
And, as one carelesse of suspition,  
Ne fawnest for the favour of the great ;  
Ne fearest foolish reprehension  
Of faulty men, which danger to thee threat :  
But freely doest, of what thee list, entreat,  
Like a great lord of peerelesse liberty ;  
Lifting the Good up to high Honours seat,  
And the Evill damning evermore to dy :

For Life, and Death, is in thy doomeful writing !  
So thy renomme lives ever by endighting.

Your devoted friend, during life,

EDMUND SPENCER.

Dublin, this xvliij. of July, 1586.

\* II.

Whoso wil seeke, by right deserts, t' attaine  
Unto the type of true Nobility ;  
And not by painted shewes, and titles vaine,  
Derived farre from famous Auucestrie :  
Behold them both in their right visnomy  
Here truly pourtray'd, as they ought to be,  
And striving both for termes of dignitie,  
To be advanced highest in degree.

Aud, when thou doost with equall insight see  
The ods twixt both, of both thē deem aright,  
And chuse the better of them both to thee ;  
But thanks to him, that it deserves, behight ;

To Nenna first, that first this worke created,  
And next to Jones, that truly it translated.

ED. SPENCER.

\* I. From "Foure Letters, and certaine Sonnets, especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties by him abused, &c. 1592." Todd.

\* II. Prefixed to "Nennio, or A Treatise of Nobility, &c. Written in Italian by that famous Doctor and worthy Knight Sir John Baptista Nenna of Bari. Done into English by William Iones, Gent. 1595." Todd.

\* III.

"UPON THE HISTORIE OF GEORGE CASTRIOT, ALIAS SCANDER-  
BEG, KING OF THE EPIROTS, TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH.

WHEREFORE doth vaine Antiquitie so vaunt  
Her ancient monuments of mightie peeres,  
And old herōes, which their world did daunt [eares ?  
With their great deedes and fild their childrens  
Who, rapt with wonder of their famous praise,  
Admire their statues, their colossoes great :  
Their rich triumphall arcks which they did raise,  
Their huge pyramids, which do heaven threat.  
Lo ! one, whom Later Age hath brought to light,  
Matchable to the greatest of those great ;  
Great both by name, and great in power and might,  
And meriting a meeere triumphant seate.

The scourge of Turkes, and plague of infidels,  
Thy acts, O Scanderbeg, this volume tels.

ED. SPENCER.

\* IV.

THE antique Babel, Empresse of the East,  
Upcreard her buildinges to the threatned skie :  
And second Bahell, Tyrant of the West,  
Her ayry towers upraised much more high.  
But, with the weight of their own surquedry,  
They both are fallen, that all the earth did feare,  
And buried now in their own ashes ly ;  
Yet shewing, by their heapes, how great they were.  
But in their place doth now a third appeare,  
Fayre Venice, flower of the last worlds delight ;  
And next to them in beauty draweth neare,  
But farre exceeds in policie of right.

Yet not so fayre her buildinges to behold

As Lewkenors stile that hath her beautie told.

EDM. SPENCER.

\* III. Prefixed to the " Historie of George Castriot, alias Scanderbeg, King of Albanie: Containing his famous actes, &c. Newly translated out of French into English by Z. J. Gentleman. 1596." Todd.

ll. 12 — meere] *Absolute, entire.* TODD.

\* IV. Prefixed to "The Commonwealth and Government of Venice, Written by the Cardinall Gaspar Contarino, and translated out of Italian into English, by Lewes Lewkenor, Esquire. 1599." Todd.

## POEMS.

### POEM I.

IN youth, before I waxed old,  
The blynd boy, Venus baby,  
For want of cunning made me bold,  
In bitter hyve to grope for honny :  
But, when he saw me stung and cry,  
He tooke his wings and away did fly.

### POEM II.

As Diane hunted on a day,  
She chaunst to come where Cupid lay,  
His quiver by his head :  
One of his shafts she stole away,  
And one of hers did close convey  
Into the others stead :  
With that Love wounded my Loves hart,  
But Diane beasts with Cupids dart.

### POEM III.

I saw, in secret to my Dame  
How little Cupid humbly came,  
And said to her ; " All hayle, my mother !"  
But, when he saw me laugh, for shame  
His face with bashfull blood did flame,  
Not knowing Venus from the other.  
" Then, never blush, Cupid, quoth I,  
For many have err'd in this beauty.

### POEM IV.

UPON a day, as Love lay sweetly slumbring  
All in his mothers lap ;  
A gentle Bee, with his loud trumpet murm'ring,  
About him flew by hap.  
Whereof when he was wakened with the noyse, 5  
And saw the beast so small ;  
" Whats this (quoth he) that gives so great a voyce,  
That wakens men withall ?"  
In angry wize he flies about,  
And threatens all with corage stout. 10  
To whom his mother closely smiling sayd,  
" Twixt earnest and 'twixt game :  
" See ! thou thy self likewise art lyttle made,  
If thou regard the sane.

And yet thou suffrest neyther gods in sky, 25  
Nor men in earth, to rest :  
But, when thou art disposed cruelly,  
Theyr sleepe thou doost molest.  
Then eyther change thy cruelty,  
Or give lyke leave unto the fly." 20  
Nathelesse, the cruell boy, not so content,  
Would needs the fly pursue ;  
And in his hand, with heedlesse hardiment,  
Him caught for to subdue.  
But, when on it he hasty hand did lay, 25  
The Bee him stung therefore :  
" Now out alas, he cryde, and welaway,  
I wounded am full sore :  
The fly, that I so much did scorne,  
Hath hurt me with his little horne." 30  
Unto his mother straight he weeping came,  
And of his griefe complayned :  
Who could not chuse but laugh at his fond game,  
Though sad to see him pained.  
" Think now (quoth she) my son, how great the 35  
smart  
Of those whom thou dost wound :  
Full many thou hast pricked to the hart,  
That pitty never found :  
Therefore, henceforth some pitty take,  
When thou doest spoye of Lovers make." 40  
She tooke him streight full pitiously lamenting,  
And wrapt him in her smock :  
She wrapt him softly, all the while repenting  
That he the fly did mock.  
She drest his wound, and it embalmed well 45  
With salve of soveraigne might :  
And then she bath'd him in a dainty well,  
The well of deare delight.  
Who would not oft be stung as this,  
To be so hath'd in Venus blis ? 50  
The wanton boy was shortly wel recured  
Of that his malady :  
But he, soone after, fresh again enured  
His former cruelty.  
And since that time he wounded hath my selfe 55  
With his sharpe dart of Love :  
And now forgets the cruell carelesse elfe  
His mothers heast to prove.  
So now I languish, till he please  
My pining anguish to appease. 60

iv. 53. — enur'd] *Committed.* T. WARTON.

## EPITHALAMION\*.

YE learned Sisters, which have oftentimes  
 Beene to the ayding, others to adorne,  
 Whom ye thought worthy of your gracefull rymes,  
 That even the greatest did not greatly scorne  
 To heare theyr names sung in your simple layes, 5  
 But ioyed in theyr praise ;  
 And when ye list your own mishaps to mourne,  
 Which death, or love, or fortunes wreck did rayse,  
 Your string could soone to sadder tenor turne,  
 And teach the woods and waters to lament 10  
 Your dolefull dreriment :  
 Now lay those sorrowfull complaints aside ;  
 And, having all your heads with girlands crownd,  
 Helpe me mine owne Loves prayes to resound ; 15  
 Ne let the same of any be envie :  
 So Orpheus did for his owne bride !  
 So I unto my selfe alone will sing ;  
 The woods shall to me answer, and my echo ring.

EARLY, before the worlds light-giving lampe  
 His golden beame upon the hills doth spread, 20  
 Having disperst the nights uncheerfull dampe,  
 Doe ye awake ; and, with fresh lustyhed,  
 Go to the bowre of my beloved Love,  
 My truest turtle dove ;  
 Bid her awake ; for Hymen is awake, 25  
 And long since ready forth his maske to move,  
 With his bright tead that flames with many a flake,  
 And many a bachelor to waite on him,  
 In theyr fresh garments trim.  
 Bid her awake therefore, and soone her dight, 30  
 For loe ! the wished day is come at last,  
 That shall, for all the paynes and sorrowes past,  
 Pay to her usury of long delight :  
 And, whylest she doth her dight, 35  
 Doe ye to her of ioy and solace sing,  
 That all the woods may answer, and your echo  
 ring.

BRING with you all the Nymphes that you can  
 heare  
 Both of the Rivers and the Forrests greene,  
 And of the Sea that neighbours to her neare ;  
 All with gay girlands goodly wel besene. 40  
 And let them also with them bring in hand  
 Another gay girland,  
 For my fayre Love, of Lillyes and of Roses,  
 Bound truelove wize, with a blew silke riband.  
 And let them make great store of bridale poses, 45  
 And let them eke bring store of other flowers,  
 To deck the bridale bowers.  
 And let the ground whereas her foot shall tread,  
 For feare the stones her tender foot should wrong,  
 Be strewd with fragrant flowers all along, 50  
 And diaped lyke the discolored mead.

Which done, doe at her chamber dore awayt,  
 For she will waken strayt ;  
 The whiles do ye this Song unto her sing,  
 The woods shall to you answer, and your echo 56  
 ring.

YE Nymphes of Mulla, which with carefull heed  
 The silver scaly trouts do tend full well,  
 And greedy pikes which use therein to feed ;  
 (Those trouts and pikes all others doe excell ;) 60  
 And ye likewise, which keepe the rushy lake,  
 Where none doo fishes take ;  
 Bynd up the locks the which hang scatterd light,  
 And in his waters, which your mirror maax,  
 Behold your faces as the christall bright,  
 That when you come whereas my Love doth lie, 65  
 No blemish she may spie.  
 And eke, ye lightfoot mayds, which keepe the dore  
 That on the hoary mountayne use to towre :  
 And the wyld wolves, which seeke them to devoure,  
 With your steele darts doe chace from coming 70  
 neer ;  
 Be also present heere,  
 To helpe to decke her, and to help to sing,  
 That all the woods may answer, and your echo  
 ring.

WAKE now, my Love, awake ; for it is time ;  
 The rosy Morne long since left Tithons bed,  
 All ready to her silver coche to clyme :  
 And Phoebus gins to shew his glorious hed.  
 Hark ! how the cheerefull birds do chaunt theyr  
 And carroll of Loves praise. [laies, 60  
 The merry Larke hir mattins sings aloft ;  
 The Thrush replyes ; the Mavis descant playes ;  
 The Ouzell shrills ; the Ruddock warbles soft ;  
 So goodly all agree, with sweet consent,  
 To this dayes meriment.  
 Ah ! my deere Love, why doe ye sleepe thus long,  
 When meeter were that ye should now awake, 65  
 T<sup>e</sup> awayt the comming of your ioyous Make,  
 And hearken to the birds love-learned song,  
 The dewy leaves among !  
 For they of ioy and pleasance to you sing, 90  
 That all the woods them answer, and theyr echo  
 ring.

MY Love is now awake out of her dreame,  
 And her fayre eyes, like stars that dimmed were  
 With darksome cloud, now shew theyr goodly beams  
 More bright then Hesperus his head doth rere. 95  
 Come now, ye Damzels, Daughters of delight,  
 Helpe quickly her to dight :  
 But first come, ye fayre Houres, which were begot,  
 In Loves sweet paradise, of Day and Night ;

\* *Epithalamion.*] The song of love and jollity, as he calls it, F. Q. i. xii. 38. Todd.

Ver. 51. *And diaped &c.*] *Diversified*, a word borrowed from Chaucer. Todd.

Ver. 81. ——— *the Mavis*] *The thrustle or thrush.* Todd.  
 Ver. 82. ——— *the Ruddock*] *The Red-breast.* Todd.  
 Ver. 83. ——— *consent,*] We should rather read *concent*,  
 i. e. *harmony.* Todd.



Which doe the seasons of the year allot, 100  
 And all, that ever in this world is fayre,  
 Do make and still repayre:  
 And ye three handmayds of the Cyprian Queene,  
 The which doe still adorn her beauties pride,  
 Helpe to adorne my beautifullest bride: 105  
 And, as ye her array, still throw betweene  
 Some graces to be seene;  
 And, as ye use to Venus, to her sing,  
 The whiles the woods shal answer, and your eecho  
 ring.

Now is my Love all ready forth to come: 110  
 Let all the Virgins therefore well away;  
 And ye fresh Boyes, that tend upon her Groome,  
 Prepare your selves; for he is comming strayt.  
 Set all your things in seemely good array,  
 Fit for so ioyfull day: 115  
 The ioyfullst day that ever Sunne did see.  
 Fair Sun! shew forth thy favourable ray,  
 And let thy lifull heat not fervent be,  
 For feare of burning her sunshyny face,  
 Her beauty to disgrace. 120  
 O fayrest Phoebus! Father of the Muse!  
 If ever I did honour thee aright,  
 Or sing the thing that mote thy mind delight,  
 Doe not thy servants simple boone refuse;  
 But let this day, let this one day, be mine; 125  
 Let all the rest be thine.  
 Then I thy soverayne praises loud wil sing,  
 That all the woods shal answer, and their eecho  
 ring.

HARKE! how the minstrels gin to shrill aloud 130  
 Their merry musiek that resounds from far,  
 The pipe, the tabor, and the trembling croud,  
 That well agree withouten breach or iar.  
 But, most of all, the Damzels doe delite,  
 When they their tymbrels smyte, 135  
 And thereunto doe daunce and carrol sweet,  
 That all the senecs they doe ravish quite;  
 The whyles the Boyes run up and downe the street,  
 Crying aloud with strong confused noyee,  
 As if it were one voyee, 140  
 Hymen, io Hymen, Hymen, they do shout;  
 That even to the heavens theyr shouting shrill  
 Doth reach, and all the firmament doth fill;  
 To which the people standing all about,  
 As in approvance, doe thereto applaud, 145  
 And loud advance her laud;  
 And evermore they Hymen, Hymen, sing,  
 That all the woods them answer, and their eecho  
 ring.

LOE! where she comes along with portly paece, 150  
 Lyke Phoebe, from her chamber of the East,  
 Arising forth to run her mighty race,  
 Clad all in white, that seems a Virgin best.  
 So well it her besemeas, that ye would weene  
 Some Angell she had beene. 210  
 Her long loose yellow locks lyke golden wyre,  
 Sprinkled with perle, and perling flowres atweene,  
 Doe lyke a golden mantle her attyre; 156

Ver. 131. ——— croud.] *Crotta*; Welch, *crwth*, the fiddle. TODD.

Ver. 154. *Her long loose yellow locks*] It is remarkable, that Spenser's females, both in the *Faerie Queene*, and in his other Poems, are all described with *yellow hair*. T. WARTON.

And, being crowned with a girland greene,  
 Seem lyke some Mayden Queene.  
 Her modest eyes, abashed to behold 160  
 So many gazers as on her do stare,  
 Upon the lowly ground affixed are;  
 Ne dare lift up her countenance too bold,  
 But blush to heare her prayes sung so loud,  
 So farre from being proud. 165  
 Nathlesse doe ye still loud her prayes sing,  
 That all the woods may answer, and your eecho  
 ring.

TELL me, ye Merchants daughters, did ye see 170  
 So fayre a creature in your towne before!  
 So sweet, so lovely, and so mild as she,  
 Adorn'd with beautyes grace and vertues store:  
 Her goodly eyes lyke saphyres shining bright,  
 Her forehead ivory white, 175  
 Her cheekes lyke apples which the sun hath rudded,  
 Her lips lyke cherries charming men to byte,  
 Her brest like to a bowl of creame uncrudded, 175  
 Her paps lyke lyllyes budded,  
 Her snowie necke lyke to a marble towre;  
 And all her body like a pallace fayre,  
 Ascending up, with many a stately stayre,  
 To Honors seat and Chastities sweet bowre. 180  
 Why stand ye still ye Virgins in amaze,  
 Upon her so to gaze,  
 Whiles ye forget your former lay to sing,  
 To which the woods did answer, and your eecho  
 ring.

BUT if ye saw that which no eyes can see, 185  
 The inward beauty of her lively spright,  
 Garnisht with heavenly gifts of high degree,  
 Much more then would ye wonder at that sight,  
 And stand astonisht lyke to those which red 190  
 Medusaes a mafezull hed.  
 There dwells sweet Love, and constant Chastity,  
 Unspotted Fayth, and comely Womanhood,  
 Regard of Honour, and mild Modesty;  
 There Vertue raynes as Queene in royal throne, 195  
 And giveth lawes alone,  
 The which the base affections doe obay,  
 And yeeld theyr services unto her will;  
 Ne thought of things uncomely ever may  
 Thereto approch to tempt her mind to ill.  
 Had ye once seene these her celestial treasures,  
 And unrevealed pleasures, 201  
 Then would ye wonder, and her prayes sing,  
 That all the woods should answer, and your eecho  
 ring.

OPEN the temple gates unto my Love, 205  
 Open them wide that she may enter in,  
 And all the postes adorne as doth behove,  
 And all the pillours deek with girlands trim,  
 For to receyve this Saynt with honour dew,  
 That commeth in to you. 210  
 With trembling steps, and humble reverence,  
 She commeth in, before th' Almightyes view:  
 Of her ye Virgins learne obedience,  
 When so ye come into those holy places,  
 To humble your proud faces:  
 Bring her up to th' high altar, that she may 215  
 The sacred ceremonies there partake,  
 The which do endless matrimony make;

Ver. 174. ——— charming] That is, tempting by enchantment. T. WARTON.

And let the roring organs loudly play  
The praises of the Lord in lively notes ;  
The whiles, with hollow throates, 230  
The choristers the ioyous antheme sing,  
That all the woods may answer, and their eccho  
ring.

BEHOLD, whiles she before the altar stands,  
Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes,  
And blesseth her with his two happy hands, 235  
How the red roses flush up in her cheekes,  
And the pure snow, with goodly vermill stayne,  
Like crimsin dyde in grayne :  
That even the Angels, which continually  
About the sacred altar doe remaine, 240  
Forget their service and about her fly,  
Ofte peeping in her face, that seems more fayre,  
The more they on it stare.  
But her sad eyes, still fastened on the ground,  
Are governed with goodly modesty, 245  
That suffers not one look to glauce awry,  
Which may let in a litle thought unsound.  
Why blush ye, Love, to give to me your hand,  
The pledge of all our band!  
Sing, ye sweet Angels, Alleluya sing, 240  
That all the woods may answer, and your eccho  
ring.

Now al is done : bring home the Bride againe ;  
Bring home the triumph of our victory ;  
Bring home with you the glory of her gaine,  
With ioyance bring her and with illolity. 245  
Never had man more ioyfull day than this,  
Whom heaven would heape with blis.  
Make feast therefore now all this live-long day ;  
This day for ever to me holy is.  
Poure out the wine without restraint or stay, 250  
Poure not by cups, but by the belly full,  
Poure out to all that wull,  
And sprinkle all the posts and wals with wine,  
That they may sweat, and druken be withall.  
Crowne ye god Bacchus with a coronall, 255  
And Hymen also crowne with wreaths of vine ;  
And let the Graces daunce unto the rest,  
For they can doo it best :  
The whiles the Maydens doe theyr carroll sing,  
To which the woods shall answer, and theyr eccho 250  
ring.

RING ye the bells, ye yong men of the towne,  
And leave your wonted labors for this day :  
This day is holy ; doe ye write it downe,  
That ye for ever it remember may.  
This day the Sunne is in his chiefest hight, 265  
With Barnaby the bright,  
From whence declining daily by degrees,  
He somewhat loseth of his heat and light,  
When once the Crab behind his back he sees. 270  
But for this time it ill ordained was,  
To choose the longest day in all the yeare,  
And shortest night, when longest fitter weare :  
Yet never day so long, but late would passe.  
Ring ye the bells, to make it weare away,  
And boveifiers make all day : 275  
And daunce about them, and about them sing,  
That all the woods may answer, and your eccho  
ring.

AH ! when will this long weary day have end,  
And lende me leave to come unto my Love ?

How slowly do the houres theyr numbers spend ? 280  
How slowly does sad Time his feathers move ?  
Hast thee, O fayrest Planet, to thy home,  
Within the Westerne fome :  
Thy tyred steedes long since have need of rest.  
Long though it be, at last I see it gloome, 285  
And the bright Evening-star with golden cecast  
Appeare out of the East.  
Fayre childe of beauty ! glorious lampe of Love !  
That all the host of heaven in rankes doost lead,  
And guidest Lovers through the nights sad dread, 290  
How chearefully thou lookest from above,  
And seemst to laugh atweene thy twinkling light,  
As ioying in the sight  
Of these glad many, which for ioy do sing,  
That all the woods them answer, and their eccho 295  
ring.

Now cease, ye Damsels, your delights forepast ;  
Enough it is that all the day was youres :  
Now day is doen, and night is nighting fast,  
Now bring the Bryde into the brydall bowres. 300  
The night is come, now soon her disaray,  
And in her bed her lay ;  
Lay her in lillies and in violets,  
And silken curteins over her display,  
And odour sheets, and Arras coverlets.  
Behold how goodly my faire Love does ly, 305  
In proud humility !  
Like unto Maia, when as Iove her took  
In Tempe, lying on the flowry gras,  
Twixt sleepe and wake, after she weary was,  
With bathing in the Acidalian brooke. 310  
Now it is night, ye Damsels may be gone,  
And leave my love alone,  
And leave likewise your former lay to sing :  
The woods no more shall answer, nor your eccho ring

Now welcome, Night ! thou night so long expected,  
That long daies labour doest at last defray, 316  
And all my cares, which cruell Love collected,  
Hast sumd in one, and cancelled for aye :  
Spread thy broad wing over my Love and me, 320  
That no man may us see ;  
And in thy sable mantle us enwrap,  
From feare of perrill and foule horror free.  
Let no false treason seeke us to entrap,  
Nor any dread disquiet once annoy 325  
The safety of our ioy ;  
But let the night be calme, and quiet some,  
Without tempestuous storms or sad afray :  
Lyke as when Iove with fayre Alcmena lay,  
When he begot the great Tirynthian grome :  
Or lyke as when he with thy selfe did lie, 330  
And begot Majesty.  
And let the Mayds and Yongmen cease to sing ;  
Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho ring.

LET no lamenting cryes, nor dolefull teares,  
Be heard all night within, nor yet without ; 335  
Ne let false whispers, breeding hidden feares,  
Breake gentle sleepe with misconceived dout.  
Let no deluding dreaumes, nor dreadful sights,  
Make sudden sad affrights ;  
Ne let house-fyres, nor lightnings helpless harmes,  
Ne let the pouke, nor other evill sprights, 341  
Ne let mischievous witches with theyr charmes,

Ver. 341. *No let the pouke &c.*] The *pouke* is the fairy Robin Goodfellow, known by the name of *Puck*. Todd.

Ne let hob-goblins, names whose sence we see not,  
 Fray us with things that be not ;  
 Let not the shrieck-owle, nor the storke, be heard ;  
 Nor the night raven, that still deadly yels ;<sup>346</sup>  
 Nor damned ghosts, cald up with mighty spels ;  
 Nor griesly vultures make us once affeard :  
 Ne let th' unpleasent quyre of frogs still croking<sup>350</sup>  
 Make us to wish theyr choking.  
 Let none of these theyr dreery accents sing ;  
 Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr echo ring.

But let stil Silence trew night-watches keepe,  
 That sacred Peace may in assurance rayne,  
 And tymely Sleep, when it is tyme to sleepe, <sup>355</sup>  
 May poure his limbs forth on your pleasent playne ;  
 The whiles an hundred little winged Loves,  
 Like divers-fethered doves,  
 Shall fly and flutter round about the bed,  
 And in the secret darke, that none reproves <sup>360</sup>  
 Their pretty stealthes shall worke, and snares shall  
 spread

To flich away sweet snatches of delight,  
 Conceald through covert night.  
 Ye Sonnes of Venus, play your sports at will !  
 For greedy Pleasure, carelesse of your toys, <sup>365</sup>  
 Thinks more upon her Paradise of ioyes,  
 Then what ye do, albe it good or ill.  
 All night therefore attend your merry play,  
 For it will soone be day :  
 Now none doth hinder you, that say or sing ; <sup>370</sup>  
 Ne will the woods now answer, nor your echo ring.

Who is the same, which at my window peepes !  
 Or whose is that faire face that shines so bright ?  
 Is it not Cinthia, she that never sleepees,  
 But walkes about high heaven al the night ? <sup>375</sup>  
 O ! fayrest goddesse, do thou not envy  
 My Love with me to spy :  
 For thou likewise didst love, though now unthought,  
 And for a fleece of wooll, which privily  
 The Latmian Shepherd once unto thee brought, <sup>380</sup>  
 His pleasures with thee wrought.  
 Therefore to us be favorable now ;  
 And sith of womens labours thou hast charge,  
 And generation goodly dost enlarge,  
 Encline thy will t' effect our wishfull vow, <sup>385</sup>  
 And the chast womb informe with timely seed,  
 That may our comfort breed :

Till which we cease our hopefull hap to sing ;  
 Ne let the woods us answer, nor our eccho ring.

AND thou great Iuno ! which with awful might <sup>390</sup>  
 The Lawes of Wedlock still dost patronize ;  
 And the religion of the faith first plight  
 With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize ;  
 And eke for comfort often called art <sup>395</sup>  
 Of women in their smart ;  
 Eternally bind thou this lovely band,  
 And all thy blessings unto us impart.  
 And thou, glad Genius ! in whose gentle hand  
 The bridele bowre and geniall bed remaine, <sup>400</sup>  
 Without blemish or staine ;  
 And the sweet pleasures of theyr loves delight  
 With secret ayde doost succour and supply,  
 Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny ;  
 Send us the timely fruit of this same night,  
 And thou, fayre Hebe ! and thou, Hymen free ! <sup>405</sup>  
 Grant that it may so be.  
 Till which we cease your further prayse to sing ;  
 Ne any woods shall answer, nor your echo ring.

AND ye high heavens, the temple of the gods, <sup>410</sup>  
 In which a thousand torches flaming bright  
 Doe burne, that to us wretched earthly clods  
 In dreadful darknesse lend desired light ;  
 And all ye powers which in the same remaine,  
 More than we men can fayne ; <sup>415</sup>  
 Poure out your blessing on us plentifully,  
 And happy influence upon us raine,  
 That we may raise a large posterity,  
 Which from the earth which they may long possesse  
 With lasting happinesse, <sup>420</sup>  
 Up to your haughty pallasces may mount ;  
 And, for the guerdon of theyr glorious merit,  
 May heavenly tabernacles there inherit,  
 Of blessed Saints for to increase the count.  
 So let us rest, sweet Love, in hope of this,  
 And cease till then our tymely ioyes to sing : <sup>425</sup>  
 The woods no more us answer, nor our eccho ring !

*Sone ! made in lieu of many ornaments,  
 With which my Love should duly have been dect,  
 Which cutting off through hasty accidents,  
 Ye would not stay your dew time to expect, <sup>430</sup>  
 But promist both to recompens ;  
 Be unto her a goodly ornament,  
 And for short time an endlesse monument !*

## FOWRE HYMNES.

TO

THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MOST VERTUOUS LADIES, THE LADIE MARGARET,  
 COUNTESSE OF CUMBERLAND ; AND THE LADIE MARIE COUNTESSE  
 OF WARWICK.

HAVING, in the greener times of my youth, composed these former two Hymnes in the praise of love and beautie, and finding that the same too much pleased those of like age and disposition, which, being too vehemently carried with that kiud of affection, do rather sucke out poyson to their strong passion, then honey to their honest delight, I was moved, by the one of you two most excellent Ladies, to call in

the same ; but, being unable so to do, by reason that many copies thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to amend, and, by way of retraction, to reforme them, making (instead of those two Hymnes of earthly or naturall love and beautie) two others of heavenly and celestiall ; the which I doe dedicate joyntly unto you two honorable sisters, as to the most excellent and rare ornaments of all true love and beautie, both in the one and the other kind ; humbly beseeching you to vouchsafe the patronage of them, and to accept this my humble service, in lieu of the great graces and honourable favours which ye dayly shew unto me, uncl such time as I may, by better meanes, yeeld you some more notable testimonie of my thankfull mind and dutifull devotion. And even so I pray for your happinesse. Greenwich this first of September, 1596. Your Honors most bounden ever,

In all humble service,

ED. SP.

### AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE.

Love, that long since hast to thy mighty powre  
Perforce subdued my poor captivd hart,  
And, raging now therein with restlesse stowre,  
Doest tyrannize in everie weaker part,  
Faine would I seeke to ease my bitter smart  
By any service I might do to thee,  
Or ought that else might to thee pleasing bee.

And now t' assuage the force of this new flame,  
And make thee more propitious in my need,  
I meane to sing the praises of thy name,  
And thy victorious conquests to areed,  
By which thou madest many harts to bleed  
Of mighty victors, with wide wounds embrewed,  
And by thy cruell darts to thee subdued.

Onely I fear my wits enfeebled late,  
Through the sharp sorrowes which thou hast me  
bred,  
Should faint, and words should faile me to relate  
The wondrous triumphs of thy great god-hed :  
But, if thou wouldst vouchsafe to overspred  
Me with the shadow of thy gentle wing,  
I should enabled be thy actes to sing.

Come, then, O come, thou mightie God of Love !  
Out of thy silver bowres and secret blisse,  
Where thou dost sit in Venus lap above,  
Bathing thy wings in her ambrosial kisse,  
That sweeter farre than any nectar is ;  
Come softly, and my feeble breast inspire  
With gentle furie, kindled of thy fire.

And ye, sweet Muses ! which have often proved  
The piercing points of his avengefull darts ;  
And ye, fair Nymphs ! which oftentimes have loved  
The cruel worker of your kindly smarts,  
Prepare yourselves, and open wide your harts  
For to receive the triumph of your glorie,  
That made you merie oft when ye were sorrie.

And ye, faire blossoms of youths wanton breed !  
Which in the conquests of your beantie bost,  
Wherewith your lovers feeble eyes you feed,  
But sterve their harts that needeth nourture most,  
Prepare your selves to march amongst his host,  
And all the way this sacred Hymne do sing,  
Made in the honor of your soveraigne king.

GREAT GOD OF MIGHT, that reignest in the mynd  
And all the bodie to thy best doest frame,  
Victor of gods, subduer of mankynd,  
That doest the lions and fell tigers tame,  
Making their cruell rage thy scornfull game,  
And in their roring taking great delight ;  
Who can expresse the glorie of thy might ?

Or who alive can perfectly declare  
The wondrous cradle of thine infancie,  
When thy great mother Venus first thee bare,  
Begot of Plenty and of Penurie,  
Though elder then thine own nativite,  
And yet a chyld, renewing still thy yeares,  
And yet the eldest of the heavenly peares ?

For ere this worlds still moving mightie masse  
Out of great Chaos ugly prison crept,  
In which his goodly face long hidden was  
From heavens view, and in deep darknesse kept,  
Love, that had now long time securely slept  
In Venus lap, unarmed then and naked,  
Gan reare his head, by Clotho being waked :

And taking to him wings of his own heat,  
Kindled at first from heavens life-giving fyre,  
He gan to move out of his idle seat ;  
Weakly at first, but after with desyre  
Lifted aloft, he gan to mount up hyre,  
And, like fresh eagle, made his hardy flight  
Thro all that great wide wast, yet wanting light.

Yet wanting light to guide his wandring way,  
His own faire mother, for all creatures sake,  
Did lend him light from her owne goodly ray ;  
Then through the world his way he gan to take,  
The world, that was not till he did it make,  
Whose sundrie parts he from themselves did sever,  
The which before had lyen confused ever.

The earth, the ayre, the water, and the fyre,  
Then gan to rounge themselves in huge array,  
And with contrary forces to conspyre  
Each against other by all meanes they may,  
Threatning their owne confusion and decay :  
Ayre hated earth, and water hated fyre,  
Till Love relented their rebellious yre.

He then them tooke, and, tempering goodly well <sup>85</sup>  
 Their contrary dislikes with loved meanes,  
 Did place them all in order, and compell  
 To keepe themselves within their sundrie raines,  
 Together linkt with adamantin chaines ;  
 Yet so, as that in every living wight <sup>90</sup>  
 They mix themselves, and shew their kindly might.

So ever since they firmly have remained,  
 And duly well observed his behest ; [tained  
 Through which now all these things that are con-  
 Within this goodly cope, both most and least, <sup>95</sup>  
 Their being have, and daily are increast  
 Through secret sparks of his infused fyre,  
 Which in the barraine cold he doth inspyre.

Thereby they all do live, and moved are <sup>100</sup>  
 To multiply the likenesse of their kynd,  
 Whylest they seeke onely, without further care,  
 To quench the flame which they in burning fynd ;  
 But man that breathes a more immortall mynd,  
 Not for lusts sake, but for eternitie,  
 Seekes to enlarge his lasting progenie ; <sup>105</sup>

For, having yet in his deducted spright  
 Some sparks remaining of that heavenly fyre,  
 He is enlumin'd with that goodly light,  
 Unto like goodly semblant to aspyre ;  
 Therefore in choice of love he doth desyre <sup>110</sup>  
 That seemes on earth most heavenly to embrace,  
 That same is Beautie, horne of heavenly race.

For sure of all that in this mortall frame  
 Contained is, nought more divine doth seeme,  
 Or that resembleth more th' immortall flame <sup>115</sup>  
 Of heavenly light, than Beauties glorious beam.  
 What wonder then, if with such rage extreme  
 Frail men, whose eyes seeke heavenly things to see,  
 At sight thereof so much enravisht bee ?

Which well perceiving, that imperious hoy <sup>120</sup>  
 Doth therewith tip his sharp empoisoned darts,  
 Which glancing thro the eyes with countenance coy  
 Rest not till they have pierst the trembling harts,  
 And kindled flame in all their inner parts,  
 Which suckes the blood, and drinketh up the lyfe, <sup>125</sup>  
 Of careful wretches with consuming griefe.

Thenceforth they playne, and make full piteous  
 Unto the author of their balefull bane : [none  
 The daies they waste, the nights they grieve and  
 grone,  
 Their lives they loath, and heavens light disdain ;  
 No light but that, whose lampe doth yet remaine <sup>131</sup>  
 Fresh burning in the image of their eye,  
 They deigne to see, and seeing it still dye.

The whylst thou tyrant Love doest laugh and scorne  
 At their complaints, making their paine thy play, <sup>135</sup>  
 Whylest they lye languishing like thralls forlorne,  
 The whyles thou doest triumph in their decay ;  
 And otherwhyles, their dying to delay,  
 Thou doest emmarble the proud hart of her  
 Whose love before their life they doe prefer. <sup>140</sup>

Ver. 122. — with *countenance coy*] Read rather,  
 "from count'nance coy." T. WARTON.

Ver. 139. — *emmarble*] This elegant and expressive  
 verb is unnoticed by all our lexicographers. TODD.

So hast thou often done (ay me, the more !) <sup>145</sup>  
 To me thy vassall, whose yet bleeding hart  
 With thousand wounds thou mangled hast so sore,  
 That whole remains scarce any little part ;  
 Yet, to augment the anguish of my smart,  
 Thou hast enfrosen her disdainfull brest,  
 That no one drop of pitie there doth rest.

Why then do I this honor unto thee,  
 Thus to ennoble thy victorious name,  
 Sith thou doest shew no favour unto mee, <sup>160</sup>  
 Ne once move ruth in that rebellious dame,  
 Somewhat to slacke the rigour of my fame ?  
 Certes small glory doest thou winne hereby,  
 To let her live thus free, and me to dy.

But if thou be indeede, as men thee call, <sup>155</sup>  
 The worlds great parent, the most kind preserver  
 Of living wights, the soveraine lord of all,  
 How falles it then that with thy furious fervour  
 Thou doest afflict as well the not-deserver,  
 As him that doeth thy lovely heasts despize, <sup>160</sup>  
 And on thy subjects most doth tyrannize ?

Yet herein eke thy glory seemeth more,  
 By so hard handling those which best thee serve,  
 That, ere thou doest them unto grace restore,  
 Thou mayest well trie if thou wilt ever swerve, <sup>165</sup>  
 And mayest them make it better to deserve,  
 And, having got it, may it more esteeme ;  
 For things hard gotten men more dearely deeme.

So hard those heavenly beauties he enfyred  
 As things divine, least passions doe impresse, <sup>170</sup>  
 The more of stedfast mynds to be admyred,  
 The more they stayed be on stedfastnesse ;  
 But baseborne minds such lamps regard the lesse,  
 Which at first blowing take not hastie fyre ;  
 Such fancies feele no love, but loose desyre. <sup>175</sup>

For Love is lord of Truth and Loialtie,  
 Lifting himself out of the lowly dust  
 On golden plumes up to the purest skie,  
 Above the reach of loathly sinfull lust,  
 Whose base affect through cowardly distrust <sup>180</sup>  
 Of his weake wings dare not to heaven fly,  
 But like a moldwarpe in the earth doth ly.

His dunghill thoughts, which do themselves enure  
 To dirtie drosse, no higher dare aspyre,  
 Ne can his feeble earthly eyes endure <sup>185</sup>  
 The flaming light of that celestial fyre  
 Which kindleth love in generous desyre,  
 And makes him mount above the native might  
 Of heavie earth, up to the heavens hight.

Such is the powre of that sweet passion,  
 That it all sordid basenesse doth expell,  
 And the refyned mynd doth newly fashion  
 Unto a fairer forme, which now doth dwell  
 In his high thought, that that it selfe excell,  
 Which he beholding still with constant sight, <sup>195</sup>  
 Admires the mirrour of so heavenly light.

Ver. 169. — enfyred] *Kindled, set on fire.* JOHNSON.  
 Ver. 180. *Whose base affect*] That is, whose wretched  
 imitation or imitator. The use of the substantive *affect*, in  
 this sense, is not noticed by our lexicographers. TODD.

Whose image printing in his deepest wit,  
He thereon feeds his hungrie fantasy,  
Still full, yet never satisfyde with it ;  
Like Tantale, that in store doth starved ly, 200  
So doth he pine in most safetie ;  
For nought may quench his infinite desyre,  
Once kindled through that first conceived fyre.

Thereon his mynd affixed wholly is,  
Ne thinks on ought but how it to attaine ; 205  
His care, his ioy, his hope, is all on this,  
That seemes in it all blisses to containe,  
In sight whereof all other blisse secmes vaine :  
Thrice happie Man ! might he the same possesse,  
He faines himselfe, and doth his fortune blesse. 210

And though he do not win his wish to end,  
Yet thus farre happie he himselfe doth weene,  
That heavens such happie grace did to him lend,  
As thing on earth so heavenly to have seene  
His hartis enshrined saint, his heavens queene, 215  
Fairer then fairest, in his fayning eye,  
Whose sole aspect he counts felicitye.

Then forth he casts in his quiet thought,  
What he may do, her favour to obtaine ; 219  
What brave exploit, what perill hardly wrought,  
What puissant conquest, what adventurous paine,  
May please her best, and grace unto him gaine ;  
He dreads no danger, nor misfortune feares,  
His faith, his fortune, in his breast he heares.

Thou art his god, thou art his mightie guyde, 225  
Thou, being blind, leist him not see his feares,  
But carriest him to that which he had eyde,  
Through seas, through flames, through thousand  
swords and speares ;  
Ne ought so strong that may his force withstand,  
With which thou armet his resistlesse hand. 230

Witnesse Leander in the Euxine waves,  
And stout Æneas in the Troiane fyre,  
Achilles preassing through the Phrygian glaives,  
And Orpheus, daring to provoke the yre  
Of damned fiends, to get his love retyre ; 235  
For both through heaven and hell thou makest way,  
To win them worship which to thee obey.

And if by all these perils, and these paynes,  
He may but purchase lyking in her eye,  
What heavens of ioy then to himselfe he faynes !  
Eftsoones he wypes quite out of memory 241  
Whatever ill before he did aby :  
Had it bene death, yet would he die againe,  
To live thus happie as her grace to gaine.

Yet, when he hath found favour to his will,  
He nathemore can so contented rest,  
But forceth further on, and striveth still  
T' approach more neare, till in her inmost brest  
He may embosmd bee and loved best ; 250  
And yet not best, but to be lov'd alone ;  
For love cannot endure a paragone.

Ver. 233. — glaives,] Swords. Todd.

The fear whereof, O how doth it torment  
His troubled mynd with more then hellish paine !  
And to his fayning fansie represent  
Sights never seene, and thousand shadowes vaine, 255  
To breake his sleepe, and waste his ydle braine :  
Thou that hast never lov'd canst not beleeve  
Least part of th' evils which poore lovers greeve.

The gnawing envie, the hart-fretting feare,  
The vaine surmizes, the distrustfull showes, 260  
The false reports that flying tales doe beare,  
The doubts, the daungers, the delays, the woes,  
The fayned friends, the unassured foes,  
With thousands more then any tongue can tell,  
Doe make a lovers life a wretches hell. 265

Yet is there one more cursed then they all,  
That cancker-worme, that monster, Gelosie,  
Which eats the heart and feedes upon the gall,  
Turning all Loves delight to miserie,  
Through feare of losing his felicitye. 270  
Ah, Gods ! that ever ye that monster placed  
In gentle Love, that all his ioyes defaced !

By these, O Love ! thou doest thy entrance make  
Unto thy heaven, and doest the more endeere  
Thy pleasures unto those which them partake, 275  
As after stormes, when clouds begin to cleare,  
The sunne more bright and glorious doth appeare ;  
So thou thy folke, through paines of Purgatorie,  
Dost beare unto thy blisse, and heavens glorie.

There thou them placest in a paradize 280  
Of all delight and ioyous happy rest,  
Where they doe feede on nectar heavenly-wize,  
With Hercules and Hebe, and the rest  
Of Venus dearlings, through her bountie blest ;  
And lie like gods in yvory beds arayd,  
With rose and lillies over them displayd. 285

There with thy daughter Pleasure they doe play  
Their hurtlesse sports, without rebuke or blame,  
And in her snowy bosome boldly lay  
Their quiet heads, devoyd of guilty shame, 290  
After full ioyance of their gentle game ; [queene,  
Then her they crowne their goddesses and their  
And decke with floures thy altars well besene.

Ay me ! deare Lord ! that ever I might hope,  
For all the paines and woes that I endure, 295  
To come at length unto the wished scope  
Of my desire, or might myselfe assure  
That happie port for ever to recure !  
Then would I thinke these paines no paines at all,  
And all my woes to be but penance small. 300

Then would I sing of thine immortal praise  
And heavenly Hymne, such as the angels sing,  
And thy triumphant name then would I raise  
Bove all the gods, thee only honoring ; 305  
My guide, my god, my victor, and my king :  
Till then, drad Lord ! vouchsafe to take of me  
This simple song, thus fram'd in praise of thee.

## AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE.

AN ! whither, Love ! wilt thou now carry mee ?  
 What wantlesse fury dost thou now inspire  
 Into my feeble breast, too full of thee ?  
 Whylest seeking to aslake thy raging fyre,  
 Thou in me kindest much more great desyre, 5  
 And up aloft above my strength doth rayse  
 The wondrous matter of my fire to praise.

That as I earst, in praise of thine owne name,  
 So now in honour of thy mother deare,  
 An honourable Hymne I eke should frame, 10  
 And, with the brightnesse of her beautie cleare,  
 The ravisht hearts of gazefull men might reare  
 To admiration of that heavenly light, [might.  
 From whence proceeds such soule-enchanting

Therto do thou, great Goddesses ! Queene of Beauty,  
 Mother of Love, and of all worlds delight, 16  
 Without whose soverayne grace and kindly dewy  
 Nothing on earth seems fayre to fleshly sight,  
 Doe thou vouchsafe with thy love-kindling light  
 T<sup>o</sup> illuminate my dim and dulled eyne, 20  
 And beautifie this sacred Hymne of thine :

That both to thee, to whom I meane it most,  
 And eke to her, whose faire immortal beame  
 Hath darted fyre into my feeble ghost,  
 That now it wasted is with woes extreame, 25  
 It may so please, that she at length will streame  
 Some dew of grace into my withered hart,  
 After long sorrow and consuming smart.

WHAT TIME THIS WORLDS GREAT WORKMAISTER  
 did cast

To make all things such as we now behold,  
 It seems that he before his eyes had plast  
 A goodly paterne, to whose perfect mould  
 He fashiond them as comely as he could,  
 That now so faire and seemely they appeare, 35  
 As nought may be amended any where.

That wondrous paterne, wheresoere it bee,  
 Whether in earth layd up in secret store,  
 Or else in heaven, that no man may it see  
 With sinfull eyes, for feare it to defiore,  
 Is perfect Beautie, which all men adore ; 40  
 Whose face and feature doth so much excell  
 All mortal sence, that none the same may tell.

Thereof as every earthly thing partakes  
 Or more or lesse, by influence divine,  
 So it more faire accordingly it makes, 45  
 And the grosse matter of this earthly myne  
 Which closeth it thereafter doth refyne,  
 Doing away the drosse which dims the light  
 Of that faire beame which therein is empight,

For, through infusion of celestial powre, 50  
 The duller earth it quickneth with delight,

And life-full spirits privily doth powre  
 Through all the parts, that to the looker's sight  
 They seeme to please ; that is thy soveraine might,  
 O Cyprian queene ! which flowing from the beame 55  
 Of thy bright starre, thou into them doest streame.

That is the thing which giveth pleasant grace  
 To all things faire, that kindleth lively fyre,  
 Light of thy lampe ; which, shyning in the face,  
 Thence to the soule darts amorous desyre, 60  
 And robs the harts of those which it admyre ;  
 Therewith thou pointest thy sons poysned arrow,  
 That wounds the life, and wastes the inmost marrow.

How vainely then do ydle wits invent,  
 That Beautie is nought else but mixture made 65  
 Of colours faire, and goodly temprament  
 Of pure complexions, that shall quickly fade  
 And passe away, like to a sommers shade ;  
 Or that it is but comely composition  
 Of parts well measurd, with meet disposition ! 70

Hath white and red in it such wondrous powre,  
 That it can pierce through th' eyes unto the hart,  
 And therein stirre such rage and restlesse stowre,  
 As nought but death can stint his dolours smart ?  
 Or can proportion of the outward part 75  
 Move such affection in the inward mynd,  
 That it can rob both sense, and reason blynd ?

Why doe not then the blossomes of the field,  
 Which are arayd with much more orient hew,  
 And to the sense most daintie odours yield, 80  
 Worke like impression in the lookers vew ?  
 Or why doe not faire pictures like powre shew,  
 In which oft-times we Nature see of Art  
 Exceld, in perfect limming every part ?

But ah ! beleve me there is more then so, 85  
 That workes such wonders in the minds of men ;  
 I, that have often prov'd, too well it know,  
 And who so list the like assayes to ken,  
 Shall find by trial, and confesse it then,  
 That Beautie is not, as fond men misdeeme, 90  
 An outward shew of things that onely seeme.

For that same goodly hew of white and red,  
 With which the cheekes are sprinkled, shall decay,  
 And those sweete rosy leaves, so fairly spread  
 Upon the lips, shall fade and fall away 95  
 To that they were, even to corrupted clay :  
 That golden wyre, those sparckling stars so bright,  
 Shall turne to dust, and lose their goodly light.

But that faire lampe, from whose celestial ray  
 That light proceedes, which kindleth lovers fire, 100  
 Shall never be extinguisht nor decay ;  
 But, when the vitall spirits doe expyre,  
 Unto her native planet shall retyre ;  
 For it is heavenly borne and cannot die,  
 Being a parcell of the purest skie. 105

Ver. 26. — streame] Send forth, as in ver. 56.  
 "Thou into them dost streame." TODD.

For when the soule, the which derived was,  
At first, out of that great immortall Spright,  
By whom all live to love, whilome did pas  
Down from the top of purest heavens hight  
To be embodied here, it then tooke light 110  
And lively spirits from that fayrest starre  
Which lights the world forth from his fire carre.

Which powre retayning still or more or lesse,  
When she in fleshly seede is eft enrac'd,  
Through every part she doth the same impresse,  
According as the heavens have her graced, 116  
And frames her house, in which she will be placed,  
Fit for her selfe, adorning it with spoyle  
Of th' heavenly riches which she robd erewhyle.

Thereof it comes that these faire soules, which  
have 120  
The most resemblance of that heavenly light,  
Frame to themselves most beautifull and brave  
Their fleshly bowre, most fit for their delight,  
And the grosse matter by a soveraine might  
Temper so trim, that it may well be seene 125  
A pallace fit for such a virgin queene.

So every spirit, as it is most pure,  
And hath in it the more of heavenly light,  
So it the fairer bodie doth procure  
To habit in, and it more fairely dight 130  
With chearfull grace and amiable sight ;  
For of the soule the bodie forme doth take ;  
For soule is forme, and doth the bodie make.

Therefore where-ever that thou doest behold  
A comely corpse, with beautie faire endowed, 135  
Know this for certaine, that the same doth hold  
A beauteous soule, with fair conditions thewed,  
Fit to receive the seede of vertue strewed ;  
For all that faire is, is by nature good ;  
That is a sign to know the gentle blood. 140

Yet oft it falles that many a gentle mynd  
Dwels in deformed tabernacle drownd,  
Either by chance, against the course of kynd,  
Or through unaptnesse in the substance fownd,  
Which it assumed of some stubborne grownd, 145  
That will not yield unto her formes direction,  
But is perform'd with some foule imperfection.

And oft it falles, (ay me, the more to rew!)  
That goodly Beautie, albe heavenly borne,  
Is foule abusd, and that celestial hew, 150  
Which doth the world with her delight adorne,  
Made but the bait of sinne, and sinners scorne,  
Whilset every one doth seeke and sew to have it,  
But every one doth seeke but to deprave it.

Yet nathemore is that faire Beauties blame, 155  
But theirs that do abuse it unto ill:  
Nothing so good, but that through guilty shame  
May be corrupt, and wrested unto will :  
Nathelless the soule is faire and beauteous still,  
However fleshes fault it filthy make ; 160  
For things immortall no corruption take.

But ye, faire Dames! the worlds deare ornaments,  
And lively images of heavens light,

Let not your beames with such disparagements  
Be dimd, and your bright glorie darkned quight ;  
But, mindfull still of your first countries sight, 165  
Doe still preserve your first informed grace,  
Whose shadow yet shynes in your beauteous face

Loath that foule blot, that hellish fierbrand,  
Disloiall lust, fair Beauties foulest blame, 170  
That base affection, which your eares would bland  
Commend to you by Loves abused name,  
But is indeede the bondslave of Defame ;  
Which will the garland of your glorie marre,  
And quench the light of your brightshyning starre.

But gentle Love, that loiall is and trew, 175  
Will more illumine your resplendent ray,  
And add more brightness to your goodly hew,  
From light of his pure fire ; which, by like way  
Kindled of yours, your likeness doth display ; 180  
Like as two mirrours, by opposd reflection,  
Doe both expresse the faces first impression.

Therefore, to make your beautie more appeare,  
It you behoves to love, and forth to lay  
That heavenly riches which in you ye beare, 185  
That men the more admyre their fountaine may ;  
For else what booteth that celestial ray,  
If it in darknesse be enshrined ever,  
That it of loving eyes be vewed never ?

But, in your choice of loves, this well advize, 190  
That likest to your selves ye them select,  
The which your forms first sourse may sympathize,  
And with like beauties parts be inly dect ;  
For if you loosely love without respect,  
It is not love, but a discordant warre, 195  
Whose unlike parts amongst themselves do iarre.

For love is a celestiall harmonie  
Of likely harts composd of starres concent,  
Which ioyn together in sweete sympathie, 200  
To work each others ioy and true content,  
Which they have harbourd since their first descent  
Out of their heavenly bowres, where they did see  
And know ech other here belov'd to bee.

Then wrong it were that any other twaine  
Should in Loves gentle hand combynd bee 205  
But those whom Heaven did at first ordaine,  
And made out of one mould the more t' agree ;  
For all, that like the beautie which they see,  
Straight do not love ; for Love is not so light  
As streight to burne at first beholders sight. 210

But they, which love indeede, looke otherwise,  
With pure regard and spotlesse true intent,  
Drawing out of the obiect of their eyes  
A more refyned form, which they present  
Unto their mind, voide of all blemishment ; 215  
Which it reducing to her first perfection,  
Beholdeth free from fleshes frayle infection.

And then conforming it unto the light,  
Which in it selfe it hath remaining still,  
Of that first sunne, yet sparckling in his sight, 220  
Thereof he fashions in his higher skill  
An heavenly beautie to his fancies will ;  
And, it embracing in his mind entyre,  
The mirrour of his owne thought doth admyre.



Which seeing now so inly faire to be, 225  
 As outward it appeareth to the eye,  
 And with his spirits proportion to agree,  
 He thereon fixeth all his fantasie,  
 And fully setteth his felicitie ;  
 Counting it fairer then it is indeede, 230  
 And yet indeede her fairness doth exceede.

For lovers eyes more sharply sighted bee  
 Then other mens, and in deare loves delight  
 See more then any other eyes can see,  
 Through mutuall receipt of beamés bright, 235  
 Which carrie privie message to the spright,  
 And to their eyes that inmost faire display,  
 As plaine as light discovers dawning day.

Therein they see, through amorous eye-glaunces,  
 Armies of Loves still flying too and fro, 240  
 Which dart at them their litle ferie launces ;  
 Whom having wounded, back againe they go,  
 Carrying compassion to their lovely foe ;  
 Who, seeing her faire eyes so sharp effect,  
 Cures all their sorrowes with one sweete aspect. 245

In which how many wonders doe they reede  
 To their conceipt, that others never see !  
 Now of her smiles, with which their soules they feede,  
 Like gods with nectar in their bankets free ;  
 Now of her looks, which like to cordials bee ; 250  
 But when her words embassade forth she sends,  
 Lord, how sweete musicke that unto them lends !

Sometimes upon her forehead they behold  
 A thousand graces masking in delight ;  
 Sometimes within her eye-lids they unfold 255  
 Ten thousand sweet belgards, which to their sight

Doe seeme like twinkling starres in frostie night ;  
 But on her lips, like rosy buds in May,  
 So many millions of chaste Pleasures play.

All those, O Cytherea ! and thousands more 260  
 Thy handmaidens be, which do on thee attend,  
 To decke thy beautie with their dainties store,  
 That may it more to mortall eyes commend,  
 And make it more admird of foe and friend ;  
 That in mens harts thou mayst thy throne enstall, 265  
 And spred thy lovely kingdome over all.

Then Iö, tryumph ! O great Beauties Queene,  
 Advance the banner of thy conquest hie,  
 That all this world, the which thy vassells beene,  
 May draw to thee, and with dew fealtie 270  
 Adore the powre of thy great majestie,  
 Singing this Hymne in honour of thy name,  
 Compyl'd by me, which thy poor liegeman an !

In lieu whereof graunt, O great Sovereaine !  
 That she, whose conquering beauty doth captive 275  
 My trembling hart in her eternall chaine,  
 One drop of grace at length will to me give,  
 That I her bounden thrall by her may live,  
 And this same life, which first fro me she reaved,  
 May owe to her, of whom I it received. 280

And you faire Venus dearing, my dear Dread !  
 Fresh flowre of grace, great goddesse of my life,  
 When your faire eyes these fearfull lines shall read,  
 Deigne to let fall one drop of dew reliefe,  
 That may recure my harts long pynning grieve, 285  
 And shew what wondrous powre your beauty hath,  
 That can restore a damned wight from death.

## AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

Love, lift me up upon thy golden wings  
 From this base world unto thy heavens hight,  
 Where I may see those admirable things  
 Which there thou workest by thy sovaine might,  
 Farre above feeble reach of earthly sight, 5  
 That I thereof an heavenly Hymne may sing  
 Unto the God of Love, high heavens King.

Many lewd layes (ah ! woe is me the more !)  
 In praise of that mad fit which fooles call Love,  
 I have in th' heat of youth made heretofore, 10  
 That in light wits did loose affection move ;  
 But all those follies now I do reprove,  
 And turned have the tenor of my string,  
 The heavenly prayses of true Love to sing.

And ye that wont with greedy vaine desire 15  
 To reade my fault, and, wondring at my flame,  
 To warme your selves at my wide sparkling fire,  
 Sith now that heat is quenched, quench my blame,  
 And in her ashes shrowd my dying shame ;  
 For who my passed follies now pursewes, 20  
 Begins his owne, and my old fault renews.

Ver. 231. ——— *embassade*] As ambassadors. Fr. *embassade*. TODD.

Ver. 13. ——— *turned*] It would be more agreeable to the context to read *tuned*. TODD.

BEFORE THIS WORLDS GREAT FRAME, in which all things  
 Are now containd, found any being-place,  
 Ere fitting Time could wag his eyas wings  
 About that mightie bound which doth embrace 25  
 The rolling spheres, and parts their houres by space,  
 That High Eternall Powre, which now doth move  
 In all these things, mov'd in it selfe by love.

It lov'd it selfe, because it selfe was faire ;  
 (For fair is lov'd ;) and of it self begot 30  
 Like to it selfe his eldest Sonne and Heire,  
 Eternall, pure, and voide of sinfull blot,  
 The firstling of His ioy, in whom no iot  
 Of loves dislike or pride was to be found,  
 Whom He therefore with equal honour crownd. 35

With Him he raignd, before all time prescribed,  
 In endesse glorie and immortal might,  
 Together with that Third from them derived,  
 Most wise, most holy, most almightie Spright !  
 Whose kingdomes throne no thoughts of earthly 40  
 wight  
 Can comprehend, much lesse my trembling verse  
 With equal words can hope it to reherse.

Ver. 24. ——— *eyas*] *Unfledged*. TODD

Yet, O most blessed Spirit ! pure lampe of light,  
 Eternal spring of grace and wisdom trew,  
 Vouchsafe to shed into my barren spright  
 Some little drop of thy celestial dew,  
 That may my rymes with sweet infuse embrew,  
 And give me words equall unto my thought,  
 To tell the marveiles by thy mercie wrought.

Yet being pregnant still with powrefull grace,  
 And full of fruitfull Love, that loves to get  
 Things like himselfe, and to enlarge his race,  
 His second brood, though not of powre so great,  
 Yet full of beautie, next He did beget,  
 And infinite increase of angels bright,  
 All glistring glorions in their Makers light.

To them the heavens illimitable hight  
 (Not this round heaven, which we from hence behold,  
 Adorn'd with thousand lamps of burning light,  
 And with ten thousand gemmes of shyning gold,)<sup>60</sup>  
 He gave as their inheritance to hold,  
 That they might serve Him in eternal blis,  
 And be partakers of those ioyes of His.

There they in their trinal triplicities  
 About Him wait, and on His will depend,  
 Either with nimble wings to cut the skies,  
 When He them on His messages doth send,  
 Or on His owne dread presence to attend,  
 Where they behold the glorie of His light,  
 And caroll hymnes of love both day and night.

Both day, and night, is unto them all one ;  
 For He His beames doth unto them extend,  
 That darknesse there appeareth never none ;  
 Ne hath their day, ne hath their blisse, an end,  
 But there their termelesse time in pleasure spend ;  
 Ne ever should their happinesse decay,  
 Had not they dar'd their Lord to disobay.

But pride, impatient of long resting peace,  
 Did puffe them up with greedy bold ambition,  
 That they gan cast their state how to increase  
 Above the fortune of their first condition,  
 And sit in Gods own seat without commission :  
 The brightest angel, even the child of Light,  
 Drew millions more against their God to fight.

Th' Almighty, seeing their so bold assay,  
 Kindled the flame of His consuming yre.  
 And with His onely breath them blew away  
 From heavens hight, to which they did aspyre,  
 To deepest hell, and lake of damned fyre,  
 Where they in darknesse and dread horror dwell,<sup>90</sup>  
 Hating the happie light from which they fell.

So that next off-spring of the Makers love,  
 Next to Himselfe in glorious degree,  
 Degendering to hate, fell from above  
 Through pride ; (for pride and love may ill agree) <sup>95</sup>  
 And now of sinne to all ensamble bee :  
 How then can sinfull flesh it selfe assure,  
 Sith purest angels fell to be impure ?

But that Eternal Fount of love and grace,  
 Still flowing forth His goodnesse unto all,

Now seeing left a waste and emptie place  
 In His wyde pallace, through those angels fall,  
 Cast to supply the same, and to enstall  
 A new unknowen colony therein, [begin. <sup>105</sup>  
 Whose root from earths base groundworke should

Therefore of clay, base, vile, and next to nought,  
 Yet form'd by wondrous skill, and by His might,  
 According to an heavenly patterne wrought,  
 Which he had fashiond in his wise foresight,  
 He man did make, and breathd a living spright <sup>110</sup>  
 Into his face, most beautifull and fayre,  
 Endewd with wisdomes riches, heavenly, rare.

Such He him made, that he resemble might  
 Himselfe, as mortal thing immortal could ;  
 Him to be lord of every living wight <sup>115</sup>  
 He made by love out of his owne like mould,  
 In whom he might his mightie selfe-behold ;  
 For Love doth love the thing belov'd to see,  
 That like it selfe in lovely shape may bee.

But man, forgetfull of his Makers grace <sup>120</sup>  
 No lesse than angels, whom he did enswell,  
 Fell from the hope of promist heavenly place,  
 Into the mouth of Death, to sinners dew,  
 And all his off-spring into thraldome threw,  
 Where they for ever should in bonds remaine <sup>125</sup>  
 Of never-dead yet ever-dying paine.

Till that great Lord of Love, which him at first  
 Made of meere love, and after liked well,  
 Seeing him lie like creature long accurst <sup>130</sup>  
 In that deep horor of despeyred hell,  
 Him, wretch, in doole would let no lenger dwell,  
 But cast out of that bondage to redeeme,  
 And pay the price, all were his debt extreme.

Out of the bosome of eternal blisse,  
 In which He reigned with His glorions Syre, <sup>135</sup>  
 He downe descended, like a most demisse  
 And abiect thrall, in fleshes fraile attyre,  
 That He for him might pay sinnes deadly hyre,  
 And him restore unto that happie state <sup>140</sup>  
 In which he stood before his haplesse fate.

In flesh at first the guilt committed was,  
 Therefore in flesh it must be satisfide ;  
 Nor spirit, nor angel, though they man surpas,  
 Could make amends to God for mans misgyde, <sup>145</sup>  
 But onely man himselfe, who selfe did slyde :  
 So, taking flesh of sacred virgins wombe,  
 For mans deare sake He did a man become.

And that most blessed bodie, which was borne  
 Without all blemish or reprochfull blame, <sup>150</sup>  
 He freely gave to be both rent and torne  
 Of cruell hands, who with despightfull shame  
 Revyling Him, that them most vile became,  
 At length Him nayled on a gallow-tree,  
 And slew the Iust by most uniuert decree.

O huge and most unspeakeable impression <sup>155</sup>  
 Of Loves deep wound, that pierst the piteous hart  
 Of that deare Lord with so entyre affection,  
 And, sharply launcing every inner part,  
 Dolours of death into His soule did dart,

Ver. 47. — [infuse] *Infusion*. TODD.

Ver. 75. — [termelesse] *Unlimited*. TODD.

Ver. 94. — [Degendering] *Degenerating*. TODD

Ver. 136. — [demisse] *Humble*. Lat. *demissus*. TODD.

Doing him die that never it deserved, 160  
To free His foes, that from His heast had swerved !

What hart can feel least touch of so sore launch,  
Or thought can think the depth of so deare wound ?  
Whose bleeding sourse their streames yet never  
staunch,

But stil do flow, and freshly still redownd, 165  
To heale the sores of sinful soules unsound,  
And cense the guilt of that infected cryme  
Which was enrooted in all fleshy slyme.

O blessed Well of Love ! O Floure of Grace !  
O glorious Morning-Starre ! O Lampe of Light ! 170  
Most lively image of thy Fathers face,  
Eternal King of Glorie, Lord of Might,  
Meeke Lambe of God, before all worlds behight,  
How can we Thee requite for all this good ?  
Or what can prize that Thy most precious blood ?

Yet nought Thou ask'st in lieu of all this love, 175  
But love of us, for guerdon of thy paine :  
Ay me ! what can us lesse than that behove ?  
Had He required life for us againe,  
Had it benee wrong to ask His owne with gaine ?  
He gave us life, He it restored lost ; 181  
Then life were least, that us so little cost.

But He our life hath left unto us free,  
Free that was thrall, and blessed that was band ; 185  
Ne ought demands but that we loving bee,  
As He Himselfe hath lov'd us afore-hand,  
And bound therto with an eternal band,  
Him first to love that was so dearely hought,  
And next our hretiren, to his image wrought.

Him first to love great right and reason is, 190  
Who first to us our life and being gave,  
And after, when we fared had amisse,  
Us wretches from the second death did save ;  
And last, the food of life, which now we have,  
Even He Himselfe, in his dear sacrament, 195  
To feede our hungry soules, unto us lent.

Then next, to love our brethren, that were made  
Of that selfe mould, and that self Maker's hand,  
That we, and to the same againe shall fade,  
Where they shall have like heritage of land, 200  
However here on higher steps we stand,  
Which also were with selfe-same price redeemed  
That we, however of us light esteemed.

And were they not, yet since that loving Lord  
Commanded us to love them for His sake, 205  
Even for His sake, and for His sacred word,  
Which in His last bequest He to us spake,  
We should them love, and with their needs partake ;  
Knowing that, whatsoere to them we give,  
We give to Him by whom we all doe live. 210

Such mercy He by His most holy reede  
Unto us taught, and to approve it trew,  
Ensampled it by His most righteous deede,  
Shewing us mercie (miserable crew !)  
That we the like should to the wretches shew, 215  
And love our brethren ; thereby to approve  
How much, Himselfe that loved us, we love.

Then rouze thy selfe, O Earth ! out of thy soyle,  
In which thou wallowest like to filthy swyne,  
And doest thy mynd in durty pleasures moyle ; 220  
Unmindfull of that dearest Lord of thyne ;  
Lift up to Him thy heavie clouded eyne,  
That thou this soveraine bountie mayst behold,  
And read, through love, His mercies manifold.

Beginne from first, where He encradled was 225  
In simple cratch, wrapt in a wad of lay,  
Betweene the toylfull ox and humble asse,  
And in what rags, and in now base aray,  
The glory of our heavenly riches lay,  
When Him the silly shepheards came to see, 230  
Whom greatest princes sought on lowest knee.

From thence reade on the storie of His life,  
His humble carriage, His unfaulty wayes,  
His cancred foes, His fights, His toyle, His strife,  
His paines, His povertie, His sharpe assayes, 235  
Through which He past His miserable dayes,  
Offending none, and doing good to all,  
Yet being malist both by great and small.

And look at last, how of most wretched wights  
He taken was, betrayd, and false accused, 240  
How with most scornfull taunts, and fell despights  
He was revyld, disgrast, and foule abused ;  
How scourgd, how crownd, how buffeted, how  
And, lastly, how twixt robbers crucifyde, [brused ;  
With bitter wounds through hands, through feet,  
and syde ! 245

Then let thy flinty hart, that feeles no paine,  
Empierced be with pittifull remorse,  
And let thy bowels bleede in every vaine,  
At sight of His most sacred heavenly corse,  
So torne and mangled with malicious forse ; 250  
And let thy soule, whose sins His sorrows wrought,  
Melt into teares, and grone in grieved thought.

With sence whereof, whilest so thy softened spirit  
Is inly toucht, and humbled with meeke zeale  
Through meditation of His endless merit, 255  
Lift up thy mind to th' Author of thy weale,  
And to His soveraine mercie doe appeale ;  
Learne Him to love that loved thee so deare,  
And in thy brest His blessed image beare.

With all thy hart, with all thy soule and mind, 260  
Thou must Him love, and His beheasts embrace ;  
All other loves, with which the world doth blind  
Weake fancies, and stirre up affections base,  
Thou must renounce and utterly displace,  
And give thy selfe unto Him full and free, 265  
That full and freely gave Himselfe to thee.

Then shalt thou feele thy spirit so possesst,  
And ravisht with devouring great desire  
Of His dear selfe, that shall thy feeble brest  
Inflame with love, and set thee all on fire 270  
With burning zeale, through every part entire,  
That in no earthly thing thou shalt delight,  
But in His sweet and amiable sight.

Ver. 220. — moyle ;] *Defle.* TODD.

Ver. 226. — *cratch* ;] See Cotgrave in V. " *Creiche*,  
a CRATCH, racke, ox-stall, or crib, &c." TODD.

Ver. 238. — malist] *Regarded with ill will.* TODD.

Ver. 184. — band ;] *Cursed.* TODD.

Ver. 211. — reede ;] *Precept or advice.* TODD.

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee dye,  
 And all earthes glorie, on which men do gaze, 275  
 Seeme durt and drosse in thy pure-sighted eye,  
 Compar'd to that celestiall beauties blaze,  
 Whose glorious beames all fleshly sense doth daze  
 With admiration of their passing light,  
 Blinding the eyes, and luming the spright. 280

Then shall thy ravisht soul inspired bee  
 With heavenly thoughts, farre above humane skil,  
 And thy bright radiant eyes shall plainly see  
 Th' idec of His pure glorie present still  
 Before thy face, that all thy spirits shall fill 285  
 With sweete enragement of celestiall love,  
 Kindled through sight of those faire things above.

## AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE.

RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht thought,  
 Through contemplation of those goodly sights,  
 And glorious images in heaven wrought,  
 Whose wondrous beauty, breathing sweet delights,  
 Do kindle love in high conceived sprights ; 5  
 I faine to tell the things that I behold,  
 But feele my wits to faile, and tongue to fold.

Vouchsafe then, O Thou most Almighty Spright !  
 From whom all guifts of wit and knowledge flow, 10  
 To shed into my breast some sparkling light  
 Of Thine eternall truth, that I may show  
 Some little beames to mortall eyes below  
 Of that immortal Beautie, there with Thee,  
 Which in my weake distraughted mynd I see ;

That with the glorie of so goodly sight 15  
 The hearts of men, which fondly here admyre  
 Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine delight,  
 Transported with celestiall desyre  
 Of those faire formes, may lift themselves up hyer,  
 And learne to love, with zealous humble dewy, 20  
 Th' Eternall Fountaine of that heavenly Beauty.

Beginning then below, with th' easie vew  
 Of this base world, subject to fleshly eye,  
 From thence to mount aloft, by order dew,  
 To contemplation of th' immortal sky ; 25  
 Of the soare falcon so I learne to flye,  
 That flags a while her fluttering wings beneath,  
 Till she her selfe for stronger flight can breath.

Then looke, who list thy gazefull eyes to feed  
 With sight of that is faire, looke on the frame 30  
 Of this wyde universe, and therein reed  
 The endless kinds of creatures which by name  
 Thou canst not count, much less their natures aime ;  
 All which are made with wondrous wise respect,  
 And all with admirable beautie deckt. 35

First, th' Earth, on adamantine pillers founded  
 Amid the Sea, engirt with brasen bands ;  
 Then th' Aire still fitting, but yet firmly bounded  
 On everie side, with pyles of flaming brands,  
 Never consum'd, nor quencht with mortall hands ;  
 And, last, that mightie shining cristall wall, 41  
 Wherewith he bath encompassed this all.

By view whereof it plainly may appeare,  
 That still as every thing doth upward tend,  
 And further is from earth, so still more cleare 45

And faire it growes, till to his perfect end  
 Of purest Beautie it at last ascend ;  
 Ayre more then water, fire much more then ayre,  
 And heaven then fire, appears more pure and  
 fayre.

Looke thou no further, but affixe thine eye 50  
 On that bright shynie round still moving masse,  
 The house of Blessed God, which men call Skye,  
 Allsowd with glistring stars more thicke then grasse,  
 Whereof each other doth in brightness passe,  
 But those two most, which, ruling night and day, 55  
 As king and queene, the heavens empire sway ;

And tell me then, what hast thou ever seene  
 That to their beautie may compared bee,  
 Or can the sight that is most sharpe and keene 60  
 Endure their captains flaming head to see ?  
 How much lesse those, much higher in degree,  
 And so much fairer, and much more then these,  
 As these are fairer then the land and seas ?

For farre above these heavens, which here we see, 65  
 Be others farre exceeding these in light,  
 Not bounded, not corrupt, as these same bee,  
 But infinite in largenesse and in height,  
 Unmoving, uncorrupt, and spotlesse bright,  
 That need no sunne t' illuminate their spheres,  
 But their owne native light farre passing theirs. 70

And as these heavens still by degrees arize,  
 Until they come to their first Movers bound,  
 That in his mightie compasse doth comprize,  
 And carrie all the rest with him around ; 75  
 So those likewise doe by degrees redound,  
 And rise more faire, till they at last arive,  
 To the most faire, whereto they all do strive.

Faire is the heaven where happy soules have place,  
 In full enjoyment of felicitie,  
 Whence they doe still behold the glorious face 80  
 Of the Divine Eternall Maestie ;  
 More faire is that, where those Ideas on hie  
 Enranged be, which Plato so admyred,  
 And pure Intelligences from God inspyred.

Yet fairer is that heaven, in which do raine 85  
 The soveraigne Powres and mightie Potentates,  
 Which in their high protections doe containe  
 All mortall princes and imperiall states ;  
 And fayrer yet, whereas the royall Seates  
 And heavenly Dominations are set, 90  
 From whom all earthly governance is fet.

Yet farre more faire be those bright Cherubins,  
Which all with golden wings are overdrift,  
And those eternall burning Seraphins,  
Which from their faces dart out fierie light ; 95  
Yet fairer then they both, and much more bright,  
Be th' Angels and Archangels, which attend  
On Gods owne person, without rest or end.

These thus in faire each other farre excelling,  
As to the Highest they approach more near, 100  
Yet is that Highest farre beyond all telling,  
Fairer then all the rest which there appeare,  
Though all their beauties ioyn'd together were ;  
How then can mortall tongue hope to expresse  
The image of such endlesse perfectnesse ! 105

Dease then, my tongue ! and lend unto my mynd  
Leave to bethinke how great that Beautie is,  
Whose utmost parts so beautifull I fynd ;  
How much more those essentiall parts of His,  
His truth, His love, His wisedome, and His blis, 110  
His grace, His doome, His mercy, and His might,  
By which He lends us of Himselfe a sight !

Those unto all He daily doth display,  
And shew himselfe in th' image of His grace,  
As in a looking-glasse, through which He may 115  
Be scene of all His creatures vile and base,  
That are unable else to see His face,  
His glorious face ! which glistereth else so bright,  
That th' angels selves can not endure His sight. 119

But we, fraile wights ! whose sight cannot sustaine  
The suns bright beames when he on us doth shyne,  
But that their points rebutted backe againe  
Are duld, how can we see with feeble eyne  
The glorie of that Maiestie Divine,  
In sight of whom both sun and moone are darke, 125  
Compared to His least resplendent sparke !

The meanes, therefore, which unto us is lent  
Him to behold, is on His workes to looke,  
Which He hath made in beauty excellent,  
And in the same, as in a brasen booke, 130  
To read enregistred in every nooke  
His goodness, which His Beautie doth declare ;  
For all thats good is beautifull and faire.

These gathering plumes of perfect speculation,  
To impe the wings of thy high flying mynd, 135  
Mount up aloft through heavenly contemplation,  
From this darke world, whose damps the soule do  
And, like the native brood of eagles kynd, [blynd,  
On that bright Sunne of Glorie fixe thine eyes,  
Clear'd from grosse mists of fraile infirmities. 140

Humbled with feare and awfull reverence,  
Before the footstoole of His Maiestie  
Throw thy selfe downe, with trembling innocence,  
Ne dare looke up with corruptible eye  
On the dred face of that Great Deity, 145  
For feare, lest if He chaunce to look on thee,  
Thou turne to nought, and quite confounded be.

But lowly fall before His mercie seate,  
Close covered with the Lambes integrity  
From the iust wrath of His avengefull threate 150  
That sits upon the righteous throne on hy ;  
His throne is built upon Eternity,

More firme and durable then steele or brasse,  
Or the hard diamond, which them both doth passe.

His scepter is the rod of Righteousnesse, 155  
With which He bruseth all His foes to dust,  
And the great Dragon strongly doth repress,  
Under the rigour of His iudgment iust ;  
His seate is Truth, to which the faithfull trust,  
From whence proceed her beames so pure and  
bright, 160  
That all about Him sheddeth glorious light :

Light, farre exceeding that bright blazing sparke  
Which darted is from Titans flaming head,  
That with his beames enlumineh the darke  
And dampish air, wherby al things are red ; 165  
Whose nature yet so much is marvelled  
Of mortall wits, that it doth much amaze  
The greatest wisards which thereon do gaze.

But that immortal light, which there doth shine,  
Is many thousand times more bright, more cleare,  
More excellent, more glorious, more divine, 171  
Through which to God all mortall actions here,  
And even the thoughts of men, do plaine appeare ;  
For from th' Eternall Truth it doth proceed,  
Through heavenly vertue which her beames doe  
breed. 175

With the great glorie of that wondrous light  
His throne is all encompassed around,  
And hid in His owne brightness from the sight  
Of all that looke thereon with eyes unsound ;  
And underneath His feet are to be found 180  
Thunder, and lightning, and tempestuous fyre,  
The instruments of His avenging yre.

There in His bosome Sapience doth sit,  
The soveraine dearling of the Deity,  
Clad like a queene in royall robes, most fit 185  
For so great powre and peerlesse majesty,  
And all with gemmes and jewels gorgeously  
Adorn'd, that brighter then the starres appeare,  
And make her native brightnesse seem more cleare.

And on her head a crown of purest gold 190  
Is set, in signe of highest soverainty ;  
And in her hand a scepter she doth hold,  
With which she rules the house of God on hy,  
And menageth the ever-moving sky,  
And in the same these lower creatures all 195  
Subiected to her powre imperiall.

Both heaven and earth obey unto her will,  
And all the creatures which they both containe ;  
For of her fulnesse which the world doth fill  
They all partake, and do in state remaine 200  
As their great Maker did at first ordaine,  
Through observation of her high beheast,  
By which they first were made, and still increast.

The fairnessse of her face no tongue can tell ;  
For she the daughters of all wemens race, 205  
And angels eke, in beautie doth excell,  
Sparkled on her from Gods owne glorious face,  
And more increast by her owne goodly grace,  
That it doth farre exceed all humane thought,  
Ne can on earth compar'd be to ought. 210

Ne could that Painter (had he lived yet)  
Which pictured Venus with so curious quill,  
That all posteritie admyred it,  
Have purtray'd this, for all his maistring skill ;  
Ne she her selfe, had she remained still, 215  
And were as faire as fabling wits do fayne,  
Could once come neare this Beautie soverayne.

But had those wits, the wonders of their dayes,  
Or that sweete Teian poet, which did spend  
His plenteous vaine in setting forth her praise, 220  
Seen but a glims of this which I pretend,  
How wondrously would he her face commend,  
Above that idole of his fayning thought,  
That all the world should with his rimes be fraught !

How then dare I, the novice of his art, 225  
Presume to picture so divine a wight,  
Or hope t' expresse her least perfections part,  
Whose beautie filles the heavens with her light,  
And darkes the earth with shadow of her sight ?  
Ah, gentle Muse ! thou art too weake and faint 230  
The pourtraict of so heavenly hew to paint.

Let angels, which her goodly face behold  
And see at will, her soveraigne praises sing,  
And those most sacred mysteries unfold  
Of that faire love of Mightie Heavens King ; 235  
Enough is me t' admyre so heavenly thing,  
And, being thus with her huge love possest,  
In th' only wonder of her selfe to rest.

But whoso may, thrise happie man him hold,  
Of all on earth whom God so much doth grace, 240  
And lets his owne Beloved to behold ;  
For in the view of her celestiall face  
All ioy, all blisse, all happinesse, have place ;  
Ne ought on earth can want unto the wight  
Who of her selfe can win the wishfull sight. 245

For she, out of her secret treasury,  
Plentie of riches forth on him will powre,  
Even heavenly riches, which there hidden ly  
Within the closet of her chastest bowre,  
Th' eternall portion of her precious dowre, 250  
Which Mighty God hath given to her free,  
And to all those which thereof worthy bee.

None thereof worthy be, but those whom shee  
Vouchsafeth to her presence to receive,

Ver. 219. — *that sweete Teian poet,*] Anacreon.  
T. WARTON

And letteth them her lovely face to see, 25  
Whereof such wondrous pleasures they conceive,  
And sweete contentment, that it doth bereave  
Their soul of sense, through infinite delight,  
And them transport from flesh into the spright.

In which they see such admirable things, 260  
As carries them into an extasy,  
And heare such heavenly notes and carolings  
Of Gods high praise, that filles the brasen sky ;  
And feele such ioy and pleasure inwardly, 265  
That maketh them all worldly cares forget,  
And onely thinke on that before them set.

Ne from thenceforth doth any fleshly sense,  
Or idle thought of earthly things, remaine ;  
But all that earst seemd sweet seemes now offense,  
And all that pleased earst now seemes to paine : 270  
Their ioy, their comfort, their desire, their gaine,  
Is fixed all on that which now they see ;  
All other sights but fayned shadowes bee.

And that faire lampe which useth to enflame  
The hearts of men with selfe-consuming fyre, 275  
Thenceforth seemes fowle, and full of sinfull blame ;  
And all that pompe to which proud minds aspyre  
By name of Honor, and so much desyre,  
Seemes to them basenesse, and all riches drosse,  
And all mirth sadnesse, and all lucre losse. 280

So full their eyes are of that glorious sight,  
And senses fraught with such satietie,  
That in nought else on earth they can delight,  
But in th' aspect of that felicitie, 285  
Which they have written in theyr inward ey ;  
On which they feed, and in theyr fastened mynd  
All happie ioy and full contentment fynd.

Ah, then, my hungry Soule ! which long hast fed  
On idle fancies of thy foolish thought,  
And, with false Beauties flattring bait misled, 290  
Hast after vaine deceitfull shadowes sought,  
Which all are fled, and now have left thee nought  
But late repentance through thy follies prief ;  
Ah ! cease to gaze on matter of thy grief : 295

And looke at last up to that Sovereaine Light, 295  
From whose pure beams al perfect Beauty springs,  
That kindleth love in every godly spright,  
Even the love of God ; which loathing brings  
Of this vile world and these gay-seeming things ;  
With whose sweet pleasures being so possest, 300  
Thy straying thoughts henceforth for ever rest.

# BRITTAİN'S IDA\*.

LONDON: PRINTED FOR THOMAS WALKLEY.

1628.

## THE EPISTLE.

TO

THE RIGHT NOBLE LADY, MARY, DAUGHTER TO THE MOST ILLUSTRIOUS  
PRINCE, GEORGE, DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.

Most noble Lady! I have presumed to present this Poëm to your honourable hand, encouraged onely by the worth of the famous Author, (for I am certainly assured, by the ablest and most knowing men, that it must be a worke of *Spencers*, of whom it were pittie that any thing should bee lost,) and doubting not but your Lady-ship will graciously accept, though from a meane hand, this humble present, since the man that offers it is a true honourer and observer of your selfe and your princely family, and shall ever remaine  
The humblest of your devoted servants,

*Thomas Walkley.*

## MARTIAL.

*Accipe fauendi Culicem studiosæ Maronis,  
Ne nugis positis, arma virumque canas.*

SEE here that stately Muse, that erst could raise  
In lasting numbers great Elizaes praise,  
And dresse fair Vertue in so rich attire,  
That even her foes were forced to admire  
And court her heavenly beauty! Shee that taught  
The Graces grace, and made the Vertues thought

More vertuous than before, is pleased here  
To slacke her serious flight, and feed your eare  
With love's delightome toys: doe not refuse  
These harmlesse sports; 'tis learned Spencers Muse;  
But think his looses poems worthier then  
The serious follies of unskillfull men.

## CANTO I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The youthly Shepheards wanning here,  
And Beauties rare display, appear;  
What exercise hee chiefly affects,  
His name and scornfull love neglects.

I.

In Ida vale (who knowes not Ida vale?)  
When harmlesse Troy yet felt not Græcian spite,  
An hundred shepheards wonn'd, and in the dale,  
While their faire flockes the three-leav'd pastures  
bite,  
The shepheards boyes with hundred sportings light,  
Gave wings unto the times too speedy hast;  
Ah, foolish Lads! that strove with lavish wast  
So fast to spend the time that spends your time  
as fast.

\* The printer's assertion is the only authority on which this Poem has been admitted into the editions of Spenser's Works, since its first publication in 1628. The critics agree in believing that it was not written by Spenser. Todd.

II.

Among the rest, that all the rest excel'd,  
A dainty boy there wonn'd, whose harmlesse yeares  
Now in their freshest budding gently sweld;  
His nimph-like face nere felt the nimble sheeres,  
Youth's downy blossome through his cheek  
appeares;  
His lovely limbes (but love he quite discarded)  
Were made for play (but he no play regarded)  
And fit love to reward, and with love be rewarded.

III.

High was his fore-head, arch't with silver mould,  
(Where never anger churlish rinkle dighted,)  
His auburne lockes hung like darke threds of gold,  
That wanton aires (with their faire length incited)  
To play among their wanton curles delighted;  
His smiling eyes with simple truth were stor'd  
Ah! how should truth in those thiefe eyes be stor'd,  
Which thousand loves had stol'n, and never one  
restor'd?

K K

## iv.

His lilly-cheeke might seeme an Ivory plaine,  
More purely white than frozen Apenine,  
Where lovely Bashfulness did sweetly raine,  
In blushing scarlet cloth'd and purple fine.  
A hundred hearts had this delightfull shrine,  
(Still cold it selfe) inflam'd with hot desire,  
That well the face might seem, in divers t're,  
To be a burning snow, or else a freezing fire.

## v.

His cheerfull lookes and merry face would proove  
(If eyes the index be where thoughts are read)  
A dainty play-fellow for naked Love ;  
Of all the other parts enough is sed,  
That they were fit twins for so fayre a head :  
Thousand boyes for him, thousand maidens dy'de;  
Dye they that list, for such his rigorous pride,  
He thousand boyes (ah, Foole!) and thousand  
maids deni'd.

## vi.

His ioy was not in musiques sweete delight,  
(Though well his hand had learnt that cunning arte,)  
Or dainty songs to daintier eares indite  
But through the plaines to chace the nible hart  
With well-tun'd hounds ; or with his certaine dart  
The tusked boare or savage beare to wound ;  
Meane time his heart with monsters doth abound ;  
Ah, Foole! to seeke so farre what neerer might  
be found!

## vii.

His name (well knowne unto those woody shades,  
Where unrewarded lovers oft complaine them,)  
Anchises was ; Anchises oft the glades  
And mountains heard, Anchises had disdain'd them ;  
Not all their love one gentle looke had gain'd them,  
That rocky hills, with echoing noyse consenting,  
Anchisis plain'd ; but he no whit relenting,  
Harder then rocky hills, laught at their vaine  
lamenting.

## CANTO II.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Diones Garden of Delight  
With wonder holds Anchises sight ;  
While from the bower such musique sounds,  
As all his senses neere confounds.

## I.

ONE day it chanc't as hee the deere persude,  
Tyred with sport, and faint with weary play,  
Faire Venus grove not farre away he view'd,  
Whose trembling leaves invite him there to stay,  
And in their shades his sweating limbes display ;  
There in the cooling glade he softly paces,  
And much delighted with their even spaces,  
What in himselfe he scorn'd, hee prais'd their  
kind imbraces.

## II.

The woode with Paphian myrtles peopled,  
(Whose springing youth felt never winters spiting,)  
To laurels sweete were sweetly married,  
Doubling their pleasing smels in their uniting ;  
When single much, much more when mixt, delight-  
ing :

No foot of beaste durst touch this hallowed place,

And many a boy that long'd the woods to trace,  
Entred with feare, but soone turn'd back his  
frighted face.

## III.

The thicke-lockt boughs shut out the tell-tale Sunne,  
(For Venus hated his all-blabbing light,  
Since her knowne fault, which oft she wisht undon,)  
And scattered rayes did make a doubtfull sight,  
Like to the first of day or last of night :  
The fittest light for lovers gentle play :  
Such light best shewes the wandring lovers way,  
And guides his erring hand : night is Love's  
hollyday.

## IV.

So farre in this sweet labyrinth he stray'd  
That now he views the Garden of Delight,  
Whose breast, with thousand painted flowers array'd,  
With divers ioy captiv'd his wandring sight ;  
But soon the eyes rendred the eares their right ;  
For such strange harmony he seem'd to heare,  
That all his senses flockt into his eare,  
And every faculty wisht to be seated there.

## V.

From a close bower this dainty musique flow'd,  
A bower appareld round with divers roses,  
Both red and white, which by their liveries show'd  
Their mistris faire, that there her selfe reposes ;  
Seem'd that would strive with those rare musique  
clozes,  
By spreading their faire bosomes to the light,  
Which the distracted sense should most delight ;  
That, raps the melted care ; this, both the smel  
and sight.

## VI.

The boy 'twixt fearefull hope, and wishing feare,  
Crept all along (for much he long'd to see  
The bower, much more the guest so lodged there;)   
And, as he goes, he marks how well agree  
Nature and Arte in discord unity,  
Each striving who should best performe his part,  
Yet Arte now helping Nature, Nature Arte ;  
While from his eares a voyce thus stole his heart.

## VII.

"Fond Men! whose wretched care the life soone  
ending,  
By striving to increase your ioy, do spend it ;  
And, spending ioy, yet find no ioy in spending ;  
You hurt your life by striving to amend it ;  
And, seeking to prolong it, soonest end it :  
Then, while fit time affords thee time and leasure,  
Enjoy while yet thou mayst thy lifes sweet pleasure :  
Too foolish is the man that starves to feed his  
treasure.

## VIII.

"Love is lifes end ; (an end, but never ending ;)   
All ioyes, all sweetes, all happinesse, awarding ;  
Love is life's wealth (nere spent, but ever spending,)   
More rich by giving, taking by discarding ;  
Love's lifes reward, rewarded in rewarding :  
Then from thy wretched heart fond care removee ;  
Ah! shouldst thou live but once loves sweetes to  
proove,  
Thou wilt not love to live, unless thou live to love."

## IX.

To this sweet voyce a dainty musique fitted  
It's well-tun'd strings, and to her notes consorted,



And while with skilfull voyce the song she ditted,  
The blabbing Echo had her words retorted ;  
That now the boy, beyond his soule transported,  
Through all his limbes feeles run a pleasant  
shaking,  
And, twixt a hope and feare, suspects mistaking,  
And doubts he sleeping dreames, and broad awake  
feares waking.

## CANTO III.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Faire Cythereas limbes beheld,  
The straying lads heart so intrah'd,  
That in a trance his melted spright  
Leaves th' senses slumbring in delight.

## I.

Now to the bower hee sent his theevish eyes  
To steale a happy sight ; there doe they finde  
Faire Venus, that within halfe naked lyes ;  
And straight amaz'd (so glorious beauty shin'd)  
Would not returne the message to the minde ;  
But, full of feare and superstitious awe,  
Could not retire, or backe their beams withdraw,  
So fixt on too much seeing made they nothing saw.

## II.

Her goodly length stretcht on a lilly-bed,  
(A bright foyle of a beauty farre more bright,)  
Few roses round about were scattered,  
As if the lillies learnt to blush, for spight  
To see a skinne much more then lilly-white ;  
The hed sanke with delight so to be pressed,  
And knew not which to thinke a chance more  
blessed,  
Both blessed so to kisse, and so agayne be kissed.

## III.

Her spacious fore-head, like the clearest moone,  
Whose full-growne orbe begins now to be spent,  
Largely display'd in native silver shone,  
Giving wide room to Beauty's regiment,  
Which on the plaine with Love triumphing went ;  
Her golden haire a rope of pearle embraced,  
Which, with their dainty threds oft-times enlaced,  
Made the eie think the pearle was there in gold  
inched.

## IV.

Her full large eye, in ietty-blacke array'd,  
Prov'd beauty not confin'd to red and white,  
But oft her selfe in blacke more rich display'd ;  
Both contraries did yet themselves unite,  
To make one beauty in different delight ;  
A thousand Loves sate playing in each eye ;  
And smiling Mirth, kissing fair Courtesie,  
By sweete perswasion wan a bloodlesse victory.

## V.

The whitest white, set by her silver cheeke,  
Grew pale and wan, like unto heavy lead ;  
The freshest purple fresher dyes must seeke,  
That dares compare with them his fainting red :  
On these Cupido winged armies led  
Of little Loves that, with hold wanton raine  
Under those colours, marching on the plaine,  
Force every heart, and to low vasselage constraine.

## VI.

Her lips, most happy each in other's kisses,  
From their so wisht imbracements seldome parted,  
Yet seem'd to blush at such their wanton blisses ;  
But, when sweet words their ioyning sweet parted,  
To th' eare a dainty musique they imparted :  
Upon them fitly sate, delightfull smiling,  
A thousand soules with pleasing stealth beguiling:  
Ah ! that such shews of ioyes should be all ioyes  
exiling.

## VII.

The breath came slowly thence, unwilling leaving  
So sweet a lodge ; but when she once intended  
To feast the aire with words, the heart deceiving,  
More fast it thronged so to be expended ;  
And at each word a hundred Loves attended,  
Playing i' th' breath, more sweete than is that  
Where that Arabian onely bird, expiring, (if that  
Lives by her death, by losse of breath more fresh  
respiring.

## VIII.

Her chin, like to a stone in gold inched,  
Seem'd a fair iewell wrought with cunning hand,  
And, being double, doubly the face graced :  
This goodly frame on her round necke did stand ;  
Such pillar well such curious work sustain'd ;  
And, on his top the heavenly spheare up-rearing,  
Might well present, with daintier appearing,  
A lesse but better Atlas, that faire heaven bearing.

## IX.

Lowly two breasts stand, all their beauties bearing,  
Two breasts as smooth and soft ; but, ah, alas !  
Their smoothest softnes farre exceeds comparing,  
More smooth and soft, but naught that ever was,  
Where they are first, deserves the second place ;  
Yet each as soft and each as smooth as other ;  
And when thou first tri'st one, and then the other,  
Each softer seemes then each, and each then each  
seemes smother.

## X.

Lowly betweene their dainty hemisphaeres,  
(Their hemisphaeres, the heav'nly globes excelleng)  
A path more white than is the name it beares,  
The Lacteal Path, conducts to the sweet dwelling  
Where best Delight all ioyes sits freely dealing ;  
Where hundred sweetes, and still fresh ioyes  
attending,  
Receive in giving ; and, still love dispending,  
Grow richer by their losse, and wealthy by  
expending.

## XI.

But stay, bold Shepheard ! here thy footing stay,  
Nor trust too much unto thy new-borne quill,  
As farther to those dainty limbs to stray,  
Or hope to paint that vale or beauteous hill  
Which past the finest hand or choycest skill :  
But were thy verse and song as finely fram'd  
As are those parts, yet should it soone be blam'd,  
For now the shameles world of best things is  
asham'd.

## XII.

That cunning artist, that old Greece admir'd,  
Thus farre his Venus fitly portrayed,  
But there he left, nor farther ere aspir'd ;  
His daedale hand, that Nature perfected

By Arte, felt Arte by Nature limited,  
 Ah ! well he knew, though his fit hand could give  
 Breath to dead colours, teaching marble live,  
 Yet would these lively parts his hand of skill  
 deprive.

XIII.

Such when this gentle boy her closly view'd,  
 Onely with thinnest silken vaile o'er-layd,  
 Whose snowy colour much more snowy shew'd  
 By being next that skin, and all betray'd,  
 Which best in naked beauties are array'd,  
 His spirits, melted with so glorious sight,  
 Ran from their worke to see so splendid light,  
 And left the fainting limbes sweet slumbring in  
 delight.

## CANTO IV.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The swonding swaine recovered is  
 By th' goddess; his soule-rep'ting blisse:  
 Their mutual conference, and how  
 Her service she doth him allow.

I.

SOFT-SLEEPING Venus, waked with the fall,  
 Looking behind, the sinking boy espies ;  
 With all she starts, and wondereth wildall ;  
 She thinks that there her faire Adonis dyes,  
 And more she thinks the more the boy she eyes :  
 So, stepping neerer, up begins to reare him ;  
 And now with Love himselfe she will confer him,  
 And now before her Love himselfe she will  
 prefer him.

II.

The lad, soone with that dainty touch reviv'd,  
 Feeling himselfe so well, so sweetly seated,  
 Begins to doubt whether he yet here liv'd,  
 Or else his flitting soul, to heav'n translated,  
 Was there in starry throne and blisse instated ;  
 Oft would he dye, so to be often saved ;  
 And now with happy wish he closly craved  
 For ever to be dead, to be so sweet ingraved.

III.

The Paphian princess (in whose lovely breast  
 Spiteful disdain could never find a place)  
 When now she saw him from his fit releast,  
 (To Juno leaving wrath and scolding base,)  
 Comforts the trembling boy with smiling grace :  
 But oh ! those smiles (too full of sweete delight)  
 Surfeit his heart, full of the former sight ;  
 So, seeking to revive, more wounds his feeble  
 sprite.

IV.

" Tell me, fair Boy ! (sayd she) what erring chance  
 Hither directed thy unwary pace ?  
 For sure Contempt or Pride durst not advance  
 Their foule aspect in thy so pleasant face :  
 Tell me, what brought thee to this hidden place ?  
 Or lacke of love, or mutuall answering fire ?  
 Or hindred by ill chance in thy desire ?  
 Tell me, what ist thy faire and wishing eyes  
 require ?"

V.

The boy, (whose sence was never yet acquainted  
 With such a musique,) stood with eares arected,

And, sweetly with that pleasant spell enchanted,  
 More of those sugred straines long time expected ;  
 Till seeing she his speeches not relected,  
 First sighes arising from his heart's low center,  
 Thus gan reply, when each word bold would venter,  
 And strive the first that dainty labyrinth to enter.

VI.

" Fair Cyprian Queene, (for well that heavenly face  
 Prooves thee the mother of all-conquering Love,)  
 Pardon, I pray thee, my unweeting pace ;  
 For no presumptuous thoughts did hither moove  
 My daring feete to this thy holy grove ;  
 But lucklesse chance (which, if you not gaine-say,  
 I still must rue,) hath caus'd me here to stray,  
 And lose my selfe (alas !) in losing of my way.

VII.

" Nor did I come to right my wronged fire ;  
 Never till now I saw what ought be loved ;  
 And now I see, but never dare aspire  
 To moove my hope, where yet my love is mooved ;  
 Whence though I would, I would it not remooved ;  
 Only since I have plac'd my love so high,  
 Which sure thou must, or sure thou wilt, deny,  
 Grant me yet still to love, though in my love to  
 dye."

VIII.

But shee that in his eyes Loves face had seen,  
 And flaming heart, did not such suite disdaine,  
 (For cruelty fits not sweete Beauties queene,)  
 But gently could his passion entertain,  
 Though she Loves princess, he a lowly swain :  
 First of his bold intrusion she acquites him,  
 Then to her service (happy Boy !) admits him,  
 And like another Love, with bow and quiver fits  
 him.

IX.

And now with all the Loves he grew acquainted,  
 And Cupids selfe, with his like face delighted,  
 Taught him a hundred wayes with which he daunted  
 The prouder hearts, and wronged lovers righted,  
 Forcing to love that most his love despited :  
 And now the practique boy did so approve him,  
 And with such grace and cunning arte did moove  
 him,  
 That all the pritty Loves and all the Graces love  
 him.

## CANTO V.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The lovers sad despairing plaints  
 Bright Venus with his love acquaints ;  
 Sweetly importun'd, he doth shew  
 From whom proceedeth this his woe.

I.

YET never durst his faint and coward heart  
 (Ah, Foole ! faint heart faire lady ne're could win !)  
 Assaile faire Venus with his new-learnt arte,  
 But kept his love and burning flame within,  
 Which more flam'd out, the more he prest it in ;  
 And thinking oft how just shee might disdain him,  
 While some cool mirdle shade did entertain him,  
 Thus sighing would he sit, and sadly would he  
 plain him :

ii.

"Ah, fond and haplesse Boy ! nor know I whether  
More fond or haplesse more, that all so high  
Hast plac't thy heart, where love and fate together  
May never hope to end thy misery,  
Nor yet thy self dare wish a remedy :  
All hindrances (alas !) conspire to let it ;  
Ah, fond, and hapless Boy ! if canst not get it !  
In thinking to forget, at length learne to forget it.

iii.

"Ah, farre too fond, but much more haplesse  
Seeing thy love can be forgotten never, [Swaine !  
Serve and observe thy love with willing paine ;  
And though in vaine thy love thou doe persevere,  
Yet all in vaine doe thou adore her ever.  
No hope can crowne thy thoughts so farre aspiring,  
Nor dares thy self desire thine owne desiring,  
Yet live thou in her love, and dye in her  
admiring."

iv.

Thus oft the hopelesse boy complayning lyes ;  
But she, that well could guesse his sad lamenting,  
(Who can conceal love from Loves mothers eyes ?)  
Did not disdain to give his love contenting ;  
Cruel the soule that feeds on soules tormenting :  
Nor did she scorne him, though not nobly borne,  
(Love is nobility) nor could she scorne  
That with so noble skill her title did adorne.

v.

One day it chanc't, thrice happy day and chance !  
While Loves were with the Graces sweetly sporting,  
And to fresh musique sounding play and dance,  
And Cupids selfe, with shepherds boyes consorting,  
Laugh'd at their pritty sport and simple courting,  
Faire Venus seats the fearfull hoy close by her,  
Where never Phoebus jealous lookes might eye  
her,  
And hids the boy his mistris and her name descry  
her.

vi.

Long time the youth bound up in silence stood,  
While hope and feare with hundred thoughts begun  
Fit prologue to his speech ; and fearefull blood  
From heart and face with these post-tydings runne,  
That eyther now he's made, or now undone ;  
At length his trembling words, with feare made  
Began his too long silence thus to breake, [weake,  
While from his humble eies first reverence seem'd  
to speake.

vii.

"Faire Queene of Love ! my life thou maist com-  
Too slender price for all thy former grace, [maud,  
Which I receive at thy so bounteous hand ;  
But never dare I speak her name and face ;  
My life is much lesse-priz'd than her disgrace :  
And, for I know if I her name relate  
I purchase anger, I must hide her state,  
Unless thou swear by Stix I purchase not her  
hate."

viii.

Faire Venus well perceiv'd his snbtle shift,  
And, swearing gentle patience, gently smil'd,  
While thus the boy persu'd his former drift :  
"No tongue was ever yet so sweetly skil'd,  
Nor greatest orator so highly stil'd,  
Though help't with all the choicest artes direction,

But when he durst describe her heaven's perfec-  
tion,  
By his imperfect praise disprais'd his imperfec-  
tion.

ix.

"Her forme is as her selfe, perfect celestriall,  
No mortall spot her heavenly frame disgraces :  
Beyond compare such nothing is terrestrial ?  
More sweete than thought or pow'rfull wish:  
embraces ;  
The map of heaven, the summe of all her graces :  
But if you wish more truly limb'd to eye her,  
Than fainting speech or words can well descry  
her,  
Look in a glasse, and there more perfect you  
may spy her."

## CANTO VI.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The boyes short wish, her larger grant,  
That doth his soule with blisse enchant ;  
Whereof impatient uterne all,  
Irrag'd Jove contrives his thrall.

i.

"THY crafty arte," reply'd the smiling queene,  
"Haath well my chiding and not rage prevented,  
Yet might'st thou thinke that yet 'twas never seene  
That angry rage and gentle love consented ;  
But if to me thy true love is presented,  
What wages for thy service must I owe thee ?  
For by the selfe-same vow I here avow thee,  
Whatever thou require I frankly will allow thee."

ii.

"Pardon," replies the boy, "for so affecting  
Beyond mortality, and not discarding  
Thy service, was much more than my expecting ;  
But if thou (more thy bounty-hood regarding)  
Wilt needs heap up reward upon rewarding,  
Thy love I dare not aske, or mutual fixing,  
One kisse is all my love and prides aspiring,  
And after starve my heart, for my too much  
desiring."

iii.

"Fond Boy !" (sayd she) "too fond, that askt no  
more ;  
Thy want by taking is no whit decreased,  
And giving spends not our increasing store :"  
Thus with a kisse his lips she sweetly pressed ;  
Most blessed kisse ! but hope more than most blessed.  
The boy did thinke heaven fell while thus he  
ioy'd,  
And while ioy he so greedily enjoy'd,  
He felt not halfe his ioy by being over ioy'd.

iv.

"Why sight ? faire Boy !" (sayd she) "dost thou  
repent thee  
Thy narrow wish in such straight bonds to stay ?"  
"Well may I sigh" (sayd he) "and well lament me,  
That never such a debt may hope to pay."  
"A kisse," (sayd she) "a kisse will back repay."  
"Wilt thou" (reply'd the boy, too much delighted),  
"Content thee with such pay to be requited ?"  
She grants ; and he his lips, heart, soule, to pay-  
ment cited.

## v.

Look as a ward, long from his lands detain'd,  
 And subiect to his guardians cruel lore,  
 Now spends the more, the more he was restrain'd ;  
 So he ; yet though in laying out his store  
 He doubly takes, yet finds himself grow poore ;  
 With that he markes, and tels her out a score,  
 And doubles them, and trebles all before.  
 Fond boy ! the more thou paist, thy debt still  
 grows the more.

## vi.

At length, whether these favours so had fir'd him,  
 With kindly heate, inflaming his desiring,  
 Or whether those sweete kisses had inspir'd him,  
 He thinks that something wants for his requiring,  
 And still aspires, yet knows not his aspiring ;  
 But yet though that hee knoweth so she gave,  
 That he presents himselfe her bounden slave,  
 Still his more wishing face seem'd somewhat  
 else to crave.

## vii.

And, boldned with successe and many graces,  
 His hand, chain'd up in feare, he now releaseth,  
 And asking leave, courag'd with her imbraces,  
 Again it prison'd in her tender breast :  
 Ah, blessed prison ! prisoners too much blest !  
 There with those sisters long time doth he play,  
 And now full boldly enters loves highway,  
 While downe the pleasant vale his creeping hand  
 doth stray.

## viii.

She, not displeas'd with this his wanton play,  
 Hiding his blushing with a sugred kisse,  
 With such sweete heat his rudenesse doth allay,  
 That now he perfect knowes whatever blisse  
 Elder Love taught, and he before did misse ;  
 That moult with ioy, in such untri'd ioyes trying,  
 He gladly dies ; and, death new life applying,  
 Gladly againe he dyes, that oft he may be dying

## ix.

Long thus he liv'd, slumbring in sweete delight,  
 Free from sad care and fickle worlds annoy,  
 Bathing in liquid ioyes his melted sprite ;  
 And longer mought, but he (ah, foolish Boy !)  
 Too proud, and too impatient of his ioy,  
 To woods, and heav'n, and earth, his blisse  
 imparted,  
 That Jove upon him downe his thunder darted,  
 Blasting his splendent face, and all his beauty  
 swarted.

## x.

Such he his chance that to his love doth wrong ;  
 Unworthy he to have so worthy place,  
 That cannot hold his peace and blabbing tongue ;  
 Light ioyes float on his lips, but rightly grace  
 Sinckes deepe, and th' heart's low center doth im-  
 brace.  
 Might I enjoy my love till I unfold it,  
 I'd lose all favours when I blabbing told it :  
 He is not fit for love that is not fit to hold it.

## VIEW OF THE STATE OF IRELAND.

WRITTEN DIALOGUE-WISE BETWEEN EUDOXUS AND IRENÆUS

*Eudox.* But if that country of Ireland, whence you lately came, be of so goodly and commodious a soyl, as you report, I wonder that no course is taken for the turning thereof to good uses, and reducing that nation to better government and civility.

*Iren.* Marry so there have bin divers good plottes devised, and wise counsels cast already about reformation of that realme; but they say, it is the fatal destiny of that land, that no purposes whatsoever which are meant for her good, wil prosper or take good effect, which, whether it proceed from the very genius of the soyle, or influence of the starres, or that Almighty God hath not yet appointed the time of her reformation, or that hee reserveth her in this unquiet state still for some secret scourge, which shall by her come unto England, it is hard to be knowne, but yet much to be feared.

*Eudox.* Surely I suppose this but a vaine conceipt of simple men, which judge things by their effects, and not by their causes; for I would rather thinke the cause of this evill, which hangeth upon that country, to proceed rather of the unsoundnes of the counsels, and plots, which you say have bin oftentimes laid for the reformation, or of faintnes in following and effecting the same, then of any such fatal course appointed of God, as you misdeem; but it is the manner of men, that when they are fallen into any absurdity, or their actions succede not as they would, they are always readie to impute the blame thereof unto the heavens, so to excuse their owne follies and imperfections. So have I heard it often wished also, (even of some whose great wisdomes in opinion should seeme to judge more soundly of so weighty a consideration) that all that land were a sea-poole; which kinde of speech, is the manner rather of desperate men farre driven, to wish the utter ruine of that which they cannot redress, then of grave counsellors, which ought to thinke nothing so hard, but that thorough wisdom, it may be mastered and subdued, since the Poet saith, that "the wise man shall rule even over the starres," much more over the earth; for were it not the part of a desperate phisitian to wish his diseased patient dead, rather then to apply the best indeavour of his skill for his recovery. But since we are so farre entred, let us, I pray you, a little devise of those evils, by which that country is held in this wretched case, that it cannot (as you say) be recured. And if it be not painefull to you, tell us what things, during your late continuance there, you observed to bee most offensive, and

greatest impeachment to the good rule and government thereof.

*Iren.* Surely Eudox. The evils which you desire to be recounted are very many, and almost countable with those which were hidden in the basket of Pandora. But since you please, I will out of that infinite number, reckon but some that are most capitall, and commonly occurrent both in the life and conditions of private men, as also in the managing of publicke affaires and pollicy, the which you shall understand to be of divers natures, as I observed them: for some of them are of verie great antiquitie and continuance; others more late and of lesse indurance; others dayly growing and increasing continuallie by their evill occasions, which are every day offered.

*Eudox.* Tell them then, I pray you, in the same order that you have now rehearsed them; for there can be no better method then this which the very matter it selfe offereth. And when you have reckoned all the evils, let us heare your opinion for the redressing of them: after which there will perhaps of it selfe appeare some reasonable way to settle a sound and perfect rule of government, by shunning the former evils, and following the offered good. The which method we may learne of the wise Phisitians, which first require that the malady be knowne thoroughly, and discovered: afterwards to teach how to cure and redresse it: and lastly doe prescribe a dyet, with straight rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more dangerous then it.

*Iren.* I will then according to your advisement begin to declare the evils, which seeme to me most hurtfull to the common-weale of that land; and first, those (I say) which were most auncient and long growne. And they also are of three sorts: The first in the Lawes, the second in Customes, and the last in Religion.

*Eudox.* Why, Irenæus, can there be any evill in the Lawes; can things, which are ordained for the good and safety of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them? This well I wote both in that state, and in all other, that were they not contained in duty with feare of law, which restraineth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdoers, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be against another. Therefore, in finding fault with the lawes, I doubt me, you shall much over-shoote your selfe, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes of that government.

*Iren.* The lawes Eudox. I doe not blame for

themselves, knowing right well that all lawes are ordained for the good of the common-weale, and for repressing of licentiousness and vice; but it falleth out in lawes, no otherwise then it doth in physick, which was at first devised, and is yet daylie ment, and ministred for the health of the patient. But nevertheless we often see, that either thorough ignorance of the disease, or thorough unseasonableness of the time, or thorough accidents comming betweene, in stead of good, it worketh hurt, and, out of one evill, throweth the patient into many miseries. So the lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuance of the subject; but are sithence either disannulled, or quite prevaricated thorough change and alteration of times, yet are they good still in themselves; but, in that commonwealth which is ruled by them, they worke not that good which they should, and sometimes also that evill which they would not.

*Eudox.* Whether doe you mean this by the common-lawes of that realme, or by the Statute Lawes, and Acts of Parliaments?

*Iren.* Surely by them both; for even the common law being that which William of Normandy brought in with his conquest, and laid upon the neck of England, though perhaps it fitted well with the state of England then being, and was readily obeyed thorough the power of the commander, which had before subdued the people unto him, and made easie way to the settling of his will, yet with the state of Ireland peradventure it doth not so well agree, being a people very stubbornne, and untamed, or if it were ever tamed, yet now lately having quite shaken off their yoake, and broken the bonds of their obedience. For England (before the entrance of the Conqueror) was a peaceable kingdome, and but lately inured to the milde and goodly government of Edward, surnamed the Confessor; besides now lately growne into a loathing and detestation of the unjust and tyrannous rule of Harold an usurper, which made them the more willing to accept of any reasonable conditions and order of the new victor, thinking surely that it could be no worse then the latter, and hoping well it would be as good as the former; yet what the prooffe of first bringing in and establishing of those lawes was, was to many full bitterly made knowne. But with Ireland it is farre otherwise; for it is a nation ever acquainted with warres, though but amongst themselves, and in their owne kinde of military discipline, trayned up ever from their youtthes, which they have never yet bene taught to lay aside, nor made to learne obedience unto lawes, scarcely to know the name of law, but in stead thereof have alwayes preserved and kept their owne law, which is the Brehon law.

*Eudox.* What is that which you call the Brehon law? it is a word unto us altogether unknowne.

*Iren.* It is a rule of right unwritten, but delivered by tradition from one to another, in which oftentimes there appeareth great shew of equity, in determining the right betweene party and party, but in many things repugning quite both to Gods law, and mans: As for example in the case of Murder, the Brehon, that is their judge, will compound betweene the murderer, and the friends of the party murdered, which prosecute the action, that the malefactor shall give unto them, or to the child, or wife of him that is slain a recompence, which they

call an Eriach: By which wilde law of theirs, many murders amongst them are made up, and smothered. And this judge being as hee is called the Lords Brehon, adjdgeth for the most part, a better share unto his Lord, that is the Lord of the soyle, or \* the head of that sept, and also unto himselfe for his judgement a greater portion, then unto the plaintiffes or parties grieved.

*Eudox.* This is a most wicked law indeed: but I trust it is not now used in Ireland, since the kings of England have had the absolute dominion thereof, and established their owne lawes there.

*Iren.* Yes truly; for there be many wide countries in Ireland, which the lawes of England were never established in, nor any acknowledgment of subjection made, and also even in those which are subdued, and seeme to acknowledge subjection; yet the same Brehon law is practised among themselves, by reason, that, dwelling as they doe, whole nations and septs of the Irish together, without any Englishman amongst them, they may doe what they list, and compound or altogether conceale amongst themselves their owne crimes, of which no notice can be had, by them which would and might amend the same, by the rule of the lawes of England.

*Eudox.* What is this which you say? And is there any part of that realme, or any nation therein, which have not yet bene subdued to the crowne of England? Did not the whole realme universally accept and acknowledge our late Prince of famous memory Henry the viiith for their onely King and Liege Lord?

*Iren.* Yes verily: in a Parliament holden in the time of Sir Anthony Saint-Leger, then Lord Deputy, all the Irish Lords and principall men came in, and being by faire means wrought thereunto, acknowledged King Henry for their Sovereign Lord, reserving yet (as some say) unto themselves all their owne former priviledges and seignories inviolate.

*Eudox.* Then by that acceptance of his sovereignty they also accepted of his lawes. Why then should any other lawes be now used amongst them?

*Iren.* True it is that thereby they bound themselves to his lawes and obedience, and in case it had bene followed upon them, as it should have bene, and a government thereupon settled among them agreeable thereunto, they should have bene reduced to perpetuall civillite, and contained in continuall duty. But what bootes it to break a colte, and to let him straight runne loose at randome. So were these people at first well handled, and wisely brought to acknowledge allegiance to the Kings of England: but, being straight left unto themselves and their owne inordinate life and manners, they eftsomes forgot what before they were taught, and so soone as they were out of sight, by themselves shook off their bridles, and begonne to colte anew, more licentiously then before.

*Eudox.* It is a great pittie, that so good an opportunity was omitted, and † so happie an occasion fore-slacked, that might have bene the eternall good of the land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission?

*Iren.* No, they doe not: for now the heires and posterity of them which yeilded the same, are (as

\* the head of that sept,] Sept is family. Todd.

† so happy an occasion fore-slacked,] Delayd. Todd.

they say) either ignorant thereof, or do wilfully deny, or stedfastly disavow it.

*Eudox.* How can they so doe justly? Doth not the act of the parent in any lawfull graunt or conveyance, bind their heires for ever thereunto? Sith then the auncestors of those that now live, yeelded themselves then subjects and liegemen, shall it not tye their children to the same subjection?

*Iren.* They say no: for their auncestors had no estate in any their lands, seigniories, or hereditaments, longer then during their own lives, as they alledge, for all the Irish doe hold their land by Tanistrie; which is (say they) no more but a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanist, by reason that he is admitted thereunto by election of the countrey.

*Eudox.* What is this which you call Tanist and Tanistry? They be names and termes never heard of nor knowne to us.

*Iren.* It is a custome amongst all the Irish, that presently after the death of any of their chiefe Lords or Captaines, they doe presently assemble themselves to a place generally appointed and knowne unto them to choose another in his steed, where they doe nominate and elect for the most part, not the eldest sonne, nor any of the children of the Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest and worthiest, as commonly the next brother unto him if he have any, or the next cousin, or so forth, as any is elder in that kindred or sept, and then next to him doe they choose the next of the blood to be Tanist, who shall next succeed him in the said Captainry, if he live thereunto.

*Eudox.* Doe they not use any ceremony in this election? for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonies and superstitious rites.

*Iren.* They use to place him that shalbe their Captaine, upon a stone alwayes reserved for that purpose, and placed commonly upon a hill: In some of which I have seen formed and engraven a foot, which they say was the measure of their first Captaines foot, whereon hee standing, receives an oath to preserve all the ancient former customes of the countrey inviolable, and to deliver up the succession peaceably to his Tanist, and then hath a wand delivered unto him by some whose proper office that is: after which, descending from the stone, he turneth himselfe round, thrice forward, and thrice backward.

*Eudox.* But how is the Tanist chosen?

*Iren.* They say he setteth but one foot upon the stone, and receiveth the like oath that the Captaine did.

*Eudox.* Have you ever heard what was the occasion and first beginning of this custome? for it is good to know the same, and may perhaps discover some secret meaning and intent therein, very materiall to the state of that government.

*Iren.* I have heard that the beginning and cause of this ordinance amongst the Irish, was specially for the defence and maintenance of their lands in their posteritie, and for excluding all innovation or alienation thereof unto strangers, and specially to the English. For when their Captaine dieth, if the signiorie should descend to his child, and he perhaps an infant, another might peradventure step in between, or thrust him out by strong hand, being then unable to defend his right, or to withstand the force of a forreiner; and therefore they

doe appoint the eldest of the kinne to have the signiorie, for that he commonly is a man of stronger yeares, and better experience to maintain the inheritance, and to defend the countrey, either against the next bordering Lords, which use commonly to ineroach one upon another, as one is stronger, or against the English, which they thinke lye still in waite to wype them out of their lands and territories. And to this end the Tanist is alwayes ready knowne, if it should happen the Captaine suddenly to dye, or to be slaine in battell, or to be out of the countrey, to defend and keepe it from all such doubts and dangers. For which cause the Tanist hath also a share of the countrey allotted unto him, and certaine cuttings and spendings upon all the inhabitants under the Lord.

*Eudox.* When I hear this word Tanist, it bringeth to my remembrance what I have read of Tania, that it should signifie a province or seigniorie, as Aquitania, Lusitania, and Britania, the which some thinke to be derived of Dania, that is, from the Danes, but, I think, amisse. But sure it seemeth, that it came anciently from those barbarous nations that over-ranne the world, which possessed those dominions, whereof they are now so called. And so it may well be that from thence \*the first originall of this word Tanist and Tanistry came, and the custome thereof hath sithence, as many others else, bene continued. But to that generall subjection of the land, whereof wee formerly spake, me seemes that this custome or tenure can be no barre nor impeachment, seeing that in open Parliament by their said acknowledgement they waved the benefite thereof, and submitted themselves to the benefite of their new Sovereigne.

*Iren.* Yea, but they say, as I earst tolde you, that they reserved their titles, tenures, and seigniories whole and sound to themselves, and for proof alledge, that they have ever sithence remained to them untouched, so as now to alter them, should (say they) be a great wrong.

*Eudox.* What remedie is there then, or meanes to avoide this inconvenience? for, without first cutting of this dangerous custome, it seemeth hard to plant any sound ordinance, or reduce them to a civill government, since all their ill customes are permitted unto them.

*Iren.* Surely nothing hard: for by this Act of Parliament whereof wee speake, nothing was given to King Henry which he had not before from his auncestors, but onely the bare name of a King; for all other absolute power of principality he had in himselfe before derived from many former Kings, his famous progenitours and worthy conquerours of that land. The which, sithence they first conquered and by force subdued unto them, what needed afterwards to enter into any such idle termes with them to be called their King, when it is in the power of the conqueror to take upon himself what title he will, over his dominions conquered. For all is the conquerours, as Tully to Brutus saith. Therefore (me seemes) instead of so great and meritorious a service as they boast they performed to the King, in bringing all the Irish to

\* the first originall of this word Tanist and Tanistry came.] See whether it may not be more fitly derived from Thane, which word was commonly used among the Danes, and also among the Saxons in England, for a noble man, and a principall officer. SIR JAMES WARE.

acknowledge him for their Liege, they did great hurt unto his title, and have left a perpetuall gall in the minde of the people, who before being absolutely bound to his obedience, are now tyed but with termes, whereas else both their lives, their lands, and their liberties were in his free power to appoint what tenures, what lawes, what conditions hee would over them, which were all his: against which there could be no rightfull resistance, or if there were, he might, when he would, establish them with a stronger hand.

*Eudox.* Yea, but perhaps it seemed better unto that noble King to bring them by their owne accord to his obedience, and to plant a peaceable government amongst them, then by such violent means to pluck them under. Neither yet hath he thereby lost any thing that he formerly had; for, having all before absolutely in his owne power, it remaineth so still unto him, he having thereby neither forgiven nor forgone any thing thereby unto them, but having received something from them, that is, a more voluntary and loyall subjection. So as her Majesty may yet, when it shall please her, alter any thing of those former ordinances, or appoint other lawes, that may be more both for her own behoefe, and for the good of that people.

*Iren.* Not so: for it is not so easie, now that things are growne unto an habit, and have their certaine course to change the channell, and turne their streames another way, for they may have now a colorable pretence to withstand such innovations, having accepted of other lawes and rules already.

*Eudox.* But you say they do not accept of them, but delight rather to leane to their old customes and Brehon lawes, though they be more unjust and also more inconvenient for the common people, as by your late relation of them I have gathered. As for the lawes of England they are surely most just and most agreeable, both with the government and with the nature of the people. How falls it then that you seeme to dislike of them, as not so meete for that realme of Ireland, and not onely the Common Law, but also the Statutes and Actes of Parliament, which were specially provided and intended for the onlie benefit thereof?

*Iren.* I was about to have told you my reason therein, but that your selfe drew me away with other questions, for I was shewing you by what meanes, and by what sort, the positive lawes were first brought in and established by the Norman Conquerour: which were not by him devised nor applied to the state of the realme then being, nor as yet might best be, (as should by lawgivers principally be regarded) but were indeed the very lawes of his owne cuntry of Normandie. The condition whereof, how farre it differeth from this of England, is apparent to every least judgement. But to transferrre the same lawes for the governing of the realme of Ireland, was much more inconvenient and unmeete; for he found a better advantage of the time, then was in the planting of them in Ireland, and followed the execution of them with more severity, and was also present in person to overlooke the Magistrates, and to overawe these subjects with the terrour of his sword, and countenance of his Majesty. But not so in Ireland, for they were otherwise affected, and yet doe so remaine, so as the same lawes (me seemes) can ill fit with their disposition, or worke that reformation that is wished. For lawes ought to be fashioned

unto the manners and conditions of the people, to whom they are meant, and not to be imposed upon them according to the simple rule of right, for then (as I said) in stead of good they may worke ill, and pervert iustice to extreame iniustice. For hee that transferrres the lawes of the Lacedaemonians to the people of Athens, should finde a great absurditie and inconvenience. For those lawes of Lacedemon were devised by Licurgus as most proper and best agreeing with that people, whom hee knew to be enclined altogether to warres, and therefore wholly trained them up even from their cradles in armes and military exercises, cleane contrary to the institution of Solon, who, in his lawes to the Athenians, laboured by all meanes to temper their warlike courages with sweet delightes of learning and sciences, so that asmuch as the one excelled in armes, the other excelled in knowledge. The like regard and moderation ought to be had in tempering, and managing, this stubborn nation of the Irish to bring them from their delight of licentious barbarisme unto the love of goodnes and civilitie.

*Eudox.* I cannot see how that may better be then by the discipline of the lawes of England: for the English were, at first, as stoute and warlike a people as ever the Irish, and yet you see are now brought unto that civility, that no nation in the world excelleth them in all goodly conversation, and all the studies of knowledge and humanitie.

*Iren.* What they now be, both you and I see very well, but by how many thornie and hard wayes they are come thereunto, by how many civill broiles, by how many tumultuous rebellions, that even hazzarded oftentimes the whole safety of the kingdome, may easily be considered: all which they neverthelesse fairely overcame, by reason of the continuall presence of their King; whose onely person is oftentimes in stead of an army, to containe the unrulie people from a thousand evill occasions, which this wretched kingdome, for want thereof, is dayly carried into. The which, whensoever they make head, no lawes, no penalties, can restraine, but that they doe, in the violence of that furie, tread downe and trample under foote all both divine and humane things, and the lawes themselves they doe specially rage at, and rend in peeces, as most repugnant to their libertie and naturall freedome, which in their madnes they affect.

*Eudox.* It is then a very unseasonable time to plead law, when swords are in the hands of the vulgar, or to thinke to retaine them with feare of punishments, when they looke after libertie, and shake off all government.

*Iren.* Then so it is with Ireland continually, Eudoxus; for the sword was never yet out of their hand, but when they are weary of warres, and brought downe to extreame wretchednesse; then they creepe a little perhaps and sue for grace, till they have gotten new breath and recovered their strength againe. So as it is in vaine to speake of planting lawes, and plotting pollicie, till they be altogether subdued.

*Eudox.* Were they not so at the first conquering of them by Strongbowe, in the time of King Henry the second? was there not a thorough way then made by the sword, for the imposing of the lawes upon them? and were they not then executed with such a mightie hand as you said was used by the Norman Conquerour? What oddes is there then



in this case? why should not the same lawes take as good effect in that people as they did here, being in like sort prepared by the sword, and brought under by extremity? and why should they not continue in as good force and vigour for the containing of the people?

*Iren.* The case yet is not like, but there appeareth great odds betwene them: for, by the conquest of Henry the second, true it is that the Irish were utterly vanquished and subdued, so as no enemy was able to hold up head against his power, in which their weaknes hee brought in his lawes, and settled them as now they there remaine; like as William the Conquerour did; so as in thus much they agree; but in the rest, that is the chiefest, they varie: for to whom did King Henry the second impose those lawes? not to the Irish, for the most part of them fled from his power, into deserts and mountaines, leaving the wyde cuntry to the conquerour: who in their stead eftsomes placed English men, who possessed all their lands and did quite shut out the Irish, or the most part of them. And to those new inhabitants and colonies he gave his lawes, to wit, the same lawes under which they were borne and bred, the which it was no difficultie to place amongst them, being formerly well inured thereunto; unto whom afterwards there repaired diverse of the poore distressed people of the Irish, for succour and reliefe; of whom, such as they thought fit for labour, and industriously disposed, as the most part of their baser sort are, they received unto them as their vassalls, but scarcely vouchsafed to impart unto them the benefit of those lawes, under which themselves lived, but every one made his will and commandement a law unto his owne vassall: thus was not the law of England ever properly applyed unto the Irish nation, as by a purposed plot of government, but as they could insinuate and steale themselves under the same, by their humble carriage and submission.

*Eudox.* How comes it then to passe, that having bene once so low brought, and thoroughly subjected, they afterwards lifted up themselves so strongly againe, and sithence doe stand so stiffely against all rule and government?

*Iren.* They say that they continued in that lowliness, untill the time that the division between the two houses of Lancaster and York arose for the crowne of England: at which time all the great English Lords and Gentlemen, which had great possessions in Ireland, repaired over hither into England, some to succour their friends here, and to strengthen their partie for to obtain the crowne; others to defend their lands and possessions here against such as hovered after the same upon hope of the alteration of the kingdome, and successe of that side which they favoured and affected. Then the Irish whom before they had banished into the mountaines, where they lived onely upon white meates, as it is recorded, seeing now their lands so despoiled and weakened, came downe into all the plaines adjoining, and thence expelling those few English that remained, repossessed them againe, since which they have remained in them, and, growing greater, have brought under them many of the English, which were before their Lords. This was one of the occasions by which all those countreyes, which lying neere unto any mountaine or Irish desarts, had bene planted with English, were shortly displanted and lost. As namely in Moun-

ster all the lands adjoining unto Slewlogher, Arlo, and the bog of Allon. In Connaght all the Countreyes bordering upon the Curlues, Mointerolis, and Orourokes countrey. In Leinster all the lands bordering unto the mountaines of Glanmalour, unto Shillelah, unto the Brackenah, and Polmonte. In Ulster, all the countreyes near unto Tircommel, Tyrone, and the Scottes.

*Eudox.* Surely this was a great violence: but yet by your speach it seemeth that onely the countreyes and valleyes neere adjoining unto those mountaines and desarts, were thus recovered by the Irish: but how comes it now that we see almost all that realme repossessed of them? Was there any more such evil occasions growing by the troubles of England? Or did the Irish, out of those places so by them gotten, break further and stretch themselves out thorough the whole land? for now, for ought that I can understand, there is no part but the bare English Pale, in which the Irish have not the greatest footing.

*Iren.* Both out of these small beginnings by them gotten neere to the mountaines, did they spread themselves into the inland; and also, to their further advantage, there did other like unhappy accidents happen out of England; which gave heart and good opportunity to them to regaine their old possessions: For, in the raigne of King Edward the fourth, things remained yet in the same state that they were after the late breaking out of the Irish, which I spake of; and that noble Prince began to cast an eye unto Ireland, and to minde the reformation of things there runne amisse: for he sent over his brother the worthy \*Duke of Clarence, who having married the heire of the Earle of Ulster, and by her having all the Earledome of Ulster, and much in Meath and in Mounster, very carefully went about the redressing of all those late evils, and though he could not beate out the Irish againe, by reason of his short continuance, yet hee did shut them up within those narrow corners and glennes under the mountaines foote, in which they lurked, and so kept them from breaking any further, by building strong holdes upon every border, and fortifying all passages. Amongst the which hee repaired the castle of Clare in Thomond, of which countrey he had the inheritance, and of Mortimers lands adjoining, which is now (by the Irish) called Killaloe. But the times of that good King growing also troublesome, did lett the thorough reformation of all things. And thereunto soone after was added another fatall mischief, which wrought a greater calamity then all the former. For the said Duke of Clarence, then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, was, by practise of evil persons about the King, his brother, called thence away: and soone after, by sinister meanes was cleane made away. Presently after whose death, all the North revolting, did set

\* Duke of Clarence, who having married the heire of the Earle of Ulster, &c.] It was not George Duke of Clarence here spoken of by the author, but Lionell Duke of Clarence, third sonne of King Edw. the 3. who married the earle of Ulsters daughter, and by her had the earledome of Ulster; and although Edw. the 4. made his brother the Duke of Clarence Lo. Lieutenant of Ireland, yet the place was still executed by his Deputyes (which were at severall times) Thomas earle of Desmond, Iohn Earle of Worcester, Tho. Earle of Kildare, and William Shirwood Bishop of Meth, the Duke himselfe never coming into Ireland to governe there in person. SIR JAMES WARE.

up Oneale for their Captaine, being before that of small power and regard: and there arose in that part of Thomond, one of the O-Briens, called Murrugh en-Ranagh, that is, Morrice of the Ferne, or wast wilde places, who, gathering unto him all the reliques of the discontented Irish, eftsontes surprised the said castle of Clare, burnt, and spoyled all the English there dwelling, and in short space possessed all that countrey beyond the river of Shanahan and neere adjoining: whence shortly breaking forth like a suddaine tempest he over-ran all Mounster and Connaght; breaking downe all the holds and fortresses of the English, defacing and utterly subverting all corporate townes, that were not strongly walled: for those he had no meanes nor engines to overthrow, neither indeed would hee stay at all about them, but speedily ran forward, counting his suddennesse his most advantage, that he might overtake the English before they could fortifie or gather themselves together. So in short space hee cleane wyped out many great townes, as first Inchequin, then Killaloy, before called Clariford, also Thurles, Mourne, Buttevant, and many others, whose names I cannot remember, and of some of which there is now no memory nor signe remaining. Upon report whereof there flocked unto him all the summe of the Irish out of all places, that ere long he had a mighty army, and thence marched fourth into Leinster, where he wrought great out-rages, wasting all the countrey where he went; for it was his policie to leave no hold behinde him, but to make all plaine and waste. In which hee soone after created himselfe King, and was called King of all Ireland; which before him I doe not reade that any did so generally, but onely Edward le Bruce.

*Eudox.* What? was there ever any generall King of all Ireland? I never heard it before, but that it was always (whilst it was under the Irish) divided into foure, and sometimes into five kingdomes or dominions. But this Edward le Bruce, what was hee, that could make himselfe King of all Ireland?

*Iren.* I would tell you, in case you would not challenge me anon for forgetting the matter which I had in hand, that is, the inconvenience and unfitness which I supposed to be in the lawes of the land.

*Eudox.* No surely, I have no cause, for neither is this impertinent thereunto; for sithence you did set your course (as I remember in your first part) to treat of the evils which hindered the peace and good ordering of that land, amongst which, that of the inconvenience in the lawes, was the first which you had in hand, this discourse of the over-running and wasting of the realme is very materiall thereunto, for that it was the beginning of all the other evils, which sithence have afflicted that land, and opened a way unto the Irish to recover their possession, and to beat out the English which had formerly wonne the same. And besides, it will give a great light both unto the second and third part, which is the redressing of those evils, and planting of some good forme or policy therein, by renewing the remembrance of these occasions and accidents, by which those ruines hapned, and laying before us the ensamples of those times, to be compared to ours, and to be warned by those which shall have to doe in the like. Therefore I pray you tell them unto us, and as for the point where you left, I will not forget afterwards to call you backe againe thereunto.

*Iren.* This Edw. le Bruce was brother of Robert le Bruce, who was King of Scotland, at such time as King Edward the second reigned here in England, and bare a most malicious and spitefull minde against King Edward, doing him all the scathe that hee could, and annoying his territories of England, whilst he was troubled with civill warres of his Barons at home. Hee also, to worke him the more mischief, sent over his said brother Edward with a power of Scottes and Red-shankes into Ireland, where, by the meanes of the Lacies, and of the Irish with whom they combined, they gave footing, and gathering unto him all the \* scatterlings and out-lawes out of all the woods and mountaines, in which they long had lurked, marched fourth into the English Pale, which then was chiefly in the North, from the point of Donluce, and beyond unto Dublin: having in the midst of her Knockfergus, Belfast, Armagh, and Carlingford, which are now the most out-bounds and abandoned places in the English Pale, and indeede not counted of the English Pale at all: for it stretcheth now no further then Dundalke towards the North. There the said Edward le Bruce spoyled and burnt all the olde English Pale inhabitants, and sacked and rased all citties and corporate townes, no lesse then Murrugh en Ranagh, of whom I earst tolde you: For hee wasted Belfast, Green-Castle, Kelles, Bellrubar, Castletowne, Newton, and many other very good townes and strong holdes: hee rooted out the noble families of the Audlies, Talbotts, Tuchets, Chamberlaines, Mannevills, and the Savages out of Ardes, though of the Lo. Savage there remaineth yet an heire, that is now a poore gentlemou of very meane condition, yet dwelling in the Ardes. And coming lastly to Dundalke, hee there made himselfe King, and reigned the space of one whole yeare, untill that Edward King of England, having set some quiet in his affaires at home, sent over the Lord Iohn Birmingham to be Generall of the warres against him, who, incountering him neere to Dundalke, over-threw his army, and slew him. Also hee presently followed the victory so hotly upon the Scottes, that hee suffered them not to breathe, or gather themselves together againe, untill they came to the sea-coast. Notwithstanding all the way that they fledde, for very rancor and despight, in their returne, they utterly consumed and wasted whatsoever they had before left unspoyled, so as of all townes, castles, fortes, bridges, and habitations, they left not any sticke standing, nor any people remaining; for those few, which yet survived, fledde from their fury further into the English Pale thit now is. Thus was all that goodly countrey utterly wasted. And sure it is yet a most beautifull and sweet countrey as any is under heaven, being stored throughout with many goodly rivers, replenished with all sorts of fish most abundantly, sprinkled with many very sweet islands and goodly lakes, like little inland seas, that will carry even shippes upon their waters, adorned with goodly woods even fit for building of houses and ships, so commodiously, as that if some Princes in the world had them, they would some hope to be lords of all the seas, and ere long of all the world: also full of very good ports and havens opening upon England, as inviting us to come unto them, to see what

\* scatterlings and outlawes] He uses scatterlings for ravagers again in this View of the State of Ireland. Todd

excellent commodities that country can afford, besides the soyle it selfe most fertile, fit to yeeld all kinde of fruit that shall be committed thereunto. And lastly, the heavens most milde and temperate, though somewhat more moist then the parts towards the West.

*Eudox.* Truly Iren. what with your praises of the country, and what with your discourse of the lamentable desolation therof, made by those Scottes, you have filled mee with a great compassion of their calamities, that I doe much pity that sweet land, to be subject to so many evils as I see more and more to be layde upon her, and doe halfe beginne to thinke, that it is (as you said at the beginning) her fatall misfortune above all other countreyes that I know, to bee thus miserably tossed and turmoyled with these variable stormes of affliction. But since wee are thus far entred into the consideration of her mishaps, tell mee, have there beene any more such tempests, as you term them, wherein she hath thus wretchedly benee wracked ?

*Iren.* Many more, God wot, have there beene, in which principall parts have benee rent and torne asunder, but none (as I can remember) so universall as this. And yet the rebellion of Thomas Fitz-Garret did well-nye stretch it selfe into all parts of Ireland. But that, which was in the time of the government of the Lord Grey, was surely no lesse generall then all those ; for there was no part free from the contagion, but all conspired in one, to cast off their subiection to the crowne of England. Neverthelesse thorough the most wise and valiant handling of that right noble Lord, it got not the head which the former evils found ; for in them the realme was left like a ship in a storm, amidst all the raging surges, unrul'd, and undirected of any : for they to whom she was committed, either fainted in their labour, or forsooke their charge. But hee (like a most wise pilote,) kept her course carefully, and held her most strongly even against those roaring billowes, that he safely brought her out of all ; so as long after, even by the space of 12 or 13 whole yeares, she roade at peace, thorough his onely paines and excellent indurance, \* how ever Envy list to blatter against him. But of this wee shall have more occasion to speak in another place. Now (if you please) let us returne againe unto our first course.

*Eudox.* Truly I am very glad to heare your iudgement of the government of that honourable man so soundly ; for I have heard it oftentimes malign'd, and his doings depraved of some, who (I perceive) did rather of malicious minde, or private grievance, seeke to detract from the honour of his deeds and counsels, then of any iust cause : but he was neverthelesse, in the iudgements of all good and wise men, defended and maintained. And now that he is dead, his immortall fame surviveth, and flourisheth in the mouthes of all people, that even those which did backbite him, are checked with their owne venome, and breake their galls to heare his so honourable report. But let him rest in peace ; and turne we to our more troublesome matters of discourse, of which I am right sorry that you make so short an end, and covet to passe over to your former purposes ; for there be many other parts of Ireland, which I have heard have bin no

lesse vexed with the like stormes, then these which you have treated of, as the countreyes of the Birnies and Tooles near Dublin, with the insolent out-rages and spoyles of Feagh mac Hugh, the countreyes of Catherlagh, Wexford, and Waterford, by the Cavenaghes. The countreyes of Leix, Kilkenny, and Kildare by the O Moores. The countreyes of Ofaly and Longford by the Connors. The countreyes of Westmeath, Cavan, and Lowth, by the O Relyes, the Kellyes, and many others, so as the discoursing of them, besides the pleasure which would redound out of their history, be also very profitable for matters of policy.

*Iren.* All this which you have named, and many more besides, often times have I right well knowne, and yet often doe kindele great fires of tumultuous broyles in the countreyes bordering upon them. All which to rehearse, should rather bee to chronicle times, then to search into reformation of abuses in that realme ; and yet very needfull it will bee to consider them, and the evils which they have often stirred up, that some redresse thereof, and prevention of the evils to come, may thereby rather be devised. But I suppose wee shall have a fitter opportunity for the same, when wee shall speake of the particular abuses and enormities of the government, which will be next after these generall defects and inconveniences which I saide were in the lawes, customes, and religion.

*Eudox.* Goe to them a Gods name, and follow the course which you have promised to your selfe, for it fitteth best, I must confesse, with the purpose of our discourse. Declare your opinion as you began about the lawes of the realme, what in-commoditie you have conceived to bee in them, chiefly in the Common Law, which I would have thought most free from all such dislike.

*Iren.* The Common Law is (as I saide before) of itselfe most rightfull and very convenient (I suppose) for the kingdome, for which it was first devised : for this (I thinke) as it seemes reasonable, that out of your manners of your people, and abuses of your country, for which they were invented, they take their first beginning, or else they should bee most uniuert ; for no lawes of man (according to the straight rule of right) are iust, but as in regard of the evils which they prevent, and the safety of the common-weale which they provide for. As for example, in your true ballancing of iustice, it is a flat wrong to punish the thought or purpose of any before it bee enacted ; for true iustice punisheth nothing but the evil act or wicked word, that by the lawes of all kingdomes it is a capitall crime to devise or purpose the death of your King : the reason is, for that when such a purpose is effected, it should then bee too late to devise thereof, and should turne the common-wealth to more losse by the death of their Prince, then such punishment of the malefactors. And therefore the law in that case punisheth the thought ; for better is a mischiefe, then an inconvenience. So that *ius politicum*, though it bee not of it selfe iust, yet by application, or rather necessity, it is made iust ; and this onely respect maketh all lawes iust. Now then, if these lawes of Ireland bee not likewise applyed and fitted for that realme, they are sure very inconvenient.

*Eudox.* You reason strongly : but what unfitnesse doe you finde in them for that realme ? shew us some particulars.

\* how ever Envy list to blatter against him.] To blatter is to rail or rage. TODD.

*Iren.* The Common Law appointeth, that all tryalls, as well of crimes, as titles and rights, shall be made by verdict of a jury, chosen out of the honest and most substantiall free-holders. Now, most of the free-holders of that realme are Irish, which when the cause shall fall betwixt an Englishman and an Irish, or betweene the Queene and any free-holder of that countrey, they make no more scruple to passe against an Englishman, and the Queene, though it bee to strayn their oathes, then to drinke milke unstrayned. So that before the iury goe together, it is all to nothing what the verdict shall be. The tryall have I so often seene, that I dare confidently avouch the abuse thereof. Yet is the law, of itselfe, (as I said) good; and the first institution thereof being given to all Englishmen very rightfully, but now that the Irish have stepped into the very roomes of our English, wee are now to become heedfull and provident in iuries.

*Eudox.* In sooth, Iren. you have discovered a point worthy the consideration; for heereby not onely the English subiect findeth no indifference in deciding of his cause, bee it never so iust; but the Queene, aswell in all pleas of the crowne, as also in inquiries for escheates, lands attained, ward-shippes, concealments, and all such like, is abused and exceedingly damaged.

*Iren.* You say very true; for I dare undertake, that at this day there are more attained lands, concealed from her Majestie, then shee hath now possessions in all Ireland; and it is no small inconvenience: for, besides that shee looseth so much land as should turne to her great profite, shee besides looseth so many good subiects, which might bee assured unto her, as those landes would yeeld inhabitants and living unto.

*Eudox.* But doth many of that people (say you) make no more conscience to perjure themselves in their verdicts, and damne their soules?

*Iren.* Not onely so in their verdicts, but also in all other their dealings; especially with the English, they are most wilfully bent: for though they will not seeme manifestly to doe it, yet will some one or other subtle-headed fellow amongst them put some quirk, or devise some evasion, whereof the rest will likely take hold, and suffer themselves easily to be led by him to that themselves desired. For in the most apparent matter that may bee, the least question or doubt that may bee mooved, will make a stoppe unto them, and put them quite out of the way. Besides, that of themselves (for the most part) \*they are so cautelous and wylie-headed, especially being men of so small experience and practice in law matters, that you would wonder whence they borrow such subtilties and slye shifts.

*Eudox.* But mee thinkes this inconvenience might bee much helped in the Judges and Chief Magistrates which have the choosing and nominating of those iurors, if they would have dared to appoint either most Englishmen, and such Irishmen as were of the soundest judgment and disposition; for no doubt but some there bee incorruptible.

*Iren.* Some there bee indeede as you say; but then would the Irish partie crye out of partialitie, and complaine hee hath no iustice, hee is not used as a subject; hee is not suffered to have the free benefite of the law; and these outcryes the Magistrates there doe much shunne, as they have cause,

\* they are so cautelous] Cautious. Todd.

since they are readily hearkened unto heere; neither can it bee indeede, although the Irish party would bee so contented to be so compassed, that such English freeholders which are but few, and such faithful Irish-men, which are indeede as few, shall alwayes bee chosen for tryalls; for being so few, they should bee made weary of their free-houldes. And therefore a good care is to bee had by all good occasions, to increase their number, and to plant more by them. But were it so, that the iurors could bee picked out of such choyce men as you desire, this would nevertheless bee as had a corruption in the tryall; for the evidence being brought in by the baser Irish people, will bee as deceptfull as the verdict; for they care much lesse then the others, what they sweare, and sure their Lordes may compell them to say any thing; for I my selfe have heard, when one of the baser sort † (which they call churles) being challenged, and reproved for his false oath, hath answered confidently, That his Lord commanded him, and it was the least thing that hee could doe for his Lord to sweare for him; so inconcionable are these common people, and so little feeling have they of God, or their owne soules good.

*Eudox.* It is a most miserabell case, but what helpe can there bee in this? for though the manner of the trials should bee altered, yet the prooffe of every thing must needes bee by the testimony of such persons as the parties shall produce, which if they shall bee corrupt, how can there ever any light of the truth appeare, what remedy is there for this evil, but to make heavy lawes and penalties against iurors?

*Iren.* I thinke sure that will doe small good; for when a people be inclined to any vice, or have no touch of conscience, nor sence of their evill doings; it is bootelesse to thinke to restraine them by any penalties or feare of punishment, but either the occasion is to be taken away, or a more understanding of the right, and shame of the fault to be imprinted. For if that Licurgus should have made it death for the Lacedemonians to steale, they being a people which naturally delighted in stealth; or if it should bee made a capital crime for the Flemings to be taken in drunkennesse; there should have bene few Lacedemonians then left, and few Flemings now. So impossible it is, to remove any fault so generall in a people, with terreur of lawes or most sharpe restraints.

*Eudox.* What meanes may there be then to avoyde this inconvenience? for the case seemes very hard.

*Iren.* We are not yet come to the point to devise remedies for the evils, but only have now to recount them; of the which, this which I have told you is one defect in the Common Law.

*Eudox.* Tell us then (I pray you) further, have you any more of this sort in the Common Law?

*Iren.* By rehearsall of this, I remember also of an other like, which I have often observed in trials, to have wrought great hurt and hinderance, and that is, the exceptions which the Common Law alloweth a fellow in his tryall; for he may have (as you know) fifty-six exceptions peremptory against the iurors, of which hee shal shew no cause. By which shift there being (as I have shewed you) so

† (which they call churles)] "Hinds, which they call churles," as he presently explains the word. Todd.

small store of honest iury-men, he will either put off his tryall, or drive it to such men as (perhaps) are not of the soundest sort, by whose meanes, if he can acquite himselfe of the crime, as he is likely, then will he plague such as were brought first to bee of his iurie, and all such as made any party against him. And when he comes forth, he will make their \*cowes and garrons to walke, if he doe no other harme to their persons.

*Eudox.* This is a slye devise, but I thinke might some bee remedied, but we must leave it a while to the rest. In the meane-while doe you goe forwards with others.

*Iren.* There is an other no lesse inconvenience then this, which is, the tryall of accessaries to felony; for, by the Common Law, the accessaries cannot be proceeded against, till the principall have received his tryall. Now to the case, how it often falled out in Ireland, that a stealth being made by a rebel, or an outlawe, the stolne goods are conveyed to some husbandman or gentleman, which hath well to take to, and yet liveth most by the receipt of such stealthes, where they are found by the owner, and handled: whereupon the partie is perhaps apprehended and committed to goal, or put upon sureties, till the sessions, at which time the owner preferring a bill of indictment, proveth sufficiently the stealth to have bene committed upon him, by such an outlaw, and to have bene found in the possession of the prisoner, against whom, neverthesse, no course of law can proceede, nor tryall can be had, for that the principall theife is not to be gotten, notwithstanding that he likewise, standing perhaps indicted at once, with the receiver, being in rebellion, or in the woods: where peradventure he is slaine before he can be gotten, and so the receiver cleane acquitted and discharged of the crime. By which meanes the theeves are greatly encouraged to steale, and their maintainers imboldened to receive their stealthes, knowing how hardly they can be brought to any tryall of law.

*Eudox.* Truly this is a great inconvenience, and a great cause (as you say) of the maintenance of theeves, knowing their receivers always ready; for, were there no receivers, there would be no theeves: but this (me seemes) might easily be provided for, by some Act of Parliament, that the receiver being convicted by good proofes might receive his tryall without the principall.

*Iren.* You say very true *Eudox.* but that is almost impossible to be compassed: And herein also you discover another imperfection, in the course of the Common Law, and first ordinance of the realme: for you know that the said Parliament must consist of the peeres, gentlemen, freeholders, and burgesses of that realme itselfe. Now these being perhaps themselves, or the most part of them (as may seeme by their stiffe with-standing of this Act) culpable of this crime, or favourers of their friends, which are such, by whom their kitchins are sometimes amended, will not suffer any such Statute to passe. Yet hath it oftentimes bene attempted, and in the time of Sir John Parrot very earnestly (I remember) laboured, but could by no meanes be effected. And not onely this, but many

other like, which are as needefull for the reformation of that realme.

*Eudox.* This also is surely a great defect, but we may not talke (you say) of the redressing of this, untill our second part come, which is purposely appointed therunto. Therefore proceed to the recounting of more such evils, if at least, you have any more.

*Iren.* There is also a great inconvenience, which hath wrought great dammage, both to her Majesty, and to that common wealth, thorough close and colourable conveyances of the lands and goods of traytors, fellows, and fugitives. As when one of them mindeth to goe into rebellion, hee will convey away all his lands and lordships to feoffees in trust, wherby he reserveth to himselfe but a state for terme of life, which being determined either by the sword or by the halter, their lands straight cometh to their heire, and the Queen is defrauded of the intent of the law, which laide that grievous punishment upon traytors, to forfeite all their lands to the Prince; to the end that men might the rather be terrified from committing treasons; for many which would little esteeme of their owne lives, yet for remorse of their wives and children would bee withheld from that haynous crime. This appeared plainly in the late Earle of Desmond. For, before his breaking forth into open rebellion, hee had conveyed secretly all his lands to feoffees of trust, in hope to have cut off her Maiestie from the escheate of his lands.

*Eudox.* Yea, but that was well enough avoided; for the Act of Parliament, which gave all his lands to the Queene, did (as I have heard) cut off and frustrate all such conveyances, as had at any time by the space of twelve yeares before his rebellion, bene made; within the compasse whereof, the fraudulent feoffement, and many the like of others his accomplices and fellow-traytors, were contained.

*Iren.* Very true, but how hardly that Act of Parliament was wrought out of them, I can witness; and, were it to be passed againe, I dare undertake it would never be compassed. But were it also that such Acts might be easily brought to passe against traytors and fellows, yet were it not an endlesse trouble, that no traytour or fellow should be attained, but a Parliament must be called for bringing of his lands to the Queene, which the Common-Law giveth her.

*Eudox.* Then this is no fault of the Common Law, but of the persons which worke this fraud to her Majesty.

*Iren.* Yes, marry; for the Common-Law hath left them this benefite, whereof they make advantage, and wrest it to their bad purposes. So as thereby they are the bolder to enter into evill actions, knowing that if the worst befall them, they shall lose nothing but themselves, whereof they seeme surely very carelesse.

*Eudox.* But what meant you of fugitives herein? Or how doth this concerne them?

*Iren.* Yes, very greatly, for you shall understand that there bee many ill disposed and undutifull persons of that realme, like as in this point there are also in this realme of England too many, which being men of good inheritance, are for dislike o religion, or danger of the law, into which they are run, or discontent of the present government, fled beyond the seas, where they live under Princes, which are her Maiesties professed enemies, and

\* cowes and garrons] *Garran* is an Erse word; still retained in Scotland, say Dr. Johnson. It means a *strong* or *hackney horse*. *TODD.*

converse and are confederat with other traitors and fugitives which are there abiding. The which nevertheless have the benefits and profits of their lands here, by pretence of such colourable conveyances thereof, formerly made by them unto their privie friends heere in trust, who privly doe send over unto them the said revenues wherwith they are there maintained and enabled against her Majestie.

*Eudox.* I doe not thinke that there be any such fugitives, which are relieved by the profite of their lands in England, for there is a straighter order taken. And if there bee any such in Ireland, it were good it were likewise looked unto; for this evil may easily be remedied. But proceede.

*Iren.* It is also inconvenient in the realme of Ireland, that the wards and marriages of gentlemen children should be in the disposition of any of those Irish Lords, as now they are, by reason that their lands bee held by knights service of those Lords. By which means it comes to passe that those gentlemen being thus in the ward of those Lords, are not onely thereby \*brought up lewdly, and Irish-like, but also for ever after so bound to their services, they will runne with them into any disloyall action.

*Eudox.* This grievance Iren. is also complained of in England, but how can it be remedied? since the service must follow the tenure of the lands, and the lands were given away by the Kings of England to those Lords, when they first conquered that realme, and, to say troth, this also would be some prejudice to the Prince in her wardshippes.

*Iren.* I doe not meane this by the Princes wards, but by such as fall into the hands of Irish Lords; for I could wish, and this I could enforce, that all those wardshippes were in the Princes disposition, for then it might be hoped, that she, for the universall reformation of that realme, would take better order for bringing up those wards in good nrture, and not suffer them to come into so bad hands. And although these things be already passed away, by her progenitours former grants unto those said Lords; yet I could finde a way to remedie a great part thereof, as hereafter, when fit time serves, shall appeare. And since we are entred into speech of such grants of former Princes, to sundry persons of this realme of Ireland, I will mention unto you some other, of like nature to this, and of like inconvenience, by which the former Kings of England passed unto them a great part of their prerogatives, which though then it was well intended, and perhaps well deserved of them which received the same, yet now such a gapp of mischeife lyes open thereby, that I could wish it were well stopped. Of this sort are the graunts of Counties Palatines in Ireland, which though at first were granted upon good consideration when they were first conquered, for that those lands lay then as a very border to the wild Irish, subject to continuall invasion, so as it was needfull to give them great priviledges for the defence of the inhabitants thereof: yet now that it is no more a border, nor frontired with enemies, why should such priviledges bee any more continued?

*Eudox.* I would gladly know what you call a County Palatine, and whence it is so called.

*Iren.* It was (I suppose) first named Palatine of a pale, as it were a pale and defense to their inward

lands, so as it is called the English Pale, and therefore is a Palsgrave named an Earle Palatine. Others thinke of the Latine, *palare*, that is, to forage or out-run, because those marchers and horderers use commonly so to doe. So as to have a County Palatine is, in effect, to have a priviledge to spoyle the enemies horders adjoining. And surely so it is used at this day, as a priviledge place of spoiles and stealthes; for the County of Tipperary, which is now the onely Countie Palatine in Ireland, is, by abuse of some bad ones, made a receptacle to rob the rest of the Counties about it, by meanes of whose priviledges none will follow their stealthes, so as it being situate in the very lap of all the land, is made now a border, which how inconvenient it is, let every man judge. And though that right noble man, that is the Lord of the liberty, do paine himselfe, all he may, to yeeld equall justice unto all, yet can there not but great abuses lurke in so inward and absolute a priviledge, the consideration whereof is to be respected carefully, for the next succession. And much like unto this graunt, there are other priviledges granted unto most of the corporations there: that they shal not be bound to any other government then their owne, that they shal not be charged with garrisons, that they shal not be travailed forth of their owne franchises, that they may buy and sell with theeves and rebels, that all amercements and fines that shal be imposed upon them, shall come unto themselves. All which, though at the time of their first graunt they were tollerable, and perhaps reasonable, yet now are most unreasonable and inconvenient, but all these will easily be cut off with the superiour power of her Majesties prerogative, against which her own graunts are not to be pleaded or enforced.

*Eudox.* Now truly Irenæus you have (me seemes) very well handled this point, touching inconveniences in the Common Law there, by you observed; and it seemeth that you have had a mindfull regard unto the things that may concerne the good of that realme. And if you can aswell goe thorough with the Statute Lawes of that land, I will thinke you have not lost all your time there. Therefore I pray you, now take them in hand, and tell us, what you thinke to bee amisse in them.

*Iren.* The Statutes of that realme are not many, and therefore we shall the sooner runne thorough them. And yet of those few there are [some] impertinent and unnecessary: the which though perhaps at the time of the making of them, were very needfull, yet now thorough change of time are cleane antiquated, and altogether idle: As that which forbiddeth any to weare their heards all on the upper lippe, and none under the chime. And that which putteth away saffron shirts and smokes. And that which restraineth the use of guilt bridles and \*petronels. And that which is appointed for the recorders and clerks of Dublin and Tredagh, to take but ijd. for the copy of a plainte. And that which commaunds bowes and arrowes. And that which makes, that all Irishmen which shall converse among the English, shall be taken for spyes, and so punished. And that which forbids persons amesable to law, to enter and distraine in the

\* *petronels.*] See Cotgrave's Fr. Dict. "*Petrinal*, a horse-mans peece, a *petronell*." Hence the soldier, who served with a *petronell*, was called *poitrinatier*. It appears to have been much the same as our *blunderbuss*. TODD.

\* brought up lewdly.] Ignorantly. TODD.

lands in which they have title ; and many other the like, I could rehearse.

*Eudox.* These truly, which yee have repeated, seeme very frivolous and fruitlesse ; for, by the breach of them, little dammage or inconvenience, can come to the Common-wealth : Neither indeed, if any transgresse them, shall he seeme worthy of punishment, scarce of blame, saving but for that they abide by that name of lawes. But lawes ought to be such, as that the keeping of them should be greatly for the behoofe of the Common-weale, and the violating of them should be very haynous, and sharply punishable. But tell us of some more weighty dislikes in the Statutes then these, and that may more behoofully import the reformation of them.

*Iren.* There is one or two Statutes which make the wrongfull distraining of any mans goods against the forme of Common Law, to be felony. The which Statutes seeme surely to have bene at first meant for the good of that realme, and for restrayning of a foule abuse, which then raigned commonly amongst that people, and yet is not altogether laide aside : That when any one was indebted to another, he would first demand his debt, and, if he were not payed, hee would straight goe and take a distresse of his goods or cattell, where he could finde them, to the value ; which he would keepe till he were satisfied, and this the simple churle (as they call him) doth commonly use to doe ; yet thorough ignorance of his misdoing, or evil use, that hath long settled amongst them. But this, though it be sure most unlawfull, yet surely (me seemes) too hard to make it death, since there is no purpose in the party to steale the others goods, or to conceal the distresse, but doth it openly, for the most part, before witnesses. And againe, the same Statutes are so slackely penned (besides the later of them is so unsensibly contryved, that it scarce carryeth any reason in it) that they are often and very easily wrested to the fraude of the subject, as if one going to distrayne upon his own land or tenement, where lawfully he may, yet if in doing thereof he transgresse the least point of the Common Law, hee straight committeth felony. Or if one by any other occasion take any thing from another, as boyes use sometimes to cap one another, the same is straight felony. This is a very hard law.

*Eudox.* Nevertheles that evil use of distrayning of another mans goods yee will not deny but it is to be abolished and taken away.

*Iren.* It is so, but not by taking away the subject withall, for that is too violent a medecine, especially this use being permitted, and made lawfull to some ; and to other some death. As to most of the corporate townes there, it is granted by their charter, that they may, every man by himselfe, without an officer (for that were more tolerable) for any debt, to distraine the goods of any Irish, being found within their liberty, or but passing thorough their townes. And the first permission of this, was for that in those times when that graunt was made, the Irish were not amesnable to law, so as it was not safety for the townes-man to goe to him forth to demand his debt, nor possible to draw him into law, so that he had leave to bee his owne bayliffe, to arrest his said debtors goods, within his owne franchise. The which the Irish seeing, thought it as lawfull for them to distrayne the townes-mans goods in the countrey, where they found it. And

so by ensample of that graunt to townes-men, they thought it lawfull and made it a use to distrayne on anothers goods for small debts. And to say truth, mee thinkes it is hard for every trifling debt, of two or three shill. to be driven to law, which is so farre from them sometimes to be sought, for which me thinketh it too heavy an ordinance to give death, especially to a rude man that is ignorant of law, and thinketh, that a common use or graunt to other men, is a law for himselfe.

*Eudox.* Yea, but the iudge, when it commeth before him to triall, may easily decide this doubt, and lay open the intent of the law, by his better discretion.

*Iren.* Yea, but it is dangerous to leave the sence of the law unto the reason or will of the iudge, who are men and may bee miscaried by affections, and many other meanes. But the lawes ought to bee like stony tables, plaine, stedfast, and unmoveable. There is also such another Statute or two, which make Coigny and Livery to bee treasou, no lesse inconvenient then the former, being as it is penned, how ever the first purpose thereof were expedient ; for thereby now no man can goe into another mans house for lodging, nor to his owne tennants house to take victual by the way, notwithstanding that there is no other meanes for him to have lodging, nor horse meate, nor mans meate, there being no innes, nor none otherwise to bee bought for money, but that he is endangered by that Statute for treason, whensoever he shall happen to fall out with his tennant, or that his said hoste list to complaine of greivance, as oftentimes I have seene them very maliciously doe thorough the least provocation.

*Eudox.* I doe not well know, but by ghesse, what you doe meane by these termes of Coigny and Livery, therefore I pray you explaine them.

*Iren.* I know not whether the words bee English or Irish, but I suppose them to bee rather auncient English, for the Irishmen can make no derivation of them. What Livery is, wee by common use in England know well enough, namely, that it is allowance of horse-meate, as they commonly use the word in stabling, as to keepe horses at livery, the which word, I guesse, is derived of livering or delivering forth their nightly foode. So in great houses, the livery is said to be served up for all night, that is their evenings allowance for drinke : And Livery is also called, the upper weede which a serving man weareth, so called (as I suppose) for that it was delivered and taken from him at pleasure : so it is apparent, that, by the word Livery, is there meant horse-meate, like as, by the word Coigny, is understood mans meate ; but whence the word is derived is hard to tell : some say of coine, for that they used commonly in their Coignies, not onely to take meate, but coine also ; and that taking of money was speciallie meant to be prohibited by that Statute : but I thinke rather this word Coigny is derived of the Irish. The which is a common use amongst land-lords of the Irish, to have a common spending upon their tennants : for all their tennants, being commonly but tenants at will, they use to take of them what victuals they list : for of victuals they were wont to make small reckoning : neither in this was the tennant wronged, for it was an ordinary and knowne custome, and his Lord commonly used so to covenant with him, which if at any time the tennant disliked, hee might freely depart at his pleasure. But now by this Statute.

the said Irish Lord is wronged, for that hee is cut off from his customary services, of the which this was one, besides many other of the like, as Cuddy, Coshery, Bonnaght, Shrah, Sorehin, and such others: the which (I thinke) were customes at first brought in by the English upon the Irish, for they were never wont, and yet are loath to yeeld any certaine rent, but only such spendings: for their common saying is, "Spend me and defend me."

*Eudox.* Surely I take it as you say, that therein the Irish Lord hath wrong, since it was an auncient custome, and nothing contrary to law, for to the willing there is no wrong done. And this right well I wot, that even heere in England, there are in many places as large customes, as that of Coignie and Livery. But I suppose by your speach, that it was the first meaning of the Statute, to forbid the violent taking of victualls upon other mens tenants, against their wills, which surely is a great out-rage, and yet not so great (me seemes) as that it should be made treason: for considering that the nature of treason is concerning the royall estate or person of the Prince, or practizing with his enemies, to the derogation and danger of his crowne and dignitie, it is hardly wrested to make this treason. But (as you earst said) "better a mischief then an inconvenience."

*Iren.* Another Statute I remember, which having bene an auncient Irish custome, is now upon advisement made a law, and that is called the Custome of Kin-cogish, which is, that every head of every sept, and every chiefe of every kindred or family, should be answerable and bound to bring forth every one of that sept and kindred under it, at all times to be iustified, when he should be required or charged with any treason, felony, or other haynous crime.

*Eudox.* Why? surely this seemes a very necessary law. For considering that many of them bee such losells and scatterlings, as that they cannot easily by any sheriffe, constable, bayliffe, or other ordinary officer bee gotten, when they are challenged for any such fact; this is a very good meanes to get them to bee brought in by him, that is, the head of that sept, or chiefe of that house; wherefore I wonder what just exception you can make against the same.

*Iren.* Truly Endoxus, in the pretence of the good of this Statute, you have nothing erred, for it seemeth very expedient and necessary; but the hurt which commeth thereby is greater then the good. For, whilst every chiefe of a sept standeth so bound to the law for every man of his blood or sept that is under him, he is made great by the commanding of them all. For if hee may not commaund them, then that law doth wrong, that bindeth him to bring them forth to bee iustified. And if hee may commaund them, then hee may commaund them aswell to ill as to good. Hereby the lords and captaines of countreyes, the principall and heades of septs are made stronger, whome it should bee a most speciall care in policie to weaken, and to set up and strengthen diverse of his underlings against him, which whensoever he shall swarve from duty, may bee able to beard him; for it is very dangerous to leave the commaund of so many as some septs are, being five or sixe thousand persons, to the will of one man, who may leade them to what he will, as hee himselfe shall be inclined.

*Eudox.* In very deede Iren. it is very dangerous,

seeing the disposition of those people is not alwayes inclinable to the best. And therefore I holde it no wisdome to leave unto them too much commaund over their kindred, but rather to withdrawe their followers from them asmuch as may bee, and to gather them under the commaund of law, by some better meane then this custome of Kin-cogish. The which word I would bee glad to know what it namely signifieth, for the meaning thereof I seeme to understand reasonably well.

*Iren.* It is a word mingled of English and Irish together, so as I am partly ledde to thinke, that the custome thereof was first English, and afterwarde made Irish; for such an other law they had heere in England, as I remember, made by King Alured, that every gentleman should bring forth his kindred and followers to the law. So \* Kin is English, and Congish affinitie in Irish.

*Eudox.* Sith then wee that have thus reasonably handled the inconveniences in the lawes, let us now passe unto the second part, which was, I remember, of the abuses of customes; in which, mee seemes, you have a faire champian layde open unto you, in which you may at large stretch out your discourse into many sweete remembrances of antiquities, from whence it seemeth that the customes of that nation proceeded.

*Iren.* Indeede Eudox. you say very true; for all the customes of the Irish which I have often noted and compared with that I have read, would minister occasion of a most ample discourse of the originall of them, and the antiquity of that people, which in truth I thinke to bee more auncient then most that I know in this end of the world, so as if it were in the handling of some man of sound judgement and plentiful reading, it would bee most pleasant and profitable. But it may bee we may, at some other time of meeting, take occasion to treate thereof more at large. Heere onely it shall suffice to touch such customes of the Irish as seeme offensive and repugnant to the good government of the realme.

*Eudox.* Follow then your owne course, for I shall the better content my selfe to forbear my desire now, in hope that you will, as you say, some other time more abundantly satisfie it.

*Iren.* Before we enter into the treate of their customes, it is first needfull to consider from whence they first sprung; for from the sundry manners of the nations, from whence that people which now is called Irish, were derived, some of the customes which now remain amongst them, have been first fetcht, and sithence there continued amongst them; for not of one nation was it peopled, as it is, but of sundry people of different conditions and manners. But the chiefeest which have first possessed and inhabited it, I suppose to bee Scythians.

*Eudox.* How commeth it then to passe, that the Irish doe derive themselves from Gathelus the Spaniard?

*Iren.* They doe indeed, but (I conceive) without any good ground. For if there were any such notable transmission of a colony hether out of Spaine, or any such famous conquest of this kingdom by Gathelus a Spaniard, as they would faine believe, it is not unlikely, but the very Chronicles of Spaine (had Spaine then bene in so high regard,

\* Kin is English, and Congish affinitie in Irish.] I conceive the word to be rather altogether Irish. Kin signifying in Irish, the head or chiefe of any septs. SIR JAMES WARR.



as they now have it) would not have omitted so memorable a thing, as the subduing of so noble a realme to the Spaniard, no more then they doe now neglect to memorize their conquest of the Indians, especially in those times, in which the same was supposed, being nearer unto the flourishing age of learning and writers under the Romanes. But the Irish doe heerein no otherwise, then our vaine English-men doe in the Tale of Brutus, whom they devise to have first conquered and inhabited this land, it being as impossible to proove, that there was ever any such Brutus of Albion or England, as it is, that there was any such Gathelus of Spaine. But surely the Scythians (of whom I earst spoke) at such time as the Northerne Nations overflowed all Christendome, came downe to the seacoast, where inquiring for other countries abroad, and getting intelligence of this country of Ireland, finding shipping convenient, passed thither, and arrived in the North-part thereof, which is now called Ulster, which first inhabiting, and afterwards stretching themselves forth into the land, as their numbers increased, named it all of themselves Scuttenland, which more briefly is called Scutland, or Scotland.

*Eudox.* I wonder (Irenaeus) whether you runne so farre astray ; for whilst wee talke of Ireland, mee thinks you rippe up the originall of Scotland, but what is that to this ?

*Iren.* Surely very much, for Scotland and Ireland, are all one and the same.

*Eudox.* That seemeth more strange ; for we all know right well they are distinguished with a great sea running between them ; or else there are two Scotlands.

*Iren.* Never the more are there two Scotlands, but two kindes of Scots were indeed (as you may gather out of Buchanan) the one Irin, or Irish Scots, the other Albin-Scots ; for those Scots are Scythians, arrived (as I said) in the North parts of Ireland, where some of them after passed into the next coast of Albine, now called Scotland, which (after much trouble) they possessed, and of themselves named Scotland ; but in processe of time (as it is commonly seene) the dominion of the part prevaileth in the whole, for the Irish Scots putting away the name of Scots, were called only Irish, and the Albine Scots, leaving the name of Albine, were called only Scots. Therefore it commeth thence that of some writers, Ireland is called Scotia-major, and that which now is called Scotland, Scotiaminor.

*Eudox.* I doe now well understand your distinguishing of the two sorts of Scots, and two Scotlands, how that this which now is called Ireland, was anciently called Erin, and afterwards of some written Scotland, and that which now is called Scotland, was formerly called Albin, before the coming of the Scythes thither ; but what other nation inhabited the other parts of Ireland ?

*Iren.* After this people thus planted in the North, (or before,) for the certaintie of times in things so farre from all knowledge cannot be justly avouched, another nation coming out of Spaine, arrived in the West part of Ireland, and finding it waste, or weakly inhabited, possessed it : who whether they were native Spaniards, or Gauls, or Africans, or Gothes, or some other of those Northerne Nations which did over-spread all Christendome, it is impossible to affirme, only some naked conjectures

may be gathered, but that out of Spaine certainly they came, that do all the Irish Chronicles agree.

*Eudox.* You doe very boldly Iren. adventure upon the histories of auncient times, and leane too confidently on those Irish Chronicles which are most fabulous and forged, in that out of them you dare take in hand to lay open the originall of such a nation so antique, as that no monument remaines of her beginning and first inhabiting ; especially having been in those times without letters, but only bare traditions of times and remembraunces of Bardes, which use to forge and falsifie every thing as they list, to please or displease any man.

*Iren.* Truly I must confess I doe so, but yet not so absolutely as you suppose. I do herein rely upon those Bardes or Irish Chroniclers, though the Irish themselves through their ignorance in matters of learning and deepe judgement, doe most constantly beleeve and avouch them, but unto them besides I adde mine owne reading ; and out of them both together, with comparison of times, likewise of manners and customes, affinity of words and names, properties of natures, and uses, resemblances of rites and ceremonies, monuments of churches and tombes, and many other like circumstances, I doe gather a likelihood of truth, not certainly affirming any thing, but by conferring of times, language, monuments, and such like, I doe hunt out a probability of things, which I leave to your judgement to believe or refuse. Nevertheless there be some very auncient authors that make mention of these things, and some moderne, which by comparing them with present times, experience, and their owne reason, doe open a window of great light unto the rest that is yet unseene, as namely, of the elder times, Caesar, Strabo, Tacitus, Ptolomie, Pliny, Pomponius Mela, and Berosus : of the later, Vincentius, Aeneas Sylvius, Luidus, Buchanan, for that hee himselfe, being an Irish Scot or Piet by nation, and being very excellently learned, and industrious to seeke out the truth of all things concerning the originall of his owne people, hath both set downe the testimony of the auncents truly, and his owne opinion together withall very reasonably, though in some things he doth somewhat flatter. Besides, the Bardes and Irish Chroniclers themselves, though through desire of pleasing perhappes too much, and ignorances of arts, and purer learning, they have clouded the truth of those lines ; yet there appeares among them some reliques of the true antiquitie, though disguised, which a well eyed man may happily discover and finde out.

*Eudox.* How can here be any truth in them at all, since the auncient nations which first inhabited Ireland, were altogether destitute of letters, much more of learning, by which they might leave the verity of things written. And those Bardes, coming also so many hundred yeares after, could not know what was done in former ages, nor deliver certainty of any thing, but what they fayned out of their unlearned heads.

*Iren.* \* Those Bardes indeed, Caesar writeth, delivered no certaine truth of any thing, neither is

\* Those Bardes indeed, Caesar writeth, Concerning them I finde no mention in Caesar's Commentaries, but much touching the Druides, which were the priests and philosophers, (or Magi as \* Pliny calls them) of the Gauler and British. SIR JAMES WARE.

there any certaine hold to be taken of any antiquity which is received by tradition, since all men be lyars, and many lye when they wil ; yet for the antiquities of the written Chronicles of Ireland, give me leave to say something, not to justify them, but to shew that some of them might say truth. For where you say the Irish have alwayes bin without letters, you are therein much deceived ; for it is certaine, that Ireland hath had the use of letters very anciently, and long before England.

*Eudox.* Is it possible ! how comes it then that they are so unlearned still, being so old schollers ? For learning (as the Poet saith) "Emollit mores, nec sinit esse ferus : " whence then (I pray you) could they have those letters ?

*Iren.* It is hard to say : for whether they at their first coming into the land, or afterwards by trading with other nations which had letters, learned them of them, or devised them amongst themselves, is very doubtful ; but that they had letters anciently, is nothing doubtful, for the Saxons of England are said to have their letters, and learning, and learned men from the Irish, and that also appeareth by the likeness of the character, for the Saxons character is the same with the Irish. Now the Scythians, never, as I can reade, of old had letters amongst them, therefore it seemeth that they had them from the nation which came out of Spaine, for in Spaine there was (as Strabo writeth) letters anciently used, whether brought unto them by the Phenicians, or the Persians, which (as it appeareth by him) had some footing there, or from Marsellis, which is said to have bin inhabited by the Greekes, and from them to have had the Greeke character, of which Marsilians it is said, that the Gaules learned them first, and used them only for the furtherance of their trades and privat busines ; for the Gaules (as is strongly to be proved by many ancient and authenticall writers) did first inhabite all the sea coast of Spaine, even unto Cales, and the mouth of the Straights, and peopled also a great part of Italy, which appeareth by sundry havens and cities in Spaine called from them, as Portugallia, Gallecia, Galdunum, and also by sundry nations therein dwelling, which yet have received their owne names of the Gaules, as the Rheni, Presamarci, Tamari, Cineri, and divers others. All which Pomponius Mela, being himselfe a Spaniard, yet saith to have descended from the Celts of France, whereby it is to be gathered, that that nation which came out of Spaine into Ireland, were anciently Gaules, and that they brought with them those letters which they had anciently learned in Spaine, first into Ireland, which some also say, doe much resemble the old Phenician character, being likewise distinguished with pricke and accent, as theirs anciently, but the further enquire hereof needeth a place of longer discourse then this our short conference.

*Eudox.* Surely you have shewed a great probability of that which I had thought impossible to have bin proved ; but that which you now say, that Ireland should have bin peopled with the Gaules, seemeth much more strauge, for all the Chronicles doe say, that the west and south was possessed and inhabited of Spaniards : and Cornelius Tacitus doth also strongly affirme the same, all which you must overthrow and falsifie, or else renounce your opinion.

*Iren.* Neither so, nor so ; for the Irish Chronicles

(as I shewed you) being made by unlearned men, and writing things according to the appearance of the truth which they conceived, doe erre in the circumstances, not in the matter. For all that came out of Spaine (they being no diligent searchers into the differences of the nations) supposed to be Spaniards, and so called them ; but the ground-work thereof is nevertheless true and certain, however they through ignorance disguise the same, or through vanity, whilst they would not seem to be ignorant, doe thereupon build and enlarge many forged histories of their owne antiquity, which they deliver to fooles, and make them believe for true ; as for example, That first of one Gathelus the sonne of Cecrops or Argos, who having married the King of Egypt his daughter, thence sailed with her into Spaine, and there inhabited : Then that of Nemedus and his sonnes, who coming out of Scythia, peopled Ireland, and inhabited it with his sonnes 250 yeares, until he was overcome of the Giants dwelling then in Ireland, and at the last quite banished and rooted out, after whom 200 yeares, the sonnes of one Dela, being Scythians, arrived there againe, and possessed the whole land, of which the youngest called Slanius, in the end made himselfe Monarch. Lastly, of the 4 sonnes of Milesius King of Spaine, which conquered the land from the Scythians, and inhabited it with Spaniards, and called it of the name of the youngest Hiberus, Hibernia : all which are in truth fables, and very Milesian lyes, as the later proverbe is : for never was there such a King of Spaine, called Milesius, nor any such colonie seated with his sonnes, as they faine, that can ever be proved ; but yet under these tales you may in a maoner see the truth lurke. For Scythians here inhabiting, they name and put Spaniards, whereby appeareth that both these nations here inhabited, but whether very Spaniards, as the Irish greatly affect, is no wayes to be proved.

*Eudox.* Whence commeth it then that the Irish doe so greatly covet to fetch themselves from the Spaniards, since the old Gaules are a more ancient and much more honorable nation ?

*Iren.* Even of a very desire of new fanglens and vanity, for they derive themselves from the Spaniards, as seeing them to be a very honorable people, and neere bordering unto them : but all that is most vaine ; for from the Spaniards that now are, or that people that now inhabite Spaine, they no wayes can prove themselves to descend ; neither should it be greatly glorious unto them ; for the Spaniard that now is, is come from as rude and savage nations as they, there being, as there may be gathered by course of ages, and view of their owne history, (though they therein labour much to enoble themselves) scarce any drop of the old Spanish blood left in them ; for all Spaine was first conquered by the Romans, and filled with colonies from them, which were still increased, and the native Spaniard still cut off. Afterwards the Carthaginians in all the long Punick Warres (having spoiled all Spaine, and in the end subdued it wholly unto themselves) did, as it is likely, root out all that were affected to the Romans. And lastly the Romans having againe recovered that countrey, and beate out Hannibal, did doubtlesse cut off all that favored the Carthaginians, so that betwixt them both, to and fro, there was scarce a native Spaniard left, but all inhabited of Romans. All which temnests of troubles

being over-blowne, there long after arose a new storme, more dreadful then all the former, which over-ran all Spaine, and made an infinite confusion of all things; that was, the coming downe of the Gothes, the Hunnes, and the Vandals: And lastly all the nations of Scythia, which, like a mountaine flood, did over-flowe all Spaine, and quite drowned and washt away whatsoever reliques there was left of the land-bred people, yea, and of all the Romans too. The which Northern Nations finding the nature of the soyle and the vehement heat thereof farre differing from their constitutions, tooke no felicity in that countrey, but from thence passed over, and did spread themselves into all countreies of Christendome, of all which there is none but hath some mixture or sprinkling, if not throughly peopling of them. And yet after all these the Moores and the Barbarians, breaking over out of Africa, did finally possesse all Spaine, or the most part thereof, and did tread, under their heathenish feete, whatever little they found yet there standing. The which, though after they were beaten out by Ferdinando of Arragon and Elizabeth his wife, yet they were not so cleansed, but that through the marriages which they had made, and mixture with the people of the land, during their long continuance there, they had left no pure drop of Spanish blood, no more than of Roman or of Scythian. So that of all nations under heaven (I suppose) the Spaniard is the most mingled, and most uncertaine; wherefore most foolishly doe the Irish thinke to enoble themselves by wresting their auncientry from the Spaniard, who is unable to derive himselfe from any in certaine.

*Eudox.* You speake very sharpely Iren. in dispraise of the Spaniard, whom some others boast to be the only brave nation under the skie.

*Iren.* So surely he is a very brave man, neither is that any thing which I speake to his derogation; in that I said he is a mingled people, it is no dispraise, for I thinke there is no nation now in Christendome, nor much further, but is mingled, and compounded with others: for it was a singular providence of God, and a most admirable purpose of his wisdom, to draw those Northerne Heathen Nations downe into those Christian parts, where they might receive Christianity, and to mingle nations so remote miraculously, to make as it were one blood and kindred of all people, and each to have knowledge of him.

*Eudox.* Neither have you sure any more dishonoured the Irish, for you have brought them from very great and ancient nations, as any were in the world, how ever fondly they affect the Spanish. For both Scythians and Gaules were two as mighty nations as ever the world brought forth. But is there any token, denomination or monument of the Gaules yet remaining in Ireland, as there is of the Scythians?

*Iren.* Yea surely very many words of the Gaules remaining, and yet daily used in common speech.

*Eudox.* What was the Gaulish speech, is there any part of it still used among any nation?

*Iren.* The Gaulish speech is the very British, the which was very generally used here in all Brittain, before the coming of the Saxons: and yet is retained of the Welchmen, Cornishmen, and the Brittaines of France, though time working the alteration of all things, and the trading and interdeale with other nations round about, have changed

and greatly altered the dialect thereof; but yet the original words appeare to be the same, as who hath list to read in Camden and Buchanan, may see at large. Besides, there be many places, as havens, hills, townes, and castles, which yet beare the names from the Gaules, of the which Buchanan rehearseth above 500 in Scotland, and I can (I thinke) recount neere as many in Ireland which retain the old denomination of the Gaules, as the Menapii, Cauci, Venti, and others: by all which and many other reasonable probabilities (which this short course will not suffer to be laid forth) it appeareth that the cheife inhabitants in Ireland were Gaules, coming thither first out of Spaine, and after from besides Tanais, where the Gothes, the Hunnes, and the Getes sate down; they also being (as it is said of some ancient Gaules; and lastly passing out of Gallia it selfe, from all the sea-coast of Belgia and Celtica, into all the southerne coasts of Ireland, which they possessed and inhabited, whereupon it is at this day, amongst the Irish a common use, to call any stranger inhabitant there amongst them, Gald, that is, descended from the Gaules.

*Eudox.* This is very likely, for even so did those Gaules anciently possesse all the southerne coasts of our Brittain, which yet retain their old names, as the Belgæ in Somersetshire, Wiltshire, and part of Hamshire, Atrebatii in Berkeshire, Regni in Sussex and Surry, and many others. Now thus farre then, I understand your opinion, that the Scythians planted in the North part of Ireland; the Spaniards (for so we call them, what ever they were that came from Spaine) in the West; the Gaules in the South: so that there now remaineth the East parts towards England, which I would be glad to understand from whence you doe think them to be peopled.

*Iren.* Mary I thinke of the Brittaines themselves, of which though there be little footing now remaining, by reason that the Saxons afterwards, and lastly the English, driving out the inhabitants thereof, did possesse and people it themselves. Yet amongst the Tooloes, the Birns, or Brins, the Cavenaghes, and other nations in Leinster, there is some memory of the Britans remainyng. As the Tooloes are called of the old British word Tol, that is, a Hill Countrey, the Brins of the British word Brin, that is, Woods, and the Cavenaghes of the word Caune, that is, strong; so that in these three people the very denomination of the old Britons doe still remaine. Besides, when any flieth under the succour and protection of any against an enemie, he cryeth unto him, Comerickie, that is in the British Helpe, for the Brittainie is called in their owne language, Comeroy. Furthermore to prove the same, \*Ireland is by Diodorus Siculus, and by Strabo, called Britannia, and a part of Great Brittain. Finally it appeareth by good record yet extant, that King Arthur, and before him Gurgunt, had all that iland under their allegiance and subjection; hereunto I could add many probabilities of the names of places, persons, and speeches, as I did in the former, but they should be too long for this, and I reserve them for another. And thus

\* Ireland is by Diodorus Siculus, and by Strabo, called Britannia.] Iris is by Diodorus called a part of Brittain: but Ireland by neither of them Britannia. SIR JAMES WARE.

you have had my opinion, how all that realme of Ireland was first peopled, and by what nations. After all which the Saxons succeeding, subdued it wholly to themselves. For first Eggrid, King of Northumberland, did utterly waste and subdue it, as appeareth out of Beda's complaint against him; and after him, King Edgar brought it under his obedience, as appeareth by an auncient Record, in which it is found written, that he subdued all the islands of the North, even unto Norway, and brought them into his subjection.

*Eudox.* \*This ripping of auncestors, is very pleasing unto me, and indeede savoureth of good conceipt, and some reading withall. I see hereby how profitable travaile, and experience of forraigne nations, is to him that will apply them to good purpose. Neither indeede would I have thought, that any such antiquities could have beene avouched for the Irish, that maketh me the more to long to see some other of your observations, which you have gathered out of that country, and have earst half promised to put forth: and sure in this mingling of nations appeareth (as you earst well noted) a wonderfull providence and purpose of Almighty God, that stirred up the people in the furthest parts of the world, to seeke out their regions so remote from them, and by that means both to restore their decayed habitations, and to make himselfe knowne to the Heathen. But was there I pray you no more generall employing of that iland, then first by the Scythians, which you say were the Scottes, and afterwards by the Spaniards, besides the Gaules, Brittaines, and Saxons?

*Iren.* Yes, there was another, and that last and greatest, which was by the English, when the Earle Strangbowe, having conquered that land, delivered up the same into the hands of Henry the second, then King, who sent over thither great store of gentlemen, and other warlike people, amongst whom he distributed the land, and settled such a strong colonie therein, as never since could with all the subtle practices of the Irish be rooted out, but abide still a mighty people, of so many as remaine English of them.

*Eudox.* What is this that you say, of so many as remaine English of them? Why? are not they that were once English, English still?

*Iren.* No, for some of them are degenerated and growne almost mere Irish, yea and more malicious to the English then the Irish themselves.

*Eudox.* What heare I? And is it possible that an Englishman, brought up in such sweet civility as England affords, should find such likeing in that barbarous rudenes, that he should forget his owne nature, and forgoe his owne nation! how may this bee, or what (I pray you) may be the cause thereof?

*Iren.* Surely, nothing but the first evill ordnance and institution of that Common-wealth. But thereof here is no fit place to speake, least by the occasion thereof, offering matter of a long discourse, we might be drawne from this, that we had in hand, namely, the handling of abuses in the customes of Ireland.

*Eudox.* In truth Iren. you doe well remember the plot of your first purpose; but yet from that (me seemes) ye have much swarved in all this long

discourse, of the first inhabiting of Ireland; for what is that to your purpose?

*Iren.* Truly very materiall, for if you marked the course of all that speech well, it was to shew, by what meanes the customes, that now are in Ireland, being some of them indeede very strange and almost heathenish, were first brought in: and that was, as I said, by those nations from whom that country was first peopled; for the difference in manners and customes, doth follow the difference of nations and people. The which I have declared to you, to have beene three especially which seated themselves here: to wit, first the Scythian, then the Gaules, and lastly the English. Notwithstanding that I am not ignorant, that there were sundry nations which got footing in that land, of the which there yet remaine divers great families and septs, of whom I will also in their proper places make mention.

*Eudox.* You bring your selfe Iren. very well into the way againe, notwithstanding that it seemeth that you were never out of the way, but now that you have passed thorough those antiquities, which I could have wished not so soone ended, begin when you please, to declare what customes and manners have beene derived from those nations to the Irish, and which of them you finde fault withall.

*Iren.* I will begin then to count their customes in the same order that I counted their nations, and first with the Scythian or Scottish manners. Of the which there is one use, amongst them, to keepe their cattile, and to live themselves the most part of the yeare in boolies, pasturing upon the mountaine, and waste wilde places; and removing still to fresh land, as they have depastured the former. The which appeareth plaine to be the manner of the Scythians, as you may read in Olaus Magnus, and Io. Bohemus, and yet is used amongst all the Tartarians and the people about the Caspian Sea, which are naturally Scythians, to live in herds as they call them, being the very same, that the Irish boolies are, driving their cattile continually with them, and feeding onely on their milke and white meats.

*Eudox.* What fault can you finde with this custome? for though it be an old Scythian use, yet it is very behoofefull in this country of Ireland, where there are great mountaines, and waste deserts full of grasse, that the same should be eaten downe, and nourish many thousands of cattile, for the good of the whole realme, which cannot (me thinks) well be any other way, then by keeping those boolies there, as yee have shewed.

*Iren.* But by this custome of boolying, there grow in the meane time many great enormities unto that Common-wealth. For first if there be any out-lawes, or loose people, (as they are never without some) which live upon stealthes and spoyles, they are evermore succoured and finde releife only in these boolies, being upon the waste places, whereas else they should be driven shortly to starve, or to come downe to the townes to seeke releife, where by one meanes or other, they would soone be caught. Besides, such stealthes of cattile as they make, they bring commonly to those boolies, being upon those waste places, where they are readily received, and the theife harboured from danger of law, or such officers as might light upon him. Moreover the people that thus live in those boolies, grow thereby the more barbarous, and live more

\* This ripping of auncestors,] This discovery of auncestors &c. Ripping is metaphorically used. To rip, is to break open stitched things. Todd.

licentiously than they could in townes, using what manners they list, and practicing what mischeifes and villainies they will, either against the government there, by their combynations, or against private men, whom they maligne, by stealing their goods, or murdering themselves. For there they thinke themselves halfe exempted from law and obedience, and having once tasted freedome, doe like a steere, that hath beene long out of his yoke, grudge and repyne ever after, to come under rule again.

*Eudox.* By your speech Iren. I perceive more evill come by this use of booties, then good by their grasing; and therefore it may well be reformed: but that must be in his due course: do you proceed to the next.

*Iren.* They have another custome from the Scythians, that is the wearing of Mantles, \*and long gibbles, which is a thicke curled bush of haire, banging downe over their eyes, and monstrously disguising them, which are both very bad and hurtfull.

*Eudox.* Doe you thinke that the mantle cometh from the Scythians? I would surely thinke otherwise, for by that which I have read, it appeareth that most nations of the world aunciently used the mantle. For the Iewes used it, as you may read of Elyas mantle, &c. The Chaldees also used it, as yee may read in Diodorus. The Egyptians, likewise used it, as yee may read in Herodotus, and may be gathered by the description of Berenice, in the Greeke Commentary upon Callimachus. The Greekes also used it aunciently, as appeareth by Venus mantle lyned with stars, though afterwards they changed the form thereof into their cloakes, called Pallia, as some of the Irish also use. And the auncient Latines and Romans used it, as you may read in Virgil, who was a very great antiquary: That Evander, when Æneas came to him at his feast, did entertaine and feast him, sitting on the ground, and lying on mantles. Insomuch as he useth the very word mantle for a mantle.

“—— Humi mantilia sternunt.”

So that it seemeth that the mantle was a generall habite to most nations, and not proper to the Scythians onely, as you suppose.

*Iren.* I cannot deny but that aunciently it was common to most, and yet sithence disused and laide away. But in this later age of the world, since the decay of the Romane empire, it was renewed and brought in againe by those Northerne Nations, when breaking out of their cold caves and frozen habitations, into the sweet soyle of Europe, they brought with them their usual weedes, fit to sheild the cold, and that continual frost, to which they had at home beene inured: the which yet they left not off, by reason that they were in perpetual warres, with the nations whom they had invaded, but, still removing from place to place, carried always with them that weed, as their house, their bed, and their garment; and, comming lastly into Ireland, they found there more speciall use thereof, by reason of the raw cold climate, from whom it is now growne into that generall use, in which that people now have it. After whom the Gaules succeeding, yet

finding the like necessitie of that garment, continued the like use thereof.

*Eudox.* Since then the necessity thereof is so commodious, as you alledge, that it is instead of housing, bedding, and cloathing, what reason have you then to wish so necessarie a thing cast off?

*Iren.* Because the commoditie doth not countervaile the discommoditie; for the inconveniencies which thereby doe arise, are much more many; for it is a fit house for an out-law, a meet bed for a rebel, and an apt cloke for a thiefe. First the out-law being for his many crimes and villanies banished from the townes and houses of honest men, and wandring in waste places, far from danger of law, maketh his mantle his house, and under it covereth himselfe from the wrath of heaven, from the offence of the earth, and from the sight of men. When it raineth it is his pent-house; when it bloweth it is his tent; when it freezeth it is his tabernacle. In Sommer he can wear it loose, in winter he can wrap it close; at all times he can use it; never heavy, never cumbersome. Likewise for a rebell it is as serviceable. For in his warre that he maketh (if at least it deserve the name of warre) when he still flyeth from his foe, and lurketh in the thicke woods and strait passages, waiting for advantages, it is his bed, yea and almost his household stuff. For the wood is his house against all weathers, and his mantle is his couch to sleep in. Therein he wrappeth himselfe round, and coucheth himselfe strongly against the gnats, which in that countrey doe more annoy the naked rebels, whilst they keep the woods, and doe more sharply wound them then all their enemies swords, or spears, which can seldome come nigh them: yea and oftentimes their mantle serveth them, when they are neere driven, being wrapped about their left arme in stead of a target, for it is hard to cut thorough with a sword, besides it is light to beare, light to throw away, and, being (as they commonly are) naked, it is to them all in all. Lastly for a thiefe it is so handsome, as it may seeme it was first invented for him, for under it he may cleanly convey any fit pillage that cometh handsonly in his way, and when he goeth abroad in the night in freebooting, it is his best and surest friend; for lying, as they often do, 2 or 3 nights together abroad to watch for their booty, with that they can prettily shroud themselves under a bush or a bank side, till they may conveniently do their errand: and when all is over, he can, in his mantle passe through any town or company, being close hooded over his head, as he useth, from knowledge of any to whom he is indangered. Besides this, he, or any man els that is disposed to mischief or villany, may under his mantle goe privily armed without suspicion of any, carry his head-peece, \*his skean, or pistol if he please, to be always in readines. Thus necessary and fitting is a mantle, for a bad man, and surely for a bad huswife it is no lesse convenient, for some of them that bee wandring woemen, called of them Mona-shul, it is halfe a wardrobe; for in Summer you shal find her arrayed commonly but in her smock and mantle to be more ready for her light services: in Winter, and in her travaile, it is her cloake and safeguard, and also a coverlet for her lewde exercise. And when she

\* and long gibbles, &c.] “In Terconnell the haire of their head grows so long and curled, that they goe bare-headed, and are called *Glibis*; the women *Glibbins*.” Gainsford’s *Glory of England*, 4to. Lond. 1618, p. 151. Todd.

\* his skean,] “*Sword*; skian, or skeine.” See Walker’s *Memoir* &c. p. 115. Todd.

hath filled her vessell, under it she can bide both her burden, and her blame; yea, and when her bastard is borne, it serves instead of swaddling clouts. And as for all other good women which love to doe but little worke, how handsome it is to lye in and sleepe, or to louse themselves in the sun-shine, they that have bene but a while in Ireland can well witnes. Sure I am that you will thinke it very unfit for a good huswife to stirre in, or to busie her selfe about her huswifry in such sort as she should. These be some of the abuses for which I would thinke it meet to forbid all mantles.

*Eudox.* O evill minded man, that having reckoned up so many uses of a mantle, will yet wish it to be abandoned! Sure I thinke Diogenes dish did never serve his master for more turnes, notwithstanding that he made it his dish, his cup, his cap, his measure, his water-pot, then a mantle doth an Irish man. But I see they be most to bad intents, and therefore I will joyne with you in abolishing it. But what blame lay you to the glibbe? take heed (I pray you) that you be not too busie therewith for feare of your owne blame, seeing our Englishmen take it up in such a generall fashion to weare their haire so immeasurably long, that some of them exceed the longest Irish glibb.

*Iren.* I feare not the blame of any undeserved dislikes: but for the Irish glibbes, they are as fit maskes as a mantle is for a thiefe. For whensoever he hath run himselfe into that perill of law, that he will not be knowne, he either cutteth off his glibbe quite, by which he becommeth nothing like himselfe, or pulleth it so low downe over his eyes, that it is very hard to discernue his theewish countenance. And therefore fit to be trussed up with the mantle.

*Eudox.* Truly these three Scythian abuses, I hold most fit to bee taken away with sharpe penalties, and sure I wonder how they have bene kept thus long, notwithstanding so many good provisions and orders, as have bene devised for that people.

*Iren.* The cause thereof shall appeare to you hereafter: but let us now go forward with our Scythian customes. Of which the next that I have to treat of, is the manner of raising the cry in their conflicts, and at other troublesome times of uproare: the which is very natural Scythian, as you may read in Diodorus Siculus, and in Herodotus, describing the maner of the Scythians and Parthians comming to give the charge at battles: at which it is said, that they came running with a terrible yell as if heaven and earth would have gone together, which is the very image of the Irish hubub, \* which their kerne use at their first encounter. Besides, the same Herodotus writeth, that they used in their battles to call upon the names of their captains or generals, and sometimes upon their greatest kings deceased, † as in that battle of Thomyris against Cyrus: which custome to this day manifestly appeareth amongst the Irish. For at their joyning of battle, they likewise call upon their captains name, or the word of his ancestours. As they under Oneale cry Laundarg-abo, that is,

the bloody hand, which is Oneales badge. They under O'Brien call Laun-laidir, that is, the strong hand. And to their ensample, the old English also, which there remayneth, have gotten up their cries Scythian-like, as Crom-abo, and Butler-abo. And here also lyeth open an other manifest prooffe, that the Irish bee Scythes or Scots, for in all their encounters they use one very common word, crying Ferragh, Ferragh, which is a Scottish word, to wit, the name of one of the first Kings of Scotland, called Feragus, or Fergus, which fought against the Pictes, as you may reade in Buchanan, de rebus Scotticis; but as others write, it was long before that, the name of their chiefe Captaine, under whom they fought against the Africans, the which was then so fortunate unto them, that ever sithence they have used to call upon his name in their battailes.

*Eudox.* Believe me, this observation of yours, Irenæus, is very good and delightful; far beyond the blinde concept of some, who (I remember) have upon the same word Ferragh, made a very blunt conjecture, as namely Mr. Stanihurst, who though he be the same countrey man borne, that should search more neerly into the secret of these things; yet hath strayed from the truth all the heavens wyde, (as they say,) for he thereupon groundeth a very grosse imagination, that the Irish should descend from the Egyptians which came into that Island, first under the leading of one Scota the daughter of Pharaoh, wherupon they use (saith he) in all their battailes \* to call upon the name of Pharaoh, crying Ferragh, Ferragh. Surely he shootes wyde on the bow hand, and very far from the marke. For I would first know of him what auncient ground of authority he hath for such a senselesse fable, and if he have any of the rude Irish bookes, as it may be hee hath, yet (me seemes) that a man of his learning should not so lightly have bin carried away with old wives tales, from approvance of his owne reason; for whether it be a smack of any learned iudgment, to say, that Scota is like an Egyptian word, let the learned iudge. But his Scota rather comes of the Greek *σκότος*, that is, darknes, which hath not let him see the light of the truth.

*Iren.* You know not Eudoxus, how well M. Stan. could see in the darke; perhaps he hath owles or cats eyes: but well I wot he seeth not well the very light in matters of more weight. But as for Ferragh I have told my coniecture only, and yet thus much I have more to prove a likelihood, that there be yet at this day in Ireland, many Irish men (chiefly in the Northerne parts) called by the name of Ferragh. But let that now be: this only for this place suffiseth, that it is a word used in their common hububs, the which (with all the rest) is to be abolished, for that it discovereth an affection to Irish captainry, which in this platform I endeavour specially to beat down. There be other sorts of cries also used among the Irish, which savour greatly of the Scythian barbarisme, as their lamentations at their buryals, with dispairefull out-cries,

\* which their kerne use &c.] The kern is the Irish foot-soldier; and is also employed in this sense by Shakspeare. Todd.

† as in that battle of Thomyris against Cyrus:] Herodotus in the description of that battle hath no such thing. SIR JAMES WARE.

\* to call upon the name of Pharaoh, crying Ferragh.] The vulgar Irish suppose the subject of this war-song to have been *Ferroch* or *Ferragh*, (an easy corruption of *Pharroch*, which Selden, in his notes on Drayton's *Polyolbion*, says was the name of the war-song once in use amongst the Irish kerns,) a terrible giant, of whom they tell many a marvellous tale. Todd.

and immoderate waylings, the which M. Stanihurst might also have used for an argument to prove them Egyptians. For so in Scripture it is mentioned, that the Egyptians lamented for the death of Ioseph. Others thinke this custome to come from the Spaniards, for that they doe immeasurably likewise beweale their dead. But the same is not proper Spanish, but altogether heathenish, brought in thither first either by the Scythians, or the Moores that were Africans, and long possessed that countrey. For it is the manner of all Pagans and Infidels to be intemperate in their waylings of their dead, for that they had no faith nor hope of salvation. And this ill custome also is specially noted by Diodorus Siculus, to have bene in the Scythians, and is yet amongst the Northerne Scots at this day, as you may reade in their chronicles.

*Eudox.* This is sure an ill custome also, but yet doth not so much concerne civill reformation, as abuse in religion.

*Iren.* I did not rehearse it as one of the abuses which I thought most wortheie of reformation; but having made mention of Irish cryes I thought this manner of lewd crying and howling, not impertinent to be noted as uncivill and Scythian-like: for by these old customes, and other like coniecturall circumstances, the descents of nations can only be proved, where other monuments of writings are not remaining.

*Eudox.* Then (I pray you) whensoever in your discourse you meet with them by the way, doe not shun, but boldly touch them: for besides their great pleasure and delight for their antiquity, they bring also great profit and helpe unto civility.

*Iren.* Then sith you will have it so, I will here take occasion, since I lately spake of their manner of cryes in ioyning of battaile, to speake also somewhat of the manner of their armes, and array in battell, with other customes perhaps worthy the noting. And first of their armes and weapons, amongst which their broad swordes are proper Scythian, for such the Seythes used commonly, as you may read in Olaus Magnus. And the same also the old Scots used, as you may read in Buchanan, and in Solinus, where the pictures of them are in the same forme expressed. Also their short bowes, and little quivers with short bearded arrowes, are very \*Scythian, as you may reade in the same Olaus. And the same sort both of bowes, quivers, and arrowes, are at this day to be seen commonly amongst the Northerne Irish-Scots, whose Scottish bowes are not past three quarters of a yard long, with a string of wreathed hempe slaekely bent, and whose arrowes are not much above halfe an ell long, tipped with steele heads, made like common broad arrow heads, but much more sharpe and slender, that they enter into a man or horse most cruely, notwithstanding that they are shot forth weakly. Moreover their long broad shields, made but with wicker rodde, which are commonly used amongst the said Northerne Irish, but especially of the Scots, are brought from the Scythians, as you may read in Olaus Magnus, Solinus, and others: likewise their going to battle without armor on their bodies or heads, but trusting to the thicknes of their gibbs, the which (they say) will sometimes beare a good stroke, is meere Scythian, as you

may see in the said images of the old Scythes or Scots, set forth by Herodianus and others. Besides, their confused kinde of march in heapes, without any order or array, their clashing of swords together, their fierce running upon their enemies, and their manner of fight, resembleth altogether that which is read in histories to have bene used of the Scythians. By which it may almost infallibly be gathered together, with other circumstances, that the Irish are very Scots or Scythes originally, though sithence intermingled with many other nations repairing and joyning unto them. And to these I may also adde another strong conjecture which cometh to my mind, that I have often observed there amongst them, that is, certain religious ceremonies, which are very superstitiously yet used amongst them, the which are also written by sundry authours, to have bin observed amongst the Scythians, by which it may very vehemently be presumed that the nations were anciently all one. For \*Plutarch (as I remember) in his Treatise of Homer, endeavouring to search out the truth, what countryman Homer was, prooveth it most strongly (as he thinketh) that he was an Æolian borne, for that in describing a sacrifice of the Greekes, he omitted the loyne, the which all the other Grecians (saving the Æolians) use to burne in their sacrifices: also for that he makes the intralls to be rosted on five spits, which was the proper manner of the Æolians, who onely, of all the nations of Grecia, used to sacrifice in that sort. By which he inferreth necessarily, that Homer was an Æolian. And by the same reason may I as reasonably conclude, that the Irish are descended from the Scythians; for that they use (even to this day) some of the same ceremonies which the Scythians anciently used. As for example, you may reade in Lucian in that sweet dialogue, which is intitled Toxaris, or of friendship, that the common oath of the Scythians was † by the sword, and by the fire, for that they accounted those two speciall divine powers, which should worke vengeance on the perjurers. So doe the Irish at this day, when they goe to battaile, say certaine prayers or charmes to their swords, making a crosse therewith upon the earth, and thrusting the points of their blades into the ground; thinking thereby to have the better successe in fight. Also they use commonly to swear by their swords. Also the Scythians used, when they would binde any solemne vow or combination amongst them, to drink a bowle of blood together, vowing thereby to spend their last blood in that quarrell: and even so do the wild Scots, as you may read in Buchanan: and some of the Northerne Irish. Likewise at the kindling of the fire, and lighting of candles, they say certaine prayers, and use some other superstitious rites, which shew that they honour the fire and the light: for all those Northerne nations, having bene used to be annoyed with much colde and darkenesse, are wont therefore to have the fire and the sunne in great veneration; like as contrarywise the Moores and Egyptians, which are much offended and grieved with extreame heat of the sunne, doe every morning, when the sunne ariseth, fall to cursing and

\* Plutarch] Not he, but Herodotus, in the Life of Homer. SIR JAMES WARE.

\* Scythian.] The original of the very name Scythians seemeth to come from shooting. SIR JAMES WARE.

† by the sword, and by the fire.] Lucian hath it, by the sword, and by the wind. SIR JAMES WARE.

banning of him as their plague. You may also reade in the same booke, in the Tale of Arsacomas, that it was the manner of the Scythians, when any one of them was heavily wronged, and would assemble unto him any forces of people to joyne with him in his revenge, to sit in some publicke place for certaine dayes upon an oxe hide, to which there would resort all such persons as being disposed to take armes, would enter into his pay, or joyne with him in his quarrel. And the same you may likewise reade to have bene the ancient manner of the wilde Scotts, which are indeed the very naturall Irish. Moreover the Scythians used to swear by their Kings hand, as Olaus sheweth. And so do the Irish use now to swear by their Lords hand, and, to forswear it, holde it more criminall than to swear by God. Also the Scythians said, That they were once a yeare turned into wolves, and so is it written of the Irish: Though Master Camden in a better sense doth suppose it was a disease, called Lycanthropia, so named of the wolfe. And yet some of the Irish doe use to make the wolfe their gossip. The Scythians used also to seethe the flesh in the hide: and so doe the Northerne Irish. The Scythians used to draw the blood of the beast living, and to make meat thereof: and so do the Irish in the North still. Many such customes I could recount unto you, as of their old manner of marrying, of burying, of dancing, of singing, of feasting, of cursing, though Christians have wyped out the most part of them, by resemblance, whereof it might plainly appeare to you, that the nations are the same, but that by the reckoning of these few, which I have told unto you, I finde my speech drawne out to a greater length then I purposed. Thus much onely for this time I hope shall suffice you, to thinke that the Irish are anciently deduced from the Scythians.

*Eudox.* Surely Iren. I have heard, in these few words, that from you which I would have thought had bin impossible to have bin spoken of times so remote, and customes so ancient: with delight whereof I was all that while as it were intranced, and carried so farre from my selfe, as that I am now right sorry that you ended so soone. But I marvaile much how it commeth to passe, that in so long continuance of time, and so many ages come betweene, yet any jot of those olde rites and superstitions customes should remaine amongst them.

*Iren.* It is no cause of wonder at all; for it is the maner of many nations to be very superstitions, and diligent observers of old customes and antiquities, which they receive by continuall tradition from their parents, by recording of their Bards and Chronicles, in their songs, and by daylie use and ensample of their elders.

*Eudox.* But have you (I pray you) observed any such customes amongst them, brought likewise from the Spaniards or Gaules, as these from the Scythians? that may sure be very materiall to your first purpose.

*Iren.* Some perhaps I have; and who that will by this occasion more diligently marke and compare their customes, shall finde many more. But there are fewer remaying of the Gaules or Spaniards, then of the Scythians, by reason that the partes which they then possessed lying upon the coast of the Westerne and Southerne Sea, were sithence visited with strangers and forraigne people, repaying thither for trafficke, and for fishing,

which is very plentifull upon those coasts: for the trade and interdeale of sea-coast nations one with another, worketh more civilitie and good fashions, (all sea men being naturally desirous of new fashions,) then amongst the inland folke, which are seldome scene of forrainers; yet some of such as I have noted, I will recount unto you. And first I will, for the better credit of the rest, shew you one out of their Statutes, among which it is enacted, that no man shall weare his beard onely on the upper lip, shaving all his chinne. And this was the auncient manner of the Spaniards, as yet it is of all the Mahometans to cut off all their beards close, save onelie their Muschachios, which they weare long. And the cause of this use, was for that they, being bred in a hot cuntry, found much haire on their faces and other parts to be noyous unto them: for which cause they did cut it most away, like as contrarily all other nations, brought up in cold cuntries, do use to nourish their haire, to keepe them the warmer, which was the cause that the Scythians and Scottes wore Glibbes (as I shewed you) to keepe their heads warme, and long beards to defend their faces from cold. From them also (I thinke) came saffron shirts and smocks, which was devised by them in those hot cuntries, where saffron is very common and rife, for avoyding that evil which commeth by much sweating, and long wearing of linnen: also the woemen amongst the old Spaniards had the charge of all household affaires, both at home and abroad, (as Boemus writeth,) though now the Spaniards use it quite otherwise. And so have the Irish woemen the trust and care of all things, both at home, and in the field. Likewise round leather targets is the Spanish fashion, who used it (for the most part) painted, which in Ireland they use also, in many places, coloured after their rude fashion. Moreover the manner of their woemens riding on the wrong side of the horse, I meane with their faces towards the right side, as the Irish use, is (as they say) old Spanish, and some say African, for amongst them the woemen (they say) use so to ride: Also the deepe smocke sleive, which the Irish woemen use, they say, was old Spanish, and is used yet in Barbary: and yet that should seeme rather to be an old English fashion; for in armory the fashion of the Manche, which is given in armes by many, being indeede nothing else hut a sleive, is fashioned much like to that sleive. And that Knights in auncient times used to weare their mistresses or loves sleive, upon their armes, as appeareth by that which is written of Sir Lancelot, that he wore the sleive of the faire Maide of Asteloth in a tourney, whereat Queene Gueneuer was much displeased.

*Eudox.* Your conceipt is good, and well fitting for things so far growne from certainty of knowledge and learning, onely upon likelyhoods and conjectures. But have you any customes remaining from the Gaules or Brittaines?

*Iren.* I have observed a few of either; and who will better search into them, may finde more. And first the profession of their Bardes was (as Caesar writeth) usuall amongst the Gaules, and the same was also common amongst the Brittaines, and is not yet altogether left off with the Welsh which are their posterity. For all the fashions of the Gaules and Brittaines, as he testifieth, were much like. The long darts came also from the Gaules, as you may read in the same Caesar, and in Io. Boemus.



Likewise the said Io. Boemus writeth, that the Gaules used swords a handfull broad, and so doe the Irish now. Also they used long wicker shields in battaile that should cover their whole bodies, and so doe the Northerne Irish. But I have not seene such fashioned targets used in the Southerne parts, but onely amongst the Northerne people, and Irish-Scottes, I doe thinke that they were brought in rather by the Scythians, then by the Gaules. Also the Gaules used to drinke their enemies blood, and painte themselves therewith. So also they write, that the old Irish were wont, and so have I seene some of the Irish doe, but not their enemies but freinds blood. As namely at the execution of a notable traytor at Limericke, called Murrogh O-Brien, I saw an old woman, which was his foster mother, take up his head, whilst he was quartered, and sucked up all the blood that runne thereout, saying, that the earth was not worthy to drinke it, and therewith also steeped her face and breast, and tore her haire, crying out and shrieking most terribly.

*Eudox.* You have very well runne through such customes as the Irish have derived from the first old nations which inhabited the land; namely, the Scythians, the Spaniards, the Gaules, and the Brittaines. It now remaineth that you take in hand the customes of the old English which are amongst the Irish: of which I doe not thinke that you shall have much cause to finde fault with, considering that, by the English, most of the old bad Irish customes were abolished, and more civill fashions brought in their stead.

*Iren.* You think otherwise, Eudox. then I doe, for the cheifest abuses which are now in that realme, are growne from the English, and some of them are now much more lawlesse and licentious then the wilde Irish: so that as much care as was by them had to reforme the Irish, so and much more must now bee used to reforme them; so much time doth alter the manners of men.

*Eudox.* That seemeth very strange which you say, that men should so much degenerate from their first natures, as to growe wilde.

*Iren.* So much can liberty and ill examples doe.

*Eudox.* What liberty had the English there, more then they had here at home? Were not the lawes planted amongst them at the first, and had they not governours to curbe and keepe them still in awe and obedience?

*Iren.* They had, but it was, for the most part, such as did more hurt then good; for they had governours for the most part of themselves, and commonly out of the two families of the Geraldines and Butlers, both adversaries and corraives one against the other. Who though for the most part they were but deputies under some of the Kings of Englands sonnes, brethren, or other neare kinsmen, who were the Kings lieutenants, yet they swayed so much, as they had all the rule, and the others but the title. Of which Butlers and Geraldynes, albeit (I must confesse) there were very brave and worthy men, as also of other the Peeres of that realme, made Lo: Deputies, and Lo: Iustices at sundry times, yet thorough greatnes of their late conquests and seignories they grew insolent, and bent both that regall authority, and also their private powers, one against another, to the utter subversion of themselves, and strengthening of the Irish againe. This you may read plainly dis-

covered by a letter written from the citizens of Cork out of Ireland, to the Earle of Shrewsbury then in England, and remaining yet upon record, both in the Towre of London, and also among the Chronicles of Ireland. Wherein it is by them complained, that the English Lords and Gentlemen, who then had great possessions in Ireland, began, through pride and insolency, to make private warres one against another, and, when either part was weak, they would wage and draw in the Irish to take their part, by which meanes they both greatly encouraged and inabled the Irish, which fill that time had bene shut up within the Mountaines of Slewlogher, and weakened and disabled themselves, insomuch that their revenues were wonderfully impaired, and some of them which are there reckoned to have bene able to have spent 12 or 1300 pounds per annum. of old rent, (that I may say no more) besides their commodities of creekes and havens, were now scarce able to dispend the third part. From which disorder, and through other huge calamities which have come upon them thereby, they are almost now growne like the Irish; I meane of such English, as were planted above towards the West; for the English Pale hath preserved it selfe, thorough nearenes of the state in reasonable civilitie, but the rest which dwelt in Connaght and in Mounster, which is the sweetest soyle of Ireland, and some in Leinster and Ulster, are degenerate, yea, and some of them have quite shaken off their English names, and put on Irish that they might be altogether Irish.

*Eudox.* Is it possible that any should so farre growe out of frame that they should in so short space, quite forget their country and their owne names! that is a most dangerous lethargie, much worse then that of Messala Corvinus, who, being a most learned man, thorough sickenesse forgat his owne name. But can you count us any of this kinde?

*Iren.* I cannot but by report of the Irish themselves, who report, that the \* Mac-mahons in the North, were aunciently English, to wit, descended from the Fitz Ursulas, which was a noble family in England, and that the same appeareth by the signification of their Irish names: Likewise that the Mac-swynes, now in Ulster, were aunciently of the Veres in England, but that they themselves, for hatred of English, so disguised their names.

*Eudox.* Could they ever conceive any such dislike of their owne natural countryes, as that they would bee ashamed of their name, and byte at the dudge from which they sucked life.

*Iren.* I wote well there should be none; but proud hearts doe ofentimes (like wanton colts) kicke at their mothers, as we read Alcibiades and Themistocles did, who, being banished out of Athens, fled unto the Kings of Asia, and there stirred them up to warre against their country, in which warres they themselves were cheiltaines. So they say did these Mac-swynes and Mac-mahons, or rather Veres and Fitz-Ursulaes, for private despight, turne themselves against England. For at such time as Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford, was in the Barons warres against King Richard the Second, through the mallice of the Peeres, banished

\* *Mac-mahons* &c ] The six families of Mac-mahones and Mac-swynes are by others held to be of the ancient Irish. SIR JAMES WARE.

the realme and proscribed, he with his kinsman Fitz Ursula fled into Ireland, where being prosecuted, and afterwards in England put to death, his kinsman there remaining behinde in Ireland rebelled, and, conspiring with the Irish, did quite cast off both their English name and allegiance, since which time they have so remained still, and have since been counted meere Irish. The very like is also reported of the Mac-swines, Mac-mahones, and Mac-shebies of Mounster, how they likewise were anciently English, and old followers to the Earle of Desmond, untill the raigne of King Edward the Fourth: at which time the Earle of Desmond that then was, called Thomas, being through false subornation (as they say) of the Queene for some offence by her against him conceived, brought to his death at Tredagh most unjustly, notwithstanding that he was a very good and sound subject to the King: Thereupon all his kinsemen of the Geraldines, which then was a mighty family in Mounster, in revenge of that huge wrong, rose into armes against the King, and utterly renounced and forsooke all obedience to the Crowne of England, to whom the said Mac-swines, Mac-shebies, and Mac-mahones, being then servants and followers, did the like, and have ever sithence so continued. And with them (they say) all the people of Mounster went out, and many other of them, which were meere English, thenceforth joynd with the Irish against the King, and termed themselves very Irish, taking on them Irish habits and customes, which could never since be cleane wyped away, but the contagion hath remained still amongst their posterities. Of which sort (they say) be most of the surnames which end in an, as Hernan, Shinan, Mungan, &c., the which now account themselves naturall Irish. Other great houses there bee of the English in Ireland, which thorough licentious conversing with the Irish, or marrying, or fostering with them, or lacke of meete nurture, or other such unhappy occasions, have degendred from their ancient dignities, and are now growne as Irish, as O-haulans breech, as the proverbe there is.

*Eudox.* In truth this which you tell is a most shamefull hearing, and to be reformed with most sharpe censures, in so great personages to the terrour of the meaner: for if the lords and cheife men degenerate, what shall be hoped of the peasants, and baser people? And hereby sure you have made a faire way unto your selfe to lay open the abuses of their evill customes, which you have now next to declare, the which, no doubt, but are very bad, being borrowed from the Irish, as their apparell, their language, their riding, and many other the like.

*Iren.* You cannot but hold them sure to be very uncivill; for were they at the best that they were of old, when they were brought in, they should in so long an alteration of time seeme very uncouth and strange. For it is to be thought, that the use of all England was in the raigne of Henry the Second, when Ireland was planted with English, very rude and barbarous, so as if the same should be now used in England by any, it would seeme worthy of sharpe correction, and of new lawes for reformation, for it is but even the other day since England grew civill: Therefore in counting the evill customes of the English there, I will not have regard, whether the beginning thereof were English

or Irish, but will have respect onely to the inconvenience thereof. And first I have to finde fault with the abuse of language, that is, for the speaking of Irish among the English, which as it is unnaturall that any people should love another language more then their owne, so it is very inconvenient, and the cause of many other evils.

*Eudox.* It seemeth strange to me that the English should take more delight to speake that language, then their owne, whereas they should (mee thinkes) rather take scorne to acquaint their tongues thereto. For it hath ever beene the use of the conquerour, to despise the language of the conquered, and to force him by all meanes to learne his. So did the Romans alwayes use, insomuch that there is almost no nation in the world, but is sprinckled with their language. It were good therefore (mee seemes) to search out the originall cause of this evill; for, the same being discovered, a redresse thereof will the more easily be provided: For I thinke it very strange, that the English being so many, and the Irish so few, as they then were left, the fewer should draw the more unto their use.

*Iren.* I suppose that the cheife cause of bringing in the Irish language, amongst them, was specially their fostering, and marrying with the Irish, the which are two most dangerous infections; for first the childe that sucketh the milke of the nurse, must of necessity learne his first speach of her, the which being the first inured to his tongue, is ever after most pleasing unto him, insomuch as though hee afterwards be taught English, yet the smacke of the first will allwayes abide with him; and not onely of the speach, but also of the manners and conditions. For besides that yong children be like apes, which will affect and imitate what they see done before them, especially by their nurses, whom they love so well, they moreover drawe into themselves, together with their sucke, even the nature and disposition of their nurses: for the minde followeth much the temperature of the body: and also the words are the image of the minde, so as they proceeding from the minde, the minde must needs be affected with the words. So that the speach being Irish, the heart must needs bee Irish: for out of the abundance of the heart, the tongue speaketh. The next is the marrying with the Irish, which how dangerous a thing it is in all common-wealthes, appeareth to every simplest sence, and though some great ones have perhaps used such matches with their vassals, and have of them neverthelesse raised worthy issue, as Telamon did with Teemessa, Alexander the Great with Roxana, and Iulius Cæsar with Cleopatra, yet the example is so perillous, as it is not to be adventured: for in stead of those few good, I could count unto them infinite many evill. And indeed how can such matching succede well, seeing that commonly the childe taketh most of his nature of the mother, besides speach, manners, and inclynation, which are (for the most part) agreeable to the conditions of their mothers: for by them they are first framed and fashioned, so as what they receive once from them, they will hardly ever after forgoe. Therefore are these evill customes of fostering and marrying with the Irish, most carefully to be restrayned: for of them two, the third evill that is the custome of language, (which I spake of,) cheifly proceedeth.

*Eudox.* But are there not lawes already provided, for avoyding of this evill?

*Iren.* Yes, I thinke there be, but as good never a whit as never the better. For what doe statutes avails without penalties, or lawes without charge of execution? for so there is another like law enacted against wearing of the Irish apparell, but nevertheless it is observed by any, or executed by them that have the charge: for they in their private discretions thinke it not fit to bee forced upon the poore wretches of that country, which are not worth the price of English apparell, nor expedient to be practised against the abler sort, by reason that the country (say they) doth yeeld no better, and were there better to be had, yet these were fitter to be used, as namely, the mantle in travalling, because there be no lunces where meete bedding may be had, so that his mantle serves him then for a bed; the leather quilted iacke in iourneying and in camping, for that is fittest to be under his shirt of mayle, and for any occasion of suddaine service, as there happen may, to cover his trowse on horsebacke; the great linnen roll, which the women weare, to keepe their heads warme, after cutting their haire, which they use in sickness; besides their thicke folded linnen shirts, their long-sleived smocks, their halfe-sleived coates, their silken fillets, and all the rest; they will devise some colour for, either of necessity, or of antiquity, or of comelynesse.

*Eudox.* But what colour soever they alledge, mee thinke it is not expedient, that the execution of a law once ordayned should be left to the discretion of the iudge, or officer, but that, without partialitie or regard, it should be fulfilled as well on English, as Irish.

*Iren.* But they thinke this precisenes in reformation of apparell not to be so materiall, or greatly pertinent.

*Eudox.* Yes surely but it is: for mens apparell is commonly made according to their conditions, and their conditions are oftentimes governed by their garments: for the person that is gowned, is by his gowne put in minde of gravitie, and also restrained from lightnes, by the very unaptnesse of his weed. Therefore it is written by Aristotle, that when Cyrus had overcome the Lydians that were a warlike nation, and devised to bring them to a more peaceable life, hee changed their apparell and musick, and, in stead of their short warlike coat, clothed them in long garments like women, and, in stead of their warlike musick, appointed to them certaine lascivious layes, and loose jiggs, by which in short space their mindes were so mollified and abated, that they forgot their former fiercenesse, and became most tender and effeminate; whereby it appeareth, that there is not a little in the garment to the fashioning of the minde and conditions. But be these, which you have described, the fashions of the Irish weedes?

*Iren.* No: all these which I have rehearsed to you, be not Irish garments, but English; for the quilted leather iack is old English: for it was the proper weed of the horseman, as you may read in Chaucer, when he describeth Sir Thopas apparell and armour, as hee went to fight against the gyant, in his robe of shecklaton, which is that kind of gilded leather with which they use to imbroyder their Irish iackets. And there likewise by all that description, you may see the very fashion and manner of the Irish horseman most truly set forth, in his long hese, his ryding shooes of costly cordwaine,

his hacqueton, and his haberjeon, with all the rest thereunto belonging.

*Eudox.* I surely thought that the manner had beene Irish, for it is farre differing from that we have now, as also all the furniture of his horse, his strong brasse hit, his slyding reynes, his shanke pilhon without stirruppes, his manner of mounting, his fashion of ryding, his charging of his speare aloft above head, the forme of his speare.

*Iren.* No sure; they be native English, and brought in by the Englishmen first into Ireland: neither is the same accounted an uncomely manner of ryding; for I have heard some great warriors say, that, in all the services which they had seene abroad in forraigne countreyes, they never saw a more comely man then the Irish man, nor that commeth on more bravely in his charge; neither is his manner of mounting unseemely, though hee lacke stirruppes, but more ready then with stirruppes; for, in his getting up, his horse is still going, whereby hee gayneth way. And therefore the stirrup was called so in scorne, as it were a stay to get up, being derived of the old English word sty, which is, to get up, or mounte.

*Eudox.* It seemeth then that you finde no fault with this manner of ryding; why then would you have the quilted iacke laid away?

*Iren.* I doe not wish it to be laide away, but the abuse thereof to be put away; for being used to the end that it was framed, that is, to be worne in warre under a shirt of mayle, it is allowable, as also the shirt of mayle, and all his other furniture: but to be worne daylie at home, and in townes and civile places, is a rude habite and most uncomely seeming like a players painted coate.

*Eudox.* But it is worne (they say) likewise of Irish footmen; how doe you allow of that? for I should thinke it very unseemely.

*Iren.* No, not as it is used in warre, for it is worne then likewise of footmen under their shirts of mayle, the which footmen they call Galloglasses, the which name doth discover them also to be auncient English: for *Gall-ogla* signifies an English servitour or yeoman. And he being so armed in a long shirt of mayle downe to the calfe of his leg, with a long broad axe in his hand, was then *pedes gravis armatura*, and was instead of the armed footeman that now weareth a corslet, before the corslet was used, or almost invented.

*Eudox.* Then him belike you likewise allow in your strait reformation of old customes.

*Iren.* Both him and the kerne also, (whom onely I take to bee the proper Irish souldier,) can I allow, so that they use that habite and custome of theirs in the warres onely, when they are led forth to the service of their Prince, and not usually at home, and in civile places, and besides doe laye aside the evill and wilde uses which the galloglasse and kerne do use in their common trade of life.

*Eudox.* What be those?

*Iren.* Marrie those bee the most barbarous and loathly conditions of any people (I thinke) under heaven: for, from the time that they enter into that course, they doe use all the beastly behaviour that may bee; they oppresse all men, they spoile aswell the subject, as the enemy; they steal, they are cruell and bloodie, full of revenge and delighting in deadly execution, licentious, swearers, and blasphemers, common ravishers of women, and murderers of children.

*Eudox.* These bee most villainous conditions ; I marvaile then that they be ever used or employed, or almost suffered to live ; what good can there then be in them ?

*Iren.* Yet sure they are very valiaunt, and hardie, for the most part great indurers of colde, labour, hunger, and all hardnesse, very active and strong of hand, very swift of foot, very vigilant and circumspect in their enterprises, very present in pill, very great scornors of death.

*Eudox.* Truly by this that you say, it seemes that the Irishman is a very brave souldier.

*Iren.* Yea surely, in that rude kinde of service, hee beareth himselfe very courageously. But when hee commeth to experience of service abroad, or is put to a peece, or a pike, hee maketh as worthe a souldiour as any nation hee meeteth with. But let us (I pray you) turne agaiue to our discourse of evil customes among the Irish.

*Eudox.* Me thinks, all this which you speake of, concerneth the customes of the Irish very materially, for their uses in warre are of no small importance to bee considered, aswell to reforme those which are evil as to confirme and continue those which are good. But follow you your owne course, and shew what other their customes you have to dislike of.

*Iren.* There is amongst the Irish a certaine kind of people, called Bardes, which are to them instead of poets, whose profession is to set forth the praises or dispraises of men in their poems or rymes, the which are had in so high regard and estimation amongst them, that none dare displease them for feare to runne into reproach thorough their offence, and to be made infamous in the mouthes of all men. For their verses are taken up with a generall applause, and usually sung at all feasts and meetings, by certaine other persons, whose proper function that is, who also receive for the same great rewards and reputation amongst them.

*Eudox.* Doe you hame this in them which I would otherwise have thought to have bene worthy of good accompt, and rather to have bene maintained and augmented amongst them, then to have bene disliked ? for I have reade that in all ages Poets have bene had in speciall reputation, and that (me thinks) not without great cause ; for besides their sweete inventions, and most wittie layes, they have alwayes used to set forth the praises of the good and vertuous, and to beate downe and disgrace the bad and vitious. So that many brave yong mindes, have oftentimes thorough hearing the praises and famous enlogies of worthie men sung and reported unto them, bene stirred up to affect the like commendations, and so to strive to the like deserts. So they say that the Lacedemonians were more excited to desire of honour, with the excellent verses of the Poet Tirtæus, then with all the exhortations of their Captaines, or authority of their Rulers and Magistrates.

*Iren.* It is most true, that such Poets as in their writings doe labour to better the manners of men, and thorough the sweete baite of their numbers, to steale into the young spirits a desire of honour and vertue, are worthy to bee bad in great respect. But these Irish Bardes are for the most part of another minde, and so farre from instructing yong men in morall discipline, that they themselves doe more deserve to bee sharply disciplined ; for they seldome use to choose unto themselves the

doings of good men for the arguments of their poems, but whomsoever they finde to be most licentious of life, most bolde and lawlesse in his doings, most dangerous and desperate in all parts of disobedience and rebellious disposition, him they set up and glorifie in their rithmes, him they praise to the people, and to yong men make an example to follow.

*Eudox.* I marvaile what kinde of speeches they can finde, or what face they can put on, to praise such bad persons as live so lawleslie and licentiouslie upon stealthes and spoyles, as most of them doe, or how can they thinke that any good mind will applaude or approve the same.

*Iren.* There is none so bad, Eudoxus, but shall finde some to favour his doings ; but such licentious partes as these, tending for the most part to the hurt of the English, or maintenance of their owne lewd libertie, they themselves being most desirous therof, doe most allow. Besides this, evil things being decked and attired with the gay attire of goodly words, may easily deceive and carry away the affection of a yong mind, that is not well stayed, but desirous by some bolde adventures to make prooffe of himselfe ; for being (as they all be brought up idly) without awe of parents, without precepts of masters, and without feare of offence, not being directed, nor employed in any course of life, which may carry them to vertue, will easily be drawne to follow such as any shall set before them ; for a yong minde cannot rest ; if he be not still busied in some goodnesse, he will finde himselfe such businesse, as shall soone busie all about him. In which if he shall finde any to praise him, and to give him encouragement, as those Bardes and rythmers doe for little reward, or a share of a stolne cow, then waxeth he most insolent and halfe madde with the love of himselfe, and his owne lewd deeds. And as for words to set forth such lewdnes, it is not hard for them to give a goodly and painted shew thereunto, borrowed even from the praises which are proper to vertue it selfe. As of a most notorious thiefe and wicked out-law, which had lived all his life-time of spoyles and robberies, one of their Bardes in his praise will say, That he was none of the idle milke-sops that was brought up by the fire side, but that most of his dayes he spent in armes and valiant enterprises, that he did never eat his meat, before he had won it with his sword, that he lay not all night slugging in a cabbins under his mantle, but used commonly to keepe others walking to defend their lives, and did light his candle at the flames of their houses, to leade him in the darkness ; that the day was his night, and the night his day ; that he loved not to be long wooing of wenches to yeeld to him, but where he came he tooke by force the spoyle of other mens love, and left but lamentation to their lovers ; that his musick was not the harpe, nor layes of love, but the cryes of people, and clashing of armor ; and finally, that he died not bewayled of many, but made many waile when he died, that dearly bought his death. Doe you not thinke (Eudoxus) that many of these praises might be applied to men of best deserts ? yet are they all yeilded to a most notable traitor, and amongst some of the Irish not smally accounted of. For the song, when it was first made and sung to a person of high degree there, was bought (as their manner is) for forty crownes.

*Eudox.* And well worthy sure. But tell me (I pray you) have they any art in their compositions? or bee they any thing wittie or well savoured, as poemes should be.

*Iren.* Yea, truly, I have caused divers of them to be translated unto me, that I might understand them, and surely they savoured of sweet wit and good invention, but skilled not of the goodly ornaments of poetry; yet were they sprinkled with some pretty flowres of their naturall device, which gave good grace and conlinesse unto them, the which it is great pittie to see abused, to the gracing of wickednes and vice, which with good usage would serve to adorne and beautifie vertue. This evill custome therefore needeth reformation. And now next after the Irish Kerne, he thinks the Irish Horse-boys would come well in order, the use of which, though necessity (as times now be) do enforce, yet in the thorough reformation of that realme they should be cut off. For the cause why they are now to be permitted, is want of convenient innes for lodging of travellers on horsback, and of hostlers to tend their horses by the way. But when things shalbe reduced to a better passe, this needeth specially to be reformed. For out of the fry of these \* rake-hell horse-boyes, growing up in knavery and villainy, are their kerne continually supplied and maintained. For having been once brought up an idle horse-boy, he will never after fall to labour, but is only made fit for the halter. And these also (the which is one foule over-sight) are for the most part bred up amongst the Englishmen, of whom learning to shoote in a piece, and being made acquainted with all the trades of the English, they are afterwards when they become kerne, made more fit to cut their throats. Next to this, there is another much like, but much more lewde and dishonest, and that is, of their Carrows, which is a kinde of people that wander up and downe to Gentle-mens houses, living onely upon cardes and dice, the which, though they have litle or nothing of their owne, yet will they play for much money, which if they winne, they waste most lightly, and if they lose, they pay as slenderly, but make recompence with one stealth or another, whose onely hurt is not, that they themselves are idle lossells, but that thorough gaming they draw others to like lewdnesse and idlenesse. And to these may be added another sort of like loose fellows, which doe passe up and downe amongst gentlemen by the name of Iesters, but are (indeed) notable rognes, and partakers not onely of many stealthes, by setting forth other mens goods to be stolne, but also privy to many traitrous practices, and common carriers of newes, with desire whereof you would wonder how much the Irish are fed; for they use commonly to send up and downe to knowe newes, and if any meet with another, his second word is, What news? Insomuch that hereof is tolde a prettie jest of a French-man, who having bene sometimes in Ireland, where he marked their great inquire for newes, and meeting afterwards in France an Irishman, whom hee knew in Ireland, first saluted him, and afterwards said thus merrily: O Sir, I pray you tell me of curtesie, have you heard any thing of the newes, that you so much inquired for in your cuntry?

*Eudox.* This argueth sure in them a great desire

\* these rakehell horse-boyes,] These base or outcast horse-boys. Fr. *racaille*. Todd.

of innovation, and therefore these occasions which nourish the same must be taken away, as namely, those Iesters, Carrowes, \* *Mona-shules*, and all such straglers, for whom (me thinks) the short riddance of a Marshall were meete then an ordinance or prohibition to restrain them. Therefore (I pray you) leave all this rabblement of runnagates, and passe to other customes.

*Iren.* There is a great use amongst the Irish, to make great assemblies together upon a rath or hill, there to parlie (as they say) about matters and wrongs betweene township and township, or one privat person and another. But well I wot, and true it hath bene oftentimes proved, that in their meetings many mischiefs have bene both practised and wrought; for to them doe commonly resort all the scumme of the people, where they may meete and conferre of what they list, which else they could not doe without suspition or knowledge of others. Besides at these meetings I have knowne divers times, that many Englishmen, and good Irish subjects, have bin villanously murdered by moving one quarrell or another against them. For the Irish never come to those raths but armed, whether on horse or on foot, which the English nothing suspecting, are then commonly taken at advantage like sheep in the pin-folde.

*Eudox.* It may be (Iraeneus) that abuse may be in those meetings. But † these round hills and square bawnes, which you see so strongly trenced and throwne up, were (they say) at first ordained for the same purpose, that people might assemble themselves therein, and therefore aunciently they were called Folkmotes, that is, a place of people, to meete or talke of any thing that concerned any difference betweene parties and townships, which seemeth yet to me very requisite.

*Iren.* You say very true, Eudoxus, the first making of these high hills, were at first indeed to very good purpose for people to meet; but howsoever the times when they were first made, might well serve to good occasions, as perhaps they did then in England, yet things being since altered, and now Ireland much differing from the state of England, the good use that then was of them, is now turned to abuse; for these hills wherof you speak, were (as you may gather by reading) appointed for 2 special uses, and built by 2 several nations. The one is that which you call Folkmotes, which were built by the Saxons, as the word bewraeth, for it signifieth in Saxon, a meeting of folk, and these are for the most part in forme four square, well entrenched; the others that were round, were cast up by the Danes, as the name of them doth betoken, for they are called Danes-raths, that is, hills of the Danes, the which were by them devised, not for treaties and parlies, but appointed as fortes for them to gather unto, in troublesome time, when any trouble arose; for the Danes being but a few in comparison of the Saxons (in England) used this for their safety; they made those small round hills, so strongly fenced, in every quarter of the hundred, to the end that if in the night, or any other time, any troublous cry or

\* *Mona-shules.*] *Shuler*, I am told, is a common name for a wandering beggar in Ireland. Todd.

† these round hills, and square bawnes.] *Bawen* is evidently used by Spenser for an eminence. Of its etymology our lexicographers give no account. Todd.

uproare should happen, they might repaire with all speed unto their owne fort, which was appointed for their quarter, and there remaine safe, till they could assemble themselves in greater strength; for they were made so strong with one small entrance, that whosoever came thither first, were he one or two, or like few, he or they might there rest safe, and defend themselves against many, till more succour came unto them: and when they were gathered to a sufficient number, they marched to the next fort, and so forward till they met with the perill, or knew the occasions thereof. But besides these two sorts of hills, there were anciently divers others; for some were raised, where there had been a great battle fought, as a memory or trophie thereof; others, as monuments of burials, of the carcasses of all those that were slaine in any field, upon whom they did throwe such round mounts, as memorialls of them, and sometimes did cast up great heapes of stones, (as you may read the like in many places of the Scripture,) and other whiles they did throw up many round heapes of earth in a circle, like a garland, or pitch many long stones on end in compass, every of which (they say) betokened some person of note there slaine and buried; for this was their ancient custome, before Christianity came in amongst them, that church-yards were inclosed.

*Eudox.* You have very well declared the originall of their mounts and great stones incompass, which some vainly terme the onld Gyants Trevetts, and thinke that those luge stones would not else be brought into order or reared up, without the strength of gyants. And others vainly thinke that they were never placed there by mans hand or art, but onely remained there so since the beginning, and were afterwards discovered by the deluge, and laide open as then by the washing of the waters, or other like casualty. But let them dreame their owne imaginations to please themselves, you have satisfied me much better, both for that I see some confirmation thereof in the Holy Writt, and also remember that I have read, in many Historyes and Chronicles, the like mounts and stones oftentimes mentioned.

*Iren.* There be many great authorities (I assure you) to prove the same, but as for these meetings on hills, whereof we were speaking, it is very inconvenient that any such should be permitted.

*Eudox.* But yet it is very needefull (me thinkes) for many other purposes, as for the countreyes to gather together, when there is any imposition to be laide upon them, to the which they then may all agree at such meetings to decide upon themselves, according to their holdings and abilities. So as if at these assemblies, there be any officers, as Constables, Bayliffes, or such like amongst them, there can be no perill, or doubt of such bad practises.

*Iren.* Nevertheless, dangerous are such assemblies, whether for cesse or ought else, the Constables and Officers being also of the Irish; and if any of the English happen to be there, even to them they may prove perillous. Therefore for avoyding of all such evill occasions, they were best to be abolished.

*Eudox.* But what is that which you call cesse? it is a word sure unused among us here, therefore (I pray you) expound the same.

*Iren.* Cesse is none other then that which your selfe called imposition, but it is in a kinde unacquainted perhaps unto you. For there are cesses of sundry sorts; one is, the cessing of souldiours

upon the countrey: For Ireland being a countrey of warre (as it is handled) and always full of souldiours, they which have the government, whether they finde it the most ease to the Queenes purse, or the most ready meanes at hand for victualling of the souldiour, or that necessity inforceth them thereunto, do scatter the army abroad in the countrey, and place them in villages to take their victuals of them, at such vacant times as they lye not in campe, nor are otherwise employed in service. Another kinde of cesse, is the imposing of provision for the Governours house-keeping, which though it be most necessary, and be also (for avoyding of all the evils formerly therein used) lately brought to a composition, yet it is not without great inconveniences, no lesse then here in England, or rather much more. The like cesse is also charged upon the countrey sometimes for victualling of the souldiours, when they lye in garrison, at such times as there is none remaining in the Queenes store, or that the same cannot be conveniently conveyed to their place of garrison. But these two are not easily to be redressed when necessity thereto compelleth; but as for the former, as it is not necessary, so it is most hurtfull and offensive to the poore country, and nothing convenient for the souldiers themselves, who, during their lying at cesse, use all kinde of outrageous disorder and villany, both towards the poore men, which victual and lodge them, as also to all the country round about them, whom they abuse, oppresse, spoyle, and afflict by all the meanes they can invent, for they will not onely not content themselves with such victuals as their hostes nor yet as the place perhaps affords, but they will have other meate provided for them, and *aqua vita* sent for, yea and money besides laide at their trenchers, which if they want, then about the house they walk with the wretched poore man and his silly wife, who are glad to purchase their peace with any thing. By which vile manner of abuse, the countrey people, yea and the very English which dwell abroad and see, and sometimes feele this outrage, growe into great detestation of the souldiours, and thereby into hatred of the very government, which draweth upon them such evils: And therefore this you may also ioyne unto the former evill customes, which we have to reprove in Ireland.

*Eudox.* Truly this is one not the least, and though the persons, by whom it is used, be of better note then the former roguish sort, which you reckoned, yet the fault (me thinkes) is no lesse worthy of a Marshall.

*Iren.* That were a harder course, Eudoxus, to redresse every abuse by a Marshall: it would seeme to you very evill surgery to cutt off every unsound or sicke part of the body, which, being by other due meanes recovered, might afterwards doe very good service to the body-again, and haply helpe to save the whole: Therefore I thinke better that some good salve for the redresse of the evill bee sought forth, then the least part suffered to perish: but hereof wee have to speake in another place. Now we will proceede to other like defects, amongst which there is one generall inconvenience, which reigneth almost throughout all Ireland; that is, the Lords of land and Free-holders, doe not there use to set out their land in farme, or for tearme of yeares, to their tenants, but onely from yeare to yeare, and some during pleasure, neither indeede

will the Irish tennant or husbandman otherwise take his land, then so long as he list himselfe. The reason hereof in the tennant is, for that the land-lords there use most shamefully to racke their tenants, laying upon them coigny and livery at pleasure, and exacting of them (besides his covenants) what he pleaseth. So that the poore husbandman either dare not binde himselfe to him for longer tearme, or thinketh, by his continuall liberty of change, to keepe his land-lord the rather in awe from wronging of him. And the reason why the land lord will no longer covenant with him, is, for that he dayly looketh after change and alteration, and hovereth in expectation of new worlds.

*Eudox.* But what evill commeth hereby to the common-wealth, or what reason is it that any land-lord should not set nor any tennant take his land, as himselfe list ?

*Iren.* Marry, the evils which commeth hereby are great, for by this meanes both the land-lord thinketh that he hath his tennant more at command, to follow him into what action soever hee shall enter, and also the tennant being left at his liberty is fit for every occasion of change that shall be offered by time : and so much also the more ready and willing is he to runne into the same, for that hee hath no such state in any his holding, no such building upon any farme, no such coeste imployed in fensing or husbanding the same, as might with-hold him from any such wilfull course, as his lords canse, or his owne lewde disposition may carry him unto. All which hee hath forborne, and spared so much expence, for that he had no firme estate in his tenement, but was onely a tennant at will or little more, and so at will may leave it. And this inconvenience may be reason enough to ground any ordinance for the good of the common-wealth, against the private behoofe or will of any landlord that shall refuse to graunt any such terme or estate unto his tennant, as may tende to the good of the whole realme.

*Eudox.* Indee (me thinks) it is a great willfullnes in any such land-lord to refuse to make any longer farmes unto their tennants, as may, besides the generall good of the realme, be also greatly for their owne profit and avails : For what reasonable man will not thinke that the tenement shalbe made much better for the lords behoofe, if the tennant may by such good meanes bee drawne to build himselfe some handsome habitation thereon, to ditch and inclose his ground, to manure and husband it as good farmours use ? For when his tennants terme shal be expired, it will yeeld him, in the renewing his lease, both a good fine, and also a better rent. And also it shall be for the good of the tennant likewise, who by such buildings and inclosures shall receive many benefits : first, by the handsomenesse of his house, he shall take more comfort of his life, more safe dwelling, and a delight to keepe his said house neate and cleanelly, which now being, as they commonly are, rather swyne-styes then houses, is the cheifest cause of his so beastly manner of life, and savage condition, lying and living together with his beast in one house, in one roome, in one bed, that is, cleane strawe, or rather a foul dunghill. And to all these other commodities hee shall in short time find a greater added, that is his owne wealth and riches increased, and wonderfully enlarged, by keeping his cattle in inclosures, where they shall alwayes have fresh

pasture, that now is all trampled and over-runne ; warme covert, that now lyeth open to all weather ; safe being, that now are continually filched and stolne.

*Iren.* You have, Eudoxus, well accompted the commodities of this one good ordinance, amongst which, this that you named last is not the least ; for, all the other being most beneficiall to the land-lord and tennant, this chiefly redoundeth to the good of the common-wealth, to have the land thus inclosed, and well fenced. For it is both a principall barre and impeachment unto theeves from stealing of cattle in the night, and also a gaule against all rebels, and outlawes, that shall rise up in any numbers against the government ; for the thiefe thereby shall have much adoe, first to bring forth and afterwards to drive away his stolne prey, but thorough the common high wayes, where he shall soone bee descryed and met withall : And the rebell or open enemy, if any such shall happen, either at home, or from abroad, shall easily be found when he commeth forth, and also be well encountered withall by a few, in so straight passages and strong inclosures. This therefore, when we come to the reforming of all those evill customes before mentioned, is needefull to be remembred. But now by this time me thinks that I have well run thorough the evill uses which I have observed in Ireland. Neverthelesse I well wote that there be many more, and infinitely many more in the private abuses of men. But these that are most generall, and tending to the hurt of the common-weale, (as they have come to my remembrance) I have as briefly as I could rehearsed unto you. And therefore now I thinke best that we passe unto our third part, in which we noted inconveniences that are in religion.

*Eudox.* Surely you have very well handled these two former, and if yee shall as well goe thorough the third likewise, you shall merit a very good meed.

*Iren.* Little have I to say of religion, both because the parts thereof be not many, (it selfe being but one,) and my selfe have not much bene conversant in that calling : but as lightly passing by I have seene or heard : Therefore the fault which I finde in religion is but one, but the same is universall, thoroughout all that country, that is, that they be all Papists by their profession, but in the same so blindly and brutishly informed, (for the most part) that not one amongst a hundred knoweth any ground of religion, or any article of his faith, but can perhaps say his Pater noster, or his Ave Maria, without any knowledge or understanding what one word thereof meaneth.

*Eudox.* Is it not then a little blot to them that now hold the place of government, that they which now are in the light themselves, suffer a people under their charge to wallow in such deadly darknesse ?

*Iren.* That which you name, Eudox. is not (I suppose) any fault of will in those godly fathers which have charge thereof, but the inconvenience of the time and troublous occasions, wherewith that wretched realme hath continually bene turmoyled : for instruction in religion needeth quiet times, and ere we seeke to settle a sound discipline in the clergy, we must purchase peace unto the laity, for it is ill time to preach among swords, and most hard or rather impossible it is to settle a good opinion in

the mindes of men for matters of religion doubtfull, which have doubtlesse an evill opinion of us. For ere a new be brought in, the old must be removed.

*Eudox.* Then belike it is meete that some fitter time be attended, that God send peace and quietnesse there in civill matters, before it be attempted in ecclesiasticall. I would rather have thought that (as it is said) correction must first begin at the house of God, and that the care of the soule should have bene preferred before the care of the body.

*Iren.* Most true, Eudoxus, the care of the soule and soule matters is to be preferred before the care of the body, in consideration of the worthinesse thereof, but not till the time of reformation; for if you should know a wicked person dangerously sicke, having now both soule and body greatly diseased, yet both recoverable, would you not thinke it evill advertizement to bring the preacher before the phisitian? for if his body were neglected, it is like that his languishing soule being disquieted by his diseasefull body, would utterly refuse and loath all spirituall comfort; but if his body were first recured, and broght to good frame, should there not then be found best time, to recover the soule also? So it is in the state of a realme: Therefore (as I said) it is expedient, first to settle such a course of government there, as thereby both civill disorders and ecclesiasticall abuses may be reformed and amended, whereto needeth not any such great distance of times, as (you suppose) I require, but one joynt resolution for both, that each might second and confirm the other.

*Eudox.* That we shall see when we come thereunto; in the meane time I conceive thus much, as you have delivered, touching the generall fault, which you suppose in religion, to wit, that it is popish; but doe you finde no particular abuses therein, nor in the ministers thereof?

*Iren.* Yes verily; for what ever disorders you see in the Church of England, yee may finde there, and many more: Namely, grosse simony, greedy covetousnesse, fleshly incontinency, carelesse sloath, and generally all disordered life in the common clergyman: And besides all these, they have their particular enormities; for all Irish priests, which now enjoy the church livings, they are in a manner meere laymen, saving that they have taken holy orders, but otherwise they doe goe and live like lay men, follow all kinde of husbandry, and other worldly affaires, as other Irish men doe. They neither read scriptures, nor preach to the people, nor administer the communion, but baptisme they doe, for they christen yet after the popish fashion, onely they take the tithes and offerings, and gather what fruite else they may of their livings, the which they convert as badly and some of them (they say) pay as due tributes and shares of their livings to their Bishops, (I speake of those which are Irish,) as they receive them duely.

*Eudox.* But is that suffered amongst them? It is wonder but that the governours doe redresse such shamefull abuses.

*Iren.* How can they, since they know them not? for the Irish bishops have their clergy in such awe and subjection under them, that they dare not complaine of them, so as they may doe to them what they please, for they knowing their owne unworthinesse and incapacity, and that they are therefore

still removeable at their bishops will, yeeld what pleaseth him, and he taketh what he listeth: yea, and some of them whose diocesses are in remote parts, somewhat out of the worlds eye, doe not at all bestow the benefices, which are in their owne donation, upon any, but keep them in their owne hands, and set their owne servants and horse-hoyes to take up the tithes and fruites of them, with the which some of them purchase great lands, and build faire castles upon the same. Of which abuse if any question be moved they have a very seemely colour and excuse, that they have no worthy ministers to bestow them upon, but keepe them so bestowed for any such sufficient person as any shall bring unto them.

*Eudox.* But is there no law nor ordinance to meet with this mischief? nor hath it never before bene looked into?

*Iren.* Yes, it seemes it hath, for there is a statute there enacted in Ireland, which seemes to have bene grounded upon a good meaning, That whatsoever Englishman of good conversation and sufficiency, shall bee brought unto any of the bishoppes, and nominated unto any living, within their diocesse that is presently voyde, that he shall (without contradiction) be admitted thereunto before any Irish.

*Eudox.* This is surely a very good law, and well provided for this evill, whereof you speake; but why is not the same observed?

*Iren.* I thinke it is well observed, and that none of the bishops transgresse the same, but yet it worketh no reformation thereof for many defects. First there are no such sufficient English ministers sent over as might be presented to any bishop for any living, but the most part of such English as come over thither of themselves, are either unlearned, or men of some bad note, for which they have forsaken England. So as the bishop, to whom they shalbe presented, may justly reject them as incapable and insufficient. Secondly, the bishop himselfe isperhappes an Irish man, who being made judge, by that law, of the sufficiency of the ministers, may at his owne will, dislike of the Englishman, as unworthy in his opinion, and admit of any Irish, whom hee shall thinke move for his turne. And if hee shall at the instance of any Englishman of countenance there, whom hee will not displease, except of any such English minister as shall bee tendred unto him, yet hee will under hand carry such a hard hand over him, or by his officers wring him so sore, that hee will soone make him weary of his poore living. Lastly, the benefices themselves are so meane, and of so small profite in those Irish countreyes, thorough the ill husbandrie of the Irish people which doe inhabit them, that they will not yeelde any competent maintenance for any honest minister to live upon, scarcely to buy him a gowne. And were all this redressed (as haply it might bee) yet what good should any English minister doe amongst them, by teaching or preaching to them, which either cannot understand him, or will not heare him? Or what comfort of life shall he have, where his parishioners are so insatiable, so intractable, so ill-affected to him, as they usuall bee to all the English; or finally, how dare almost any honest minister, that are peaceable civill men, commit his safctie to the hands of such neighbours, as the boldest captaines dare scarcely dwell by?

*Eudox.* little good then (I see) was by that



statute wrought, how ever well intended; but the reformation thereof must grow higher, and be brought from a stronger ordinance, then the commandment, or penaltie of a law, which none dare informe or complain of when it is broken; but have you any more of those abuses in the clergy?

*Iren.* I could perhaps reckon more, but I perceive my speech to grow too long, and these may suffice to judge of the generall disorders which raigne amongst them; as for the particulars, they are too many to be reckoned. For the clergy there (excepting the grave fathers which are in high place about the state, and some few others which are lately planted in their \*new Colledge,) are generally bad, licentious, and most disordered.

*Eudox.* You have then (as I suppose) gone thorough those three first parts which you proposed unto your selfe, to wit, The inconveniences which you observed in the lawes, in the customes, and in the religion of that land. The which (me thinkes) you have so thoroughly touched, as that nothing more remaineth to be spoken thereof.

*Iren.* Not so thoroughly as you suppose, that nothing can remaine, but so generally as I purposed, that is, to lay open the generall evils of that realme, which doe hinder the good reformation thereof; for, to count the particular faults of private men, should be a worke too infinite; yet some there be of that nature, that though they be in private men, yet their evill reacheth to a generall hurt, as the extortion of sheriffs, and their sub-sheriffs, and bayliffes, the corruption of victuallers, cessors, and purveyors, the disorders of † seneschalls, captaines, and their souldiers, and many such like: All which I will onely name here, that their reformation may be mended in place where it most concerneth. But there is one very foule abuse, which by the way I may not omit, and that is in captaines, who notwithstanding that they are specially employed to make peace thorough strong execution of warre, yet they doe so dandle their doings, and dallie in the service to them committed, as if they would not have the enemy subdued, or utterly beaten downe, for feare lest afterwards they should need employment, and so be discharged of pay: for which cause some of them that are layde in garrison, doe so handle the matter, that they will doe no great hurt to the enemies, yet for colour sake some men they will kill, even halfe with the consent of the enemy, being persons either of base regard, or enemies to the enemy, whose heads eftsoones they send to the governor for a commendation of their great endeavour, telling how weighty a service they performed, by cutting off such and such dangerous rebells.

*Eudox.* Truly this is a prettie mockerie, and not to be permitted by the governours.

*Iren.* But how can the governour know readily what persons those were, and what the purpose of their killing was? yea and what will you say, if the captaines do iustifie this their course by ensample of some of their governours, which (under Benedicite, I doe tell it to you,) doe practise the like sleight in their governments?

*Eudox.* Is it possible? Take heed what you say Ireneus.

*Iren.* To you onely, Eudoxus, I doe tell it, and that even with great hearts grieffe, and inward trouble of mind to see her Majestie so much abused by some who are put in speciall trust of those great affaires: of which, some being martiall men, will not doe alwayes what they may for quieting of things, but will rather winke at some faults, and will suffer them unpunished, lest that (having put all things in that assurance of peace that they might) they should seeme afterwards not to be needed, nor continued in their governments with so great a charge to her Maiestie. And therefore they doe cunningly carry their course of government, and from one hand to another doe bandie the service like a tennis-ball, which they will never strike quite away, for feare lest afterwards they should want.

*Eudox.* Doe you speake of under magistrats, Ireneus, or principall governours?

*Iren.* I doe speake of no particulars, but the truth may be found out by tryall and reasonable insight into some of their doings. And if I should say, there is some blame thereof in the principall governours, I thinke I might also shew some reasonable prooffe of my speech. As for example, some of them seeing the end of their government to draw nigh, and some mischiefes and troublous practice growing up, which afterwarde may worke trouble to the next succeeding governour, will not attempt the redresse or cutting off thereof, either for feare they should leave the realme unquiet at the end of their government, or that the next that commeth, should receive the same too quiet, and so happily winne more prayse thereof then they before. And therefore they will not (as I said) seeke at all to repress that evill, but will either by granting protection for a time, or holding some emparlance with the rebell, or by treatie of commissioners, or by other like devices, onely smother and keepe downe the flame of the mischief, so as it may not breake out in their time of government: what comes afterwards, they care not, or rather wish the worst. This course hath bene noted in some governours.

*Eudox.* Surely (Ireneus) this, if it were true, should bee worthy of an heavy judgment: but it is hardly to bee thought, that any governour should so much either envie the good of that realme which is put into his hand, or defraude her Maiestie who trusteth him so much, or maligne his successor which shall possesse his place, as to suffer an evill to grow up, which he might timely have kept under, or perhaps to nourish it with coloured countenance, or such sinister means.

*Iren.* I doe not certainly avouch so much, (Eudoxus) but the sequelle of things doth in a manner proove, and plainly speake so much, that the governours usually are envious one of anothers greater glory, which if they would seeke to excell by better governing, it should be a most laudable emulation. But they doe quite otherwise. For this (as you may marke) is the common order of them, that who commeth next in place, will not follow that course of government, how ever good, which his predecessors held, either for disdaine of himselfe, or doubt to have his doings drowned in another mans praise, but will straight take a way quite contrary to the former: as if the former

\* new Colledge] Trinity Colledge by Dublin, which was founded by Queene Eliz. 3 Martij 1591. The 13. of the same moneth, its first stone was laide by Thomas Smyth, then Mayor of Dublin, and the 9. of Jan. 1593. it first admitted students. SIR JAMES WARE.

† the disorders of seneschalls,] Governours. Todd.

thought (by keeping under the Irish) to reforme them: the next, by discountenancing the English, will curry favour with the Irish, and so make his government seeme plausible, as having all the Irish at his commaund: but he that comes after, will perhappes follow neither the one nor the other, but will dandle the one and the other in such sort, as hee will sucke sweete out of them both, and leave bitterness to the poore country, which if he that comes after shall seeke to redresse, he shall perhappes find such crosses, as hee shall hardly bee able to beare, or doe any good that might worke the disgrace of his predecessors. Examples you may see hereof in the governours of late times sufficiently, and in others of former times more manifestly, when the government of that realme was committed sometimes to the Geraldines, as when the House of Yorke had the Crowne of England; sometimes to the Butlers, as when the House of Lancaster got the same. And other whiles, when an English governour was appointed, hee perhappes found enemies of both.

*Eudox.* I am sorry to heare so much as you report, and now I begin to conceive somewhat more of the cause of her continual wretchednes then heeretofore I found, and wish that this inconvenience were well looked into; for sure (me thinks) it is more weightie then all the former, and more hardly to be redressed in the governor then in the governed; as a malady in a vitall part is more incurable then in an externall.

*Iren.* You say very true; but now that we have thus ended all the abuses and inconveniences of that government which was our first part. It followeth now, that we passe unto the second part, which was of the meanes to cure and redresse the same, which wee must labour to reduce to the first beginning thereof.

*Eudox.* Right so, Irenæus: for by that which I have noted in all this your discourse, you suppose, that the whole ordinance and institution of that realmes government, was both at first, when it was placed, evil plotted, and also sithence, thorough other over-sights, came more out of square to that disorder which it is now come unto, like as two indirect lines, the further that they are drawne out, the further they goe asunder.

*Iren.* I doe see, Eudoxus, and as you say, so thinke, that the longer that government thus continueth, in the worse course will the realme be; for it is all in vaine that they now strive and endeavour by faire meanes and peaceable plotts to redresse the same, without first removing all those inconveniences, and new framing (as it were) in the forge, all that is worne out of fashion: For all other meanes will be but as lost labour, by patching up one hole to make many; for the Irish doe strongly hate and abhorre all reformation and subjection to the English, by reason that having bene once subdued by them, they were thrust out of all their possessions. So as now they feare, that if they were againe brought under, they should be likewise expelled out of all, which is the cause that they hate the English government, according to the saying, "Quem metuant oderunt:" Therefore the reformation must now bee the strength of a greater power.

*Eudox.* But he thinks that might be by making of good lawes, and establishing of new statutes, with sharpe penalties and punishments, for amending of all that is presently amisse, and not (as you sup-

pose) to beginne all as it were anew, and to alter the whole forme of the government, which how dangerous a thing it is to attempt, you your selfe must needs confesse, and they which have the managing of the realmes whole policy, cannot, without great cause, feare and refraine; for all innovation is perillous, insomuch as though it bee meant for the better, yet so many accidents and fearefull events may come betwene, as that it may hazard the losse of the whole.

*Iren.* Very true, Eudoxus; all change is to be shunned, where the affaires stand in such sort, as that they may continue in quietnes, or be assured at all to abide as they are. But that in the realme of Ireland we see much otherwise, for every day wee perceive the troubles growing more upon us, and one evil growing upon another, insomuch as there is no part now sound or ascertained, but all have their eares upright, wayting when the watchword shall come, that they should all arise generally into rebellion, and cast away the English subjection. To which there now little waiteth; for I thinke the word he already given, and there waiteth nothing but opportunitie, which truly is the death \* of one noble person, who being himselfe most stedfast to his soveraigne Queene, and his countrey, coasting upon the South-Sea, † stoppeth the ingate of all that evil which is looked for, and holdeth in all those which are at his becke, with the terrour of his greatness, and the assurance of his most immoveable loyaltie: And therefore where you thinke, that good and sound lawes might amend, and reforme things there amisse, you thinke surely amisse. For it is vaine to prescribe lawes, where no man careth for keeping of them, nor feareth the daunger for breaking of them. But all the realme is first to be reformed, and lawes are afterwards to be made for keeping and continuing it in that reformed estate.

*Eudox.* How then doe you think is the reformation thereof to be begunne, if not by lawes and ordinancees?

*Iren.* Even by the sword; for all these evils must first be cut away by a strong hand, before any good can be planted, like as the corrupt branchs and unwholesome bonghs are first to be pruned, and the foule mosse cleansed and scraped away, before the tree can bring forth any good fruite.

*Eudox.* Did you blame me even now, for wishing of Kerne, Horse-boyes, and Carrowes to be cleane cut off, as too violent a meanes, and doe you your selfe now prescribe the same medicine? Is not the sword the most violent redresse that may bee used for any evil?

*Iren.* It is so; but where no other remedie may bee devised, nor hope of recovery had, there must needs this violent meanes bee used. As for the loose kinde of people which you would have cut off, I blamed it, for that they might otherwise perhaps bee brought to good, as namely by this way which I set before you.

*Eudox.* Is not your way all one with the former in effect, which you found fault with, save only this odds, that I said by the halter, and you say by the sword? what difference is there?

\* of one noble person,] Meaning Sir Walter Raleigh. Tonn.

† stoppeth the ingate] Entrance. Again; "Those two cities do offer an ingate to the Spaniard most fitly." Tonn.

*Iren.* There is surely great, when you shall understand it; for by the sword which I named, I did not mean the cutting off all that nation with the sword, which farre bee it from mee, that I should ever thinke so desperately, or wish so uncharitably, but by the sword I meane the royall power of the Prince, which ought to stretch it selfe forth in the chiefest strength to the redressing and cutting off those evils, which I before blamed, and not of the people which are evill. For evill people, by good ordinances and government, may be made good; but the evill that is of it selfe evill, will never become good.

*Eudox.* I pray you then declare your minde at large, how you would wish that sword, which you mean, to be used to the reformation of all those evils.

*Iren.* The first thing must be to send over into that realme, such a strong power of men, as should perforce bring in all that rebellious route and loose people, which either doe now stand out in open armes, or in wandring companies doe keepe the woods, spoyling the good subjects.

*Eudox.* You speake now, Ireneus, of an infinite charge to her Majestic, to send over such an army, as should tread downe all that standeth before them on foot, and lay on the ground all the stiff-necked people of that land, for there is now but one out-law of any great reckoning, to wit, the Earle of Tyrone, abroad in armes, against whom, you see what huge charges shee hath bene at this last yeare, in sending of men, providing of victuals, and making head against him; yet there is little or nothing at all done, but the Queenes treasure spent, her people wasted, the poor countrey troubled, and the enemy nevertheless brought into no more subjection then he was, or list outwardly to shew, which in effect is none, but rather a scorne of her power, and emboldening of a proud rebell, and an encouragement to all like lewdlie disposed traytors, that shall dare to lift up their heele against their Sovereigne Lady. Therefore it were hard counsell to drawe such an exceeding great charge upon her, whose event should be so uncertaine.

*Iren.* True indeede, if the event should bee uncertaine, but the certainty of the effect hereof shall be so infallible, as that no reason can gainesay it, neither shall the charge of all this army (the which I demaund) be much greater, then so much as in these last two yeares warres, hath vainely been expended. For I dare undertake, that it hath coste the Queene above 200000 pounds already, and for the present charge, that she is now at there, amounteth to very neere 12000 pounds a moneth, whereof cast you the account; yet nothing is done. The which summe, had it bene employed as it should bee, would have effected all this which now I goe about.

*Eudox.* How meane you to have it employed, but to bee spent in the pay of souldiours, and provision of victuals?

*Iren.* Right so, but it is now not disbursed at once, as it might be, but drawne out into a long length, by sending over now 20000 pounds, and next halfe yeare 10000 pounds; so as the souldiour in the meane time for want of due provision of victual, and good payment of his due, is starved and consumed; that of a 1000 which came over lusty able men, in halfe a yeare there are not left 500. And yet is the Queenes charge never a whit

the lesse, but what is not payd in present mony, is accounted in debt, which will not be long unpaid; for the Captaine, halfe of whose souldiours are dead, and the other quarter never mustered, nor seene, comes shortly to demand payment of his whole account, where by good meanes of some great ones, and privy shareings with the officers and servants of other some, hee receiveth his debt, much lesse perhaps then was due, yet much more indeede then he justly deserved.

*Eudox.* I take this sure to be no good husbandry; for what must needs be spent, as good spend it at once, where is enough, as to have it drawne out into long delays, seeing that thereby both the service is much hindred, and yet nothing saved; but it may be, Ireneus, that the Queenes treasure in so great occasions of disbursements (as it is well knowne she hath bene at lately) is not always so ready, nor so plentifull, as it can spare so great a summe together, but being payed as it is, now some, and then some, it is no great burthen unto her, nor any great impoverishment to her coffers, seeing by such delay of time, it daillie cometh in, as fast as she parteth it out.

*Iren.* It may be as you say, but for the going thorough of so honorable a course I doubt not but if the Queenes coffers be not so well stored, (which we are not to looke into) but that the whole realme which now, as things are used, doe feele a continuall burthen of that wretched realme hanging upon their backes, would, for a small riddance of all that trouble, be once troubled for all; and put to all their shouldiers, and helping hands, and hearts also, to the defraying of that charge, most gladly and willingly; and surely the charge in effect, is nothing to the infinite great good, which should come thereby, both to the Queene, and all this realme generally, as when time serveth shall be shewed.

*Eudox.* How many men would you require to the furnishing of this which yee take in hand? and how long space would you have them entertained?

*Iren.* Verily not above 10000. footemen, and a 1000. horse, and all these not above the space of a yeare and a halfe, for I would still, as the beate of the service abateth, abate the number in pay, and make other provision for them, as I will shew.

*Eudox.* Surely it seemeth not much which you require, nor no long time; but how would you have them used? would you leade forth your army against the enemy, and seeke him where he is to fight?

*Iren.* No, Eudoxus; that would not be, for it is well knowne that he is a flying enemy, hiding himselfe in woodes and bogges, from whence he will not drawe forth, but into some straight passage or perillous foord, where he knowes the army must needs passe; there will he lye in waite, and, if hee finde advantage fit, will dangerously hazard the troubled souldiour. Therefore to seeke him out that still flitteth, and follow him that can hardly bee found, were vaine and bootlesse; but I would divide my men in garrison upon his countrey, in such places as I should thinke might most annoy him.

*Eudox.* But how can that be, Ireneus, with so few men? for the enemy, as you now see, is not all in one countrey, but some in Ulster, some in Connaught, and others in Leinster. So as to plant strong garrisons in all those places should need many more men then you speake of, or to plant

all in one, and to leave the rest naked, should be put to leave them to the spoyle.

*Iren.* I would wish the cheife power of the army to be garrisoned in one cuntry that is strongest, and the other upon the rest that is weakest: As for example, the Earle of Tyrone is now accepted the strongest, upon him would I lay 8000 men in garrison, 1000 upon Pheagh Mac-Hugh and the Cavanaghes, and 1000 upon some parts of Connaught, to be at the direction of the Governour.

*Eudox.* I see now all your men bestowed, but what places would you set their garrison that they might rise out most conveniently to service? and though perhaps I am ignorant of the places, yet I will take the mappe of Ireland, and lay it before me, and make mine eyes (in the meane time) my schoole-masters, to guide my understanding to judge of your plot.

*Iren.* Those eight thousand in Ulster I would divide likewise into feure parts, so as there should be 2000 footemen in every garrison; the which I would thus place. Upon the Blaek water, in some convenient place, as high upon the river as might be, I would lay one garrison. Another would I put at Castle-liffer, or thereabouts, so as they should have all the passages upon the river to Loughfoyle. The third I would place about Fermanagh or Bundroise, so as they might lye betweene Connaght and Ulster, to serve upon both sides, as occasion shall be offered, and this therefore would I have stronger than any of the rest, because it should be most infereed, and most imployed, and that they might put wardes at Balls-shanon and Belick, and all those passages. The last would I set about Monaghan or Balturbut, so as it should fronte both upon the enemy that way, and also keepe the countreys of Cavan and Meath in awe, from passage of stragglers from these parts, whence they use to come forth, and oftentimes use to werke much mischeife. And to every of these garrisons of 2000. footemen, I would have 200. hersemen added, for the one without the other can doe but little service. The 4 garrisons, thus being placed, I would have to be victualled before hand for halfe a yeare, which you will say to be hard, considering the corruption and usuall waste of victuals. But why should not they be aswell victualled for so long time, as the ships are usually for a yeare, and sometimes two, seeing it is easier to keepe victual on land then water? Their bread I would have in flower, so as it might be baked still to serve their necessary want. Their beere there also brewed within them, from time to time, and their beefe before hand balled, the which may be used but as it is needed: For I make no doubt but fresh victuals they will sometimes purvey for themselves, amongst their enemies. Hereunto likewise would I have them have a store of hose and shoes, with such other necessaries as may be needefull for souldiours, so as they shall have no occasion to looke for reliefe from abroad, or occasion of such trouble, for their continual supply, as I see and have often proved in Ireland to be more cumbeous to the Deputy, and dangerous to them that relieve them, then halfe the leading of an army; for the enemy, knowing the ordinary wayes thorough the which their reliefe must be brought them, useth commonly to draw himselfe into the straight passages thitherward, and oftentimes doth dangerously distresse them; besides the pay of such force as should be sent for their cen-

voy, the charge of the carriages, the exactions of the cuntry shall be spared. But only every halfe yeare the supply brought by the Deputy himselfe, and his power, who shall then visite and overlooke all those garrisons, to see what is needefull to change, what is expedient, and to direct what hee shall best advise. And these 4 garrisons issuing forth, at such convenient times as they shall have intelligence or espial upon the enemy, will so drive him from one side to another, and tennis him amongst them, that he shall finde no where safe to keepe his creete in, nor hide himselfe, but flying from the fire shall fall into the water, and out of one danger into another, that in short space his creete, which is his cheife sustenance, shall be wasted with preying, or killed with driving, or starved for want of pasture in the woods, and he himselfe brought so lowe, that he shall have no heart nor ability to indure his wretchednesse, the which will surely come to passe in very short time; for one wiuter well fellowed upon him will so plucke him on his knees, that he will never be able to stand up againe.

*Eudox.* Doe you then thinke the winter time fittest for the services of Ireland? how falls it then that our most impleyments be in summer, and the armies then led comenly ferth?

*Iren.* It is surely misconceived; for it is not with Ireland as it is with other cuntries, where the warres flame most in summer, and the helmets glister brightest in the fairest sunshine: But in Ireland the winter yeeldeth best services, for then the trees are bare and naked, which use both to cloath and house the kerne; the ground is cold and wet, which useth to be his bedding; the aire is sharpe and bitter, to blewe thorough his naked sides and legges; the kyne are barren and without milke, which useth to be his onely foode, neither if he kill them, will they yeeld him flesh, nor if he keepe them, will they give him food, besides being all with calfe (fer the most part) they will, thorough much chasing and driving, east all their calves, and lese their milke, which should relieve him the next summer.

*Eudox.* I doe well understand your reason; but by your leave, I have heard it otherwise said, of some that were outlawes: That in summer they kept themselves quiet, but in winter they would play their parts, and when the nights were longest, then burne and spoyle most, so that they might safely returne before day.

*Iren.* I have likewise heard, and also scene profe thereof true: But that was of such outlawes as were either abiding in well inhabited cuntries, as in Mounster, or bordering on the English pale, as Feagh Mac Hugh, the Cavanaghes, the Moors, the Dempseys, or such like: For, fer them the winter indeede is the fittest time for speyling and rebbing, because the nights are then (as you said) longest and darkest, and also the cuntries round about are then most full of corne, and good provision to be gotten every where by them, but it is farre otherwise with a strong peopled enemy, that possesse a whole cuntry; for the ether being but a few, and indeede privily lodged, and kept in out villages, and corners nigh to the woodes and mountaines, by some of their privy friends, to whom they bring their spoyles and stealthes, and of whom they continually receive secret reliefe; but the open enemy having all his cuntry wasted, what by himselfe,

and what by the souldiours, findeth them succour in no place : Townes there are none, of which he may get spoyle, they are all burnt : bread he hath none, he ploweth not in summer : Flesh he hath, but if he kill it in winter, he shall want milke in summer, and shortly want life. Therefore if they bee well followed but one winter, you shall have little worke with them the next summer.

*Eudox.* I doe now well perceive the difference, and doe verily thinke that the winter time is there fittest for service ; withall I conceive the manner of your handling of the service, by drawing suddaine draughts upon the enemy, when he looketh not for you, and to watch advantages upon him, as hee doth upon you. By which straight keeping of them in, and not suffering them at any time long to rest, I must needs thinke that they will soone be brought lowe, and driven to great extremities. All which when you have performed, and brought them to the very last cast, suppose that they will offer, either to come to you and submit themselves, or that some of them will seeke to withdraw themselves, what is your advice to doe ? will you have them received ?

*Iren.* No, but at the beginning of those warres, and when the garrisons are well planted, and fortified, I would wish a proclamation were made generally, to come to their knowledge : That what persons soever would within twenty dayes absolutely submit themselves, (excepting onely the very principalls and ring-leaders,) should finde grace : I doubt not, but upon the settling of these garrisons, such a terror and neere consideration of their perillous state, would be stricken into most of them, that they will covet to drawe away from their leaders. And againe I well know that the rebells themselves (as I saw by prooffe in Desmonds warre) will turne away all their rascal people, whom they thinke unserviceable, as old men, women, children, and lyndes, (which they call churles,) which would onely waste their victualls, and yeeld them no ayde ; but their cattle they will surely keepe away : These therefore, though policy would turne them backe againe, that they might the rather consume and afflict the other rebells, yet in a pittifull commiseration I would wish them to be received ; the rather for that this sort of base people doth not for the most part rebell of themselves, having no heart thereunto, but are by force drawne by the grand rebells into their action, and carryed away with the violence of the streame, else they should be sure to leese all that they have, and perhaps their lives too : The which they now carry unto them, in hope to enjoy them there, but they are there by the strong rebells themselves, soone turned out of all, so that the constraint hereof may in them deserve pardon. Likewise if any of their able men or gentlemen shall then offer to come away, and to bring their cattle with them, as some no doubt may steale them away privily, I wish them also to be received, for the disabling of the enemy, but withall, that good assurance may be taken for their true behaviour and absolute submission, and that then they be not suffered to remaine any longer in those parts, no nor about the garrisons, but sent away into the inner parts of the realme, and dispersed in such sort as they may not come together, nor easily returne if they would : For if they might bee suffered to remaine about the garrisons, and there inhabite, as they will offer to till the ground, and yeeld a great part of the profit thereof, and of their cattle, to the

Coronell, wherewith they have heretofore tempted many, they would (as I have by experience knowne) bee ever after such a gaule and inconvenience to them, as that their profit shall not recompence their hurt ; for they will privily relieve their friends that are forth ; they will send the enemy secret advertizements of all their purposes and journeyes, which they meane to make upon them ; they will not also sticke to drawe the enemy privily upon them, yea and to betray the forte it selfe, by discovery of all her defects and disadvantages (if any be) to the cutting of all their throates. For avoiding whereof and many other inconveniences, I wish that they should be carried faure from thence into some other parts, so that (as I say) they come in and submit themselves, upon the first summons : But afterwards I would have none received, but left to their fortune and miserable end : my reason is, for that those which will afterwards remaine without, are stout and obstinate rebells, such as will never be made dutifull and obedient, nor brought to labour or civill conversation, having once tasted that licentious life, and being acquainted with spoyle and out-rages, will ever after be ready for the like occasions, so as there is no hope of their amendment or recovery, and therefore needefull to be cut off.

*Eudox.* Surely of such desperate persons, as will follow the course of their owne folly, there is no compassion to be had, and for others you have proposed a mercifull meanes, much more then they have deserved, but what then shall be the conclusion of this warre ? for you have prefixed a short time of its continuance.

*Iren.* The end will (I assure me) bee very short and much sooner then can be in so great a trouble, as it seemeth hoped for, although there should none of them fall by the sword, nor bee slaine by the souldiour, yet thus being kept from manurance, and their cattle from running abroad, by this hard restraint they would quickly consume themselves, and devoure one another. The prooffe whereof, I saw sufficiently exemplid in these late warres of Mounster ; for notwithstanding that the same was a most rich and plentifull cuntry, full of corne and cattle, that you would have thought they should have beene able to stand long, yet ere one yeare and a halfe they were brought to such wretchednesse, as that any stony heart would have rued the same. Out of every corner \* of the woods and glynnes they came creeping forth upon their hands, for their legges could not beare them ; they looked like anatomies of death, they spake like ghosts crying out of their graves ; they did eate the dead carrions, happy where they could finde them, yea, and one another soone after, inasomuch as the very carcasses they spared not to scrape out of their graves ; and, if they found a plot of water-cresses or shamrocks, there they flocked as to a feast for the time, yet not able long to continue therewithall ; that in short space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentifull cuntry suddainely left voyde of man and beast ; yet sure in all that warre, there perished not many by the sword, but all by the extremitie of famine, which they themselves had wrought.

*Eudox.* It is a wonder that you tell, and more

\* of the woods and glynnes] *Glen*s, that is, dales or vallies ; here spelt in the original edition *glynn*s perhaps in conformity to the Irish pronunciation. Todd.

to bee wondred how it should so shortly come to passe.

*Iren.* It is most true, and the reason also very ready; for you must conceive that the strength of all that nation, is the Kerne, Galloglasse, Stocah, Horseman, and Horseboy, the which having bene never used to have any thing of their owne, and now being upon spoyle of others, make no spare of any thing, but havocke and confusion of all they meet with, whether it bee their owne friends goods, or their foes. And if they happen to get never so great spoyle at any time, the same they waste and consume in a tryce, as naturally delighting in spoyle, though it doe themselves no good. On the other side, whatsoever they leave unspent, the souldier when hee commeth there, spoyleth and havocketh likewise, so that betweene both nothing is very shortly left. And yet this is very necessary to bee done for the soone finishing of the warre, and not onely this in this wise, but also those subjects which doe border upon those parts, are either to bee removed and drawne away, or likewise to bee spoyled, that the enemy may find no succour thereby. For what the souldier spares, the rebell will surely spoyle.

*Eudox.* I doe now well understand you. But now when all things are brought to this passe, and all filled with these ruefull spectacles of so many wretched carcasses starving, goodly countreys wasted, so huge desolation and confusion, that even I that doe but heare it from you, and do picture it in my minde, doe greatly pittie and commiserate it. If it shall happen, that the state of this miserie and lamentable image of things shall bee tolde, and feelingly presented to her Sacred Maiestie, being by nature full of mercy and clemency, who is most inclinable to such pittifull complaints, and will not endure to heare such tragedies made of her poore people and subjects, as some about her may insinuate; then she perhappes, for very compassion of such calamities, will not onely stoppe the streame of such violences, and returne to her wonted mildnesse, but also come them little thanks which have bene the authours and counsellours of such bloodie platformes. So I remember that in the late government of that good Lord Grey, when after long travell, and many perillous assayes, he had brought things almost to this passe that you speake of, that it was even made ready for reformation, and might have bene brought to what her Maiestie would, like complaint was made against him, that he was a bloodie man, and regarded not the life of her subjects no more then dogges, but had wasted and consumed all, so as now she had nothing almost left, but to raigne in their ashes; eare was soon lent therunto, and all suddenly turned topside-turvy; the noble Lord eft-soones was blamed; the wretched people pittied; and new counsells plotted, in which it was concluded that a general pardon should be sent over to all that would accept of it, upon which \* all former purposes were blancked, the Governour at a bay, and not only all that great and long charge which shee had before bene at quite lost and cancelled, but also that hope of good which was even at the doore put back, and cleane frustrated. All which, whether it be true, or no, your selfe can well tell.

*Iren.* Too true, Eudoxus, the more the pittie, for I may not forget so memorable a thing: neither can I bee ignorant of that perillous device, and of the whole meanes by which it was compassed, and very cunningly contrived by sowing first dissention betweene him, and an other Noble Personage; wherein they both at length found how notably they had bene abused, and how thereby under hand this universall alteration of things was brought about, but then too late to stay the same; for in the meane time all that was formerly done with long labor, and great toyle, was (as you say) in a moment undone, and that good Lord blotted with the name of a bloody man, whom, who that well knew, knew to be most gentle, affable, loving, and temperate; but that the necessitie of that present state of things inforced him to that violence, and almost changed his natural disposition. But otherwise he was so farre from delighting in blood, that oftentimes he suffered not just vengeance to fall where it was deserved: and even some of them which were afterwarde his accusers, had tasted too much of his mercy, and were from the gallows brought to bee his accusers. But his course indeede was this, that hee spared not the heades and principalls of any mischievous practises or rebellion, but shewed sharpe iudgement on them, chiefly for ensamples sake, that all the meaner sort, which also were generally then infected with that evil, might by terrour thereof bee reclaymed, and saved, if it were possible. For in the last conspiracy of some of the English Pale, thinke you not that there were many more guiltie then they that felt the punishment? yet hee touched only a few of special note; and in the tryall of them also even to prevent the blame of cruelty and partiall proceeding, and seeking their blood, which he, as in his great wisdom (as it seemeth) did fore-see would bee objected against him; hee, for the avoyding thereof, did use a singular discretion and regard. For the Iury that went upon their tryall, hee made to bee chosen out of their nearest kinsmen, and their Iudges he made of some of their owne fathers, of others their uncles and dearest friends, who when they could not but justly condemne them, yet hee uttered their judgment in abundance of teares, and yet hee even herein was called bloody and cruell.

*Eudox.* Indeede so have I heard it heere often spoken, but I perceive (as I alwayes verily thought) that it was most unjustly, for hee was alwayes knowne to bee a most iust, sincere, godly, and right noble man, farre from such sternenesse, farre from such unrighteousnesse. But in that sharpe execution of the Spaniards, at the Fort of Smerwicke, I heard it specially noted, and if it were true as some reported, surely it was a great touch to him in honour, for some say that he promised them life; others at least hee did put them in hope thereof.

*Iren.* Both the one and the other is most untrue; for this I can assure you, my selfe being as neare them as any, that hee was so farre either from promising, or putting them in hope, that when first their Secretarie (called, as I remember) Signior Jeffrey an Italian, being sent to treat with the Lord Deputie for grace, was flatly refused; and afterwards their \* Coronell named Don Sebastian, came forth to intreat that they might part with

\* all former purposes were blancked,] Confounded or disappointed. Todd.

\* Coronell] The old word for Colonel. Todd.

their armes like souldiers, at least with their lives according to the custome of warre, and law of nations; it was strongly denied him, and tolde him by the Lord Deputie himselfe, that they could not justly pleade either custome of warre, or law of nations, for that they were not any lawfull enemies, and if they were, hee willed them to shew by what commission they came thither into another Princes dominions to warre, whether from the Pope or the King of Spaine, or any other; the which when they said they had not, but were onely adventurers that came to seeke fortune abroad, and to serve in warre amongst the Irish, who desired to entertaine them; it was then tolde them, that the Irish themselves, as the Earle and John of Desmond, with the rest, were no lawfull enemies; but rebels and traytours; and therefore they that came to succour them, no better then rogues and runnagates, specially comming with no licence, nor commission from their owne King: So as it should bee dishonourable for him in the name of his Queene, to condition or make any tearmes with such rascalls, but left them to their choyce, to yeeld and submit themselves, or no: Whereupon the said Colonell did absolutely yeeld himselfe and the fort, with all therein, and craved onely mercy, which it being not thought good to shew them, for daunger of them, if, being saved, they should afterwarde ioyne with the Irish; and also for terrour to the Irish, who are much emboldened by those forraigne succours, and also put in hope of more ere long; there was no other way but to make that short end of them as was made. Therefore most untruely and maliciously doe these evill tongues backbite and slander the sacred ashes of that most iust and honourable personage, whose least vertue of many most excellent that abounded in his heroicke spirit, they were never able to aspire unto.

*Eudox.* Truly, Irenæus, I am right glad to be thus satisfied by you, in that I have often heard questioned, and yet was never able till now, to choake the mouth of such detractours, with the certaine knowledge of their slanderous untruthes, neither is the knowledge hereof impertinent to that which wee formerly had in hand, I meane for the thorough prosecuting of that sharpe course which you have set downe for the bringing under of those rebells of Ulster and Connaght, and preparing a way for their perpetuall reformation, least haply, by any such sinister suggestions of crueltie and too much blood-shed, all the plot might be overthrowne, and all the coste and labour therein employed bee utterly lost and cast away.

*Iren.* You say most true; for, after that Lords calling away from thence, the two Lords Iustices continued but a while: of which the one was of minde (as it seemed) to have continued in the footing of his predecessors, but that he was curbed and restrayned. But the other was more mildly disposed, as was meeete for his profession, and willing to have all the wounds of that commonwealth healed and recured, but not with that heede as they should bee. After, when Sir John Perrot succeeding (as it were) into another mans harvest, found an open way to what course hee list, the which hee bent not to that point which the former governours intended, but rather quite contrary, as it were in scorne of the former, and in vaine vaunt of his owne counsell, with the which hee was too willfully carryed; for hee did treade downe and

disgrace all the English, and set up and countenance the Irish all that hee could, whether thinking thereby to make them more tractable and buxome to his government, (wherein hee thought much amisse,) or privily plotting some other purposes of his owne, as it partly afterwards appeared; but surely his manner of government could not be sound nor wholesome for that realme, it being so contrary to the former. For it was even as two physicians should take one sicke body in hand, at two sundry times: of which the former would minister all things meeete to purge and keepe under the bodie, the other to pamper and strengthen it suddenly againe, whereof what is to bee looked for but a most dangerous relapse? That which wee now see thorough his rule, and the next after him, happened thereunto, being now more dangerously sicke then ever before. Therefore by all meanes it must bee fore-seene and assured, that after once entering into this course of reformation, there hee afterwarde no remorse nor drawing backe for the sight of any such ruefull objects, as must thereupon followe, nor for compassion of their calamities, seeing that by no other meanes it is possible to cure them, and that these are not of will, but of very urgent necessitie.

*Eudox.* Thus farre then you have now proceeded to plant your garrisons, and to direct their services, of the which neverthelesse I must needs conceive that there cannot be any certaine direction set downe, so that they must follow the occasions which shall bee daylie offered, and diligently awayted. But by your leave (Irenæus) notwithstanding all this your carefull fore-sight and provision (mee thinks) I see an evill hulke unespyed, and that may chance to hazard all the hope of this great service, if it bee not very well looked into, and that is, the corruption of their captaines; for though they be placed never so carefully, and their companies filled never so sufficiently, yet may they, if they list, discarde whom they please, and send away such as will perhappes willingly bee ridde of that dangerous and hard service, the which (well I wote) is their common custome to doe, when they are layde in garrison, for then they may better hide their defaults, then when they are in campe, where they are continually eyed and noted of all men. Besides, when their pay commeth, they will (as they say) detain the greatest portions thereof at their pleasure, by a hundred shifts that need not here be named, through which they oftentimes deceive the souldier, and abuse the Queene, and greatly hinder the service. So that let the Queene pay never so fully, let the muster-master view them never so diligently, let the deputy or generall looke to them never so exactly, yet they can cozen them all. Therefore me-thinks it were good, if it be possible, to make provision for this inconvenience.

*Iren.* It will surely be very hard; but the chiefest helpe for prevention hereof must be the care of the coronell that hath the government of all his garrison, to have an eye to their alterations, to know the numbers and names of the sick souldiers, and the slaine, to marke and observe their ranks in their daylie rising forth to service, by which he cannot easily bee abused, so that hee himselfe bee a man of speciall assurance and integritie. And therefore great regard is to bee had in the choosing and appointing of them. Besides, I would not by any meanes, that the captaines should have the

paying of their souldiers, but that there should bee a pay-master appointed, of special trust, which should pay every man according to his captaines ticket, and the account of the clerke of his band, for by this meanes the captaine will never seeke to falsifie his alterations, nor to diminish his company, nor to deceive his souldiers, when nothing thereof shalbe sure to come unto himselfe, but what is his owne bare pay. And this is the manner of the Spaniards captaine, who never hath to meddle with his souldiers pay, and indeed scorneth the name as base, to be counted \* his souldiers pagadore; whereas the contrary amongst us hath brought things to so bad a passe, that there is no captaine, but thinks his band very sufficient, if hee can muster 60: and stickes not to say openly, that he is unworthy to have a captainship, that cannot make it worth 500*l.* by the yeare, the which they right well verifie by the prooffe.

*Eudox.* Truly I thinke this is a very good meanes to avoid that inconvenience of captaines abuses. But what say you to the coronell? what authority thinke you meete to be given him? whether will you allow him to protect or safe conduct, and to have martiall lawes as they are accustomed?

*Iren.* Yea verily, but all these to be limited with very strait instructions. As first for protections, that hee shall have authority after the first proclamation, for the space of twentie dayes, to protect all that shall come in, and them to send to the Lord Deputy, with their safe conduct or passe, to bee at his disposition, but so as none of them returne backe againe, being once come in, but be presently sent away out of the country, to the next sheriffe, and so conveyed in safetie. And likewise for martiall lawe, that to the souldier it bee not extended, but by tryall formerly of his crime, by a iury of his fellow souldiers as it ought to bee, and not rashly, at the will or displeasure of the coronell, as I have sometimes seene too lightly. And as for other of the rebells that shall light into their handes, that they bee well aware of what condition they bee, and what holding they have. For, in the last generall warres there, I knew many good freeholders executed by martiall law, whose landes were thereby saved to their heires, which should have otherwise escheated to her Majestie. In all which, the great discretion and uprightness of the coronell himselfe is to bee the cheifest stay both for all those doubtis, and for many other difficulities that may in the service happen.

*Eudox.* Your caution is very good; but now touching the arch-rebell himselfe, I meane the Earle of Tyrone, if he, in all the time of these warres, should offer to come in and submit himselfe to her Majestie, would you not have him received, giving good hostages, and sufficient assurance of himselfe?

*Iren.* No, marrie; for there is no doubt, but hee will offer to come in, as hee hath done divers times already, but it is without any intent of true submission, as the effect hath well shewed, neither indeed can hee now, if hee would, come in at all, nor give that assurance of himselfe that should bee meete: for being as hee is very subtle headed, seeing himselfe now so farre engaged in this bad

action, can you thinke that by his submission, hee can purchase to himselfe any safetie, but that heereafter, when things shall bee quieted, these his villainies will be ever remembered? and whensoever hee shall treade awry, (as needs the most righteous must sometimes) advantage will bee taken thereof, as a breach of his pardon, and hee brought to a reckoning for all former matters; besides, how hard it is now for him to frame himselfe to subjection, that having once set before his eyes the hope of a kingdome, hath therunto not onely found encouragement from the greatest king in Christendome, but also found great faintnes in her Maiesties withstanding him, whereby he is animated to thinke that his power is able to defend him, and offend further then he hath done, whensoever he please, let every reasonable man iudge. But if hee himselfe should come and leave all other, his accomplices without, as O Donel, Mac Mahone, Maguire, and the rest, he must needs thinke that then even they will ere long cut his throate, which having drawne them all into this occasion, now in the midst of their trouble giveth them the slip; whereby hee must needs perceive how impossible it is for him to submit himselfe. But yet if hee would so doe, can he give any good assurance of his obedience? For how weake hould is there by hostages, hath too often bene proved, and that which is spoken of taking Shane O-Neales sonnes from him, and setting them up against him as a very perillous counsaile, and not by any meanes to be put in prooffe; for were they let forth and could overthrow him, who should afterwards overthrow them, or what assurance can be had of them? It will be like the tale in *Æsop*, of the wild horse, who, having enmity with the stagg, came to a man to desire his ayde against his foe, who yeelding thereunto, mounted upon his backe, and so following the stagg, ere long slew him, but then when the horse would have him alight he refused, but ever after kept him in his subjection and service. Such I doubt would bee the prooffe of Shane O-Neales sonnes. Therefore it is most dangerous to attempt any such plot; for even that very manner of plot, was the meanes by which this trayterous Earle is now made great: For when the last O-Neale, called Terlagh Leinagh, began to stand upon some tickle termes, this fellow then, called Baron of Dunganon, \* was set up as it were to beard him, and contentenanced and strengthened by the Queene so far, as that he is now able to keepe her selfe play: much like unto a gamester that having lost all, borroweth of his next fellow-gamester somewhat to maintaine play, which he setting unto him againe, shortly thereby winneth all from the winner.

*Eudox.* Was this rebell then set up at first by the Queene (as you say) and now become so unduftill?

*Iren.* He was (I assure you) the most outcast of all the O-Neales then, and lifted up by her Majestie out of the dust, to that he hath now wrought himselfe unto, and now hee playeth like the frozen snake, who being for compassion relieved by the husbandman, soone after he was warme began to hisse, and threaten danger even to him and his.

*Eudox.* He surely then deserveth the punishment of that snake, and should worthily be hewed

\* his souldiers pagadore;] *Pagador*, Spanish; a pay-master or treasurer. *TOOD.*

\* was set up as it were to beard him,] *To affront him.* *TOOD.*



to peeces. But if you like not the letting forth of Shane O-Neales sonnes against him, what say you then of that advice which (I heard) was given by some, to draw in Scotts, to serve against him? how like you that advice?

*Iren.* Much worse then the former; for who that is experienced in those parts knoweth not that the O-Neales are nearely allyed unto the Mac-Neiles of Scotland, and to the Earle of Argyre, from whence they use to have all succours of those Scottes and Redshankes: Besides all these Scottes are, through long continuance, intermingled and allyed to all the inhabitants of the North? so as there is no hope that they will ever be wrought to serve faithfully against their old friends and kinsmen: And though they would, how when they have overthrowne him, and the warres are finished, shall they themselves be put out? Doe we not all know, that the Scottes were the first inhabitants of all the North, and that those which now are called the North Irish, are indeed very Scottes, which challenge the ancient inheritance and dominion of that country, to be their owne aunciently: This then were but to leap out of the pan into the fire: For the cheifest caveat and provision in reformation of the North, must be to keep out those Scottes.

*Eudox.* Indeede I remember, that in your discourse of the first peopling of Ireland, you shewed that the Scythians or Scottes were the first that sate downe in the North, whereby it seemes that they may challenge some right therein. How comes it then that O-Neale claimes the dominion thereof, and this Earle of Tyrone saith that the right is in him? I pray you resolve me herein? for it is very needfull to be knowne, and maketh unto the right of the warre against him, whose successe useth commonly to be according to the justnes of the cause, for which it is made: For if Tyrone have any right in that seigniory (me thinkes) it should be wrong to thrust him out: Or if (as I remember) you said in the beginning, that O-Neale, when he acknowledged the King of England for his leige Lord and Sovereigne, did (as he alleadgeth) reserve in the same submission his seigniories and rights unto himselfe, what should it be accounted to thrust him out of the same?

*Iren.* For the right of O-Neale in the seigniory of the North, it is surely none at all: For besides that the Kings of England conquered all the realme, and thereby assumed and invested all the right of that land to themselves and their heires and successors for ever, so as nothing was left in O-Neale but what he received backe from them, O-Neale himselfe never had any ancient seigniory over that country, but what by usurpation and incroachment after the death of the Duke of Clarence, he got upon the English, whose lands and possessions being formerly wasted by the Scottes, under the leading of Edward le Bruce, (as I formerly declared unto you) he eft-soones entred into, and sithence hath wrongfully detained, through the other occupations and great affaires which the Kings of England (soone after) fell into here at home, so as they could not intend to the recovery of that country of the North, nor restraine the insolency of O-Neale; who, finding none now to withstand him, raigned in that desolation, and made himselfe Lord of those few people that remained there, upon whom ever sithence he hath continued his first usurped power, and now exacteth and ex-

torteth upon all men what he list; so that now to subdue or expell an usurper, should bee no unjust enterprise or wrongfull warre, but a restitution of auncient right unto the crowne of England, from whence they were most unjustly expelled and long kept out.

*Eudox.* I am very glad herein to be thus satisfied by you, that I may the better satisfie them, whom I have often heard to object these doubts, and slaunderously to barke at the courses which are held against that trayterous Earle and his adherents. But now that you have thus settled your service for Ulster and Connaght, I would bee glad to heare your opinion for the prosecuting of Feagh Mac Hugh, who being but a base villaine, and of himselfe of no power, yet so continually troubleth the state, notwithstanding that he lyeth under their nose, that I disdaine his bold arrogancy, and thinke it to be the greatest indignity to the Queene that may be, to suffer such a caytiffe to play such *Rez*, and by his ensamble not onely to give heart and incoragement to all such bad rebels, but also to yeeld them succour and refuge against her Majesty, whensoever they fly unto his Comericke, whereof I would first wish before you enter into your plot of service against him, that you should lay open by what meanes he, being so base, first lifted himselfe up to this dangerous greatnes, and how he maintaineth his part against the Queene and her power, notwithstanding all that hath bene done and attempted against him. And whether also hee have any pretence of right in the lands which he holdeth, or in the warres that he maketh for the same?

*Iren.* I will so, at your pleasure, and will further declare, not only the first beginning of his private house, but also the original of the Sept of the Birnes and Tooles, so farre as I have learned the same from some of themselves, and gathered the rest by reading: The people of the Birnes and Tooles (as before I shewed unto you my conjecture) descended from the auncient Brittaines, which first inhabited all those easterne parts of Ireland, as their names doe betoken: for Brin in the british language signifieth woody, and Toole hilly, which names it seemeth they tooke of the countreyes which they inhabited, which is all very mountainous and woody. In the which it seemeth that ever since the comming in of the English with \*Dermot ni-Gall, they have continued: Whether that their countrey being so rude and mountainous was of them despised, and thought unworthy the inhabiting, or that they were received to grace by them, and suffered to enjoy their lands, as unfit for any other, yet it seemeth that in some places of the same they have put foote, and fortified with sundry castles, of which the ruines onely doe there now remaine, since which time they are growne to that strength, that they are able to lift up hand against all that state; and now lately through the boldnes and late good successe of this Feagh Mac Hugh, they are so farre emboldened, that they threaten peril even to Dublin, over whose necke they continually hang. But touching your demand of this Feaghes right unto that countrey which he claimes, or the seigniory therein, it is most vaine and arro-

\* *Dermot ni-Gall.*] Dermot Mac Morrogh, King of Leinster, who was surnamed ni Gall, as being a friend to the English, and chief instrument in inciting them to the conquest of Ireland. SIR JAMES WARE.

gant. For this you cannot be ignorant, that it was part of that which was given in inheritance by Dermot Mac Morrough, King of Leinster, unto Strongbowe with his daughter, and which Strongbowe gave over unto the King and his heires, so as the right is absolutely now in her Majesty, and if it were not, yet could it not be in this Feagh, but in 'O Brin, which is the ancient Lord of all that country; for he and his ancestors were but followers unto O Brin; and his grandfather Shane Mac Terlagh, was a man of meanest regard amongst them, neither having wealth nor power. But his sonne Hugh Mac Shane, the father of this Feagh, first began to lift up his head, and through the strength and great fastnes of Glan-Malor, which adjoyneth unto his house of Ballinecor, drew unto him many thieves and out-lawes, which fled unto the succour of that glynne, as to a sanctuary, and brought unto him part of the spoyle of all the countrey, through which he grew strong, and in short space got unto himselfe a great name thereby amongst the Irish, in whose footing this his sonne continuing, hath, through many unhappy occasions, increased his said name, and the opinion of his greatnes, insomuch that now he is become a dangerous enemy to deale withall.

*Eudox.* Surely I can commend him, that being of himselfe so meane condition, hath through his owne hardnesse lifted himselfe up to the height, that he dare now front princes, and make tearmes with great potentates; the which as it is to him honourable, so it is to them most disgracefull, to be bearded of such a base varlet, that being but of late growne out of the dunghill, beginneth now to over-crow so high mountaines, and make himselfe great protectour of all outlawes and rebells that will repaire unto him. But doe you thinke he is now so dangerous an enemy as he is counted, or that it is so hard to take him downe as some suppose?

*Iren.* No verily, there is no great reckoning to bee made of him; for had he ever bene taken in hand, when the rest of the realme (or at least the parts adjoining) had been quiet, as the honourable gent. that now governeth there (I meane Sir William Russell) gave a notable attempt thereunto, and had worthily performed it, if his course had not bene crossed unhappily, he could not have stood 3. moneths, nor ever have looked up against a very meane power: but now all the parts about him being up in a madding moode, as the Moores in Leix, the Cavenaghes in the county of Wexford, and some of the Butlers in the county of Kilkenny, they all flocke unto him, and drawe into his countrey, as to a strong hould, where they thinke to be safe from all that prosecute them: And from thence they doe at their pleasures breake out into all the borders adjoining, which are well peopled countreys, as the counties of Dublin, of Kildare, of Catherlagh, of Kilkenny, of Wexford, with the spoiles whereof they victuall and strengthen themselves, which otherwise should in short time be starved, and sore pined; so that what he is of himselfe, you may hereby perceive.

*Eudox.* Then by so much as I gather out of your speech, the next way to end the warres with him, and to roote him out quite, should be to keepe him from invading of those countreys adjoining, which (as I suppose) is to be done, either by drawing all the inhabitants of those next borders away, and leaving them utterly waste, or by planting garrisons

upon all those frontiers about him, that, when he shall breake forth, may set upon him and shorten his returne.

*Iren.* You conceive very rightly, Eudoxus, but for that the dispeopling and driving away all the inhabitants from the countrey about him, which you speake of, should be a great confusion and trouble, aswell for the unwillingnesse of them to leave their possessions, as also for placing and providing for them in other countreys, (me thinkes) the better course should be by planting of garrisons about him, which whensoever he shall looke forth, or be drawne out with the desire of the spoyle of those borders, or for necessity of victuall, shall be alwayes ready to intercept his going or comming.

*Eudox.* Where then doe you wish those garrisons to be planted that they may serve best against him, and how many in every garrison?

*Iren.* I my selfe, by reason that (as I told you) I am no martiall man, will not take upon me to direct so dangerous affaires, but onely as I understood by the purposes and plots, which the Lord Gray who was well experienced in that service, against him did lay downe: To the performance whereof he onely required 1000. men to be laid in 6. garrisons, that is, at Ballinecor 200. footemen and 50. horsemen, which should shut him out of his great glynne, whereto he so much trusteth; at Knockelough 200. footemen and 50. horsemen, to answer the county of Catherlagh; at Arclo or Wicklow 200. footemen and 50. horsemen to defend all that side towards the sea. In Shillelagh 100. footemen which should cut him from the Cavanaghes, and the county of Wexford; and about the three castles 50. horsemen, which should defend all the county of Dublin; and 100. footemen at Talhots Towne, which should keepe him from breaking out into the county of Kildare, and be alwayes on his necke on that side: The which garrisons so laide, will so busie him, that he shall never rest at home, nor stirre forth abroad but he shall be had; as for his creeete they cannot be above ground, but they must needs fall into their hands or starve, for he hath no fastnes nor refuge for them. And as for his partakers of the Moores, Butlers, and Cavanaghes, they will soone leave him, when they see his fastnes and strong places thus taken from him.

*Eudox.* Surely this seemeth a plot of great reason, and small difficulty, which promiseth hope of a short end. But what speciall directions will you set downe for the services and risings out of these garrisons?

*Iren.* None other then the present occasions shall minister unto them, and as by good espialls, whereof there they cannot want store, they shall be drawne continually upon him, so as one of them shall be still upon him, and sometimes all at one instant, bayting him. And this (I assure my selfe) will demanda no long time, but will be all finished in the space of one yeare, which how small a thing it is, unto the eternall quietnesse which shall thereby be purchased to that realme, and the great good which should growe to her Majesty, should (me thinkes) readily drawe on her Highnesse to the undertaking of the enterprise.

*Eudox.* You have very well (me thinkes), Irenæus, plotted a course for the achieving of those warres now in Ireland, which seemes to ask no long time, nor great charge, so as the effecting thereof

bee committed to men of sure trust, and sound experience, aswell in that country, as in the manner of those services; for if it bee left in the hands of such rawe captaines, as are usually sent out of England, being thereunto onely preferred by friendship, and not chosen by sufficiency, it will soone fall to the ground.

*Iren.* Therefore it were meete (me thinkes) that such captaines onely were thereunto employed, as have formerly served in that country, and been at least lieutenants unto other captaines there. For otherwise being brought and transferred from other services abroad, as in France, in Spain, and in the Low-countrys, though they be of good experience in those, and have never so well deserved, yet in these they will be new to seeke, and, before they have gathered experience, they shall buy it with great losse to her Majesty, either by hazarding of their companies, through ignorance of the places, and manner of the Irish services, or by loosing a great part of the time which is required hereunto, being but short, in which it might be finished, almost before they have taken out a new lesson, or can tell what is to be done.

*Eudox.* You are no good friend to new captaines; it seemes *Iren.* that you barre them from the credit of this service: but (to say truth) me thinkes it were meete, that any one before he came to be a captaine, should have bene a souldiour; for, "Parere qui nescit, nescit imperare." And besides there is great wrong done to the old souldiour, from whom all meanes of advancement which is due unto him, is cut off, by shuffling in these new cutting captaines, into the place for which he hath long served, and perhaps better deserved. But now that you have thus (as I suppose) finished all the warre, and brought all things to that low ebbe which you speake of, what course will you take for the bringing in of that reformation which you intend, and recovering all things from this desolate estate, in which (mee thinkes) I behold them now left, unto that perfect establishment and new common-wealth which you have conceived of, by which so great good may redound unto her Majesty, and an assured peace bee confirmed? for that is it whereunto wee are now to looke, and doe greatly long for, being long sithence made weary with the huge charge which you have laide upon us, and with the strong indurance of so many complaints, so many delays, so many doubts and dangers, as will hereof (I know well) arise; unto the which before wee come, it were meete (me thinkes) that you should take some order for the souldiour, which is now first to bee discharged and disposed of, some way: the which if you doe not well foresee, may growe to as great inconvenience as all this that I suppose you have quit us from, by the loose leaving of so many thousand souldiours, which from thence forth will be unfit for any labour or other trade, but must either seeke service and employment abroad, which may be dangerous, or else employ themselves heere at home, as may bee discommodious.

*Iren.* You say very true, and it is a thing much mislyked in this our common-wealth, that no better course is taken for such as have been employed in service, but that returning, whether maymed, and so unable to labour, or otherwise whole and sound, yet afterwards unwilling to worke, or rather willing to set the hang-man on work. But that needeth

another consideration; but to this which wee have now in hand, it is farre from my meaning to leave the souldiour so at randome, or to leave that waste realme so weak and destitute of strength, which may both defend it against others that might seeke then to set upon it, and also keep it from that relapse which I before did fore-cast. For it is one speciall good of this plot, which I would devise, that 6000. souldiers of these whom I have now employed in this service, and made thoroughly acquainted both with the state of the country, and manners of the people, should henceforth bee still continued, and for ever maintayned of the country, without any charge to her Majestie; and the rest that are either olde, and unable to serve any longer, or willing to fall to thrift, as I have scene many souldiers after the service to prove very good husbands, should bee placed in part of the landes by them wonne, at such rate, or rather better then others, to whome the same shall be set out.

*Eudox.* Is it possible, *Ireneus*? can there be any such meanes devised, that so many men should be kept still in her Majesties service, without any charge to her at all? Surely this were an exceeding great good, both to her Highnes to have so many olde souldiers always ready at call, to what purpose soever she list to employ them, and also to have that land thereby so strengthened, that it shall neither feare any forraine invasion, nor practise, which the Irish shall ever attempt, but shall keepe them under in continuall awe and firme obedience.

*Iren.* It is so indeed. And yet this truly I doe not take to be any matter of great difficultie, as I thinke it will also some appeare unto you. And first we will speake of the North part, for that the same is of more weight and importance. So soone as it shall appeare that the enemy is brought downe, and the stout rebell either cut off, or driven to that wretchednesse, that hee is no longer able to holde up his head, but will come in to any conditions, which I assure my selfe will bee before the end of the second Winter, I wish that there bee a generall proclamation made, that whatsoever out-lawes will freely come in, and submit themselves to her Majesties mercy, shall have liberty so to doe, where they shall either finde that grace they desire, or have leave to returne againe in safety; upon which it is likely that so many as survive, will come in to sue for grace, of which who so are thought meet for subjection, and fit to be brought to good, may be received, or else all of them; (for I thinke that all wilbe but a very few;) upon condition and assurance that they will submit themselves absolutely to her Maiesties ordinance for them, by which they shall be assured of life and libertie, and be onely tyed to such conditions as shall bee thought by her meet for containing them ever after in due obedience. To the which conditions I nothing doubt, but they will all most readily, and upon their knees submit themselves, by the prooffe of that which I have scene in Mounster. For upon the like proclamation there, they all came in both tagg and ragg, and when as afterwarde many of them were denied to be received, they bade them doe with them what they would, for they would not by any meanes returne againe, nor goe forth. For in that case who will not accept almost of any conditions, rather than dye of hunger and miserie!

*Eudox.* It is very likely so. But what then is the ordinance, and what bee the conditions which

you will propose unto them, which shall reserve unto them an assurance of life and liberty ?

*Iren.* So soone then as they have given the best assurance of themselves which may be required, which must be (I suppose) some of their principall men to remaine in hostage one for another, and some other for the rest, for other surety I reckon of none that may binde them, neither of wife, nor of children, since then perhappes they would gladly be ridde of both from the famine; I would have them first unarmed utterly, and stripped quite of all their warrelike weapons, and then, these conditions set downe and made knowne unto them, that they shall bee placed in Leinster, and have land given them to occupy and to live upon, in such sort as shall become good subjects, to labour thenceforth for their living, and to apply themselves to honest trades of civility, as they shall every one be found meeete and able for.

*Eudox.* Where then a Gods name will you place them in Leinster? or will you finde out any new land there for them that is yet unknowne?

*Iren.* No, I will place them all in the countrey of the Birnes and Tooles, which Pheagh Mac Hugh hath, and in all the lands of the Cavanaghes, which are now in rebellion, and all the lands which will fall to her Maiestie thereabouts, which I know to be very spacious and large enough to containe them, being very neere twenty or thirty miles wyde.

*Eudox.* But then what will you doe with all the Birnes, the Tooles, and the Cavanaghes, and all those that now are joynd with them?

*Iren.* At the same very time, and in the same very manner that I make that proclamation to them of Ulster, will I have it also made to these, and upon their submission thereunto, I will take like assurance of them as of the other. After which, I will translate all that remaine of them unto the places of the other in Ulster, with all their creete, and what else they have left them, the which I will cause to be divided amongst them in some meeete sort, as each may thereby have somewhat to sustaine himselfe a while withall, untill, by his further travaile and labour of the earth, he shalbe able to provide himselfe better.

*Eudox.* But will you give the land then freely unto them, and make them heires of the former rebells? so may you perhaps make them also heires of all their former villainies and disorders; or how e'se will you dispose of them?

*Iren.* Not so: but all the lands will I give unto Englishmen, whom I will have drawne thither, who shall have the same with such estates as shall bee thought meeete, and for such rent as shall eft-soones bee rated; under every of those Englishmen will I place some of those Irish to bee tenants for a certaine rent, according to the quantity of such land, as every man shall have allotted unto him, and shalbe found able to wield, wherein this speciall regard shall be had, that in no place under any land-lord there shall bee many of them placed together, but dispersed wide from their acquaintance, and scattered farre abroad thorough all the country: For that is the evill which now I finde in all Ireland, that the Irish dwell altogether by their septs, and severall nations, so as they may practise or conspire what they will; whereas if there were English well placed among them, they should not bee able once to stirre or to murmure, but that it should be knowne, and they shortened according to their demerites.

*Eudox.* You have good reason; but what ration of rents meane you? to what end doe you purpose the same?

*Iren.* My purpose is to rate the rent of all those lands of her Maiestie, in such sort unto those Englishmen which shall take them, as they shall be able to live thereupon, \*to yeeld her Maiesty reasonable chieffie, and also give a competent maintenance unto the garrisons, which shall be there le amongst them; for those souldiours (as I told you) remaining of the former garrisons, I cast to maintaine upon the rent of those landes, which shalbee escheated, and to have them divided thorough all Ireland, in such places as shalbee thought most convenient, and occasion may require. And this was the course which the Romanes observed in the conquest of England, for they planted some of their legions in all places convenient, the which they caused the countrey to maintaine, cutting upon every portion of land a reasonable rent, which they called *Romescot*, the which might not surcharge the tenant or free-holder, and might defray the pay of the garrison: and this hath beene always observed by all princes in all countries, when they newly subdued, to set garrisons amongst them to containe them in dutie whose burthen they made them to beare; and the want of this ordinance was the first conquest of Ireland by Henry the Second, was the cause of the so short decay of that government, and the quicke recovery againe of the Irish. Therefore by all meanes it is to be provided for. And this is that I would blame, if it should not misbecome mee, in the late planting of Mounster, that no care was had of this ordinance, nor any strength of garrison provided for, by a certaine allowance out of all the saide landes, but onely the present profite looked into, and the safe continuance thereof for ever hereafter neglected.

*Eudox.* But there is a band of souldiours layd in Mounster, to the maintenance of which, what oddes is there whether the Queene, receiving the rent of the countrey, doe give pay at her pleasure, or that there be a settled allowance appointed unto them out of her lands there?

*Iren.* There is great oddes: for now that the rent of the countrey is not appointed to the pay of the souldiours, but it is, by every other occasion comming betwene, converted to other uses, and the souldiours in time of peace discharged and neglected as unnecessary; whereas if the said rent were appointed and ordained by an establishment to this end onely, it should not bee turned to any other; nor in troublous times, upon every occasion her Maiestie bee so troubled with sending over new souldiours as shee is now, nor the countrey ever should dare to mutinie, having still the souldiour in their neck, nor any forraigne enemy dare to invade knowing there so strong and great a garrison, all wayes ready to receive them.

*Eudox.* Sith then you thinke that this *Romescot* of the pay of the souldiours upon the land, to be both the readiest way to the souldiours, and least troublesome to her Maiestie; tell us (I pray you) how would you have the said lands rated, that both a rent may rise thereout unto the Queene, and also the souldiours receive pay, which (me thinke) wilbe hard?

\* to yeeld her Maiesty reasonable chieffie ] *Chieffie* a small rent paid to the Lord paramount. JOHNSON.

*Iren.* First we are to consider, how much land there is in all Ulster, that according to the quantity thereof we may cesse the said rent and allowance issuing thereout. Ulster (as the ancient records of that realme doe testifie) doth containe 9000. plow-lands, every of which plow-lands containeth 120. acres, after the rate of 21. foote to every perch of the acre, every of which plow-lands I will rate at 40 s. by the yeare; the which yearly rent amounteth in the whole to 18000 l. besides 6 s. 8 d. chiefrie out of every plow-land. But because the countie of Louth, being a part of Ulster, and containing in it 712. plow-lands is not wholly to escheate to her Majestie, as the rest, they having in all their warres continued for the most part dutifull, though otherwise a great part thereof is now under the rebels, there is an abatement to be made thereof of 400. or 500. plow-lands, as I estimate the same, the which are not to pay the whole yearly rent of 40 s. out of every plow-land, like as the escheated lands doe, but yet shall pay for their composition of cesse towards the keeping of soldiers, 20 s. out of every plow-land, so as there is to be deducted out of the former summe 200 or 300 l. yearly, the which may nevertheless be supplied by the rent of the fishings, which are exceeding great in Ulster, and also by an increase of rent in the best lands, and those that lye in the best places neere the sea-coast. The which eighteen thousand pounds will defray the entertainment of 1500. souldiers, with some overplus towards the pay of the victuallers, which are to bee employed in the victualling of these garrisons.

*Eudox.* So then belike you meane to leave 1500. souldiers in garrison for Ulster, to bee payde principally out of the rent of those lands, which shall be there escheated unto her Majestie. The which, where (I pray you) will you have them garrisoned?

*Iren.* I will have them divided into three parts, that is, 500. in every garrison, the which I will have to remaine in three of the same places, where they were before appointed, to wit, 500. at Strabane and about Loughfoile, so as they may holde all the passages of that part of the countrey, and some of them bee put in wardes, upon all the straights thereabouts, which I know to be such, as may stoppe all passages into the countrey on that side; and some of them also upon the Ban, up towards Lough-Sidney, as I formerly directed. Also other 500. at the fort upon Lough-Earne, and wardes taken out of them, which shall bee layde at Fermannagh, at Bealick, at Ballyshannon, and all the streights towards Connaght, the which I know doe so strongly command all the passages that way, as that none can passe from Ulster into Connaght, without their leave. The last 500. shall also remaine in their fort at Monaghan, and some of them bee drawne into wardes, to keepe the kaies of all that countrey, both downwards, and also towards O Relies countrie, and the pale; and some at Eniskillin, some at Bel-turbut, some at the Blacke Fort, and so along that river, as I formerly shewed in the first planting of them. And moreover at every of these forts, I would have the seate of a towne layde forth and incompassed, in the which I would wish that there should inhabitants of all sortes, as merchants, artificers, and husbandmen, bee placed, to whom there should charters and franchises be granted to incorporate them. The which, as it wilbe no matter of difficultie to draw out of England persons which would very gladly be so placed, so would it

in short space turne those parts to great commodity, and bring ere long to her Majestie much profit; for those places are fit for trade and trafficke, having most convenient out-gates by divers to the sea, and in-gates to the richest parts of the land, that they would soone be enriched, and mightily enlarged, for the very seating of the garrisons by them; besides the safetie and assurance which they shall worke unto them, will also draw thither store of people and trade, as I have seene ensample at Mariborough and Philipstowne in Leinster, where by reason of these two fortes, though there be but small wardes left in them, there are two good townes now growne, which are the greatest stay of both those two countries.

*Eudox.* Indeed (me thinkes) three such townes as you say, would do very well in those places with the garrisons, and in short space would be so augmented, as they would bee able with little to in-wall themselves strongly; but, for the planting of all the rest of the countrey, what order would you take?

*Iren.* What other then (as I said) to bring people out of England, which should inhabit the same; whereunto though I doubt not but great troopes would be readie to runne, yet for that in such cases the worst and most decayed men are most ready to remove, I would wish them rather to bee chosen out of all partes of this realme, either by discretion of wise men thereunto appointed, or by lot, or by the drumme, as was the old use in sending forth of Colonies, or such other good meanes as shall in their wisdome bee thought meetest. Amongst the chiefe of which, I would have the land sett into seigniories, in such sort as it is now in Mounster, and divided into hundreds and parishes, or wardes, as it is in England, and layde out into shires, as it was aunciently, *viz.* The countie of Downe, the countie of Antrim, the countie of Louth, the countie of Armagh, the countie of Cavan, the countie of Colerane, \* the countie of Monaghan, the countie of Tyrone, the countie of Fermannagh, the countie of Donnegall, being in all tenne. Over all which I wish a Lord President and a Councill to bee placed, which may keepe them afterwards in awe and obedience, and minister unto them justice and equity.

*Eudox.* Thus I see the whole purpose of your plot for Ulster, and now I desire to heare your like opinion for Connaght.

*Iren.* By that which I have already said of Ulster, you may gather my opinion for Connaght, being very answerable to the former. But for that the lands, which shal therein escheat unto her Maiesty, are not so intirely together, as that they can be accomplished in one summe, it needeth that they be considered severally. The province of Connaght in the whole containeth (as appeareth by the Records of Dublin) 7200. plow-lands of the former measure, and is of late divided into six shires or counties: The countie of Clare, the countie of Leytrim, the countie of Roscoman, the countie of Galway, the countie of Maio, and the countie of Sligo. Of the which all the countie of Sligo, all the countie of Maio, the most part of the countie of Roscoman, the most part of the countie of Letrim, a great part of the countie of Galway, and

\* the county of Monaghan] This is now part of the countie of London-derry. SIR JAMES WARE.

some of the countie of Clare, is like to escheat to her Maiestie for the rebellion of their present possessors. The which two counties of Sligo and Maio are supposed to containe almost 3000. plow-lands, the rent whereof rateably to the former, I valew almost at 6000 l. *per annum*. The countie of Roscoman, saying that which pertaineth to the house of Roscoman, and some few other English there lately seated, is all one, and therefore it is wholly likewise to escheate to her Majesty, saving those portions of English inhabitants, and even those English doe (as I understand by them) pay as much rent to her Majesty, as is set upon those in Ulster, counting their composition money therewithall, so as it may all run into one reckoning with the former two counties: So that this county of Roscoman containing 1200. plow-lands, as it is accounted, amounteth to 2400 l. by the yeare, which with the former two counties rent, maketh about 8300 l. for the former wanted somewhat. But what the escheated lands of the county of Gallway and Leirim will rise unto, is yet uncertaine to define, till survey thereof be made, for that those lands are intermingled with the Earle of Clarricardes, and others lands, but it is thought they be the one halfe of both those counties, so as they may be counted to the value of one whole county, which containeth above 1000. plow-lands; for so many the least county of them all comprehendeth, which maketh 2000 l. more, that is in all ten or eleven thousand pounds. The other 2 counties must remaine till their escheates appeare, the which letting passe yet, as unknowne, yet this much is knowne to be accounted for certaine, that the composition of these two counties, being rated at 20. shill. every plow-land, will amount to above 2000 pounds more, all which being laide together to the former, may be reasonably estimated to rise unto 13000 pounds, the which summe, together with the rent of the escheated lands in the two last countyes, which cannot yet be valued, being, as I doubt not, no lesse then a thousand pounds more, will yeeld pay largely unto 1000 men and their victuallers, and 1000 pounds over towards the Governour.

*Eudox.* You have (me thinkes) made but an estimate of those lands of Connaght, even at a very venture, so as it should be hard to build any certainty of charge to be raised upon the same.

*Iren.* Not altogether upon uncertainties; for this much may easily appeare unto you to be certaine, as the composition money of every plowland amounteth unto; for this I would have you principally to understand, that my purpose is to rate all the lands in Ireland at 20 shill: every plowland, for their composition towards the garrison. The which I know, in regard of being freed from all other charges whatsoever, will be readily and most gladly yeelded unto. So that there being in all Ireland (as appeareth by their old Records) 43920 plowlands, the same shall amount to the summe likewise of 43920 pounds, and the rest to be reared of the escheated lands which fall to her Majesty in the said provinces of Ulster, Connaght, and that part of Leinster under the rebels; for Mounster wee deale not yet withall.

*Eudox.* But tell me this, by the way, doe you then lay composition upon the escheated lands as you doe upon the rest? for so (mee thinkes) you reckon altogether. And that were too much

to pay 7. nobles out of every plow-land, and composition money besides, that is 20 shill: out of every plow land.

*Iren.* No, you mistake me; I doe put onely 7 nobles rent and composition both upon every plow-land escheated, that is 40. shill: for composition, and 6. shill: 8. pence for cheifrie to her Maiestie.

*Eudox.* I doe now conceive you; proceede then (I pray you) to the appointing of your garrisons in Connaght, and shew us both how many and where you would have them placed.

*Iren.* I would have 1000 laide in Connaght, in 2 garrisons; namely, 500 in the county of Maio, about Clan Mac Costilagh, which shall keepe all Mayo and the Bourkes of Mac William Eighter: The other 500. in the county of Galway, about Garrandough, that they may containe the Conhors and the Bourkes there, the Kellies and Murries, with all them thereabouts; for that garrison which I formerly placed at Loughearne will serve for all occasions in the county of Sligo, being neere adjoining thereunto, so as in one nights march they may be almost in any place thereof, when neede shall require them. And like as in the former places of garrisons in Ulster, I wished three corporate townes to be planted, which under the safeguard of that strength should dwell and trade safely with all the countrey about them; so would I also wish to be in this of Connaght; and that besides, there were another established at Athlone, with a convenient ward in the castle there for their defence.

*Iren.* What should that neede, seeing the Governour of Connaght useth to lye there alwayes, whose presence will bee a defence to all that towneship?

*Iren.* I know he doth so, but that is much to be disliked, that the Governour should lye so farre off, in the remotest place of all the province, whereas it were meete that he should be continually abiding in the midst of the charge, that he might bothe looke out alike unto all places of his government, and also be soone at hand in any place, where occasion shall demand him; for the presence of the Governour is (as you sayd) a great stay and bridle unto those that are ill disposed: like as I see it is well observed in Mounster, where the dayly good thereof is continually apparant: and, for this cause also, doe I greatly mislike the Lord Deputies seating at Dublin, being the outest corner of the realme, and least needing the awe of his presence; whereas (me thinkes) it were fitter, since his proper care is of Leinster, though he have care of all besides generally, that he should seate himselfe at Athie, or thereabouts, upon the skirt of that unquiet countrey, so that he might sit as it were at the very maine maste of his ship, whence he might easily over looke and sometimes over-reach the Moores, the Dempseys, the Connors, O-Carroll, O-Molloy, and all that heape of Irish nations which there lye huddled together, without any to over-awe them, or containe them in dutie. For the Irishman (I assure you) feares the Government no longer then he is within sight or reach.

*Eudox.* Surely (me thinkes) herein you observe a matter of much importance more then I have heard ever noted, but sure that seemes so expedient, as that I wonder that heretofore it hath bene overseene or omitted; but I suppose the instance of the citizens of Dublin is the greatest lett thereof

*Iren.* Truly then it ought not so to be; for no cause have they to feare that it will be any hinderance to them; for Dublin will bee still, as it is the key of all passages and transportations out of England thitherto, no lesse profit of those citizens then it now is, and besides other places will hereby receive some benefit: But let us now (I pray you) come to Leinster, in the which I would wish the same course to be observed, that was in Ulster.

*Eudox.* You meane for the leaving of the garrisons in their forts, and for planting of English in all those countreys, betwene the county of Dublin and the county of Wexford; but those waste wilde places I thinke when they are won unto her Majesty, that there is none which will be hasty to seeke to inhabite.

*Iren.* Yes enough, (I warrant you;) for though the whole tracke of the countrey be mountainous and woody, yet there are many goodly valleyes amongst them, fit for faire habitations, to which those mountaines adjoynd will be a great increase of pasturage; for that countrey is a great soyle of cattle, and very fit for breed: as for corne it is nothing naturall, save onely for barley and oates, and some places for rye, and therefore the larger pennyworthes may be allowed to them, though otherwise the wildnes of the mountaine pasturage doe recompence the badnes of the soyle, so as I doubt not but it will find inhabitants and undertakers enough.

*Eudox.* How much doe you thinke that all those lands, which Feagh Mac Hugh holdeth under him, may amount unto, and what rent may be reared thereout, to the maintenance of the garrisons that shall be laide there?

*Iren.* Truly it is impossible by ayme to tell it, and for experience and knowledge thereof, I doe not thinke that there was ever any of the particulars thereof, but yet I will (if it please you) guesse thereat, upon ground onely of their judgement which have formerly divided all that countrey into 2 sheires or countyes, namely the countie of Wicklow, and the \*county of Fernes; to the which 2 I see no cause but that they should wholly escheate to her Majesty, all save the barony of Arco which is the Earle of Ormond's auncient inheritance, and hath ever been in his possession; for all the whole land is the Queenes, unlesse there be some grant of any part thereof, to bee shewed from her Majesty: as I thinke there is onely of New Castle to Sir Henry Harrington, and of the castle of Fernes to Sir Thomas Masterson, the rest, being almost 30 miles over, I doe suppose, can containe no lesse then 2000 plow-lands, which I will estimate at 4000. pounds rent, by the yeare. The rest of Leinster being 7. countyes, to wit, the county of Dublin, Kildare, Catherlagh, Wexford, Kilkenny, the Kings and the Queenes county, doe contain in them 7400. plow-lands, which amounteth to so many pounds for composition to the garrison, that makes in the whole 11400. pounds, which summe will yeeld pay unto 1000 souldiours, little wanting, which may be supplied out of other lands of the Cavenaghes, which are to be escheated to her Majesty for the rebellion of their possessors, though otherwise indeede they bee of her owne ancient demesne.

*Eudox.* It is great reason. But tell us now where

you will wish those garrisons to be laide, whether altogether, or to bee dispersed in sundry places of the countrey?

*Iren.* Marry, in sundry places, viz. in this sort, or much the like as may be better advised, for 200. in a place I doe thinke to bee enough for the safeguard of that countrey, and keeping under all suddaine upstarts, that shall seeke to trouble the peace thereof; therefore I wish 200. to be laide at Balinecor for the keeping of all bad persons from Glan-malor, and all the fastnes thereabouts, and also to containe all that shall be planted in those lands thenceforth. Another 200. at Knockelough in their former place of garrison, to keepe the Bracknagh and all those mountaines of the Cavenaghes; 200. more to lie at Fernes and upwards, inward upon the Slane; 200. to be placed at the fort of Leix, to restraine the Moores, Upper-Ossory, and O-Carrol; other 200. at the fort of Ofaly, to curbe the O-Connors, O-Molloyes, Mac-Coghlan, Mageoghegan, and all those Irish nations bordering thereabouts.

*Eudox.* Thus I see all your men bestowd in Leinster; what say you then of Meath?

*Iren.* Meath which containeth both East Meath and West Meath, and of late the Annaly, now called the county of Longford, is counted therunto: But Meath it selfe according to the old Records, containeth 4320. plow-lands, and the county of Longford 947. which in the whole makes 5267. plow-lands, of which the composition money will amount likewise to 5267. pounds to the maintenance of the garrison: But because all Meath, lying in the bosome of that kingdome is alwayes quiet enough, it is needlesse to put any garrison there, so as all that charge may be spared. But in the county of Longford I wish 200. footmen and 50. horsemen to bee placed in some convenient seate, betwene the Annaly and the Breny, as about Lough Sillon, or some like place of that river, so as they might keepe both the O-Relies, and also the O-Ferrals, and all that outskirt of Meath, in awe, the which use upon every light occasion to be stirring, and, having continuall enmity amongst themselves, doe thereby oftentimes trouble all those parts, the charge whereof being 3400. and odde pounds is to be cut out of that composition money for Meath and Longford, the overplus being almost 2000. pounds by the yeare, will come in clearly to her Majesty.

*Eudox.* It is worth the hearkening unto: But now that you have done with Meath, proceede (I pray you) to Mounster, that wee may see how it will rise there for the maintenance of the garrison.

*Iren.* Mounster containeth by Record at Dublin 16000. plow-lands, the composition whereof, as the rest, will make 16000. pounds by the yeare, out of the which I would have 1000. souldiours to be maintained for the defence of that province, the charge whereof with the victuallers wages, will amount to 1200. pounds by the yeare; the other 4000. pounds will defray the charge of the Presidency and the Council of that province.

*Eudox.* The reckoning is easie, but in this accompt, by your leave (me thinks) you are deceived; for, in this summe of the composition money, you accompt the lands of the undertakers of that province, who are, by their graunt from the Queen, to be free from all such impositions whatsoever, excepting their onlie rent, which is surely enough.

*Iren.* You say true, I did so, but the same 20.

\* County of Fernes,] This is part of the county of Wexford. SIR JAMES WARE.

shil. for every plow-land, I meant to have deducted out of that rent due upon them to her Majesty, which is no hinderance, nor charge at all more to her Majesty then it now is; for all that rent which she receives of them, she putteth forth againe to the maintenance of the Presidency there, the charge whereof it doth scarcely defray; whereas in this account both that charge of the Presidency, and also of a thousand souldiours more, shall be maintained.

*Eudox.* It should be well if it could be brought to that: But now where will you have your thousand men garrisoned?

*Iren.* I would have a hundred of them placed at the Bantry where is a most fit place, not onely to defend all that side of the west part from forraine invasion, but also to answer all occasions of troubles, to which that countrey being so remote is very subject. And surely there also would be planted a good towne, having both a good haven and a plentiful fishing, and the land being already escheated to her Majesty, but being forcibly kept from her, by one that proclaimes himselfe the bastard son of the Earle of Clancar, being called Donell Mac Carty, whom it is meete to foresee to: For whensoever the Earle shall die, all those lands (after him) are to come unto her Majesty, he is like to make a foule stirre there, though of himselfe no power, yet through supportance of some others who lye in the wind, and looke after the fall of that inheritance. Another hundred I would have placed at Castle Mayne, which should keepe all Desmond and Kerry; for it answereth them both most conveniently: Also about Kilmore in the county of Corke would I have 2. hundred placed, the which should breake that nest of thieves there, and answer equally both to the county of Limericke, and also the county of Corke: Another hundred would I have lye at Corke, aswell to command the towne, as also to be ready for any forraine occasion: Likewise at Waterford, would I place 2. hundred, for the same reasons, and also for other privy causes, that are no lesse important: Moreover on this side of Arlo, near to Muskery Quirke, which is the countrey of the Burkes, about Kill-Patrieke, I would have two hundred more to be garrisoned, which should skoure both the White Knights country and Arlo, and Muskery Quirk, by which places all the passages of thieves doe lye, which convey their stealth from all Mounster downwards towards Tipperary, and the English Pale, and from the English Pale also up unto Mounster, whereof they use to make a common trade: Besides that, ere long I doubt that the county of Tipperary it selfe will neede such a strength in it, which were good to be there ready before the evill fall, that is dayly of some expected: And thus you see all your garrisons placed.

*Eudox.* I see it right well, but let me (I pray you) by the way aske you the reason, why in those cities of Mounster, namely Waterford and Corke, you rather placed garisons, then in all others in Ireland? For they may thinke themselves to have great wrong to bee so charged above all the rest.

*Iren.* I will tell you; those two cities above all the rest, do offer an in-gate to the Spaniard most fitly: But yet because they shall not take exceptions to this, that they are charged above all the rest, I will also lay a charge upon the others likewise; for indeed it is no reason that the corporate townes

enjoying great franchises and privileges from her Majesty, and living thereby not onely safe, but drawing to them the wealth of all the land, should live so free, as not to be partakers of the burthen of this garrison for their owne safety, specially in this time of trouble, and seeing all the rest burthened; (and therefore) I will thus charge them all ratably, according to their abilities, towards their maintenance, the which her Majesty may (if she please) spare out of the charge of the rest, and reserve towards her other costes, or else adde to the charge of the Presidency in the North.

|            |    |          |      |           |    |
|------------|----|----------|------|-----------|----|
| Waterford  | C. | Clonmell | X.   | Dundalke  | X. |
| Corke      | L. | Cashell  | X.   | Mollingar | X. |
| Limericke  | L. | Pedard   | X.   | Newrie    | X. |
| Galway     | L. | Kilkenny | XXV. | Trim      | X. |
| Dinglecush | X. | Wexford  | XXV. | Ardee     | X. |
| Kinsale    | X. | Tredah   | XXV. | Kells     | X. |
| Yoghall    | X. | Ross     | XXV. | Dublin    | C. |
| Kilmallock | X. |          |      |           |    |

In all 580.

*Eudox.* It is easie, Irenæus, to lay a charge upon any towne, but to foresee how the same may be answered and defrayed, is the cheife part of good advisement.

*Iren.* Surely this charge which I put upon them, I know to bee so reasonable, as that it will not much be felt; for the port townes that have benefit of shipping may cut it easily off their trading, and inland townes of their corne and cattle; neither do I see, but since to them especially the benefit of peace doth rebound, that they especially should beare the burthen of their safeguard and defence, as we see all the townes of the Low-Countrys, doe ut upon themselves an excise of all things towards the maintenace of the warre that is made in their behalfe, to which though these are not to be compared in riches, yet are they to bee charged according to their povertie.

*Eudox.* But now that you have thus set up these forces of soldiers, and provided well (as you suppose) for their pay, yet there remaineth to fore-cast how they may be victualled, and where purveyance thereof may bee made; for, in Ireland it selfe, I cannot see almost how any thing is to bee had for them, being already so pitifully wasted, as it is with this short time of warre.

*Iren.* For the first two yeares, it is needefull indeede that they bee victualled out of England thoroughly, from halfe yeare to halfe yeare, beforehand. All which time the English Pale shall not bee burdened at all, but shall have time to recover themselves; and Mounster also, being reasonably well stored, will by that time, (if God send seasonable weather,) bee thoroughly well furnished to supply a great part of that charge, for I knowe there is a great plenty of corne sent over sea from thence, the which if they might have sale for at home, they would bee glad to have money so neere hand, specially if they were straightly restrayned from transporting of it. Thereunto also there will bee a great helpe and furtherance given, in the putting forward of husbandrie in all meete places, as heereafter shall in due place appeare. But heereafter when things shall growe unto a better strength, and the countrey be replenished with corne, as in short space it will, if it bee well followed, for the countrey people themselves are great plowers, and small spenders of corne, then would I wish that there should bee good store of houses and



magazins erected in all those great places of garrison, and in all great townes, as well for the victualling of souldiers, and shippes, as for all occasions of suddaine services, as also for preventing of all times of dearth and scarcitie; and this want is much to be complained of in England, above all other countreys, who, trusting too much to the usual blessing of the earth, doe never fore-cast any such hard seasons, nor any such suddaine occasions as these troublous times may every day bring forth, when it will bee too late to gather provision from abroad, and to bringe it perhappes from farre for the furnishing of shippes or souldiers, which peradventure may neede to bee presently employed, and whose want may (which God forbid) hap to hazard a kingdome.

*Eudox.* Indeede the want of those magazins of victualls, I have oftentimes complaind of in England, and wondered at in other countreies, but that is nothing now to our purpose; but as for these garrisons which you have now so strongly planted throught all Ireland, and every place swarming with souldiers, shall there bee no end of them? For now thus being (me thinks) I doe see rather a countrey of warre, then of peace and quiet, which you earst pretended to worke in Ireland; for if you bring all things to that quietnesse that you said, what then needeth to maintaine so great forces, as you have charged upon it?

*Iren.* I will unto you Eudox. in privitie discover the drift of my purpose: I meane (as I tolde you) and doe well hope thereby both to settle an eternall peace in that countrey, and also to make it very profitable to her Majestie, the which I see must bee brought in with a strong hand, and so continued, till it runne in a steadfast course of government, which in this sort will neither bee difficult nor dangerous; for the souldier being once brought in for the service into Ulster, and having subdued it and Connaght, I will not have him to lay downe his armes any more, till hee have effected that which I purpose, that is, first to have this generall composition for maintenance of these throughtout all the realme, in regard of the troublous times, and daylie danger which is threatned to this realme by the King of Spaine: And thereupon to bestow all my souldiers in such sort as I have done, that no part of all that realme shall be able to dare to \*quinch: Then will I eftsoones bring in my reformation, and thereupon establish such a forme of government, as I may thinke meetest for the good of that realme, which being once settled, and all things put into a right way, I doubt not but they will runne on fairely. And though they would ever seeke to swerve aside, yet shall they not bee able without forreine violence, once to remove, as you your selfe shall soone (I hope) in your owne reason readily conceive; which if it shall ever appeare, then may her Majestie at pleasure with-draw some of the garrisons, and turne their pay into her purse, or if shee will never please so to doe (which I would rather wish) then shall shee have a number of brave olde souldiers alwayes ready for any occasion that shee will employ them unto, supplying their garrisons with fresh ones in their steed; the maintenance of whome, shall bee no more charge to her Majestie then now that realme is for all the revenue thereof; and much more shee spendeth, even in the most

peaceable times, that are there, as things now stand. And in time of warre, which is now surely every seventh yeare, shee spendeth infinite treasure besides, to small purpose.

*Eudox.* I perceive your purpose; but now that you have thus strongly made way unto your reformation, and that I see the people so humbled and prepared, that they will and must yeeld to any ordinance that shall bee given them, I doe much desire to understand the same; for in the beginning you promised to shewe a meanes how to redresse all those inconveniences and abuses, which you shewed to bee in that state of government, which now stands there, as in the lawes, customs, and religion, wherein I would gladly know first, whether, in steed of those lawes, you would have new lawes made; for now, for ought that I see, you may doe what you please.

*Iren.* I see Eudox. that you well remember our first purpose, and doe rightly continue the course thereof. First therefore to speake of lawes, since wee first beganne with them, I doe not thinke it now convenient, though it bee in the power of the Prince to change all the lawes and make new; for that should breede a great trouble and confusion, aswell in the English there dwelling, and to be planted, as also in the Irish. For the English having benee alwayes trayned up in the English government, will hardly bee inured to any other, and the Irish will better be drawne to the English then the English to the Irish government. Therefore sithence wee cannot now apply lawes fit to the people, as in the first institutions of commonwealths it ought to bee, wee will apply the people, and fit them unto the lawes, as it most conveniently may bee. The lawes therefore wee resolve shall abide in the same sort that they doe, both Common Law and Statutes, onely such defects in the Common-law and inconveniences in the Statutes, as in the beginning wee noted, and as men of deeper insight shall advise, may be changed by some other new acts and ordinances to bee by Parliament there confirmed: As those for tryalls of Pleas of the Crowne, and private rights betwene parties, colourable conveyances, and accessaries.

*Eudox.* But how will those be redressed by Parliament, when as the Irish which sway most in Parliament (as you said) shall oppose themselves against them?

*Iren.* That may well now be avoyded: For now that so many Free-holders of English shall bee established, they together with Burgesses of townes, and such other loyall Irish-men, as may bee preferred to bee Knights of the shire, and such like, will bee able to beard and to counter-poise the rest, who also, being now more brought in awe, will the more easily submit to any such ordinances as shall bee for the good of themselves, and that realme generally.

*Eudox.* You say well, for by the increase of Free-holders their numbers hereby will be greatly augmented; but how should it passe through the higher house, which still must consist all of Irish?

*Iren.* Marry, that also may bee redressed by ensample of that which I have heard was done in the like case by King Edward the Third (as I remember) who being greatly bearded and crossed by the Lords of the Cleargie, they being there by reason of the Lords Abbots, and others, too many and too strong for him, so as hee could not for

their forwardnesse order and reforme things as hee desired, was advised to direct out his writts to certaine Gentlemen of the best ability and trust, entitling them therein Barons, to serve and sitt as Barons in the next Parliament. By which meanes hee had so many Barons in his Parliament, as were able to weigh downe the Cleargy and their friends: The which Barons they say, were not afterwarde Lords, but onely Baronets, as sundry of them doe yet retayne the name. And by the like device her Maiestie may now likewise curbe and cut short those Irish and unruly Lords, that hinder all good proceedings.

*Eudox.* It seemes no lesse then for reforming of all those inconvenient statutes that you noted in the beginning, and redressing of all those evill customes; and lastly, for settling of sound religion amongst them, me thinks you shall not neede any more to over-goe those particulars againe, which you mentioned, nor any other which might besides be remembered, but to leave all to the reformation of such a Parliament, in which, by the good care of the Lord Deputie and Councell they may all be amended. Therefore now you may come unto that generall reformation which you spake of, and bringing in of that establishment, by which you said all men should be contained in duty ever after, without the terror of warlike forces, or violent wresting of things by sharpe punishments.

*Iren.* I will so at your pleasure, the which (me thinks) can by no meanes be better plotted then by ensample of such other realmes as have beene annoyed with like evils, that Ireland now is, and useth still to bee. And first in this our realme of England, it is manifest by report of the Chronicles, and auncient writers, that it was greatly infested with robbers and out-lawes, which, lurking in woods and fast places, used often to breake forth into the highwayes, and sometimes into small villages to rob and spoyle. For redresse whereof it is written, that King Alured, or Aldred, did divide the realme into shires, and the shires into hundreds, and the hundreds into lathes or wapentackes, and the wapentackes into tythings: So that tenne tythings make an hundred, and five make a lathe or wapentake, of which tenne, each one was bound for another, and the eldest or best of them, whom they called the Tythingman or Borsolder, that is, the eldest pledge became surety for all the rest. So that if any one of them did start into any undutifull action, the Borsolder was bound to bring him forth, when, joyning eft-soones with all his tything, would follow that loose person through all places, till they brought him in. And if all that tything fayled, then all that lathe was charged for that tything, and if that lathe fayled, then all that hundred was demanded for them; and if the hundred, then the shire, who, joyning eft-soones together, would not rest till they had found out and delivered in that undutifull fellow, which was not amesnable to law. And herein it seemes, that that good Saxon King followed the Counsell of Iethro to Moyses, who advised him to divide the people into hundreds, and to set Captaines and wise men of trust over them, who should take the charge of them, and ease of that burthen. And so did Romulus (as you may read) divide the Romanes into tribes, and the tribes into centuries or hundreths. By this ordinance, this King brought this realme of England, (which before was most troublesome,) unto

that quiet state, that no one bad person could stirre but he was straight taken holde of by those of his owne tything, and their Borsholder, who being his neighbor or next kinsman were privie to all his wayes, and looked narrowly into his life. The which institution (if it were observed in Ireland) would worke that effect which it did in England, and keep all men within the compasse of dutie and obedience.

*Eudox.* This is contrary to that you said before; for as I remember, you said, that there was a great disproportion betweene England and Ireland, so as the lawes which were fitting for one, would not fit the other. How comes it now then, that you would transfere a principall institution from England to Ireland?

*Iren.* This law was not made by the Norman Conqueror, but by a Saxon King, at what time England was very like to Ireland, as now it stands: for it was (as I tolde you) annoyed greately with robbers and out-lawes, which troubled the whole state of the realme, every corner having a Robin Hood in it, that kept the woods, that spoyled all passengers and inhabitants, as Ireland now hath; so as, me thinks, this ordinance would fit very well, and bring them all into awe.

*Eudox.* Then when you have thus tythed the communnality, as you say, and set Borsolders over them all, what would you doe when you came to the gentlemen? would you holde the same course?

*Iren.* Yea, marry, most especially; for this you must know, that all the Irish almost boast themselves to be gentlemen, no lesse then the Welsh; for if he can derive himselfe from the head of any sept, (as most of them can, they are so expert by their Bardes,) then hee holdeth himselfe a gentleman, and thereupon scorneth to worke, or use any hard labour, which hee saith, is the life of a peasant or churle; but thenceforth becommeth either an horseboy,\* or a stoach to some kerne, inuring himselfe to his weapon, and to the gentlemanly trade of stealing, (as they count it.) So that if a gentleman, or any wealthy man yeoman of them, have any children, the eldest of them perhaps shall be kept in some order, but all the rest shall shift for themselves, and fall to this occupation. And moreover it is a common use amongst some of their gentlemens sonnes, that so soone as they are able to use their weapons, they straight gather to themselves three or foure straglers, or kearne, with whom wandring a while up and downe idly the country, taking onely meate, hee at last falleth unto some bad occasion that shall be offered, which being once made known, hee is thenceforth counted a man of worth, in whome there is courage; whereupon there draw to him many other like loose young men, which, stirring him up with encouragement, provoke him shortly to flat rebellion; and this happens not onely sometimes in the sonnes of their gentle-men, but also of their noble-men, specially of them who have base sonnes. For they

\* or a stoach to some kerne,] The word *stoach*, as Dr. Johnson observes, is probably from the Erse *stock*; but it is hardly used by Spenser in the sense of "one who runs at a horseman's foot, or of a horseboy," as the context clearly proves; it may be in that of "an attendant or wallet-boy." So before: "The strength of all that nation, is the kerne, galloplasse, *stoach*, horseman, and horseboy, &c." Where the distinction is again preserved. TOND.

are not onely not ashamed to acknowledge them, but also boaste of them, and use them to such secret services, as they themselves will not be seene in, as to plague their enemies, to spoyle their neighbours, to oppresse and crush some of their owne too stubburne free-holders, which are not tractable to their wills.

*Eudox.* Then it seemeth that this ordinance of tithing them by the pole, is not onely fit for the gentle-men, but also for the noble-men, whom I would have thought to be of so honourable a mind, as that they should not neede such a kinde of being bound to their allegiance, who should rather have held in and stayde all the other from undutifnesse, then neede to bee forced thereunto themselves.

*Iren.* Yet so it is, Eudoxus; but because that noble-men cannot be tythed, there being not many tythings of them, and also because a Borsolder over them should be not onely a great indignitie, but also a danger to adde more power to them then they have, or to make one the commander of tenne, I holde it meeter that there were onely sureties taken of them, and one bound for another, whereby, if any shall swerve, his sureties shall for safeguard of their bonds either bring him in, or seeke to serve upon him; and besides this, I would wish them all to bee sworne to her Majestie, which they never yet were, but at the first creation; and that oath would sure contayne them greatly, or the breach of it bring them to shorter vengeance, for God useth to punish purjurie sharply: So I reade, that there was a corporall oath taken in the reignes of \*Edward the Second, and of †Henry the Seventh, (when the times were very broken) of all the lords and best gentle-men, of fealtie to the Kings, which now is no lesse needfull, because many of them are suspected to have taken an other oath privily to some bad purposes, and thereupon to have received the Sacrament, and beene sworne to a priest, which they thinke bindeth them more then their allegiance to their Prince, or love of their cuntry.

*Eudox.* This tything to the common-people, and taking sureties of lords and gentlemen, I like very well, but that it wilbe very troublesome; should it not be as well for to have them all booked, and the lords and gentle-men to take all the meaner sort upon themselves? for they are best able to bring them in, whensoever any of them starteth out.

*Iren.* This indeed (Eudoxus) hath beene hitherto, and yet is a common order amongst them, to have all the people booked by the lords and gentlemen; but yet the worst order that ever was devised; for, by this booking of men, all the inferiour sort are brought under the command of their lords, and forced to follow them into any action whatsoever. Now this you are to understand, that all the rebellions which you see from time to time happen in Ireland, are not begun by the common people, but by the lords and captaines of countries, upon pride or wilfull obstinacy against the government, which whensoever they will enter into, they drawe with them all their people and followers, which thinke

themselves bound to goe with them, because they have booked them and undertaken for them. And this is the reason that in England you have such few bad occasions, by reason that the noble men, however they should happen to be evil disposed, have no commaund at all over the commonalty, though dwelling under them, because that every man standeth upon himselfe, and buildeth his fortunes upon his owne faith and firme assurance: The which this manner of tything the poles will worke also in Ireland. For by this the people are broken into many small parts like little streames, that they cannot easily come together into one head, which is the principall regard that is to be had in Ireland, to keepe them from growing unto such a head, and adhering unto great men.

*Eudox.* But yet I cannot see how this can bee well brought, without doing great wrong unto the noble men there; for, at the first conquest of that realme, those great seigniories and lordships were given them by the King, that they should bee the stronger against the Irish, by the multitudes of followers and tennants under them: all which hold their tenements of them by fealty, and such services, whereby they are (by the first grant of the King) made bounden unto them, and tyed to rise out with them into all occasions of service. And this I have often heard, that when the Lord Deputy hath raised any generall hostings, the noble men have claimed the leading of them, by grant from the Kings of England, under the Greate Seal exhibited; so as the Deputies could not refuse them to have the leading of them, or, if they did, they would so worke, as none of their followers should rise forth to the hostage.

*Iren.* You say very true; but will you see the fruite of those grants? I have knowne when those lords have had the leading of their owne followers under them to the generall hostings, that they have for the same cut upon every plow-land within their cuntry 40. shill. or more, whereby some of them have gathered above seven or eight hundred pounds, and others much more into their purse, in lieu whereof they have gathered unto themselves a number of loose kearne out of all parts, which they have carried forth with them, to whom they never gave any penny of entertainment, allowed by the cuntry or forced by them, but let them feede upon the countreys, and extort upon all men where they come; for that people will never aske better entertainment then to have a colour of service or employment given them, by which they will pole and spoyle so outrageously, as the very enemy cannot doe much worse: and they also sometimes turne to the enemy.

*Eudox.* It seemes the first intent of those grants was against the Irish, which now some of them use against the Queene her selfe: But now what remedy is there for this? or how can those grants of the Kings be avoyded, without wronging of those lords, which had those lands and lordships given them?

*Iren.* Surely they may be well enough; for most of those lords, since their first grants from the Kings by which those lands were given them, have sithence bestowed the most part of them amongst their kinsfolke, as every lord perhaps hath given in his time one or other of his principall castles to his younger sonne, and other to others, as largely and as amply as they were given to him, and others they have sold, and others they have bought, which

\* Edward the Second,] Richard the Second. SIR J. WARE.  
† Henry the Seventh,] The service was performed by  
Sir Richard Edgecombe, being appointed thereunto by a  
speciall commission from K. Henry the Seventh. SIR JAMES  
WARE.

were not in their first graunt, which now nevertheless they bring within the compass thereof, and take and exact upon them, as upon their first demeanes all those kinde of services, yea and the very wilde exactions, \* Coigny, Livery, Sorehon, and such like, by which they pole and utterly undoe the poore tennants and free-houlders unto them, which either thorough ignorance know not their tenures, or through greatnes of their new lords dare not challenge them; yea, and some lords of countryes also, as great ones as themselves, are now by strong hand brought under them, and made their vassalls. As for example Arundell of the Stronde in the County of Corke, who was aunciently a great lord, and was able to spend 3500. pounds by the year, as appeareth by good recordes, is now become the Lord Barries man, and doth to him all those services, which are due unto her Majesty. For reformation of all which, I wish that there were a commission graunted forth under the Great Seale, as I have seene one recorded in the old counsell booke of Mounster, that was sent forth, in the time of Sir William Drurie, unto persons of speciall trust and judgement to inquire thoroughout all Ireland, beginning with one countie first, and so resting a while till the same were settled, by the verdict of a sound and substantiall iury, how every man houldeth his land, of whom, and of what tenure, so that every one should be admitted to shew and exhibite what right he hath, and by what services hee houldeth his land, whether in cheife or in soccage, or by knights service, or how else soever. Thereupon would appeare, first how all those great English lords doe claime those great services, what seigniories they usurpe, what wardships they take from the Queene, what lands of hers they conceale: And then, how those Irish captaines of countryes have inroached upon the Queenes free-holders and tennants, how they have translated the tenures of them from English houlding unto Irish Tanistry, and defeated her Majesty of all her rights and duties, which are to acrew to her thereout, as wardships, liveries, marriages, fines of alienations, and many other commodities; which now are kept and concealed from her Majesty, to the value of 4000. pounds *per annum*, I dare undertake in all Ireland, by that which I know in one county.

*Eudox.* This, Irenæus, would seeme a dangerous commission, and ready to stirre up all the Irish in rebellion, who knowing that they have nothing to shew for all those lands which they hould, but their swords, would rather drawe them then suffer the lands to bee thus drawne away from them.

*Iren.* Neither should their lands be taken away from them, nor the utmost advantages inforced against them: But this by discretion of the commissioners should be made knowne unto them, that it is not her Majesties meaning to use any such extremity, but onely to reduce things into order of English law, and make them hould their lands of her, and to restore to her her due services, which they detain out of those lands, which were aunciently held of her. And that they should not onely

not be thrust out, but also have estates and grants of their lands new made to them from her Majesty, so as they should thenceforth hould them rightfully, which they now usurpe wrongfully; and yet withall I would wish, that in all those Irish countryes there were some land reserved to her Majesties free disposition for the better containing of the rest, and intermingling them with English inhabitants and customes, that knowledge might still be had of them, and of all their doings, so as no manner of practise or conspiracy should be had in hand amongst them, but notice should bee given thereof by one meanes or another, and their practises prevented.

*Eudox.* Truly neither can the Irish, nor yet the English lords, thinke themselves wronged, nor hardly dealt withall herein, to have that which is indeede none of their owne at all, but her Majesties absolutely, given to them with such equal conditions, as that both they may be assured thereof, better then they are, and also her Majesty not defrauded of her right utterly; for it is a great grace in a prince, to take that with conditions, which is absolutely her owne. Thus shall the Irish be well satisfied, and as for the great men which had such graunts made to them at first by the Kings of England, it was in regard that they should keepe forth the Irish, and defend the Kings right, and his subjects: but now seeing that, in stead of defending them, they robbe and spoyle them, and, in stead of keeping out the Irish, they doe not onely make the Irish their tennants in those lands, and thrust out the English, but also some of themselves become meere Irish, with marrying with them, with fostering with them, and combyning with them against the Queene; what reason is there but that those graunts and priviledges should bee either revoked, or at least reduced to the first intention for which they were graunted? for sure in mine opinion they are more sharply to hee chastised and reformed then the rude Irish, which, being very wilde at the first, are now become more civill; when as these, from civility, are growne to be wilde and meere Irish.

*Iren.* Indeede as you say, Endoxus, these doe neede a sharper reformation then the Irish, for they are more stubbornne, and disobedient to law and governement, then the Irish be.

*Eudox.* In truth, Irenæus, this is more then ever I heard, that any English there should bee worse then the Irish: Lord, how quickly doth that countrey alter mens natures! It is not for nothing (I perceive) which I have heard, that the Councell of England thinke it no good policie to have that realme reformed, or planted with English, least they should grow so undutifull as the Irish, and become much more dangerous: As appeareth by the ensamples of the Lacies in the time of Edward the Second, which you spake of, that shooke off their allegiance to their naturall Prince, and turned to Edward le Bruce, to make him King of Ireland.

*Iren.* No times have bene without bad men: But as for that purpose of the Councell of England which you spake of, that they should keepe that realme from reformation, I thinke they are most lewdly abused; for their great carefullnesse, and earnest endeavours, doe witness the contrary. Neither is it the nature of the countrey to alter mens manners, but the bad mindes of the men, who having bene brought up at home under a

\* *Coigny, Livery, Sorehon.*] What Coigny and Livery doe signifie, has been already expressed. Sorehon was a tax laide upon the free-holders, for certaine dayes in each quarter of a year, to finde victualls, and lodging, and to pay certaine stipends to the kerne, galloglasses, and horsemen. SIR JAMES WARE.

straight rule of duty and obedience, being always restrained by sharpe penalties from lewde behaviour, so soone as they come thither, where they see lawes more slackely tended, and the hard restraint which they were used unto now slacked, they grow more loose and carelesse of their duty: and as it is the nature of all men to love liberty, so they become flat libertines, and fall to all licentiousnes, more boldly daring to disobey the law, through the presumption of favour and friendship, then any Irish dareth.

*Eudox.* Then if that be so, (me thinkes) your late advisement was very evill, whereby you wished the Irish to be sowed and sprinckled with English, and in all the Irish countreyes to have English planted amongst them, for to bring them to English fashions, since the English sooner drawe to the Irish then the Irish to the English: For as you said before, if they must runne with the streame, the greater number will carry away the lesse: Therefore (me thinkes) by this reason it should bee better to part the Irish and English, then to mingle them together.

*Iren.* Not so, Eudoxus; for where there is no good stay of government, and strong ordinances to hould them, there indeede the fewer follow the more, but where there is due order of discipline and good rule, there the better shall goe foremost, and the worst shall follow. And therefore now, since Ireland is full of her owne nation, that ought not to be rooted out, and somewhat stored with English already, and more to be, I thinke it best by an union of manners, and conformity of mindes, to bring them to be one people, and to put away the dislikefull concept both of the one, and the other, which will be by no meanes better then by this intermingling of them: For neither all the Irish may dwell together, nor all the English, but by translating of them and scattering them amongst the English, not onely to bring them by dayly conversation unto better liking of each other, but also to make both of them lesse able to hurt. And therefore when I come to the tything of them, I will tithen them one with another, and for the most part will make an Irish man the tything-man, whereby he shall take the lesse exception to partiality, and yet be the more tyed thereby. But when I come to the Head Borough, which is the head of the lathe, him will I make an English man, or an Irish man of speciall assurance: As also when I come to appoint the Alderman, that is the head of the hundreth, him will I surely choose to be an English man of speciall regard, that may be a stay and pillar of all the borough under him.

*Eudox.* What doe you meane by your hundred, and what by your borough? By that, that I have read in ancient records of England, an hundred did containe an hundreth villages, or as some say an hundred plough-lands, being the same which the Saxons called \* Cantred; the which cantred, as I finde it recorded in the blacke booke of [the Exchequer of] Ireland, did containe xxx. Villatas terræ, which some call, quarters of land, and every Villata can maintaine 400. cowes in pasture, and the 400. cowes to be divided into 4. heards, so as none

of them shall come neere other: every Villata containing 18. plow-lands, as is there set downe: And by that which I have read of a borough it signifieth a free towne, which had a principall officer, called a head-borough, to become ruler, and undertake for all the dwellers under him, having, for the same, franchises and priviledges granted them by the King, whereof it was called a free borough, and of the lawyers *franci-plegium*.

*Iren.* Both that which you said, Eudoxus, is true, and yet that which I say not untrue; for that which you spake of deviding the countrey into hundreds, was a devison of the lands of the realme, but this which I tell, was of the people, which were thus devidid by the pole: so that hundreth in this sense signifieth a 100. pledges, which were under the command and assurance of their alderman, the which (as I suppose) was also called a wapentake, so named of touching the weapon or speare of their alderman, and swearing to follow him faithfully, and serve their Prince truly. But others thinke that a wapentake was 10. hundreds or boroughs: Likewise a borogh, as I here use it, and as the old lawes still use, is not a borough towne, as they now call it, that is a franchised towne, but a maine pledge of 100. free persons, therefore called a free borough or (as you say) *franci-plegium*: For Borh in old Saxon signifieth a pledge or surety, and yet it is so used with us in some speeches, as Chaucer saith; *St. Iohn to borrow*, that is for assurance and warranty.

*Eudox.* I conceive the difference: But now that you have thus divided the people into these tythings and hundreths, how will you have them so preserved and continued? for people doe often change their dwelling places, and some must die, whilst other some doe growe up into strength of yeares, and become men.

*Iren.* These hundreds I would wish to assemble themselves once every yeare with their pledges, and to present themselves before the iustices of the peace, which shall bee thereunto appointed, to bee surveyed and numbred, to see what change hath happened since the yeare before; and, the defects to supplie, of young plants late growne up, the which are diligently to bee overlooked and viewed of what condition and demeanour they be, so as pledges may bee taken for them, and they put into order of some tything; of all which alterations note is to be taken, and bookes made thereof accordingly.

*Eudox.* Now (mee thinkes) Irenæus, you are to bee warned to take heede lest unawares you fall into that inconvenience which you formerly found fault with in others: namely, that by this booking of them, you doe not gather them into a new head, and, having broken their former strength, doe not unite them more strongly againe: For every alderman, having all these free pledges of his hundred under his command, may (me thinkes) if hee be evill disposed drawe all his companie into an evill action. And likewise, by this assembling of them once a yeare unto their alderman by their wepen-takes, take heede lest you also give them occasion and meanes to practise together in any conspiracies.

*Iren.* Neither of both is to be doubted; for their aldermen and headboroughes, will not be such men of power and countenance of themselves, being to be chosen thereunto, as neede to be feared: Neither if hee were, is his hundred at his commaund, further then his Princes service; and also

\* *Cantred.*] Cantred is a British word, answering to the Saxon *Hunþes*. How much land a cantred containeth, is variously delivered. Some hold that it containes 100 townes. *SIR JAMES WARE.*

every tything man may controll him in such a case. And as for the assembling of the hundred, much lesse is any danger thereof to be doubted, seeing it is before some iustice of the peace, or some high constable to bee thereunto appointed: So as of these tythings there can no perill ensue, but a certaine assurance of peace and great good; for they are thereby withdrawne from their lords, and subjected to the Prince: Moreover for the better breaking of these heads and septs, which (I told you) was one of the greatest strengthes of the Irish, me thinks it should bee very well to renewe that old statute, which was made \*in the raigne of Edward the Fourth in Ireland, by which it was commaunded, that whereas all tmen then used to be called by the name of their septs, according to the severall nations, and had no surnames at all, that from thenceforth each one should take upon himselfe a severall surname, either of his trade and facultie, or of some quality of his body or minde, or of the place where he dwelt, so as every one should be distinguished from the other, or from the most part, wherby they shall not onely not depend upon the head of their sept, as now they do, but also in time learne quide to forget his Irish nation. And herewithall would I also wish all the O's and the Mac's, which the heads of septs have taken to their names, to bee utterly forbidden and extinguished. For that the same being an ordinance (as some say) first made by † O Brien for the strengthening of the Irish, the abrogating thereof will asmuch enfeeble them.

*Eudox.* I like this ordinance very well; but now that you have thus divided and distinguished them, what other order will you take for their manner of life?

*Iren.* The next thing that I will doe shalbe to appoint to every one that is not able to live of his free-holde, a certaine trade of life, to which he shall finde himselfe fittest, and shalbe thought ablest, the which trade hee shalbe bound to follow, and live onely thereupon. All trades therefore are to be understood to be of three Kindes, manuell, intellectuall, and mixed. The first containeth all such as needeth exercise of bodily labour, to the performance of their profession. The second consisting only of the exercise of wit and reason. The third sort, part of bodily labor, and part of the wit, but depending most of industrie and carefulnes. Of the first sort be all handicrafts and husbandry labour. Of the second be all sciences, and those which be called liberall arts. Of the third is merchandize

\* in the raigne of Edward] An. 5 Edw. 4. SIR J. WARE.

† all men] The statute referres onely to the Irish, dwelling among the English in the counties of Dublin, Moth, Uriel, and Kildare. Uriel, called also Ergallia, did anciently comprehend all that countrey which is now divided into the counties of Louth and Monaghan, although it may be conceived, that Louth was onely intended by the statute, because Monaghan was then (in a manner) wholly possessed by the Irish. SIR JAMES WARE.

‡ O Brien] The custome of prefixing the vowel O to many of the chiefe Irish surnames, began soon after the yeere M. in the raigne of Brien BoFloma (the son of Kennethy) king of Ireland. As for Mac in surnames, it beareth no other signification, then Fitz doth among the French, and (from them) the English; and Ap with the Welsh. And although it were more anciently used then the other, yet it varied according to the fathers name, and became not so soone fully settled in families. SIR JAMES WARE.

and chafferie, that is, buying and selling; and without all these three, there is no common-wealth can almost consist, or at the least be perfect. But the realme of Ireland wanteth the most principall of them, that is, the intellectuall; therefore in seeking to reforme her state, it is specially to be looked unto. But because by husbandry, which supplyeth unto us all things necessary for food, wherby we chiefly live; therefore it is first to be provided for. The first thing therefore that wee are to draw these new tythed men into, ought to be husbandry. First, because it is the most easie to be learned, needing onely the labour of the body. Next, because it is most generall and most needfull; then because it is most naturall; and lastly, because it is most enemy to warre, and most hateth unquietnes? As the Poet saith,

— "bella exeerata colonis: "

for husbandry being the nurse of thrift, and the daughter of industrie and labour, detesteth all that may worke her scathe, and destroy the travaile of her hands, whose hope is all her lives comfort unto the plough; therefore are those Kearne, Stocaghes, and Horse-boyes, to bee driven and made to imploy that ableness of bodie, which they were wont to use to theft and villainy, henceforth to labour and industry. In the which, by that time they have spent but a little paine, they will finde such sweetnesse and happy contentment, that they will afterwards hardly bee haled away from it, or drawne to their wonted lewde life in theeverie and roguerie. And being once thus inured thereunto, they are not onely to bee contentuanced and encouraged by all good meanes, but also provided that their children after them may be brought up likewise in the same, and succede in the roomes of their fathers. To which end \*there is a Statute in Ireland already well provided, which commaundeth that all the sonnes of husbandmen shall be trained up in their fathers trades, but it is (God wot) very slenderly executed.

*Eudox.* But doe you not count, in this trade of husbandry, pasturing of cattle, and keeping of their coves? for that is reckoned as a part of husbandrie.

*Iren.* I know it is, and needefully to be used, but I doe not meane to allow any of those able bodies, which are able to use bodily labour, to follow a few coves grazeing. But such impotent persons, as being unable for strong travaile, are yet able to drive cattle to and fro to their pasture; for this fitting nurserie of coves is of it selfe a very idle life, and a fit nurserie for a thiefe. For which cause (you remember) I disliked the Irish manner of keeping Booles in Summer upon the mountaines, and living after that savage sort. But if they will algates feede many cattle, or keepe them on the mountaines, let them make some townes neare to the mountaines side, where they may dwell together with neighbours, and be conversant in the view of the world. And to say truth, though Ireland bee by nature counted a great soyle of pasture, yet had I rather have fewer coves kept, and men better mannered, then to have such huge increase of cattle and no increase of good conditions. I would therefore wish that there were some ordinances made amongst them, that whosoever keepe twentieth kine, should keep a plough going; for otherwise

\* there is a Statute] Anno 25<sup>o</sup> Hen. 6. SIR JAMES WARE.

all men would fall to pasturage, and none to husbandry, which is a great cause of this dearth now in England, and a cause of the usuall stealthes in Ireland : For looke into all countreyes that live in such sort by keeping of cattle, and you shall finde that they are both very barbarous and unciuill, and also greatly giuen to warre. The Tartarians, the Muscovites, the Norwegians, the Gothies, the Armenians, and many other doe witnessse the same. And therefore since now wee purpose to draw the Irish, from desire of warre and tumults, to the love of peace and civility, it is expedient to abridge their great custome of hardening, and augment their trade of tillage and husbandrie. As for other occupations and trades, they need not bee enforced to, but every man to be bound onely to follow one that hee thinks himselfe aptest for. For other trades of artificers will be occupied for very necessitie, and constraigned use of them ; and so likewise will merchandize for the gaine thereof ; but learning, and bringing up in liberal sciences, will not come of it selfe, but must bee drawne on with streight lawes and ordinaunces : And therefore it were meete that such an act were ordained, that all the sonnes of lords, gentlemen, and such others as are able to bring them up in learning, should be trayned up therein from their child-hoods. And for that end every parish should be forced to keepe a pettie schoole-master, adjoining unto the parish church, to bee the more in view, which should bring up their children in the first elements of letters : and that, in every countrey or baronie, they should keepe an other able schoole-master, which should instruct them in grammar, and in the principles of sciences, to whom they should be compelled to send their youth to bee disciplined, whereby they will in short space grow up to that ciuill conversation, that both the children will loath their former rudenesse in which they were bred, and also their parents will even by the ensample of their young children perceiue the foulnesse of their own behauiour, compared to theirs : For learning hath that wonderfull power in it selfe, that it can soften and temper the most sterne and savage nature.

*Eudox.* Surely I am of your minde, that nothing will bring them from their unciuill life sooner then learning and discipline, next after the knowledge and feare of God. And therefore I doe still expect, that you should come thereunto, and set some order for reformation of religion, which is first to bee respected ; according to the saying of CHRIST, "Seeke first the kingdome of heaven, and the righteousnesse thereof."

*Iren.* I have in minde so to doe ; but let me (I pray you) first finish that which I had in hand, whereby all the ordinaunces which shall afterwards bee set for religion, may abide the more firmly, and bee observed more diligently. Now that this people is thus tythed and ordered, and every one bound unto some honest trade of life, which shall bee particularly entered and set downe in the tything booke, yet perchappes there will bee some stragglers and runnagates, which will not of themselves come in and yeeld themselves to this order, and yet after the well finishing of the present warre, and establishing of the garrisons in all strong places of the countrey, where their wanted refuge was most, I suppose there will few stand out, or if they doe, they will shortly bee brought in by the earas :

But yet afterwards, lest any one of them should swerve, or any that is tyed to a trade, should afterwards not follow the same, according to this institution, but should straggle up and downe the countrey, \*or mich in corners amongst their friends idely, as Carrowes, Bardes, Iesters, and such like, I would wishe that a Provost Marshall should bee appointed in every shire, which should continually walke about the countrey, with halfe a dozen, or halfe a score horsemen, to take up such loose persons as they should finde thus wandering, whome hee should punish by his owne authority, with such paines as the person shall seeme to deserve ; for if hee be but once so taken idely roguing, hee may punish him more lightly, as with stockes, or such like ; but if hee bee found againe so loytering, hee may scourge him with whippes, or rodds, after which if hee bee againe taken, let him have the bitterness of marshall lawe. Likewise if any reliques of the olde rebellion bee found by any, that either have not come in and submitted themselves to the law, or that having once come in, doe breake forth againe, and walke disorderly, let them taste of the same cuppe in Gods name ; for it was due to them for their first guilt, and now being revived by their later loosenesse, let them have their first desert, as now being found unfit to live in the common-wealth.

*Eudox.* This were a good ordinance : but mee thinks it is an unnecessary charge, and also unfit to continue the name or forme of any marshall law, when as there is a proper officer already appointed for these turnes, to wit the sheriffe of the shire, whose peniar office it is to walke up and downe his bayli-wicke, as you would have a marshall to snatch up all those runnagates and unprofitable members, and to bring them to his gaole to bee punished for the same. Therefore this may well be spared.

*Iren.* Not so, me thinks ; for though the sheriffe have this authority of himselfe to take up all such stragglers, and imprison them, yet shall hee not doe so much good, nor worke that terrour in the hearts of them, that a marshall will, whom they shall know to have power of life and death in such cases, and especially to bee appointed for them : Neither doth it hinder that, but that though it pertaine to the sheriffe, the sheriffe may doe therein what hee can, and yet the marshall may walke his course besides ; for both of them may doe the more good, and more terrifie the idle rogue, knowing that though hee have a watch upon the one, yet hee may light upon the other : But this provisio is needfull to bee had in this case, that the sheriffe may not have the like power of life, as the marshall hath, and as heretofore they have bene accustomed ; for it is dangerous to give power of life into the hands of him which may have benefit by the parties death, as, if the said loose liver have any goods of his owne, the Sheriffe is to seize thereupon, whereby it hath come to passe, that some who have not deserved iudgement of death, though otherwise perhaps offending, have bene for their goods sake caught up, and carryed straight to the bough ; a thing indeed very pittifull and horrible. Therefore by no meanes I would have the Sheriffe have such authority, nor yet to imprison that lozell till the

\* or mich in corners] The word *micher* is used by Chaucer to denote a thief or vagabond. TODD.

sessions, for so all gaoles might soon be filled ; but to send him to the Marshall, who, eftssoones finding him faultie, shall give him meeete correction, and ridd him away forthwith.

*Eudox.* I doe now perceive your reason well : But come wee now to that whereof wee earst spake, I meane, to religion and religions men ; what order will you set amongst them ?

*Iren.* For religion little have I to say, my selfe being (as I said) not professed therein, and it selfe being but one, so as there is but one way therein ; for that which is true onely is, and the rest is not at all ; yet, in planting of religion, thus much is needefull to be observed, that it bee not sought forcibly to bee impressed into them with terror and sharpe penalties, as now is the manner, but rather delivered and intimated with mildnesse and gentlenesse, so as it may not be hated before it be understood, and their Professors despised and rejected. And therefore it is expedient that some discrete Ministers of their owne country-men, bee first sent over amongst them, which by their meeke perswasions and instructions, as also by their sober lives and conversations, may draw them first to understand, and afterwards to imbrace, the doctrine of their salvation ; for if that the aunccit godly Fathers, which first converted them, when they were infidells, to the faith, were able to pull them from idolatry and paganisme to the true believe in CHRIST, as S. Patricke, and S. Columb, how much more easily shall godly teachers bring them to the true understanding of that which they already professed ? wherein it is great wonder to see the oddes which is betwene the zeale of Popish Priests, and the Ministers of the Gospell ; for they spare not to come out of Spaine, from Rome, and from Remes, by long toyle and dangerous travayth hither, where they know perill of death awayteth them, and no reward or richesse is to be found, onely to draw the people unto the Church of Rome ; whereas some of our idle Ministers, having a way for credite and estimation thereby opened unto them, and having the livings of the country offered unto them, without paines, and without perill, will neither for the same, nor any love of God, nor zeale of religion, nor for all the good they may doe, by winning soules to God, bec drawne forth from their warme neastes, to looke out into Gods harvest, which is even ready for the sickle, and all the fields yellow long agoe ; doubtlesse those good olde godly Fathers, will (I feare mee) rise up in the day of judgement to condemne them.

*Eudox.* Surely, it is great pity, *Iren.* that there are none chosen out of the Ministers of England, good, sober, and discrete men, which might be sent over thither to teach and instruct them, and that, there is not asmuch care had of their soules, as of their bodies ; for the care of both lyeth upon the Prince.

*Iren.* Were there never so many sent over, they should doe smal good till one enormity be taken from them, that is, that both they bee restrayned from sending their yong men abroad to other Universities beyond the sea, as Remes, Doway, Lovaine and the like, and others from abroad bee restrayned for comming into them ; for their lurking secretly in their honses, and in corners of the country, doe more hurt and hinderance to religion with their private perswasions, then all the others can doe good with their publique instructions ; and though

for these latter there be a good statute there ordained, yet the same is not executed ; and as for the former there is no law nor order for their restraint at all.

*Eudox.* I marvaile it is no better looked unto, and not only this, but that also which I remember you mentioned in your abuses concerning the profits and revenewes of the lands of fugitives in Ireland, which by pretence of certaine colourable conveyances are sent continually over unto them, to the comforting of them and others against her Majestie, for which here in England there is good order taken ; and why not then aswell in Ireland ? For though there be no statute there yet enacted therefore, yet might her Majestie, by her onely prerogative, seize the fruites and profites of those fugitive lands into her handes, till they come over to testifie their true allegiance.

*Iren.* Indeede shue might so doe ; but the comberous times doe perhappes hinder the regard thereof, and of many other good intentions.

*Eudox.* But why then did they not mend it in peaceable times ?

*Iren.* Leave we that to their grave considerations ; but proceed we forward. Next care in religion is to build up and repayre all the ruined churches, whereof the most part lye even with the ground, and some that have bin lately repayred are so unhandsonely patched, and thatched, that men doe even shunne the places for the uncomeliness thereof ; therefore I would wishe that there were order taken to have them built in some better forme, according to the churches of England ; for the ontward shew (assure your selfe) doth greatly drawe the rude people to the reverencing and frequenting thereof, what ever some of our late too nice fooles say, there is nothing in the seemely forme, and comely order of the church. And, for the keeping and continuing them, there should likewise Church-wardens of the gravest men in the parish be appointed, as they bee here in England, which should take the yearely charge both hereof, and also of the schoole-houses which I wish to be built neere the said churches ; for maintenance of both which, it were meeete that some small portion of lands were allotted, sith no more mortmaines are to be looked for.

*Eudox.* Indeede (me thinkes) it would be so convenient ; but when all is done, how will you have your churches served, and your Ministers maintained ? since the livings (as you say) are not sufficient scarce to make them gownes, much lesse to yeelde meeete maintenance according to the dignity of their degree.

*Iren.* There is no way to helpe that, but to lay 2. or 3. of them together, untill such time as the country grow more rich and better inhabited, at which time the tythes, and other obventions, will also be more augmented and better valued : But now that we have thus gone through all the 3. sorts of trades, and set a course for their good establishment ; let us (if it please you) goe next to some other needefull points of other publicke matters no lesse concerning the good of the commonwealth, though but accidentally depending on the former. And first I wish, that order were taken for the cutting and opening of all places through woods, so that a wide way of the space of 100. yards might be layde open in every of them for the safety of travellers, which use often in such perillous places to be robbed,



and sometimes murdered. Next, that bridges were built upon the rivers, and all the fordes marred and spilt, so as none might passe any other way but by those bridges, and every bridge to have a gate and a gate-house set thereon, whereof this good will come that no night stealths which are commonly driven in by-ways, and by blinde fordes unused of any but such like, shall not be conveyed out of one country into another, as they use, but they must passe by those bridges, where they may either be haply encountered, or easily tracked, or not suffered to passe at all, by meanes of those gate-houses thereon: Also that in all straits and narrow passages, as betweene 2. boggs, or through any deepe foord, or under any mountaine side, there should be some little fortillage, or wooden castle set, which should keepe and command that straight, whereby any rebels that should come into the country might be stopped that way, or passe with great perill. Moreover, that all high wayes should be fenced and shut up on both sides, leaving onely 40. foote bredth for passage, so as none shall be able to passe but through the high wayes, whereby theeves and night robbers might be the more easily pursued and encountered, when there shall be no other way to drive their stolne cattle, but therein, as I formerly declared. Further, that there should be in sundry convenient places, by the high wayes, townes appointed to be built, the which should be free Burgesses, and incorporate under Bayliffes, to be by their inhabitants well and strongly intrinched, or otherwise fenced with gates on each side thereof, to be shut nightly, like as there is in many places in the English Pale, and all the wayes about it to be strongly shut up, so as none should passe but through those townes: To some of which it were good that the priviledge of a market were given, the rather to strengthen and inable them to their defence, for there is nothing doth sooner cause civility in any countrie then many market townes, by reason that people repairing often thither for their needs, will dayly see and learne civil manners of the better sort: Besides, there is nothing doth more stay and strengthen the country then such corporate townes, as by prooffe in many rebellions hath appeared, in which when all the countryes have swerved, the townes have stood fast, and yielded good releife to the souldiours in all occasions of services. And lastly there is nothing doth more enrich any country or realme then many townes; for to them will all the people drawe and bring the fruites of their trades, aswell to make money of them, as to snpply their needefull uses; and the conuntrymen will also be more industrious in tillage, and rearing of all husbandry commodities, knowing that they shall have ready sale for them at those townes; and in all those townes should there be convenient innes, erected for the lodging and harbouring of travellers, which are now oftentimes spoyled by lodging abroad in weake thatched houses, for want of such safe places to shronde them in.

*Eudox.* But what profit shall your market townes reape of their market? when as each one may sell their corne and cattle abroad in the country, and make their seeret bargaines amongst themselves as now I understand they use.

*Iren.* Indeede, Eudoxus, they do so, and thereby no small inconvenience doth rise to the commonwealth; for now when any one hath stolne a cowe

or a garron, he may secretly sell it in the country without privity of any, whereas if he brought it to a market towne it would perhaps be knowne, and the theft discovered. Therefore it were good that a straight ordinance were made, that none should buy or sell any cattle, but in some open market, (there being now market townes every where at hand,) upon a great penalty, neither should they likewise buy any corne to sell the same againe, unless it were to make malt thereof; for by such ingrossing and regrating wee see the dearth, that now commonly raineth here in England, to have beene caused. Herenuto also is to be added that good ordinance, which I remember was once proclaimed throughout all Ireland: That all men should marke their cattle with an open severall marke upon their flankes or buttookes, so as if they happened to be stolne, they might appeare whose they were, and they, which should buy them, might thereby suspect the owner, and be warned to abstaine from buying them of a suspected person, with such an unknowne marke.

*Eudox.* Surely these ordinances seeme very expedient, but especially that of free townes, of which I wonder there is so small store in Ireland, and that, in the first peopling and planting thereof, they were neglected and omitted.

*Iren.* They were not omitted; for there were, through all places of the country convenient, many good townes seated, which thorough that inundation of the Irish, which I first told you of, were utterly wasted and defaced, of which the ruines are yet in many places to be seene, and of some no signe at all remaining, save only their bare names; but their seats are not to be found.

*Eudox.* But how then cometh it to passe, that they have never since been recovered, nor their habitations reedified, as of the rest, which have bene no lesse spoyled and wasted?

*Iren.* The cause thereof was, for that, after their desolation, they were begged by gentlemen of the Kings, under colour to repaire them, and gather the poore reliques of the people againe together, of whom having obtained them, they were so farre from reedifying of them, as that by all meanes they have endeavoured to keepe them waste, least that, being repaired, their charters might be renewed, and their Burgesses restored to their lands, which they had now in their possession; much like as in those old monnments of abbeyes, and religious houses, we see them likewise use to doe: For which cause it is judgd that King Henry the Eight bestowed them upon them, conceiving that thereby they should never be able to rise againe. And even so doe these Lords, in these poore old corporate townes, of which I could name divers, but for kindling of displeasure. Therefore as I wished many corporate townes to be erected, so would I againe wish them to be free, not depending upon the service, nor under the command of any but the Governour. And being so, they will both strengthen all the country round about them, which by their meanes will be the better replenished and enriched, and also be as continuall holdies for her Majesty, if the people should revolt or breake out againe; for without such it is easie to forrage and over-run the whole land. Let be for ensample all those free-boroughes, in the low-countryes, which are now all the strength thereof. These and other like ordinances might be delivered for the good

establishment of the realme, after it is once subnded and reformed, in which it might afterwards be very easily kept and maintained, with small care of the Governours and Conncell there appointed, so as it should in short space yeeld a plentiful revenue to the crowne of England; which now doth but sucke and consume the treasure thereof, through those unsound plots and changefull orders, which are dayly devised for her good, yet never effectually prosecuted or performed.

*Eudox.* But in all this your discourse I have not marked any thing by you spoken touching the appointment or the principall Officer, to whom you wish the charge and performance of all this to be committed: Onely I observed some fowle abuses by you noted in some of the late Governours, the reformation whereof you left of for this present place.

*Iren.* I delight not to lay open the blames of great Magistrates to the rebuke of the world, and therefore their reformation I will not meddle with, but leave unto the wisdome of greater heads to be considered; only thus much I will speake generally thereof, to satisfie your desire, that the Government and cheife Magistracy, I wish to continue as it doth, to wit, that it be ruled by a Lord Deputy or Justice, for that it is a very safe kinde of rule; but there-withall I wish that over him there were placed also a Lord Lieutenant, of some of the greatest personages in England,\* such a one I could name, upon whom the eye of all England is fixed, and our last hopes now rest; who being intitled with that dignity, and being here alwayes resident, may backe and defend the good course of that government against all maligners, which else will, through their cunning working under hand, deprave and pull back what ever thing shall be begun or intended there, as we commonly see by experience at this day, to the utter ruine and desolation of that poore realme; and this Lientenancy should be no discountenancing of the Lord Deputy, but rather a strengthening of all his doings; for now the cheife evill in that government is, that no Governour is suffered to goe on with any one course, but upon the least information here, of this or that, hee is either stopped and crossed, or other courses appointed him from hence which he shall run, which how inconvenient it is, is at this houre too well felt: And therefore this should be one principall in the appointing of the Lord Deputies authority, that it should be more ample and absolute then it is, and that he should have uncontroled power to doe any thing, that he with the advisement of the Council should thinke meete to be done: For it is not possible for the Council here, to direct a Governour there, who shall be forced oftentimes to follow the necessitie of present actions, and to take the suddaine advantage of time, which being once lost will not be recovered; whilst, through expecting direction from hence, the delays whereof are oftentimes through other greater affaires most irksome, the oportunityes there in the meane time passe away, and great danger often groweth, which

by such timely prevention might easily be stopped: And this (I remember) is worthily observed by Machiavel in his discourses upon Livie, where he commendeth the manner of the Romans government, in giving absolute power to all their Councillors and Governours, which if they abused, they should afterwards dearly answer: And the contrary thereof he reprehendeth in the States of Venice, of Florence, and many other principalities of Italy; who use to limit their cheife officers so strictly, as that thereby they have oftentimes lost such happy occasions, as they could never come unto againe: The like whereof, who so hath bene conversant in that government of Ireland, hath too often seene to their great hinderance and hurt. Therefore this I could wish to be redressed, and yet not so but that in particular things he should be restrained, though not in the general government; as namely in this, that no offices should bee sould by the Lord Deputy for money, nor no pardons, nor no protections bought for reward, nor no beoves taken for Captainries of countreyes, nor no shares of Bishopricks for nominating Bishops, nor no forfeitures, nor dispensations with poenall Statutes given to their servants or friends, nor no selling of licences for transportation of prohibited wares, and specially of corne and flesh; with many the like; which neede some manner of restraints, or else very great trust in the honourable disposition of the Lord Deputy.

Thus I have, Eudoxus, as briefly as I could, and as my memorie would serve me, run through the state of that whole country, both to let you see what it now is, and also what it may be by good care and amendment: Not that I take upon me to change the policy of so great a kingdome, or prescribe rules to such wise men as have the handling thereof, but onely to shew you the evils, which in my small experience I have observed, to be the cheife hinderance of the reformation; and by way of conference to declare my simple opinion for the redresse thereof, and establishing a good course for government; which I doe not deliver as a perfect plot of mine owne invention to be onely followed, but as I have learned and understood the same by the consultations and actions of very wise Governours and Councillours, whom I have (sometimes) heard treat hereof: So have I thought good to set downe a remembrance of them for my owne good, and your satisfaction, that who so list to overlooke them, although perhaps much wiser then they which have thus advised of that state, yet at least by comparison hereof may perhaps better his owne judgment, and by the light of others fore-going him, may follow after with more ease, and haply finde a fairer way thereunto, then they which have gone before.

*Eudox.* I thanke you, Irenæus, for this your gentle paines; withall not forgetting, now in the shutting up, to put you in minde of that which you have formerly halfe promised, that hereafter when wee shall meete againe, upon the like good occasion, you will declare unto us those your observations, which you have gathered of the Antiquities of Ireland.

\* such a one I could name, &c.] Meaning the Earl of Essex. Todd

## GLOSSARIAL INDEX

OF

WORDS, AND PHRASES, EXPLAINED OR MENTIONED IN THE NOTES.

### A

**ABEARE**, 293  
**Aboard**, 433  
**Abord**, 414, 493  
**Abraid**, 207  
**Abray**, 217  
**Abrayd**, 134  
**Abus**, 110  
**Aby**, 161  
**Abye**, 149, 153  
**Accloieih**, 368  
**Accloyes**, 94  
**Accoied**, 368  
**Account**, 158  
**According**, 54, 62  
**Accoyed**, 227  
**Accoyld**, 106  
**Accrewed**, 215  
**Achates**, 106  
**Acut**, 40  
**Adaw**, 216, 280  
**Adawed**, 271, 368  
**Adrest**, 146, 202  
**Adore**, 240  
**Advaunst**, 67  
**Advise**, 223  
**Advize**, 344  
**Affect**, 301, 316, 487  
**Affections**, 83  
**Afflicted stile**, 8  
**Affrap**, 68, 135  
**Affrended**, 205  
**Affret**, 172, 201  
**Affronted**, 41, 86, 146  
**Affronting**, 202  
**Africk**, 140  
**Ages**, 43  
**Aggrace**, 103  
**Aggrate**, 160, 287, 338  
**Aghast**, 46  
**Aglets**, 302  
**Agraste**, 51  
**Agreably**, 322, 342  
**Aguid**, 68  
**Aguize**, 88, 425  
**Aguidz**, 69  
**Albe**, 347  
**Albee**, 248  
**Albion**, 109  
**Allegre**, 370  
**Alleggeaunce**, 154  
**Alew**, 267  
**Aligates**, 66, 87, 92  
**All**, 44, 128, 130  
**All and some**, 188, 392  
**All be**, 160  
**Allegge**, 136  
**All halle**, 204  
**All to**, 216, 273, 277  
**All-to**, 374  
**Alma**, 105  
**Als**, 46, 205, 221, 382

**Amate**, 48, 182  
**Amated**, 72  
**Amenage**, 81  
**Amcnaunce**, 100, 426  
**Amoves**, 46  
**An howre**, 147  
**Annoy**, 32  
**Antickes**, 185  
**Apayd**, 122  
**Appeach**, 282  
**Appeached**, 102  
**Appele**, 281  
**Appellation**, 351  
**Apply**, 53, 88, 116  
**Arayd**, 305  
**Arere**, 418  
**Arew**, 294  
**Arraught**, 112  
**Arret**, 166  
**Arrett**, 99, 116  
**Ascaunce**, 370  
**Assoile**, 134  
**Assoiled**, 54  
**Assot**, 369  
**Assott**, 110  
**Assoyle**, 218, 357  
**Assotte**, 370  
**Assoyled**, 86  
**Astart**, 394  
**At east**, 68, 81, 92, 244, 307  
**At one clap**, 199  
**At randon**, 374  
**Atone**, 68  
**Attempted**, 291  
**Attent**, 334  
**Attone**, 170  
**Attrapt**, 208  
**Avail**, 365  
**Availle**, 137, 204, 233  
**Avalles**, 366  
**Avale**, 10, 104  
**Aventred**, 131  
**Aventing**, 214  
**Avide**, 140  
**Avise**, 92, 186  
**Avising**, 198  
**Avizd**, 68  
**Avize**, 109, 187  
**Avizetfull**, 216  
**Avoure**, 810  
**Aumayld**, 78  
**Auncient**, 33  
**Awhape**, 218, 421  
**Awhaped**, 288  
**Aye**, 368  
**Aygulets**, 78  
**Avaunting**, 76

### B

**Bace**, 29, 181, 273  
**Back retr'y'd**, 60

**Baffuld**, 256  
**Baile**, 353  
**Bale**, 10  
**Balke**, 136, 340  
**Balkt**, 233  
**Ban**, 228  
**Bancke**, 382  
**Band**, 286, 493  
**Bandogs**, 419  
**Bands**, 139  
**Bannerall**, 324  
**Bannes**, 164  
**Barbarous**, 32  
**Barbes**, 72  
**Barbican**, 106  
**Bardes**, 515  
**Arew**, 343  
**Pasciamani**, 134  
**Base humilitie**, 263  
**Basenet**, 300  
**Base**, 389  
**Bases**, 335  
**Bastard**, 33, 79  
**Bate**, 85  
**Battill**, 329  
**Batton**, 326  
**Baudricke**, 246  
**Bauldricke**, 467  
**Bawnes**, 527  
**Bayt**, 122  
**Beard**, 315, 538  
**Beare**, 306, 348  
**Beastthead**, 378  
**Beath'd**, 218  
**Beauperes**, 132  
**Bed**, 317  
**Bedight**, 373  
**Beginne**, 142  
**Begor'd**, 236  
**Behaves**, 79  
**Behight**, 84, 76, 99, 117, 195, 198, 210, 217, 236, 278  
**Bel-accoyle**, 216  
**Belamour**, 177  
**Belamoure**, 89  
**Belamy**, 97  
**Belay**, 470  
**Belayd**, 302  
**Belgardes**, 78, 175  
**Belive**, 387, 388  
**Belt**, 368  
**Belts**, 383  
**Bend**, 374  
**Benempte**, 383  
**Bent**, 20  
**Bents**, 311  
**Besides**, 114  
**Besits**, 93  
**Besprint**, 392  
**Best**, 52  
**Bestadde**, 385  
**Betake**, 63, 343

**Beteeme**, 100  
**Betight**, 394  
**Betooke**, 158, 163  
**Bett**, 389  
**Bevie**, 106, 373  
**Bewailc**, 31  
**Beyond**, 132  
**Bickermert**, 257  
**Bide**, 167  
**Bidde**, 388  
**Blacke**, 388  
**Blam'd**, 307  
**Blame**, 100  
**Blanck**, 141  
**Blancked**, 536  
**Blatter**, 509  
**Blend**, 93, 476  
**Blent**, 85, 431  
**Blesse**, 26  
**Elest**, 15, 214  
**Blin**, 153  
**Blist**, 327  
**Blive**, 77  
**Bloncket liveries**, 376  
**Bliot**, 386  
**Blunt**, 340, 453  
**Bodrags**, 450  
**Bolts**, 369  
**Boord**, 240  
**Boorded**, 82  
**Boot**, 278  
**Bord**, 72, 121, 141, 206  
**Bordragings**, 114  
**Borne without her dew**, 12  
**Borowe**, 427  
**Borrell**, 381, 382  
**Borrow**, 377  
**Bouget**, 177  
**Boughtes**, 10, 56  
**Bouted**, 32  
**Bountie**, 76  
**Bounty**, 85, 133  
**Bourne**, 88  
**Bowres**, 134  
**Bows**, 43  
**Bouzing**, 23  
**Brace**, 388  
**Brame**, 140  
**Brand**, 21  
**Bransies**, 176  
**Brayned**, 294  
**Brayne-pan**, 320  
**Breach**, 122  
**Breeme**, 396  
**Breme**, 368  
**Brent**, 92  
**Brickle**, 406  
**Bridale**, 336  
**Brigants**, 338  
**Brim**, 280  
**Briton Moniments**, 109  
**Brize**, 436

Brocade, 360, 427  
 Brooke, 312  
 Brutnesse, 99  
 Bryzes, 299  
 Bug, 77  
 Bulles, 41  
 Burden, 326  
 Burganet, 102  
 Burgein, 357  
 Busie payne, 33  
 Baskets, 376  
 But, 170, 171  
 But for, 76, 109, 241, 290  
 But if, 133, 141, 188, 220, 225, 385  
 Buxome, 137, 327  
 Buxome aire, 59  
 Buxome and bent, 383  
 By and by, 40  
 Bynempt, 71, 393  
 Byte, 73

## C

CABINETS, 127  
 Camus, 78  
 Can, 25, 31, 58, 68, 202, 214, 265, 369  
 Canced carle, 171  
 Cahon, 38  
 Cantred, 551  
 Capuccio, 186  
 Carefull, 31  
 Carke, 12, 393  
 Carle, 49  
 Carven, 388  
 Cast, 31, 70, 322, 331, 367, 389  
 Cav'd, 212  
 Causelesse, 166  
 Causen, 173  
 Cautelous, 510  
 Caytive, 30  
 Caytive courage, 391  
 Chaffred, 383, 429  
 Chamelet, 240  
 Chamfred, 368  
 Chaplet, 385  
 Character, 266  
 Charmes, 390, 391  
 Charmes, 410  
 Charming, 483  
 Chearm might, 49  
 Checked, 121  
 Checkloun, or sheck-latwa, 325  
 Cheere, 8  
 Chery, 337  
 Chevissauce, 104, 375, 377  
 Chiefrie, 542  
 Chin, 37  
 Churles, 510  
 Chylded, 345  
 Chynd, 215  
 Clame, 232  
 Clemence, 271  
 Clumbe, 382  
 Close, 211  
 Closely, 344  
 Cloyd, 160  
 Coiled, 138  
 Commen, 278  
 Comment, 353  
 Commonly, 54  
 Compare, 24  
 Compast, 208  
 Complement, 156  
 Complements, 337  
 Compliching, 289  
 Complot, 275  
 Complynes, 424  
 Concent, 185, 482  
 Concrew, 221  
 Cond, 387  
 Confound, 399  
 Congè, 69, 76  
 Congish, 314  
 Congregate, 350  
 Coniure, 285  
 Constant, 126  
 Constraint, 72, 221

Containe, 291  
 Conteck, 377, 388  
 Contecke, 134  
 Contraire, 349  
 Contrive, 108  
 Controverse, 209  
 Convent, 355  
 Convice, 137  
 Copesmate, 423  
 Coportion, 366  
 Corage, 84, 136  
 Corbe, 368  
 Corbes, 231  
 Cordwayre, 302  
 Correnal, 366  
 Coronell, 536  
 Cor'sive, 229  
 Cesset, 393  
 Cott, 88  
 Could, 261, 269, 317  
 Counsell sad, 74  
 Counter, 410  
 Counterfesaunce, 44, 207, 425  
 Courd, 99  
 Course, 344  
 Couth, 365  
 Cowardree, 428  
 Cowheard, 283  
 Crafty spies, 132  
 Cragge, 388  
 Crags, 368  
 Crake, 353  
 Crakes, 116  
 Cranck, 386  
 Cranks, 353  
 Cratch, 493  
 Craven, 320  
 Crested, 192  
 Crime, 69, 96  
 Crooke, 262  
 Croud, 493  
 Cruell spies, 15  
 Crumnell, 388  
 Cuffing, 208  
 Culver, 479  
 Culverings, 235  
 Cryen, 372  
 Cunning hand, 132

## D

D.EDALE hand, 128  
 Daintie, 73, 125  
 Dams, 242  
 Darned, 262, 282, 323  
 Darnnfyde, 92  
 Danisk, 234  
 Dapper, 390  
 Darrayne, 25  
 Darred, 352  
 Dayes-man, 101  
 Daynt, 128  
 Deadly made, 60  
 Deare, 39, 147, 171  
 Dearily, 69  
 Debate, 103, 327  
 Debonaire, 15, 90  
 Decesse, 233  
 Decrewed, 215  
 Deeme, 241  
 Deene, 6  
 Default, 303  
 Defend, 125, 203, 275, 418  
 Defly, 373  
 Define, 201  
 Degendered, 245  
 Degendering, 492  
 Deigne, 396  
 Delay, 5, 106, 222, 466  
 Delayd, 91, 139, 472  
 Delices, 87, 231  
 Dell, 370  
 Demayne, 100  
 Demeane, 319, 325  
 Demisse, 492  
 Dempt, 97, 385  
 Depart, 110, 146, 162, 302  
 Derrily, 130, 183  
 Derring doe, 396

Derring doe, 84  
 Derring doers, 199  
 Descrive, 78, 345  
 Desining, 270  
 Despetto, 315  
 Devicefull sights, 253  
 Devoyre, 387  
 Dew, 12  
 Diapred, 482  
 Did pray, 338  
 Did shame, 258  
 Diffused, 290  
 Dight, 86, 372, 445  
 Dilate, 145  
 Dint, 39  
 Dinting, 337  
 Dirke, 385  
 Dirks, 367  
 Disaventurous deare, 39  
 Discharge, 350  
 Discided, 194  
 Disclos'd, 211  
 Discourse, 327  
 Discust, 133  
 Disease, 152, 268, 317, 381  
 Diseased, 309  
 Disentrayle, 215  
 Disentrayled, 203  
 Disgraste, 36  
 Dishabled, 86  
 Disleall, 84  
 Disloignd, 233  
 Disloyall, 196  
 Dismayd, 116, 144  
 Dismount, 378  
 Dispace, 416  
 Disparage, 226  
 Dispence, 106, 124  
 Disple, 52  
 Dissaventures, 48  
 Dissesse, 357  
 Disselized, 57  
 Distraughted, 494  
 Ditt, 39  
 Direse, 12  
 Divers, 145  
 Divide, 27, 256  
 Divinde, 444  
 Doe well, 297  
 Don, 267  
 Done, 131, 259  
 Donne, 214, 338  
 Doole, 222  
 Doome, 385  
 Dortours, 346  
 Doubled strokes, 27  
 Doubt, 152, 192, 299  
 Doubtfull, 32  
 Doucèpere, 178  
 Dont, 188, 287  
 Downe way, 252  
 Downe, 414  
 Drapets, 106  
 Draught, 113  
 Dread, 8  
 Dreare, 306  
 Drent, 92, 272, 419  
 Drere, 43  
 Dreriment, 41, 92, 393  
 Dresse, 182  
 Drevill, 196  
 Drive, 333, 353  
 Droyle, 422  
 Dryihed, 400  
 Dubbed, 290  
 Dumpish, 468  
 Dumps, 475  
 Duresse, 223  
 Dwell, 58  
 Dye, 36, 93

## E

EARE, 396  
 Earst, 244  
 Edifide, 420  
 Edifyde, 11, 130  
 Eeke, 30  
 Eeked, 388  
 Eft, 46, 81, 102, 202, 331, 351

Element, 368  
 Eld, 368  
 Embase, 319  
 Embassade, 491  
 Embay, 125  
 Embayd, 103  
 Embayid, 78  
 Embellish, 373  
 Embellisht, 368  
 Embosse, 57, 134  
 Embost, 47, 131, 208, 214  
 Embowd, 46  
 Embrave, 71  
 Embrewed, 157, 486  
 Eme, 113  
 Emmarble, 437  
 Empaire, 257, 290  
 Emparalounce, 261  
 Empeach, 43, 94, 115, 144, 272  
 Emperill, 206  
 Emprise, 388  
 Enaunter, 368, 377, 388  
 Enchased, 385  
 Eneheason, 377  
 Encheson, 388  
 Endew, 26, 169  
 Endosse, 290, 452  
 Endur'd, 224  
 Enfelon'd, 277  
 Enforme, 318  
 Enfoldred, 59  
 Enfyred, 487  
 Engore, 102  
 Engrained, 368  
 Engrave, 53, 71  
 Enhaunced, 216  
 Enraced, 337, 490  
 Enseames, 239  
 Ensnarie, 273  
 Entayld, 73  
 Entayne, 93  
 Entayled, 90  
 Enterdeale, 275, 426  
 Enterprize, 73  
 Entertaine, 312  
 Entertake, 280  
 Entertayne, 224, 281, 429  
 Entertayning, 343  
 Entire, 100, 162  
 Entrailed, 385  
 Entrayld, 78, 159, 184  
 Entyre, 133, 224  
 Envy, 130  
 Enure, 198  
 Enured, 281, 481  
 Equipage, 391  
 Erroun, 151  
 Esloyne, 23  
 Essoyne, 23  
 Eternal night, 394  
 Ethe, 388  
 Ever among, 396  
 Evil heare, 28  
 Excheat, 23, 167  
 Expert, 393  
 Exprest, 119  
 Expyre, 36, 60  
 Expyred, 196  
 Extasie, 350  
 Extirpe, 61  
 Extort, 284  
 Extreate, 282  
 Eyas, 58, 491

## F

FADE, 27  
 Fain, 9  
 Faine, 209, 301, 312, 351, 378  
 Faine have, 351  
 Fained, 275, 307  
 Faitours, 376  
 Faised, 43, 85  
 Faised fancey, 16  
 Farewell, 284  
 Falsers, 396  
 Faste, 117  
 Fastnesse, 233  
 Fatal end, 141

Fatal error, 110, 174  
 Fay, 275  
 Payld, 85, 184  
 Paynes, 294  
 Payrely, 91  
 Paytor, 64  
 Paytour, 186  
 Feare, 46, 191, 233, 283  
 Feared, 330  
 Fearefull ewftes, 284  
 Fearfull, 319  
 Feature, 200  
 Feedes, 35  
 Fell, 180  
 Felly, 92  
 Felnesse, 102  
 Feminitee, 160  
 Fere, 50  
 Ferme, 153  
 Ferragh, 520  
 Fetch, 122  
 Feutred, 209  
 Fiaunt, 429  
 Field, 90  
 File, 351, 382  
 File his tongue, 11  
 Filed, 134  
 Fine, 125, 466  
 Fit, 448  
 Fitt, 56  
 Flam'd, 247  
 Fleet, 230  
 Flore, 299  
 Flourets, 368  
 Folke-mote, 206  
 Fon, 368  
 Fond, 48, 163, 168, 288  
 Fund encheason, 68  
 Fone, 439  
 Food, 41, 66  
 For, 263, 272, 336, 132  
 For all, 147  
 For the nonce, 287  
 For the nones, 439  
 Forthy, 67  
 For-thy, 370  
 Forbeare, 70  
 Foreby, 34, 253  
 For-bent, 150  
 Forelent, 201  
 Fore-slacked, 504  
 Foretaught, 37  
 Forewent, 382  
 Forhaile, 388  
 Forlent, 149  
 Forlorne, 372  
 Formerlie, 301  
 Formerly, 309  
 Forray, 145, 342  
 Forslacked, 344  
 Forswatt, 373  
 Forswonck, 373  
 Forth do well, 111  
 Forth to hold, 271  
 Forthinke, 313  
 Forward, 75  
 Forwarne, 152  
 Forwearied, 45  
 Foster, 130  
 Fouldring, 73  
 Foundring, 208  
 Fountain shere, 139  
 Foy, 112  
 Foyle, 113, 288  
 Foynd, 85  
 Frame, 317  
 Francklin, 50  
 Free, 133  
 Frend, 11, 141  
 Frenne, 372  
 Fresh, 264  
 Friends, 196  
 Frorne, 367  
 Froward, 337  
 Frowy, 168  
 Frowye, 382  
 Fuifill, 123  
 Furniment, 204  
 Fyde, 345  
 Fyle, 186

Fyled, 324  
 Fyne, 23

**G**

GALAGE, 367, 368, 388  
 Gang, 370, 388  
 Garre, 86  
 Garges, 372  
 Garrons, 511  
 Gate, 377  
 Gathering to feare, 114  
 Gay, 297  
 Gay besene, 317  
 Geare, 89  
 Geason, 314, 420, 436  
 Gelt, 219, 366  
 Gent, 117  
 Gentle thewes, 45  
 Georges, 55  
 German, 102  
 Gerne, 293  
 Gest, 51  
 Ghesse, 233  
 Giambeux, 90  
 Gibe, 89  
 Gin, 77, 161  
 Girloids, 235  
 Giusts, 389  
 Glade, 339  
 Glaives, 483  
 Glave, 220  
 Glee, 368, 378, 396  
 Glib, 223  
 Glibbes, 519  
 Gliterand, 38, 383  
 Glode, 207  
 Glozing, 167  
 Glynnes, 535  
 Gnarre, 29  
 Good Friday, 366  
 Good honre, 334  
 Goodman, 212  
 Gorge, 23  
 Gossibs, 61  
 Grace, 329  
 Graile, 36  
 Gramercy, 37  
 Grange, 355  
 Grantorto, 246  
 Graste, 345  
 Grations, 184  
 Grayle, 440  
 Great-hunt, 388  
 Great mercy, 86  
 Great name, 62  
 Greave, 179, 305  
 Gree, 5, 27, 76, 267, 383  
 Greete, 385  
 Grid, 134, 365, 368  
 Grin, 259  
 Gripe, 24, 311  
 Groome, 78  
 Groynd, 346  
 Gryde, 101, 385  
 Gnarish, 154  
 Guerdon, 90, 393  
 Guilefull call, 265  
 Gyeid, 96  
 Gyre, 131

**H**

HABERIEONS, 90  
 Habie, 57  
 Hacqueton, 102  
 Had recourse, 248  
 Hagard hauke, 57  
 Hale, 382, 456  
 Halfendeale, 175  
 Hall, 216, 268  
 Hallidome, 425  
 Han, 377  
 Hand, 19  
 Handes, 56  
 Harbrough, 378  
 Hard assay forgone, 77  
 Harness, 145  
 Harrowd hell, 53, 477  
 Harrow, 92

Haske, 393  
 Hanbergh, 102  
 Haught, 33  
 Haughtie, 56  
 Haust, 205  
 Hazardry, 124  
 Heard, 331  
 Heardgroomes, 368  
 Heards, 342  
 Hell, 234  
 Hent, 71, 92, 356, 367, 368  
 Her avizing, 137  
 Her, 377, 386  
 Here by, 388  
 Herie, 368, 393  
 Herried, 121  
 Hersall, 182  
 Herse, 139, 393  
 Hest, 486  
 Hew, 330  
 Heydeguyes, 380  
 Hladder and shidder, 388  
 Hight, 22, 46, 234, 281  
 Hight of Maidenhead, 39  
 Him, 209  
 Him overstrooke, 287  
 Hippodames, 103, 184  
 His clownish gifts, 365  
 His Ladie, 27  
 His long-wandering woe, 27  
 Hole, 155  
 Hollow lay, 167  
 Hood, 366  
 Hooved, 453  
 Hoore, 92  
 Hospitages, 176  
 Hospitale, 104  
 Hostlesse, 130  
 Hostry, 284  
 Hot, 58  
 Moved, 177  
 Housing fire, 64  
 Howres, 317  
 Hugger-mugger, 421  
 Humblesse, 20, 61  
 Hurte, 85  
 Hurdlen, 23  
 Hylding, 316

**I**

I YOU AREAD, 63  
 Iasp, 439  
 Iavels, 423  
 Idole, 75  
 Iesses, 312  
 Ill-affected, 318  
 Ill-apayd, 213  
 Ill bested, 68  
 Image of thy day, 126  
 Impe, 45  
 Impacable, 229  
 Impeach, 419  
 Impes, 287  
 Implic, 270  
 Implore, 87  
 Imply, 159  
 Implyes, 31, 58  
 Importable, 101  
 Importune, 90, 281  
 Importune fate, 62  
 Impotent, 291  
 Impugne, 256  
 In, 142  
 In derring do, 390  
 In discourteise wise, 133  
 In field, 21  
 Incompared, 6  
 Infuse, 492  
 Ingate, 532  
 In gentle thewes, 45  
 In his, 53  
 In place, 29  
 In round lists, 21  
 Inclination, 159  
 Incline, 125  
 Inclinyng, 68  
 Incontinent, 31, 355  
 Indeed, 319  
 Indew, 159

Indifferent, 135, 281  
 Indigne, 194  
 Indignifyde, 300  
 Infamy, 318  
 Infant, 103  
 Inferd, 329  
 Ingate, 402  
 Inholders, 355  
 Inly, 376  
 Inne, 308  
 Inquest, 135  
 Inspyre, 78, 106  
 Instantly, 230  
 Intended, 59  
 Intendiment, 154, 409  
 Interesse, 351  
 Intimate, 307  
 Intuse, 154  
 Invade, 159  
 Invent, 152  
 Invented, 290  
 Invest, 211

**J**

JANE, 165  
 Jolly, 8, 303, 356  
 Jollyhead, 342  
 Jouissance, 376  
 Journall, 58  
 Jonsaunce, 393

**K**

KEEPE, 388, 395  
 Keight, 133, 268  
 Ken, 388  
 Kene, 368  
 Kerne, 383, 520  
 Kest, 345  
 Kestrell, 76  
 Kidst, 396  
 Kin, 514  
 Kinde, 240  
 Kirke, 376  
 Knife, 29, 147  
 Knightlesse, 303  
 Kynd, 17, 75, 87  
 Kynde, 329

**L**

LAD, 222  
 Lady gent, 47  
 Lady thrail, 273  
 Lambkins, 396  
 Lamping, 140, 468  
 Lare, 224  
 Latched, 370  
 Late yroe, 66  
 Launce, 161  
 Lay-stall, 31  
 Laves, 113  
 Leach, 474  
 Leach-crafte, 141  
 Leaches, 27  
 Leake, 328  
 Leare, 204  
 Leares, 162  
 Leasing, 35  
 Least, 237  
 Leav'd, 112  
 Leevon, 237, 453  
 Lee, 250  
 Leefe, 388  
 Legierdemaine, 279, 426  
 Leka, 29  
 Lemans, 87  
 Lere, 378  
 Lesser, 85  
 Lest, 299  
 Let, 41, 152, 303  
 Let be, 90, 136  
 Lett, 70  
 Lett be, 77, 94  
 Lever, 47, 135  
 Levin, 382, 385  
 Lewd, 146  
 Lewd word, 256  
 Lewdly, 272, 304, 366, 512

- Lewdnes, 256  
 Libbard, 33  
 Liefe, 172  
 Lig, 314  
 Ligge so layd, 390  
 Ligger, 377  
 Light, 343  
 Like to quell, 357  
 Lilled, 29  
 Lime-hound, 250  
 Lin, 142  
 Liverey and seisin, 314  
 Lofty siege, 75  
 Loug-wandering, 27  
 Loos, 344  
 Loose, 288  
 Loosely, 323  
 Lordship, 375  
 Lord, 382  
 Lore, 189, 285  
 Loring, 273  
 Lorne, 388  
 Lorrell, 381, 382  
 Losell, 76  
 Lo'ste, 146  
 Lot, 301  
 Loth, 172  
 Low'd, 212  
 Lover, 339  
 Loves, 325  
 Lout, 277  
 Lower, 81  
 Lowted, 383  
 Lowting low, 11  
 Lugs, 110  
 Luskishuesse, 300  
 Lust, 240, 253, 267, 308  
 Lustedhead, 389  
 Lusstesse, 23, 366  
 Lusty, 183, 306, 356  
 Lybian, 100  
 Lybicke ocean, 78  
 Lymiter, 421  
 Lythe, 368
- M
- MACERATE, 415  
 Mage, 141  
 Maidenhead, 39  
 Make, 14, 36, 180, 350, 372, 380, 457  
 Making, 449  
 Malefices, 429  
 Malengin, 278  
 Malengine, 133  
 Maliced, 399  
 Maligne, 149  
 Malist, 493  
 Mall, 40, 286  
 Maltalent, 151  
 Many, 171, 286  
 Mard, 131  
 Narge, 227  
 Marke-white, 264  
 Mart, 8  
 Martelled, 164  
 Martyrest, 218  
 Matchlesse, 194  
 Mate, 223  
 Mavis, 482  
 Maugre, 314  
 Maulgre, 151  
 Maulgre, 248  
 May, 67, 393  
 May not, 71  
 Meane, 332  
 Meard'd, 434  
 Meare, 174  
 Measured, 388  
 Medled, 373, 378  
 Medling, 71  
 Meere, 480  
 Meint, 382  
 Mellung, 383  
 Memories, 424  
 Meut, 14, 262, 320, 415  
 Mercifide, 324  
 Merciesse, 226  
 Meriment, 373
- Mesprise, 96  
 Mew, 28  
 Mewes, 87  
 Meynt, 394  
 Mich, 553  
 Mickle, 382  
 Mieve, 243  
 Mincing mineon, 75  
 Miuic, 337  
 Miniments, 222  
 Minisht, 59  
 Mirke, 388  
 Mirkesome, 28  
 Mis, 170  
 Miscreance, 377  
 Misdeeme, 297  
 Misers, 66  
 Missayd, 216  
 Mister, 46, 162, 388  
 Mistreth, 165  
 Miswent, 212, 385  
 Mockes and mowes, 326  
 Moist, 134  
 Mold, 344  
 Nome, 353  
 Moniment, 93  
 Morall, 448  
 More, 54, 65, 82, 378  
 Mores, 354  
 Morion, 440  
 Mortall crime, 355  
 Most, 85, 87, 144, 237, 319  
 Most regiment, 355  
 Mott, 450  
 Moutenance, 167, 182  
 Mowes, 326  
 Moyle, 493  
 Muchell, 25, 163  
 Munificence, 110  
 Mured, 346  
 My toward good, 82  
 Mysterie, 422
- N
- NAMELY, 307, 358  
 Narre, 382, 433  
 Nas, 377  
 Nathemore, 47, 223  
 Native, 268, 286  
 Ne brest, 391  
 Ne desperate, 203  
 Neighbour towne, 365  
 Nephewes, 28, 113, 432  
 Nere, 73  
 Nest, 212  
 Net, 330  
 Nett, 187  
 New, 288  
 New in pound, 251  
 New-borne, 59  
 Newell, 378  
 Nigardise, 223  
 Nis, 379  
 Northerne wagoner, 13  
 N'ot, 201  
 Nothing envious, 89  
 Noughty cremeth, 377  
 Nould, 368  
 Noule, 357  
 Noursle up, 313  
 Noursled, 33  
 Noyd, 59  
 Nyc, 376, 378
- O
- OBLIQUID, 358  
 Of yore, 382  
 On, 402  
 On high, 167  
 On high, 260  
 One, 211  
 Onely, 36, 40, 66, 227, 288, 358  
 Oricalche, 398  
 Other, 118, 171, 294  
 Overgrast, 385  
 Overhaile, 365  
 Over past, 48  
 Overcraw, 49
- Overdight, 225  
 Overture, 382  
 Overwent, 370  
 Ought, 25, 102, 133, 306, 323  
 Out on me, 328  
 Owches, 52
- P
- PAGADORE, 154  
 Paire, 70, 154, 295, 297, 302, 430  
 Pan, 382  
 Pannikell, 153  
 Parbreake, 10  
 Pardale, 33  
 Paravaunt, 136, 336  
 Paravaut, 455  
 Paraget, 439  
 Part, 207  
 Partake, 82  
 Parties entire, 272  
 Pas, 195  
 Passing prief, 51  
 Passion, 16, 46  
 Passionate, 62  
 Passioned, 107  
 Past, 52  
 Pate, 378  
 Payne, 143, 305  
 Paysd, 109  
 Peasant, 309  
 Peaze, 137  
 Peece, 54, 117, 124, 176, 250, 470  
 Peeres, 380, 396  
 Perdy, 90  
 Peregall, 385  
 Perke, 366  
 Persaut, 172  
 Persue, 153  
 Pert, 387, 388  
 Petronels, 512  
 Phantastes, 108  
 Pight, 395  
 Pill, 430  
 Pils, 248  
 Pine, 316  
 Places, 413  
 Plight, 88  
 Plighted, 172  
 Pointed, 354  
 Pols, 248  
 Port, 184  
 Portance, 77  
 Portesse, 23  
 Potshares, 301  
 Pouke, 484  
 Pouldred, 36, 137, 435  
 Pousse, 385  
 Practicke paine, 64  
 Prauke, 247  
 Pray, 164  
 Prayde, 338  
 Preace, 18  
 Preecing, 431  
 Priefe, 423  
 Prepsene, 181  
 Presage, 55  
 Prest, 101, 202, 225, 323, 350  
 Pretended, 311, 340  
 Preventing, 195, 327  
 Price, 28, 48  
 Prieve, 345  
 Prieved, 259  
 Prime, 17  
 Primrose, 368  
 Principle unsonnd, 286  
 Privie or pert, 387, 388  
 Professe, 319  
 Proiect, 301  
 Potense, 140  
 Prowest, 25, 100  
 Prune, 79  
 Pryse, 236  
 Purpose, 88, 121, 217  
 Purchas, 19  
 Purflid, 78  
 Purposes, 16, 176  
 Pyonings, 114
- Q
- QUAILE, 43  
 Quaint, 161, 192  
 Quar'le, 118  
 Quarrell, 118  
 Quarry, 119, 303  
 Quart, 110  
 Quayd, 41  
 Queene, 168  
 Quint, 85, 271, 391  
 Quint elect, 162  
 Queme, 376  
 Quest, 165, 229  
 Quich, 280  
 Quight, 41  
 Quinch, 547  
 Quip, 325  
 Quips, 426  
 Quire, 330  
 Quite clame, 303  
 Quited, 11  
 Quoock, 351
- R
- RABLEMENT, 31  
 Raft, 385  
 Raile, 35  
 Raine, 150, 263, 302, 491  
 Rakehell, 527  
 Randon, 80, 374  
 Ranck, 76  
 Rauke, 212  
 Rapt, 228  
 Rashly, 107, 134  
 Raskall any, 61  
 Raskall ronts, 105  
 Rate, 235  
 Rathe, 142, 395  
 Rather lambs, 368  
 Raught, 102, 439  
 Ray, 69, 252, 288, 312  
 Rayle, 102  
 Rayling, 150  
 Rayne, 94, 203  
 Rayons, 439  
 Read, 51, 232  
 Ready bent, 220  
 Re-allie, 350  
 Reame, 226  
 Reare, 214  
 Reason, 73  
 Recks much of thyswincke, 382  
 Reclayne, 292  
 Recoyle, 51  
 Recreant Knight, 25  
 Reculle, 239  
 Reule, 290  
 Reure, 30, 121, 214, 226  
 Reured, 315  
 Red, 304  
 Re-disbonrse, 203  
 Redresse, 29  
 Red-rose, 373  
 Reede, 493  
 Regiments, 109  
 Relate, 170  
 Relent, 150, 159, 161, 271, 316  
 Relide, 230  
 Relyv'd, 49, 166  
 Relyv'd, 148  
 Remercied, 117  
 Renconuter, 129  
 Renew, 227  
 Reuifier, 102  
 Re'nforst, 81, 113  
 Renverst, 25, 256  
 Replevie, 243  
 Repriefe, 166  
 Reprieved, 268  
 Reprize, 119  
 Reseized, 113  
 Resiant, 238  
 Resolv'd, 415  
 Restlesse, 255  
 Restore, 152  
 Restraitt, 104  
 Retyre, 333

Reverse, 49, 139, 145  
 Revert, 217  
 Revest, 68  
 Revolt, 192  
 Rew, 157  
 Ribandrie, 389  
 Richly-light, 63  
 Rid, 353  
 Right, 275  
 Ring, 297, 390  
 Ripping, 518  
 Rivage, 215  
 Rive, 286  
 Roode, 317  
 Roode, 368  
 Rosiere, 105  
 Rote, 100, 228  
 Rorde, 384  
 Roved, 264  
 Ront, 351  
 Rownd, 31  
 Rownded, 178  
 Royn, 290  
 Ruddock, 482  
 Ruffed, 137  
 Ruffin, 24  
 Ruinate, 120, 284, 475  
 Rule, 111  
 Rulesse, 418  
 Ruty, 466  
 Ryhauld, 67  
 Ryde so ranck, 76  
 Ryven, 285

## S

SABAOTH, 359  
 Sabbaths, 359  
 Sacred, 123  
 Sad, 8, 50, 70, 89, 101  
 Sad sober cheare, 62  
 Sad semblant, 235  
 Sailles, 260  
 Saine, 358  
 Saint Charitie, 378  
 Saldewd, 216  
 Salliaunce, 68  
 Salded, 91  
 Salvagesse sans finesse, 208  
 Salveld, 100  
 Sam, 377  
 Samite, 186  
 Saw, 454  
 Say, 186, 326, 343, 376  
 Scand, 349  
 Scarabee, 436  
 Scarmoges, 91  
 Scath, 86, 147  
 Scathe, 396  
 Scatterlings, 114, 508  
 Scerne, 177  
 Scorse, 108, 172  
 Scriene, 280  
 Strike, 312  
 Scruzd, 120  
 Scruze, 154  
 Scryde, 295  
 Scryne, 8  
 Sclayned, 264  
 Sea-bord, 144  
 Sec, 233, 357  
 Seemlesse, 250  
 Seemlyhed, 223  
 Seized, 429  
 Seiz'd, 260  
 Seizing, 19  
 Selcouth, 223  
 Sell, 72  
 Senselesse, 285  
 Seneschall, 192  
 Seneschalls, 531  
 Sent, 12  
 Sept, 504  
 Sere, 365  
 Severall, 298  
 Sew, 73, 93  
 Sewde, 150  
 Shame, 68, 122  
 Shard, 91  
 Share, 15

Sheene, 423  
 Shend, 467  
 Shene, 393  
 Shent, 84, 319  
 Shere, 215  
 Shine, 201  
 Shole, 352, 376  
 Shope, 264  
 Shrifts, 424  
 Shright, 310  
 Shrightes, 97  
 Shrill, 271  
 Shyne, 55  
 Sih, 142  
 Sibbe, 378  
 Sieker, 424  
 Sickernesse, 163  
 Sides, 313  
 Siege, 96  
 Siek't, 328, 338  
 Sights, 351  
 Signe, 55  
 Sike mister men, 383  
 Siker, 368  
 Silent waves, 127  
 Silly, 168  
 Silver, 333  
 Sin, 343  
 Singulif, 181  
 Singulif, 267  
 Sith, 178, 365  
 Sits, 11, 375, 391  
 Skean, 519  
 Sleeping, 99  
 Slight, 269  
 Slug, 68  
 Sly, 108, 124  
 Snar, 346  
 Snarled, 186  
 Snebbe, 367, 388  
 Snih, 423  
 So goodly scope, 150  
 Soher sad, 62  
 Soft, 472  
 Softe, 134  
 Sold to entertaine, 104  
 Somedele, 394  
 Song, 61  
 Soot, 373, 388  
 Sootlich, 136  
 Sor'd, 188  
 Sore, 160  
 Sorehon, 550  
 Sort, 331, 456, 132  
 Sovenance, 377, 412  
 Sovenauce, 88, 393  
 Sourse, 377, 393  
 Soyle, 202  
 Space, 200  
 Spalles, 90  
 Sparre the yate, 377  
 Spell, 370  
 Sperre, 285  
 Spersed, 12  
 Sperst, 256  
 Spies, 15  
 Spilt, 231  
 Spitting, 92  
 Sprent, 124  
 Spring, 400  
 Springalls, 282  
 Spyaals, 66  
 Spyre, 155  
 Squib, 423  
 Squint eye, 385  
 Squire, 71  
 Stadle, 32  
 Sta'd, 430  
 Stales, 66, 335  
 Stanck, 388  
 Stand, 21  
 State, 388  
 States, 354  
 Stay, 151  
 Stead, 84  
 Sted, 48  
 Stedfast, 72  
 Steme, 90  
 Stemme, 336  
 Stent, 81

Sterne, 10, 58  
 Sterne strife, 368  
 Sterve, 91  
 Steven, 388  
 Stie, 230, 397  
 Stild, 221  
 Strayt, 96  
 Stinted, 429  
 Stire, 66, 84  
 Socal, 548  
 Stole, 62  
 Stounds, 378, 389  
 Stouping, 57  
 Stoure, 365  
 Stovre, 20  
 Straine, 225  
 Straying heard, 382  
 Streamc, 489  
 Streight behight, 84  
 Strene, 280, 318  
 Stresse, 182  
 Strich, 123  
 Stricken deare, 67  
 Strong, 414  
 Stryfull, 136  
 Studde, 369  
 Sty, 96  
 Stye, 58  
 Subject plaine, 57  
 Sublime, 276  
 Succede, 311  
 Suddein, 27  
 Suddeine, 48  
 Suffranne, 317  
 Surhet, 73  
 Surly, 383  
 Surprise, 338  
 Surquedrie, 251, 368  
 Surquedry, 123, 146  
 Swarwed, 285  
 Sweat and swinke, 313  
 Sweet teene, 154  
 Swelt, 218, 345  
 Swinck, 93, 376  
 Swinged, 58  
 Syte, 379

## T

TABLE, 49, 78  
 Takest keepe, 394  
 Tamburins, 379, 380  
 Tanist and Tanistry, 505  
 Tapet, 399  
 Tassell-gent, 150  
 Tawdrie lace, 372  
 Teade, 400  
 Teemed, 417  
 Teene, 62, 71, 393  
 Teld, 351  
 Tempereth, 430  
 Termelesse, 492  
 Terror, 236  
 Than, 289  
 The grosse, 388  
 Thee, 69, 117  
 There, 388  
 Thewed ill, 90  
 Thewe, 45, 302  
 Thick, 69  
 Thicke, 77, 369  
 Thilke, 376  
 Tho, 103, 364  
 Thrall, 43, 263, 343  
 Treasure, 199  
 Thrillant, 84  
 Thrilled, 138  
 Thrilling, 473  
 Thrilling throb, 377  
 Thro, 345  
 Throw, 150  
 Thrust, 74, 165  
 Thyse, 166  
 Tickle, 366, 359  
 Tight, 346  
 Time, 331  
 Tinct, 393  
 Tind, 99, 162  
 Time, 117, 331  
 Todde, 370

Tofore, 206  
 Too too, 148, 353  
 Tooting, 369  
 Tort, 61  
 Torte, 429  
 Tortious, 73  
 Tottie, 368  
 Totty, 357  
 Trade, 91  
 Traine, 10  
 Traicis, 73  
 Transnewed, 79  
 Trast, 276  
 Travel'd, 435  
 Treachetours, 327  
 Treachours, 47  
 Treague, 74  
 Trenchand, 10  
 Trentals, 424  
 Tressed locks, 872  
 Troad, 335, 423  
 Trode, 380, 388  
 Trow, 85, 251  
 Truncked, 84  
 Trye, 250  
 Twilight, 267  
 Tydes, 391  
 Tynde, 417  
 Tynd 239  
 Tyranne, 389  
 Tyranning, 218

## V

VADE, 494  
 Vailed, 172  
 Vaine, 64  
 Valliance, 77  
 Values, 181  
 Varlet, 83  
 Vauncing, 207  
 Vayne, 79  
 Vele, 9  
 Vallenage, 116  
 Vellet, 375  
 Vener, 33  
 Vented up, 132  
 Venteth, 368  
 Vertue, 389  
 Vetchie, 388  
 Vilde, 287  
 Vine-propp clme, 9  
 Virelayes, 393  
 Visnomie, 400

## U

UMBRIERE, 132  
 Unacquainted, 28  
 Unbid, 49  
 Unblam'd, 365  
 Uncouth, 57, 150, 388  
 Underfong, 249, 380  
 Underfong, 379  
 Undertake, 256  
 Undertime, 161  
 Unenth, 48, 56, 343  
 Uneven payre, 315  
 Unhappie paine, 313  
 Unhappy bowyer, 15  
 Unheale, 310  
 Unhele, 126  
 Unherst, 256  
 Unkempt, 393  
 Unkinde, 139  
 Unlast, 301  
 Unnethes, 365  
 Unproved, 39  
 Unprovided scath, 64  
 Unproved, 94  
 Unshed, 221  
 Unthrifty scath, 24  
 Untill, 56, 393  
 Untouch, 80  
 Unvalwed, 478  
 Unwary, 63  
 Unwist, 137  
 Upbrayes, 160  
 Uphild, 341  
 Urchins, 117  
 Usage quaint, 221

W  
 WACHT, 396  
 Wae, 388  
 Wage, 94  
 Wagniores, 386  
 Ward, 117, 182  
 Ware, 35  
 Warelesse, 247  
 Warke, 377  
 Warrayd, 30  
 Warre, 388  
 Ware old, 224  
 Wary, 134  
 Waste, 175  
 Watchet, 149  
 Waves, 120  
 Way, 252, 353  
 Way'd, 197  
 Wayment, 67, 148  
 Weanell waste, 388  
 Weaved, 257  
 Weed, 100  
 Weet, 250  
 Weetelesse, 382  
 Wefte, 148, 173, 299

Weigh, 309  
 Weld, 327, 389  
 Welc or wo, 268  
 Welked, 393  
 Welkin, 370, 388  
 Well, 17, 111, 297  
 Well apayd, 189  
 Well avizing, 345  
 Well thewed, 368  
 Welter, 383  
 Wend, 349  
 Went, 200, 213, 318  
 What, 331, 386  
 Whelky, 415  
 Where is she become, 51  
 Whether, 269  
 Whether whether, 228  
 Whilome, 385, 390  
 Whist, 358  
 Whott, 71, 86  
 Wight, 370  
 Wightly, 388  
 Will'd a Capias, 324  
 Will or mill, 21  
 Wimble, 370  
 Wimble and wight, 370

Wimple, 62  
 Wimpled, 9, 354  
 Win, 193, 299  
 Wisards, 383, 495  
 Wisely, 328  
 Wite, 121, 307  
 Wite the witelesse, 385  
 With final force, 277  
 Without entraile, 10  
 Wo worth, 91  
 Woe, 103  
 Won, 172  
 Wonne, 34, 94, 129, 135, 368  
 Wonned, 388  
 Wont, 260  
 Wood, 24, 81, 102, 384  
 Woon, 414  
 Word, 83, 208  
 Worship, 66  
 Woven, 26  
 Wounds, 368  
 Wowed, 339  
 Wracke, 365  
 Wrapt, 282  
 Wreaked, 394  
 Wroken, 370, 398

Wyde, 276  
 Wyte, 290, 423  
 Wyten, 377  
 Y  
 YATE, 377  
 Yalent, 374  
 Ychal, 387  
 Yearne, 301  
 Yearned, 323  
 Yede, 56, 382  
 Yet, 72  
 Yfere, 44, 351, 373  
 Yirks, 325  
 Ylke, 384  
 Ympt, 228  
 Yode, 376, 377  
 Yold, 132, 356  
 Yond, 102, 163  
 Yongth, 397  
 Youngth, 391  
 Ypight, 47  
 Yrkes, 169, 454  
 Yron courage, 215  
 Ysame, 356  
 Ywis, 67

THE END.



# BOOKS FOR ALL READERS,

PUBLISHED BY

**GEORGE ROUTLEDGE AND SONS,**  
THE BROADWAY, LUDGATE.

## HISTORY.

**FROISSART'S CHRONICLES OF ENGLAND, FRANCE, and SPAIN.** New Edition, from the text of COLONEL JOHNES. With Notes, a Life of the Author, an Essay on his Works, and a criticism on his History. Embellished with 120 beautiful Woodcuts, illustrative of Manners, Customs, &c. 2 Vols. Super-royal 8vo. cloth. Price 28s.

**MONSTRELET'S CHRONICLES OF ENGLAND and FRANCE,** from the text of COLONEL JOHNES. With Notes, and upwards of 100 Woodcuts (uniform with Froissart). 2 Vols. Super-royal 8vo. cloth. Price 24s.

## PRESCOTT'S WORKS.—LIBRARY EDITIONS.

**THE HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA, THE CATHOLIC, OF SPAIN.** By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT. Embellished with Steel engraved Portraits. 2 Vols. 8vo. cloth. Price 21s.

**HISTORY OF THE CONQUEST OF MEXICO, WITH A PRELIMINARY VIEW OF THE ANCIENT MEXICAN CIVILIZATION, AND THE LIFE OF THE CONQUEROR, HERNANDO CORTEZ.** By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT. Embellished with Portraits, splendidly engraved on Steel. 2 Vols. 8vo. cloth. Price 21s.

**HISTORY OF THE CONQUEST OF PERU, WITH A PRELIMINARY VIEW OF THE CIVILIZATION OF THE INCAS.** By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT. With Steel engraved Portraits. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth. Price 21s.

**HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF PHILIP THE SECOND, KING OF SPAIN.** By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT. With beautiful Steel engraved Portraits. 3 Vols. 8vo. cloth. Price 42s.

**HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF CHARLES THE FIFTH.** By WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D. With an account of the Emperor's life, after his abdication. By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT. With Portraits. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth. Price 21s.

## PRESCOTT'S WORKS.—CABINET EDITION.

**FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.** With Portraits. 3 vols. post 8vo. cloth. Price 15s.

**THE CONQUEST OF MEXICO.** With Portraits. 3 vols. post 8vo. cloth. Price 15s.

**THE CONQUEST OF PERU.** With Portraits. 3 vols. post 8vo. cloth. Price 15s.

## PRESCOTT'S WORKS.—CABINET EDITION.

**THE HISTORY OF PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.** 3 vols. With Portrait. Price 15s.

**HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF CHARLES THE FIFTH.** With Portraits. 2 vols. post 8vo. cloth. Price 10s.

**HISTORICAL AND CRITICAL ESSAYS.** With Portrait. 1 vol. post 8vo. cloth. Price 5s.

## PRESCOTT'S WORKS.—ONE VOLUME EDITION.

**FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.** 5s.

**CONQUEST OF MEXICO.** 5s.

**CONQUEST OF PERU.** 5s.

**HISTORY OF PHILIP II.** 5s.

**HISTORY OF CHARLES V.** 5s.

## PRESCOTT'S WORKS.—PEOPLE'S EDITION.

**FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.** 2 vols. fcp. 8vo. boards. 4s.

**HISTORY OF THE CONQUEST OF MEXICO.** 2 vols. fcp. 8vo. boards. 4s.

**HISTORY OF THE CONQUEST OF PERU.** 2 vols. fcp. 8vo. boards. 4s.

**HISTORY OF PHILIP THE SECOND.** 3 vols. fcp. 8vo. boards. 6s.

**HISTORY OF CHARLES THE FIFTH.** By ROBERTSON and PRESCOTT. 2 vols. fcp. 8vo. boards. 4s.

**HISTORICAL AND CRITICAL ESSAYS.** Fcp. 8vo. boards. 2s.

**THE RISE OF THE DUTCH REPUBLIC.** By JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY. 1 vol. crown 8vo. cloth, gilt edges. Price 6s.

**A HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE YEAR 1858.** By the Rev. JAMES WHITE, author of "Landmarks of the Histories of Greece," and "of England," &c. 1 vol. crown 8vo. cloth. Price 7s. 6d.

**RUSSELL'S HISTORY OF MODERN EUROPE.** With continuation by GEORGE TOWNSEND. 4 vols. 8vo. Price 21s.

**RUSSELL'S HISTORY OF MODERN EUROPE EPITOMIZED; or, A COMPLETE TEXT BOOK OF MODERN HISTORY,** for the use of Schools and Students. By GEORGE TOWNSEND. 1 vol. crown 8vo. half-bound. Price 5s.

**THE FALL OF ROME, AND THE RISE OF THE NEW NATIONALITIES.** By DR. SHEPPARD. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 7s. 6d.

THE BROADWAY, LUDGATE.

**THE STORY OF THE REFORMATION OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.** By the Rev. J. H. MERLE D'AUBIGNÉ, D.D. Translation by the Rev. JOHN GILL. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 5s.

**BANCROFT'S HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES FROM THE DISCOVERY OF THE AMERICAN CONTINENT TO THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.** By GEORGE BANCROFT. 7 vols. fcap. 8vo. cloth. Price 21s.

**THE OLD POETS.**

**SPENSER'S WORKS.** With a Glossarial Index and Life. By the Rev. HENRY TODD. With a Steel engraved Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 10s. 6d.

**CHAUCER'S POETICAL WORKS.** With Notes and Glossary. By THOMAS TYRWHITT. With Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 10s. 6d.

**THE POETICAL WORKS OF JOHN DRYDEN.** With Notes by the Rev. JOSEPH WARTON, D.D. With Steel engraved Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 10s. 6d.

**POPE'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited with a Life, by CAREY, and Steel engraved Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 10s. 6d.

**THE OLD DRAMATISTS.**

**SHAKESPEARE'S WORKS.** Edited, with a Life, by THOMAS CAMPBELL, with a highly engraved Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 12s.

**BEN JONSON'S DRAMATIC WORKS.** With a Memoir by GIFFORD, and Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 16s.

**BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER'S DRAMATIC WORKS.** With an Introduction by GEORGE DARLEY, and Steel Portrait and Vignette. 2 vols. royal 8vo. cloth. Price 32s.

**MASSINGER AND FORD'S DRAMATIC WORKS.** With an Introduction by HARTLEY COLERIDGE, and Steel Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 16s.

**WYCHERLEY, CONGREVE, VANBRUGH, AND FARQUHAR'S DRAMATIC WORKS.** With Biographical and Critical Notices by LEIGH HUNT, and Steel Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 16s.

**WEBSTER'S (JOHN) DRAMATIC WORKS.** With some account of the Author, and Notes by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 12s.

**MARLOWE'S (CHRISTOPHER) WORKS.** With Notes, &c. by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE, and Steel Portrait and Vignette. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 12s.

**GREENE AND PEELE'S DRAMATIC AND POETICAL WORKS.** Edited by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE. Royal 8vo. cloth. Price 16s.

**THE MODERN DRAMA.**

**THE DRAMATIC WORKS OF LORD LYTTON.** With Steel engraved Portrait and Vignette. Fcap. 8vo. cloth. Price 6s.

**THE DRAMATIC WORKS OF JAMES SHERIDAN KNOWLES.** With Portrait. One thick vol. post 8vo. cloth. Price 7s. 6d.

**THE JOURNAL OF A LONDON PLAYGOER.** By HENRY MORLEY, Professor of English Literature in University College, London. Fcap. 8vo. cloth. Price 5s.

**THE LIFE OF CHARLES MATTHEWS (THE ELDER).** By MRS. MATTHEWS, and edited by EDMUND YATES. With Portrait. Post 8vo. cloth. Price 3s. 6d.

**THE LIFE OF ROBERT ELLISTON THE COMEDIAN.** By GEORGE RAYMOND. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 3s. 6d.

**SHIFTING SCENES OF THEATRICAL LIFE.** By Mrs. WINSTANLEY. Fcap. 8vo. boards. Price 1s. 6d.

**THE LIFE OF JOE GRIMALDI THE CELEBRATED CLOWN.** Edited by CHARLES DICKENS, and illustrated by GEORGE CRUIKSHANK. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 3s.

**STANDARD EDITIONS.**

**THE ARABIAN NIGHTS' ENTERTAINMENTS.** With Illustrations by W. HARVEY. The cheapest complete Edition ever published. Post 8vo. cloth (750 pages). Price 3s. 6d.

**GIL BLAS (THE ADVENTURES OF).** With beautiful Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 3s. 6d.

**DON QUIXOTE.** Illustrated by JOHN GILBERT. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 3s. 6d.

**ISRAELI'S CURIOSITIES OF LITERATURE.** With a beautiful Portrait of the Author; and a well-prepared Index by DR. NUTTALL. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 3s. 6d.

**THE ARABIAN NIGHTS' ENTERTAINMENTS.** A new Translation from the Arabic, by E. W. LANE. With many hundreds of Wood engravings, from original designs by WILLIAM HARVEY. 3 vols. royal 8vo. cloth. Price 30s.

**BOSWELL'S LIFE OF DR. JOHNSON.** With Illustrations. 4 vols. post 8vo. cloth. Price 10s.

**BOSWELL'S TOUR TO THE HEBRIDES.** With Illustrations. Post 8vo. cloth. Price 3s.

**SPECTATOR (THE).** By ADDISON and STEELE. A New Edition in 2 thick Volumes. Crown 8vo. cloth. Price 12s.

**MEN OF THE TIME: A Dictionary of Contemporary Biography of Eminent Living Characters of both sexes.** A New Edition, thoroughly revised, and brought down to the present time. 1 thick volume, crown 8vo. half-bound. Price 12s. 6d.











